

COLUMBIA LIBRARIES OFFSITE
AVERY FINE ARTS RESTRICTED



AR01397702



Ex Libris

SEYMOUR DURST

t' Fort nieuw Amsterdam op de Manhatans



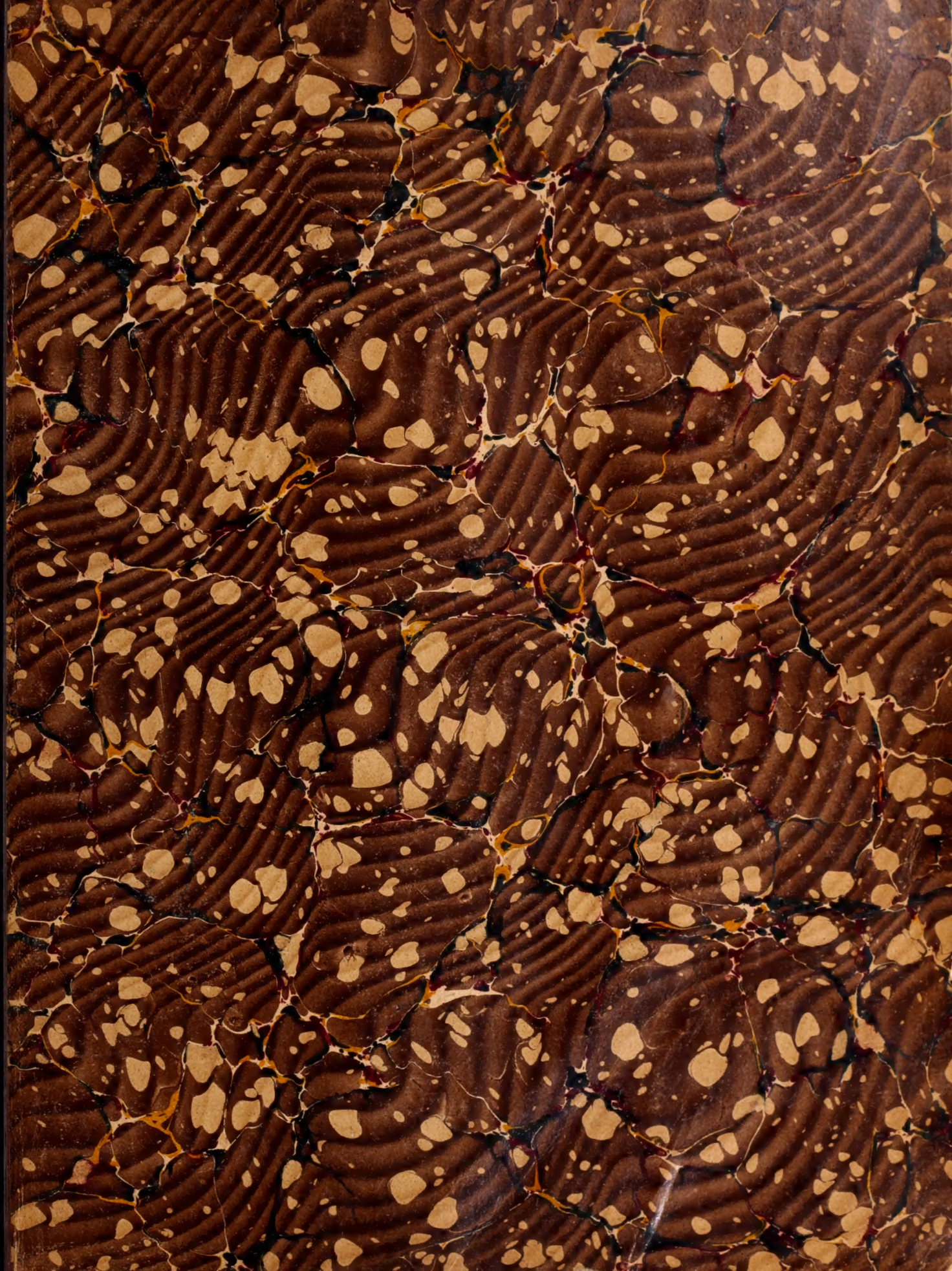
FORT NEW AMSTERDAM (NEW YORK), 1651.




When you leave, please leave this book
Because it has been said
"Ever'thing comes t'-him who waits
Except a loaned book."

AVERY ARCHITECTURAL AND FINE ARTS LIBRARY

GIFT OF SEYMOUR B. DURST OLD YORK LIBRARY



1st Nov. N.Y. State
Joris Adrian 1623-24



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

<http://archive.org/details/historyoflongisl00ross>



A HISTORY
OF
LONG ISLAND

FROM ITS EARLIEST SETTLEMENT TO THE PRESENT TIME

BY

PETER ROSS, LL. D

VOL. I

THE LEWIS PUBLISHING COMPANY
NEW YORK AND CHICAGO
1903

OFFS 112

F

127

LB

RB

19039

val





PETER ROSS.

PREFACE.

IN the following pages an effort has been made to present the history of the whole of Long Island in such a way as to combine all the salient facts of the long and interesting story in a manner that might be acceptable to the general reader and at the same time include much of that purely antiquarian lore which is to many the most delightful feature of local history. Long Island has played a most important part in the history of the State of New York and, through New York, in the annals of the Nation. It was one of the first places in the Colonies to give formal utterance to the doctrine that taxation without representation is unjust and should not be borne by men claiming to be free—the doctrine that gradually went deep into the hearts and consciences of men and led to discussion, opposition and war; to the declaration of independence, the achievement of liberty and the founding of a new nation. It took an active part in all that glorious movement, the most significant movement in modern history, and though handicapped by the merciless occupation of the British troops after the disaster of August, 1776, it continued to do what it could to help along the cause to which so many of its citizens had devoted their fortunes, their lives.

On Long Island, too, the old theory of government by town meeting found full scope, even in those sections where the Dutch rule was closest and the story of these little republics with their laws and limitations is worthy of careful study at the present day. They present us, as in the case of Southold, with specimens of pure theocracies flourishing and progressing in spite of the watchful and pre-eminent rule of the local church directorate, or possibly rather as a consequence of it, and they also present us, as in Jamaica, with townships founded on somewhat less religious lines but in which the edict of the church authorities was a matter that commanded primal respect. But, one and all, these communities showed that the view of the people as expressed in town meeting was the supreme local law, the origin of all local power, even though a fussy Director General now and again made his authority and dignity known by interference, or a Proprietary or Colonial Governor attempted to tax the people or impose a minister or a religious system without other warrant than his own sweet will and his own imperious necessities, or the wishes of his superiors—in London.

In compiling this history all previous works relating to the story of Long Island have been laid under contribution, notably such volumes as those of Wood, Thomson, Onderdonk, Furman and Spooner. The invaluable labors of Dr. Henry R. Stiles, whose "History of Brooklyn" and other works are storehouses of local history, have been drawn upon freely, for no story of Brooklyn could now be written that would not be under the deepest obligation to the patient and learned writings of that most painstaking of antiquarians and local historians. The chapter on "Dentists in Brooklyn" was written for this volume by Dr. William Jarvie, and is the result of many years' research. The chapter on medical history by Dr. William Schroder forms another valuable feature.

Of local histories nearly all those accessible have been consulted. From the published writings of Mr. William S. Pelletreau, the erudite historian of Suffolk County, and the author of several valuable works illustrating the long, eventful, and highly honorable story in peace and war of that grand section of Long Island, many details have been gathered. From the writings of Dr. W. Wallace Tooker, of Sag Harbor, the indefatigable student of Indian lore on Long Island, much that is deeply interesting concerning the red man and his remains has been gleaned, and thanks are due both these gentlemen for their freely given permission to make their studies available for this volume. The cordial manner in which the Flatbush Trust Company permitted the use of several illustrations from its interesting work on "Flatbush, Past and Present," also demands an expression of thanks.

The files of the Brooklyn Eagle have been freely consulted and proved a most invaluable storehouse; in fact almost since its origin, in 1841, the Eagle has been, as every local newspaper should be, the best possible historian of Brooklyn, and indeed of Long Island. It has the happy art in these modern days of knowing how to combine those personal details which we look for in a local paper with the wide reaching world-news which is the feature of a metropolitan daily. From the columns of the "Standard-Union" and the "The Brooklyn Times" much has also been gathered.

The author desires also to thank the numerous correspondents to whom he is much indebted for details of considerable interest in the various township histories. In following the windings of family history, to which considerable space has been devoted, much curious matter would have been overlooked but from details received as the result of correspondence with the modern representatives of many of these old families. Thanks are given for all this in its proper place, and indeed an effort has been made throughout the work to quote every authority and give full credit to previous writers and to all who have in anyway, directly or indirectly, rendered assistance.

PETER ROSS.

CONTENTS.

Proem.....	1
CHAPTER I.	
Topography of the Island—Natural History—Botany—Geology.....	3
CHAPTER II.	
Indians and Their Lands.....	17
CHAPTER III.	
The Decadence of the Aborigines.....	30
CHAPTER IV.	
Discovery—Early White Settlements and Political and Financial Relations—The Importance of the Wampum Industry.....	43
CHAPTER V.	
The Dutch—Some Early Governors—Peter Stuyvesant.....	53
CHAPTER VI.	
The British Government.....	63
CHAPTER VII.	
Some Early Families and Their Descendants—Some Pioneer Settlers—The Stirling Ownership and Colonizing Schemes—Lion Gardiner and His Purchase—A Long Island "Queen of the White House"—The Blue Smiths and Other Smiths, The Tangier Smiths and Other Branches of the Smith Family—The Floyds.....	77
CHAPTER VIII.	
Some Old Families in Queens and Kings—The Lloyds—The Jones Family—The Record of a Bit of Brooklyn Real Estate—The Rapalyes—The Livingstons—The Pierrepont, Lefferts and Other Holdings.....	89
CHAPTER IX.	
Some Primitive Characteristics—Early Laws—The Administration of Justice.....	105
CHAPTER X.	
Slavery on Long Island.....	119
CHAPTER XI.	
Early Congregational and Presbyterian Churches.....	131
CHAPTER XII.	
Religious Progress in Kings County.....	146
CHAPTER XIII.	
Persecutions—Religious—The Troubles of the Early Quakers—Trials For Witchcraft.....	165

CHAPTER XIV.	
Captain Kidd and Other Navigators.....	176
CHAPTER XV.	
The Ante-Revolution Struggle.....	182
CHAPTER XVI.	
The Battle of Brooklyn.....	199
CHAPTER XVII.	
The Retreat From Long Island—A Strategic Triumph.....	209
CHAPTER XVIII.	
The British Occupation.....	214
CHAPTER XIX.	
Some Long Island Loyalists—Richard Hewlett—John Rapalye—Mayor Mathews—Governor Colden—Colonel Axtell—Lindley Murray and Others.....	226
CHAPTER XX.	
A Few Revolutionary Heroes—General Woodhull—Colonel Tallmadge—General Parsons—Colonel Meigs.....	237
CHAPTER XXI.	
The War of 1812—Naval Operations Around Long Island.....	250
CHAPTER XXII.	
The Chain of Forts—Military Activity in Kings County—The Katydids and Other Heroes—The Popular Uprising.....	256
CHAPTER XXIII.	
The Story of Educational Progress.....	266
CHAPTER XXIV.	
Internal Communications—Roads and Railroads—The Magnificent Outlook For The Future.....	279
CHAPTER XXV.	
Kings County.....	307
CHAPTER XXVI.	
Flatlands.....	310
CHAPTER XXVII.	
Flatbush.....	317
CHAPTER XXVIII.	
New Utrecht.....	329
CHAPTER XXIX.	
Bushwick—Williamsburg—Greenpoint—The Adventurous Life of Nezhiah Bliss.....	337
CHAPTER XXX.	
Gravesend—The English Town of Kings County—Lady Moody—Early Settlers and Laws—A Religious Community with a Sad Closing Record.....	354

CONTENTS

xi

CHAPTER XXXI.

Coney Island—Rise of the Famous Resort—The Democratic Watering Place of New York—A Revolutionary Reminiscence—Piracy and Plunder.....	373
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXII.

The Story of Brooklyn Village to The Beginning of the Revolutionary Movement.....	381
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Brooklyn—From the Close of the Revolution to the Incorporation of the Village—Pre-Eminence of the Ferry—The Beginning of the Navy Yard.....	395
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXIV.

The Village of Brooklyn.....	399
------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXV.

The First City—Mayors Hall, Trotter, Johnson, Smith, Murphy and Others—Disastrous Fires—Business Extension—The Grand City Hall—Literature and the Press.....	409
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Church Development—Loughlin—Dr. Bethune—St. Ann's—Holy Trinity—Dr. Storrs—Henry Ward Beecher—Land Operations—Greenwood and Other Cemeteries—The Ferries—Work at the Navy Yard	426
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXVII.

The Era of the Civil War—1865-1870—A Succession of Capable Executives—The Metropolitan Police—J. S. T. Stranahan—Prospect Park—Street Railways—Libraries—Rapid Extension of the City—Cholera	442
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Intellectual and Spiritual Life—Literature—Brooklyn Public Library—Rev. Dr. Cuyler—Rev. Dr. Talmage—Father Malone.....	453
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXIX.

The Civil War—The Troops in the Field—The Enthusiasm in Brooklyn—Brooklyn's Contributions to the Navy.....	463
--	-----

CHAPTER XL.

The Death Grapple of the Struggle—Brooklyn's Meetings and Contributions—The Sanitary Fair—The War Fund Committee—Repairing the Losses—The Grand Army of the Republic.....	470
---	-----

CHAPTER XLI.

The Splendid Closing Record—Mayors Low, Whitney, Chapin, Boody, Schieren and Wurster—The Bridge—Some Interesting Statistics.....	482
--	-----

CHAPTER XLII.

The End of an Auld Sang—Literature and the Drama—Higher Education—National Guard—The Navy Yard—Architectural Progress—Wallabout—Public Statues—The Passing of Brooklyn City.....	498
--	-----

CHAPTER XLIII.

Queens—Development from Rural to Urban Life—The Future of the Borough—Horse Racing—An Interesting Story of the Consolidation.....	521
---	-----

CONTENTS

CHAPTER XLIV.

- Flushing—The Patentees of 1645—Freeholders in 1683—The Lawrences—The Churches—Modern Changes and Developments..... 528

CHAPTER XLV.

- Newtown—The Step-Child of the Metropolitan Area—Mespeth and Mr. Doughty—Middleburg—DeWitt Clinton—Middle Village and Other Settlements..... 538

CHAPTER XLVI.

- Jamaica—The Little Republic of Rusdorp—Ministerial Troubles—Mr. Poyer's Trials—The Revolution—Educational and Business Progress..... 548

CHAPTER XLVII.

- Long Island City—A Loose Aggregation—Anneke Jans—Captain Praa—Long Island Railroad's Terminus—Astoria and Its Namesake—Grant Thorburn—Hell Gate—A Picturesque Mayor..... 567

CHAPTER XLVIII.

- Summer Resorts—A Cosmopolitan Pleasure Resort—Health, Excitement, Society and Solitude—Modern Baronial Estates—Patchogue—Peconic Bay—The Land Boomers and the Railway..... 577

CHAPTER XLIX.

- The Medical Profession on Long Island—Early Medical Legislation—A Southampton Doctor and His Fees—Noted Physicians of the Olden Times—Brooklyn's Pioneer Doctors..... 585

CHAPTER L.

- The Medical Society of the County of Kings—Brooklyn's City Hospital and Similar Institutions—A Long Roll of Honorable Professional Names..... 594

CHAPTER LI.

- Various Medical Societies—Brooklyn Hospitals—Dispensaries..... 607

CHAPTER LII.

- Dentists in Brooklyn..... 617

CHAPTER LIII.

- The Bench and Bar—The Old Courts and Judges—Alden T. Spooner, Judge Furman—The Tilton-Beecher Case—Judge Neilson, Judge Beach—A Group of Modern Judges and Jurists..... 624

CHAPTER LIV.

- Freemasonry on Long Island—Social—Tiny Beginnings of a Great Institution—Sketches of Representative Early Lodges—Some Distinguished Long Island Craftsmen..... 647

CHAPTER LV.

- The Social World of Long Island—A Grand Array of Associations of all Sorts—Assessment Insurance—Fashionable Clubs—Sporting and Hunting Organizations..... 672

CHAPTER LVI.

- Old Country Families—Family History and Story—Pioneers, Heroes, Merchants and Their Descendants..... 696

CHAPTER LVII.

- Notes and Illustrations—The Long Island Campaign—Dutch Names of Places and Persons—Historical Gleanings and Documents—Early Nineteenth Century Descriptions..... 728

INDEX.

- Abbott Ex-Surrogate, 641.
 Abbott, Dr. Lyman.—434.
 Academy of Music, Brooklyn. 450.
 Agriculture.—Indian, 25; in the days of the occupation, 221 (see also under various towns and villages); land and soil, 792; fish as fertilizers, 793; small versus large farms, 793.
 Ainsl  , James.—Justice in Williamsburg, 349.
 Alberti, Caesar. 18.
 Albertson, Albert (Terhune)—Early settlers at New Utrecht, 329.
 Alexander, Rev. Dr. S. D.—quoted, 138.
 Allefonsce, Jean of Saintonge, sails through Long Island Sound in 1542. 44.
 Alsop, Rev. B. F.—427.
 Alsop family—709.
 Amersfort, or Amersfoort (Flatlands)—311.
 Andrews, Samuel.—89.
 Andriese, David of Bushwick.—337.
 Andros, Governor.—68; 70; 83.
 Antonides, Rev. Vincentius.—150.
 Apprentices' Library, Brooklyn.—402; 505.
 Aquebogue.—Prehistoric remains found at, 34; 580.
 Architectural features—Early, 107; in Gravesend, 364; in modern Brooklyn, 510; 680.
 Arden, Dr. Charles.—196.
 Arts and Sciences—Institute of, 505.
 Astor, John Jacob.—569.
 Astoria—538; 568; sketch of, 569.
 Athenaeum, Brooklyn.—422.
 Atlantic Docks, the.—418.
 Aurora Grata Club.—659.
 Axtel, Colonel.—196; 232; 323.

 Babylon.—In War of 1812, 252
 Backer, Jacobs—New Utrecht, 330.
 Bacon, Col. A. S., Brooklyn.—371.
 Bader, F., of Gravesend.—371.
 Baird, Colonel A. D.—485.
 Baldwin, David. —314.
 Baldwin, Rev. J. A.—313.
 Baldwin, W. H., Jr.—Pres. Long Island Railroad, 303.
 Barburin, Captain.—256.
 Barker, John G.—668.
 Barren Island.—Deed surrendering, 27.
 Bartlett, Justice Willard.—643.
 Bartow, Edgar J.—Sketch of, 427.
 Basset, Rev. John.—260.
 Bath.—328; 335.
 Baxter, George of Bushwick).—337.
 Baxter, George (of Gravesend).—60; 61; 362.
 Baxter, John.—teacher, 314.
 Bay Ridge.—328; ferry to Staten Island, 334; 335.
 Bayside.—535.
 Beattie, Rev. John.—333.
 Beatty, A. Chester.—83.
 Beatty, Robert C.—83.
 Beatty, W. Gedney.—83.
 Bedford.—Beginning of village of, 390.
 Bedford Corners. School at, 270.
 Beecher, Henry Ward.—410; sketch of, 431; trial of case of Tilton vs. Beecher, 633.
 Beekman, Cornelis.—New Utrecht, 330.
 Beekman, Cornelis.—62.
 Beekman, Gerardus.—73.
 Beekman, Col. Gerardus.—151.
 Beekman, William.—60; 385.
 Bell, James A. H.—500.
 Bell, Oliver Bunce.—424; 453.
 Bellomont, Governor.—72; relations with Captain Kidd, 177.
 Bench and Bar.—625.
 Bennett, Arien Willemsen.—332.
 Bennett, William Adriaense.—54; 381.
 Benson, Judge Egbert.—626.
 Bensonhurst.—Village, 334; 335.
 Bentyn, Jacques. 54; 58; 381.
 Bergen Beach.—316.
 Bergen, Hans Hansen.—58; 280.
 Bergen, Captain J. T.—335.
 Bergen, Teunis G.—54; 58; 266; sketch, 727.
 Bergen, Tunis G.—643.
 Berry, Abraham J., Mayor of Williamsburg.—350.
 Berry, Ed.—314.
 Besch  r (or Beets), Thomas.—58.
 Bethune, Rev. Dr.—426.
 Betts, Captain Richard—709.
 Billeting of British troops.—222; 223.
 Bishop, Rev. Alexander H.—572.
 Blackwell, Captain Jacob.—570.
 Bliss, Nezhiah.—Sketch of, 352; 568.
 Blissville.—568.
 Block, Adriaen.—45.
 Block Island discovered.—43.
 Blue Laws of Connecticut.—115.
 Blues, the Dirty.—340.
 Blythebourne.—328.
 Boerum, Willeth Jacobse Van.—321.
 Bogardus, Rev. Everardus.—146; 568.
 Boody, Mayor.—485.
 Books, Dutch.—Used in Divine service, 149.
 Booth, Edwin.—Last appearance on any stage, 508.
 Booth, Samuel, Mayor of Brooklyn.—445.
 Boston Tea Party.—187.
 Bostwick, Arthur E.—455.
 Bout, Jan Evertsen, founder of Brooklyn.—Sketch of,

- 383; 385; Stuyvesant's ultimatum, 390.
- Bout, Jan Eversen.—59.
- Bownas, Samuel, Quaker Missionary.—172.
- Bredenblut, William.—62.
- Bresser, Henry.—58.
- Bridge, The Brooklyn.—487.
- Brighton Beach, Coney Island.—374.
- Brighton Beach Racing Association.—369.
- Brockholles, Lieutenant Governor.—69.
- Brookhaven Artillery Company in War of 1812.—254.
- Brooklyn.—Battle of, 199; fortifications, 202; landing of the British, 203; the leaders of the Continentals, 203; Putnam in command, 204; Grant plays with Stirling, 205; capture of Flatbush, 205; Howe's strategic night march, 206; defeat all along the line, 207; the gallant Marylanders, 207; Sullivan and Stirling captured, 208; rush for the inner fortifications, 208.
- Notes and Illustrations.—Elias Bayles, 746; Howard House, 746; Thompson's story of the battle, 747.
- Retreat.—Washington's memorable movement a military triumph, 209.
- Results of the battle.—213.
- British Occupation.—214; Silas Wood on, 221; Long Island famed for its misfortunes, 221; Onderdonk quoted on, 223; Lillieting the troops, 223; Flatbush, 324; New Utrecht, 334; Bushwick, 339.
- Fortifications in War of 1812, 257; plan, 259; work begun, 259; peace celebrations, 263.
- Origin of Brooklyn, 58; Carl De Bevoise, first schoolmaster, 268; population, 3; slaves and their owners, 122; church squabbles with Flatbush, 157; first church, 159; early preachers, 160.
- Early history, 381; the annexation fever covers its whole story, 381; original districts, 381; Governor Kieft's proclamation, 382; Harrington Putnam on "Origin of Breuckelen," 383; appointment of Schout, 384; first preacher, 387; palisade around village, 384; Governor Nicolls' charter, fac simile, 386; administration, 390; charter from Dongan, 390; taxation of the five Dutch towns, road making, beginning of Fulton street, 391; description of village in Moore's Gazetteer, 392; the ferry, 392.
- History from the Revolution to incorporation, 395; recognized as a town, 395; fire department organized, 395; first newspaper, 395; other journalistic ventures, 395; shipping and shipbuilding, 396; trades in 1796, 396; yellow fever, 396; the medical profession, 396; shifting center of trade, 397; navy yard established, 397; results of the war of 1812, 398; the territory covered by the village act of incorporation, 398.
- Story of "the Village," 399; first trustees, 398; meetings, 401; population statistics, 399; Board of Health, 400; a prosperous era, 400; Long Island Bank, 401; almshouse, 401; great men who visited Brooklyn, 402; Guy's snow scene, 403; schools, 404; temperance society, 404; the Heights, 404; real estate development, 405; city charter, nine wards, 406.
- The First City.—Manifestations of civic pride 409; first board of aldermen, 408; a succession of Mayors, 409; City Hall project, 417; Atlantic Docks, 418; street stages, 419; water supply, 419; the great fire of 1848, 419; cholera epidemic, 420; Know-Nothingism, 420; police, 422; statistics of progress, 422; city of homes, 423; newspapers, 423; Walt Whitman, 425; Gabriel Furman 425; church development, 426; the city of churches, 428; annexation of Bushwick and Williamsburgh, 440; Mayor Hall's report of progress, 440.
- The Consolidated City, 443; Mayors Hall, Powell, Kalbfleisch (the "War Mayor"), Wood, Booth, 444; The Metropolitan Police act, 446; Mr. Stranahan's service, 447; Prospect Park, 447; growth of the city, 450; Erie Basin, 451; Gowanus Canal, 451; Some statistics, 452; Gabriel Harrison, 453.
- Public Libraries, 454; Rev. Dr. Cuyler, 455; Rev. Dr. Talmage, 458; Rev. Father Malone, 459; The Civil War, Patriotism of the city, 464; Splendid service of Brooklyn troops, 466; Shipbuilding, 468; Navy Yard Scare, 466; The Death grapple of the Struggle, 471; draft riots, 471; generosity of the citizens, 471; helpful organizations, 472; the Sanitary fair, 472; United States Christian Commission, 478; war fund committee, 479; the close of the struggle, 479; honoring the heroes, 480.
- The Splendid Closing Record, 483; Mayor Low, 483; Mayor Whitney, 485; Mayor Chapin, 485; Mayor Boody, 486; Mayor Schieren, 486; Mayor Wurster, 487; opening of the Brooklyn bridge, 487; elevated roads and other means of transit, 488; statistics of all sorts, 489; valuation, 490; mechanical and manufacturing industries, 493; educational matters, 503; the drama, 507; architectural development, 510; Wallabout market, 511; statues and memorials, 512; honoring Mr. Stranahan, 512; annexation of Kings county towns, 517; consolidation with Manhattan, 517; the end of an auld sang, 518.
- Early school regulations, 268; School at Bedford corners, 270; John Clark's school at Ferry, 270; Punderson Ansten's school at Ferry, 270; first school at Wallabout, 270; early schools, 270; care of roads, 280.
- City Hospital and similar institutions, 595; Pathological Society, 609; Dispensaries, 612; Dentists, 617.
- Social Clubs.—Architectural Features, 680; Hamilton Club, 681; Brooklyn Club, 681; Union League, 684; Lincoln, 684; Hanover, 685; Montauk, 686; other social clubs, 686.
- The Future Of, 518.
- Brooklyn Masonic Veterans.—659.
- Brotherton.—36.
- Brouwer, Jan.—314.
- Brown, Edward, of Gravesend.—362.
- Bruce, Hon. Wallace.—499.
- Brush, Rev. Alfred.—333.
- Brush, Conklin.—Mayor of Brooklyn, 411, 412.
- Buel, Rev. Samuel.—271.
- Building and Loan Associations, Brooklyn.—492.
- Bull, Ralph.—276.
- Bunce, Joel.—First postmaster, 510.
- Burnet, Governor.—74.
- Burns, John.—314.
- Burr, Colonel Aaron.—627.
- Burroughs Family.—709.
- Burton, Mary, and her "confessions."—120.
- Bushwick.—Case of sedition, 116; women assault a captain of militia, 116; slaves, 121; resolutions in War of 1812, 260; first school, 268; general sketch, 337; early settlers, 337; petition for a schoolmaster, 338; trouble with Governor Nicolls over minister, 338; charter, 339; Dongan's charter, 339; Revolutionary War, 339; peace

- rejoicings and toasts, 340; modern changes, 341.
 Buys, Peter.—Early settler of New Utrecht, 329.
- Calvary cemetery.—7.
 Campbell, Rev. William H.—274.
 Canarsie.—316, 317.
 Canarsie Indians.—Deed to Flatbush settlers, 318.
 Canoe Place.—31.
 Carleton, Will.—499.
 Carstensen, Claes, of Bushwick.—337.
 Catlin, Gen. J. S.—638.
 Cemeteries, Various.—438.
 Chain of forts.—254.
 Chapin, Mayor.—485.
 Charitable organizations.—483.
 Charlick, Oliver.—Sketch of, 288.
 Chauncey, Capt. Isaac.—397; 400.
 Cherry Point (Greenpoint).—341; 352.
 Cholera.—Visits of, 420; 452.
 Christiaensen, Hendrick.—45.
 Church, James C.—641.
 Churches, early.—134.
 Clapp, Hawley D.—Of the Hamilton House, 328.
 Clark, Rev. F. G.—572.
 Clark, John "Philomath."—270.
 Clarke, George.—Lieutenant-Governor, 74.
 Clarkson, David.—322.
 Clinton, DeWitt.—257, 262; statue in Greenwood cemetery, 435; home in Maspeth.—547.
 Clinton, Gov. George.—74.
 Clocq, Pilgrom.—267.
 Clowes, Rev. Timothy.—274.
 Cock, William.—648.
 Coe, Robert.—60; 540.
 Cohen, B., of Gravesend.—371.
 Colden, Cadwallader, Lieutenant Governor.—Sketch of, 75; family, 229.
 Colden, Cadwallader, Mayor.—262.
 Cold Spring Harbor.—United States Fish Hatchery, 9.
 Coles, Jordan.—Distiller, Williamsburgh, 344.
 Colgan, Rev. Thomas.—531; letters from, 558.
 Colman, John.—Killed by natives, 44.
 Colve, Governor.—Regains New Netherlands for the Dutch, 68.
 Coney Island.—56, Op Dyck's purchase, 365; a salt monopoly, 366; instance of popular power, 366; part of Gravesend according to Lovelace's charter, 366; the Labadist Fathers' visit, 366; early names, 373; modern history, 373; pioneer hotels, 373. description as a popular resort, 374; Jockey Club, 369; horseracing, 369; stories of piracy, 375; Captain Heyler, patriot or pirate, 376; the tragedy of the "Vineyard" brig, 376.
 Coney Island House.—372.
 Congress, Provincial.—Long Island delegates, 189; 190.
 Conselyea, William, Bushwick.—340.
 Cooper, James B.—Quoted, 252.
 Cooper, J. Fenimore.—"Water Witch," 574.
 Cooper, Joab, 273.
 Copeland, Edward.—Mayor of Brooklyn, 411, 412.
 Copp, John.—Teacher, 270.
 Corbin, Austin.—sketch of, 299.
 Corlear, Jacob, New Utrecht.—330.
 Cornbury, Lord, Governor.—151; 161; 553.
 Cornelise, Peter.—267.
 Cornell family.—699.
 Corona, village.—537.
 Corsa, Isaac.—232.
 Cortelyou, Jacques.—Colonizing scheme, 24; 329.
 Cortelyou, Peter.—280.
 County Judges—list, 625.
 Court of Common Pleas.—Judges, 624.
 Courts reorganized under Dongan.—70.
 Cowenhoven, Nicholas.—Uncertain loyalty of, 191; 323.
 Cowenhoven, Peter.—257.
 Craig, Andrew.—273.
 Creiger, Martin.—60.
 Crematory.—Fresh Pond, Queens, 438.
 Crimmin, Rev. Father.—Hunter's Point, 567.
 Cripplebush road.—405.
 Cruikshank, Rev. William.—313.
 Cuffee, Paul, Indian preacher, sketch of, 37.
 Cuffee, James, 41.
 Cuffee, Nathan J., 41.
 Cullen, Justice E. M.—642.
 Currie, Rev. Robert Ormiston.—333.
 Cutchogue.—village of, 581.
 Cutler, Rev. Dr. B. C.—427.
 Cutting, R. Fulton.—427.
 Cutting, William.—83; Ferry lessee, 407.
 Cuyler.—Rev. Dr. Theodore L.—457; 472.
 Cypress Hills Cemetery.—437.
- Dankers and Sluyter (Missionaries) Description of Indian home.—24.
 Dartmouth College.—Origin of, 35.
 Davenport, Rev. James.—137.
 Davenport, W. B.—646.
 Davie, Rev. T. M.—314.
 De Bevoise, Carl.—Schoolmaster, Brooklyn, 268.
 De Bevoise, Jacobus.—99.
 De Hart, Mayor.—193.
 De Lanoy, Abraham.—314.
 Dentists in Brooklyn.—617.
 Denton, Daniel.—"Brief Description" quoted, 524.
 Denton's Pond.—Lawsuit over, 117.
 Denton, Rev. Richard.—144.
 Denyse, Captain William.—257.
 Denyse's Ferry.—Landing place of British, 334.
 De Peyster, Abraham.—73.
 Dering family.—723.
 Derry, Valentine.—273.
 De Sille, Nicasius.—321; 329; sketch of, 330.
 Dewey, Rev. H. P.—421.
 De Witt, Peter Janse.—338.
 De Witt, William C.—645.
 Dikeman, Judge.—628.
 Dirksen, Cornelis.—96; ferryman, 393.
 Ditmas family.—704.
 Ditmas, Dañ.—276.
 Dominie's Hook.—568.
 Dongan, Governor.—69; 84; patent to Flatbush, 319; Long Island Courts, 323.
 Donop, Colonel.—Battle of Flatbush, 323.
 Dosoris.—8; 9; 137.
 Doughty, Rev. Francis.—529; 539.
 Drama in Brooklyn.—454; 507.
 Du Bois, Rev. Dr. Anson.—314.
 Duke's Laws, the.—33; 66; 115.
 Dunbar.—Early postman, 281.
 Duncan, John D.—480.
 Dunham, David.—Merchant and land speculator, 344.
 Du Pre, Nicholas.—New Utrecht, 332.
 Dutch church in Jamaica.—561.
 Dutch homes and social customs.—108.
 Dutch kills.—568; 576.
 Dyker Meadow.—village, 335.
- Eagle, Brooklyn Daily—416; record of, 424; 455; 499.

- Early families and their descendants.—76.
 East Hampton—31; Sunday laws, 116; Clinton Academy, 271.
 East Neck.—10.
 East New York.—514.
 Economic Geology of Long Island.—15.
 Educational Progress—story of, 266.
 Eigenbrodt, Dr. L. E. A.—275.
 Elbertson, Elbert.—60; 62; 267; 310.
 Eliot, Rev. John.—143.
 Elmhurst Village.—536.
 Elwell, Elijah.—314.
 Emans, Jacobus,—Gravesend, 368.
 Erasmus Hall Academy,—Flatbush, 272.
 Erie Basin, The. 451.
 Errenpeutch, Rev. William.—276.
 Evans, Joseph D.—Sketch, 665.
 Evans, Capt. Samuel.—397.
 Evergreens Cemetery.—437.

 Faithoute, Rev. George.—275.
 Fanning, Colonel Edmund.—219.
 Farret, James—Agent for Lord Stirling, 79.
 Far Rockaway—Railroad, 292.
 Feeks, Tobias.—60.
 Fenner, James H.—276.
 Ferguson, James.—274.
 Ferry.—First ferry, Fulton street to Peck Slip, 381; Cornelis Dircksen (Hoogland), terryman, 392; Van Borsum appointed, 392, the ferry a New York municipal asset, 393; the case of Hendrick Remsen, 393; Samuel Waldron becomes lessee, 393; Catharine ferry, 397; manners and customs of the ferry and ferrymen, 407; steam service, 407; South Ferry, 405; a horse boat, 408; New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company, 408; Hamilton ferry, 438; Wall Street ferry, 438; Union Ferry Company organized, 438; fares reduced, 438; new company formed, 439.
 Field, Thomas W.—499.
 Fielding, Lemuel.—41.
 First settlers.—A forgotten race, 34.
 Fish and Fish Culture.—5; see Menhaden and local references.
 Fish as fertilizers.—793.
 Fiske, John.—on Wampum, 49; on Quakers, 107.
 Flatbush.—Slaves and their owners, 122; first church in Kings county, 146; ministers of, 154; 156; in War of 1812, 260; general sketch, 317; Friends' school, 270; John Copp's grammar school, 270; passing of its legal glory, 624.
 —First patent issued, 317; name changed, 317; legal struggle with Flatlands and Newtown, 319; Dongan's patent, 319; signatures of early settlers, 320.
 —Rustenbergh, 320; quit rent, 320; squabble with Stuyvesant, 321; courts, 322; delegates to Continental Congress, 322; Revolutionary record, 323; battle at, 323; occupation, 324; modern development began, 325; first newspaper, 326; churches, 326; town hall, 326; annexed, 328; the passing of the old homesteads, 328.
 Flatlands.—Slave population and owners, 123; pioneer land owners, 310; residents in 1687, 311; census of 1698, 312; census of 1738, 312; church, 312; church members, 1762; ministers, 313; schoolhouse, 315.
 Fleet, Samuel.—276.

 Fletcher, Governor.—72.
 Floyd, Richard.—Family of, 86.
 Floyd, Nicolls.—86.
 Floyd, William.—signer of Declaration of Independence, 87; family of, 87; 271.
 Floyd, Judge Richard.—87.
 Floyd-Jones family.—88.
 Flushing.—Railroad communication, 290; 295; patents of 1645, 528; Rev. Francis Doughty, 529; Quakers, 530; Denominational troubles, 531; St. George's church, 532; agriculture, etc., 532; Washington visits, 532; village charter, 533; story of progress, 533.
 Folk, J. S.—Chief of police, 422.
 Forbus, Jan.—of Bushwick, 337.
 Ford, Gordon, Leicester.—499.
 Ford, W. C.—500.
 Ford, Paul L.—500.
 Fordham, Rev. Robert.—141; 142.
 Forest Park, Brooklyn.—449.
 Forrester, Captain.—47.
 Fort Diamond.—335.
 Fort Greene Park, Brooklyn.—449.
 Fort Hamilton.—328; 335; modern works, 335; fortifications, 254.
 Fortitude Masonic Lodge, Brooklyn.—651.
 Fort Neck.—battle of, 21.
 Fort Pond Bay.—railroad extended to, 303.
 Fossils found on Long Island.—13.
 Foster, Howell.—83.
 Fowler, Col. E. B.—465.
 Fowler, David.—35.
 Fowler, Rev. Andrew.—934.
 Fox, George.—163; arrives at Gravesend, 362; visits Flushing, 530.
 Franklin, Benjamin.—Postmaster General, 281.
 Franklinville Village.—581.
 Freedman, Rev. Bernardus.—150; 339.
 Freeman, Rev. James B.—139.
 Freemasons in War of 1812, 262; History of on Long Island, 647; pioneer lodges, 648; Suffolk Lodge, story of, 648; Suffolk Lodge, No. 60, 650; Morton Lodge, 650; Fortitude Lodge, 651; Rev. John Ireland, 653; Rev. E. M. Johnson, 653; the craft in Sag Harbor, 654; some early lodges, 657; lists of lodges, 657; Masonic Veterans, 659; Joseph D. Evans, 664; John G. Barker, 668.
 French's Gazetteer quoted.—569.
 Friends, Society of.—Beginnings of in Long Island, 163; persecutions, 165; Stuyvesant's bitterness, 166; list of Quakers at Flushing, 167; Bownes' victory over Stuyvesant, 169; the case of John Tilton, 169; Lady Moody, 169; 362; trial and acquittal of Samuel Bownas, 172.
 Fulton, Robert.—steamboat inventor, 407.
 Fulton Ferry.—58.
 Funeral customs.—112.
 Furgueson, Cornelius.—politician, 336.
 Furman, Gabriel.—sketch of, 425; list of ancient place names, 759.
 Furman, Garret and Grover C., Williamsburgh.—land speculators, 345.
 Furman, William.—628.

 Gallatin, Albert.—Secretary of the Treasury, 572.
 Gambling, statute against.—115.
 Garden City.—Beginning of, 294; railroad, 294; 295; 582.

INDEX.

- Gardiner's Bay.—49, 251, 252.
 Gardiner's Island.—15.
 Gardiner, Elizabeth.—80.
 Gardiner, Lion.—20; 27; sketch of, 28; 49; acquires Gardiner's Island, 80; sketch of, 80; family, 80.
 Gaynor, Judge William J.—371; 638.
 Gelston, Rev. Maltby.—275.
 Gelston, Rev. Samuel.—142.
 George, Henry.—499.
 Gildersleeve, Richard.—540.
 Giles, Colonel Aquilla.—234; 273.
 Gleason, Mayor Patrick Jerome.—sketch of, 575.
 Glen Cove.—8; railroad communication, 289.
 Godwin, Colonel Abraham.—257.
 Goetschius, Rev. J. H.—561.
 Golfing links on Long Island.—577.
 Gomez, Estevan, voyage of 1525.—43.
 Goodrich, Justice.—640.
 Goodyear, Stephen.—79.
 Gordon, Rev. Patrick.—161; 531.
 Governor Tompkins, privateer.—251.
 Gowanus.—56; 382.
 Gowanus canal.—451.
 Graham, Augustus, Brooklyn.—Endows City Hospital, 422; 505.
 Graham, John B., Brooklyn.—Endows Old Ladies' Home, 422.
 Graham, John L., Williamsburgh.—347.
 Grand Army of the Republic.—481; 677.
 Grant, U. S.—statute of, 680.
 Gravesend.—32; 59; slaves, 124; in War of 1812, 261; General history, 354; origin of the name, 354; discovery, 355; early land patents, 355; arrival of Lady Moody, 355; Kieft's patent, 357; laying out the little town, 359; plan, 360; trouble with Indians, 361; municipal rulers and laws, 362; religious tolerance, 362; first meeting house, 363; Reformed Church ministers, 363; gift of a burying ground, 364; early dwellings and roads, 364; slow and peaceful progress, 365; The Revolution, 365; visit of General Washington, 365; Modern history, 366; church extension, 367; first school house, 367; Ocean parkway and other modern roads, 368; horse racing, 369; annexation—the sad story of John Y. McKane and his associates, 370; punishments for the "crime of Gravesend," 371.
 Green, Zachariah.—228.
 Greenfield (Parkville) village.—326.
 Greenpoint.—341; modern beginning, 352; Nezhiah Bliss' enterprise, 352; first house, 352; Eckford Webb's shipyard, 352; ferry, 353; annexation, 353; ship and monitor building, 468.
 Greenwood cemetery.—54; history of, 435; Prime's description, 436.
 Griffin, Edward.—Buys land at Midwout, 317.
 Grout, Edward M.—642.
 Guisbert's Island.—373.
 Gulliams, William.—62.
 Gunnison, Dr., Flatbush.—275.
 Guy, Francis, artist.—Sketch of, 402.
 Guysbertz, Jan, New Utrecht.—332.
 Hagaman, Joseph.—280.
 Hainelle, Michil, of Brooklyn.—321.
 Hall, Rev. Dr. Charles H.—428.
 Hall, George.—First mayor of Brooklyn; sketch of, 410; speech on beginning second term, 440.
 Hallet, William.—568.
 Hallet Family.—707.
 Hallet's Cove.—570.
 Halsey, Stephen A.—569.
 Hammond, Selah.—276.
 Hand, Colonel, of Pennsylvania Rifles.—323.
 Hanna, John.—First interment in Greenwood, 436.
 Hansen (or Jansen) Hans.—310.
 Hanson, Rev. M. G.—363.
 Harper Family (publishers).—547.
 Harriman, Rev. John.—141.
 Harrison, Gabriel.—453.
 Hart, J. M.—502.
 Hart, Rev. Joshua.—145.
 Hart, Thomas.—89.
 Hartford, treaty of.—730.
 Hartt family.—724.
 Hasbrouck, Jared.—275.
 Hastings, Hugh, state historian.—Quoted, 254.
 Hazard, Thomas.—540.
 Hazzard, Rev. Joseph.—139.
 Hazzard, Thomas.—60.
 Heard, Colonel.—192.
 Hegeman, Adrien.—Schoolmaster, Flatbush, 266, 267; letter from, 268; 320, 321; 331; 338, 385.
 Hegeman, Joseph.—319.
 Hell Gate.—Blown up by United States authorities, 574.
 Hempstead.—Meeting of delegates at, 60; slaves, 124; first church, 142; ministers of, 145; railroad extended to, 287; Morton lodge of Freemasons, 650; celebrates its centennial, 650; list of committees, 651.
 Hempstead and Rockaway railroad.—292.
 Hendrick's Reef.—335.
 Herbert, Capt. Joseph.—256.
 Het Dorp.—341.
 Het Kivis Padt, village.—341.
 Het Strand, village.—341.
 Hewlett, Capt. Richard.—194, 196, 227.
 Heyeman, Evert.—Builds first house in Bushwick, 338.
 Heyler and Marriner, patriots and pirates.—376.
 Hicks, Elias.—697.
 Hicks, John.—60.
 Hicks Family.—697.
 Hicksville.—Railroad opened to, 286.
 Hillis, Rev. N. D., Plymouth church.—434.
 Hinchman, Mrs., Jamaica.—275.
 Historical Geology of Long Island.—12.
 Hobart, Rev. Jeremiah.—144.
 Hobart, Rev. Peter.—136.
 Holy Trinity church, Brooklyn.—427.
 Homewood, New Utrecht.—328.
 Hoock Huybert, of New Utrecht.—329.
 Hoogland, Cornelis Dirckson.—58.
 Horse-racing.—At Gravesend, 369; at Hempstead, 524; at Union course, 525.
 Horton, Rev. Azariah.—Diary and labors, 742.
 Horton, Rev. Simeon.—544.
 Houldsworth, Jonas, teacher, Huntington.—267.
 Howard, Rev. W. W.—275.
 Howe, General.—200.
 Hubbard, Rev. John.—161.
 Hubbard, James.—60, 61; elected schout of Gravesend, 362.
 Hudde (or Hudden), Andries.—54; 58; 310.
 Hudson, Hendrick.—18; discovery of the Hudson, the voyage of the "Half Moon," 44.
 Hunt, Adison L.—276.
 Hunter, Captain George.—568.
 Hunter, Governor.—73; foretells the Revolution, 73.
 Hunter's Point.—538.

- Huntington flatly refuses to be taxed without consent.—67; slaves, 128; excitement in war of 1812, 253; Masonic lodge at, 648.
- Huntington, Jonas Houldsworth.—Agreement with to teach school, 267; Academy, 276.
- Huntting, Lieut. E. F.—Rev. Dr. Whitaker's sermon on death of, 716.
- Huntting, Rev. Joseph.—139.
- Huntting family.—715.
- Indians on Long Island.—17; list of tribes, folklore, etc., 18; eloquence of, 32; drunkenness, 33; laws against sale of liquor to, 33; decadence, 33; names of places, antiquities, 39; modern land claims, 41; trails, 317; deed to Flatbush, 318.
- Industries of Brooklyn.—Census returns, 493.
- Ingoldsby, Richard, Governor.—151.
- Institutions of learning, arts and sciences.—503.
- Ireland, Rev. John.—653.
- Ironsides, William.—273.
- Irving, Washington.—Bust of, 448.
- Jackson, General.—263; visits Brooklyn, 402.
- Jacobs, William.—320.
- Jacobson, Jan.—New Utrecht, 330.
- Jans, Aneke.—568.
- Jamaica.—sketch of, 548; some early names, 548; pioneers, 549; importance of town meeting, 549; ministers, 551; denominational wrangles, 552; petition to Colden, 560; Grace church, 561; Dutch church, 561; other churches, 562; early trades, 562; first school, 563; Union hall, 563; stone church, 563; revolution, 564; newspapers 564; manufacturing, 565; Governor R. C. McCormick, 565; 583; early Masonic lodge at, 648.
- Resolution against taxation and of sympathy with New England.—183.
- Jameson, A. S.—Gravesend, 371.
- Janse, Derrick.—310.
- Jansen, Anthony (Salee).—57; 329.
- Jenks, Almet F.—640.
- Jenks, Grenville T.—640.
- Jeunissen, Guisbert.—62.
- Jochemsen, David.—62.
- John, Peter, Indian preacher.—37.
- Johnson, Rev. Evan.—428; 653.
- Johnson, Rev. E. A.—41.
- Johnson, E. S.—314.
- Johnson, Gen. Jeremiah.—263; sketch of by Dr. Stiles, 263; purchases land in Bushwick, 343; Mayor of Brooklyn, 411.
- Johnson, Dr. W. H.—41.
- Johnston, Prof. Alexander.—Quoted, 46.
- Johnston, Rev. John Barent.—160.
- Johnston, Sir William.—34.
- Johnston.—A group of families, 701.
- Jones, Captain, pirate.—181.
- Jones, David W.—95.
- Jones, Israel C.—276.
- Jones, Samuel, comptroller of New York.—92.
- Jones, Thomas.—90; family, 91.
- Jones, Thomas, Royal Recorder of New York.—92.
- Jogues, Rev. Isaac, Jesuit Missionary.—Murdered, 22.
- Judah, Moses.—Williamsburgh steam ferry, 344.
- June meeting and religious services.—38.
- Kalbfeisch, Martin.—Mayor of Brooklyn, 443; sketch of, 444; re-elected mayor, 445.
- Keikout, The.—337.
- Keith, Rev. George.—161; sketch of, 171.
- Kellis, David.—Shinnecock, 41.
- Kellogg, Jonathan, 273.
- Kelly, J. A. F.—547.
- Keteltas, Rev. Abraham.—145; 185.
- Kidd, Captain William.—176; career, 178; stories of buried treasure, 180; Kidd's Rock, 181.
- Kieft, Governor.—22; 47; sketch of, 54; 55; 146; patent for New Utrecht lands, 328; patent for Gravesend, 355; 568.
- King, Horatio C.—Quoted, 464; sketch, 644.
- King, John Alsop, 700.
- King, Rufus.—561; 699.
- King Family of Jamaica.—699.
- Kings County.—Slaves and their owners, 122; religious progress, 146; in War of 1812, 256; military companies, 257; general history and description, 308; consolidation commissioners, 327; Medical Society, 594; courts, 624; Thompson's account of, 767.
- Kinsella, Thomas, of the Eagle.—424.
- Kirk, Thomas.—Issues first Brooklyn newspaper, 395.
- Kissam, Daniel Whitehead, Whig, protests against Sears's methods.—194.
- Kissam Family of North Hempstead.—711.
- Kniphausen, Col.—Regiment quartered at Flatlands, 316.
- Korten, Myndert, New Utrecht.—332.
- Kupors, Rev. W. P.—145.
- Labadist Fathers.—Visit New Utrecht, 109; 280.
- Labagh, Rev. Abram I.—363.
- Labagh, Rev. I. P.—363.
- Labagh, Peter.—314.
- Lafayette's visit.—402.
- Lambert, Edward A., mayor of Brooklyn.—411, 412.
- Lambertson, Adrian.—318.
- Lambertson, Cornelius.—58.
- Land boomers, a paradise for.—583.
- Lane, John, ferryman.—334.
- Laws, some curious.—116.
- Leake, John W.—276.
- Lee, Gen. Charles.—193.
- Lee, Gen. Robert E.—335.
- Lefferts Family.—102; 320.
- Lefferts, John.—322; 323.
- Lefferts, Judge.—103.
- Lefferts' Park, village.—335.
- Lefferts, Peter.—273; 320.
- Leisler, Jacob.—71; Long Island towns except Huntington, oppose him, 71; hanged for treason, 72.
- Lent Family.—709.
- Leverich, Rev. William.—Sketch of, 34.
- Lewis, Elias, Jr.—Quoted, 8.
- Lewis, Francis, signer of Declaration of Independence.—535.
- Lewis, Rev. Dr. W. H.—427.
- Lewis, Gov. Morgan.—277; 335; 535.
- Lewis, Commodore.—251.
- Libraries, Brooklyn.—455.
- Lincoln, President.—Reception of news of assassination of, 479.
- Literature.—499; 543.
- Littlejohn, Bishop.—428, 429.
- Little Neck.—536.
- Livingston, Rev. Dr. J. H.—160; 272.
- Livingston, Philip.—99.
- Livingston, Robert.—recommends Captain Kidd, 177.
- Livingston, Chancellor.—648.
- Lloyd Family, The.—89.
- Lloyd, Rev. W. H.—139.
- Locke, Richard A.—author of "The Moon Hoax," 424.

- Long Beach. railroad to, 302.
 Long Island Historical Society.—455; 501.
 Long Island.—position of in history of the United States, 1; population, 3; physical features, topography, 4; game and game laws, 5; botany, arborculture, 6; geology and natural history, 7; discovery and early white settlement, 42; and Connecticut, 46; an early Dutch description, 47; divided between Dutch and English, 61; passes under English rule, 63; becomes part of Yorkshire, 63; Dutch place names changed, 63; divided into three counties, 70; some primitive characteristics, 104; early laws, administration of justice, 104; the Ante-Revolutionary struggle, 182; changes under Gov. Nicolls, 322; quick succession of governments, 331; troops in War of 1812, 253; 257; public school system, 277; roads, 279; Prime's description, 282; Furman's description, 284; Long Island railroad; history of, by Judge Hinsdale, 285; latest development plans, 303; 567.
 Long Island City.—History of, 567; 574; court house, 575; mayors, 575.
 Long Island College Hospital.—593; 615.
 Long Island Sporting Clubs.—688.
 Loot (Lot) Bartel and Peter, early Flatbush settlers.—317; 320.
 Lott, Abraham.—327.
 Lott, Johannes.—322.
 Lott, J. A.—327; 414; 628.
 Loughlin, Bishop.—427.
 Louise [Block] Island.—43.
 Louisian School, The.—404.
 Lovelace, Governor.—66; 73; 151; 183; 318; 359; 390; 525.
 Low, A. A.—472.
 Low, Seth.—480; 483.
 Lowe, Rev. Peter.—153; 160; 273; 313.
 Loyalists in Kings and Queens counties.—191; hunted down under orders from Lee; Field quoted concerning cruelties, 195.
 Lubbertse, Garret.—320.
 Lubbertsen, Frederick.—58; 60; 385.
 Lupardus, Rev. Casparus.—148.
 Luqueer, Abraham, Bushwick.—340.
 Macaulay, Lord, and the story of Captain Kidd.—177.
 Macinnes, Duncan.—Story of consolidation, 526; 679.
 Mack, Rev. E. E.—275.
 MacMonnies, Frederick, sculptor.—480.
 Madison, President.—250.
 Makins, Thomas, teacher, of Flushing.—270.
 Malone, Rev. Dr. Sylvester.—459.
 Manhasset.—8.
 Manhattan Beach, Coney Island.—374.
 Manhattan Island.—Fortifications in war of 1812, 258; influence exerted against Brooklyn, 406.
 Manout, Boudewyn, schoolmaster and clerk.—338.
 Mareckawieck.—382.
 Marsh, William B.—424.
 Martense, Gerrit L.—325.
 Martense, J. V. B.—327.
 Martense, Roelof.—310.
 Marrying among the early Dutch families.—111.
 Mason, Rev. E.—160.
 Maspeth.—539; 546.
 Mather, Rev. Cotton.—Quoted, 144.
 Matthews, A. D.—Sketch of, 510.
 Matthews, David, Mayor.—196; 230; 323.
 Mattituck Village.—581.
 Maujer, Daniel, of Williamsburgh.—350.
 Maxwell, James H., Bushwick speculator.—342; 343.
 Mavo, Samuel.—89.
 McCloskey, Henry, of The Eagle.—424.
 McConnell, Rev. S. D.—428.
 McCormick, Governor R. C.—522; 565.
 McCue, Alexander.—638.
 McGarron, Hugh.—314.
 McKane, John Y.—Sketch of, 370; death, 371.
 McKelway, St. Clair, of The Eagle.—424.
 McKibben, John S.—Williamsburgh, 347.
 McMaster, Prof. J. B.—On causes of War of 1812, 250 499.
 McNish, Rev. George.—553.
 Medical Profession, The.—585.
 Megapolensis, Rev. Johannes.—147; 157; 317; 362.
 Meigs, Return Jonathan.—248.
 Memorial Arch, Prospect Park Plaza.—480.
 Menhaden Fishery.—5.
 Merrill, F. J. H., on Geology of Long Island—6 et. seq.
 Meserole, Jean, of Bushwick.—337.
 Meserole, John A.—340; 341.
 Meserole, Abraham.—340; secretary of village of Williamsburgh, 345.
 Meserole, Col. J. V.—466.
 Methodist Episcopal Church in Brooklyn.—162.
 Metropolitan Police Act.—446.
 Mexican War.—Veterans of, in Brooklyn, 764.
 Mey, Cornelissen.—45.
 Micheli, Dominie.—146.
 Middleton, Thomas.—79.
 Middle Village.—547.
 Military force on Long Island in 1776.—215.
 Miller, Charles Henry.—502.
 Miller, David, of Bushwick.—340.
 Mills, Rev. Lawrence H.—427.
 Minister's Salary—How paid, 142.
 Minto, Dr. Walter.—273.
 Minuit, Peter.—53.
 Moll, Lambert, of Bushwick.—337.
 Mongotucksee, Indian hero.—31.
 Monroe, President.—In Brooklyn, 402.
 Montauk Point.—26; Indians of, 30; 583.
 Montgomery, John, Governor.—74.
 Moody, Lady (Deborah).—22; arrives at Gravesend, 355; sketch of, 356; supposed grave of, 364.
 Moody, Sir Henry. 355; Library of, 357.
 Moors Indian charity school.—35.
 Moore, Benjamin.—710.
 Moore, Sir Henry, Governor.—74.
 Moore, Judge Henry A.—638.
 Moore, John, of Newtown.—709; family, 710.
 Moore, Rev. John, second minister of Hempstead.—143.
 Morrell, Thomas, of Newtown.—343.
 Morris, Judge S. D.—638.
 Morton, General Jacob.—262.
 Mowatt, Mrs.—234.
 Mulford, Captain, and his troubles.—An early patriot, 730.
 Mulligan, Rev. John.—273; 276.
 Municipalities.—Forty-eight merged into Greater New York, 526.
 Murphy, Henry C.—24; Mayor of Brooklyn, 411; sketch of, 413; list of works, 416; 422.
 Murray, Lindley.—234; mother entertains Howe while Putnam's troops retreat, 235; Walter Barrett's story of the Murray family, 235.

- Nassau Water Company. 443.
 National Banks.—Brooklyn, 490.
 National Guard.—See War of 1812; early Brooklyn companies, 422; the Fourteenth and Thirteenth Regiments, 422; 462; other regiments, 462; first call for troops, 464; the gallant Twenty-eighth, 465; the Red-legged Devils, 465; enlistments from Brooklyn, 467; all Brooklyn regiments at the front save one, 471; honoring the veterans, 480; Grand Army of the Republic, 481; U. S. Grant Post, 481; after the war, 508.
 Navy Yard.—Established, 397; in operation, 400; dry dock, 439; list of ships, 439; 469; 508.
 Neilson, Judge Joseph.—635; on Justice Coke, 634.
 New Lots.—318; 513.
 Newspapers, Brooklyn.—The Courier and Long Island Advertiser, 395; The Long Island Weekly Intelligencer, 395; The Long Island Star, 395, 423; The Long Island Patriot, 423; The Brooklyn Advocate, 423; the Brooklyn Evening Star, 423; a group of short-lived organs, 424; another group, 455; Standard, Standard-Union, 499; Brooklyn Citizen, 499; other newspapers, 499.
 Newton, R. V. B., Gravesend.—371.
 Newtown.—Slaves, 126; the step-child of the metropolitan era, 538; cemeteries, 539; first settlers, 539; story of the village, 540; first house of worship, 540; punishment of a ne'er-do-well, 540; local government, 541; in the Revolution, 542; Rev. Mr. Leverich and other ministers, 543; means of travel, 545.
 Newtown creek.—341; 538.
 New Utrecht.—Slaves, 124; general history, 328; first bathing resort on Long Island, 329; land boomers, 329; land grants issued by Stuyvesant, 329; list of patentees, 330; descendants of patentees, 330; visit of Capt. Scott, 331; Dongan's patent, 332; church, 332; ministers, 333; old graveyard, 333; Revolutionary memories, 334; defense in War of 1812, 335; churches, 335; annexed, 336.
 Nichois, Charles.—276.
 Nicholson, Francis, Lieutenant-Governor.—70.
 Nicolls, Matthias.—Sketch of, 65; author of The Duke's Laws, 65; appointed speaker, 69.
 Nicolls, Sir Richard.—Captures New Amsterdam and assumes government of New Netherland, 63; letter to Magistrates, 64; treaty of capitulation, 728; address of deputies, 64; patent to Flatbush, 317; 321; fac simile of Brooklyn charter, 386; 524.
 Ninnecraft, Sachem.—26.
 Noka, John.—41.
 Noka, Joshua.—41.
 Nostrand Family.—703.
 Nott, Dr. Eliphalet.—352.
 Nyack (Fort Hamilton).—335.
 Oakdale, a baronial estate.—579.
 Oblenis, Albert.—273.
 Oocom, Rev. Samson.—23; sketch of, 36.
 Oceanic Hotel, Coney Island.—372.
 Olympia, village of.—Boomed, 98; 395.
 Onderdonk, Henry, Jr.—Sketch of, 276; 563.
 Orient Point.—14.
 Orient, village.—582.
 Overbaugh, Voorhies.—315.
 Oyster Bay.—Slaves, 123; academy, 277; railroad extended to, 302; early Masonic lodge at, 648.
 Packer, William F.—503.
 Packer Institute for Girls.—422.
 Paine, Elijah Freeman, patriot and schoolmaster, 270.
 Parker, George.—314.
 Parker, Rev. W. H.—39.
 Parsons, Col. S. H.—248.
 Parsons, Samuel.—533.
 Patchen, Andrew.—270.
 Patchogue as a summer resort.—580.
 Patterson, Charles J.—641.
 Payne, John Howard, author of "Home, Sweet Home"—271; bust in Prospect park, 448; sketch of, 711.
 Payne, William.—271.
 Payne family.—712.
 Pearsall, Thomas E.—639.
 Peconic Bay.—580.
 Pelletreau family.—721.
 Penewit, Thomas.—60.
 Penny, Rev. Joseph.—273, 274.
 Perry, J. A.—Comptroller of Greenwood.—336.
 Pierrepoint, H. B.—99; family, 100; 404.
 Pierson, Rev. Abraham, of Southampton.—140.
 Pietersen, Jacob, New Utrecht.—330.
 Pitkin, John R.—513.
 Plank Road Craze, The.—282.
 Platt, Isaac.—68.
 Platt, Epenetus.—68.
 Polhamus, Daniel Mr.—320.
 Polhemus, Rev. Mr.—Buys a slave, 119; 148, 157, 159.
 Polhemus, Theodorus, of Bushwick.—339.
 Poppenhause, Conrad.—297.
 Port Jefferson.—Railroad communication, 291; 580; Suffolk lodge No. 60, 650.
 Port Washington.—8; railroad to, 303.
 Potter, Cornelis de.—96.
 Powell, Samuel S., Mayor of Brooklyn.—443.
 Powers, William P.—Williamsburgh, 347.
 Poyer, Rev. Thomas.—531; letters from, 553.
 Praa (Pratt), Peter.—568.
 Pratt, Calvin E.—638.
 Pratt, Charles.—505.
 Pratt Institute.—504.
 Prime, Dr.—Account of Queens and Suffolk counties, 790.
 Prince, William.—532.
 Prison ship martyrs.—450; 755; story of survivors, 756.
 Privateers in War of 1812.—251; 252.
 Prospect Park laid out.—447.
 Provoost, David Schout, in Breuckelen.—320; 385.
 Provost, John.—patriot, 340.
 Prudden, Rev. John.—551.
 Public Parks, Brooklyn.—449; driveways, 450.
 Putnam, General.—Defense of, 754.
 Putnam, Harrington.—quoted, 383.
 Queen, Montgomery.—city stages, 419.
 Queens, Borough of.—population, 3; 521; progress since consolidation, 522; a place for home-building, 523; Revolutionary story, 526; inner story of consolidation, 526.
 Queens County.—Slaves, 126; boundaries, 521; Dr. Prime on, 790.
 Queens.—village, 565.
 "Rain Water Doctor," 396.
 Rapalye, Jacob Joris, grant of land at Wallabout.—46; 55; 58; family, 96; 381.
 Rapalye, Jan.—280.
 Rapalye, John.—103; 229.
 Rapalje, Mrs.—Scheme to block the retreat from Long Island, 229.

INDEX.

XXI

- Ravenswood.—538; 568; charity establishments at, burned by mob, 569.
 Raymond, Rossiter W.—499.
 Red Hook.—value of real estate at, 405.
 Remsen, Abraham.—pioneer dry-goods man, 397.
 Remsen, Mrs. Anthony.—reminiscences, 19.
 Remsen, Derick.—314.
 Remsen, Joris.—99.
 Remsen, Henry.—99.
 Remsen, Peter.—99.
 Remsen, Philip.—99.
 Revolution.—The story prior to 1776, 182; review of events, 185.
 Richards, Daniel.—418.
 Richardson, J. L. and Lemuel, Bushwick.—land speculators, 345.
 Richbill, John.—89.
 Roads and Railroads.—279.
 Roberts' "History of New York."—quoted, 69.
 Rockaway Beach.—blockhouse on, 253; railroad, 292; 302.
 Rockaways, Indian tribe.—318.
 Roeloffse, Peter, New Utrecht.—330.
 Rogers, Major Robert.—220.
 Rogers, John.—276.
 Roman Catholic church in Kings county.—163.
 Ronkonkoma, Lake.—11; 83.
 Rose, Judge A. T.—sketch of by Judge Hedges, 725.
 Ross, Charley.—supposed abductors killed at Bay Ridge, 335.
 Ross, Dr. John D.—499.
 Rouse, Thomas.—79.
 Rowland, A. J.—shipbuilder, 469.
 Royal arms defaced in 1697.—183.
 Ryan, M. P., of Gravesend.—371.
 St. Alban's Masonic lodge, Brooklyn.—651.
 St. Ann's church.—427.
 St. John's Episcopal church.—427.
 Sabbath, laws relating to.—115, 117.
 Sabring, Cornelius, tries to break ferry monopoly.—393.
 Sackley, R. B.—83.
 Sag Harbor.—31; Col. Meigs's expedition, 249; Col. Hardy's expedition, 251; in war of 1812, 254; railroad communication, 291.
 Sands, Col. Benjamin.—194.
 Sands, Comfort.—97, 273.
 Sands, Joshua.—97.
 Sands Brothers.—395.
 Sanford, Louis, treasurer of Williamsburgh village.—345.
 Sanitary fair, the.—472.
 Saunders, Frederick, "Salad for the Social."—453.
 Savings Banks, Brooklyn.—493.
 Saxe, John G.—453.
 Schenck, Martin.—314.
 Schenck, Rev. Dr. Noah H.—427.
 Schieren, Mayor, 486.
 School, early regulations in Brooklyn.—268.
 Schoonmaker, Rev. Dr. Jacob.—262; 545.
 Schoonmaker, Rev. Martinus.—153; 154; 273; 363.
 Schroeder, William, M. D.—585.
 Schuyler, Peter.—73.
 Scott, Capt. John, invades Long Island.—61; 331.
 Scudder Family.—714.
 Seabury, Rev. Samuel.—531; 560.
 Sears, Capt. Isaac.—190; 194.
 Selyns, Rev. Henricus, Brooklyn's first preacher.—384.
 Setauket. 7.
 Settlement of Homes, A.—523.
 Shad, enormous catch of, in 1749.—334.
 Sharp, Thomas R.—298.
 Shearman, Thomas G.—138.
 Sheepshead Bay, 369.
 Shelter Island.—Geology, 8; 11; 79.
 Shepard, Edward M.—642.
 Ships and Shipbuilding.—Monitors at Greenpoint, 469.
 Siggelon, Johannes.—314.
 Silliman, Benjamin D.—635.
 Skinner, Abraham, Jamaica.—275.
 Slavery on Long Island.—119; laws of 1683, 119; negro plots, 120; value and number of, 121, 129; manumissions, list of, 129; last auction sale in Brooklyn, 133.
 Slougher, Governor.—32; 72.
 Slover, Isaac.—314.
 Smallpox in Brooklyn.—391.
 Smith, Claes Claessen, New Utrecht.—330.
 Smith, Cyrus P., mayor of Brooklyn.—411.
 Smith, Rev. Ralph.—139.
 Smith, Richard (Bull).—28; 82; sketch of, 83; family of, 83.
 Smith, Samuel, mayor of Brooklyn.—411; 412.
 Smith, William (Tangier).—83; sketch of, 84; family of, 85.
 Smith, William (2d), of Mastic.—85.
 Smith, William (3d), member of First Provincial Congress.—85.
 Smith.—Various popular family designations.—82.
 Smithtown.—Slaves, 128; railroad opened, 291.
 Snedecor, Jan., tavern keeper in New Amsterdam, 317.
 Snediker, Jan.—267; 702; family, 702.
 Social World of Long Island.—672; Royal Arcanum, 673; Odd Fellows, 674; Knights of Pythias, 676; Foresters of America, 676; smaller bodies, 679.
 Solyns (or Selwyn), Rev. Henry—148; 159.
 Sons of Liberty.—188.
 Southampton.—First purchase of, 26; 59; church at, 135; 140; some ministers of, 142.
 Southold.—59; punishment for tattlers, 116; church at, 134; in War of 1812, 254.
 Spanish American War.—693.
 Spicer, Captain Elihu.—503.
 Spicer, Thomas.—60.
 Spooner, Alden J.—Sketch, 630.
 Sprague, Joseph, mayor of Brooklyn.—411.
 Stanton, Henry, Catharine street ferry—344.
 State Banks, Brooklyn.—491.
 Statues in Brooklyn.—512.
 Stearns, John M., historian of Williamsburgh.—342.
 Steers, Henry, shipbuilder.—469.
 Steinway Village.—569.
 Stelman, Jan, of Bushwick.—338.
 Stevens, Gen. Ebenezer.—570; 571.
 Stevens family.—Whittemore's record, 570.
 Stevensen, Coert.—62.
 Stewart, Commodore.—263.
 Stewart, Rev. W. H.—39.
 Stiles, Dr. Henry R.—499.
 Stille, Cornelius Jacobse.—337.
 Stillman Jan Hendricksen.—96.
 Stillwell, Nicholas.—58.
 Stillwell, Nicholas, of Gravesend.—361.
 Stillwell, William H.—Quoted, 376.
 Stirling, Sir William Alexander, Earl of.—46; 49; 59; sketch of, 77.
 Stirling, Lady.—Agent of, 47.
 Stirling, Lord (General Alexander).—192; 195.

- Stockwell, Rev. A. P.—Quoted, 359; 363.
 Storrs, Rev. John.—139.
 Storrs, Rev. Dr. R. S.—139; sketch of, 430; 477.
 Stranahan, J. S. T.—368; defeated for mayor, 412; some public services, 447.
 Street, Charles R.—Quoted, 276.
 Strong, George D., Williamsburgh speculator.—347.
 Strong, Rev. T. C.—545.
 Strong, Rev. Robert G.—275.
 Strong, Dr., of Flatbush.—148; 266; 317.
 Strycker, Jan.—60; 62; 267.
 Stryker, Captain Burdett, of the Katydids.—256.
 Stryker, Francis B., mayor of Brooklyn.—411; 412.
 Stuyvesant, Governor.—20; 47; sketch of, 59; 147; 157; 163; reprimanded by home government, 170; De Bevoise a protege of, 268; farm at Flatlands, 310; issues patent to Midwout, 317; to New Utrecht, 331; surveys the site of Boswijck (Bushwick), 328; regard for Lady Moody, 357; angry with Brooklyn dwellers, 384; 385; his rule on Long Island, 390; his lien on the ferry earnings, 392.
 Sudam, Yan.—314.
 Sueberingh, Jan.—321.
 Suffolk county.—Population, 3; military in 1776, 216; early Masonic lodge, 648; in war of 1812, 251; Dr. Prime's account of, 790.
 Summer resorts.—577.
 Supreme court justices, list of.—626.
 Sutherland, Kenneth F., Gravesend, 371.
 Sutphen, Rev. David S.—333.
 Suydam, Capt. Lambert.—224.
 Swearing, statute against.—115.
 Swedenborgians on Long Island.—164.
 Sylvester, Constant.—79.
 Sylvester, Grizzel, married James Floyd, Boston.—89.
 Sylvester, Nathaniel.—79; 89.
 Syosset.—7; railroad to, 288.
 Talleyrand, a resident of Brooklyn.—402.
 Tallmadge, Col. Benjamin.—244; his brilliant services in the Revolution, 245; the Tallmadge family, 247.
 Talmadge, Thomas G., mayor of Brooklyn.—411.
 Talmage, Rev. T. DeWitt.—458.
 Tammany Society in War of 1812.—262.
 Tanner, Corporal James.—481; 678.
 Tariff duties, early.—69.
 Taxation without representation condemned at early town meetings.—67.
 Taylor, Rev. John.—141.
 Temperance society in Brooklyn.—404.
 Tenney, Asa W.—638.
 Teunissen, Guisbert, of Bushwick.—338.
 Teunissen, Jan.—59; 320; appointed schout of Breuckelen, 384.
 Thayre, William.—273.
 Theaters in Brooklyn.—507.
 Thomas, Rev. John.—144; 162.
 Thompson, Col. Benjamin (Count Rumford).—222.
 Thompson, B. F.—Sketch of Kings county, 767.
 Thompson Richard Whyte.—273.
 Thorburn, Grant.—569; sketch of, 572.
 Thorn, Lieut. Jonathan.—397.
 Throop, Rev. William.—139.
 Tilje, Jan, of Bushwick.—338.
 Tilton, John, pioneer settler of Gravesend.—362; bequeaths a plot for burying ground, 364.
 Tilton, Theodore.—455.
 Titus, Charles, Bushwick.—342.
 Titus, Francis J.—estate, 342.
 Titus, Major Francis.—257.
 Titus, Samuel.—68.
 Tompkins, Gov. Daniel D.—253; 263.
 Tonneman, Pieter, Schout in Breuckelen.—385.
 Tooker, Dr. W. Wallace.—39; quoted; Indian place names in Brooklyn, 40; on Rev. Robert Fordham, 142.
 Tracy, Gen. Benjamin F.—682.
 Tredwell, Daniel M.—500.
 Trotter, Jonathan, Mayor of Brooklyn.—411.
 Tryon, Governor.—190; 323.
 Tull, Pieter.—314.
 Turnpike, Brooklyn and Jamaica.—281.
 Tyler, President, married to Julia Gardiner.—80.
 Underhill, Capt. John, defeats Indians at Fort Neck, 21; Schout of Flushing, 529.
 Underhill, J. S., shipbuilder.—469.
 Union Hall, Jamaica.—275.
 Urquhart, Rev. W.—161; 531; 553.
 Van Anden, Isaac, of the Eagle.—424.
 Van Boerum, William Jacobse.—267.
 Van Borsum, Egbert, ferryman.—392.
 Van Brunt, Major Albert C.—257.
 Van Brunt, Rutger Joosten.—330.
 Van Brunt family.—330.
 Van Buskirk, Rev. P. V.—363.
 Van Cleef, Jan.—62.
 Van Corlaer, Jacob.—46.
 Van Couwenhoven, Wolfert Gerritsen.—54; 95; 311; 314.
 Van der Boek, Paulus.—54; 60; 385.
 Vanderbilt, Aries Jansen.—319.
 Vanderbilt, Mrs. Gertrude L.—146.
 Vanderbilt, Jansen.—319.
 Vanderbilt, Hon. John.—154; 155; 273; 323.
 Vanderbilt, John J.—273; 327.
 Vanderveer, Dr. Adrian.—325.
 Vanderveer, Cornelius.—320.
 Vandervoort, John, schoolmaster.—270.
 Vandewater, Benjamin.—280.
 Vanderwyck, Cornelius.—319.
 Van Duyn, John.—323.
 Van Dycke, Johann Tomasse.—330.
 Van Eckelen, Johannes, schoolmaster.—268.
 Van Giesen, Reynier.—267.
 Van Hatten, Arent.—60.
 Van Kleeck, Rev. Richard D.—274.
 Van Nest, Rev. Reynier.—275; 561.
 Van Nostrand, Jan Hansen.—333.
 Van Pelt, Magdalena.—332.
 Van Pelt, Gysbert T., New Utrecht.—332.
 Van Pelt, Manor.—329.
 Van Sickelen, F. rmandus.—58.
 Van Sinderen, Dominie.—152.
 Van Tienhoven, Cornelius.—49.
 Van Twiller, Governor.—46; 53; 119; erects first church in New Netherland, 134; secures lands at Flatlands, 311; lands at Red Hook, 382.
 Van Wyck, Abraham H.—513.
 Van Zuren, Rev. Casparus.—148; 332.
 Verazzano, John, voyage of 1524.—43.
 Von Rossem, Huyck Aertsens.—59.
 Voorhees, Abram.—314.
 Voorhees, Adrian.—322.
 Voorhees, Isaac.—314.
 Voorhees, Luykas.—314.
 Wading River.—7; railroad extended to, 302.

INDEX.

- Walker, Rev. Zachariah.—550.
Wall, William, last mayor of Williamsburgh.—351.
Wallabout, The.—382; 397; market, 511.
Wampum.—25, 49.
Wantenaer, Albert Cornelis.—62.
Ward, Richard, chief of the Poosepatucks.—39.
Waring, Nathaniel F.—653.
War of 1812.—250; defenses at New Utrecht, 335.
Warren, Gen. G. K.—Statue of, 448.
Washburn, William.—60.
Washington, George.—Address from Provincial Congress, 190; arrives in New York and assumes command of forces there, 197; Loyalist plot, 196; address from Bushwick, 340; visits Flushing, 532; visits Jamaica, 563. See also local references.
Water Supply, Brooklyn.—450.
Waterbury, Noah, "Father of Williamsburgh."—344; first president of village, 345.
Webb, Capt. Thomas.—162.
Webb, W. S.—314.
Wells, John.—626.
Werckhoven, Cornelius Van.—24; 329.
West Brooklyn, New Utrecht.—328.
West End Coney Island.—374.
Westervelt, Abram.—315.
West India Trading Company.—45.
Whalefishing, early.—90.
Whaley, Alexander, of the Boston Tea Party.—340.
Wheelock, Rev. Eleazar.—35.
White (railroad) Line.—295.
White, Rev. Sylvanus.—142.
Whitehead, Daniel.—89.
Whitestone.—534.
Whiting, Rev. Joseph.—142.
Whitlock, Thomas.—314.
Whitman, Walt.—424; sketch of, 425.
Whitney, Mayor.—485.
Whittaker, Rev. Ephraim, D. D.—139; sketch of, 140.
Wicks, Thomas.—68.
Wilkins, William, of Gravesend.—362.
Williamsburgh.—341; Woodhull's first speculation, 342; Morrell's opposition, 343; early road to Brooklyn, 342; the ferry, 342; first church, 343; the father of Williamsburgh, 344; village organization, 345; rapid progress, 346; wild land speculation, 346; the crash, 347; healthful recovery, 348; churches, newspapers, literary societies and banks, 348; a city charter, 348; history in street names, 349; the first mayor, 350; the curse of politics, 350; annexation, 351.
Williamsburgh and Brooklyn.—Story of consolidation, 440.
Williamsburgh Democrat, The, started.—348.
Wilfs.—Cornelis Van Catts, 114; Benjamin Conkling, 114; Pelletreau's volume of "Abstracts" referred to, 114; William Ludlam, of Southampton, 114; John Foster, of Rustdorp, 114; John Hart, of Maspeth Hills, 114; Ralph Hunt, of Newtown, 114.
Wilmot, Rev. Walter.—553.
Wilson, Capt. John.—257.
Wilson, Dr., Flatbush.—273.
Windsor Terrace, village.—326.
Witchcraft.—Trial of Mary Wright, 173; trial of Ralph Hull and wife, 174; trial of Goody Garlick, 174.
Withers, Reuben, of Houston street ferry.—349.
Woertman, Dirch Janssen.—99.
Wood, Col. Alfred M., mayor of Brooklyn.—444; 465.
Wood, Fernando, mayor of New York.—445.
Wood, George M.—628.
Wood, Jonas.—68.
Wood, Silas, quoted.—25.
Wood, William, of The Eagle.—424.
Woodhull, Gen. Nathaniel, 180; sketch of, 237; various stories of details of capture, 240; the death of a patriot and a Christian, 242; thoughts on his career and services, 243; the long talked of monument still talked of, 244; the De Sille house, where he died, 330.
Woodhull, Richard M., founder of Williamsburgh, 342.
Woodhull, Rev. Selah S.—160.
Woodruff, Horace.—276.
Woodruff, Rev. William.—550.
Woodworth, H. D.—314.
Woodworth, Samuel, poem "The Patriotic Diggers."—261.
Woolsey, Rev. Benjamin.—137; 145.
Wright, Peter.—89.
Writers' Club, The.—502.
Wurster, Mayor.—487.
Wyandanch—Tragedy of, 20; 30; 31; 89.
Wyckoff, Peter, Gov. Stuyvesant's farmer.—311.
Wyckoff's Hotel, Coney Island.—372.
Yellow fever epidemics.—405; 452.
York, G. D.—276.
Yorktown, projected town.—343.
Youngs, Rev. John, of Southold.—134.
Youngs, Capt. John.—136.
Youngs, John, sheriff.—69.
Zeeaw, Jan Cornelise, of Bushwick.—338.
Zeelen, Johann, early settler at New Utrecht.—329.



HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND.

PROEM.

POSITION OF LONG ISLAND IN THE HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

AS A PART of the state of New York, Long Island can hardly be said to have now any separate political interest or to have at any time in the past done any more than a like share with the other sections of the Empire State in building up in Congress, in the tented field, or in the realms of literature, science or art, the country of whose present greatness, of whose rank among the nations of the earth we are all so proud. The island has fully met every claim made upon her; in the Revolution she suffered much and deeply, and the name of Woodhull and many another gallant hero ranks high on the honored roll of those who sacrificed home and property and life that political and religious freedom might live; in the war of 1812 she was ready to meet any invading force, and her ships helped to win the victory and to wrest from Britain, for a time, at least, that country's old claim to invincibility on the sea; in the Civil war she liberally contributed men and treasure to preserve intact what the founders of the Republic had fought for, and in the war with Spain she freely responded to the call of the General Government. But,

then, other sections of the state acted equally as nobly, according to the measure of their opportunities.

Still, Long Island did exert, indirectly, it is true, but none the less clearly traceable and unmistakable, a degree of influence upon the general history of the country, especially in the early stages—the stages when history was being made and precedents established. It has always been obedient to established authority, but when the rights of the individual or the community were assailed or trampled on—be the government Dutch or English—it has led the way in defending those rights, and even Peter Stuyvesant found the farmers of Long Island more troublesome and determined, at times, than the burghers of New Amsterdam. The keynote of liberty resounded over the island long before the call to arms was made, and one of her sons was among the immortals who signed the Declaration of Independence, while another presided over the discussions of the first patriot assembly of the state of New York. The position it held in the momentous affairs of the latter half of 1776, when it was regarded by the veteran Generals of

King George as the key by which the continent was to be opened up again to British authority, was alone sufficient to exalt it to a position among the shrines of the nation, one of the spots on which the struggle for liberty was most strenuously waged, and where, though defeated, it was shown that in military skill and finesse the Continentals were the equal of their adversaries, the veterans of many wars. It was there, too, that Washington first earned his right to be regarded as one of the greatest captains of his time, of any time.

But besides this Long Island showed, even before the Revolution, that the people were perfectly fit to rule themselves and the various town governments were models of local authority for the rest of the country. Even under the Dutch the townships enjoyed a generous measure of local rule, and what was not allowed by the authorities in the fort on Manhattan they took themselves. In fact the whole course of the history of Long Island shows that the less the general government interfered with local affairs the better the result all round. The Dutch paternal rule in the western section, the English town rule in the eastern, and the happy way in which in Queens

county both Dutch and English could pool their issues, could respect each other's religious views and notions of statecraft, could live together in peace and harmony, formed three significant conditions which were not lost upon the statesmen who were engaged in the work of bridging this country safely across the chasm which separated the disjointed and jealous colonies into a strong and united nation.

Long Island since the echoes of the Revolutionary war have died away has always been found ranged on the side of liberty and toleration, her representatives in Congress and in the assembly have been men who by their talents commanded respect and by their efforts added largely to the progress the nation has made in all the arts that render men happy and ensure the prosperity of the country. She has been to a certain extent a community in herself, she so remains in a great measure to the passing day, and presents, in fact, in her own career an epitome of all that makes the country really great, thrift, honesty and religion leavening the whole, while progressiveness, energy and a watchfulness for opportunities add year by year to the general wealth.



SILVER TANKARD.

Presented to Sarah Jansen De Rapelje, by her husband.

CHAPTER I.

TOPOGRAPHY OF THE ISLAND—NATURAL HISTORY— BOTANY—GEOLOGY.

LONG ISLAND lies between 40 degrees, 34 minutes, and 41 degrees, 10 minutes, north latitude, and between 71 degrees, 51 minutes, and 74 degrees, 4 minutes, west longitude from Greenwich, England. It is bounded south and east by the Atlantic Ocean, on the north by Long Island Sound and on the west by New York Bay and the East River, which latter divides it from Manhattan Island. Its length is about one hundred and twenty-five miles, its average width about fourteen miles, and its total area 927,900 acres. It is divided into the counties

of Kings, Queens, Nassau and Suffolk; but all of Kings and part of Queens are now under the general government of the greater New York, although still retaining their county organization. The population of these divisions according to the census of 1900 was as follows:

Kings	1,166,582	Queens	152,999
Nassau . . .	55,448	Suffolk	55,582

Being a total for Long Island of 1,452,611.* In 1880 the total was 743,957, and in 1890, 1,029,097, so that a considerable advance has been made. The advance has been greatest

*The population according to wards and townships is given as follows.

BROOKLYN BY WARDS.

W'ds.	Pop.	Acres.	W'ds.	Pop.	Acres.
1 . . .	20,327	233.00	17 . . .	57,309	823.30
2 . . .	8,565	97.70	18 . . .	25,133	873.00
3 . . .	17,919	161.40	19 . . .	37,645	113.81
4 . . .	12,568	111.30	20 . . .	25,446	461.50
5 . . .	18,862	119.40	21 . . .	58,957	483.20
6 . . .	12,185	302.90	22 . . .	66,575	1,361.60
7 . . .	40,471	458.50	23 . . .	61,813	736.00
8 . . .	52,111	1,843.20	24 . . .	31,767	1,198.50
9 . . .	42,876	623.60	25 . . .	48,328	567.80
10 . . .	39,100	318.70	26 . . .	66,086	*5,690.00
11 . . .	22,608	252.60	27 . . .	43,691	400.70
12 . . .	30,354	663.10	28 . . .	77,912	881.40
13 . . .	24,029	230.30	29 . . .	27,188	3,800.00
14 . . .	31,483	282.60	30 . . .	24,700	5,404.10
15 . . .	30,269	244.80	31 . . .	14,609	6,312.30
16 . . .	56,550	244.80	32 . . .	8,243	14,082.00
Total	1,166,582	49,680.14			

*Includes swamp lands and unattached islands.

QUEENS BY WARDS.

Wards.	Population.	Acres.
1	48,272	4,650.00
2	40,903	14,700.00
3	25,870	22,000.00

Wards.	Population.	Acres.
4	30,761	36,600.00
5	7,193	4,933.00
Total	152,999	82,833.00

NASSAU COUNTY BY TOWNSHIPS.

Hempstead Township	27,067
North Hempstead Township	12,048
Oyster Bay Township	16,333
Total	55,448

SUFFOLK COUNTY BY TOWNSHIPS.

Babylon Township	7,112
Brookhaven Township	14,596
Easthampton Township	3,746
Huntington Township	9,483
*Islip Township	12,545
Riverhead Township	4,503
Shelter Island Township	1,066
†Smithtown Township	5,863
Southampton Township	10,371
Southold Township	8,301
Total	77,582

*Includes 1,349 people on the premises of the Manhattan State Hospital for the Insane.

†Includes 3,177 people on the premises of the Long Island State Hospital.

in Kings county, but all the divisions show substantial increases.

The island as a whole is flat and low-lying. Through the centre is a range of small hills from New Utrecht northeasterly to Roslyn, and from there extending to Montauk Point, the best known being West, Dix, Comac, Bald and Shinnecock Hills. The average height of this chain is about 250 feet, but Harbor Hill at Roslyn rises to a height of 384 feet, Janes Hill to 383 feet, Reuland's Hill to 340 feet and Wheatley Hill to 369 feet. Along the north shore from Astoria to Orient Point a bluff follows the outline of the coast, rising sometimes to a height of 200 feet. From the central chain of hills to the south shore the land slopes gently down to the sea, and much of the land, being pure sand, was long incapable of cultivation, although it is yielding to modern methods and appliances. Between these hills and the bluff which overhangs the north shore is a level elevated plain, broken in many places by rocks and glacial debris, but on the whole capable of being brought to a high state of cultivation. The physical appearance of the entire island bears witness to the force of the movements of nature in the glacial period, and nowhere in America can that wonderful epoch be more closely or understandingly studied. In a general way it may be said that the south shore is level, while the north is full of bits of rugged nature, rocks, dells, splendid marine and land views and an ever changing vista of hills, forests, cultivated fields and rich pasture lands.

The entire coast line is indented with bays and inlets, some forming even in their ruggedness beautiful landscapes, and many of them affording splendid harbors and anchorages. On the south side of the island is the Great South Bay as it is called (although local names have been given to several sections), nearly one hundred miles long and from two to five miles broad, and it is separated from the Atlantic by a sandy bar from a fourth of a mile to a mile in width, changing its dimensions in every direction with every winter's

storm. To the west end of the island are Jamaica, Hempstead, Oyster and Huntington Bays, and at the east end Gardiner's, Little Peconic and Great Peconic Bays; and the Peconic River, the only stream of water of any size on the island, ends its course of some fifteen miles at Riverhead. Gardiner's, Fisher's and Plumb Islands are politically incorporated with Long Island.

There are scattered throughout the island, especially throughout its eastern half, many small sheets of inland water, none worthy of mention in a summary such as this except one, the largest of them all—Lake Ronkonkoma. This beautiful lake, about three miles in circumference, has a maximum depth of eighty-three feet; its waters are ever pure and cool, and it has no visible outlet or inlet. The latter peculiarities are common to many much smaller lakes on the island. Ronkonkoma lies in the midst of a beautiful landscape, into which it fits naturally, becoming the centre of one of the most delightful bits of scenery on Long Island. It was famous for its beauty even in the prehistoric Indian days, when the red man reigned and roamed over the soil, and many quaint and pathetic legends are yet associated with it, although it has now received the tinsel adornments common to a popular "resort."

The ocean bottom to the south of Long Island has a slope of about six feet to the mile, but intersected in what appears to have been the old valley of the Hudson by a series of deep depressions. In that distant time the shores of Long Island were much higher than now. It is impossible to tell when the age of retrogression set in, but it seems clear that the process is still going on, although so slowly as hardly to make any change visible to the casual eye in any single generation.

The animal life on Long Island presented nothing unusual. We have plenty of evidence that deer once had the freedom of the whole island and were hunted by the red men and the earlier settlers; but they have long been reduced to limited numbers in spite of the most

stringent game laws. It has been thought that the moose and elk once roamed through the forests, and in 1712 we read of an attempt being made to ship a pair of moose from Fisher's Island to England as a gift to Queen Anne, but this pair seems to have been the last of the race. Wolves which so often played havoc with the lives and stock of the pioneer settlers have long since disappeared. Foxes, too, which were plentiful at one time, are now imported, or the aniseed trail is made to do duty in their stead for hunting purposes, and the old-time presence of wild cats, beavers, bears, opossum, raccoons and many others is forgotten. It may be said that all the animals common to New York and Connecticut were common to Long Island, and are so still, although the increasing march of population and culture renders their numbers smaller year after year. Bird life was and is plentiful, and grouse in the earlier days especially so. It has been said that some 320 species have been found on the island, specimens of most of them being in the museum of the Long Island Historical Society. The island was a resting place for many migratory species of birds on their semi-annual journeys north and south or *vice versa*, and at such seasons it was a veritable sportsman's paradise. Indeed hunting was long, with agriculture, one of the arts by which the pioneers added to their store of wealth, while in the hands of an Indian a skin was a facile medium of exchange. The people, however, were early aroused to a consciousness that indiscriminate slaughter of animals or birds was a thing to be guarded against, and as early as 1786 the slaughter of deer and grouse was prohibited in Brookhaven except to actual citizens of the town. Since then the successive restrictions upon hunting have been numerous enough to form a theme for separate study, but stringent as they are Long Island is yearly becoming less and less a happy hunting ground for the man who goes out with a gun anxious to shoot something.

But in spite of the restrictions, the man

with the gun keeps steadily in evidence. On Nov. 6, 1901, when the season for killing deer opened, it was estimated that 2,000 "hunters" armed with rifles were on Long Island, ready for the "sport." It was then estimated that about 2,000 deer were on Long Island, the bulk being, roughly, in the central portion extending from Islip and Setauket to Riverhead. The center of the hunting area is in the neighborhood of the South Side Sportsmen's Club at Oakdale in whose preserves the deer are not permitted to be killed, even by its own members. It is possible that it is to this organization, and to the rigid way in which it guards its grounds and protects the game from slaughter that the deer on Long Island have not been exterminated long ago. It is one of the disputed points on the island whether or not the deer really should be preserved. The farmers would vote for their extermination, while the hotel-keepers and the summer visitors would like their numbers increased. The growth of large private estates within recent years would indicate a careful preservation of all sorts of game and a consequent increase in numbers, especially of deer—the most picturesque of all game in civilized and populated communities.

As early as 1679 we find the oyster industry in the Great South Bay a marked feature,—so marked that even then there was considered a possibility that the supply would be exhausted and orders were issued restricting the annual catch; but the bay from then to now has yearly extended its output, and the oyster industry of Long Island has brought to it more material wealth than any other. The inexhaustible supply of clams has also proved a profitable industry and over \$1,000,000 of capital is employed in the Menhaden fishery alone. The factories where the oil is extracted from these fish have never been popular in Long Island for various reasons, but they still give employment to several thousand workers every year in one way or another, and have contributed their share to the com-

mercial upbuilding of the section. Cód, bass and blue fish and other species—some 200 in all, it has been estimated—are common to the shores of Long Island, and generally are to be found, in their season, in immense quantities. The fisheries form quite a feature of the industrial life of the island, but the financial result, great as it is, is but a fraction of what it should be were the wealth of the sea worked as zealously and as scientifically as that which lies beneath the soil. However, Long Island has long been a delight to the amateur angler, and the many successful sporting clubs of which it now can boast all include angling, either with the seine or “with an angle,” after the gentle manner of old Izaak Walton.

Although from a botanical point of view the plant life of Long Island is not as varied or interesting as might be expected, still, if we accept the estimate made by Elias Lewis in 1883 that there were then eighty-three species of forest trees within its boundaries, there is not much cause for complaint. The most prolific of these trees was the locust, which was first planted at Sand’s Point about 1700 by Captain John Smith, who brought the pioneer specimens from Virginia. It spread with great rapidity and the quality of its lumber was regarded as better than that in the trees it left behind in its parent state. Nowhere else on the Atlantic coast does the locust flourish as on Long Island. Oaks, chestnut and walnut trees are to be found all over the island in great variety.

“Long Island,” writes Mr. Elias Lewis, “is fairly well wooded. Its forests are of oak, hickory, chestnut, locust, with many other species of deciduous trees. The evergreens indigenous to the soil are almost entirely of the yellow or pitch pine, *Pinus rigida*. At an early period of its history the forest growth of the island was doubtless heavier than now. There were oaks, chestnuts, tulip trees, and others of great age and of immense size: a few of these survive. The fox oaks at Flush-

ing, no longer existing, were historic trees and justly celebrated. A white oak at Green-vale, near Glen Cove, is twenty-one feet in girth, and is probably five hundred years old; another nearly as old is at Manhasset, in the Friends’ meeting-house yard; others similar are at Smithtown and vicinity. A tulip tree at Lakeville, on the elevated grounds of S. B. M. Cornell, impaired by age and storms, is twenty-six feet in girth near the ground, and was a landmark from the ocean more than a century ago. The famous black walnut at Roslyn, on grounds of the late W. C. Bryant, is probably the largest tree on Long Island; it measures twenty-nine feet in girth at the ground, and twenty-one feet at the smallest part of the trunk below the spread of its enormous branches. Chestnut trees in the neighborhood of Brookville and Norwich, in the town of Oyster Bay, are sixteen, eighteen and twenty-two feet in girth.

“The growth of hard-wood trees on Long Island is rapid. A few large trees standing indicate what they may have been, or what they might be if undisturbed. The evergreens grow with equal luxuriousness. A century and a half ago pitch pines were abundant from twenty inches to thirty-six inches in diameter.”

Of the physical history of Long Island, however, the most interesting feature has been its geology, and this has been so thoroughly recognized that most of the local historians, including Thompson and Prime, have devoted to the subject considerable space in their respective works. It is well to follow their example, but in this case an improvement will be effected by presenting the subject as handled by a specialist,—for no one but a devoted and constant student of geology can write understandingly and with authority upon the youngest and most exhaustive of all the sciences, as some one has called it. So here is given part of a paper on the geology of Long Island which was prepared by F. J. H. Merrill, the learned and studious State Geologist of New

York, and which has been buried in the transactions of one of our scientific societies for several years:

The lithology of Long Island is comparatively simple, the crystalline rocks being confined to quite a limited area. The greater part of the region consists of gravel, sand and clay, overlaid along the north shore and for some distance southward by glacial drift. This material forms an important element of the surface formation, and though it has been already described by Mather and Upham, I shall devote a short space to its discussion. For the sake of clearness, we may describe the drift as of two kinds: 1st, the till or drift proper, a heterogeneous mixture of gravel, sand and clay, with boulders, and 2d, the gravel drift, a deposit of coarse yellow gravel and sand, brought to its present place by glacial and alluvial action, but existing near by in a stratified condition, before the arrival of the glacier. This yellow gravel drift, which in a comparatively unaltered condition forms the soil of the pine barrens of southern and eastern Long Island, and is exposed in section at Crossman's brickyard in Huntington, is equivalent to and indeed identical with the yellow drift or preglacial drift of New Jersey, a formation of very great extent in that state, and of which the origin and source have not yet been fully explained, though it is always overlaid by the glacial drift proper where these formations occur together.

In the hills near Brooklyn the till attains its maximum depth. This has never been definitely ascertained, but is probably between 150 and 200 feet. The only information we have on the subject is from a boring in Calvary Cemetery, where the drift was 139 feet deep, and this point is nearly five miles north of Mount Prospect, which is 194 feet high and probably consists for the most part of till. The occurrence of this till is quite local and very limited along the north shore between Roslyn and Horton's Point. From the former locality eastward the hills are mainly composed of stratified gravel and sand, probably underlain by clay. On the railroad between Syosset and Setauket is an abundance of coarse gravel with but slight stratification. East of Setauket for some distance the drift is a fine yellowish sand, which washes white on the surface, and at Wading River the drift with cobble-stones was only eighteen inches thick where exposed, being underlain with fine yellow sand. Along

the remainder of the north shore to Orient Point, six feet was the maximum depth of drift observed. Under this were stratified sands, gravels and clays, usually dipping slightly from the shore. On Brown's Hills, north of Orient, the drift is overlaid by three feet of fine micaceous sand, which has probably been carried to its present position by the wind. The drift at this locality is a clayey till, and its surface is strewn with an abundance of boulders of coarse red gneiss. On Shelter Island are high ridges of gravel overlaid by a few feet of till. The hills from Sag Harbor eastward are also composed partially of unmodified drift, but the most extensive deposit on the east end of Long Island is between Nepeague Bay and Montauk Point. Here the drift is disposed in rounded hillocks from 80 to 200 feet above the sea, with bowl and trough-shaped depressions between. The bluffs along the south shore, which are rapidly yielding to the action of the waves, consist for the most part of boulder clay and hardpan of considerable depth, covered by a shallower layer of till. At a few places, however, on the south shore, west of the point, laminated blue clay streaked with limonite occurs, intercalated with the till. At the end of the point a similar bed of clay is exposed, overlaid by stratified sand. From the extremely limited character of the exposures I am unable to determine whether the clay underlies the whole of the point or is merely local in its occurrence. In character and position, however, it is analogous to beds occurring on Block Island.

The boulders of Long Island attract the attention of the geologist by their size and variety. They represent almost every geological age, fossiliferous rocks of the Helderberg, Oriskany and Cauda Galli, Hamilton, Chemung and Eocene periods having been found in the drift. Examples of these are in the collection of the Long Island Historical Society. There are also various members of the Archæan series, viz., gneiss, granite, syenite, hornblende, chlorite, talcose and mica schist, limestone, dolomite, and serpentine; and the Palæozoic and Mesozoic ages are represented by Potsdam sandstone, Hudson River slate, Oneida conglomerate or Shawangunk grit, Catskill sandstone, and Triassic sandstone and trap. As the lithology of the boulders has been described in detail by Mather (*Geol. 1st Dist. N. Y.*, pp. 165-177), it would be superfluous for me to undertake a similar description.

In addition to the rocks mentioned above, a ferruginous sandstone and conglomerate occur abundantly in fragments along the east shore of Hempstead Harbor, and in the drift between Glen Cove and Oyster Bay. Many of these fragments contain vegetable impressions, but in only two localities have any leaf prints been found. These were West Island, Dosoris, and the well of the Williamsburg Gas Co. The prints are supposed to belong to Cretaceous plants, but the evidence is incomplete.

Many of the erratic blocks are of immense size, one in particular, of gneiss, on Shelter Island, near Jennings' Point, contained as a solid mass over 9,000 cubic feet. It has split in three pieces since it was deposited. Mather (Geol. 1st Dist., p. 174) mentions a mass of granite near Plandome, which was estimated to contain 8,000 cubic yards above the surface of the ground.

Having thus briefly reviewed the characters of the surface drift, we will now consider in detail the strata which underlie it. The crystalline rocks outcrop along the shore at Hellgate and over a limited area in the vicinity of Astoria. They consist of finely laminated gneiss and schists, tilted at a high angle, and belong to the same formation as the rocks of Manhattan Island. I am informed by Mr. Elias Lewis, Jr., that in boring an artesian well in Calvary Cemetery, near Brooklyn, a bed of gneiss was encountered at a depth of 182 feet. Further than this we know nothing of the extent of the crystalline rocks on Long Island. The section obtained in the boring mentioned was as follows:

	FEET.
Surface loam and drift.....	139
Greenish earth	39
White clay with red streaks.....	4
Gneiss	400
Total	582

The greenish earth referred to lost its color on being treated with hydrochloric acid, and the white residue examined under the microscope appeared to consist of minute fragments of kaolinized feldspar, with occasional grains of quartz sand. The acid solution gave a strong reaction for iron, indicating a probable admixture of glauconite with the material. It is stated in Cozzens' Geological History of New York Island that a shell of *Exogyra costata*, with green-sand adhering, was found

between Brooklyn and Flatlands, at a depth of sixty feet. This locality is about five miles south of the well just mentioned, and would indicate the presence of Cretaceous strata near Brooklyn.

The following data, also furnished by Mr. Lewis, of a well dug by the Nassau Gas Light Co., in Williamsburg, will give an idea of the formation at that locality:

	FEET.	INCHES.
Surface loam	3	
Quick-sand (so called)	2	
Boulder clay, somewhat sandy.	70	
Blue clay with pebbles	27	
Oyster shells		6
Total	102	6

The shell-bed was underlaid by quicksand bearing water.

In the vicinity of Manhasset, on the road to Port Washington, are extensive exposures of stratified sand, more or less inclined from the horizontal. About 200 yards south of the postoffice, on the west side of the road, is a bank about 40 feet high, composed of a white, coarse, laminated sand, streaked with hydrous peroxide of iron, the layers dipping S. E. 13 degrees. A little northeast of the postoffice, along the road, there are banks of red sand cemented together in places by sesquioxide of iron and resembling the Cretaceous red sand bed of New Jersey.

On the shore of Manhasset Bay, near Port Washington, are high banks of coarse yellow stratified sand and gravel. This deposit is very irregular in its stratification, as it shows in many places the "flow and plunge" structure described by Dana, and which is evidently produced by swift currents. The depth of this formation cannot be determined; it is probably not less than 150 feet, and possibly is much greater. These beds dip about 15 degrees W.; the strike is nearly due north and south. Along the shore of Manhasset Bay, from Port Washington to Barker's Point, are extensive banks of stratified sand and gravel, much stained with iron and dipping westward. At Prospect Point and Mott's Point the banks are composed of coarse gravel similar to that at Port Washington.

Between Roslyn and Glen Cove there are high bands of red and flesh-colored sands, while at Carpenter's clay pits a most interesting section is presented. The greatest height

of this section is seventy-three feet, the strike of the beds being N. 80 degrees W. and the dip about 37 degrees northerly, the layers here apparently consisting of quartz, but susceptible of being easily crushed in the hand. The pebbles are traversed by innumerable cracks, and are composed of coarse white gravel and sand, and appear to have been subjected to the action of an alkaline solution. Interstratified with the gravel are layers of fine white clay, from six inches to one foot in thickness, stained pink in some places, and containing occasional fragments of a soft hematite or red ochre. Besides these beds there is a deposit of kaolin farther south, but its stratigraphical relations to the layer exposed could not be determined. This kaolin is a soft, white, granular, clayey substance, consisting chiefly of hydrous silicate of alumina from the decomposition of feldspar. In fact the whole deposit would seem to be the decomposition product of a granulite rock such as occurs abundantly in Westchester county, New York, and in southwestern Connecticut. In the north end of the bank is an unconformability, the gravel beds, which dip 37 degrees, being overlaid by stratified sand dipping 15 degrees in the same direction. The layers shown in this section form the north slope of an anticlinal flexure, the lowest beds being, I am informed by Mr. Coles Carpenter, one of the proprietors, almost vertical. An excavation made about 100 yards W. S. W. of the main pit, for the purpose of obtaining some leaf-prints, exposed the following section:

	FEET.	INCHES.
Gravelly drift	6	
White sand		18
Coarse sand		6
Reddish clay	2	
Grey, sandy carbonaceous clay with leaf-prints	4	
	14	

These beds dipped about 15 degrees S. W., the locality being on the south slope of the anticlinal. Owing to the sandy nature of the clay, and the dryness of the season, no satisfactory specimens could be obtained. The prints retain no carbon, but simply show the venation of the leaves.

North of Sea Cliff, along the shore of Hempstead Harbor, to the Glen Cove steamboat landing, is a series of clay beds outcropping on the beach and dipping N. by E. about

10 degrees; these beds are of various colors, blue, yellow, reddish, white and black. The reddish clays contain fragments of a soft hematite, and one of the blue layers is overlaid by about two inches of lignite in small fragments. Other layers contain pyritized lignite and nodular pyrites, but it is impossible to determine the nature and order of these beds accurately, without extensive excavations. Dark clays, with pyrites, are also reported to occur in Carpenter's pits at a considerable depth. In the beds of decomposed gravel already mentioned are many geodes of sand cemented together by hydrous and anhydrous sesquioxide of iron, containing a dark granular mass which analysis shows to consist chiefly of decomposed pyrites. The conclusion is therefore justifiable that the nodules of marcasite which once existed in the gravel beds have decomposed by oxidation, and the resulting ferric oxide has cemented the sand about them into a hard crust, while the nodules in the clay beds which were protected from oxidation have remained unaltered.

North of Glen Cove clays of various kinds occur at East and West Islands, Dosoris' and at Matinnecock Village. At the East Williston brickyard, near Mineola, there is a local deposit of grey micaceous clay. The depth of this, where excavated, varies from seven to eighteen feet. The clay overlies white laminated sands, stained with limonite, the upper surface of the sand being cemented together for the depth of an inch by the yellow oxide. Over the clay is about six inches of black alluvial earth.

At the brickyard on Centre Island, in Oyster Bay, there is a deposit of brown sandy clay over a bed of more homogeneous and tougher clay. These beds undulate in an east and west direction or away from the shore, and the lower stratum contains shaly concretions or claystones. About a mile north of the brickyard it is said that a bed of white fire clay has been found at a depth of twenty-five feet under the drift and sand. A little west from the U. S. Fish Hatchery, at the head of Cold Spring Harbor, is a bank of stratified gravel seventy feet high. About forty feet below the top of this bank is an exposure of laminated sand and sandy clay stained red, brown and yellow with oxide of iron, and a short distance below a chalybeate spring issues from the bank. The clay deposit at Stewart's brickyard, at Bethpage, is about sixty feet in depth. The surface stratum is a yellowish

micaceous clay, the lower part being mottled blue and yellow. It probably was originally a gray or blue clay, its present yellow color being due to the peroxidation and hydration of the iron contained. Of this stratum there is about thirty-five feet; below is about five feet of reddish sandy clay, and beneath this a blue-black sandy clay containing nodules of white pyrites. This stratum is about twenty-five feet deep and is underlaid by white sand. The beds are somewhat disturbed and folded, the uppermost being slightly undulating, while the two lower appear to be raised in a fold trending nearly east and west.

I am indebted to Mr. Lewis for the following section obtained in digging a well at Jericho in 1878, on the premises of Mr. Jules Kunz:

	FEET.	INCHES.
Surface loam	15	
Drift	36	
Yellow gravel	81	
Sand	15	
Sandy clay with a carbonized branch	4	
Yellow clay	3	
Blue and gray sandy clay with pyrites	30	
Micaceous sand	14	6
Total	198	6

From the same authority I have the following section of a well on Barnum's Island:

	FEET.
Sand and gravel, stratified.....	70
Clay and clayey sand with lignite.....	56
Gravel and fine sand with clayey sand..	44
Blue clay, clayey sand and silt, with lig- nite and pyrites.....	168
Total	338

In the third stratum, at a depth of 168 feet, a fragment of the stem of a crinoid was found, which, together with a complete set of specimens from the well, is in the collection of the Long Island Historical Society. The fossil fragment is probably from some Palæozoic formation, and has no special importance.

At Crossman's brickyard in Huntington, on the east shore of Cold Spring Harbor, we have an intersected section trending a little east of north, which is as follows:

	FEET.
Till and stratified drift.....	10
Quartz gravel	45
Red and blue "loam" or sandy clay.....	20
Diatomaceous earth	3
Yellow and red stratified sand.....	20
Red plastic clay.....	20
Brown plastic clay.....	25
Total	143

The bed of diatomaceous earth is of undetermined extent, and appears to be replaced a little to the east by a blue clay, which, however, contains some diatoms. It is undoubtedly equivalent to the bed of ochre which overlies the sand throughout the remainder of the section. At Jones' brickyard, adjoining Crossman's, there is a similar fold nearly at right angles to the first, but the upper portion has been removed by ice or water down to the sand. This stratum, which is yellow and brown in the north part of Crossman's yard, is dark red in the south end and at Jones'. It appears to be mixed with a fine red clayey matter which separates on washing.

The formation on Lloyd's Neck is similar to that at Crossman's, with regard to the composition of the strata. On the north side of East Neck, at Eckerson's brickyard, is a deposit of reddish clay underlaid by brown clay very similar to that at Crossman's. To the west of this is a bank of white quartz gravel, while on the east is an extensive deposit of fine, white quartz sand, laminated with red, yellow and brown waved streaks. The exact relations of these strata I was unable to determine, but from their analogies to other deposits I am inclined to consider the laminated sand as the more recent.

On the north end of Little Neck there is another large deposit of these laminated sands. At this point they dip S. E. about 15 degrees. The following section is given in Mather's Report Geol. of 1st Dist., p. 254:

	FEET.
1. Loose surface sand.....	1½
2. Dark-colored loamy sand and clay.	3
3. Yellowish and reddish sand, waved laminæ	4½
4. White sand tinged with yellow....	4
5. Sand similar but differing in color and direction of laminæ.....	4
6. Sand red, waved laminæ.....	30
7. White clay	4

	FEET.
8. White sand tinged with red or yellow	4
9. Clay, white like No. 7.....	3
10. Sand, white like No. 8.....	3
11. White clay like No. 7.....	5
12. White sand like No. 8.....	5
Total	70

South of this deposit, about half a mile, is a clay-pit which is worked by Captain Sammis, of Northport. Here the stratification is as follows:

	FEET.
Surface loam and drift.....	3 or 4
Sandy kaolin	10
Yellowish clay	4
Dark blue sandy clay.....	15
Dip, 5 degrees W.	

The lowest stratum is separated into thin laminae by equally thin layers of sand, in which are numerous impressions of fragments of vegetable matter, but only one leaf-print has been found; this is in the museum of the Long Island Historical Society. It is a small, broadly elliptical leaf, about three-fourths of an inch long. In this same bed was found several years ago a shark's tooth which has been identified as *Carcharodon angustidens* or *megalodon*. It is difficult to determine the relation of this stratum to the other layers in the vicinity, but it is probably of the same period as the laminated sands, and seems to be identical with a bed which Mather describes as occurring on Eaton's Neck. (Geol. 1st Dist., p. 228.)

At the brickyard near West Deer Park, beneath the gravel and drift, is a stratum of flesh-colored clay, underlaid by dark blue clay containing pyrites. I was informed by the owner, Mr. Conklin, that in the centre of the hill of gravel the clay rises up in a fold. Between Bethpage and West Deer Park is a deposit of ferruginous conglomerate and sandstone formed by the solidification of the stratified gravel and sand or yellow drift. This rock is very similar in composition and appearance to one which occurs in fragments in the glacial drift and contains vegetable impressions. At Provost's yard, near Fresh Ponds, are quite extensive beds of brown sandy clay, reddish clay, and chocolate-brown clay, dipping from

the shore. The red and chocolate clays are probably identical with the similar beds at Crossman's in Huntington.

Lake Ronkonkoma is in a basin of which the bottom is about 210 feet below the high ground on the south. Its southern bank is composed of laminated sand streaked with oxide of iron, and the rest of the shore appears to be formed of the same material. At Crane Neck Point are bluffs, 60 feet high, of sand and gravel containing masses of ferruginous sandstone of recent date. At Herod's Point the bluffs consist of fine yellow sand and gravel, slightly stratified, and dipping a few degrees south. Limonite concretions are here abundant. The bluffs at Friar's Head are about 120 feet high, and consist of yellow stratified sand with pebbles. Over these is a dune of yellowish drifted sand 90 feet high, making the total height of the peak 210 feet. On the west side of Robbin's Island is an exposure of blue clay overlaid by laminated ferruginous sand. The depth of this clay-bed has not been determined, but it is similar in appearance and quality to some of the clays near Huntington, especially at Crossman's brick-yard. A chalybeate spring issues from the laminated sand on the shore, a little to the south of the clay-pit. The clay bed appears to dip southward about 10 degrees throughout the whole extent of the island. Near the railroad between Southold and Greenport are two brickyards. At the more easterly of the two there are various deposits of stratified sand and clay very much folded and tilted. At this place the section exposed shows two parallel folds, the axes of which trend a little north of east. The upper stratum of brown clay contains angular fragments of mica schist. At the other yard they are working a bed precisely similar to that just mentioned and also containing angular fragments of rock.

On Shelter Island are high hills of gravel with a thin covering of till; the highest point is about 180 feet above tide. West of the village of Orient is a narrow isthmus of sand beach and salt meadow, about a mile and a half long and not more than ten feet above tide. East of this, on the north side of the peninsula, Brown's Hills extend along the shore for a mile and a half, the highest point being 128 feet above Long Island Sound. The structure of these hills is difficult to determine, as extensive land slides have occurred, and the

slopes are covered with grass and bushes. One exposure gave the following section:

	FEET.
Drift	3
Fine yellow sand	8
Micaceous clay	1
Micaceous sand	25
Total	37

The micaceous sand occurs at the foot of the bluffs along the shore in this vicinity. It may also be seen half a mile west of Orient, in a bank by the road-side.

On Gardiner's Island a very complete section is exposed on the southeast shore, which exhibits the strata to the depth of about 250 feet. Here stratified sands and clays of various kinds and colors are raised up in two parallel anticlinal folds. In the southerly fold the stratum is a light red, fine, plastic clay, very similar to that at Crossman's in Huntington; it is here exposed to a depth of about 100 feet and is upheaved at a high angle, its outer slopes dipping about 45 degrees, while along the axis of the fold the laminæ are vertical. The northern anticlinal has about 15 degrees dip on either side, and in its north slope is a stratum of yellowish clayey sand containing a bed of post-pliocene shells, at an average height of 15 feet above the sea. The formation which is here brought to view probably underlies the whole of the island, as it is exposed at various other points. On the north and southeast shores the beds are very much disturbed and folded, and the surface of the island is raised in a series of parallel ridges corresponding in position to the folds and having a general trend of N. 65 degrees E. The highest point on the island is 128 feet above the sea; the bluffs along the shore being from twenty-five to seventy feet high. The fossiliferous stratum is about 20 feet long and four feet thick, containing an abundance of shells, most of which appear to have been crushed by superincumbent pressure. The locality was visited in 1863 by Prof. Sanderson Smith, who describes the bed as 150 to 200 feet long.

* * *

Napeague Beach, east of Amagansett, is three miles long and one-quarter of a mile broad, consisting entirely of white quartz sand. Along the shore on the north and south are dunes of drifted sand 20 or 30 feet high, but the main portion of the beach probably averages less than 10 feet above the sea. East

of the beach the country for twelve miles to the end of Montauk Point is chiefly a terminal moraine, and as such I have already briefly described it.

HISTORICAL GEOLOGY.

Having thus reviewed in detail the various strata underlying the drift, we come now to consider their age and history. Without attempting to decide the geological equivalence of the crystalline rocks at Astoria, we will discuss the unsolidified deposits which have just been described.

From the position and strike of the Cretaceous strata in New Jersey and Staten Island, it has been surmised by geologists that they underlie Long Island throughout the whole or a portion of its extent. The locality at which the strata most resemble the Cretaceous beds of New Jersey is Glen Cove, where the clays already described are probably of this age. If the Cretaceous formation extends under the whole of Long Island it must occur at a very great depth, since deep sections at points east of Glen Cove do not reveal its presence.

In regard to this formation and the following, it should be understood that sufficient data have not yet been obtained to warrant an attempt to map out their extent. The only exposures are in vertical sections along the shore and in various clay-pits or similar excavations; and there being an immense amount of quaternary material overlying them, no satisfactory degree of accuracy can be as yet attained in this regard.

The Tertiary strata of Long Island cannot as yet be identified with much more certainty than the Cretaceous. From their character and position we may surmise that the brown and red plastic clays of Huntington, Gardiner's Island and elsewhere belong to the age in question, but we have no palæontological evidence except from the shark's tooth found on Little Neck, which would identify the bed in which it occurred as Eocene or Miocene. The stratified sands and gravels, however, which overlies the supposed Cretaceous and Tertiary beds, and in turn are overlaid unconformably by surface drift and till, we may accept as Post-pliocene, from the analogy of their composition, structure and position to the deposits of Gardiner's Island and Sankaty Head, of which the fossils determine the age beyond question; unfortunately, however, there is no unconform-

ability to show where the Tertiary ends and the Quaternary begins.

At various times and places fossil shells and lignite have been found on Long Island. I append a synopsis of a list of these compiled by Elias Lewis, Jr., from Mather's Report and from other sources:

presumed Cretaceous and Tertiary beds were deposited we know nothing; though it is reasonable to conclude that they consist of the debris of New York and New England rocks carried down from the highlands and deposited along the coast by rivers or by other agencies of transportation. The overlying deposits of

NATURE OF FOSSIL	LOCALITY AND DATE	DEPTH	AUTHORITY
1. Recent shells.	Fort Lafayette.	23-53 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
2. <i>Pyrula</i> , clam, oyster.	New Utrecht.	43-67 feet.	Thompson's Hist. of L. I.
3. Clam and oyster shells.	Well in Prospect Park.		E. Lewis, Jr.
4. Clam and oyster shells.	Well at Flatbush Almshouse.	40-50 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
5. 2 Petrified clams.	Flatbush.	100 feet.	{ W. J. Furnam, Antiquities of Long Island.
6. <i>Orygyra Costata</i> , with grain sand.	Bet. Brooklyn and Flatlands.	60 feet.	{ Dr. J. C. Jay, Ann. of Lyc. Nat. Hist., 1842.
7. Oyster shells.	High grounds in Brooklyn.	73 feet.	Furman's Antiquities.
8. Clam shells.	Fort Greene, 1814.	70 feet.	Furman's Antiquities.
9. <i>Anomia ephippium</i> .	Cor. Jay & Front St., Brooklyn	15 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
10. Oyster shells.	Nassau Gas Light Co., Williamsburg.	127 ft. 6 in.	E. Lewis, Jr.
11. Log of wood.	Bushwick.	40 feet.	Thompson's History.
12. Shells.	Newtown.	70 feet.	Thompson's History.
13. Clam shells.	East New York.	80 feet.	Thompson's History.
14. Wood.	Three miles west of Jamaica.	25 feet.	Thompson's History.
15. Clam and oyster shells.	Lakeville.	{ 85 ft. above tide. { 140 to 160 feet.	Henry Onderdonk, Jr.
16. Clam, oyster and scallop shells.	Lakeville.	{ 200 ft. above tide { 47 feet.	J. H. L'Hommedieu.
17. Wood.	Great Neck, 1813.	50 feet.	Thompson's History.
18. Oyster shells.	Manhasset, 1813.	78 feet.	Thompson's History.
19. Shells.	Bet. Manhasset and Roslyn.	140 feet.	Thompson's History.
20. Stem of Crinoid.	Barnum's Island.	168 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
21. Lignite.	Barnum's Island.	100-383 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
22. Wood.	Near Westbury.	Great depths.	Thompson's History.
23. Wood.	Hempstead Plains, 1804.	100-108 feet.	Dwight's Travels.
24. Carbonized wood.	Sea Cliff, 1845.	94 feet.	Isaac Coles.
25. Lignite.	Glen Cove, 1864.	40 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
26. Lignite.	Jericho, 1878.	96 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
27. Wood.	Cold Spring.	110 feet.	Thompson's History.
28. <i>Carcharodon angustidens</i>	Little Neck.		P. B. Sills.
29. Log of wood.	Strong's Neck.	40 feet.	Thompson's History.
30. Clam shells.	Shelter Island, 1898.	57 feet.	Thompson's History.
31. Shells.	Wells at Amagansett.		E. Lewis, Jr.
32. Bones of mastodon.	Jamaica Pond, 1846.		
33. <i>Uros mercenaria</i> .	Yaphank.	{ 100 ft. above tide. { 20 feet.	E. Lewis, Jr.
34. <i>Ostrea Virginiana</i> .	Sag Harbor, 1864.	180 ft. above tide	Dr. Cook.

In view of the fact that we have nowhere else any good evidence of a change of sea level amounting to 200 feet in the vicinity of New York during the Glacial epoch, we can only account for the high elevation of some of these fossils by supposing that they, with their containing beds, have been raised to their present position by glacial action in the manner I shall describe.

Of the physical conditions under which the

stratified gravel, sand and clay, part of which, as before stated, are equivalent to the "yellow drift" of New Jersey, are also difficult to account for. They consist largely of transported material from older beds, and by their structure indicate that they have been formed by swift currents which carried along and deposited coarse and fine material mingled together. Their fossils, so far as we know, exclude them from the Tertiary, and they under-

lie the drift unconformably, although by definition the Glacial period begins the Quaternary age.

If, however, we assume in the Quaternary a succession of glacial epochs, or alternate periods of advance and retreat of the ice-sheet, as suggested by Croll's theory, we can explain the origin of the beds in question by supposing that during the epoch of glaciation immediately preceding their deposition the ice-sheet did not reach so far south, while the floods of the succeeding warmer epoch modified and spread over the sea-bottom the drift thus formed.

In order to appreciate more exactly the relations of these Post-pliocene beds to the glacial drift, it will be necessary to consider some very interesting phenomena. Along the north shore of Long Island from Flushing to Orient Point are exhibited most striking evidences of glacial action. We find the stratified gravels, sands and clays upheaved by the lateral pressure of the ice-sheet and thrown into a series of marked folds at right angles to the line of glacial advance, which, judging from the grooves and striæ on the rocks of New York and Connecticut, was about S. 30 degrees E. The glacier having thus crumpled and folded the underlying strata, it evidently rode over them and continued its course southward, pushing before it an immense mass of sand and gravel, together with debris from the rocks of New York and New England.

The theory that Long Island Sound was a body of water previous to the arrival of the ice-sheet would seem to be sustained by the character of the detritus deposited by the ice on Long Island. From Brooklyn to White-stone, where the sound is narrow, the till or drift proper is quite conspicuous; east of this it becomes less noticeable, and beyond Roslyn, as before stated, it does not again occur in abundance until we reach the vicinity of Greenport, where the Sound again grows narrow. This seems to be due to the fact that the finer debris of the northern rocks was carried along imbedded in the lower part of the glacier. The channel of the East River, owing to its narrowness, was filled up and passed over, the till being deposited to form the range of hills near Brooklyn; but in crossing the broader part of the Sound the ice probably lost the greater portion of its load of till, and only carried over the boulders which were on the surface or in the upper part of the glacier. On reaching the north shore of the island the

alluvial gravel and sands were scooped up and pushed forward in front of the ice-sheet, to form the "moraine," and the boulders, when the ice melted, were deposited on the surface. The map shows that the principal bays on the north shore penetrate the land in a direction identical with that of the advance of the glacier. We may reasonably infer from this fact that these indentations were ploughed out by projecting spurs of ice, and the inference is supported by the fact that the bays are walled in by high ridges which have been formed largely through the upheaval of the beds by lateral thrust. The best example of this displacement in the formation of a bay is shown in the section at Crossman's clay-pit in Huntington, which I have previously described. Harbor Hill, which stands at the head of Hempstead Harbor, is 384 feet high and chiefly consists of gravel and sand more or less stratified. Jane's Hill, four miles S. S. E. of the head of Cold Spring Harbor, is 383 feet high, and is composed of the same materials. In the vicinity of each of these hills, moreover, there are other ridges and elevations averaging about 300 feet in height. Southeasterly from Huntington Bay we have the Dix Hills and Comac Hills rising about 250 feet. Southeast of Smithtown Harbor, we have Mt. Pleasant, 200 feet in height; in a like direction from Stony Brook Harbor are the Bald Hills, also 200 feet high. Again we have Reulands Hill, which is 340 feet in height, and has the same general bearing from Port Jefferson Harbor. About South 30 degrees East from Wading River, where there is quite a deep valley, we find Terry's Hill, 175 feet high. South of Great Peconic Bay rise the Shinnecock Hills, 140 feet, and southeasterly from Little Peconic Bay are the Pine Hills, about 200 feet high. From these instances it will be seen that the areas of high elevation bear a very marked geographical relation to the deep indentations of the coast. That this relation is due to glacial action, seems more than probable, as it can scarcely be an accidental coincidence that the highest hills on the island should be in a line with the deepest bays on the northern coast, and that the course of these bays should coincide with that of the glacier.

At every point along the north shore where a section of the strata is exposed, the flexed structure of the beds under the drift may be observed. On Gardiner's Island these folds are remarkably prominent, the surface of the island being broken with numerous parallel

ridges having a general trend N. 65 degrees E. These ridges correspond to folds in the stratified beds, which the surface drift overlies unconformably, and as they are at right angles to the line of glacial advance it is difficult to conceive any agency which could have produced them except the lateral thrust of the ice-sheet. Unless these phenomena can be referred satisfactorily to some other cause, and of this I very much doubt the possibility, we have in these folds a strong argument against the iceberg theory, as it seems evident that a mere drifting berg could not develop sufficient progressive force to do the work here shown. A similar origin may be attributed to the ranges of hills which form the so-called "backbone" of the island, as their structure indicates that they have been formed partly of gravel and sand transported from the north shore and partly through the upheaval of the stratified beds by the friction of the moving mass of ice. As the downward pressure of the glacier was about 450 lbs. per square inch for 1,000 feet of thickness, and its progressive force was only limited by the resistance of the ice, it is quite reasonable to assume it capable of producing such a result. At one locality, West Deer Park, this is manifestly the case, and I have no doubt that in time it will be found generally true. The numerous springs that issue from the hillsides along the north shore also lead one to infer that the substratum of clay has been raised up in the center of the hills. The occurrence of the springs might be accounted for hypothetically by supposing that morainal hills, distributed on the plain, eroded *horizontal* strata of sand underlaid by clay; but this we know is not the case.

Mr. Upham, in his discussion of the moraines, attributes all the stratified deposits to diluvial and alluvial action in the Champlain period, to which the Gardiner's Island deposit has been erroneously referred. He also concludes that the more southern drift hills, which are from 200 to 250 feet high, were formed in ice-walled river-channels formed upon the surface of the glacial sheet when rapidly melting. That this process has taken place in some cases is quite probable, as there are undisputed kames in certain places; but from the analogy of the deposits in question to the others described, I am inclined to refer them generally to the same causes.

The changes which have occurred on Long Island since the retreat of the glacier have been mainly topographical, and unquestionably

very extensive. The streams of the Champlain epoch carried down the drift from the morainal hills and distributed it on the plain to the south, forming in many places local beds of clay. In the vicinity of Bethpage and elsewhere are hillocks of stratified sand similar in appearance to the New England kames. The valleys mentioned above, which have been examined by Elias Lewis, Jr., are unquestionably the channels of streams resulting from the melting of the glacier.

The coast line of the island is rapidly changing on account of the action of the swift westerly currents, which are wearing away the east end and depositing the sediment along the north and south shores. By this means the bays which open into the Sound are rapidly becoming shallow. The Great South Beach is also an evidence of the action of the waves and currents in changing the outline of Long Island. We have, moreover, abundant evidence that the south shore has been gradually sinking. This subsidence probably began in the later Quaternary and may be still continuing.

ECONOMIC GEOLOGY.

Magnetite is the only metallic ore found on Long Island, and occurs almost everywhere on the beaches in the form of sand. It is not, however, sufficiently abundant in any one locality to render its collection profitable. A company was started some time since for the purpose of separating the ore, in the vicinity of Quogue, from its associated quartz and garnet sand by means of powerful electro-magnets; but the enterprise proved unsuccessful. Iron pyrites in its white variety, or marcasite, is common in the lower clay beds, but does not occur in sufficient abundance to pay for utilizing it. Lignite occurs only in small quantities and usually at great depths. Peat of an inferior kind, composed of the matted roots of grasses and other plants, occurs at the heads of most of the bays on the south shore, but is not used to any extent.

Although not productive of any of the valuable minerals, Long Island may be considered peculiarly rich, from the fact that almost the whole of the island can be utilized in the arts and trades. Its sands and gravels are of every kind in use, and its clays are suited for the manufacture of fine grades of brick and pottery. The former materials are largely

The most extensive deposit of fine pottery clay occurs at Glen Cove, on the premises of the Messrs. Carpenter. This clay is very plastic and burns a light cream color. The friable quartz pebbles described above produce, when shipped from Port Washington and the vicinity for building purposes. ground, the finest quality of white sand for glass and pottery. The deposit of kaolin is also unsurpassed. In addition to these materials, this locality furnishes fire-sand for pottery, gray and blue pottery clays and an excellent fire-clay.

The next locality of note is Huntington. In this town is an immense deposit of the finest brick clay, upheaved to such an elevation that it is easily accessible. The beds are worked at Crossman's and Jones' brick-yards, and extend throughout Lloyd's Neck. Between

Huntington and Cold Spring a large deposit of white pottery-clay has been worked for many years. The brick-clay extends east over ten miles, and is worked at Eckerson's yard on East Neck, and Provost's at Fresh Ponds. At Eckerson's and at Sammis' pits, on Little Neck, are immense deposits of fire-sand, which extend over Eaton's and Lloyd's Necks.

A little west of Greenport are two brick-yards at which a bed of glacial clay is being worked. Between these two yards is a bed of mottled blue clay, used for making flower pots. The most extensive deposit of all, however, is that on Gardiner's Island. This clay is unsurpassed for the manufacture of bricks, and from the abundant supply of molding-sand and the easy accessibility of the locality by water, must in time prove an important source of revenue.



CHAPTER II.

THE INDIANS AND THEIR LANDS.

THE story of the red man on Long Island is an epitome of that of his race all over the American continent. When we first meet him he is rich as riches went among Indians, powerful, living in regular communities under a recognized head, waging war, engaging in the chase, his daily life hallowed by traditions, circumscribed by superstition, and rounded out by a blind religion which taught him that there was a hereafter, but a hereafter in its features very much like those he regarded as brightest and best in the present. Still, it was a religion, and if it did not elevate him sufficiently to make him an enthusiast, it at least made him a stoic. Then, when the time came for him to be measured with the white man, he imitated the latter's vices, not his virtues,—or but few of them—and gradually but surely he became beaten in the struggle for existence, cheated, wronged and cozened at every turn, sometimes under the guise of the requirements of civilization, the authority of religion, or the inflexible demands of modern progress. Originally strong and numerous, the aborigines steadily dwindled under the influence of the resources of civilization until their representatives are now but a handful, and these are facing the inevitable end, of total annihilation, not very far distant. It is a sad story, a painful story, that of the undoing of an ancient race, but it must be told. The white man was not altogether to blame, for he was but the factor in the carrying out of an inexorable law—the survival of the fittest. One comfort is that on Long Island the story is more gentle, less

accompanied by blood and rapine and tragedy, than in most of the other sections of the country where the Indians were at all powerful.

As is the case with all efforts at solving early Indian history, there exists much doubt as to the identity of those occupying Long Island when it was first discovered by the white adventurers, and the effort at solution has involved considerable controversy and still left much that is vague and obscure. Into that controversy we cannot enter here, for controversy is not history; but it may safely be said that the consensus of opinion, the drift of all the evidence produced, is that the aborigines of Long Island were a part of the great family of Algonquins and belonged to the group designated by the Dutch pioneers as the Mohegan nation. The language spoken over the island is described as being that of the Algonquins, the same which prevailed all over the seaboard and throughout the northeastern part of the present United States, but doubtless was diversified by as many dialects as there were tribes or clans. John Eliot used it in his translation of the New Testament and other books, biblical and theological, which nowadays form the best record of a language which has forever passed from the lips of living men.

The tribes or clans of the Mohegans on Long Island were as follows:*

*The proper spelling of Indian names has never been reduced to an exact science, but throughout this chapter we give the most generally accepted form first, followed, where need be, by one or more accepted variations.

I. Canarsies (Canarsee, Canarsie): Occupied Kings county and part of the old county of Queens as far as Jamaica.

Subordinate tribes: (1) Marechawicks, Brooklyn. (2) Nyacks, New Utrecht; seem to have settled on Long Island about 1646. (3) Jamecos, Jamaica.

II. Rockaways: Occupied Hempstead, Rockaway and parts of Jamaica and Newtown.

III. Matinecocks: Occupied lands from Flushing to Fresh Pond, Glen Cove, Cold Spring, Huntington, Cow Harbor.

IV. Nesaquakes (Missaquogue, Nissequah): Occupied lands from Fresh Pond to Stony Brook.

V. Setaukets (Setalcats): From Stony Brook to the Wading River, including Strong's Neck.

VI. Corchaugs: Claimed the territory east of the Wading River, including the entire townships of Riverhead and Southold and also Robin's Island.

VII. Merokes (Morrick Merikoke): Claimed land between Near Rockaway and Oyster Bay, through the middle of the island. Part of Hempstead was purchased from this tribe.

VIII. Marsapeagues (Marsapequa): From Fort Neck to Islip and north of about the center of Suffolk county. The Merokes are believed to have been a branch of this tribe. The battle of 1653, at which Capt. Underhill was victorious, was mainly fought against the Marsapeagues.

IX. Secatogues (Secatague): In and around Islip township. "The farm owned by the Wallets family at Islip is called Secatogue Neck, and was, it is supposed, the chief settlement and residence of the Sachem."—Thompson.

X. Patchogues: Patchogue to Canoe Place. A Sag Harbor newspaper in 1830 mentions the death on Jan. 5, of that year, at Patchogue, of "Elizabeth Job, relict of Ben Job and Queen of the Indians in that place, leaving but two females of her tribe, both well-stricken in years."

XI. Shinnecoeks: Ranged from Canoe Place to Easthampton, including Sag Harbor and Peconic Bay. At Shinnecock Neck is the reservation of about 400 acres on which yet linger the survivors of this once flourishing tribe, now numbering about 100. They have lost their ancient tongue and most of their ancient customs and ideas, and are reported to be a practical, hard-working and fairly prosperous body, a body which has adopted the customs and ways of the now dominant race, but is steadily decreasing decade after decade.

XII. Montauks: The Montauk Peninsula and Gardiner's Island. "About the year 1819, Stephen, the King or Sachem of the Montauk Indians, died, and was buried by a contribution. This Indian King was only distinguished from others of his tribe by wearing a hat with a yellow ribbon on it."

XIII. Manhassets: Shelter Island and Hog Island. Tradition says they could at one time place 500 warriors on the warpath.

There are legendary traces of the existence of several other tribes on the island, but all actual record of them has passed away.

For several decades following 1609, when Hendrick Hudson anchored in Gravesend Bay and commenced that intercourse of white men with red which marked the beginning of the extermination of the latter, we get but few glimpses of the aborigines, and these glimpses are by no means altogether favorable to the whites. It must be remembered that the latter were intruders; that their main object was to acquire wealth; that they did not understand, or seek to understand, the natives, and that trouble necessarily arose between them from the first. The stories of the primitive transactions between the two are now, in a measure, lost to us, and the early writings we have, of course, all show the white man's idea of his American burden; but it should be remembered that the white man himself was a burden upon the native and proved in the end a burden that crushed him back into the earth from whence he came.

Writing about 1832, Gabriel Furman, the

most eminent and painstaking of the early antiquaries of Long Island, said:

The old Dutch inhabitants of Kings county have a tradition that the Canarsie tribe were subject to the Mohawks, as all the Iroquois were formerly called, and paid them an annual tribute of dried clams and wampum. When the Dutch settled in this country they persuaded the Canarsies to keep back the tribute, in consequence of which a party of the Mohawks came down and killed their tributaries whenever they met them. The Canarsie Indians are at this time totally extinct; not a single member of that ill-fated race is now in existence.

We have still preserved in the records of the Dutch government of this colony historical evidence of the truth of this tradition and some account of this extraordinary incursion of the Iroquois, or the Five Nations of Indians, upon Long Island. They seem to have regarded all the Indians of the great Mohegan family, in the southern part of this colony, as their tributaries, and they probably were so long anterior to the Dutch settlement of this country. After the Dutch colonization the Indians on Long Island appear to have discontinued the payment of the usual tribute to the Iroquois, or to the Mohawks, as they were generally called, that being the Iroquois tribe most contiguous to the European settlements, being located then a little south of Albany, upon the west side of the Hudson River, and thus for a long time with the European colonists the name of Mohawks was used to designate the whole Iroquois Confederacy, and the Long Island Indians did this probably from the belief that the Iroquois would not dare come down and attack them among the European settlements. But in this they were greatly mistaken, for in the year 1655, with the view of chastising all their former tributaries in the southern part of the colony, a large body of these northern Indians descended upon the Hudson River and made a landing upon Staten Island, where they massacred sixty-seven persons. * * * After this the Indian army crossed to Long Island and invested the town of Gravesend, which they threatened to destroy, but which was relieved by a detachment of Dutch soldiers sent from New Amsterdam. Upon their abandoning the siege of Gravesend the Dutch records give no further account of them than to mention that all this was done when those northern Indians

were on their way to wage war against the Indians upon the east end of Long Island. It was undoubtedly directly after leaving Gravesend that they fell upon and destroyed the Canarsie tribe and afterward proceeded down through the island with that terrible foray of murder, the account of which has been preserved in tradition to this day, and to prevent a repetition of which the Consistory of the Dutch Church at Albany undertook to be the agent to see that the required tribute was yearly paid by the Long Island Indians to the Five Nations. So great was the dread of the Iroquois among the Indians of this island, arising from the tradition preserved of this terrible incursion, that a very aged lady, who was a small girl of eight or nine years before the commencement of the Revolutionary war, tells us that five or six Indians of the Iroquois nation were for some offence brought to New York and sent to Jamaica upon Long Island; and that, although they were prisoners, not one of the Long Island Indians could be induced to look, with person exposed, upon any of these terrible "Mohawks," as they called them; but very many of them would be continually peeping around corners and from behind other people to get a sight at those northern Indians, and at the same time expressing the utmost fear and dread of them.

Mrs. Remsen, the widow of Anthony Remsen, formerly of Brooklyn, says that soon after she was married they moved to Canarsie, now [1832] about forty years since, where she made the shroud in which to bury the last individual of the remnant of the Canarsie tribe of Indians. This last remnant of that tribe also told her of the tradition, before mentioned, of the destruction of the greater portion of the Canarsie tribe by the Mohawks. This Indian told her that three or four families of them, having become alarmed by the shrieks and groans of their murdered friends, fled for the shore of the bay, got into their canoes and paddled off to Barren Island, forming part of the Great South Beach, whither the Mohawks could not, or did not, follow them. They returned late in the following day, and soon ascertained that they constituted the only living representatives of their entire tribe, who had the night previous lain down to rest in apparent security; and that no trace was to be discovered of their barbarous enemies. It was some days, however, before they ventured to return permanently to their old residences, and not before they became en-

tirely satisfied that the Mohawks had returned to their homes.

This Indian incursion caused the Dutch Government to feel much apprehension on the subject of Indian attacks upon the towns of the western part of this island for a long time subsequent. The inhabitants of Flatbush were ordered by Gov. Stuyvesant, in 1656, a short time after that foray, to enclose their village with palisades to protect them from the Indians.

And again, to prevent the incursions of Indians, the Governor, in 1660, ordered the inhabitants of Brooklyn to put their town in a state of defense and also commanded the farmers to remove within the fortifications under the penalty of forfeiting their estates.

The Dutch colonists appeared to have lived in almost continued apprehension of the Iroquois. On the 26th of June, 1663, Gov. Stuyvesant informed the church of Brooklyn that the Esopus [Ulster county] Indians, who were then in league with the Iroquois, had on the 7th of that month attacked and burnt the town of Esopus [Kingston], killing and wounding a number of the inhabitants and taking many prisoners, burning the new town and desolating the place. July 4, 1663, was observed as a day of thanksgiving on account of a treaty of peace with the Indians, the release of prisoners and the defeat of the English attempt to take the whole of Long Island.

But the northern Indians were not the only ones who rendered life miserable to the aborigines on Long Island. Dr. Prime, in his "History" (1845), gives the following additional details of events which happened shortly after the Mohawks' raid, in which the Narragansett (Rhode Island) Indians played havoc with the Montauks, against whom they carried on war for several years:

In one of these assaults, led on by Nini-craft, the chief of the Narragansetts, Wyandanch (Grand Sachem) was surprised in the midst of a marriage feast while he, with his braves, was celebrating the nuptials of his only daughter. Their wigwams were fired, their granaries rifled or destroyed, their principal warriors slain, and, to complete the triumph of the enemy and the misery of the unfortunate chief, the youthful bride was carried away captive, leaving the bridegroom, who had just

plighted his troth, weltering in his own blood. It was for procuring the ransom of this beloved daughter that Wyandanch, in the last year of his life, gave to Lion Gardiner a conveyance of the territory now constituting the principal part of Smithtown. [The deed is now in the possession of the Long Island Historical Society.]

The conduct of the Long Island Indians towards the whites is without a parallel in the history of this country. It was to be expected that individual acts of aggression should occur on the part of a barbarous people, for real or supposed injuries. But even these were rare, and the Indians always showed themselves willing to submit to an impartial investigation and just decision of alleged wrongs.

One of the first occurrences of this kind was the murder of a woman at Southampton in 1649, which instantly spread fearful apprehension of a general insurrection against the white settlements. The magistrates of that town immediately sent a messenger to Montauk and summoned Wyandanch to appear before them. His councillors, fearing that he would be summarily condemned to death by way of retaliation, advised him not to obey the summons. Before he expressed his own opinion he submitted the case to Mr. Gardiner, who happened to be lodging in his wigwam that same night. By his advice he set out immediately for Southampton, Mr. Gardiner agreeing to remain as hostage to the tribe for the safety of their beloved chief. With amazing celerity he not only accomplished the journey of twenty-five miles, but actually apprehended on his way and delivered to the magistrates the murderers of the woman, who, instead of being his own subjects, proved to be two Pequot Indians from the main [Connecticut], some of whom were generally lurking on the island for the purpose of promoting disturbances between the natives and the new settlers. These men, being sent to Hartford, were tried, convicted and executed.

It is a remarkable fact which should be recorded to the eternal honor of the Long Island Indians that they never formed a general conspiracy, even of a single tribe, against the whites. The only apparent exception to this remark, it being the only instance in which the natives stood upon their arms against their new neighbors, was the ever-to-be-lamented battle of Fort Neck; and although the origin of this unfortunate rencounter is veiled in ob-

security, there were circumstances connected with the event which induce the belief that if the whole truth could be developed, instead of implicating the poor natives in the guilt of that transaction they would appear entitled to the universal respect and gratitude of the settlers. It was generally believed at the time that the dissatisfaction and aggression in which this affair originated were instigated by the Dutch Government with a view to expel the English from Long Island and Connecticut. The fact is on record that some of the Long Island chiefs sent a messenger to Connecticut with the information that the Dutch Fiscal had offered them arms and ammunition and clothing on condition of their joining in the destruction of the English; and it is added that strong efforts were made to induce the western tribes to renounce their allegiance to the Montauk chief, who was known to be the stanch friend of the English settlers. These statements were, indeed, indignantly denied by the Dutch Governor and an examination invited, for which commissioners were appointed. But they broke up without accomplishing their object or allaying the suspicions which had been previously excited.

These threatening rumors spread fearful apprehension to the extreme end of the island, and every town adopted measures of defense. An application was made to the commissioners of the United Colonies of New England for aid, and, although it was defeated by the opposition of Massachusetts, the Legislature of Rhode Island, alone, resolved to send help to their brethren in this emergency. They accordingly commissioned their officers to proceed to Long Island, with twenty volunteers and some pieces of ordnance, and it is not the least deplorable circumstance in this expedition that the chief command was committed to Capt. John Underhill, of Massachusetts notoriety, who, to say nothing of his moral character, had learned the mode of dealing with Indians in New England, and not on Long Island.

When matters came to the worst it appears that only a part of the Marsapeague tribe, with a few dissatisfied individuals from other tribes, whose hostility the Dutch had aroused and could not now control, assembled in hostile array. They entrenched themselves in the town of Oyster Bay, on the south side, in a redoubt or fort in extent about fifty by thirty yards, the remains of which are still visible and have ever since borne the name of Fort

Neck. Here, without having made any aggression on the surrounding country, they were attacked by the English, who, after slaying a considerable number, completely dispersed the residue. [Hubbard says that Underhill, "having 120 men, killed 150 Indians on Long Island and 300 on the main land."] This action, which constitutes the first and the last battle between the Long Island Indians and the white settlers, took place in the summer of 1653, and under all the circumstances of the case there is much reason to question whether there was any real necessity for the chastisement inflicted.

From this time forward the Long Island Indians gave the whites no cause for alarm; and though in 1675 the Governor of New York, under the apprehension that they might be seduced or compelled by the Narragansetts to engage with them in King Philip's war, ordered all their canoes from Hurlgate [Hellgate] to Montauk to be seized and guarded, they tamely submitted without the smallest act of resistance or aggression.

What has been written above is supplemented by the following, written by Samuel Jones, of Oyster Bay, and printed in Vol. 3 of the collections of the New York Historical Society:

After the battle of Fort Neck, the weather being very cold and the wind northwest, Capt. Underhill and his men collected the bodies of the Indians and threw them in a heap on the brow of the hill, and then sat down on the leeward side of the heap to eat their breakfast. When this part of the county came to be settled the highway across the neck passed directly over the spot where, it was said, the heap of Indians lay, and the earth in that spot was remarkably different from the ground about it, being strangely tinged with a reddish cast, which the old people said was occasioned by the blood of the Indians.

This appearance formerly was very conspicuous. Having heard the story above sixty years ago, that is, before the year 1752, I frequently viewed and marked the spot with astonishment. But by digging down the hill for repairing the highway, the appearance is now entirely gone.

Notwithstanding Dr. Prime's pacific description of the Indians, there is little differ-

ence between the story of their relations with the white intruders upon Long Island and the story as told of other localities. The Dutch seem to have regarded them with contempt as natural enemies from the very first, and so brought down upon themselves their hatred. The English met the Indian question with more diplomacy. The story of their treatment of the red men in Massachusetts and Connecticut is sickening, even revolting in its details, but on the English settlements on Long Island, west of Oyster Bay, they used more diplomacy and honesty, probably because they saw that in the friendship of the aborigines lay one of their best protections against the Dutch. The Long Island Indians took up arms with so many thousands of their race against Governor Kieft, one of the most unprincipled scoundrels who ever disgraced a colonial outpost's authority, but they soon made peace. "In 1643," we read in Winthrop's "History of New England," "the Indians of Long Island took part with their neighbors on the main, and as the Dutch took away their corn, so they took to burning the Dutch houses, but these, by the mediation of Mr. [Roger] Williams, were pacified and peace re-established between them and the Dutch; at length they came to an accord with the rest of the Indians. These Indians having cleared away all the English upon the main as far as Stamford, they passed on to Long Island and there assaulted the Lady Moody in her house divers times, for there were forty gathered there to defend it; they also set upon the Dutch with implacable fury and killed all they could come by; burnt their houses and killed their cattle without restraint, so as the Governor (Kieft) and such as escaped betook themselves to their fort at Manhattan, and there lived and eat up their cattle."

The Rev. Isaac Jogues, the Jesuit missionary who was treacherously murdered by Indians at Caughnawaga in 1646, has left an interesting document describing the new Netherlands in 1644, which is printed in "Documentary History of New York," Vol. IV, and contains many interesting data drawn from

personal observation during his pilgrimage here. In the course of it he mentions a campaign against the Indians in 1644, in which he says:

Some (Indian) nations near the sea having murdered some Hollanders of the most distant settlement, the Hollanders killed 150 Indians, men, women and children; the latter having killed at divers intervals forty Dutchmen, burnt several houses and committed ravages estimated at the time I was there at 200,000 lives. Troops were raised in New England and in the beginning of winter, the grass being low and some snow on the ground, they pursued them with 600 men, keeping 200 always on the move and constantly relieving each other, so that the Indians, pent up in a large island and finding it impossible to escape on account of the women and children, were cut to pieces to the number of 1,600, women and children included. This obliged the rest of the Indians to make peace, which still continues.

Thus it will be seen, as has already been declared, that there was really no difference but in degree in the relations between the white man and the red man on Long Island and the relations which existed in other parts of the country. At the east end of the island the influence of the Gardiner family over the Montauks prevented many of the abuses which the English settlers in New England perpetrated on the people whose lands they took, and assisted in preserving some sort of decency and order in the relations between the races. In the middle and western sections, however, the Indian was regarded as little better than a natural enemy with all that such regard implies.

Nor do we think that the claim put forth by Prime and others that the Long Island Indians were a quiet and gentle and affectionate people has been made good. They were in fact pretty much like the rest of their race. The Rev. Samson Occom, one of the earliest of the native converts and preachers, said of them (and he knew them intimately by long residence among them): "They believe in a plurality of gods and one Great and Good

Being who controls all the rest. They likewise believe in an evil spirit." The writer of a description of New Netherland published in a work on the New World at Amsterdam in 1671, and which is translated and printed in "Documentary History of New York," Vol. IV, says on the same subject:

No trace of divine worship can hardly be discovered here. Only they ascribe great influence to the moon over the crops. The sun, as all-seeing, is taken to witness as often as they take an oath. They pay great reverence to the devil, because they fear great trouble from him when hunting and fishing; wherefore the first fruits of the chase are burned in his honor, so that they may not receive injury. They fully acknowledge that a God dwells beyond the stars, who, however, gives Himself no concern about the doings of devils on earth because he is constantly occupied with a beautiful goddess whose origin is unknown. * * * Regarding the souls of the dead, they believe that those who have done good enjoy every sort of pleasure in a temperate country to the south, while the bad wander about in misery. They believe the loud wailing which wild animals make at nights to be the wailings of the ghosts of wicked bodies.

From the same description we get several other points of information anent the Indians in New Netherland which may safely be regarded as applying to those on Long Island. As to the dwellings of the Indians we are told:

Their houses are for the most part built after one plan; they differ only in the greater or smaller length; the breadth is invariably twenty feet. The following is the mode of construction: They set various hickory poles in the ground according to the size of the building. The tops are bent together above in the form of a gallery, and throughout the length of these bent poles laths are fastened. The walls and roof are then covered with the bark of ash, elm and chestnut trees. The pieces of bark are lapped over each other as a protection against a change of weather, and the smooth side is turned inward. The houses lodge fifteen families, more or less, according to the dimensions.

Their forts stand mostly on steep mountains beside a stream of water. The entrance is only on one side. They are built in this wise: They set heavy timbers in the ground with oak palisades on both sides planted crosswise one with another. They join timbers again between the cross-trees to strengthen the work. Within the enclosure they commonly build twenty or thirty houses, some of which are 180 feet long, some less. All are crammed full of people. In the summer they set up huts along the river in order to pursue fishing. In the winter they remove into the woods to be convenient to the hunting and to a supply of firewood.

Regarding the character of the Indian the same writer tells us:

Great faults as well as virtues are remarked in the inhabitants, for, besides being slovenly and slothful, they are also found to be thievish, headstrong, greedy and vindictive. In other respects they are grave, chary of speech, which after mature consideration is slowly uttered and long remembered. The understanding being somewhat sharpened by the Hollanders, they evince sufficient ability to distinguish carefully good from evil. They will not suffer any imposition. Nowise disposed to gluttony, they are able patiently to endure cold, heat, hunger and thirst.

So much for Dutch evidence. From a New England source, Hubbard's "General History of New England," we get the following:

The Indians on Long Island were more fierce and barbarous, for our Captain Howe, about this time, going with eight or ten men to a wigwam there to demand an Indian that had killed one Hammond, an Englishman, the Indian ran violently out (with knife in his hand wherewith he wounded one of the company), thinking to escape from them; so they were forced to kill him upon the place, which so discouraged the rest that they did not attempt any revenge. If they had been always so handled they would not have dared to have rebelled as they did afterward.

There are many such citations as to the treachery of the Long Island Indian in Governor Winthrop's (1637) Journal, but there is hardly need to produce the details here. Some

interesting passages regarding the Indians is Danker's and Sluyter's "Journal of a Voyage to New York," etc., which was translated and edited for the memoirs of the Long Island Historical Society by the late Henry C. Murphy in 1867. Under date of Saturday, September 30, 1679, the Journal says:

We went a part of the way through a woods and fine, new-made land, and so along the shore to the west end of the island called Najack [Fort Hamilton, then probably surrounded by water and marsh]. Continuing onward, we came to the plantation of the Najack Indians, which was planted with maize, or Turkish wheat. We soon heard a noise of pounding, like threshing, and went to the place whence it proceeded and found there an old Indian woman busily employed beating Turkish beans out of the pods by means of a shell, which she did with astonishing force and dexterity. Gerrit inquired of her, in the Indian language, which he spoke perfectly well, how old she was, and she answered eighty years; at which we were still more astonished that so old a woman should still have so much strength and courage to work as she did.

We then went from thence to her habitation, where we found the whole troop together, consisting of seven or eight families and twenty or twenty-two persons, I should think. Their house was low and long, about sixty feet long and fourteen or fifteen feet wide. The bottom was earth, the sides and roof were made of reeds and the bark of chestnut trees; the posts or columns were limbs of trees stuck in the ground and all fastened together. The top, or ridge, of the roof was open about half a foot wide from one end to the other, in order to let the smoke escape in place of a chimney. On the sides or walls of the house the roof was so low that you could hardly stand under it. The entrances, or doors, which were at both ends, were so small and low that they had to stoop and squeeze themselves to get through them. The doors were made of reed or flat bark. In the whole building there was no lime-stone, iron or lead. They build their fire in the middle of the floor, according to the number of families which live in it, so that from one end to the other each of them boils its own pot. and eats when it likes, not only the families by themselves, but each Indian alone, according as he is hungry, at all hours, morning, noon and night. By each

fire are the cooking utensils, consisting of a pot, a bowl or calabash, and a spoon, also made of a calabash. These are all that relate to cooking.

They lie upon mats with their feet toward the fire, on each side of it. They do not sit much upon anything raised up, but, for the most part, sit on the ground or squat upon their ankles. Their other household articles consist of a calabash of water out of which they drink, a small basket in which to carry and keep their maize and small beans, and a knife. Their implements are, for tillage a small sharp stone and nothing more; for fishing, a canoe without mast or sail and without a nail in any part of it, though it is sometimes full forty feet in length; fish hooks and lines, and scoops to paddle with in place of oars. I do not know whether there are not some others of a trifling nature.

All who live in one house are generally of one stock or descent, as father and mother, with their offspring. Their bread is maize, pounded in a block by a stone, but not fine. This is mixed with water and made into a cake, which they bake under the hot ashes. * * * These Indians live on the land of Jacques Cortelyou, brother-in-law of Gerrit. He bought the land from them in the first instance and then let them have a small corner for which they pay him twenty bushels of maize yearly, that is, ten bags. Jacques had first bought the whole of Najack from these Indians, who were the lords thereof, and lived upon the land and afterward bought it again in parcels. He was unwilling to drive the Indians from the land, and has therefore left them a corner, keeping the best of it himself. We arrived there upon this land, which is all good and yields large crops of wheat and other grain.

In a note on this passage the editor of the Long Island Historical Society's volume, the late Henry C. Murphy, said:

Jacques Cortelyou came from Utrecht to this country in 1562 in the quality of tutor to the children of Cornelius Van Werckhoven, of that city (who that year also came to America), first patentee direct from the West India Company, of Nyack, or Fort Hamilton. He married Neeltje Van Duyne, and died about 1693. The Indians received six coats, six kettles, six axes, six chisels, six small looking-glasses, twelve knives and twelve

combs from the West India Company for all the land extending along the bay from Gowanus to Coney Island, embracing the present town of New Utrecht. Van Werckhoven went to Holland, after attempting a settlement at Nyack, but with the intention of returning. He died there, however, in 1655, and Cortelyou, who remained in possession of Nyack as his agent, obtained permission, in 1657, from the Director and Council to lay out on the tract the town of New Utrecht, so named in compliment to the birthplace of Van Werckhoven.

The journalist mistakes in supposing the first purchase of Nyack from the Indians to have been by Cortelyou; but is probably correct in stating a second purchase by him, which might have been made for the purpose of aiding him with a title by possession against the heirs of Van Werckhoven, who actually did subsequently claim this inheritance.

Long Island seems to have afforded the Indians plenty of hunting, and its waters abounded with fish, so that the red man had little occasion to cultivate the soil except to scratch its surface here and there to raise enough grain to make bread. He was an adept fisherman, and a canoe formed a striking part of his individual or family wealth.

One feature of the resources of Long Island which, while it made it popular with the aborigines, invited trouble with outside tribes, and caused more wars, misery and havoc than we have any adequate knowledge of, was the abundance of the shells which passed current among them for money. To this subject reference is made at length in another chapter of this history.

One of the most curious passages in the early European-Indian history, if we may use such an expression to describe events which took place in the Indian story when the white men first began to make their homes on this side of the sea, is the manner in which the land passed from the aborigines to the intruders. All such transactions were held to be strictly regular, to have been carried on in accordance with the exact requirements of law; and yet to us it seems strange to read, as in the passage just quoted, of the Fort

Hamilton Indians dispossessing themselves of their lands to Cornelius Van Werckhoven for a few tools and trinkets, and then being glad as a matter of charity to be permitted to live on and cultivate a few of the poorest acres; for the passage referred to informs us that Van Werckhoven's agent retained the best for himself, and informs us also that the same agent even kept the whole ultimately for his own use to the exclusion of the heirs of his master, the first European "proprietor."

The keynote of the common talk of the just and equitable treatment of the Indians is found in Silas Wood's "Sketch of First Settlement of Long Island" (1828):

Both the English and Dutch respected the rights of the Indians and no land was taken up by the several towns, or by individuals, until it had been fairly purchased of the chief of the tribe who claimed it. Thus the Dutch on the west and the English on the east end maintained a constant friendship with the Indian tribes in their respective neighborhood; and while they were friendly with each other, the Indians from one end of the island to the other were friendly with both. It may have been partly in consequence of the destruction of their warriors in their recent wars and of their military spirit being broken by their submission to successive conquerors, but it was principally by cultivating the friendship of the chiefs, particularly the sachem of the whole, by uniform justice and kindness, by preventing excitement by artificial means, and by rendering success hopeless by withholding the means necessary to insure it, that the whites were exempted from any hostile combination of the Long Island Indians. There is no reason to believe that this exception from Indian hostilities was owing to a better disposition or milder character of the natives of the island.

Commenting sagely on this, Dr. Prime observed:

If the rights of the aborigines in every part of the country had been as sacredly respected and the same means had been used to secure and preserve their friendship, the horrors of Indian aggressions and the bloody measures of retaliation which disgrace the early annals of our country would have been greatly diminished, if not entirely prevented.

With this Pecksniffian testimony as to the treatment of the Indians in our minds, we will examine a few instances of the rights so sacredly respected, keeping in view the fact that the land and the sea were the sources whence the Indians derived their sustenance, and obtained it thence directly. All men, of course, derive their sustenance from the land or sea, but the farmer, the hunter and the fisherman do so directly, while the engineer, the carpenter, the trader, the lawyer, the physician and the like do not.

In 1649 what is now the town of Easthampton was settled by some thirty families from Massachusetts, under the direction, it would seem, of the Connecticut government, and the settlement was located in the western part of what is now the township. The newcomers took up their abode and entered into possession of a tract of 30,000 acres of land as a result of a bargain effected in the previous year with the Indian owners. The agreement read as follows:

April the 29th, 1648. This present wrighting testyfieth an agreement betwixt the Worshipful Theophilus Eaton, Esq., Governor of the Colony of New Haven, the Worshipful Edward Hopkins, Esq., Governor of the Colony of Connecticut, their associates on the one parte; Poygratasuck, Sachem of Manhasset; Wyandanch, Sachem of Mountacutt, Momometou, Sachem of Chorchake; and Nowedonah, Sachem of Shinecock, and their associates, the other party.

The said Sachems having sould into the aforesaid Th. Eaton and Ed. Hopkins, with their associates all the land lying within the bounds of the inhabitants of Southampton unto the east side of Mountacutt high land, with the whole breadth from sea to sea, not intrrenching upon any in length or breadth which the inhabitants of Southampton have and does possess, as they by lawful right shall make appeare for a consideration of

Twenty coates,
twenty-four hatchets,
twenty-four knives,
twenty looking-glasses,
one hundred muxes,

already received by us, the aforesaid sachems for ourselves and our associates; and in consideration thereof we give upp unto the said purchasers all our right and interest in said land, to them and their heirs, whether our or other nation whatsoever that doe or may hereafter challenge interest therein. Alsoe we, the said Sachems, have covenanted to have libertie for ourselves to ffish in any or all of the creeks and ponds, and hunting upp and downe in the woods, without molestation; they giving to the English inhabitants noe just offence or injurie to their goods and chattels. Alsoe, they are to have the ffynnes and tayles of all such whales as shall be cast upp, as to their proper right, and desire they may be friendly dealt with in the other parte. Alsoe they reserve libertie to ffish in convenient places ffor shells to make wampum. Alsoe, Indyans hunting any deare they should chase into the water, and the English should kill them, the English shall have the body and the Sachems the skin. And in testimony of our well performance hereof we have set our hands the day and year above written.

Signed: In presence of Richard Woodhull, Thomas Stanton, Robert Bond, and Job Sayre.

Poygratasuck, x.
Wyandanch, x.
Momometou, x.
Nowedonah, x.

The value of the goods given the Indians in this transaction amounted to £30 4s. 8d. It was not long before the natives were so harassed by the incursions of the Narragansetts that they were obliged to move from the lands they held east to Montauk Point and seek the aid and protection of the English settlers. As an acknowledgment of this assistance they made over to their protectors the remaining lands of the Montauk territory, saying in the conveyances, drawn up, 'of course, by the beneficiaries:

Whereas of late years there has been sore distresses and calamities befallen us by reason of the cruel opposition and violence of our deadly enemy Ninnecraft, Sachem of Narragansett, whose cruelty hath proceeded so far as to take away the lives of many of our dear friends and relations, so that we were forced to fly from Montaukett for shelter to our beloved friends and neighbors of Easthampton,

whom we found to be friendly in our distresses, and whom we must ever own and acknowledge, under God, for the preservation of our lives, and the lives of our wives and children to this day, and of the lands of Montaukett from the hands of our enemies; and since our coming among them the relieving us in our extremities from time to time.

For all this the Indians in the rest of the document make over to the white men their lands—their entire earthly possessions in fact—reserving only the right of using such portions of the soil as might be necessary to enable them to live. In commenting on this transaction Benjamin F. Thompson said:

In the preamble to this conveyance, allusion is made to the cruel and perfidious massacre of the Sachem and many of his best warriors a few years before at Block Island, for being there on some important occasion they were surprised in the night by a party of the Narragansett Indians; but were promised their lives should be spared upon laying down their arms, which they had no sooner done than they were set upon and murdered in a most barbarous manner, only one of the whole number escaping to relate the horrid deed. The Sachem himself was reserved for further cruelty, and being conveyed to the Narragansett country was there tortured to death by being compelled to walk naked over flat rocks heated to the utmost by fires built upon them. Ninigret, the chief of that powerful tribe, had a violent hatred of the Montauks for not only refusing on a former occasion to unite with him in destroying the white people, but for having discovered the plot to the English, by which his design was frustrated and the inhabitants saved from destruction. The words of Captain Gardiner are: "Wyandanch, the Long Island Sachem, told me that as all the plots of the Narragansetts had been discovered, they now concluded to let the English alone until they had destroyed Uncas, the Mohegan chief, and himself; then, with the assistance of the Mohawks and Indians beyond the Dutch, they could easily destroy us, every man and mother's son." Indeed, it seems suspicions were generally entertained that the Dutch not only countenanced the Indians in their hostility to the English, but had also secretly supplied them with arms. Several In-

dian Sagamores residing near the Dutch reported that the Dutch Governor had urged them to cut off the English, and it was well known that Ninigret had spent the winter of 1652-3 among the Dutch. In consequence a special meeting of the Commissioners was convened at Boston in April, 1653, but several Indian Sachems, who were examined, denied any agreement with the Dutch to make war upon the English. Ninigret declared that he went to New Amsterdam to be cured of some disease by a French physician; that he carried thirty fathoms of wampum, of which he gave the doctor ten and the governor fifteen, in exchange for which the Governor gave him some coats with sleeves, but not one gun. On the first day of August, 1660, and after the death of Sachem Wyandanch, his widow, called the Squa-Sachem, and her son united in a deed of confirmation to the original purchasers for the lands of Montauk and described by them as extending from sea to sea and from the easternmost parts thereof to the bounds of Easthampton.

Finally a patent confirming those Indian grants to the inhabitants was signed by Governor Nicolls March 13, 1666.

To take another instance, we extract an Indian deed for the surrender of Barren Island in 1664 from Stiles's "History of Kings County:"

Know all men, etc., that we, Wawmatt Tappa and Kackawashke, the right and true proprietors of a certain island called by the Indians Equendito, and by the English Broken Lands, in consideration of two coats, one kettle, one gun, one new trooper-coat, ten fathoms of wampum prage, three shirts, six pounds of powder, six barrs of lead and a quantity of Brandie wine, already paid unto us by John Tilton, sen., and Samuel Spicer, of Gravesend, L. I., Do, &c., sell, &c., the said Island called Equendito, &c., with all our right * * * both of upland and marshes any way belonging thereto, as the Straun Beach or Beaches, as namely that running out more westerly, with the Island adjoining, and is at the same time by the ocean sea wholly inclosed, called Hoop-aninak and Shanscomacocke and macutteris, as also all the harbors, &c., to the said John Tilton and Samuel Spicer * * * excepting only to ourselves the one-half of all such

whale-fish that shall by wind and storms be cast upon the said Island. In witness whereof we have set our hands this 13 day of the 3 month, called May, Anno, 1664.

A much better-known instance, and one with which we will close our investigation here into this branch of our subject, is the manner in which the Gardiner family acquired its extensive lands on Long Island. The founder of the family in this county, Lion Gardiner, was a native of England, a military engineer by profession. He crossed the Atlantic in 1635, arriving at Boston November 28 in that year, and was employed by a land company to lay out a tract of land at the mouth of the Connecticut River, of which the town of Say-

Connecticut, and a daughter, Elizabeth, afterward born at what is now known as Gardiner's Island, is said to have been the first white child born in Suffolk county.

In 1639 Gardiner purchased from the Indians the island known to them as Manchonock, or Manchonat, and by the English as the Isle of Wight. The island is about nine miles long and a mile and a half wide, and contains about 3,300 acres of land, including the beaches and fish-ponds. The soil was and is generally of good quality. The price paid to the Indians for this piece of property was, we are told by tradition, which generally exaggerates rather than underestimates, a large black dog, a gun with some ammunition, a quantity of rum, and several Dutch blankets. To make his title more secure Gardiner received a conveyance of the island from James Farret, agent for the Earl of Stirling, in which he agreed to pay a yearly "acknowledgment" of £5 "(if demanded) of lawfull money of England or such commoditys as shall at that time pass for money in that country, the first payment to begin on the last of October, 1643, the three former years being advanced for the use of said James Farret."

Reference has already been made to the gift of most of the land now comprised in the town of Smithtown to Lion Gardiner by Wyandanch, Sachem of the Montauks, in gratitude for the former's regaining the Indian chief's daughter from captivity among the Narragansetts in 1659. Gardiner, to make his gift the more secure, had his deed confirmed or indorsed in 1662 by the Nesaquake tribe, who occupied the lands in question and had the whole made thoroughly legal and binding from a white man's point of view, obtaining a patent for the land from Governor Nicolls. Having thus perfected his title in every possible way, Gardiner in 1663 sold the property in question to Richard Smith, the common ancestor of the Suffolk county Smiths, who at once added to it by a further purchase of Indian lands and the procuration of a fresh patent from Governor Nicolls in 1663. A vague-



ON SHINNECOCK HILLS.

brook, so named by him, is still a pleasant reminder. He remained in the service of the company some four years, and, it is said, at first intended to return to England when his employment ended. Still his family was with him, he saw many brilliant opportunities awaiting him in the New Land, and he seemed to possess from the beginning the happy art of winning and retaining the good graces of the Indians, so that he probably changed his mind about returning to the old land as soon as he saw enough of the country to become aware of its possibilities.

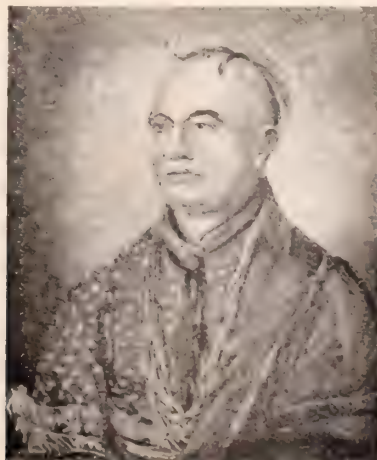
While at Saybrook a son was born to him, April 29, 1636, the first white child born in

ness in the wording of this patent led to a legal controversy with the town of Huntington, the knotty points in which were won by Smith, and in 1675 his ownership was confirmed in a new patent, issued by Governor Andros, the "acknowledgment or quit rent" being "one good fatt lamb unto such office or officers as shall be empowered to receive the same."

These instances of the manner in which the Indians parted with their lands must suffice for this place. Several others will come before us in recording the story of the townships. The transferences we have recorded were all, in the eyes of writers like Prime and Thompson, honest, generous and just, yet they were, each of them, simply a modern version of the Biblical story of Esau and the mess of pottage. Of course in all these cases something was paid, or given in exchange, enough apparently to satisfy the rebukes of conscience. But, judging them by what took place elsewhere, it is to be admitted that the early Long Island settlers deserve credit for even observing to the extent they did the proprieties of civilized life in these land-grabbing transactions, for most of such transfers from the aborigines were made in keeping with

"The good old rule,—the simple plan
That they should take who have the power,
And they should keep who can."

The most objectionable feature to readers nowadays is the sanctimonious manner in which the transactions were sweetly glossed over by the historians of the island and held up for our admiration. The natives, as it were, received sugar-coated pills, and we are asked to consider the sugar and forget the gall and wormwood, the acritude, the bitterness, of the stuff within. The Indians, being a weaker race, had to go when the white man determined to settle on his lands. The transition, as has been said, was in accordance with the inexorable doctrine of the survival of the fittest, and in fulfillment of its cruel but necessary requirements the aborigine had to be crushed; but why, in this twentieth century, continue to treat the matter hypocritically, shed crocodile tears over the various incidents of the change, and assert that a few beads, a gun or two, some cheap, often cast-off, clothing and tools—to say nothing of, now and then, a modicum of rum—sanctified the proceedings attendant upon the despoliation of the Indian?



JOSEPH BRANT.

CHAPTER III.

THE DECADENCE OF THE ABORIGINES.

OF THE government, manners and customs of the Long Island Indians we know little that is authentic, although surmises and suppositions have been plentiful, and these surmises and suppositions have often been made to appear as veritable history. Within recent years, however, the patient industry and thoughtful and intelligent investigation of Dr. W. Wallace Tooker, of Sag Harbor, has added greatly to our knowledge of the Long Island Indians and brought to light many details which enable us to gain some knowledge of their importance, their ideas, their language and their habits.

The Montauk Indians seem to have been by far the most numerous, and next to them in point of members the Shinnecocks have been placed. But the strength of the Montauks was such that their Sachem was generally if not always acknowledged as the Grand Sachem of Paumanacke (Long Island). Prime says that the tribes "under their respective Sagamores or chiefs, as if an emblem of the future government of the whole country, were once united in a grand confederacy under one great and powerful chief;" but so far as we have been able to learn there is no exact authority for this statement. Dr. Prime also tells us:

The Manhasset and the Montauk tribes, though occupying the smallest and most remote territorial limits, were the depositories of supreme power. Montauk was, in fact, the royal tribe, and Wyandanch, its powerful chief, was the Grand Sachem of whom the

whites purchased their lands throughout nearly the whole extent of the island. While his elder brother, Poggatacut, the Sachem of Manhasset, lived, he was indeed regarded as the supreme chief, but probably from his age and not from any superior claim of the tribe over which he presided. When he paid the debt of nature Wyandanch was regarded as the Grand Sachem, without a rival, Nowedinah, the chief of the Shinnecock tribe, was also a brother of Wyandanch.

Besides, Montauk bore evident marks, many of which are not yet obliterated, of being the seat of royal authority and the citadel of power. Here were the largest and best fortifications, of purely Indian construction, that can be found in any part of our extended country. The fort in the north side of Fort Pond, erected on what is now called Fort Hill, was about one hundred feet square, and its remains are still visible.

The rampart and parapet (say the "Chronicles of Easthampton") were of earth with a ditch at the foot of the glacis and probably palisadoed with the trunks of fallen trees. At each angle there was apparently a round tower of earth and stone, and the whole would probably have held from three hundred to five hundred men. The pond on the south afforded a safe and convenient harbor for canoes, under the immediate protection of the fort. Its contiguity to the pond yielded also an abundant supply of fresh water, on a side where communication was easily kept up by the facility of protection. The location was one of decided advantage for protection and defense, and must have been sufficient against any attack which Indian tactics could have brought to bear upon it.

This territory [to quote again from Prime] was also remarkable as the depository of the dead. Here are several of the largest bury-

ing places known on the island, where hundreds and perhaps thousands of these poor benighted pagans were committed to their mother earth, amid the lamentations and howlings of their surviving friends. The remains of Poggatacut were brought (1651) from Shelter Island, the great part of the way on men's shoulders, to be deposited with the royal family at the citadel of the empire.

In speaking of the removal of the body of Poggatacut the "Chronicles of Easthampton" relates a curious bit of information:

In removing the body the bearers rested their bier by the side of the road leading from Sag Harbor to Easthampton near the third (fourth) milestone, where a small excavation was made to designate the spot. From that time to the present, more than one hundred and ninety years, this memorial has remained, as fresh, seemingly, as if but lately made. Neither leaf nor any other thing has been suffered to remain in it. The Montaukett tribe, although reduced to a beggarly number of some ten or fifteen drunken and degraded beings, have retained to this day the memory of the events, and no one individual of them now passes the spot in his wanderings without removing whatever may have fallen into it. The place is to them holy ground, and the exhibition of this pious act does honor to the finest feelings of the human heart. The excavation is about twelve inches in depth and eighteen inches in diameter, in the form of a mortar.

To this Prime adds his testimony, saying:

The reader may be assured this is no humbug. The writer has been acquainted with the fact for nearly forty years, and he has examined the hole within the present year [1845] and found it in its original form and freshness, as above described.

Gabriel Furman tells us of another chief of the Montauks:

Canoe Place (Shinnecock Bay) on the south side of Long Island derives its name from the fact that more than two centuries ago a canal was made there by the Indians for the purpose of passing their canoes from one bay to the other, that is, across the island from Mecox Bay to Peconic Bay. Although

the trench has been in a great measure filled up, yet its remains are still visible and partly overflowed at high water. It was constructed by Mongotucksee (or Long Knife), who then reigned over the nation of Montauk. Although that nation has now (1827) dwindled to a few miserable remnants of a powerful race, who still linger on the lands which were once the seat of their proud dominion, yet their traditional history is replete with all those tragical incidents which usually accompany the fall of power. It informs us that their chief was of gigantic form, proud and despotic in peace, and terrible in war. But though a tyrant of his people, yet he protected them from their enemies and commanded their respect for his savage virtues. The praises of Mongotucksee are still chanted in aboriginal verse to the winds that howl around the eastern extremity of this island. The Narragansetts and the Mohawks yielded to his prowess and the ancestors of the last of the Mohicans trembled at the expression of his anger. He sustained his power not less by the resources of his mind than by the vigor of his arm. An ever watchful policy guided his counsels. Prepared for every exigency, not even aboriginal sagacity could surprise his caution. To facilitate communication around the seat of his dominion for the purpose not only of defense but of annoyance, he constructed this canal, which remains a monument of his genius, while other traces of his skill and prowess are lost in oblivion, and even the nation whose valor he led may soon furnish for our country a topic in contemplating the fallen greatness of the last of the Montauks. After his death the Montauks were subjugated by the Iroquois or Five Nations and became their tributaries, as did all the tribes on the island.

The passages quoted relating to this hero and to Wyandanch may give us an idea of the importance of the Montauk tribe in pre-European times, and leave no doubt as to the truth of the legend that their Sachem was, at intervals at least, when a worthy and warlike chief appeared, recognized as the leader of all the tribes on the island, and that the house of Montauk was indeed in a sense entitled to the appellation of "royal," which so many writers have bestowed upon it. What has been held as legal confirmatory evidence

of this claim to supremacy is found in the fact that on July 4, 1647, when a deed confirming a title to land at Hempstead was given by the Indians to the white settlers, it was mentioned that the Montauk Sachem was present. In 1658 another Hempstead deed, after the signature of the local chiefs, was also subscribed by Wacombound, the (1660) Montauk Sachem.

It would be frivolous and unnecessary to gather up in this place all the legends which have come down to us concerning Indian history prior to the arrival of the white man on Long Island. Enough has been presented to show that they were, as Indian economy went, well governed, happy, prosperous and numerous; that they were of a higher degree of intelligence than many of those on the main land; that they were brave and warlike and accepted victory or defeat with the sublime stoicism of their race; and one is even inclined to believe they would have lived on amicable terms with the white man had that been possible. Probably this desire the white pioneer to a certain extent reciprocated, although it never entered his brain to treat the redskin as a man and brother. But no matter how well intentioned both races were, there could be no deep or lasting love between them, for the possession of the land was the real, the ever present issue between them. The white man wanted the land, the Indian needed the land, and in the struggle for possession one or the other had to be crushed.

From the very beginning almost of the white man's settlement, then, the Indian race began to fade away. The following passage, which I quote from Gabriel Furman's "Antiquities," shows that the Indians themselves were thoroughly aware of this:

The Long Island Indians possessed all that peculiar eloquence which has so long distinguished the aborigines of the west; and it was mainly from them that the Europeans first obtained their ideas of Indian oratory and of the story and bold imagery which characterize the Indian speeches. The aborigines of this

island have all that singular tact which still marks the Indian of discovering at once, in their intercourse with white men, who are really the men of power and who are not; and to the former they pay their respects, taking no notice of the others. The following official report of an interview which took place at Flatlands, between Governor Slough-ter and a Long Island Indian Sachem and his sons, will afford an instance of their eloquence and their sagacity. They saw that Leisler, however powerful he might have been a few weeks previous, was then a fallen man, without power and at the mercy of his inveterate enemies. This extraordinary interview took place on the 2d of April, 1691, between the Governor of New York and a Sachem of Long Island, attended by two of his sons and twenty other Indians.

The Sachem, on being introduced, congratulated Governor Slough-ter in an eloquent manner on his arrival, and solicited his friendship and protection for himself and his people, observing that he had in his own mind fancied his Excellency was a mighty tall tree, with wide-spreading branches, and therefore he prayed leave to stoop under the shadow thereof. Of old, said he, the Indians were a great and mighty people, but now they were reduced to a mere handful. He concluded his visit by presenting the Governor with thirty fathoms of wampum, which he graciously accepted, and desired the Sachem to visit him again in the afternoon. On taking their leave the youngest son of the Sachem handed a bundle of brooms to the officer in attendance, saying at the same time that "as Leisler and his party had left the house very foul, he brought the brooms with him for the purpose of making it clean again." In the afternoon the Sachem and his party again visited the Governor, who made a speech to them, and on receiving a few presents they departed.

The main weapon which led to the destruction of the aborigines, more deadly, more certain, more widespread than the ruin caused by musket, by disease or by persecution, was rum. In 1788, long after the power of the white man was established, an Indian chief at Fort Stanwix put the whole matter in a most comprehensive yet succinct form when he said: "The avidity of the white people for land and the thirst of the Indians for

spirituous liquors were equally insatiable; the white men had seen and fixed their eyes upon the Indian's good land, and the Indians had seen and fixed their eyes upon the white men's keg of rum; and nothing could divert either of them from their desired object, and therefore there was no remedy; but the white man must have the land and the Indians the keg of rum."

So far as can be learned the Dutch authorities did nothing to curtail the appetite for rum or to inculcate any notion of temperance among the Indians. The very opposite seems to have been the case, for the sturdy Hollander found a measure of rum one of the most convenient and most promptly prized objects with which he could trade with the Indian for land or pelt. Knowing nothing of the havoc of drunkenness himself, he had no conception of visiting any wrong upon the red men by placing it before him. He only saw a means to an end—the means and the end so graphically sketched by the Fort Stanwix Indian—and he made full use of it. The English, however, even in that early day were fully aware, by their own natural experience, of the evils of intemperance and attempted to prevent its spread. They rightly traced the source of many of the Indian cruelties and uprisings and treacheries to the use of "fire-water," and took the best means they could, if not to stop its traffic, to minimize its extent and render it less of a disturbing factor. In 1656 the inhabitants of Gravesend passed a law dealing with this matter, as follows:

"Att an assemblie of ye Inhabitants uppon a lawful warning being given, it is inacted, ordered and agreed that hee, she, or they whatsoever that should tapp, draw out, sell or lett any Indian or Indians in this corporation have any brandie, wine, strong liquor or strong drink should, if so detected, pay the sum of fifty gilders, and for the next default the sum of one hundred gilders according to the law of the country."

In "The Duke's Laws" (1665) selling liquor to Indians was expressly forbidden un-

der a penalty of "forty shillings for one pint and in proportion for any greater or lesser quality." In cases of "sudden extremity," however, it was declared permissible to prescribe liquor, but even in the worst of cases this remedy was not to exceed two drams."

Such laws against selling liquor to these hapless tribes were adopted directly or indirectly by almost every community and effort apparently was made to honestly enforce them. But the craze for rum was strong, and as the white population increased it became easy for the laws to be successfully evaded, especially in Kings and Queens counties, where the settlements were closest and where the population, in Kings especially, was of a more mixed character than in the eastern, or Suffolk, end of the island; and there seems little doubt that the Indian who wanted fire-water was able to supply his want so long as he had something—land, pelts, movable property or service—to give in exchange.

The passing of the Indian was rapid, especially after he gave up his primeval occupation of a hunter and tried to settle down as a trader or to follow one of the simple trades he learned from the white man. In 1761 there were left only one hundred and ninety-two souls belonging to the Montauks; in 1827 they had dwindled down to five families, possibly twenty persons, and in 1843 the number was reduced to three families, about ten individuals, and even these it was asserted were not of pure Montauk blood. Now all are gone and the royal race of Wyandanch is but a memory. The Indian population of the island at the present day is estimated at something like two hundred, and of even these few, if any, are of pure blood. They are at best but a melancholy survival, although they have forsaken nearly the whole of their ancestral ways, adopted the white man's religion, and most of his manners and customs. The time is not far distant when the race will have entirely disappeared.

Some writers see in this a certain historic fitness and completeness inasmuch as the In-

dians themselves are said to have wiped out a still earlier race who owned the soil. In 1879 a remarkable archæological discovery was made at Aquebogue. Many graves were found some three feet below the soil, and in a position, judging from the geological changes, which showed that the bodies, or remains, there resting, had been deposited thousands of years before. The remains indicated a more powerful race than the Indians. The fragments of a temple—or large structure of some kind—were also discovered near the bodies, and proved to be utterly unlike any specimens of Indian construction of which we know. The walls were of clay and it measured about ten feet in length, with a dividing wall in the centre, making two narrow chambers, each about four and one-half feet.

In the face of this discovery surmises and fancy must halt. Is this a trace of another race, or of a lost civilization? The evidence certainly points in that direction. But one thing is certain: the Indians must have been in possession for almost countless ages, and who can now tell what evolution took place during that time in the mind and brain and product and civilization of that wonderful people—wonderful even in their decay.

But important a factor as rum was in the later history of the Indian race on Long Island as elsewhere, we must not forget that outside of it the most notable feature of their story was the religious element which controlled it. The Indian, so far as we can trace his mental development, has always been a devout man, believing in a Supreme Being, a Creator of the World, a Great Spirit, and also in a future life. Whatever he worshipped, he worshipped with all his heart. Sometimes, in reading the stories of his domestic life, his wars, his cruelties and his superstitions, we are apt to think that his idea of theological relationship was like that of the old darkey who said, "I have been wallowing in sin, I have broken all the commandments; but, thank God, I have not lost my religion!"

Between the years 1653 and 1658 the Soci-

ety for Propagating the Gospel in New England voted small sums of money to the Rev. William Leverich for his service among the Indians, and he was specially desired to devote as much attention as possible to the Montauks and the Corchaugs. Of the nature of what he accomplished nothing is known to us; but as he seems to have been a zealous minister of the Gospel it is but fair to assume that he did his full duty according to his opportunities. He was a native of England and settled at Salem in 1633, and for many years was engaged in missionary work throughout Massachusetts with quite a recognized measure of success. In 1653 he purchased some land at Oyster Bay and there a year or two later, possibly in 1656 or 1657, he erected his home. In 1658 he was installed minister of Huntington and so continued until 1670, when he removed to Newtown, of which he was the first minister, and there he remained until his death, in or about 1694. From 1741 until 1752 Azariah Horton was employed by the Presbyterians of New York as a missionary among the Long Island Indians. He was a native of Southold and a zealous worker for the ministry. His journals show how incessantly he labored from Montauk to Rockaway, in the fields, in the huts, and by the wayside, among the four hundred souls which were then computed to be that remained of the once owners of the soil. In 1752 he settled down as pastor of a church at South Hanover, New Jersey, in a settlement formed mainly by Long Island people, and there labored until his death, March 27, 1777.

One of the earliest and most influential of the real friends of the Indian in New York was Sir William Johnston, who in 1738 settled on a tract of land on the south side of the Mohawk River. He won the confidence of the Indians around him to a greater extent, possibly, than any man of his day, studied their manners, customs, rites and beliefs, became an expert in their language; wore, at times, their dress; was chosen a Sachem of the Mohawks, and given the chief-like title of

"Wariaghejaghe,"—one who is in charge. He took a deep interest in the educational and intellectual advancement of the aborigines, and perhaps was able to exert a greater influence over them in these directions because he was not too straight-laced in his own personal morals or made any pretensions to having deep religious convictions, or close denominational affiliations, although he was not insensible to the value of religious influence in making the Indians amenable to law and order.

Sir William took a warm and direct interest in the life-long labors, on behalf of the Indian, of the Rev. Eleazar Wheelock, one of the most noteworthy of the early Protestant missionaries who engaged in such work; and the correspondence between them proves how heartily and zealously Sir William entered into all the missionary's plans and hopes. Eleazar Wheelock does not seem to have ever visited Long Island, yet there is no doubt that he exerted a great influence for good over its latter Indian history, and his self-denying labors ought to keep his memory green among those of the real benefactors of the old kingdom of the Montauks. He was born at Windham, Connecticut, April 22, 1711, the grandson of a nonconformist minister who left England in 1637 and founded a church in Dedham, Massachusetts. Eleazar studied for the ministry, was ordained in 1735 as pastor of a church at New Lebanon, Connecticut, and there remained some thirty-five years. His salary being insufficient for his support, he augmented it by receiving pupils in his house, and this gradually developed in his mind the project of establishing an Indian missionary school. This was duly founded, under the designation of Moor's Indian Charity School, a farmer named Joshua Moor having given to it, in 1754, a house and two acres of land in New Lebanon. In 1766 some 10,000 pounds was obtained in Great Britain on behalf of the school, the money being placed in the hands of a board of trustees, of which the Earl of Dartmouth was president. Soon after it was determined to remove the institution to a new

location, and in 1770 Wheelock secured land at what is now Hanover, New Hampshire, removed there, and established the institution which has since become famous under its title of Dartmouth College, of which institution he was the first president. He died at Hanover, April 24, 1779.

In one way or another we learn a good deal about Wheelock's pupils. David Fowler, a Montauk Indian youth, entered the school at Lebanon about 1759, and early showed an aptitude for agricultural pursuits. He completed his studies in a most satisfactory manner, and in March, 1765, he was licensed as an Indian teacher and was assigned to the Oneida Nation, for whose territory he at once set out. Early in June of the same year he opened a school and on the 15th of that month he wrote his old teacher from Canajoharie as follows:

This is the twelfth day since I begun my school, and eight of my scholars are now in the third page of their spelling book. I never saw children exceed these in learning. The number of my scholars is twenty-six, but it is difficult to keep them together; they are often roving from place to place to get something to live upon. I am well contented to live here so long as I am in such great business. I believe I shall persuade the men in this castle, at least the most of them, to labour next year. They begin now to see that they could live better if they cultivated their lands than they do now by hunting and fishing.

I print this letter because it gives the key to the principle underlying Wheelock's method—that of civilizing the Indians by religion and work. Fowler's school was broken up in about a year by a famine in western New York, which drove the Indians for a time out of that quarter, and then the desolation and excitement of war probably stopped for several years any further effort. Of that, however, nothing is known; but Fowler himself proved a living example of the benefit of education among the Indians; and in 1811, when he disappears from our view, he was an industrious

and prosperous farmer at Oneida, and held in esteem as a useful member of the community.

The most famous, however, of all Wheelock's Indian pupils was the first he received,—Samson Occom. He was born at Mohegan, Norwich, Connecticut, in 1723, and when nineteen years of age was received under Wheelock's tuition. In the capacity of a pupil he remained in Wheelock's house for four years. In 1748 he became a teacher in New London. In 1755 he went to Montauk, where he opened a school among the Indians, and on August 29, 1759, he was ordained by the Suffolk Presbytery. For ten years he continued to teach and preach among the Mohawks and Shinnecocks, and then he went on a mission to the Oneidas. We next find him in Great Britain, engaged in raising the fund which led to the establishment of Dartmouth College, and he is said to have been the first Indian preacher who ever visited England. His services there were invariably crowded, and there is no doubt he was the most important factor in bringing about the ultimate success of the mission. On his return he remained at his native place in Connecticut for a time, but in 1786 he went to Brotherton, Oneida county, where he died, in 1792.

Brotherton, located in what is now Marshall and Kirkland townships, Oneida county, was a purely Indian community, formed before the Revolution; but after it was over many returned and in 1783, under the direction of Occom, founded a new commonwealth. They included many Montauks, Pequots, Narragansetts and other Indians, numbering in all at one time, it is said, four hundred souls. Coming from many different tribes, they were compelled to learn English as a common language, and tried to adapt themselves to a settled mode of living. For a time they received aid from the state, but their numbers steadily decreased, many having adopted all the vices of the white man with his tongue. Not a few developed into thrifty farmers, but it would seem succeeded only for a time. Bit by bit they sold their Brotherton lands to

white settlers, and in 1850 the last of them migrated to the west. It is sad to think that even Occom once fell a victim, for a time, to the Indian passion for rum. On June 9, 1764, in a letter to the Presbytery, he confessed "to have been shamefully overtaken by strong drink, by which I have greatly wounded the cause of God, blemished the pure religion of Jesus Christ, blackened my own character and hurt my own soul." Over this weakness he finally completely triumphed, and was probably a better man through having passed through that slough of despond.

As a preacher he seemed to possess many splendid qualifications, although possibly his eloquence was more of the sort to enthuse the Indian heart than to arouse the attention of his white brother. Dr. Samuel Buell said of him: "As a preacher of the Gospel he seems always to have in view the end of the ministry, the glory of God and the salvation of men. His manner of expression when he preaches to the Indians is vastly more natural, free, clear and eloquent, quick and powerful, than when he preaches to others. He is the glory of the Indian nation."

Occom wrote considerable verse, some of it rather crude and unpolished, but full of graceful fancies and quaint conceits. It is mostly of a religious description and breathes throughout a simple, earnest piety, a profound belief in the wisdom and goodness of God, but at the same time a keen realization of the awful punishment prepared for those who wander from His footstool or who refuse to hearken to His voice. The following hymn, which is still printed in some of the church collections, will give an idea not alone of Occom's ability as a weaver of verse, but of his entire system of theology:

Awaked by Sinai's awful sound,
My soul in bonds of guilt I found,
And knew not where to go;
One solemn truth increased my pain,—
"The sinner must be born again"
Or sink to endless woe.

I heard the law its thunders roll,
While guilt lay heavy on my soul—
A vast oppressive load;
All creature's aid I saw was vain:
"The sinner must be born again"
Or drink the wrath of God.

But while I thus in anguish lay
The bleeding Saviour passed that way,
My bondage to remove;
The sinner once by Justice slain,
Now by his grace is born again,
And sings redeeming love.

The next Indian preacher who exerted much influence over his race was a member of the Shinnecock tribe, whose English cognomen was Peter John. Prime says regarding him:

He was born at the Hay Ground, in the Parish of Bridgehampton, somewhere about the years 1712-15. He was hopefully converted in the great awakening of 1741-4 under the preaching of the Rev. Mr. Davenport.* By what ecclesiastical authority he was commissioned is not known, though it is supposed he was ordained by the Separatists of Connecticut. He afterward took up his residence at St. George's Manor, where he owned property, on which one of his descendants still lives. Though not learned and eloquent, yet by his zeal, piety and perseverance he gathered small churches at Wading River, Poosapatuck and Islip, to which, with that of Canoe Place, he ministered until after his grandson and successor was brought into the ministry. He lived to the advanced age of eighty-eight, and died near the commencement of the present century, though the precise date has not been ascertained. His remains lie buried at Poosapatuck.

The grandson referred to above, Paul Cuffee, was the last, and in many respects the greatest, of the native preachers. He was

*The Rev. James Davenport, minister of Southold, whom Whitefield described as "a sweet, pious soul." Soon after his installation at Southold the great awakening occurred which is memorable in the religious annals of New England. His zeal for religion seems to have unbalanced his mind and in 1742 his pastoral relations with Southold were severed by the Presbytery. He continued active in the ministry, however, until his death, at Hopewell, N. J., in 1757. In 1754 he was moderator of the Synod of New York.

born in Brookhaven township, March 4, 1747. His mother, a daughter of Peter John, was a woman of eminent piety, and for many years was one of the most active workers in the little church at Wading River. Her son, Paul, started in life as a servant on the farm at Wading River belonging to Major Fred. Hudson, where he continued until he was twenty-one years of age. He was a wild, thoughtless youth, fond of pleasure and revelry, but about the time he attained his twenty-first year he became converted at one of the "seasons of refreshing" so influential and frequent in the religious story of Long Island, and the result was that after a time of wrestling with the Evil One to throw off the burden of his own sins, he consecrated his own life to showing those of his own race the way of salvation and the lightening of the load. After a brief period of preparation he seems to have been licensed as a preacher, by what authority has never been discovered: possibly he was just sent out with the good wishes and approbation of the people at Wading River. He then went to Moriches, where he labored among his own race for two years, and thence to Poosapatuck, where he was formally ordained by a delegation of ministers from the Connecticut Convention. Two years later he became a member of the "Strict Congregational Convention on Long Island," a development of the body of the same name as renowned in Connecticut religious story. In 1798 he was employed by the New York Missionary Society to work among the Indians, and in that employment he faithfully and patiently and fruitfully continued until his death, March 7, 1812. He worked mainly at Montauk and Canoe Place, but visited at intervals Poosapatuck, Islip and other spots, where the remnants of his people still lingered. The Rev. Dr. Prime, who knew him, speaks of him in the following kindly manner in his "History of Long Island:"

Having enjoyed a personal acquaintance with Paul for a few years, and had the priv-

ilege, in two or three instances, of hearing his public performances, he (Prime) can bear witness that he was an interesting and affectionate preacher. Though he aimed at no elegance of diction and frequently committed grammatical inaccuracies, these were soon lost sight of in the ardor of his piety and the pathos of his appeals. But the most amiable and distinguishing trait of Paul's character both in the pulpit and out of it was the unaffected humility of his heart. Not only was his spirit imbued with it but he appeared at all times clothed therewith, as with a garment. Naturally modest and graciously lowly in heart, he never aspired to high things, but always condescended to men of low estate, contented, nay gratified, to be the humble instrument of promoting the glory of God and the salvation of his fellow men. He died, as he lived, under the smiles of his Saviour. Gradually, though rapidly, wasted away by consumption, he enjoyed his reason and the light of God's countenance to the end. Having given direction about the manner and place of his interment, he selected a text (II Timothy, IV, 7, 8) for his funeral discourse, and having taken a fond adieu of his family and friends, exhorting them all to "make Christ their friend," he calmly fell asleep.

Cuffee was buried in a little God's-acre near Canoe Place, where an Indian church still stands, in which he once preached. His grave is still pointed out and is distinguished by a plain stone erected by the society whose agent he was during the last thirteen years of his useful life.

When Cuffee passed away the religious regeneration of the Indians seems to have been left to the local preachers of Long Island, and doubtless they all did their duty. But the Indian gradually "wedded" away, as we have already pointed out. Possibly to-day there is not a full-blooded Indian to be found on Long Island, even those who pass for such at Shinnecock having, like Paul Cuffee himself, a dash of African blood in their veins. Still, some of the old customs are kept up and many of the people display on occasion the inherent fervor of the Indian and African for matters of religion. In the New York World of Monday, June 11, 1900, appeared the following

account of a celebration at the old church at Poosepatuck, so often referred to:

The annual June meeting on the Poosepatuck Indian Reservation was held yesterday in the little church on the hill overlooking Ford's River, two miles from Mastic, Long Island. It was in commemoration of the two hundredth anniversary of the deed by Colonel William Tangier Smith, a British subject, of the reservation to the survivors of Sachem Tobaguss, of the Uncachogue tribe. This deed was given on July 2, 1700, and ever since then the Indians have lived on the land.



For many years the June meeting has been the greatest event of the year with the Indians of the eastern end of Long Island. The celebration to-day was not without its pathos, for the statement was made that during the last year three leaders of the little band had crossed over to the "happy hunting grounds," leaving but one full-blooded Indian in the tribe.

June Meeting Day, like the annual hunters' and trappers' spring garden fetes, is peculiar to the east end of Long Island. Nominally it is a religious gathering, but many persons go out of curiosity. Services lasting all day are held in the little church, which seats

only sixty persons. Sixty more can stand in the narrow aisles, and the rest of the crowd sit in wagons and buggies near the doors and windows, where they can hear the preaching and join in the singing of hymns and the peculiar songs or worship handed down through generations from the Indians.

Usually some neighboring white minister presides over the June meeting, and yesterday the Rev. W. H. Stewart, of Middle Island, was in attendance. The other preachers were the Rev. "Deacon" Carl, of the reservation; the Rev. W. H. Parker, of Centre Moriches, and Richard Ward, chief of the Poosapatuck tribe.

The morning was devoted to a praise service. This consisted of prayers, songs and the telling of religious "experiences." Occasionally some of the half-breeds became so enthusiastic that they would "shout" like old-time Southern darkies. In the old days many Indian families became linked by marriage with negro families brought over from Africa.

The "shouting" which remotely suggested the camp dances of the original Indians, was first occasioned by the singing of a song, part of which ran:

Ole Satan went down to the bottom of the well.
(Don't you grieve after me when I'm gone.)
He missed his mark and slipped down to hell.
(Don't you grieve after me when I'm gone.)

This song was rendered with plenty of foot patting, and rocking from side to side.

Mace Bradley, the only surviving full-blooded Poosapatuck Indian on Long Island, said he felt that the days of the Indians on the reservation were numbered. The old Indian's frame shook with emotion as he went on to exhort his fellows to lead pure lives and "look upward." Not infrequently the women moaned aloud, and the men shouted "Amen!"

Richard Ward, the chief of the reservation, led in singing:

I've got my breast-kit, sword and shield:
No man a-work-a like Him.
I'm marchin' boldly through the field—
No man a-work-a like Him.

Then in a thundering chorus all joined in the refrain, those sitting in vehicles outside taking up the air:

He's King of Kings and Lord of Lords,—
Jesus Christ, the first and last:
No man a-work-a like Him.

Suddenly a woman half-breed, shaking from head to foot with fervor, pointed toward the roof and sang:

Jes look over yonder what I see:
No man a-work-a like Him.
See two angels callin' at me:
No man a-work-a like Him.

Verse after verse of this hymn was sung by volunteers.

The afternoon and night services were much like those of the forenoon

The Indians referred to in this article are remnants of the old Patchogue or Setanket tribe.

In the old lands of Europe it is common to trace departed tribes and nations by the names of places, which names have proved more enduring monuments, more popularly understood monuments, than could any structure in stone or "enduring brass." Thus in Scotland the language, manners and customs of the ancient Picts have vanished into the unknown; but the evidences of their existence, of their might and of their territorial greatness is retained in the names of places which are still in popular use. Similar examples could be culled from the history of Germany, of Italy and other countries. So, too, in Long Island. It may be said that the red man has forever disappeared from the places which were once his own, but all over its extent he has left behind him memorials of his language and his occupancy in the names he gave to many localities and which still cling to them.

Gemeco, or Jameco, is still remembered by the old town of Jamaica, although William W. Tooker, the greatest of all authorities on Long Island Indian lore, seems to think it derived from Tamaqua, the beaver. Arshamomique, or Hashamomuk, near Southold, still retains its old Indian name, meaning "where wild flax grows;" and Quogue (Quaquanantuck), Setauket, Sagg, Peconic, Potunk, Syosset, Aquebogue, Quantuck, Tuckahoe, Nissaquag, Watchogue, Ponquogue, Speonk, Seapoose, Manhasset, Rockaway, Noyack, Ne-

guntapoque, Montauk, Commac and a hundred other places still represent the red man's ascendancy and story throughout the island. Even in Brooklyn, built over and over again and changed and transformed as it has been since the red man had his village of Merech-kawikingh (near Red Hook) in what is now the twelfth ward, Indian names confront us. Merechkawikingh, it is true, has passed away and been generally forgotten except by the Antiquaries, but we sometimes think of Blackwell's Island by its Indian name of Minnahannock, Gowanus is still the name of a locality, and Ipetonga survives in the name of a fashionable club.

The Navy Yard, writes, Dr. Tooker, where the Marine Hospital stands and thereabout was known at a very early period as Rinnegackonck. According to traditions it is supposed to have been the locality where began the first settlement of Long Island; but in the light of recent investigation it must yield that honor to Flatlands. The Indian deed is dated July 16, 1637, when "Kakapoteyno* and Pewichaas† as owners of this district by special order of the rulers and with consent of the community * * * conveyed to George Rapalje a certain piece of land called Rinnegackonck, situated upon Long Island, south of the island of Manahatas‡ * * * reaching from a kill to the woods, south and east to a certain copse where the water runs over the stones, etc." The records give us: "The plantation of George Rapalje (called Rinnegackonck), 1638; Rinnegaconck, 1640; Renegakonck, Rinneakonck and Rinnegconck, 1641; Runnegackonck, 1647. Have rented a certain bowery (farm) * * * called in Indian Rinnegackonck," 1651. Stiles' History of Kings county gives it as Rennegackonck, with the statement that it was sometimes spelt with an i or u in the first syllable. It will be noticed that the name belonged entirely to the plantation of George Rapalje,

and not to a creek as supposed by some. It was probably bestowed upon that fertile and well watered farm by the Indians after Rapalje had entered upon the land and improved it, for the Indian titles were almost invariably obtained after the land had been taken possession of by the settlers.

The name gives us an instance occasionally occurring where the r is used in place of w as it should be, according to the English notation. Although the Dutch w has not the same primary sound or derivation as the English, Heckewelder wrote: "There are in the Delaware language no such consonants as the German w or the English v, f, r. Where the w in this language is placed before a vowel it sounds as in English; before a consonant it represents a whistled sound." Eliot found the same difficulty in the Natick dialect, for he says in his grammar, we call w wee; because our name giveth no power of its sound. Many Indian names in the townships west of Southampton, Long Island, show how difficult it was for our early pioneers to catch the true sound of the Indian names of persons and places; as Heckewelder has said, they had not acquired an Indian ear. For instance, we find Rioncom for Weoncombone, Ratiocan or Raseokan for Ashawoken, Ra or Ronkonkumake for Wonkonkooamang, and many others. Besides we find some of the familiar Indian names of the eastern townships so effectually disguised under the softening influence of the Dutch language as to render it difficult to believe they are the same. But in giving them the Dutch values in pronunciation we discover their identity. Again in the short vocabulary taken down by Thomas Jefferson in 1794 from the lips of an old squaw at Pusspa'tok, in the town of Brookhaven, we find the r appearing in many words, showing by comparison that she or her kindred, by marriage or otherwise, were originally from the tribes of western Connecticut. All of which open up very interesting historical questions regarding Indian migrations that we at present cannot dwell upon.

But the study of Indian names belongs more to the field of the local antiquary than to that of the general historian, and with this reference the subject must here rest. But those who wish to pursue the study—and a delightful study it is—will find in the writings of Dr. Tooker, now collected in a series of

*The crow: this name is onomatopoeitic.

†Penawitz = "the stranger," Sachem of Massapeague.

‡Manahan-otan = "Island town," or "town on the Island;" any other interpretation for this name is inadmissible.

volumes, an able introduction and a most satisfying and thoroughgoing guide. He has devoted his life to the subject and his patient and intelligent labor has been fruitful of enduring results.

While writing the closing paragraphs of this chapter a curious meeting has been held in New York, which shows that the few survivors of the old Montauks, Shinnecocks and other tribes are not without some hope of wresting from the white squatters the land owned by their forefathers. The meeting was held by members of the United States Senate's committee on Indian affairs, and its purpose was to listen to appeals by the representatives of the old tribes for legislation which would enable them to institute court proceedings for the recovery of their lands. At the meeting, which was held on September 22, 1900, ten Indians represented the once mighty race. They were the Rev. E. A. Johnson, Dr. W. H. Johnson, Nathan J. Cuffee and James Cuffee, of the Montauk Council; John Noka, Joshua Noka and Donald Seeter, of the Narragansett Council, David Kellis, of the Shinnecock Council, and Lemuel Fielding, of the Mohegan Council. From a newspaper report of the proceedings the following is culled as being of a degree of interest well worthy of being preserved as a part of the Indian story:

The Montauks and Shinnecocks have a joint claim to 11,000 acres of land at Montauk Point. The Narragansetts demand a tract of land eight miles square half a mile back from Narragansett Bay, and the Mohegans claim the reservation four miles from Montville, near Norwich, Connecticut, and including about sixteen acres in Norwich.

The Montauk Indians many years ago occupied Montauk Point. About twenty-five years ago, as the story of the members of the tribe ran, the Montauks found they could no longer make a living off their reservation. So they decided to rent it out to be used for pasturage by a syndicate known as the Proprietors' Company. The members of the company all took grazing allotments, and paid the tribe an annuity. About twenty years ago the members of the company disagreed, some wanting

a land reapportionment, and litigation followed. The court, it is asserted, completely ignored the rights of the Indians and ordered property sold at public auction, and the proceeds divided equally among the white occupants of the land, who, the Indians claim, were merely lessees. The property was sold to Arthur W. Benson, of Brooklyn, who bought in the 11,000 acres for \$151,000. The Indians did not receive a cent of this. It was testified to that Mr. Benson afterward sold 5,000 acres of the reservation to the Long Island Railroad Company for \$600,000.

Some of the Indians were still on the reservation. Mr. Benson hired Nathaniel Dominey, of Easthampton, to negotiate for their removal to Easthampton. Mr. Dominey made a good bargain for Mr. Benson. The old man—he is now nearly eighty—was at the hearing as the chosen friend of the Indians, and he gave the details of the arrangements he made for the removal of the remaining members of the tribe from the lands of their forefathers.

"How many members of the tribe were on the reservation when you opened negotiations with them for their removal?" asked one of the senators.

"There were eight, sir. There were the Queen, her son, Wyandank Pharaoh, who is now the rightful King of the tribe; the Queen's two brothers and four others."

"What arrangements did you make with them?"

"I agreed with the Queen that she should be paid \$100 semi-annually, and that she should have two houses to live in, which at her death were to revert to Mr. Benson. I agreed to give her brothers \$80 each."

"And how about Wyandank Pharaoh, who you say is now the rightful King; what arrangements did you make with him to forfeit his rights?"

"He signed them away for \$10."

Among the Montauk Indians present were the Rev. Eugene A. Johnson, a Presbyterian minister, who has a church in Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, and his brother, Dr. William H. Johnson, of 103 West Twenty-ninth street, who is a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania. It was the former who started the movement to restore their rights to the Montauks.

"There are about three hundred members of the Montauk tribe living," said the Rev. Mr. Johnson. "They are scattered through-

out the United States, but still keep up their tribal relations. We have a tribal council, of which Nathan J. Cuffee is president, and we meet annually. We have tried to obtain our rights in the state courts and before the state legislature, but have been denied a hearing on the strange ground that we are not 'persons.' We occupy a unique position, being wards both of the state of New York and of the United States. Being wards, we could not rightfully dispose of our property without the consent of the state and the General Government. That consent was never secured. On the contrary, our property was taken from us by shameful bribery and fraud. The property we now claim is valued at about \$3,000,000."

David Kellis told the committee of the claims of the Shinnecocks. The town of Southampton is situated on the Shinnecock Hills. The trustees for the Indians went before the legislature in 1859 for authority to acquire the property. The petition which they

presented to the legislature, he said, was fraudulent, many of the names having been forged. Nevertheless the authority was granted, and the land obtained for a small portion of what it was worth.

James Lewis Cuffee, who is a representative of the family of Paul Cuffee, the Indian missionary, gave the committee a history of the reservation since the reign of Punkamchise, King of the Shinnecocks, in 1703. He told of the gradual shoving back and dispossession of the Indians until there was nothing left to them.

One who watched the proceedings closely said that the committee seemed satisfied that the Indians had made out a good prima-facie case, and there was every possibility that the subject would be permitted to reach the courts. Such at least would simply be a measure of justice.



CHAPTER IV.

DISCOVERY—EARLY WHITE SETTLEMENTS AND POLITICAL AND FINANCIAL RELATIONS—THE IMPORTANCE OF THE WAMPUM INDUSTRY.

IN 1497 England sent out an expedition under the direction of the Cabots to try and discover a northwest passage to the West Indies. As we all know, the quest proved a failure; but the expedition sailed along the coast of the North American continent from Newfoundland to Florida. Did it stay for a while in New York harbor? That is a question which we fear can never be answered. All we know of that voyage seems to indicate that the adventurers simply sailed as close to the coast line as possible and seldom sent landing parties on shore. The meagre details we have simply represent the discovery of a coast line, although that was enough, it would seem, when the time came, to give England a foundation for a claim to the whole of the continent by right of discovery! Almost as shadowy is the story of John Verazzano, who in 1524 sailed along the American coast on a voyage of discovery. It seems more than likely that he spent some time in New York harbor and landed on some of its shores. His description is well worth remembering, for it is the first glimpse we get of a scene which was soon to undergo remarkable changes.

"After proceeding one hundred leagues we found a very pleasant situation among some steep hills, through which a large river, deep at the mouth, forced its way into the sea. From the sea to the estuary of the river any ship heavily laden might pass with the help of the tide, which rises eight feet. But as we

were riding at anchor in a good berth we would not venture up in our vessel without a knowledge of the mouth. Therefore we took the boat and entering the river we found the country on the banks well peopled, the inhabitants not differing much from the others, being dressed out with the feathers of birds of various colors. They came towards us with evident delight, raising loud shouts of admiration and showing us where we could most securely land our boat. We passed up this river about half a league, where we found it formed a most beautiful lake, upon which they were rowing thirty or more of their small boats filled with multitudes who came to see us." He did not stay long in this beautiful scene, but passed northward. He saw natives gathering wampum on what is now Rockaway Beach as he passed out, and on his way to Nantucket discovered Block Island, to which he gave the name of Louise, the mother of King Francis of France.

We have vague and shadowy records of other voyageurs who looked in more or less through the Narrows from the Lower Bay, but what has reached us about their movements and their discoveries is so vague and unsatisfactory that the details belong rather to the antiquary than to the historian. Estevan Gomez, a Spanish adventurer, began a voyage across the Atlantic in 1525 and looked in at the Hudson, so it is claimed; but if he did that much he did no more. About 1540 we

read of French skippers ascending the "River of the Steep Hills" as far as what is now Albany in search of furs, and there is some evidence of their having there built a fort to protect themselves and their possessions. In 1542 Jean Allefonsce, of Saintonge, passed through Long Island Sound and so reached New York harbor, being the first it is supposed to have managed that bit of seamanship. Up to that time little was known of the Hudson, although if we agree with Mr. A. J. Weise ("The Discoveries of America") that it is the Noramberg River laid down upon some early maps, it was the subject of much conjecture and even geographical romance. The knowledge of Long Island Sound was even less scanty,—and too scanty, in fact, even for romance to weave around it a story; and some seventy years were to elapse before much more was to be learned.

It was early in September, 1609, that the "Half Moon"—sixty tons' burden—under command of Hendrick, or rather Henry, Hudson, dropped anchor in the Lower Bay, somewhere between Sandy Hook and Coney Island, resting there, as it were, in the course of a voyage of discovery up the coast from Chesapeake Bay. He was sent here by the East India Company of Amsterdam, and hoped, with the experience gained in two previous voyages, to discover that *ignis fatuus* of seamanship even to a recent day—a northwest passage to India. When he entered the river which now bears his name he fondly imagined that he had at last solved the great problem. He spent a few days exploring the shores of the bay and questioning the natives as to the water which led inland. Sad to say, he also had trouble with these seemingly inoffensive people, and they killed one of his men; but whether that tragedy was enacted on Coney Island or on Sandy Hook is a point on which the antiquaries have not yet made up their minds. They all agree, however, that the man—John Colman—was killed, and we call it a tragedy because it was the beginning of a warfare which, whether carried on by firearms, steel, rum or the dis-

eases of civilization, exterminated in time the native population whose gentle, inoffensive qualities Verazzano so clearly describes. Having learned all he could, he passed up the river almost to Albany, and then, having seen enough to show him that he had not yet discovered the long-sought passage, he made his way back to the open sea.

In one respect the story of his journey along the river which has preserved his name and is his most enduring memorial is not pleasant reading. His treatment of the natives was the reverse of kindly, and it has been computed that two hundred were killed by Hudson and his crew during the trip up and down the river. They seem to have been generally friendly and inoffensive, over-curious in many respects, and off Stony Point one was caught, so it is said, in the act of stealing from the ship. To this malefactor was at once applied the law of the white man, and he was shot while trying to escape with his plunder. This led to a rupture of friendly relations in that neighborhood, and when the upper end of Manhattan Island was reached there was a sort of naval battle, Indians, canoes and arrows on the one side and the "Half Moon and firearms on the other, and the "Half Moon" won. We read of another naval battle a little way further down, but with the same result: The natives could not withstand gunpowder. So Hudson reached the open sea in safety, but left behind him memories which in after years were to help, with later stories of cruelty and wrong, to make the red man, as occasion offered and as long as opportunities remained, wreak a terrible vengeance. But Hudson did even more than this; wherever he landed and the Indians proved friendly, or whenever a party of them on kindly service bent visited the "Half Moon," the fire-water was produced to bring about a revel, and of the orgies and excesses which followed each production of that agent of civilization the Indian traditions told in graphic vividness for many a year.

His report to his employers in Amsterdam

was in one sense a disappointment. It did not unveil the desired northwest passage, and so was a failure; but its account of the resources of the country he had seen and its opportunities for trade were not lost in a community whose merchants were then the most far-reaching and enterprising in the world. He told of the rich trade in peltries that awaited a gatherer, and it was not long before some enterprising merchants chartered a ship to cross the ocean and bring back a load of furs. That venture proved a signal success, and the trade of the old Netherlands with the New Netherland may thus be said to have commenced. In 1612 Holland merchants syndicated and sent out the *Fortune*, under command of Hendrick Christiaensen, and the *Tiger*, under command of Adriaen Block, and in the following year three more vessels were despatched to the Mauritius River, as for a time the Hudson was called.

Of these expeditions our interest here centers mainly in that of Block. His ship performed her mission successfully and was loaded ready for the return journey when she was destroyed by fire. He and his crew at once got sufficient timber to build another ship; but as it was too small to attempt to cross the ocean, Block determined to spend the time until a fresh ship could come from Holland in exploration. In his new boat—the *Restless*—he explored the waters of Long Island, both on the sound and the ocean front, discovered it to be an island, and then passing along the mainland he explored the Connecticut River, the Narragansett, rounded Cape Cod and entered Massachusetts Bay. Every day seemed to bring a new discovery, and his imagination was kept on the stretch inventing names for the rivers, points, islands and bays which he passed. His own name survives to us in Block Island, and to him also is due the name of Hellegat—now Hellgate—simply after a branch of the Scheld in his native land, although the name has long been a theme for wrangling among the etymologists. While still exploring he met in with his old cruising

ship, the *Fortune*, returning with a second cargo to Holland, and, leaving the *Restless* in charge of Cornelius Hendricksen, he boarded the *Fortune* and returned to Holland. America saw him no more, and he passed seemingly into the shadows, for nothing appears to be known of his after life. He was certainly a faithful, as he was one of the first of the servants of the East India Company (which was chartered in 1614, the charter of the West India Company dating from 1621), and he is also entitled to remembrance as having been the first ship-builder in America, for we take it that the watergoing craft of the Indians never got beyond the canoe stage.

Hendrick Christiaensen, who in 1612 was sent out in command of the *Fortune*, the consort of Block's ill-fated *Tiger*, was appointed agent of the home authorities with instructions to open a trading station on Manhattan Island. This he did in 1661, when he constructed a little fort and four log houses on the site now occupied by 39 Broadway. This was the beginning of New York—or rather, to put it more correctly, of the present part of New York known as the Borough of Manhattan. No doubt his agents soon crossed the East River and established business relations with the Indians there. The first white settlement on Long Island, however, was not made until 1636, so far as has been determined, and that story is told in another chapter. The credit of the early discovery of Long Island must be given to Adriaen Block, for although Verazzano and Hudson both saw it before him and John Colman very possibly yielded up his life there rather unwillingly, there seems no doubt that Block first determined its true character as an island by his own explorations, aided by those of Cornelissen Mey, another doughty Dutch sailor.

The Dutch certainly had a high appreciation of the value of Long Island, or at least of the little portion of it of which they had practical knowledge—for even in the most powerful of their days the agents of the West India Trading Company never exercised any

real or lasting authority over any part east of an imaginary straight line drawn from Oyster Bay to the south shore. In 1640 a Dutch traveler spoke of Long Island as "the crown of the Netherlands," and to the Dutch must be awarded the palm of premier settlement. In June, 1636, one of Governor Van Twiller's subordinates, Jacob Van Corlaer, bought from the Indians a piece of land called Castuteauw on Seawan-hackey, or Long Island, between the bay of the North River and the East River. He was an enterprising man, held the office of commissary of cargoes and taught school; but he probably bought this premier piece of property as a speculation. He obtained afterward patents for other "parcels" and became magistrate in New Utrecht, but, like most speculators, he seems to have over-reached himself, for in 1672 he became a bankrupt. In 1636, too, several other purchases of Long Island lands were made; and although it was not long after that much of the land was made ready for agricultural purposes, yet we must confess that all our inquiries lead to the belief that the first actual settler to make his home on Long Island was Joris Jansen Rapalje, who on June 16, 1637, obtained a grant of land at Wallabout. On this subject reference is made at greater length in a subsequent chapter of this history.

Lying as it did between the Dutch settlement of New Amsterdam and the English colony in Connecticut, both made up of intrepid pioneers eagerly engaged in the war of wealth and hungry for jurisdiction over fresh soil with all its advantages, the facilities of the times made most of the northern shore and all of the eastern end of Long Island much nearer Connecticut than New Amsterdam, and a struggle for possession and rule became imminent soon after 1639, when Lion Gardiner acquired the island which now bears his name. Not many months afterward Southold and Southampton were settled by English colonists. The enterprise of these men carried them as near to New Amsterdam as Hempstead, but that was too much for the Dutch,

and they drove the unauthorized intruders back to the eastern end. Still the Dutch were not afraid to welcome settlers who placed themselves under their rule and protection in orderly fashion, for even in 1640 they permitted Gravesend to be founded by Lady Moody and her associates, and in 1643 they allowed a settlement of English people from New England to be founded at Hempstead. But such settlements obtained patents from the Dutch Governors and were amenable to the laws imposed by "their High Mightinesses." In the eastern end the communities would have none of this and looked to New England for protection and law. New England, too, claimed jurisdiction over the entire island by virtue of the terms of the charter of 1620 given to the Plymouth Colony, and the Earl of Stirling claimed possession by virtue of the grant given to him in 1635. We will have more to say of this nobleman and his claims in another chapter, and it must suffice here to state that the rights of himself and his heirs were fully acknowledged in the earlier land transactions in the eastern end of the island by the English settlers. The eastern towns each formed an independent community in itself and all seem to have made treaties on their own account with the authorities at New Haven or of Connecticut, before and after September 15, 1650, when the dividing line between the Dutch and English sphere of influence was fixed at Oyster Bay between the high contracting parties. The English system was illustrated even in this little transaction, for there was some doubt as to whether Oyster Bay itself was in the Dutch or English "sphere." But the English claimed it and the result of a long and windy exchange of missives was that they retained it.

In Professor Alexander Johnston's interesting monograph on the History of Connecticut (in "American Commonwealths" series) we read (page 138):

Long Island had never been more than nominally under the jurisdiction of the Dutch. They had planted a few farms at its western end, but the rest was a wilderness. Among

the multitude of conflicting and unintelligible grants made by the Council of Plymouth was one to the Earl of Stirling, covering Long Island. The grantee seems to have claimed ownership only, not jurisdiction. Practically, therefore, when his agent sold a piece of territory, the new owners became an independent political community, with some claims against them, but no direct control. The island was thus in much the same position as the Connecticut territory before the first irruption of settlers, and offered much the same attractions as a place of refuge for persons or communities who had found the connection between church and state grievous. A company from Lynn, Massachusetts, bought the township of Southampton from Stirling's agent, April 17, 1640. There were at first but sixteen persons in the company, Abraham Pierson being their minister. This was the church which, first removing to Branford in 1644, when Southampton became a Connecticut town, finally settled at Newark, New Jersey. Easthampton was settled about 1648 by another Lynn party, and was received as a Connecticut town November 7, 1649. The town of Huntington, though part of it was bought from the Indians by Governor Eaton, of New Haven, in 1646, really dates from about 1653. May 17, 1660, it was received as a Connecticut town. There were thus three Connecticut towns on Long Island, in addition to Southold, the New Haven township. Between these and the really Dutch settlements at the western end of the island there were English settlements at Hempstead; but those acknowledged a much closer dependence on the Dutch authorities.

To all these claims the Dutch were fully cognizant. In a "Description of New Netherland," written in 1649, and which was translated and printed by the New York Historical Society in 1849, we read:

Long Island, which by its fine situation, noble bays and havens, as well as by its fine lands, may be called the crown of the province, is also entirely invaded by them [New England settlers] except at the western extremity, where are two Dutch villages, Breukelin and Amersfoort, which are not of much consequence, and a few English villages, as Gravesant, Greenwyck, Mespát—where during the war the inhabitants were expelled and since confiscated by Director Kieft. But the owners having appealed, it is yet in *statu quo*.

There are not many inhabitants now. Also Vlissingen, a fine village, well stocked with cattle; and fourthly and last, Heemsted, better than the others and very rich in cattle.

But as we are now on Long Island we will (as it seems the British are craving this in particular) say a little more about it. From the beginning of our settling here, this island has been inhabited by the Dutch. In 1640 a Scotchman came to Director Kieft, having an English commission, and claimed the island, but his pretence was not much regarded and he departed again without effecting anything except to rouse a little of the mob. Afterward the Director Kieft subdued and destroyed the British who wished to trade in Oyster Bay; and thus it remained for some time. Another Scotchman came in 1647, named Captain Forster, and claimed this island in the name of the dowager Van Sterling, whose Governor he pretended to be. He had a commission dated the 18th year of King James' reign; but it was not signed by the King nor by anybody else. His commission covered the whole of Long Island, with five surrounding islands, as well as the main land. He also had a power of attorney from Maria, dowager Van Sterling. Nevertheless the man valued these papers much, and said on his arrival he would examine the commission of Governor Stuyvesant. If it was better than his, he would give it up; if not, Stuyvesant must. In short, the Director took copies of these papers and sent the man over in the Valkemer; but the vessel touching in England he did not arrive in Holland.

Under the terms of its charter Connecticut claimed Long Island as an integral part of its territory and was exercising full territorial rights over it when, in 1664, the Dutch colony suddenly passed under English rule. Then Connecticut fondly imagined it had come into its own, but the influence of Manhattan Island proved too strong, and although the negotiations on the point were long drawn out and keenly contested, it was finally determined that the whole of the island was to be a part of the New York colony, while Connecticut had its jurisdiction extended along the opposite shore of the sound. Probably it was the best arrangement which could have been made for Connecticut, but it was hardly agreeable to the



A BIT OF PARDAEGAT WOODS.

"English" towns on the island. When the Dutch regained possession of New Amsterdam all the towns on Long Island, except Southold, Southampton and Easthampton, submitted to the representatives of the States General. But these three held out, asked for aid from Connecticut, and a war between that colony and New York was imminent when the news came that the Dutch regime had again passed and England was once more in possession. Even then an effort was made to have the eastern end of the island declared under the rule of Connecticut, but this request was emphatically denied and the idea was abandoned. But even to this day the people in the eastern part of Long Island look upon Connecticut folk as their neighbors rather than those who dwell west of the old historic dividing line.

While the possession of the land for speculative, agricultural or hunting purposes made Long Island seem a jewel to the Dutch and the English, settlers gladly availed themselves of it as an extended place of refuge for political and religious freedom. There is no doubt from the references, sometimes half implied and sometimes openly expressed in the earlier documents on which we base our histories, that its possession was desired for another cause. It was in wampum that the red man transacted most of his dealings and measured values, and wampum was the real treasure of Long Island, as gold was the treasure of California in the eyes of the 'forty-niners. Cornelius Van Tienhoven, Secretary of the New Netherland, wrote on this point very clearly in a tractate written in 1650 and containing "Information relative to taking up land," intended for the guidance of intending immigrants from the Netherlands: "I begin then," he said, "at the most easterly corner of Long Island, being a point situate on the main ocean, inclosing within, westward, a large inland sea (Gardiner's Bay) adorned with divers fair havens and bays fit for all sorts of craft; this point is entirely covered with trees without any flats, and is somewhat hilly and stoney; very convenient for cod-fishing, which is most

successfully followed by the natives during the season. This point is also well adapted to secure the trade of the natives in wampum (the mine of New Netherland), since in and about the above mentioned sea and the islands therein situate lie the cockles whereof wampum is made, from which great profit could be realized by those who would plant a colonie or hamlet on the aforesaid hook for the cultivation of the land, for raising all sorts of cattle, for fishing and the wampum trade." A document like this is evidence that the Dutch authorities were thoroughly acquainted with the entire resources of Long Island; that they were anxious to invite settlers even to its most inaccessible parts (from New Amsterdam), and that they knew and appreciated most thoroughly the site of the most valuable deposits of the most popular medium of exchange. It shows also that they entirely ignored the settlements from New England and any claim which Connecticut or New Haven might make to the island, and prompts us to think that Lion Gardiner had other purposes in view than merely agricultural when he obtained by purchase from the Indians and by grant from the heirs of Lord Stirling the island which has perpetuated his name and which continues to be the home of his descendants.

On the value of their wampum trade of Long Island a modern writer (John Fiske in his "Quaker and Dutch Colonies," Vol. I, page 174) graphically summarized the subject as follows:

Those shores were a kind of primitive American mint. For ages untold the currency of the red men had been wampum or strings of beads made from sea-shells. There were two sorts, the white beads made from a kind of periwinkle and the black beads made from the clam. It had some of the features of a double standard, inasmuch as the black wampum was worth about twice as much as the white; but as no legal-tender act obliged anybody to take the poorer coin for more than its intrinsic value, no confusion resulted. It was good currency, for it had an intrinsic value that was well understood and remarkably

steady as long as Indians continued to form an important portion of the trading world. For any material to be fit to serve as a currency three conditions are indispensable: 1. It must be an object of desire for its own sake apart from its use as currency. 2. It must be difficult to obtain. 3. Its value must not be subject to fluctuations. Wampum satisfied these conditions. It was used for a number of purposes, and in particular was highly prized for personal adornment. In order to find it one must go to its native coasts and gather the shells and prepare them, and the areas in which these shells occurred were limited. Since wampum thus cost labor, it could easily serve as a measure of other labor. The amount of labor involved in getting a beaver skin could readily be estimated in terms of the effort involved in getting a fathom of beads. * * * It has been well said, "Wampum was the magnet that drew the beaver out of interior forests," or in other words, it was for the white men a currency redeemable in those peltries which were wanted throughout the civilized world.

Now the shores of Long Island abounded in the shells of which wampum is made, and the Indians upon those shores were the chief manufacturers of wampum on the whole Atlantic coast.

Wampum seems to have been found all along the coasts of Long Island, and that fact gave to the place one of its earliest European names, Seawanhacky, or "Island of Seawan," seawan being the Indian name for the money. Wampum, or white money, was made of the stock of the periwinkle, suckauhock, or black money, from the purple inside of the shell of the quahaug or clam, a shellfish that buried itself in the sand and was generally found in deep water. The black money was equal in value to twice that of the wampum or white money. The crude material was transformed into cylinders, highly polished, about an eighth of an inch in diameter and a quarter of an inch long and strung upon hempen or skin cords. The unit of value was a "fathom," a string measuring from the end of the little finger to the elbow and equivalent to five shillings in English colonial money and four guil-

ders in Dutch. It used to be averred among the Dutch colonists that the Indians always sent an agent with a very long forearm or a very short forearm according to the circumstances in which the measuring was to be done!

It is curious that as even as early as 1641 there was talk of depreciated currency in wampum transactions. The Indians presented oyster shells which had no intrinsic value among themselves, but were accepted implicitly by the unsophisticated white colonists; but a later generation of the latter got even with the red man by handing him wampum made in French factories. While the shells which produced the white and black currency were found all along the coast line the richest deposits were those of Gardiner's Bay, and there the Montauks and Manhassetts had established a sort of primitive mint, which they zealously guarded from outside interference. It is said that the possessions of this wealth made the Long Island Indians more amenable to the influence of civilization than their brethren inland, which means that, having the wherewithal, they more readily secured the white man's guns and rum. Certainly they offered, on the whole, a less ferocious opposition to the white settlers than did the aborigines in New England and northern and western New York.

But the possession of this wealth brought its cares and anxieties and its dangers. A recent writer, summarizing the information presented by Weeden, the historian of wampum, says:

Dutch settlers early recognized the value of a monopoly in handling this wampum; hence their persistent opposition to immigration and the settlement of Lord Stirling's colonists,—a persistency practiced by the Indians in turn, when Montauk's Sachem repelled incursions upon the minting ground made by interior tribes to secure both wampum and shells in primitive form. But the demand for wampum so increased that more powerful tribes, headed by Narragansetts, Pequots and Mohawks, united to compel annual payment from the

Great South and Shinnecock Bay clans of tribute money, expressed in wampum for a protection and service never rendered. The demands were complied with, however, from sheer inability to resist, and so constant fear kept the clans toiling to manufacture and pay tribute, their mint thus becoming a source of untold misery. Governor Kieft, from New York, tried a similar experiment, but met with utter failure. He levied a tax, payable in wampum, for the rebuilding of Fort Amsterdam. But the wily red man sent back his collector with a message that they did not want the fort. It was no protection to them, ninety miles away, and they failed to see any reason for giving up valuables at the Governor's request when they were to receive from him nothing in return. Stuyvesant, too, "the valiant, weatherbeaten, mettlesome, obstinate, leathern-sided, lion-hearted, generous-spirited old Governor," as he is called by Father Knickerbocker, had his eyes turned toward the Long Island minting grounds, but never seems to have realized anything therefrom.

In 1628 the Bradford papers record "no inconsiderate profit in the trade with wampum peake," and from the same source comes this statement: "The Kennebec colony bought fifty pounds of it. At first it stuck, and it was two years before they could put of this small quantity, till ye inland people knew of it, and afterward they could scarce ever gett enough for them, for many years together." In 1629 wampum is referred to as being in a manner the currency of the country. In 1642 good wampum passed at four and loose beads at six for a stiver. It is also reported that same year to the Lords of Trade as being the currency used in the United Netherlands—eight white and four black beads passing for a stiver.

Wampum was received in payment of taxes, judgments and all court fees, and, as Weeden says, was the magnet which drew beaver out of interior forests. It passed current in contribution boxes on Sunday and served all purposes for which tobacco was legal tender in Virginia. In 1683 the Flatbush schoolmaster received his salary in wheat at wampum value, and in 1693 the ferriage of each passenger between New York and Brooklyn was eight stivers of wampum. Kieft, after a quarrel with the Raritans, offered a bounty of ten fathoms of wampum to every one who was sixty pence.

For purposes of personal adornment wampum seems to have remained an object of value among the Long Island Indians until they had fallen so low that all ideas of personal adornment were abandoned. Belts of wampum, necklaces of wampum and ornaments of all sorts were the most undisputable evidences of personal wealth. A wampum belt was among the chiefs an emblem. "A belt," says Thompson, "was sent with all public messages and preserved as a record between nations. If a message was sent without the belt it was considered an empty word unworthy of remembrance. If the belt was returned, it was a rejection of the offer or proffer accompanying it. If accepted it was a confirmation and strengthened friendships or effaced injuries. The belt with appropriate emblems worked in it was also the record of domestic transactions. The confederation of the Five Nations was thus recorded. The cockle-shells had indeed more virtue among Indians than pearls, gold and silver had among Europeans. Seawan was the seal of a contract—the oath of fidelity. It satisfied murders and all other injuries, purchased peace and entered into the religious as well as civil ceremonies of the natives. A string of seawan was delivered by the orator in public council at the close of every distinct proposition to others as a ratification of the truth and sincerity of what he said; and the white and black strings of seawan were tied by the pagan priest around the neck of the white dog, suspended to a pole and offered as a sacrifice to T'halonghyawaagon, the Upholder of the Skies, the God of the Five Nations."

In all the great seals of the province of New York from 1691 to the Revolution a roll of wampum is held in the hands of one of the two Indians represented as offering tribute to the British sovereigns. As many as ten thousand shells were often woven into a single belt four inches wide. Wampum continued to be gathered on Long Island until the nineteenth century was pretty well advanced, for Gabriel Furman in his notes on "Long Island An-

tiquities," written about 1834, records that even then "wampum is manufactured on this island to be sent to the Indians in the Western States and Territories for the purpose both of a circulating medium and of conventions and treaties. In the summer of 1831 several

bushels of wampum were brought from Babylon, on this island, and the person who had them stated that he had procured them for an Indian trader, and that he was in the habit of supplying them. This wampum was bored, but not strung."





CHAPTER V.

THE DUTCH—SOME EARLY GOVERNORS—PETER STUYVESANT.

IT is questionable if Adraien Joris, or Cornelius Jacobzen Mey or (May), or William Ver Hulst, who were the authorized directors of the New Netherland colony between 1623 and 1626, ever saw anything of Long Island except perhaps the stretch of sand which faced the ocean and which is now given over to pleasure resorts, or the smoke from the wigwams of Merechkawikingh. Peter Minuit, who took the reins of government May 4, 1626, as Director General of New Netherland and found in his dominion a population of two hundred souls, exclusive, of course, of the aborigines, possibly had just as little personal acquaintance with the island, although he doubtless often looked at its coast line as he journeyed around his citadel in the fort at the Battery. He was an honest man, bought Manhattan Island from the Indians for something like \$25 and probably would have given half as much for Long Island had he felt he wanted it, and could he have managed to

find a Sachem who was powerful enough to give him a clear title? But it does not appear that he cast longing eyes in that direction. His thoughts and hopes were more concentrated on the rich finds in pelts which were sent to him from Fort Orange; and then, too, he had enough territory on hand to defend, for the English Plymouth settlers were always encroaching on his territory on the "Conighticate" River and the Pequod Indians worried him a good deal.

Nor is there existing any evidence of the presence of Governor Wouter Van Twiller on the island during his eventful tenure of the office from April, 1633, until March, 1638; but in his time the existence of Long Island began to assert itself. Van Twiller seems to have been an able man, and like many a modern statesman zealously attempted to build up his own fortunes and those of the state at the same time. He bought for his own profit large tracts of land, including what we now call Blackwell's and Governor's Islands;

until he became one of the richest land owners in the colony. Under him the colony prospered, although the English to the east continued troublesome, and the fur trade reached greater proportions than ever before. But envious people regarded his growing personal wealth with jealousy and he was relieved of his power by their "High Mightinesses" in Holland who sent William Kieft to rule in his stead. In estimating the value of Van Twiller's character and work in New Netherland, modern historians invariably color their views, sometimes unconsciously, from the pages of Washington Irving's "Knickerbocker," where the doughty Governor is handed down to posterity in a full-length picture, as it were, as "Walter the Doubter." But while the genius of Irving has thus, as it were, forced his view of Van Twiller, intended only as a caricature, into the pages of history, it should not be accepted above its historic worth, the worth of any piece of caricature—written or pictorial. There seems no doubt that Van Twiller was an able administrator, a man of considerable energy and firmness and that his administration greatly added to the extent and value of the West Indian Company's property in New Netherland, while his own investments, however brought about, showed that he fully believed in its continued prosperity. It was during his reign that Long Island may be said to have been opened up for settlement; and, indeed, after his own authority had passed, he appears to have had supreme faith in Long Island, for Teunis G. Bergen ("Early Settlers of Kings County," page 363) tells us that in 1643 he obtained a patent for lands at Red Hook and a patent July 16, 1638, for one of the flats (prairies) in Flatlands known as Kaskutensuhane. In June, 1636, Jacob Van Corlaer purchased from the Indians a plat of ground to which was given the name "Castateauw," "between the bay of the North River and the East River." Some lands lying to the west of Corlaer's purchase were brought the same day by Andries Hudde and Wolfert Gerritsen Van Couwenhoven, and a tract to the

east was bought by Van Twiller. In all, some 15,000 acres were thus bought and at once brought into cultivation or adapted for stockraising; and on this property afterward rose the village of New Amersfort, or, as it was later called, Flatlands, which was possibly the first part of Long Island to be settled by white men. In the course of the same year Jacques Bentyn and William Adriaense Bennet bought from the Indians, or from their Sachem, a piece of ground of about 930 acres, extending from near the present Twenty-eighth street, along Gowanus Cove and the bay, to the old New Utrecht line and including what is known as Ocean Hill in Greenwood Cemetery. Bennet was an Englishman and a cooper by trade. Bentyn was also an Englishman, and when he bought the land with Bennet he was Schout Fiscal of New Amsterdam, the leading municipal legal adviser of the place—sheriff and corporation counsel in one. He soon tired of his Long Island property, for in 1639 he sold his interest in it to Bennet for 350 guilders. He continued to be an influential member of the New Amsterdam community for many years, was one of the twelve Representatives in 1641 and a member of the Council. In 1648 he left the country and went to Europe, probably having acquired a moderate competence and disappears from our view. Bennet remained on the land, and built a dwelling upon it, the first house so far as we know ever erected in Brooklyn. He had married a widow just prior to acquiring the Gowanus property and very probably it was she who induced him to build a house. He died early in the year 1644 or at the close of 1643, leaving her with four children, Adriaen, William, Sara and Christian, while another, Mary or Maria, was born in May, 1644, after her father's death.

The widow lost no time in securing a new helpmeet, and on Oct. 9, of the same year (1644), married Paulus Vanderbeek, and by him had two sons and three daughters. With her third husband she resided in New Am-

sterdam, but afterward returned to Long Island, of which, in 1661, Vanderbeek became farmer of the excise, and in 1662 he was ferry-master. He bought a plantation in Gravesend in 1673 and figures in several other real-estate deals. He stands out in local history as the founder of the Vanderbeek family, his wife presenting him with four sons and two daughters. Many of his descendants are now to be found in New Jersey. All of Bennet's family were successful in life. His eldest son engaged in farming and had a property of 150 acres at Bay Ridge, which in 1681 he sold to the ancestor of the Denyse family. Later he bought from his mother a farm at Gowanus, paying her 12,000 guilders for it in produce, and was regarded as a man of means. He died at Gowanus about 1700. His brother William also owned a farm at Gowanus, and like all others in the family was a stanch member of the Dutch Church. In fact the family was more Dutch than English and the founder seems to have accepted the situation with phlegmatic equanimity.

It was under Van Twiller's administration, too, that what we now call the Wallabout was settled. On June 16, 1637, George Rapalie (Joris Jansen) obtained a patent for some 325 acres which he had purchased of the Indians, now occupied, in part, by the United States Marine Hospital. The property, as we have seen in the chapter devoted to the Indians, was called Rinnegackonck, and it was afterward described as "lying on Long Island in the bend of Marechkawieck, as the Indians once called the Wallabout. It does not seem, however, that Rapalie took up his residence on this property until 1654, when he set up his house there. From 1655 to 1660 he was one of the Magistrates of Breuckelen and he was the founder of a family which from that time to the present day has been prominent in the City of Churches and which will often be referred to in these pages.

Under Van Twiller's successor, William Kieft, who held the reins of government from

March 28, 1638, until May 11, 1647, the settlement of the western section of Long Island went on with what would in our days be termed a "rush." Kieft seems to have been an irascible, domineering individual, with a limited amount of brains and an unlimited allowance of self-assurance—a sort of pepper-box dressed up in the clothes of authority. It is, of course, possible that our notions of his personality have been twisted by Washington Irving's caricature; but a study of Kieft's official acts prompts the belief that Irving did not depart very far from historic truth when he wrote in his veracious history the following lines regarding this product of the Dutch Colonial Service—"William the Testy:"

He was a brisk, waspish, little old gentleman, who had dried and withered away, partly through the natural process of years and partly from being parched and burnt up by his fiery soul, which blazed like a vehement rushlight in his bosom, constantly inciting him to most valorous broils, altercations and misadventures. * * * His visage was broad and his features sharp, his nose turned up with the most petulant curl; his cheeks were scorched into a dusky red—doubtless in consequence of the neighborhood of two fierce little gray eyes, through which his torrid soul beamed with tropical fervor. The corners of his mouth were curiously modeled into a kind of fretwork, not a little resembling the wrinkled proboscis of an irritable pug dog; in a word, he was one of the most positive, restless, ugly little men that ever put himself in a passion about nothing.

Such, rightly or wrongly, is the ideal of William Kieft, which we are forced by the genius of Diedrich Knickerbocker, backed up by all the veritable history and evidence which have come down to us, to accept as a true presentment of the successor of "Walter the Doubter." At best, what we do know of veritable history brings before use as a sort of opera-bouffe hero with a touch of villainy running through all his actions. Before coming to America his career was clouded by scoundrelism,—so much so

that he was hanged in effigy in his native Holland. His ill-fame had preceded him to the New Netherland, and when he landed at New Amsterdam on March 28, 1638, after his voyage across the Atlantic on board "The Herring," he was received with marked coldness. Possibly that did not worry him very much. His purpose was to make a fortune rather than to make friends. He was a believer in government by proclamation, and soon after his arrival had the trees and fences in and around New Amsterdam covered with proclamation placards ordaining all sorts of regulations, even regulating the hour when people should go to bed and when they should arise to pursue their usual vocations. However, he turned his authority to some use, for he built a stone church inside the fort, laid out Pearl street for suburban residences of a high class, interested himself in the cultivation of orchards and gardens, instituted two grand county fairs and by the liberal land policy—not only offering free passage from Holland but giving an emigrant practically free of cost a patent for as much land as he and his family could cultivate, and requiring only an oath of fidelity to the States General to enable foreigners to hold land and acquire the status of citizenship—he rapidly promoted new settlements, singly or in groups, in his domains. Still, his first thought was to make money for himself. He established a distillery or brewery on Staten Island; owned and conducted, by deputy, a stone tavern on the shore of the East River at the corner of Pearl street and Coenties Slip, and lost no opportunity of adding to his private fortune. He was quite a fussy tyrant, too, and interfered in all sorts of ways with the private affairs and arrangements of his subjects. His conduct more than once called down the denunciation of Dominie Bogardus in the pulpit, and he retaliated by causing his soldiers to beat their drums and play all sorts of noisy pranks outside the church, so that the good clergyman had to confine himself to moderate language for the sake of being permitted to preach in peace. In fact, for a long time there

was open warfare between the Dominie and the Governor. When Kieft, as a result of a petition from the colonists denouncing his venality, his arrogance, his tyranny and his needless Indian wars, was summoned to return to Holland, he carried with him on the ship, among his personal property, something like \$100,000, the practical results of his statesmanship. The vessel, "The Princess," was hailed with ironical salutes as she weighed anchor and started on her voyage with this precious personage on board, and the people did not even try to conceal their joy over his departure. The ship was wrecked on the English coast, however, and Kieft and his money went to the bottom! Dominie Bogardus, who was on the same vessel, was also among the eighty persons who perished in the disaster.

While there is no clear evidence on the point, it seems likely that Kieft visited Long Island several times and had something of a clear idea of its advantages as a place for colonization. So far as we can learn he never personally owned any of its acres: probably he believed Staten Island a more eligible field for his operations, being nearer the direct way by which shipping passed in and more in line with the commerce of the Hudson. But for purposes of settlement he bought from the Indians, in 1639, practically all the land comprised in the old county of Queens, and in the following year, by purchase from Penhawitz, the chief of the Canarsies, he added to the territory at the disposal of the West India Company all the land it had not up to that time acquired in what afterward became the county of Kings, with the exception of a tract between Coney Island and Gowanus (New Utrecht), which was added in 1645. By a charter promulgated in 1640, trade and commerce restrictions were removed so that any reputable person could so engage. What is equally important in Long Island history was that liberal provision was made for the founding of towns and villages, and the magistrates of such communities were to be named by the people, sub-



OLD BUSHWICK

ject, of course, to the approval of the Governor and his Council. The Governor was the court of last resort in all disputes, even the most trifling; religion was restricted to that of the Reformed Church, and while the company bound itself to maintain preachers, teachers and spiritual visitors, as well as to protect the secular interest of the colonists, it expected that the necessary means would be furnished out of the revenues of the Colony. The taxes were exorbitant, the customs tariff was onerous and outside trade was restricted to the mother country in the first place—that is, all goods exported had to be sent first to Holland. But the latter restriction did not cause much trouble, and in spite of the imposts people managed to thrive.

So newcomers poured in in a steady stream, and as much as possible Kieft and his Council directed their attention to the beautiful shore lying across the arm of the sea which flowed

to the east of New Amsterdam. In August, 1639, Anthony Jansen, from Salee, secured a patent for 100 morgens (200 acres) of land lying within the territory afterward occupied by the towns of Gravesend and New Utrecht, of which territory he was the pioneer. He was a citizen of rather dubious character, seems to have been locally known as "the Turk," and very probably Kieft awarded him that out-of-the-way piece of property to satisfy any claim he might have for service rendered, and, in short, to get rid of him. Anthony resided in New Amsterdam for six or seven years prior to 1639, and there owned a bouwery. His wife, Grietje Reiniers, rejoiced in a character and temperament and reputation pretty much in keeping with his own, and in April, 1639, both were ordered banished from New Amsterdam for being slanderous and troublesome persons. They at once moved to their Long Island possessions and there "the

Turk" built himself a home and settled down to farming. Of this house the remains were long afterward found, as told by Teunis G. Bergen in his "Early Settlers of Kings County" (page 155):

In 1879, in leveling the sand dunes on the upland on the edge of the (Gravesend) Bay a little southeast of the buildings of Mr. Gunther at Locust Grove, which dunes had been blown up by the beach and which had been gradually extending back with the abrasion of the shore or coast, the remains of two separate pieces of stone wall, about two feet high and one foot wide, made mainly of unbroken field stones laid in clay mortar, with a clear floor between them, were exhumed. These remains were covered with from four to ten feet of sand, and are probably those of the barn or other farm buildings of Anthony Jansen, it being customary in the early settlement of this country to construct their threshing floors of clay, of which specimens existed and were in use in the younger days of the author, their roofs being made of thatched straw instead of shingles, as at present.

In 1660 Anthony sold his patent to Nicholas Stillwell, the English ancestor of the noted Brooklyn family, and in 1669, on the death of his wife, he disposed of his plantation lot in Gravesend to his son-in-law, Fernandus Van Sickelen, and returned to New Amsterdam. In 1670 he married again, and died some six years later.

On November 8, 1639, Thomas Bescher, or Beets, an Englishman, received a patent for land at Gowanus, on which he intended to have a tobacco plantation; but he did not succeed in following out his intentions, apparently, and he seems to have sold his patent without delay to Cornelius Lambertson (Cool), who settled on the land, removing there from New Amsterdam.

Frederick Lubbertsen on May 23, 1640, obtained a patent for a large tract covering most of South Brooklyn, and in 1645 added to the extent of his lands by another patent also within the limits of modern Brooklyn. Cornelius Dirckson Hoogland, who in 1642 kept

an inn at Peck Slip, eked out its earnings by running a boat between that place and a point on the Long Island shore just a little to the south of the present Fulton Ferry house, of which this service was the beginning. He was not appointed ferry-master until 1652. His son Dirck, who seemed to aid him in his arduous labors, secured a patent Dec. 22, 1645, for twelve morgens of land in Brooklyn, and on June 24, 1647, he received another patent conveying to him additional seventeen morgens, besides the ferry. These two were the first ferry-masters, and appeared to have a tavern at each terminus of the then perilous journey across the East River. Andries Hudden, in 1636, when a member of Van Twiller's Council, bought considerable property in what afterward formed parts of Flatbush and Flatlands, and on Sept. 12, 1645, received a patent for thirty-seven morgens next to the property of Lubbertsen. In quick succession land patents were granted to Claes Cornelisse (Mentelaer) Van Schlouw, Henry Bresser, Jacob Wolphersen (Van Couwenhoven), Edward Fiskock, William Cornelisen, Peter and Jan Montfort, Hans Hansen Bergen (Hans the Boore), Jan Evertsen Bout, Huyck Aertsen Van Rossem, Joris Jansen Rapelie, and to Caesar Alberti (ancestor of the Albertus family), until, standing on the east shore of New Amsterdam and looking across the river, the coast of Long Island as far as the eye could see was dotted with farms when Kieft's administration came to a close. These settlers do not seem to have been cut off from the New Amsterdam community: they were rather regarded as part of it and deemed not the least influential of its component parts. At least, so we judge from the fact that when, in answer to a popular demand, "twelve select men" were chosen to advise with Kieft upon his foolish Indian policy, three of them were more or less identified with Long Island—Jacques Benton, Frederick Lubbertsen and Joris Jansen Rapelie.

One of the last of Governor Kieft's official acts of any importance was the formal organization of the town of Breuckelen. The tract



PETER STUYVESANT.

of territory called by the Indians Merechawikingh, extending, roughly, from the Wallabout to Gowanus, contained some of the most fertile lands on the western end of the island. On this tract, about a mile and a half from the ferry, just about what is now the junction of Smith and Hoyt streets and a little southeast from where the City Hall and Court House now stand, and on either side of the road leading to the ferry, Bout Van Rossem and other patentees had built their dwellings so as to be close together for mutual protection. They took advantage of the opportunity afforded by the charter of 1640 and asked permission "to found a town at their own expense." Kieft graciously responded and issued a formal recognition of the new town, to which the name of Breuckelen (after the town in Holland) was given, in June, 1646. The people had elected, on May 21 that year, Jan Eversen Bout and Huyck Aertsen Von Rossem as Schepens, and Kieft confirmed the election. A few months later the Governor appointed Jan Teunissen as Schout, or constable, and so before the close of 1646 the municipal organization of the young town was complete.

Teunissen appears to have been a carpenter as well as a constable, for in 1646 he contracted to build a house at the ferry. In 1647 he was sued for debt, so that his varied employments did not turn out very remunerative.

During Kieft's term there were other towns besides Breuckelen established on Long Island. Gravesend was the subject of a patent issued Dec. 19, 1645. Southold and Southampton were also founded while Kieft held office, but they never acknowledged his authority, and looked for protection to New England. On the other hand, the claim which Connecticut and Massachusetts made over Long Island the Dutch Governors never fully acknowledged, nor did they regard Lord Stirling's claim as worthy of a moment's consideration.

On May 11, 1647, Peter (Petrus) Stuyvesant landed in New Amsterdam and assumed the reins of Government vice Kieft, then crossing the high sea with his boodle and dis-

grace. Like that of his predecessor, we find it difficult to estimate this man's character correctly, for at the very mention of his name there arises before us Irving's masterpiece of caricature—Peter the Headstrong. Stuyvesant's notions as to the Divine authority of rulers, his contempt for the people generally, his arrogance, his irascibility, his tyrannical spirit, his interfering, contentious disposition, his narrow-mindedness and his cocksureness soon made him as unpopular as ever Kieft had been; and it was not long before he had quarrels of all sorts on his hands, both with the church and the State, with the patroons as well as with the citizens who dwelt within the shadow of the Stadt Huys. He was even summoned to Holland to give an account of his policy, but he declined to go. In 1653 New Amsterdam got a new charter, giving it a large measure of self-government, but Stuyvesant would have none of it; and although it became the law, it remained practically in abeyance for many years. By and by, when the people began to understand his character rightly, to appreciate his honesty, his courage, his solicitude for the welfare of the population, his profound respect for authority, his clear judgment and simplicity of heart, they got along better with him, and fought his peculiarities without in the least forgetting the respect due to an honest gentleman of mediaeval notions, who meant well toward them all in his heart of hearts, and who, in spite of his notions as to the source of government, was in many ways a staunch supporter of liberty and progress. Under him New Netherland prospered exceedingly, and if in his dealings with the English he threw in a principality in a boundary dispute, he fairly preserved peace, cultivated as carefully as he could and as circumstances permitted the good graces of the aborigines and the British, and proved a strong and fairly progressive executive.

Long Island fully shared in that prosperity which is the most marked feature of Stuyvesant's long tenure of the Governorship. He was much better acquainted with the island

than any of his predecessors, and in fact owned a bouwery at Flatlands, which he leased to a countryman, Jacobus Van Dalem. He was, one would think from his grants of land, deeply interested in its progress; but he had no patience with the attempt of the people there to underrate his authority. It was during his administration that the town system of Kings and Queens may be said to have developed, and Flatbush, Flatlands, Newtown, Flushing, and Hempstead arose under his signature, but he would not permit them to exercise self-government or permit their Schepens to be more than figure-heads. In short, while the law permitted these municipalities to be formed, he made it his business to see to it that his wishes and views were paramount to those of Schepens or people. This the Long Island communities fought against, and on December 11, 1653, delegates from each of the towns met and drew up a protest against Stuyvesant's methods which they addressed to the Governor and Council and "to the Council of the High and Mighty Lords the States General of the United Provinces." In the course of it they said:

We acknowledge a paternal government which God and nature has established in the world for the maintenance and preservation of peace and the welfare of men, not only principally in conformity to the laws of nature, but according to the law and precepts of God, to which we consider ourselves obliged by word and therefore submit to it. The Lord our God having invested their High Mightinesses the States General, as his ministers, with the power to promote the welfare of their subjects, as well of those residing within the United Provinces as those on this side of the sea, which we gratefully acknowledge; and having commissioned in the same view some subaltern magistrates and clothed them with authority to promote the same end, as are the Lords Directors of the privileged West India Company, whom we acknowledged as Lords and patroons of this place, next to your Lordships, as being their representatives.

After further homage of this sort the representatives of the village or towns then set forth their complaints. They refer to the arbitrary government set up by Stuyvesant, to the appointment of local officers without an expression of the will of the people, to the putting in force as occasion arose obsolete laws, so that good citizens hardly knew when they were not violating some ordinance or proclamation, to the length of time in which honest applications for land patents were kept pending, and to the prompt and easy manner in which large tracts of valuable land were awarded to those favored individuals who had some sort of a "pull," as modern politicians would call it, with the authorities. Therefore, trusting to their High Mightinesses to "heal our sickness and pain," the delegates signed the document as follows:

New York: Arent Van Hatten, Martin Creiger, P. L. Vander Girst.

Brooklyn: Frederick Lubbersen, Paulus Vander Beek, William Beekman.

Flushing: John Hicks, Tobias Feeks.

Newtown: Robert Coe, Thomas Hazzard.

Hempstead: William Washburn, John Somers.

Flatlands: Peter Wolverton, Jan. Strycker, Thomas Penewit.

Flatbush: Elbert Elbertson, Thomas Spicer.

Gravesend: George Baxter, James Hubbard.

Peter the Headstrong had no toleration with such documents, would hardly manage to be civil to the Deputies who presented the paper, and denied that Brooklyn, Flatbush and Flatlands, at any rate, had any right to elect delegates to such meetings. He believed it was an evidence of incipient rebellion and treason, and blamed the English residents as the cause of the whole trouble, playing thus the last card—race jealousy—of the petty politician.

Another meeting was held which threatened a fresh appeal to Holland, and this resulted

in Stuyvesant ordering the delegates to disperse and "not to assemble again on such a business." Peter put his foot down emphatically and the citizens meekly obeyed. He went so far in the following year as to refuse to confirm the election of the Gravesend delegates, Baxter and Hubbard, as magistrates of that town, and went there in person to allay the excitement which that arbitrary proceeding occasioned. In this stand, however, he would have been unsuccessful but for the influence of Lady Moody.

Stuyvesant's greatest trouble in his later years was with the English, who were then pressing closely and incessantly upon the Dutch preserve of New Netherland. Long Island, as has been shown, was one of the disputed sections and it was generally held that his agreement at Hartford in 1650 to divide the jurisdiction of the island by the imaginary line at Oyster Bay was the weakest point in his career as an international statesman. It was thought, and rightly thought, that the English had got the best of that arrangement. But could Stuyvesant, in view of all the circumstances, have done better? That can hardly be conceded.

So half of Long Island passed from the control of the States General, much to the disgust of the enemies of Peter the Headstrong, and they were very numerous about that time; but for the people on the island it was a most satisfactory arrangement, for from then on until 1663 peace was the rule on Long Island so far as the Dutch and English were concerned. But in that year Connecticut, having obtained a new charter in 1662, was reaching out to consolidate her territory and much to Stuyvesant's amazement and chagrin claimed jurisdiction over the whole of Long Island and actually sent commissioners there to arrange and collect rates, customs and taxes. Commissioners were appointed March 10, 1663, "to go to Long Island and settle the government on the west end," and in November of that year we find that the people of Jamaica held a

public meeting to protest against Stuyvesant's misgovernment and oppression. In Long Island the people as a whole would have welcomed any relief at that time from the Governor and his Council; and although Peter foamed and waxed indignant, sent remonstrances and appeals to Holland, and threatened to build a fort at Oyster Bay to overcome the English, he did nothing very effective. In fact to his sorrow he found he was receiving no adequate support from the United Provinces or even much in the way of practical aid from his subjects in New Netherland. Long Island had virtually passed from his grasp and into that of Connecticut, when by a charter on March 12, 1663, King Charles II conveyed to his brother, the Duke of York, all of New Netherland, and the question of the possession of Long Island assumed a new phase. The charter gave to the Duke or his appointees all legislative and judicial power over the vast territory, subject only to appeal to the crown. When the grant was made it looked on the face of it like a worthless compliment; but the Duke and his advisers and associates seemed fully to understand the current train of events and to appreciate the importance of the gift, and they at once set to work to realize on it as a valuable asset. In January, 1664, Captain John Scott of Gravesend, who had formerly been an officer under Charles I but had left England in the Cromwellian time (banished, some said, for cutting the girths of several of the Protector's horses), and who probably inspired the grant by speaking of its probabilities, returned to Long Island from a visit to England. He had evidently been intrusted with very high powers by the Duke of York and his advisers, but, desiring to fortify himself in all possible ways before proceeding to put his mission into effect, he managed somehow to secure his appointment as a Magistrate over Long Island from Governor Winthrop of Connecticut. Armed with this document, Scott crossed the Sound to Long Island and with 150 followers boldly pro-

claimed Charles II as King. He raised the English flag in Breuckelen, and thrashed a boy for refusing to doff his hat to the emblem. That was on Jan. 11. Then he passed in quick succession through Midwout and Amersfort and New Utrecht.

By that time Stuyvesant had recovered from his astonishment at the doings in Brooklyn and sent a commission to interview Scott and learn what the trouble was. On Jan. 14 they met at Jamaica and Scott plainly told them that Stuyvesant had no standing in the case; that the entire New Netherland territory belonged to the Duke of York, and he meant to hold it. A truce was, however, patched up and on March 3 Stuyvesant unbent in the stress of circumstances so much that he proceeded in solemn state to Jamaica and there in a personal interview discussed the whole matter with the wild and victorious Scott. It was arranged that the English towns were to remain under the flag unfolded by Scott without any interference for twelve months until the respective home Governments had time to settle the destiny of the provinces. Stuyvesant could really force no better terms. His treasury was empty, the Government from which he got his warrant paid a deaf ear to his remonstrances and appeals for aid, the people were restless and discontented, and even the Dutch seemed ready to revolt, while the English settlers openly defied him, and defied with impunity. In his despair Stuyvesant, as many a greater tyrant before and since has done, bethought of asking the advice and counsel of the people, a proceeding he would never have tolerated for a moment earlier in his career. So he called a General Assembly of delegates from the different towns to consider the condition of affairs, and it met on April 10, 1664, in the City Hall of New Amsterdam. The Long Island representatives were:

Brooklyn: William Bredenbent, Albert Cornelis Wantenaer.

Flatlands: Jan Strycker, William Guiliams.

Flatlands: Elbert Elbertsen, Coert Stevensen.

New Utrecht: David Jochemsen, Cornelis Beekman.

Boswyck: Jan Van Cleef, Guisbert Jennisen.

This diet started right in as soon as it elected Jermias Van Rensselaer chairman, by discussing the condition of affairs, and in an underhanded sort of way by finding fault with Stuyvesant and his Government for the state into which New Netherland had fallen. Stuyvesant found his ancient spirit arise within him at the course the discussions took and coldly informed the delegates that they were to consult, and their main business was to find money and men to maintain the integrity of the territory. Nothing practical came of the meeting, however.

In June Stuyvesant met Governor Winthrop, of Connecticut, which had again actively asserted its jurisdiction over Long Island, but was bluntly told that the English title was to be maintained. So things drifted along, the English steadily advancing on the Dutch territory not only on Long Island but on the Hudson, until at the end of August, 1664, an English fleet under Col. Richard Nicolls passed in through the Narrows and took possession of the harbor; and on Sept. 8 Stuyvesant was forced to sign the capitulation by which his authority passed into the hands of the English, and Long Island, with the rest of New Netherland, was transferred into the possession of the Duke of York. In the face of the royal warrant, John Winthrop, on behalf of Connecticut, withdrew all claim of jurisdiction, and so the destiny of Long Island was irrevocably associated with the province and State of New York, for by that name New Netherland became known very soon after Sept. 8, 1664, when Peter Stuyvesant retired to his bouwerie and the rule of the Dutch for a time passed away.



THE JOHN J. WEEKS HOUSE.

At the corner of Pipe and Rock and Oyster Bay Roads. Said to be the oldest house standing in Long Island

CHAPTER VI.

THE BRITISH GOVERNMENT.

SIR Richard Nicolls, by virtue of the authority of the Duke of York, became Deputy Governor of the New Netherland and was one of the rulers so common in British colonial history, who ruled firmly and intelligently, who brought to the front all that was best in the colony, caused or permitted it to prosper, and knew how to conceal the iron hand beneath the velvet glove. Nicolls did not reign long, for he welcomed his own successor Aug. 17, 1668; but in that brief interval of nearly four years was included much of historical moment to the province in general and to Long Island in particular. Nicolls started in by changing some of the names of his vast bailiwick. The old name of New Netherland, as has been stated, was changed by him to New York, in honor of one title of his royal patron, and Fort Orange became

Albany in honor of another, while, to still further accentuate the Duke's titles, Westchester and Long Island were joined legally under the name of Yorkshire. About the same time the names of several of the Long Island towns were changed so that Rustdorp became Jamaica; Midwout, Flatbush; Amersfort, Flatlands; Breuckland, Brookland; Middleburg, Newtown; and Vlissengen, Flushing. Like Yorkshire in England, its American namesake was divided with "ridings" (an old Anglo-Saxon division of territory into three sections from the Saxon word "trithing"—a third part) as follows:

West Riding: Kings County, Newtown, Staten Island.

North Riding: Remainder of Queens County, Westchester.

East Riding: Suffolk County.

When he had established himself firmly

enough to make the people imagine they were to have a full share in the government, although his rule was and remained arbitrary, Nicolls called a meeting of delegates from each town in the new Yorkshire to assemble at Hempstead on the closing day of February, 1665. In calling this assembly, Gov. Nicolls said to "the Magistrates of the several towns upon Long Island," in a letter dated February 8:

In discharge, therefore, of my trust and duty, to settle good and known laws within this Government for the future and receive your best advice and information in a general meeting, I have thought it best to publish unto you that upon the last day of this present February, at Hempstead, upon Long Island, shall be a general meeting which is to consist of deputies chosen by the major part of the freemen only; which is to be understood of all persons rated according to their estates, whether English or Dutch, within your several towns and precincts, whereof you are to make publication to the inhabitants four days before you proceed to an election, appointing a certain day for the purpose.

You are further to impart to the inhabitants from me that I do heartily recommend to them the choice of the most sober, able and discreet persons, without partiality or faction, the fruit and benefit whereof will return to themselves in a full and perfect composure of all controversies and the propagation of true religion amongst us. They are also required to bring with them a draught of each town limits, or such writings as are necessary to evidence the bounds and limits, as well as the right by which they challenge such bounds and limits, by grants or purchase or both, as also to give notice of their meeting to the Sachems of the Indians whose presence may in some cases be necessary.

Lastly, I do require you to assemble your inhabitants and read this letter to them, and then and there to nominate a day for the election of two deputies from your town who are to bring a certificate of their election, with full power to conclude any cause or matter relating to their several towns, to me at Hempstead upon the last day of February, when, God willing, I shall expect them.

The chosen representatives of the people were so pleased with their new dignity that they made it their first business to draw up a flattering address to the Duke of York as follows:

We, the Deputies duly elected from the several towns upon Long Island, being assembled at Hempstead, in general meeting by authority derived from your Royal Highness under the Honorable Colonel Nicolls as Deputy Governor, do most humbly and thankfully acknowledge to your Royal Highness the great honor and satisfaction we receive in our dependence upon your Royal Highness according to the tenor of his Sacred Majesty's patent, granted the 12th day of March, 1664; wherein we acknowledge ourselves, our heirs and successors for ever to be comprised to all intents and purposes, as therein is more at large expressed.

And we do publicly and unanimously declare our cheerful submission to all such laws, statutes and ordinances which are or shall be made by virtue of authority from your Royal Highness, your heirs and successors for ever.

And also that we will maintain, uphold, and defend to the utmost of our power, and peril to us, our heirs and successors for ever, all the rights, title, and interest granted by his Sacred Majesty to your Royal Highness, against all pretensions or invasions, foreign and domestic; we being already well assured that in so doing we perform our duty of allegiance to his Majesty as freeborn subjects of the Kingdom of England, inhabiting in these his Majesty's dominions.

We do farther beseech your Royal Highness to accept of this address as the first fruits in this general meeting, for a memorial and record against us, our heirs and successors, when we, or any of them, shall fail in our duties.

Lastly, we beseech your Royal Highness to take our poverties and necessities in this wilderness country into speedy consideration; that by constant supplies of trade, and your Royal Highness's more particular countenance of grace to us, and protection of us, we may daily more and more be encouraged to bestow our labors to the improvement of these his Majesty's western dominions, under your Royal Highness, for whose health, long life

and eternal happiness we shall ever pray, as in duty bound. Signed. For:

New Utrecht: Jacques Cortelyou, Younger Hope.

Gravesend: James Hubbard, John Bowne.

Flatlands: Elbert Elbertsen, Roeloffe Martense.

Flatbush: John Striker, Hendrick Gucksen.

Bushwick: John Stealman, Gisbert Tunis.

Brooklyn: Hendrick Lubbertsen, John Evertsen.

Newtown: Richard Betts, John Coe.

Flushing: Elias Doughty, Richard Cornhill.

Jamaica: Daniel Denton, Thomas Benedict.

Hempstead: John Hicks, Robt. Jackson.

Oyster Bay: John Underhill, Matthias Harvey.

Huntington: Jonas Wood, John Ketcham.

Brookhaven: Daniel Lane, Roger Barton.

Southold: William Wells, John Youngs.

Southampton: Thomas Topping, John Howell.

Easthampton: Thomas Baker, John Stratton.

Westchester: Edward Jessup, John Quinby.

Gabriel Furman ("Notes Relating the Town of Brooklyn," 1824), referring to this address, says:

The people of Long Island considered the language of this address as too servile for freemen and were exasperated against the makers of it to such a degree that the Court of Assizes, in order to save the deputies from abuse, if not from personal violence, thought it expedient at their meeting in October, 1666, to declare that whosoever hereafter shall any way detract or speak against any of the Deputies signing the address of his Royal Highness at the General Meeting at Hempstead, they shall be presented at the next Court of Sessions; and if the Justices shall see cause, they shall from thence be bound over to the Assizes, there to answer for the slander upon plaint or information.

The deputies, subsequently to the address made to the Duke of York, made one to the people, in which they set forth their reasons

for agreeing to the code styled "The Duke's Laws."

There seems no doubt that the real author of this address which, fulsome as it may appear to modern readers, was not so extravagant in that respect as most documents of the time of a similar nature, was the Governor's nephew, Matthias Nicolls. He was a lawyer by profession and received the appointment of secretary to that warrior-diplomat, with the military rank of Captain, when the expedition was organized which resulted in the capture of New Netherland. When Nicolls entered into possession Matthias was appointed Secretary of the Province, a position, it would seem, which had been promised him before leaving England: indeed he had his commission in his possession when he first saw New Amsterdam. By virtue of his secretaryship he became a member of the Governor's Council. He was the presiding Judge in the Court of Assizes on its establishment, and in 1672: was chosen Mayor of New York, holding that office for one year. In connection with the Court of Common Pleas he was the Presiding Judge, and in 1683 became one of the Judges of the Supreme Court. He made, in later years of his life, extensive purchases of land on Little Neck and seems to have spent quite a considerable portion of his time on that property. He died at Cow Neck, Dec. 22, 1687, leaving that estate to his son, William, and so may be regarded as the founder of one of the most famous of the old families of Long Island.

There is no question that Matthias Nicolls also drew up the code popularly styled "The Duke's Laws," which after being submitted to the Duke of York and his advisers was accepted by them, printed and ordered enforced. It was to introduce those laws with the apparent concurrence of the people most directly interested in them that the assembly at Hempstead was called. These laws are a remarkable body of regulations and stamp their author as a lawyer of no ordinary degree of acumen, and possessing not only a

thorough knowledge of the world and of human nature, but a broad and tolerant spirit. They stand out in marked relief to the "blue laws" which prevailed over most of New England.

The laws, in every particular except one, were just and equitable. The Indians were protected so far as a sale of their lands required the consent of the Governor. The utmost toleration was allowed in religious matters. Its legal administration, with a town court, a court of sessions and a court of assizes, seemed adequate for the needs of the province. There was a sheriff for the shire, and a deputy sheriff for each riding. Each town was to elect a Constable, and eight (afterward reduced to four) Overseers, who were entrusted with the maintenance of good order. They made up the town court, which took notice of all cases of debt or trespass under £5, and at which a Justice of the Peace (appointed by the Governor) was to preside when present. The Court of Sessions was composed of the Justices of the Peace in each town in each riding and had jurisdiction over all criminal cases and over civil cases where the amount was above £5. It was a jury court, seven jurymen being the number fixed for all cases not capital, and for such twelve were required, and a unanimous verdict was necessary to convict. The death penalty was the fate decreed for those who denied God or His attributes, who were found guilty of treason, or willful murder, or taking life by false testimony, or engaged in man-stealing and several other crimes. Under suits for less than £20 the judgment of the court was to be final, over that sum there was the right of appeal to the Court of Assizes.

That body met once a year in New York and was composed of the Governor and his Council, and the Magistrates of the townships. It was a court of equity as well as of common law. In some respects it seems to have assumed legislative functions, and even made from time to time amendments to the Duke's laws. It was, however, never popular, and

the number of those who attended its sessions in the capacity of Judges made it become a burden on the people, and its abolition in 1684 was generally welcomed. The exception to the acceptance of the code to which reference has been made is the fact that it placed little or no authority in the hands of the people. The Governor had all the prerogatives of an autocrat, executive, legislative and judicial. His will was supreme in every department. He appointed all Judges and public officials and could remove them at pleasure. He could make what laws he pleased and could repeal any which did not suit his views or his purposes. It is true he wielded his authority by and with the advice of his Council, but he appointed the members of his Council himself and could relegate any of them to private life who failed to register his wishes. In spite of all this, however, there can be no doubt that Gov. Nicolls' administration of his high office was fairly satisfactory to the people generally and a genuine feeling of regret was aroused when it became known that his resignation was in the hands of the Duke of York and that he only awaited the coming of his successor to return to England. When that came to pass the people gave him a public dinner and escorted him down New York Bay, thereby setting a precedent which has often been followed since among local "statesmen." It may here be said that Nicolls lost his life in the battle at Solebay, May 28, 1672, with Admiral De Ruyter.

Under Francis Lovelace the personal rule permissible under the Duke's laws was still further emphasized, for he was a politician rather than a statesman. He followed in many ways in the politic footsteps of his predecessor, and he had the wise counsel of Matthias Nicolls always at hand to aid him in any intricate point which might arise. He tried hard to cultivate the most amicable association with the Dutch, assisted the Lutherans to bring a minister from Holland, fully protected the Reformed Church and gave the Presbyterians a free field, so that even they

might secure a foothold in the Province. Religious freedom prevailed all around, and it is one of the conundrums of history that under the rule of a man so thoroughly devoted to the Church of Rome, as perfect an example of religious toleration should be found in a territory where his will was after all the only law. It was this arbitrary rule which led to the failure of Lovelace's administration. The omission of the Duke's code of laws to provide for any real measures of self-government on the part of the colonists had, ever since its promulgation, been the subject of much adverse criticism and complaint, especially on the eastern division of Long Island and among the English towns generally. In 1667 some of the towns petitioned for a system of local government, but Nicolls, then retiring, left the question as a legacy to his successor. That dignitary's response simply advised the petitioners to render submission and obedience to the laws then existing and all would be well. That of course satisfied nobody, but things drifted along, the sentiment for local self-government naturally becoming stronger with time. On October 9, 1669, the towns of Gravesend, Hempstead, Jamaica, Flushing, Newtown, Oyster Bay, as well as Westchester and East Chester, severally presented petitions to the Governor, the result evidently of a preconcerted movement, in which among other things they asked to be put on an equal footing with his Majesty's other subjects in America to the extent of being permitted to participate in making the laws by which they "are governed, by such deputies as shall yearly be chosen by the freeholders of every town and parish." They had at first been promised that much when Nicolls took over the Government; but a promise it still remained. No real response was made to these petitions, and in 1670 the Governor gave an instance of his arbitrary power by declaring the patents to the land of Southampton invalid unless a new one was obtained within a specified time. This was done at a meeting of the Court of

Assizes and in a manner strictly in accordance with the existing law.

In 1665 it was decreed that all towns should take out new patents, so, as it was said, to introduce uniformity in these documents and bring them more in accordance with English law, but the purpose, in reality, was to bring money to the gubernatorial treasury. Southampton complied finally with this command, but it was urged that, having obtained its patents from an English source,—the agents of Lord Stirling,—there was no necessity for the expense and trouble involved.

In 1670 the Governor, who had the legal right, according to the patent of his appointment, to impose customs duties and other indirect taxes agreeably to his own pleasure, ordered a direct tax to be levied for improvements on the fort at New York. When the effort to enforce this impost was commenced the freeholders were aroused and the tax was denounced as being a dangerous precedent, if allowed, and a direct contravention of the undisputed rights of British subjects. The opposition was, in reality, the first move in the struggle against taxation without representation which was destined to go on for a century and to end in the loss of the Colonies to Great Britain. Meetings were held all over Long Island to consider the situation. Jamaica declared that any law which compelled the people to pay money without their consent was a direct violation of the British constitution, forgetting, however, the important fact that they were not living under the British constitution but in a private territory which, by the Duke's charter, was held under the same laws as the "manor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent." This fine point, however, was not apparent to the freeholders of Long Island, although it was not forgotten by Lovelace and his immediate circle of advisers. The people of Huntington flatly refused to pay because they were "deprived of the liberties of Englishmen." The towns of Southold, Southampton and Easthampton held a joint meeting

and decided against the tax, and so did town meetings at Hempstead, Flushing and others. Some of the resolutions adopted at the town meetings were laid before the Court of Sessions of the West Riding, at Gravesend, Dec. 21, 1670, when Matthias Nicolls, who presided, declared them "scandalous, illegal and seditious," and in his turn, fortified by this legal opinion, the Governor ordered the official copies of the resolutions to be burned. He had a peculiar theory that the best way to keep people from grumbling over taxes was to make the amount so large that there was no time to spare for any thought but how to pay them.

The sudden capture of the Province by the Dutch in August, 1673, summarily ended the authority of Lovelace, suspended "The Duke's Laws" and introduced practically a condition of governmental anarchy. On Long Island, Governor Colve attempted to reform everything on a Dutch basis exactly as in the time of Stuyvesant. The eastern towns declined to accept the new Government, declaring they had never been subject to the Dutch, and when Colve's commissioners reached Southold they found the people not only in arms but decidedly ready to use them against any attempt to impose Dutch rule. In this they were backed up by Connecticut, which renewed its old claim of jurisdiction over the eastern half of the island, and on Nov. 26, 1673, in support of that claim, it boldly declared war on the Dutch. It seems very likely the island would have had a few battle-fields added to its historic treasures had not the trend of affairs in Europe again restored New Netherland to English rule.

When the news of the treaty of Feb. 19, 1674, reached America, the people of the English towns were in a quandary. They did not wish a return of the Duke's government, and in the eastern half of Long Island a petition was prepared to the King, asking that the territory be declared under the jurisdiction of Connecticut. It was too late, however, for any such change being made, even had the home authorities so desired, which is doubtful.

The Duke of York, on June 27, 1674, had fortified his title by securing a fresh patent and had appointed Sir Edmund Andros as his Deputy Governor. Soon after he arrived in New York, Oct. 31, 1674, Andros re-established the Duke's laws and bluntly ordered the eastern Long Island towns to return to the rule of his Royal Highness. For a time they held out. Southold, on Nov. 17, by the vote of a town meeting, formally declared that it still adhered to Connecticut, and the others followed suit; but such opposition, as might be expected, proved without avail, and before the year was out the rule of the Duke was again supreme.

Andros continued in power until 1683 and seemed to have brought the iron hand into constant operation without any effort at assuming the velvet disguise. He enforced the laws zealously and arbitrarily, suspended of his own volition meetings of courts and at times even caused citizens to be imprisoned without trial and without offense being charged. Isaac Platt, Epenetus Platt, Samuel Titus, Jonas Wood and Thomas Wicks, all of Huntington, were among those thus deprived of liberty, their only offence being attendance at a meeting to consider how to obtain redress for public grievances. It is to the honor of Huntington that another meeting decreed that their law costs and living expenses should be paid while their imprisonment went on. These meetings seem to have been very numerous and to have increased in intensity and in the scope of their demands; but the records of all which have come down to us show that the main grievance was the question of taxation—taxation of the people without their consent.

But no redress could be obtained from Andros, and the appointment of Thomas Dongan as his successor was hailed with a feeling of relief. That official was neither a strong nor a capable executive, and simply kept within easy touch of the leading strings which connected him with the home authorities, and continued Matthias Nicolls as his chief local adviser. Yet, under Dongan the colonists were destined to make more definite progress on the

way to self-government than they had hitherto been permitted. The longer the "Duke's laws" continued to be enforced with the opportunities for tyranny and favoritism they afforded such men as Andros, the more bitterly were they resented by the colonists, and effort after effort, by appeal or otherwise, was made for a new code, while the existing laws or their results were more or less roundly denounced at many town meetings. The murmurs against Andros had led to a commissioner being sent out to investigate, and although the result was a coat of official whitewash for that official, the fact that such an enquiry was made, was, in the circumstances, a gain for the complainants. It was during the absence of Andros, and while Brockholles, his commander-in-chief, was in executive charge, that the greatest advance was made. Roberts, in his "History of New York," says:

Trouble befell Brockholles at once because the customs duties had expired by limitation and had not been renewed. The merchants on this ground refused to pay any duties on imports. The Council advised Brockholles that he had no authority to collect them without orders from the Duke. Dyer, collector of the port, was exercising "regal power and authority" because he tried to hold goods to enforce payment. He appealed to the courts at home, but without trial finally received practical approval of his course by appointment as Surveyor General of Customs in America. The jury, on the other hand, declared to the Court of Assizes that a Provincial Assembly was needed. Sheriff John Youngs, of Long Island, was designated to draft a petition to the Duke of York for "an assembly to be duly elected by the freeholders as is usual within the realm of England and other of his Majesty's plantations." The demand was urgent, because the inhabitants "were groaning under inexpressible burdens of an arbitrary and absolute power" by which "revenue had been exacted, their trade crippled and their liberties enthralled." Disaffection was open and pronounced, especially on Long Island. Lieut. Gov. Brockholles laid the case before the Duke and was censured for not promptly renewing

the order for the duties and enforcing their collection.

The pressure for money led the Duke to intimate that he would condescend to the desires of the colony in granting them equal privileges in choosing an Assembly and so forth, as the other English plantations in America have, but this was on the supposition that the inhabitants will agree to raise money to discharge the public debts and to settle such a fund for the future as may be sufficient for the maintenance of the garrison and government! James had previously disapproved of any movement for an Assembly as fraught with dangerous consequences, while he pointed to the Court of Assizes as adequate to hear and remedy any grievances. Now he declared, March 28, 1682, that he "sought the common good and protection of the colony and the increase of its trade" before any advantages to himself, and he promised that whatever revenues the people would provide should be applied to the public uses suggested.

But he was in no hurry over the gathering of the Assembly. Brockholles received no instructions, and although Dongan, who arrived Aug. 27, 1683, was instructed to summon the Assembly, he did not issue the proclamation until Sept. 13, and it was almost a month later, Oct. 17, before it met in New York, in the old fort in the Battery. Matthias Nicolls, probably at the instigation of the Governor, was appointed Speaker. The acts of that assembly were of the utmost importance. By the charter of liberties it was declared that under the King and the Duke the supreme legislative authority shall forever be and reside in "the Governor, Council, and the people met in a General Assembly;" and it expressly provided that no tax should be imposed without the consent of the Governor, Council and Assembly. Many of the details of the Duke's laws were repealed. Entire freedom in religion was declared, and free elections were provided for. Duties were regulated as follows:

Imports: Rum, brandy and distilled liquor, 4d a gallon. Sherry and all sweet wines, 40s a pipe. Lead, 6s a cwt. Guns or gun barrels, with lock, 6s each. General merchandise

not otherwise stated, 2 per cent. ad valorem. Merchandise intended for India trade, 10 per cent.

Exports: Beaver skins, 9d each. All other skins exported were liable to duty.

Excise: Beer and cider sold in less quantities than five gallons, 6d a gallon. All other liquors, 12d a gallon.

The courts were thoroughly reorganized. For every town a court was designated to meet once a month and try cases of debt and trespass under forty shillings and without a jury unless one was demanded. A Court of Sessions was to be held yearly in each county to meet for three days and try all sorts of causes with a jury of twelve men. A court of general jurisdiction, called the Court of Oyer and Terminer and jail delivery, was also established, and the Governor and Council were appointed a Court of Chancery, from whose decisions an appeal could only be made to the sovereign. By act of a later session (Oct., 1684) the Court of Assizes was abolished. From a historical point of view, this assembly is memorable as that which divided the Province of Colony into counties and abolished the old ridings with the first mix-up of Long Island with Westchester and Staten Island. The act was passed Nov. 29, 1683, and apportioned Long Island as follows:

Queens County—to conteyne the severall towns of Newtown, Jamaica, Flushing, Hempstead and Oyster Bay, with the severall out-farms, settlements and plantacons adjacent.

Kings County—to conteyne the severall towns of Boshwyck, Bedford, Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht and Gravesend, with the severall settlements and plantacons adjacent.

Suffolk County—to conteyne the severall towns of Huntington, Southfield, Brookhaven, Southampton, Southold, Easthampton to Montauk Point, Shelter Island, the Isle of Wight, Fisher's Island and Plum Island, with the several out-farms and plantacons adjacent.

Dongan summoned a fresh assembly to meet in September, 1685, but it accomplished

little. By the time it met the Duke of York had become James II, and as soon as possible thereafter the new sovereign withdrew the instructions by which the Royal Governor had called the Assemblies and determined that his appointees should alone rule, with the aid of his instructions and the rules of his Privy Council. Amid all these changes the discontent of the people seemed to increase, and after James became King and the Assembly had become a dead letter murmurs reached the royal representative from every side. Taxation steadily increased all round, and especially in Suffolk County, the furthest removed from the center of Government, there was found the greatest difficulty in the collection of the revenue. Indeed, Dongan on one occasion wrote that "the people of Long Island, especially toward the east end, are of the same stamp with those of New England, refractory and very loath to have any commerce with this place (New York), to the great detriment of his Majesty's revenue and the ruin of our merchants." Smuggling was common from Connecticut and New England, the laws were violated in many ways, and though the Government zealously applied itself to remedy matters, it failed of accomplishment. Indeed, the only result of the rigid attempts to enforce obnoxious laws was the stoppage of immigration. The Governor indeed admitted that for seven years not over twenty families from England had moved into the Province of New York, while from Long Island a constant stream of good people was moving over into Connecticut. On Aug. 11, 1688, Andros again became Governor, in addition to his charge in New England, and personally held the executive chair until Oct. 9 following, when he appointed Francis Nicholson his Lieutenant Governor and returned to Boston. Two months later King James himself was a fugitive, bereft of throne and country, and William of Orange resigned in his stead.

There is no doubt that the accession to power of King William was hailed with joy in New Netherland. The Dutch citizens natur-

ally regarded him as one of themselves and anticipated much from what they considered would be but a natural partiality, while the English, heartily tired of James and his domineering and greedy representatives, looked forward to a promulgation of a constitution for the territory, worthy of freemen. It was not until the middle of April, 1689, that the news of the "Glorious Revolution" reached this side of the Atlantic and the first result was the capture of Fort James by Jacob Leisler. This man was a native of Germany, a Protestant, and had acquired considerable wealth in trading with the Indians. While a resident of Albany he had incurred the displeasure of Andros by his opposition to the spread of Roman Catholicism, but under Dongan he became one of the Commissioners of the Court of Admiralty in New York and soon acquired a large measure of popularity among the citizens. He became captain of one of the five companies of militia of the city. When the news of the Revolution reached New York it was understood that the office-holders of the fallen regime would be summarily turned out, and on a report that those who adhered to the deposed monarch were preparing to establish themselves in the fort and to massacre the Protestants, a popular demand arose that Leisler and his troops should take action to establish the authority of the new sovereign. He took possession of the fort, which contained all the funds and archives of the local government, and announced his intention to hold it "for the present Protestant power that reigns in England."

Then, in answer to requests from Leisler, a Committee of Safety of ten citizens, including one representative from Kings and one from Queens, assumed the role of a Provisional Government, elected Leisler its executive chief and authorized him to act as "Captain of the fort." Suffolk County declined to take any share in the committee, basing its hopes upon being reunited to Connecticut. Fearing for his own safety, Lieut. Gov. Nicholson, when the trouble began, went aboard a

ship lying in the harbor and set out for England, and most of his prominent adherents then retired to Albany, leaving Leisler in full control. He strengthened the fort and assumed entire charge of local affairs.

In December a letter was received from the new authority in London directed to "Francis Nicholson, or, in his absence, to such as for the time being take care for preserving the peace and administering the laws in their Majestie's Province of New York in America," authorizing him to take chief command and to appoint to the various offices such freeholders and inhabitants as he should see fit. Leisler, in the absence of Nicholson, considered all this as his own appointment as Lieutenant Governor. So he summarily dismissed the Committee of Safety, swore in a new Council and assumed all the prerogatives of the high office in which he had placed himself. He summoned a General Assembly, which met in New York, but accomplished nothing. Long Island was not represented and, indeed, Huntington was the only town which for a time seems to have fully recognized his authority and aided him with troops. In fact, the island, it may be said, was in a condition of actual rebellion against him, and on Feb. 15, 1690, he brought about the arrest of ex-Gov. Dongan and ordered Col. Thomas Willett, Capt. Thomas Hicks, Daniel Whitehead and Edward Antill to be brought before his Council. A few days later he ordered Dongan and others to be carried as prisoners to New York. The struggle continued all through the island, and in October Leisler sent his son-in-law, Major Millbourne, to suppress the disaffected and suspended the meeting of the Kings County Court of Oyer and Terminer. But the disaffection continued and grew daily more open and pronounced, so much so that on Oct. 30 he formally declared Long Island in a state of rebellion. On Nov. 7 the freeholders of Hempstead, Jamaica, Flushing and Newtown met and drew up a paper, which was sent to the Secretary of State in London, in which they told of their oppressed condition and en-

larged at length and in minute detail on Leisler's tyrannical and cruel acts.

So matters passed along, the whole province drifting in a perilous condition in spite of Leisler's able management of affairs generally until, in January, 1691, Major Richard Ingoldsby arrived in New York with some troops, announced that Henry Sloughter had been appointed Governor and himself Lieutenant Governor, and demanded in the name of his chief possession of the fort. This Leisler peremptorily refused. When Sloughter arrived, March 19, 1691, Leisler continued to hold out until Gov. Sloughter had sworn in his Council, when he accepted the inevitable, gave up the stronghold and resigned his commands. Sloughter at once placed Leisler and nine of his adherents under arrest. All of these were soon liberated excepting Leisler and Millbourne, who were tried for high treason and murder, found guilty, and, on May 16, 1691, both were hanged near what is now the New York entrance to the Brooklyn Bridge.

As regards the merits of this dispute, or the story of the parties of Leislerites and Anti-Leislerites in which New York long revelled, we do not propose to enter. The passing of Leisler on the gallows virtually ended the trouble so far as Long Island was concerned. We are rather concerned with the commission of Henry Sloughter, for, as Thompson says, "it constituted the foundation of the Colonial Government after the Revolution in England, and continued as it was then settled, with few innovations, until the American Revolution." Practically it was the same as that under which Gov. Dongan acted, with the difference that it was honestly enforced and the Assembly acquired a full measure of power as an integral part of the Government. It is not likely that Sloughter's administration would have been marked by any extraordinary performance, for he was one of the weakest of all the royal Governors, addicted to many vices, and a drunkard to wit. But his advent in New York was a relief, for the people everywhere in the province felt that he represented a stable govern-

ment. He died suddenly July 23, 1691, and Major Ingoldsby filled his office until Aug. 30, 1692, when Governor Benjamin Fletcher arrived and assumed the **executive chair, being** welcomed with a "treat costing 20 pounds."

Fletcher was a soldier, a staunch supporter of the Established Church in England and a brave as well as a capable man. He established annual agricultural fairs in the three Long Island counties, and it was under his regime that an act was passed by the Assembly, April 10, 1693, changing the name of the island to "Island of Nassau," which, however, never passed into current use, and soon became obsolete. The courts were again reorganized, and practically two new tribunals were instituted—the Court of Common Pleas and the Court of Sessions; an act for settling a ministry and raising a fund for the maintenance of the clergy gave rise to general dissatisfaction, especially when it was discovered that its main object was the setting up in the Province of a State Church, and that the Episcopalian, which had then very few adherents outside of New York City. Still Fletcher seems to have determined it should be enacted and become effective, with the result of raising up a standing grievance in the community for some time to come. He had, in fact, as it was, a good deal of trouble with contumacious and unsympathetic assemblies. In spite of his devotion to clerical interests, Fletcher was obliged to retire from his post in April, 1698, in disgrace, under charges of malfeasance and of being in partnership with pirates; but such charges remained unproved.

It was to put down the pirates who infested the seas that the Earl of Bellomont was appointed to the Governorship in succession to Fletcher, and entered upon his duties April 13, 1698. In another chapter we will refer more particularly to his work in that line, and practically with that story his connection with Long Island began and ended. His successor as Governor, the notorious Lord Cornbury, was equally a cipher although he contributed a disgraceful chapter to the clerical

history of the village of Jamaica. He was recalled in 1708 and Lord Lovelace became Governor for a few months. During the interregnum caused by the arrivals and departure of these nonentities the executive chair was often filled for brief intervals by local men, such as Col. William Smith, Col. Abraham de Peyster, Gerardus Beekman and Peter Schuyler.

Gov. Hunter, a scion of an old Scottish family, entered upon the duties of the Governorship June 14, 1710. Like all of his predecessors, he had accepted the office with a view of adding to his private fortune, but unlike most of them he had a conscience that prevented him from seeking to increase his wealth by means which were in direct variance to the welfare of the community over which he was appointed to rule. After about a year's experience in the Province he saw that the development of the territory could only be hastened by adding to its population through encouraging and facilitating immigration, and having conceived a scheme about the manufacture of naval stores by which he might enrich himself and afford employment to many workers he proceeded to develop the resources of the country and increase his own wealth by the introduction of some 3,000 German laborers from the Palatinate. These people were settled in five villages on the banks of the Hudson River, and were to produce tar and turpentine. Their passage money was to be repaid out of their earnings and on the same terms they were to be supplied at first with the necessities of life. As might be expected the scheme was a failure. The immigrants were virtually contract slaves and were soon so dissatisfied with their lot that they refused to work; and when at length he washed his hands of the whole scheme and left the immigrants to shift for themselves "but not outside of the province," the Governor was very seriously crippled financially. His greatest claim to remembrance is his establishing of a complete Court of Chancery in the colony; and although he doubtless saw in such a court

a rich harvest of fees and opportunities for patronage, the good accomplished by a tribunal of that description, especially in a developing colony where new and intricate questions were daily demanding decisions, decisions, which, were for all time to rank as precedents, should not be ignored. In many ways Governor Hunter was a model ruler. In questions of religion he was extremely tolerant and he believed in every man being permitted to worship as he thought best. He indulged in no wild-cat schemes unless his importation of workers from the Palatinate be so regarded, and encouraged no extravagant outlay of public money. He understood the art of managing men, and was on equally good terms with all the parties in the colony. Very popular he was not and never could be, for he represented a sovereign power in the person of the King, while all around him in New York was slowly but surely developing the theory that the source of all power, even the power to name Governors and Judges, should be the people concerned; still he preserved intact the supremacy of his royal master and maintained peace or the appearance of harmony in the province, although he foresaw very clearly that a struggle between Britain and the American Colonies was certain sooner or later. "The Colonies were then infants at their mother's breast," he wrote in 1711 to Lord Bolingbroke, then British Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs; "but such as would wean themselves when they came of age."

When Robert Hunter retired from the Colony, in 1719, the Assembly gave him an address in which they lauded his administration of affairs and expressed the opinion that he had "governed well and wisely, like a prudent magistrate, like an affectionate parent." This praise seems to have been thoroughly well deserved, and even American writers acknowledge that his official record was not only an able but a clean one. He was possessed of more than ordinary talent, was a warm friend of such men as Addison, St. John, Steele, Shaftesbury, and especially of Dean Swift,

who appears to have entertained for him as undoubted sentiments of respect and friendship as he entertained for any man. "Hunter," wrote John Forster in his uncompleted life of the Dean of St. Patrick's, "was among the most scholarly and entertaining of his (Swift's) correspondents; some of Swift's own best letters were written to this friend, and the judgment he had formed of him may be taken from the fact that when all the world were giving to himself the authorship of Shaftesbury's (anonymously printed) 'Letter of Enthusiasm,' Swift believed Hunter to have written it." General Hunter died at Jamaica in 1734, while holding the office of Governor of that island.

Governor Hunter's successor in New York was also a Scotchman—William Burnet. This amiable man was the son of the famous Bishop Burnet, whose "History of Our Own Times" is one of the classics of English literature. William Burnet was educated at Cambridge and admitted to the practice of the law. He appears to have been fairly successful in that profession, but lost all his means in the South Sea bubble, and, finding himself ruined, looked around so that he might use his great family influence to secure for him a colonial appointment, a most natural and common proceeding at that time. His success was quick and brilliant, and in September, 1720, he found himself in New York as its Governor. His administration was as able and as honest as that of his predecessor, and he made himself immensely popular by his prohibition of trade between the Indians of the colony and the merchants in Canada, and he even built a fort at his personal expense to help in protecting the trade of the colony over which he ruled. The home government, however, refused to endorse Burnet's course in this instance, but that set-back only added to his personal popularity. He lost it all, however, by the policy he adopted toward the Court of Chancery. Briefly stated, he wanted to make that body independent of public sentiment and above

public interference, while Colonial opinion was that all judges and all courts should be subject to the control of the people directly or through their elected representatives. Things reached such a pass that the Assembly threatened to declare all acts and decrees of the Court of Chancery as null and void, and reduced all its fees as a preliminary step in that direction. The crisis between the Governor and the people was ended, greatly to the former's relief, in 1728, when he was transferred to the Governorship of Massachusetts. He had not much time to make a name for himself in the old Bay State, for he died at Boston in 1729.

John Montgomery, the next Governor, was a soldier of brilliant parts and many amiable qualities, but he only held the office for some three months, dying July 1, 1731. Rip Van Dam, the oldest member of the Council, acted as Governor until the arrival of William Cosby on Aug. 1, 1732. This miserable charlatan drew his salary, quarrelled with the Assembly, aired his self-conceit, and gabbled about prerogatives until he became the most hated man in the province. He died in office March 7, 1736, and George Clarke, his Lieutenant Governor, administered affairs until the arrival of Governor George Clinton, Nov. 23, 1743. It is said that Clarke during his American career amassed a fortune of £100,000, while Clinton when he retired in 1753 took back with him to England £80,000, all gathered in during his ten years' tenure, a tenure that was marked by constant bickering with the Assembly and many leading Colonists; for the trend of affairs was even then, unconsciously to all, most certainly approaching a crisis. It became conscious, however, to a great many in 1765, when, Sir Henry Moore being Governor, an attempt was made to introduce stamp duties. But from Clinton to Tryon the Governors were either mere figure-heads, or at all events passing creatures on the stage who accomplished nothing worth even the recalling of their names in these pages. Tryon was the

ablest of the lot, but his story belongs to the pages of our history which recount the events of the Revolution.

If, however, these titular rulers are unworthy of a place in this history there is no doubt that the actual ruler of New York for fifteen years prior to the advent of Tryon, Cadwallader Colden, deserves more than passing notice. Colden was born at Dunse (now unfortunately called Duns), Scotland, in 1688, the year of the "Glorious Revolution" which placed William and Mary on the British



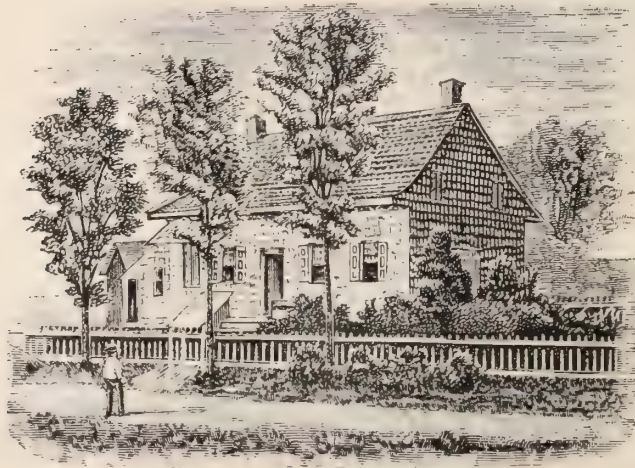
throne. His father was a clergyman and Cadwallader was educated at Edinburgh University with the view of entering the ministry. His own inclination, however, led him to study medicine and he appears to have practiced that profession in London. In 1710 he crossed the seas to Philadelphia. His stay there was comparatively short, for we find him in 1715 again in London, where he moved in the highest intellectual and literary circles. In 1716 he returned to Scotland and married a country girl, the daughter of a minister, and soon after left his native land again for America. After practicing medicine for a time in Phila-

delphia he visited New York and won the friendship of Governor Hunter, who invited him to settle in the territory under his authority. This he agreed to, mainly because Hunter backed up his profession of friendship by the more tangible offer of the position of Surveyor General of the Colony. Two years later Colden had so fortified his position with the ruling powers that he obtained a grant of 2,000 acres of land in Orange county, and there built a country home for himself and founded a village to which he gave the name of Coldenham, which it still retains. His influence was increased after he was appointed, in 1722, a member of his Majesty's Provincial Council, when Governor Burnet had commenced his rule, and he became that personage's most trusted counsellor. After Burnet went to Boston, Colden retired to Coldenham and there interested himself in those literary and scientific pursuits which gave him a prominent position in contemporary learned circles. He had a wide correspondence with scientists on both sides of the Atlantic, and to a suggestion in one of his letters was due the formation of the American Philosophical Society of Philadelphia. As a member of Council, however, Colden still continued to be active in the politics of the Province and as usual came in for a full share of popular and official criticism and abuse. In 1760 a second time as senior member of Council, he was called upon to administer the government on the sudden death of Governor De Lancey, and he soon after was commissioned Lieutenant Governor. Thereafter, with "few interruptions," he served as Lieutenant Governor until June 25, 1775, when the progress of the Revolution laid him on the shelf by wiping out the royal office. Had Colden thrown in his lot with the Revolutionists he might have attained a high place in the affection of the leaders of the successful side, but he remained steadfast in his loyalty and to the official oaths he had taken to be faithful to the home Government, and while his sympathies were always with the people and his views were

most decided against unwarranted State interference and against taxation without representation, he was too old to change his flag. Besides, he was of the opinion that all the evils which led to the Revolution could be amended by united and firm representation to the sovereign and his immediate advisers, and that therefore open rebellion was needless. So, when the crash finally came and his protestations, tears, promises, explanations, diplomacy and entreaties proved unavailing, the old Governor retired to a farm near Flushing, Long Island, and died of a broken heart a few months later, in September, 1776, when in the eighty-eighth year of his age.

After the bitterness of the contemporary struggle had passed away the public services and brilliant talents of this most accomplished

of all New York royal representatives was more apparent than at the time when he was an actor in the drama of history, and his loyal devotion to the duties of his high office was fully acknowledged on all sides. "Posterity," wrote Dr. O'Callaghan in his "Documentary History of the State of New York," "will not fail to accord justice to the character and memory of a man to whom this country is most deeply indebted for much of its science and for many of the most important institutions, and of whom the State of New York may well be proud;" and G. C. Verplonck said: "For the great variety and extent of his learning, his unwearied research, his talents, and the public sphere which he filled, Cadwallader Colden may justly be placed in a high rank among the most distinguished men of his time."





CHAPTER VII.

SOME EARLY FAMILIES AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

SOME PIONEER SETTLERS—THE STIRLING OWNERSHIP AND COLONIZING SCHEMES—LION GARDINER AND HIS PURCHASE—A LONG ISLAND “QUEEN OF THE WHITE HOUSE”—THE BLUE SMITHS AND OTHER SMITHS, THE TANGIER SMITHS AND OTHER BRANCHES OF THE SMITH FAMILY—THE FLOYDS.

WE propose in this chapter to select a few of the early and other representative families of Long Island, to tell how they acquired a settlement, what they did in the way of developing its resources, trace, when possible, and at more or less extent, their descendants to the present day, referring briefly to the doings of the most prominent in each generation and in a general way try to show the influence which each family selected has had upon the fortunes of the island. Scattered throughout the course of this work much information of the description thus indicated will be found, but the selection here made will group together representative examples of the various classes of “founders” whose names are to-day as familiar in Long Island as household words, and will enable the reader readily to understand the quality of hearts and hands which have led the way in the building up of the local history. Long Island is justly proud of its old families, and while it heartily welcomes newcomers to its soil it is wont to recall with

pleasure the names of the pioneers who in other times and under very different circumstances from those which prevail to-day, cleared the land of its virgin forests, made fruitful fields take the place of hunting grounds, introduced civilization and commerce, and won for Long Island a definite and honored position in the annals of the State and the Nation.

Outside of corporations, or companies, or sovereigns, the first owner of Long Island was William Alexander, Earl of Stirling, in many ways one of the most extraordinary men of his time; a man who was restless in his activity, who won fame in various walks of life, who was one of the most extensive landowners of which the world has any knowledge, yet who died poor—a bankrupt, in fact. William Alexander was born at Menstrie, Stirlingshire, in 1567. Through the influence of the Argyle family he obtained a position at the Scottish Court and became tutor to Prince Henry, eldest son of James VI. He soon won the good graces of the sovereign himself—

the British Solomon—by his learning, his shrewdness, and his poetical ability, and when the crowns of Scotland and England were united, in 1603, Alexander followed King James to London. That Alexander enjoyed much popular favor and high reputation as a poet during his lifetime is undoubted, although few except students of literature venture to read his productions now. They are heavy, discursive, and, with the exception of a few of his sonnets and his "Paraenesis to Prince Henry," rather monotonous. He was a slave to the literary mannerisms and affectations of the age, but a knowledge of that cannot blind us to the fact that he was really possessed of a rich share of poetic ability. With his poetical writings or his merits as a poet, however, we have nothing to do in this place; nor do we need discuss the question as to whether or not he wrote King James's "Psalms," or even discuss the nature of his statesmanship as employed in his official relations with his native country. We have to deal with him simply as a colonizer, one of the first to colonize America. His career at Court may be summed up by mentioning that he was knighted in 1609, created Lord Alexander of Tullibody and Viscount Stirling in 1630, Earl of Stirling and Viscount Canada in 1633, and Earl of Dovon in 1639. A year later he died.

Lord Stirling found that the English were striving to establish colonies on the American seaboard and thought, like the patriot that he undoubtedly was, that his countrymen should have a share in the rich lands across the sea. Early in 1621 he sent a petition to King James for a grant of territory in America on which he hoped to induce Scotchmen to settle. "A great number of Scotch families," he told his sovereign, "had lately emigrated to Poland, Sweden and Russia," and he pointed out that "it would be equally beneficial to the interests of the kingdom, and to the individuals themselves, if they were permitted to settle this valuable and fertile portion of his Majesty's dominions."

The petition was granted by the King—

probably that was satisfactorily arranged before it had been committed to paper—and endorsed by the Privy Council. When these formalities had been gone through Lord Stirling entered on formal possession of what is now incorporated in Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Prince Edward Island, a goodly portion of the State of Maine and of the Province of Quebec. This territory was to be known as New Scotland,—Nova Scotia, the charter dignifiedly called it,—and over it the new owner and those acting for him in it were supreme even to the establishment of churches and of courts of law. For some reason, not now exactly known, Lord Stirling at once handed over a part of his new dominion to Sir Robert Gordon of Lochinvar. That part is known as Cape Breton, but it was then given the more national name of New Galloway.

Sir William Alexander, to give Lord Stirling the name by which he is probably best remembered, sent out his first expedition to colonize New Scotland in March, 1622. These pioneers, with the exception of an adventurous clergyman, were of the humblest class of agricultural laborers, and only a single artisan, a blacksmith, was among them. The voyage was a rough one, and, after sighting the coast of Cape Breton, the emigrants were glad to shape their course back to Newfoundland, where they spent the winter. Next spring Sir William, who had been advised of the failure of the first expedition, sent out another ship with colonists and provisions. The early reports of the land on which the new colony was to settle were communicated to him by some of his people soon after they managed to get landed, which they did in the guise of an exploring party. These reports were submitted by him to the world, with all the attractiveness of a modern advertising agent, in his work entitled an "Encouragement to Colonies." The explorers described the country they visited (mainly the coast of Cape Breton) as "presenting very delectate meadows, having roses white and red growing therein, with a kind of wild Lily, which hath a daintie smell."

The ground "was without wood, and very good, fat earth, having several sort of berries growing thereon, as gooseberries, strawberries, hindberries, raspberries and a kind of wine berrie, as also some sorts of grain, as pease, some eares of wheat, barley and rye growing there wild. * * * They likewise found in every river abundance of lobsters, cockles, and all other shell fishes, and also, not only in the rivers, but all the coasts alongst, numbers of several sorts of wilde fowle, as wild goose, black Duck, woodcock, crane, heron, pidgeon, and many other sorts of Fowl which they knew not. They did kill as they sayled alongst the coast, great shore of cod, with several other sorts of great fishes. The country is full of woods, not very thick, and the most part Oake, the rest Firre, Spruce, Birch and some Sicamores and Ashes and many other sorts of Wood which they had not seen before." All this information, so cunningly and attractively set forth by Sir William in his book of "Encouragement," which by the way had a map of the territory in which Scottish names are given to every point and section and river, failed to attract settlers and the "projector" found himself some £6,000 out of pocket by his patriotism. To reimburse him, and at the same time add a little to the royal treasury, the order of Baronets of Nova Scotia was founded, on the pattern of the order of Ulster; even this move was not substantially successful, although the terms were reasonable and the lands accompanying the honor were "three myles long upon the coast and ten miles into the country."

We need not follow the details of Sir William's colonizing schemes any further. They belong really to the history of Canada. Each failure seemed to be compensated for by a fresh grant of territory, and, if we may believe a map issued long after by one of the many claimants for his hereditary titles and "land rights," the Alexander family held by right of charters, the sort of documents which the late Duke of Argyll believed to be the most sacred on earth, not only about the whole

of Canada, but what are now the States of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, New York, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, Ohio, Maryland and an undefined territory two or three times as large as all that has been named put together.

Sir William never saw his possessions on this side of the Atlantic. He appointed as his agent and administrator on Long Island James Farret, and by way of recompense, or partly so, for his services the latter received as a starter a grant from his knightly employer of twelve thousand acres of land on Long Island, or "the islands adjacent." Farret afterward selected Shelter Island and Robin's Island under this clause in the agreement, but in 1641 he conveyed both these islands to Stephen Goodyear, of New Haven. That individual seems never to have made any use of either of them, probably held them only as a speculation, and in 1651 he sold both to Thomas Middleton, Thomas Rouse, Constant Sylvester and Nathaniel Sylvester, for 16 cwt. of raw sugar. These buyers, however, took the additional precaution of getting a confirmation of their title from the chief of the Manhattans Indians. By 1666 the two Sylvesters and Thomas Middleton were the owners of Shelter Island and had the original patent from Lord Stirling's agent confirmed by Governor Nicolls. Governor Colve, when the Dutch regained sovereignty of the Province, confiscated the property of Middleton and Constant Sylvester and sold their holdings on the island to Nathaniel for £500. He had a good deal of trouble in collecting the amount before the regime under which he acted came to an end forever: in fact, he had to send a detachment of fifty soldiers to the island before Nathaniel would part with the money. He did part with it, however, and remained in peaceful possession until his death, when he willed the property in equal parts to his five sons. Its further story will be traced in another section of this work.

On March 10, 1639, Farret, on behalf of Lord Stirling, made a conveyance to Lion

Gardiner of what is now known as Gardiner's Island, but was formerly known among the Indians as Manchonat and among the English as the Isle of Wight. The details of this purchase, both of the Stirling conveyance and the sale by the Indians, as well as some account of the career of Lion Gardiner, have already been given in a previous chapter (Chapter V). But reference is made again to the purchase and the family, because the island has remained in the hands of the Gardiner family until the present day, and it gives us, as has been said, "the only illustration of the practical working of the law of primogeniture in this country covering so long a period." Lion Gardiner died at Easthampton in 1663, in or about the sixty-fourth year of his age. He had taken up his abode at Easthampton about the year 1649, probably with the view of the enjoyment of more frequent social intercourse with his fellows than he could command on his little island kingdom, on which in 1641 one of his daughters, Elizabeth, was born. At Easthampton he seems to have lived the simple life of a cultured country gentleman, and was held in the highest esteem by the people. He filled the office of magistrate and in all respects was regarded as the representative citizen of that section of the island, wielding an influence that was equally potent among the Indians as among those of his own race. A recumbent statue placed beside his grave in 1886 is testimony that his memory is still cherished. His son David came into possession of the property when the pioneer rested from his labors. He seemed to inherit much of his father's talents, took up the role of country gentleman and represented Easthampton and the other eastern towns on several occasions before the General Assembly at Hartford. He died in the last named town July 10, 1689, and his tomb set forth that he was "well, sick, dead, in one hour's time." His estate was divided between his sons, John getting Gardiner's Island and Lion the lands at Easthampton. With the latter's descendants we have no in-

terest at present, although for several generations they upheld the family name. Gardiner's Island continued in the possession of John Gardiner until he died, in 1764, when it passed to his eldest son, David. Another son acquired property at Eaton's Neck and founded a family. David soon after entering into ownership of the island married Jerusha, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Buell, and had two sons,—John Lion and David. The latter settled at Flushing and left a family there. John Lion married the daughter of the Hon. Roger Griswold, and at his death, November 22, 1816, the island became the property of his son, David Johnston, who died in 1829, and was the last to hold the island under the original deed of entail which extended to first heirs male only. His brother, John Griswold Gardiner, succeeded to the possession of the island, but died unmarried in 1861, when a third brother, Samuel Buell Gardiner, purchased the interest of a sister (Mrs. Sarah Diodati Thompson) in the property and became sole owner of the ancestral domain. He died in 1882, leaving it to his eldest son, David Johnston. It is at present held by the latter's brother, John Lion, the 12th lord of the property, and with a clearer and more direct descent from the original owner than that which gives title to many a lordly manor in the old land from which the family sprung. By the marriage of one of the ladies of the Gardiner family with President John Tyler, Gardiner's Island gave to the nation one of the "Queens of the White House," as the wives of the Presidents have been named. The facts in the case have recently been unearthed by Mr. Samuel Barber, and his interesting story is here reproduced:

That Mrs. John Tyler, widow of President Tyler, was once a resident of Brooklyn makes it interesting to give a number of historical extracts, viz.: In Appleton's Biography we read, "John Tyler, tenth President of the United States, born at Greenway, Charles City County, Virginia, March 29, 1790, died at Richmond, Va., January 18, 1862. On March

29, 1812, he married Letitia, daughter of Robert Christian." It will thus be seen that his first marriage took place on his twenty-third birthday.

"Letitia Christian, born at Cedar Grove, New Kent County, Va., Nov. 12, 1790, and died in Washington, D. C., Sept. 9, 1842, was the daughter of Robert Christian, a planter in New Kent County, Va. She married Mr. Tyler March 29, 1813, and removed with him to his home in Charles City County. When he became President she accompanied him to Washington, but her health was delicate and she died shortly afterward. Mrs. Tyler was unable to assume any social cares, and the duties of mistress of the White House devolved upon her daughter-in-law, Mrs. Robert Tyler. She possessed great beauty of person and of character, and before the failure of her health was specially fitted for a social life." Again it says: "Their son Robert, born in New Kent County, Va., in 1818, and died in Montgomery, Ala., December 3, 1877, was educated at William and Mary and adopted the profession of the law. He married Priscilla, a daughter of Thomas Apthorpe Cooker, the tragedian, in 1839," of whom we find the following account in Brown's American Stage, page 81, viz.: "Priscilla E. Cooker, daughter of T. A. Cooker, made her debut February 14, 1834, as Virginia at the Bowery Theater, New York. First appearance in Philadelphia Feb. 28, 1834, at the Arch Street Theater as Virginia."

"Again," adds Stapleton, "when his father became President his wife assumed the duties of mistress of the White House till after Mrs. John Tyler's death, when they devolved upon her daughter, Mrs. Letitia Sample." Of President Tyler's second marriage we copy the following from Appleton's Biography, T., p. 199: "President Tyler's second wife, Julia Gardiner, born on Gardiner's Island, near Easthampton, N. Y., May 4, 1820; died in Richmond, Va., July 10, 1889; was a descendant of the Gardiners of Gardiner's Island. She was educated at the Chegary Institute, New York City, spent several months in Europe and in the winter of 1844 accompanied her father to Washington, D. C. A few weeks afterward he was killed by the explosion of a gun on the war steamer Princeton, which occurred during a pleasure excursion in which he and his daughter were of the Presidential party. His body was taken to the White House and

Miss Gardiner, being thrown in the society of the President under these peculiar circumstances, became the object of his marked attention, which resulted in their marriage in New York, June 26, 1844."

The Brooklyn Eagle of June 27, 1844, speaks of the wedding thus: "Arrival of the President at New York—Marriage—Fete—Departure. Somehow or other, but most unaccountably, we forgot to mention yesterday that President Tyler arrived at New York for the purpose of marriage with Miss Julia Gardiner, daughter of the late David Gardiner, who came to his death aboard the Princeton last winter. Such, however, was the fact. The ceremony took place at the Church of the Ascension, on Fifth avenue, and the treaty between the high contracting parties was ratified by the Right Reverend Bishop Onderdonk and the Rev. Dr. Bedell, rector of the church. A few persons only—such as the relatives and one or two intimate friends of the parties—were present. In the afternoon they took the steamboat Essex and after navigating about the harbor and receiving salutes from the different vessels lying at anchor, proceeded to Jersey City, where they took the cars for Philadelphia. The bride is said to be accomplished, beautiful, interesting, an heiress and 22. The President, on the other hand, is known to be as homely as a brush fence and 55 years of age, being a difference of thirty-three. Some of his children, therefore, are probably many years older than their stepmother. Taste is, of course, supreme in matters of this kind, but if we had an accomplished and beautiful daughter of 22 (as we have not, and probably never shall have), and if an amorous youth of 55 with gray hair and wrinkled face were to propose for her we should request, and, if necessary, assist him to move on; but, mercy on us! what are we talking about?"

Again continues Appleton: "For the succeeding eight months she presided over the White House with dignity and grace, her residence there terminating with a birthday ball on February 22, 1845. Mrs. Tyler retired with her husband to Sherwood Forest, in Virginia, at the conclusion of his term, and after the Civil War resided for several years at her mother's residence, on Castleton Hill, S. I., and subsequently at Richmond, Va. She was a convert to Roman Catholicism and devoted to charities of that church."

Again, it says: "Their son, Lyon Gardiner,

was born in Charles City County, Virginia, in August, 1853, was graduated at the University of Virginia in 1875, and then studied law."

It will thus be seen that President Tyler had one child by each wife. "The remainder of his days," we read in "Abbott's Lives of the Presidents," "Mr. Tyler passed mainly in retirement at his beautiful house, "Sherwood Forest," Charles City, Va., a polished gentleman in manners, richly furnished with information from books and experience in the world and possessing brilliant powers of conversation. His family circle was the scene of unusual attractions.

Mrs. Tyler, after her husband's death, was for several years a resident of Brooklyn. She lived in a three-story brick house, still standing, on Gold street, a little north of Wiloughby, on the west side.

A much more numerous, and in some respects a more generally influential family on Long Island was, and is, that of Smith. In most sections of the English-speaking world the name is generally regarded with the familiarity which is induced by its commonness and recalls no territorial or other distinction. In Long Island it is different; and to trace descent from one of the old families bearing that name is held as equal in dignity with the blue blood of Massachusetts which can begin a genealogical tree with an Endicott, or a Bradford, or a Standish. With reference to this family we find the following interesting data in Gabriel Furman's "Antiquities of Long Island," written about the year 1830: "Upon this island, and especially in the central portion of it, are very many families of the name of Smith, and so numerous did they become at an early period of the settlement that it was thought necessary to distinguish the various original families by some peculiar name. Thus we have the Rock Smiths, the Blue Smiths, the Bull Smiths, the Weight Smiths and the Tangier Smiths.

Of the Rock Smiths there are two distinct families, one originally settled between Rockaway and Hempstead some ten or fifteen years before the settlement of the first white inhabitants in Setauket, who derived their

name from their contiguity to Rockaway; and the other located in Brookhaven, and obtained their appellation from their ancestor erecting his dwelling against a large rock which still remains in the highway of that town.

The Blue Smiths were settled in Queens county and obtained their peculiar designation from a blue cloth coat worn by their ancestor; whether because such cloth coat was then an uncommon thing in the neighborhood, or that



he always dressed in a coat of that color, does not appear.

The Bull Smiths of Suffolk county are the most numerous of all the families of the name of Smith upon this island. It is said there are now at least one thousand males of that branch on this island. The ancestors of this branch of the Smith family was Major Richard Smith, who came from England to New England with his father, Richard, in the early part of the seventeenth century, and afterward came to this island and became the patentee of Smithtown. The sobriquet of this class of

Smiths is said to have arisen from the circumstance of the ancestor having trained and used a bull in place of a horse for riding.

The Weight Smiths derived their name from being possessed of the only set of scales and weights in the neighborhood of their residence, to which all the farmers of the country around repaired for the purpose of weighing anything they wished to sell or buy; at least so says the tradition.

The Tangier Smiths owe their origin to Colonel William Smith, who had been the English Governor of Tangier in the reign of Charles II, and emigrated to this colony in the summer of 1686, where he settled in the town of Brookhaven, on the neck known as Little Neck, and afterward as Strong's Neck, which, together with his many other purchases, was erected into a manor by the name of Saint George's Manor by a patent granted him in 1693 by Governor Fletcher. Most of the Tangier Smiths are now in that town, scattered through it from the north to the south side of the island.

These different appellations became as firmly settled as if they were regular family names, so that when any inquiry was made of any person on the road, man, woman or child, for any particular Smith they would at once ask whether he was of the Rock breed, or the Bull breed, etc.; and if the person desiring the information could say which breed, he was at once told of his residence."

Richard Smith, the first of the name to hold land in Long Island, left England and arrived in 1650 at Boston, where he remained until 1665, when he became one of a colony which moved to Long Island and established the town of Brookhaven. His home was near the present village of Setauket. He was a man of means, bought as much land in the vicinity of his home as he could, held the office of magistrate, and proved himself a public-spirited citizen generally. In 1663 he purchased a tract of land westward from Setauket and had his title strengthened by an Indian deed. Not long afterward he purchased another tract

direct from the Indians, including a section of the shore of Lake Ronkonkoma, and got a new English patent from Governor Nicolls in 1667. Owing to some trouble with the people of Huntington over the western boundary of his domain, Smith submitted the question to the courts of New York and was sustained on all points for which he contended. By this decision he extended his holdings so as to include both banks of the Nesaquake River, and, to make assurance doubly sure, got a new patent from Governor Andros, in 1677, covering all the territory lately in dispute. By this patent his property covered ten square miles and is contained in the present town in Suffolk county bearing his name. Of the personal history of this noteworthy Smith little has come down to us excepting the remains of local gossip, such as that which makes him ride around the country on a bull instead of a horse and so win a sobriquet for his family. It is said he fought in the Narragansett War under the banner of Connecticut, and held the rank of major, but the details we have of his campaigning are very brief. He died about the year 1700, leaving a family of six sons—Richard, Jonathan, Job, Adam, Samuel and Daniel—and one daughter—Deborah. In 1707 the real estate of the pioneer was divided among them.

In the records of the Society of Colonial Wars the following find a place among the members on account of their descent from Richard Smith (Bull Smith):

A. Chester Beatty, New York.
Robert C. Beatty, New York.
W. Gedney Beatty, New York.
Howell Foster, Brooklyn.
Robert Cutting, Lawrence, N. Y.
R. B. Sackley, Rhinecliff.

The "Bull" Smiths, it will be readily understood, while they have given many reputable citizens to the island and taken a full and active part in its development, have added but little to its history or to its prominence in the general affairs of the State. They have been mostly notable for the qualities which made

up the true country gentleman, a life among their ancestral fields, a disregard for public office outside of their own vicinity, and devoting themselves closely to the upbuilding of the sections of the island in which they had set up their homes. Proud of their descent, they seemed satisfied with the eminence it afforded them and stood aside, as it were, while others pressed forward to win renown by work and accomplishment.

The other pioneer family of Smiths, the "Tangier Smiths," on the other hand, for several generations bring us in close touch with the history of the island and the nation. The founder of the family in America, Colonel William Smith, was born at Newton, near Higham Ferrers, Northamptonshire, England, February 2, 1655. In 1675 he received the appointment from Charles II of Governor of Tangier, where it was proposed to establish a trading colony, and he married Maria, a daughter of Henry Tunstall, of Putney, November 6, 1675, and set out for his dominion with the title of colonel. Great sums of money were spent on this then new possession of the British crown, and it was hoped that it would soon take a place among the most important trading stations of the world; but the expectations were not realized, and in a comparatively short time the station was abandoned, its costly fortifications left to go to ruin, and the little army there stationed returned to England.

Colonel Smith for a time seems to have carried on business as a general merchant in London. In 1686 he crossed the Atlantic and engaged in trade for several years. He was induced to throw in his lot with the New World probably on account of his friendship for Governor Dongan. Soon after his arrival he "went prospecting" and selected some land at Little Neck, Brookhaven, buying up the holdings of the original proprietors. There seems to have been some trouble over this purchase with some of the holders, but the influence of Dongan was exerted on his friend's behalf, and on October 2, 1687, Smith

formally completed his first purchase of Long Island lands. This purchase was afterward added to until the property won recognition as a manor. Smith during this time seems to have been busily engaged in mercantile pursuits, and on the records of Brookhaven, according to Thompson, is an entry showing that the "merchant," as Smith is described, held a bill against Governor Dongan for goods to the amount of £993. Probably it was rather for "services rendered" in the devious ways known in those days and probably not altogether unknown in these passing superior days of ours. It would seem that almost as soon as he was comfortably settled at Little Neck, Colonel Smith began the acquisition of fresh lands and had them erected into Saint George's Manor by patent issued by Governor Fletcher in 1693. Soon after he made further great accessions pressing toward the boundaries of Southampton, and these were included in the manorial title by a fresh patent issued in 1697. This manorial holding gave Colonel Smith many privileges and made his influence paramount over the extent of territory—larger than many a European principality—which it described. It gave him a right to hold court, to invite immigrants, to demand as by right a recognized share in their labor, and to a seat in the General Assembly of the province. But long before the manorial patent was issued Colonel Smith had acquired a commanding position in the affairs of the province.

In 1691 Governor Sloughter appointed him a member of Council and one of the Commissioners of the Court of Oyer and Terminer. When the Supreme Court was inaugurated, in that same year, Smith was appointed to one of the Judgeships, an office to which no salary was attached. This arrangement was rectified, however, a year later, when Governor Fletcher (November 11, 1692) appointed him Chief Justice with a salary of £130. He proved an upright, dignified and impartial judge, although he appears to have been outspoken and determined in his opposition to Leisler in the troubles which that individual's policy and

ambition brought upon the colony. As might be expected, when Governor Bellomont, on his arrival in New York April 2, 1698, announced himself as a friend of the Leisler party and an avowed enemy of all who had shown themselves opposed thereto, the position of Chief Justice Smith became a most unenviable one. The Leislerites felt that their hour of triumph had come, the hour when the hanging of the self-appointed Governor would be legally branded as a crime, and restitution made in some way for the wrongs and indignities which had been heaped upon those who had championed his cause and honored his memory. They felt that with such a Chief Justice as Smith on the bench nothing practical could be accomplished, and with the arrival of the new Governor they began their schemes looking to that end. Bellomont organized his Council so as to make it more amenable to his views and policy; but he permitted Smith to retain his seat, as his loyalty was well known and he seems to have had some attached friends in England who would have resented his removal from a position which the Governor could reduce, and had reduced, to simply one of honor. But the Chief Justiceship was another matter, and after waiting a decent time Bellomont removed him from that office, October 30, 1700.

When Governor Bellomont died Smith, then senior member of the Council, claimed and exercised the functions of the executive until the arrival of Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan, who was hurriedly summoned from Barbados. Smith's claim to the office aroused party feeling to the utmost, a majority of the assembly refused to recognize his title, said majority being of the Leislerite persuasion; and it is hard to say to what condition the prevailing confusion and bitterness might have developed had not a stop to the tumult been put by the appearance of Nanfan upon the scene, much sooner than had been anticipated. Nanfan, however, ranged himself on the side of the Leislerites and they ruled things with a pretty rough hand, almost paralleling the

case of Nicholas Bayard, a former Mayor of New York, the crime which had made the name of Leisler become a party cry, until the arrival, in 1702, of Lord Cornbury. He at once took sides with the Anti-Leislerites, and re-appointed Smith to the office of Chief Justice, and by his distribution of patronage, mainly, brought about the almost complete disappearance of the shibboleth of Leislerism as a potent factor in local politics. Smith retained his judicial office until April, 1703, when he resigned, but he continued to hold his seat in the Council until his death, at Little Neck, February 18, 1705.

Colonel Smith had three sons, one of whom, the youngest, Charles Jeffrey, died when a youth. Both of the surviving members of the family inherited many of the sterling qualities of the father. The eldest son, Henry, held the office of Clerk of Suffolk County from 1710 to 1716 and was for many years one of the county judges.

His son, Colonel William Smith, was Clerk of Suffolk County from 1730 to 1750 and a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas for several years prior to the Revolution. He married Margaret, daughter of Henry Lloyd, of Lloyd Neck, and had a family of several children.

His only daughter, Anna, became the wife of Judge Selah Strong, of Setauket.

The family of Colonel Smith's second son, William, also fully sustained the honorable name of that great pioneer. William received as part of his share of Colonel Smith's estate some lands at Mastic, and he settled down there, rose to the dignity of a major in some local militia squad, and lived the life of a quiet country gentleman. His son William was for many years a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and was a member of the first Provincial Congress. In 1777 he was chosen one of the State Senators, and he retained that dignified office until the close of the Revolutionary War. His son John was possibly the most widely known member of the family, after its founder. We refer more particularly to his career in our notice of General Wood-

hull (Chapter XX), whose daughter he married. His brother William settled down as a farmer in Brookhaven, and died at Longwood, near Manorville, leaving his farm to his son, William Sidney Smith.

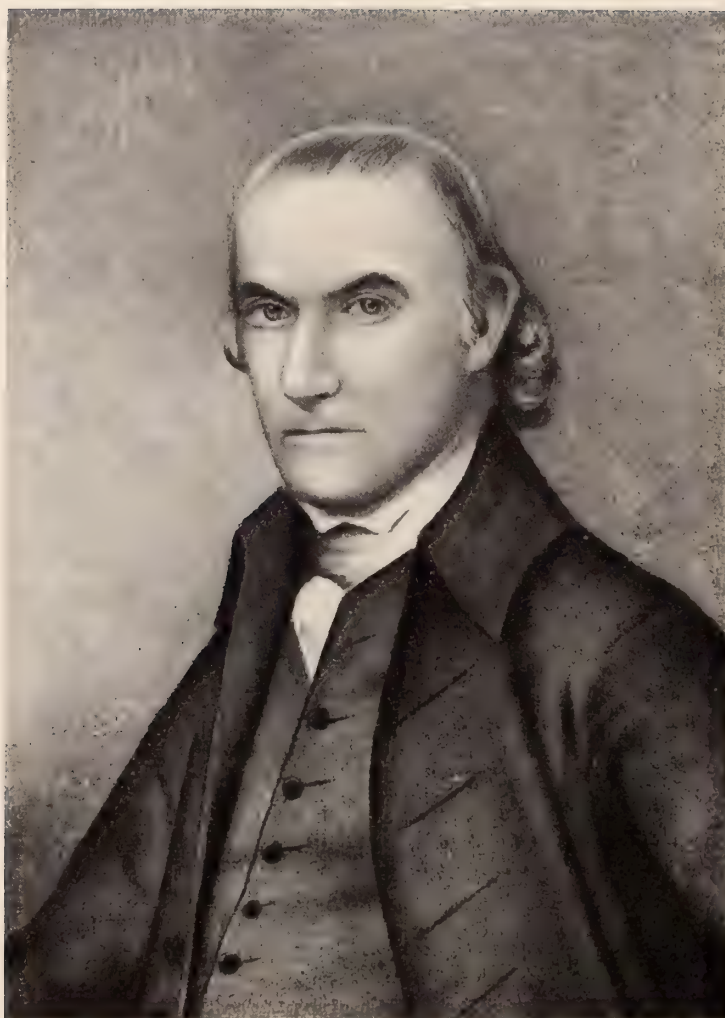
Probably no family on Long Island has contributed such a succession in each generation of men eminent in the community as that of the Floyds. In one respect they stand ahead of all the others in numbering among them a signer of the Declaration of Independence; but even without this member of a group of statesmen—whose memory is being enshrined in the national heart more reverently as the years pass on—the family story contains enough to inspire pride in those entitled to wear the name and warrant the respect in which it is held all over Long Island.

The name of the founder of the family, Richard Floyd, appears on the list of those who in 1655 bought land at Setauket from the Indians and set up a community which seems to have been intended to be governed after Presbyterian rules. Floyd was born at Brecknockshire, Wales, about 1620, and, it is thought on religious grounds, left his native land for New England in the fall of 1653. He landed in Boston early in the following year, but probably did not find that true toleration among the Puritans which he expected, and so was induced to throw in his lot with a new colony which appears to have been organized by men of his own persuasion. He seems to have soon become recognized as one of the leaders of the little settlement, bought up lands as fast as he could, prospered in all his worldly affairs, was a local magistrate and a colonel of militia. He died about 1690. His wife died in 1706, at the age of eighty years.

His eldest son, Richard, closely followed in his footsteps when the family honors fell to him. Richard was born at Setauket May 12, 1661, married Margaret Nicolls, eldest daughter of Matthias Nicolls, secretary of the Duke of York's commissioner who captured New York from the Dutch and became the first

Governor of the English Province of New York. Richard Floyd was one of the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas and held the office of colonel of militia until his death in 1737.

We must here leave the direct line of primogeniture and speak of the second son of Richard Floyd and Margaret Nicolls. He received the baptismal name of Nicolls, and was settled on a farm at Mastic. He did not grow rich in this world's goods, but raised a family of eight children—five daughters and three sons—William, Nicol and Charles. William is the only one of the family whose career we propose to follow here. He was born at Mastic December 17, 1734, and received the usual education given in those times to farmers' sons; but his strong common sense, natural shrewdness and close observation supplemented his education and safely carried him through the many important roles he was destined to play in life's journey, while at the beginning of his career the influence of his family name gave him of itself a degree of standing in the community which had only to be rightly guided to become of great personal advantage. He early developed many admirable traits, became an adept at farming and a prudent man in worldly affairs. Of strong religious convictions, he took a deep interest in the spiritual welfare of the people among whom he lived, and he implicitly believed that the practice of the Congregational Church formed the only true model upon which upright and honored civil government could be founded. He was a close student of public affairs, a keen and logical observer of the trend of the events of the day, and was outspoken and pronounced in his advocacy of the people's rights when the crisis with the mother country was approaching. Early in life he was chosen as an officer in the Suffolk county militia; he was Colonel of the First Suffolk Regiment in 1775, and after the war was over he was commissioned a Major General, but his military career, to put it mildly, was a most evenly uninteresting one, its most startling incident be-



WILLIAM FLOYD.
(SIGNER OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.)

ing a hurried call to prevent a small boat landing on Long Island early in the conflict with Britain. His talents were better fitted for the halls of legislation than for the tented field. After a short service in the Provincial Assembly he was sent as a delegate, in 1774, to the first Continental Congress, and was one of those who from the beginning were in favor of the independence of the colonies. He voted for the adoption of the Declaration of Independence and signed that document—his great claim to immortality. "He continued," writes Edward F. De Lancey, "by successive re-appointments a member of every Continental Congress up to 1782, inclusive. At the same time, from 1777 till 1783, he was State Senator under the first Constitution of New York, being regularly appointed by that body for the Southern District, then wholly within the British lines, so that no election could be held. From 1784 till 1788 he was duly elected to the same office from the same district. In 1787 and 1789 he was chosen a member of the Council of Appointment. In the Presidential elections of 1792, 1800 and 1804 he was chosen one of the Presidential Electors, and in 1801 he sat for Suffolk County in the Constitutional Convention of that year. He was an early and warm supporter of Jefferson. His education being only that of the country schools of his youth, he was not a speaker, nor orator, nor an accomplished writer; but in the work of the different bodies in which he served he was noted for his assiduity, sound advice, unflagging labor and thorough knowledge of the business before them. He was eminently a practical man, and his firmness and resolution were very great. Although somewhat unpolished in manner, he at the same time possessed a natural gravity and dignity which made itself felt."

During the British occupation of Long Island General Floyd's farm was seized by the British and his family sought refuge in Connecticut. The property was stripped by soldiers of all its attractiveness, fields were desolated, trees uprooted and fences burned, and

the house itself plundered and rendered uninhabitable. He was absent from the island for some six years, and was amazed, on his return, at the havoc which was wrought and which was everywhere apparent. In 1784 he purchased a tract of land at Delta, Western township, Oneida county, where he removed with his family in 1803, and he continued to reside there in fairly affluent circumstances until his death, August 4, 1821. Floyd township in Oneida county was named in his honor.

General Floyd was twice married. By his first wife, a daughter of William Jones, of Southampton, he had three children,—Nicol, Mary and Catharine. The son took possession of the property at Mastic, became active in local affairs and was chosen a representative from Suffolk county in the New York Assembly in 1779, 1800 and 1801; Mary married Colonel Benjamin Tallmadge, one of the heroes of the Revolution; and Catharine became the wife of Dr. Samuel Clarkson, of Philadelphia. His second wife was a daughter of Benejah Strong, of Setauket, and by her he had two daughters,—Anna and Eliza. The first named married George Clinton, a son of Vice President Clinton, and after his death became the wife of Abraham Varick, merchant, New York; Eliza married James Platt, of Utica.

Having thus traced the career of the most eminent member of the Floyd family, the one who secured by his patriotism an undying place in the general history of the country, we may now revert to the original family and trace its descent to our own times. The eldest son of the second Richard also bore that name. He was born December 29, 1703, and, like his father, became colonel of the Suffolk militia and a Judge of the Common Pleas. He married a daughter of Colonel Samuel Hutchinson, of Southold. On his death, April 21, 1771, he was succeeded in his estate by his son Richard (fourth of the name), who was born in 1736. Richard also succeeded to the colonelcy and the Judgeship so long held in the

family, and soon acquired a reputation for his lavish hospitality, while his kindly, affable manner and many fine social qualities won him devoted friends among all classes. He entertained Governor Tryon and his staff as if they were princes, on at least one occasion; his doors were always open to the red-coated military, and unfortunately for himself he threw in his lot with the British when the crisis broke, without any attempt to hide his sentiments or disguise his position. He was too honest a man to do either. As a result his estate was declared confiscated and after the peace of 1783, when the Continentals could enforce their act of attainder, he was compelled to leave the country and removed to Canada. He settled at Maujerville, New Brunswick, and there resided until his death, June 30, 1791. He had married September 26, 1758, Arabella, daughter of David Jones, of Fort Neck, Queens county, Judge of the Supreme Court of New York and author of a "History of New York During the Revolutionary War." By her he had a family of two daughters,—Elizabeth and Ann,—and a son,—David Richard. Judge Jones entailed his estate at Fort Neck to his son, and failing him or his heirs to the heirs of his daughter Arabella, Mrs. Floyd, on condition that the latter should assume the name of Jones. In due time David Richard Floyd succeeded to the property. In terms of the succession David Richard assumed the surname of Floyd-Jones, by which the descendants of the senior branch of the Floyd family have since been known, the legislature having confirmed the change in 1788. David Richard married Sarah, daughter of Henry Onderdonck, and died February 10, 1826, leaving two sons,—Thomas Floyd-Jones and Henry Floyd-Jones. Thomas was born in 1788.

He died in 1851. His eldest son, David

Richard Floyd-Jones, born in 1813, was a member of the New York Assembly in 1841, 1842 and 1843, and served in the State Senate from 1844 to 1847. In 1861 he was elected Secretary of State, and Lieutenant-Governor in 1863-4. He was in every way an estimable and useful citizen, and his death, January 8, 1871, called forth expressions of regret from all classes in the community. His brother, William Floyd-Jones, was born at Fort Neck March 10, 1815. Preferring a commercial career, he entered the establishment of Tredwell, Kissam & Co., New York, in which he became a partner in 1837. In 1851 he retired from business life, having acquired a large share of the property held by his father, and devoted himself to agriculture, hunting and fishing. He married in 1847 Caroline A., daughter of Robert Blackwell, merchant, New York, and granddaughter of James Blackwell, owner of Blackwell's Island. By her he had a family of five sons and three daughters. Another brother, Elbert Floyd-Jones, represented Queens for several years in the State Assembly. Henry Floyd-Jones, an uncle of the three last named, and second son of Thomas Floyd-Jones, was born in 1792, and served in the Assembly in 1829. He was a State Senator and a member for years of the old Court of Errors. He was also, like his brother, a Brigadier-General of militia. The family of Richard Floyd is found all over Long Island, honored, respected and beloved by all the people.

These three names,—Gardiner, Smith and Floyd,—must suffice as fairly representative of the old families of Suffolk county, and we may now seek some representative in the ancient county of Queens, Queens before it lost so much of its identity in metropolitan greatness or divested itself of much of its territory in the creation of the modern county of Nassau.

CHAPTER VIII.

SOME OLD FAMILIES IN QUEENS AND KINGS.

THE LLOYDS—THE JONES FAMILY—THE RECORD OF A BIT OF BROOKLYN REAL ESTATE
—THE RAPALYES—THE LIVINGSTONS—PIERREPONT, LEFFERTS
AND OTHER HOLDINGS.

ANOTHER capital illustration of the manner in which lands were acquired in the earliest days of European settlements is presented to us in the history of the Lloyd family, whose name is geographically preserved by Lloyd's Neck (called by the Indians Caumsett) a point of land projecting into the Sound between Cold Spring and Huntington. The Neck, comprising about 3,000 acres, was bought September 20, 1654, from Ratiocan, then Sagamore of Cow Harbor, by Samuel Mayo, Daniel Whitehead and Peter Wright, all Oyster Bay settlers. The price paid was three coats, three shirts, two cuttoes, three hatchets, three hoes, two fathoms of wampum, six knives, two pairs of stockings and two pairs of shoes, worth possibly about \$50.

In 1658 the three Oyster Bay speculators sold the land to Samuel Andrews, who took the precaution of getting his deed endorsed or confirmed by Wyandanch, the Chief of the Montauks. Two years later Andrews died, and the property was sold to John Richbill, who in turn sold it for £450, October 16, 1666, to Nathaniel Sylvester, Thomas Hart and Latimer Sampson, who further strengthened their title by getting a patent from Governor Nicolls in the following year. In 1668 Sylvester gave up his share to his partners, although why or for what consideration is not clear. Sampson bequeathed his share to Griz-

zell Sylvester, who married James Floyd, of Boston. In 1679 Floyd bought Hart's share from that pioneer's executors and so acquired possession of the entire property. He retained it, probably for purely speculative purposes, hoping to benefit by a "rise," until his death, in 1693, when he bequeathed it to his sons. One of these, Henry, took up his residence on the property in 1711, and gradually bought up the interest of his co-heirs until the whole estate passed into his hands, and he may be regarded as the founder of the family in Long Island. In 1685 the property had been erected into a manor and given the name of Queens Village, and that title it retained until 1790, when the New York Legislature wisely refused to continue the manorial privilege, or, for very evident reasons, to sanction its monarchical name. Henry Lloyd was born at Boston November 28, 1685, and died March 10, 1763. In 1708 he married Rebecca, daughter of John Nelson, of Boston, by whom he had a family of ten children. He bequeathed the Lloyd's Neck property to his four surviving sons,—Henry, John, James and Joseph. The eldest, Henry, was a Tory in the Revolutionary struggle, and his share in the property was forfeited by the act of attainder. It was afterward purchased from the Commissioners by his brother John, who then became the head of the Long Island family. His other brother, James, threw in his lot with New England,

becoming a physician in Boston, where he died in 1809, leaving, among other children, a son, James, who became a United States Senator from Massachusetts. The youngest son of the founder of the family, Joseph, died at Hartford in 1780.

John Lloyd, who may be regarded as the successor to his father at the head of the family, having bought the forfeited share of his elder brother, was born February 19, 1711, and married Sarah, daughter of the Rev. Benjamin Woolsey, of Dos Oris. They had three daughters and two sons. Of the former, Abigail became the wife of Dr. James Cogswell, a well known New York physician and philanthropist, while Sarah married the Hon. James Hillhouse, United States Senator from Connecticut, and became the mother of James Hillhouse, whose name is a brilliant one in the literary history of the Nutmeg State as the author of "Percy's Masque" and other dramas and poems. Zachary Macaulay, the father of the British historian and essayist, spoke of him as "the most accomplished young man" with whom he was acquainted.

John Lloyd threw in his lot with the Continental forces during the Revolution, and as a result his property was sadly molested all through the occupation of Long Island by the British. They erected a fort on it, cut down its many beautiful trees, destroyed its buildings and carried away their contents. The presence of the fort introduced more than once into the erstwhile prosperous and smiling acres the miseries of actual war. In 1781 an attempt was made to capture it by a small force under the command of the Baron De Angley, but the effort failed mainly on account of the poorly equipped condition of the attacking party. It was also constantly menaced by the whale-boat rovers. Of the sons of John Lloyd and Sarah Woolsey, Henry, the eldest, died unmarried. John, who succeeded to the family honors and estates, served as a Commissariat in the Patriot army with fidelity and distinction. When peace was declared he settled down at Lloyd's Neck and

began the task of obliterating the damages and savings of war, to which he successfully devoted the remainder of his life. He was offered by Governor Jay the office of Judge of Queens County, but declined, preferring the freedom and privacy of his fields. He married Amelia, daughter of the Rev. Ebenezer White, of Danbury, Connecticut, and died in 1792, at the early age of forty-seven years, leaving one son, John Nelson Lloyd, and a daughter, Angelina, to whom he bequeathed most of his property. John continued to reside on the Neck, as it is popularly called locally, until his death in 1849. Angelina married George W. Strong, a well known New York lawyer.

None of the name of Lloyd now occupies the Neck, and all traces of its manorial greatness has disappeared in the smaller farms into which it is divided. But around are hundreds of the descendants of the old family, and many of the residents, though bearing different names on account of their descent through some "daughter of the house," can trace their pedigree right back to the original of the family—Henry Lloyd.

So far as mingling in public affairs was concerned the Jones family, of Oyster Bay, occupy a much more prominent place in the story of Long Island than their one-time neighbors, the Lloyds.

The founder of the family, so far as Long Island is concerned, was Thomas Jones, who is generally held to have been born in Strabane, Ulster county, Ireland, in 1665. The name is a purely Welsh one, and if Thomas was not born in that country he could hardly have been more than one degree removed from its soil; so the family ought to be regarded as a Welsh, rather than an Irish one, as is commonly the way in which it is described by local historians. Thomas Jones, unlike most Ulstermen, ranged himself on the side of the Catholic King, James II, of Great Britain, fought under that monarch's flag at the battle of the Boyne in 1690, at the desperate battle at Aghrim in 1691, and took part in the de-

fence of Limerick in the same year under the heroic Sarsfield. Soon after Limerick capitulated he escaped to France, and seems to have become a seaman, for Edward F. De Lancey tells us "he embarked early in 1692 under one of the numerous letters of marque to participate in the Revolution, and was present at the great earthquake of Jamaica July 7, 1692, and in that year came to Long Island." Thompson says: "Coming to America, he brought with him a commission from the King to cruise against Spanish property, the two nations being then at war, which he doubtless did not fail to apply to his own advantage as opportunity offered." Thompson is hardly to be even compared with De Lancey as an authority, but it will be seen that both speak rather vaguely, neither presenting the same closeness of statement we would expect in a genealogical reference. The truth is, the whole story of Jones' Irish career is unreliable and untrustworthy, very possibly because its real details were purposely hidden from us by himself or others.

He settled first in Rhode Island, where he married Freeloze, daughter of Henry Townsend, and received with her as a marriage gift from her father a tract of land at Fort Neck, at "the confluence of the Massapequa River with what is now called South Oyster Bay, on the south side of Long Island." Thompson also says: "After his settlement here he engaged largely in boat whaling along shore, which at that period and before was practiced extensively upon the whole south coast of the island. For this purpose he gave employment to a great number of natives, whose services were procured at a very cheap rate." Whatever his occupation, he certainly prospered, for he steadily increased his lands by purchase, from the natives mainly, until he held some 6,000 acres. On March 2, 1699, he was admitted one of the freeholders under the Oyster Bay patent, and during the same year erected for his dwelling the first brick house seen in that section. Many honors came to him. He was appointed High Sheriff of Queens County

October 14, 1704, and received a commission as major in the local militia. Governor Hunter, in 1710, gave him the appointment of "Ranger General of Nassau [Long] Island," and that office gave him a practical monopoly of the fishing industry of the shores of the island except the water front of the county of Kings, and also to the use of all land within the same limits which had not then been sold or deeded away. Such a man was indeed a potentate, but his sway appears to have been a gentle and honorable one, and he certainly did what he could to advance the interests of the great territory committed to his care. He died at Fort Neck December 13, 1713, and in accordance with his often expressed wish his remains were interred amid the ruins of an old Indian fort on his property. He left three sons and four daughters. Of the latter, Margaret married Ezekiel Smith, Sarah became the wife of Gerardus Clowes, Elizabeth wedded John Mitchell, and the youngest, Freeloze, married Jacob Smith. Of the sons, David succeeded to the paternal estate, by virtue of an entail, which settled the greater portion on heirs male, Thomas died, unmarried, and of William we will speak again.

David Jones was born at Little Neck September 16, 1699, and was educated for the legal profession. He practiced law in New York City for some years, and in 1734 was appointed Judge for Queens County. In 1737 he was elected a member of the Colonial Assembly and so continued until 1758, having been Speaker of that body for thirteen years. He left the Assembly when he was appointed to the bench of the Supreme Court, from which he retired in 1773. The remainder of his quiet but useful life was spent at Fort Neck, and he died there October 11, 1775. He was a man of considerable force of character. "On one occasion," says Thompson, "he had the firmness to order the doors of the Assembly closed against the Governor until a bill, then under discussion, could be passed and which his Excellency had determined to prevent by an immediate prorogation. During his whole

life, and in every situation, Judge David Jones was the unyielding advocate of the rights of the people against every species of royal encroachment, and no man participated more largely of the public confidence and respect." He managed to change the entail by which he held the estate and deeded it to his son, Thomas, with the succession to his daughter Arabella, and so the property ultimately passed to her eldest son.

Thomas Jones was born at Fort Neck, April 30, 1731, was graduated at Yale in 1750, studied law and was admitted to practice in New York in 1755. For many years he was attorney for King's College. He married Anna De Lancey, daughter of Chief Justice James De Lancey, Lieutenant Governor of New York, and it was probably the influences thrown around him by this marriage which led to his becoming so openly identified with Toryism in the Revolution. In 1776 he became Royal Recorder of New York, and continued to hold that office until 1773, when he succeeded to the seat on the supreme court then resigned by his father. On June 27, 1776, when the Patriots were in control of New York, Jones was arrested under a warrant issued by Congress and was liberated on parole, but on August 11 he was again arrested and taken to Connecticut. He was again paroled and went to his home at Fort Neck. On November 6, 1779, a party of Continentals made a dash at his house and robbed it of much of its contents, carrying him off as a prisoner to Connecticut. In April, the following year, he was exchanged for General Silliman. He then sold off as much of his property as he could and went to England. When peace was proclaimed he found himself under the ban of the Act of Attainder and so he remained in England, living in quiet retirement at Hoddesdon, Hertfordshire, until his death, July 25, 1792. He left no children, and thus ended the senior branch of the family of the founder.

William, the third son of founder Thomas, was born April 25, 1708. Although destined

for the legal profession, he engaged in farming on a piece of property bequeathed him by his father, and passed through life in a quiet and unassuming manner, taking no part in the exciting events of his times and wrestling successfully with the problem of winning a living for himself and those dependent upon him from the soil until his death, in 1779. He married Phoebe, daughter of Captain John Jackson, of an old Hempstead family, and by her had a family of sixteen children, fourteen of whom—David, Samuel, William, Thomas, Gilbert, John, Walter, Richard, Hallet, Free-love, Elizabeth, Margaret, Phoebe and Sarah—grew up, married and had families; so that to pursue this genealogy in detail would of itself occupy a volume. We must therefore refer to those mainly who won additional honors for the family name.

First among these was Samuel, son of William, who was born July 26, 1734. His first purpose in life was to become a sailor, and he made several voyages to Europe in merchant vessels. But he became tired of the drudgery, and, more in keeping with the wishes of his family, was educated for the legal profession, studying law in the office of Chief Justice William Smith, the historian, who afterward went to Canada, refusing to recognize the new order of things after the Revolution, and there became again Chief Justice. Samuel Jones, his legal pupil, did not, fortunately, imbibe any of his political views, but his position compelled him to walk discreetly during those troublesome times. His sympathies, however, were all on the side of the Revolution, and when the time came for him to declare himself he showed no half-heartedness. He threw himself into the politics of the young Republic and became an ardent Federalist. He soon built up a lucrative practice and his office developed many noteworthy pupils. His legal reputation continued to increase as the years passed on, until he was recognized as the leader of the New York bar, and held many positions of honor in the community, serving in the State Assembly several times. He was

a member of the Convention at Poughkeepsie which in 1788 adopted the Constitution of the United States. In the following year he was appointed Recorder of New York, and held that office until 1797, when he was succeeded by Chancellor Kent. In 1796 he drew up the bill creating the office of Comptroller of the city of New York, and when the office was created he was appointed to it and so continued for three years, when he retired to his seat at West Neck, Long Island, where he lived a life of pleasant retirement, devoting himself mainly to his library and to literary pursuits. He died there November 21, 1819.

He left five sons, William, Samuel, Elbert, Thomas and David. The first named resided at Cold Springs and held the rank of major in the local militia. He had a son, Samuel William, who studied law in the office of his uncle Samuel, and settled in Schenectady, of which city he was mayor for many years before his death, in 1855. Samuel Jones' second son, named after him, fully maintained the family honors in the legal profession in New York. He was born May 26, 1769, and after he was graduated at Columbia College entered the law office of his father, where he had as a fellow student De Witt Clinton. As soon as he was admitted to practice he threw himself into the political arena, and this, coupled with his own brilliant attainments as a lawyer, soon won for him a recognized place among the leaders of the local bar. In 1812, 1813 and 1814 he was a member of the Assembly, and in 1823 was appointed to the office once so worthily held by his father, of Recorder of New York City. In 1826 he was made Chancellor of the State, and two years later became Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of New York City, retaining that dignified office until 1847, when he occupied a seat in the State Supreme Court. In 1849 he retired from the bench and resumed practice at the bar, and so continued until within a few weeks of his death at Cold Spring, August 9, 1853, in the eighty-fourth year of his age.

His younger brother, David, born at West Neck, November 3, 1777, after he was graduated at Columbia College, also entered the legal profession. For several years he was secretary to Governor Jay, and for some half a century was one of the most conspicuous and influential members of the New York bar. He was for the greater part of his professional life one of the trustees and the legal adviser of Columbia, and took the deepest interest in the progress of that seat of learning. Like most of his family, he was a devoted adherent of the Protestant Episcopal church, and was particularly active in furthering the development of its General Theological Seminary. He never cared about holding elective office, and although often solicited to enter the public service he declined, except in one instance when, more on account of family sentiment than anything else, he accepted the Judgeship of Queens county. A capital sketch of his career was written (1849) by his son, William Alfred Jones, who was born at New York June 26, 1817. Although educated for the bar, William A. Jones never entered into practice and devoted his life to literature. From 1851 until 1867 he was librarian of Columbia College, and soon after retiring from that position he removed to Norwich, Connecticut. He was the author of "Literary Studies," two volumes (1847), "Essays on Books and Authors" (1849), "Characters and Criticisms," two volumes (1857), and several other works. In 1863 he delivered an address on "Long Island" before the Long Island Historical Society.

We may now take up another branch of the numerous family of William Jones and Phœbe Jackson, that of their sixth son, John. He was born on his father's farm June 27, 1755. In 1779 he married Hannah, daughter of John Hewlett, of Cold Spring, and settled on a farm which he bought from his father-in-law. There he prospered and had a family of ten children:

William H., born October 14, 1780, married Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac Hewlett.

Walter, born in 1783, was killed accidentally when six years of age.

John H., born May 18, 1785, married Loretta, daughter of Divine Hewlett.

Sarah, born July 22, 1787, not married.

Mary T., born June 4, 1790, not married.

Walter Restored, born April 15, 1793, not married.

Phoebe J., born December 13, 1795, married Charles Hewlett.

Elizabeth H., born December 9, 1798, married Jacob Hewlett.

Joshua T., born July 10, 1801, not married.

Charles H., born November 6, 1804, married Eliza G. Gardiner.

With the exception of young Walter these sons contributed largely to the industrial progress of Queens county. In 1816 John H. Jones, in company with William M. Hewlett, built a woolen factory at Cold Spring; and in 1820 John H. built another one, this time in partnership with his brothers, William H. and Walter R., at a cost of \$12,500. They soon acquired possession of the first and managed both with marked success. Walter R. was a man of superior business qualities. He engaged in many business enterprises and was uniformly successful in them all. His greatest achievement, possibly, was in connection with the Atlantic Mutual Marine Insurance Company, which he built up into a most influential and wealthy corporation, and of which he was president for many years. On his death, April 5, 1855, he was succeeded in that office by his nephew, John Divine Jones, son of John H. Jones, and who was born at Cold Spring August 15, 1814. Mr. John D. Jones has proved a liberal patron of many of New York's public institutions, such as the Historical Society, while to the Protestant Episcopal church his gifts have been generous and unostentatious. He married, June 9, 1852, Josephine Katharine Floyd-Jones, daughter of General Henry Floyd-Jones.

Charles H. Jones, the youngest of the fam-

ily of John and Hannah Jones, married Eliza G., a granddaughter of John Gardiner of Gardiner's Island, July 12, 1838. He made his home on the old family farm. For a time he had the management of considerable brickyard property, in which his brother, Joshua T., was interested at the time of his death. In all his business relations he was most fortunate, but his domestic life was clouded by a succession of bereavements. Of his four children only the youngest, Mary Elizabeth, survived him. She married, in 1873, Dr. Oliver Livingston Jones, son of Oliver H. Jones and grandson of her father's eldest brother, William H. Jones. They have a family of three children: Louise E., born September 18, 1875; Charles Herbert, born December 18, 1877; and Oliver Livingston, Jr., born April 1, 1880. Dr. Jones in 1871 succeeded to his father's property at Laurelton, on the west side of Cold Spring Harbor, and quickly developed it into a prosperous resort. The last years of Charles H. Jones' life were spent in a magnificent mansion, built by his brother, Walter Restored. In it he preserved many portraits and relics of the family and no scion of Knighthood days was more proud of his ancient pedigree and its associated heirlooms. He died January 23, 1882.

William, the second son of William Jones and Phoebe Jackson, may also be referred to here as having founded a family which is still prominent in and around Oyster Bay. He was born October 4, 1771, and became a farmer at Cold Spring Harbor. By his wife, Kezia, daughter of Captain Daniel Youngs, of Oyster Bay, he had a family of nine children: Samuel W., David W., Cornelia Haring, Susan Maria, Elbert W., Eleanor, Hannah, Amelia and Daniel. All of these except Elbert W., who died in his twenty-first year, married and had families. From the rank he held in a local militia company William Jones was known generally by his title of major. In 1816 he was elected a member of the State Legislature and was re-elected with one exception

each succeeding term until 1825, when he declined further service. He died September 16, 1853.

His second son, David W., was the literary man of the family. He succeeded to a portion of his father's property and acquired a more than usual measure of success as a farmer. Under the nom de plume of "Long Island" he wrote largely for the "Spirit of the Times," once the leading American country newspaper, and he contributed to Henry W. Herbert's (Frank Forester's) work on "The Horse and Horsemanship in the United States," etc. He was born May 3, 1793, married Dorothy Adams, a native of England, July 4, 1822, and died July 6, 1877, in his eighty-seventh year. He left a family of five sons: Edmund (unmarried), Robert (died 1868), Charles, Elbert and David. The latter married, in 1870, Julia W. Nelson, a granddaughter of General Nathaniel Coles, and resided at the homestead erected by his father.

By way of change we may now be justified, instead of following the fortunes of a family, in taking up the story of a piece of land and tracing the fortunes of its owners for nearly two centuries, by this method not only illustrating the fortunes of a number of old families but keeping in front the story of the land, the possession of which in the main gave these same families the power in the community which they successively wielded. We begin our present study with the text, so to speak, of a piece of land lying beside Brooklyn Ferry and extending for a distance toward the Wallabout. We begin at the time when from the Manhattan shore all that was seen on the Long Island shore was a few scattered farms, while behind these stretched an unknown wilderness crowded with game, and from which emerged at times only the red men bent on murder or trade, to barter with the farmer, or complain about his encroachments and double dealing.

In 1630 Wolfert Gerretse (Kouwenhoven, Couwenhoven, or Cowenhoven) emigrated to America from Amersfoort, Utrecht Province,

Netherlands, with his family, and seems to have at once entered the employment of the then Patroon of Rensselaerswick as superintendent of farms. He afterward worked a farm on Manhattan island, and in 1637 purchased a tract of land from the Indians in Flatbush and Flatlands. He subsequently considerably increased his holdings and was evidently a thrifty, peaceable citizen. He died about 1660, leaving three sons,—Gerret (the ancestor of the Flatlands Cowenhovens), Jacob and Peter. The latter was a brewer on High [Pearl] street, New York, and in 1665 was appointed Surveyor General of the Colony. He was also a man of war, and in 1663 as a lieutenant took part in the Indian campaign at Esopus [Kingston]. From him are descended the Cowenhovens of Gloucester county, New Jersey.

We are more interested here with the second son, Jacob, Jacob Wolfertse, as he was generally called in the old Dutch style, who was born in Holland and came to this country with his father. He was in business in New Amsterdam as a brewer, and also did business as a trader with Albany, owning a sloop which plied between that town and New Amsterdam, but does not seem to have made money, for on one occasion a *bouwerie* he owned in Gravesend was ordered sold to pay his debts. Still he appears to have been a man of considerable public spirit, well regarded by his fellows, and a stanch member of the Dutch church. He died in 1670. On July 6, 1643, Jacob received a grant from Governor Kieft of a piece of land on the East River shore of Long Island. It was described as: "Bounded north by west by Cornelius Dircksen, ferryman's land, stretching from said ferryman's land east by south along the river 56 rods, and along ditto into the woods, south by east, 132 rods; in breadth in rear in the woods 40 rods, and on the east side, north by east till to the river 120 rods, amounting to 10 morgen and 48 rods."

As near as may be determined for practical purposes, this property commenced at the

present site of Fulton Ferry and stretched along between the present Front and Water streets (the shore line in the olden time) and extended up the Jamaica Road (Fulton street) from the shore until the present junction of Front and Fulton streets. The ferry at that time was in itself a little settlement. Cornelis Dircksen, the ferryman, seems to have had a tavern near Peck Slip in New Amsterdam and ran the ferry as an adjunct to his trade. He received in 1643 a grant of a triangular piece of land, measuring about two morgens, from the Director General. Dircksen was a sort of land speculator and seems to have bought what land he could get near the ferry and subdivided it, when he could not resell in a lump, in small parcels suitable for a dwelling and a garden. In 1643 he bought from William Thomassen a farm of seventeen morgens at the ferry, paying therefor 2,300 guilders, and so secured the ferriage rights, such as they then were. In 1652 he sold two morgens and sixty-seven and one-half rods to Cornelis de Potter. In 1654 Egbert Borsum obtained a grant of two lots at the ferry, and was lessee of the river transportation business in the same year.

We will return to this subject more fully when telling the story of the ferry system, but enough has been presented here to show how easily and frequently larger and small parcels of land changed hands even in those primitive times. The home seeking population was then in the minority on the west end of the island and people went there with the primal intention of making money, not of founding families. Jacob Wolfertse did not long retain his valuable piece of property,—it seemed the most valuable on Long Island even at that time,—for in 1645 it was in possession of Henry Breser, who seems to have been a merchant and land speculator. In 1651 he rented the property to Jan Hendrickson Stillman and Thomas Stephense, and the same year he sold it to Cornelius de Potter, for 1,125 guilders. De Potter, who was a magistrate at Flatlands, died about 1660, and left the property in question to his daughter, Adriaentje, who married

Jan Aardz Middagh, by which time it had extended to some two hundred acres "lying east of Fulton Ferry and Fulton street." Jan seems to have remained in possession until his death, about 1710. From that time until the property came into the possession of John Rapalye several years prior to the Revolution, it seems impossible to trace its transmission.

The Rapalye family is descended from Joris Jansen, who came to this country from Holland in 1623. He resided first at Albany, with his wife Catalyntje. There was born their first child, Sarah, on June 9, 1623, who has often been described as the first white child born in Brooklyn. On June 16, 1637, he obtained a patent for 167 morgens of land at the Wallabout and there settled and became a man of much local importance. In 1641 he was one of the twelve Select Men chosen to sit in Council with Governor Kieft, and restrained for a time that doughty representative of their High Mightinesses from proceeding to extremities with the Indians. For over a decade he was a magistrate of Brooklyn and died in 1665 full of years and honor. His family consisted of:

1. Sarah, married (first) Hans Hansen Bergen, (second) Tunis Gysbertse Bogart.
2. Marretje, born March 16, 1627, married Michael Paulus Vandervoort.
3. Jannetje, born August 18, 1629, married Ren Jansen Vanderbeeck.
4. Judith, born July 5, 1635, married Peter Pietersen Van Nest.
5. Jan, born August 28, 1637, died January 25, 1663.
6. Jacob, born May 28, 1639, killed by Indians.
7. Catelintje, born March 28, 1641, married Jeremias Jansen Van Westerhout.
8. Jeronemus, born June 27, 1643, married Anna, daughter of Tunis Nyssen or Denyse, succeeded to his father's property at the Wallabout and resided there until his death, about 1695. He bequeathed his estate to his son Jeronimus, who in turn devised it to his daughter, Antie, wife of Martin M. Schenck, of Flatlands.

9. Annetje, born February 8, 1646, married (first) Martin Ryerse, (second) Joost France.

10. Elizabeth, born March 26, 1648, married Dick Cornelise Hoogland.

11. Daniel, born December 29, 1650, married Sarah, daughter of Abraham Klock, and resided in Brooklyn probably on farm land set off from the paternal estate. He was an ensign in the Brooklyn militia company in 1673 and lieutenant in 1700.

of this family, and his wealth made him its most noted member so long as he resided in Brooklyn. In another place we will speak more fully of the personal fortunes of John Rapalye, and it may here suffice to say briefly that the land passed from his hands after the Revolution, and by the operation of the law of attainder became vested in the Commissioners duly appointed to take charge of such forfeited estates when the British flag, as the flag of an enemy, was hauled down and our



The father of this family, which by its inter-marriages finds a place in every ancient genealogical tree in Brooklyn, was not an accomplished penman, whatever his other educational qualifications may have been. He signed his mark "R" to all documents. His sons were more elaborate in the presentation of the family name, signing it "Rapalje," "Rappalie" and "Reprele."

The owner of the tract at the ferry we have taken for our text was a representative

beloved Stars and Stripes run up on every staff from which it had floated.

The property, comprising one hundred and sixty acres in all, was bought from the Commissioners in 1784 by Comfort and Joshua Sands, and thus brought to the front in Brooklyn another old Long Island family—but then new in that community—whose name is now held in peculiar veneration.

The Sands family hailed from Cow Neck or Manhasset, at which place Sands' Point still

marks the location of the pioneer settler of the name—the great-grandfather of the brothers in whose fortunes we are immediately concerned. Both were born on the ancestral property,—Comfort in 1748, and Joshua in 1757. Comfort entered into business on his own account in Peck Slip, New York, and by the time the Revolutionary war broke out had managed to save a considerable amount of money. As an instance of values in those days we may mention that Comfort in 1781 rented a house at 307 Queen (Pearl) street, for \$32.50 a year. His business career was mainly confined to Manhattan. In 1776 he was a member of the New York Provincial Congress and held the office of Auditor General of the State. He also represented the city several times in the Assembly and acquired for those days considerable wealth, for every interest he touched seemed to flourish. He died at Hoboken September 22, 1834.

Joshua was much more closely connected with Brooklyn and Long Island. In 1776 he secured a position, through the influence of Governor Trumbull, of Connecticut, in the commissariat department of the army. This position he held for a short time, but during it he took part in the battle of Brooklyn and was of considerable service in the memorable retreat of Washington's troops from Long Island. In 1777, in company with his brothers, Comfort and Richardson, he formed a company for supplying clothing and provisions to the Continentals. Their proposals were accepted and they set about supplying the goods, but it was many years afterward before they received payment, for the condition of the public treasury long after peace was inaugurated was the reverse of prosperous, and Uncle Sam, somehow, even when his treasury was full, has never been a very prompt paymaster. The brothers, however, had other interests which paid them better and their partnership was continued after the war was over. The Rapelye property seems to have been their first large speculation after peace was proclaimed,

and it is said that the money used in the purchase represented the profit on their dealings in soldiers' pay certificates which they had bought up at a steep rate of discount. However that may be, it made Joshua become a resident of Brooklyn, for he at once built a home for himself on the estate, on Front street, and remained identified with the place and its interests until his death. He established in it a new industry, that of the manufacture of cordage and rigging, and laid out extensive rope-walks, importing the necessary machinery and skilled labor from England. He held many public offices, was a State Senator from 1792 to 1798, Collector of Customs at the Port of New York between 1797 and 1801, and a member of Congress in 1803-5, and again in 1825-7. In 1824 he was chosen president of the Village of Brooklyn Trustees and seems to have been a most active man in the social, political, religious and industrial affairs of the community. He died in 1835.

With its possession by the Sands brothers the history of the Rapalye property as a single factor ceases. While Joshua retained enough of the land for a house and an extensive garden, the brothers had no idea of holding on to an estate which they had simply bought for speculative purposes. So, in 1788, it was surveyed, streets laid out, and in conjunction with the adjoining Remsen property of John Jackson, buyers were invited for lots in the tract, which was boomed as a new village—the "village of Olympia." It was pictured as a village of homes with city and country advantages combined, and as the lots were cheap they readily sold. Some doubt was cast upon the legality of the title by which the brothers held the property, for Rapalye had carried off all the title deeds; but the Sands brothers deemed the voucher of Uncle Sam good enough for all practical purposes and most of those with whom they had dealings fully agreed with them. This opening up of Olympia was the beginning of the distribution of many an old Kings county estate into building lots—the

starting point of a series of "booms" of various sections which is still going on even at the present day.

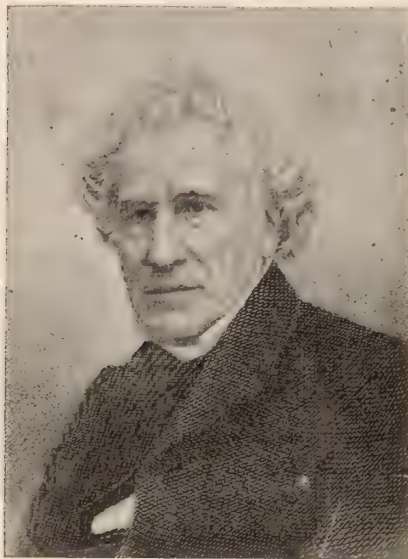
When the Rapalye property was subdivided by the Sands brothers, one of the arguments used to support the theory of the future rise in value of the lots was that Brooklyn was certain to extend along its section of the water front, as on the other side of the main road from the ferry was a series of inaccessible hills which rendered the ground utterly unsuitable for building purposes. The arguments were specious enough, but time showed how utterly fallacious they were.

In 1647 Dirck Janssen Woertman settled in Brooklyn from Amsterdam, and successively bought up several patents on lands south of Brooklyn Ferry, covering, roughly speaking, that section now known as the Heights. In 1706 he disposed of that property to Joris Remsen, who had married his daughter, Femmetje. When the deed was completed Joris removed with his family from Flatbush, where he had previously resided. With the death of Joris, about 1720, commenced the subdivision of the property into smaller holdings. He had previously sold fourteen acres to his son-in-law, Jacobus De Bevoise, a tract long afterward known as the De Bevoise farm. Stiles says: "The remainder of Joris Remsen's land was inherited by his son Rem, who died in or about 1724 [the only authority for this is that his will was dated that year], leaving among other children a son, George (or Joris), who fell heir to the paternal estate, married Jane, daughter of Philip Nagle (Nagel), and died between 1735 and 1743, leaving issue Rem, Phillip and Aletta. On the 19th of June, 1753 (Kings County Records, liber 6, page 174), Philip Remsen, described there as of Bucks county, Pennsylvania, together 'with Philip Mease, Esq., of Flatbush, only surviving executor of his father's estate,' conveyed to Henry and Peter Remsen, merchants of New York, for the sum of £1,060, one-half (estimated at fifty-seven acres) of the original property purchased by

his great-grandfather, Joris Remsen, from Woertman. * * * The above named brothers, Henry and Peter Remsen, at some time prior to 1764 sold to Philip Livingston, Esq., of New York, that portion of the estate lying between the present Joralemon and Atlantic streets and extending from the East River to Red Hook Lane. On the 1st of August, 1768, the Remsen brothers divided between them the remainder of the property, Henry taking the northerly half, adjoining the De Bevoise farm, and Peter taking the southerly portion next to the Livingston farm, from which it was separated by a lane since known as Joralemon street."

Part of the Livingston property, with a distillery erected upon it and which had been in successful operation for several years, was sold in 1802 to Hezekiah Beers Pierrepont, afterward owner of the De Bevoise and Benson's farms of the Heights, and thus was introduced into Brooklyn history the name of a family which has done more for its sterling development than any other that could be named outside of the descendants of the original settlers. H. B. Pierrepont was the grandson of the Rev. James Pierrepont, the first minister settled in New Haven and one of the founders of Yale College. For a time Hezekiah was a clerk in the New York customhouse, but was previously thoroughly trained for a business career by his uncle, Isaac Beers, of New Haven. His opportunity in life came with his appointment as agent for Watson & Greenleaf, who were engaged in the purchase of the national debt, and he was fully equal to it, acquiring a moderate fortune. He then founded the firm of Leffingwell & Pierrepont and engaged in shipping provisions to Europe, residing for a time in Paris to look after the interests of the firm there. This trade was interrupted by the course of the war between Great Britain and France; so he chartered a vessel, "The Confederacy," and, filling it up with merchandise, accompanied it to China in 1795. The speculation proved a profitable one, but in 1797, while on the voyage home

from China, "The Confederacy" was seized by a French privateer and sold, in defiance of American treaty rights and stipulations. In 1800 Pierrepont returned to New York and two years later married Anna, daughter of William Constable, a merchant of New York who had been interested with Alexander Macomb in the purchase, in 1787, of over a million acres of land in the northern part of the State of New York. By his bride, Pierrepont came into possession of some 500,000 acres of these lands, mainly in Jefferson, Lewis and St. Lawrence counties.



WM. A. MUHLENBERG.

In prospecting for some business enterprise in which to engage he saw a prospect of success in the manufacture of gin, and it was with that business in view that he bought, in 1802, the Livingston distillery at the foot of Joralemon street, Brooklyn, and so commenced a connection with the future "City of Churches" which was of the utmost consequence to both. He was not long in Brooklyn before he fully realized the bright prospects of its future, and soon made up his mind that in aiding in its development lay a certain and substantial return for his own means and

his business energy. So he purchased the tract of land on the Heights known as the Remsen farm, part of the old Remsen property, and gradually extended his holdings as opportunity offered, his last great purchase being the De Bevois farm, for which in 1816 he paid \$28,000. A year later he abandoned the distillery and thereafter devoted himself solely to the development of his real estate. In 1815 he had been one of a committee which succeeded in getting from the legislature a village charter for Brooklyn, and he had the bulk of his property graded, and laid out in streets and squares and finally placed on the market. He believed in wide streets and fully exemplified his ideal in the care he bestowed on Pierrepont street, which was laid out with a width of eighty feet, while Montague street and Remsen street were each scheduled at seventy-five feet.

Stiles, in his "History of Kings County," page 130, says:

As chairman of the street committee he exerted himself to secure an open promenade for the public, on the Heights, from Fulton Ferry to Joralemon street. He had a map and plan drawn for the improvement by Mr. Silas Ludlam, and procured the consent of the proprietors for a cession of the property, except from his neighbor and friend, Judge Radcliff, who opposed the scheme so violently that Mr. Pierrepont, rather than have a contest with a friend, withdrew from the attempt, and himself paid the expense incurred for the survey and plan, though he had ordered it officially. He lived and died in the belief and desire that the Heights would some day be made a public promenade, on some similar plan. Before his estate was divided and sold his executors gave the opportunity to the city to take the property between Love Lane and Remsen street and Willow street, the only part of the Heights that remained unoccupied, for such a public place, and a petition was signed by a few public-spirited men for the object. But it was defeated before the city authorities by overwhelming remonstrances, very generally signed in the large district of assessment that was proposed.

It appears from his diary that as early as

the year 1818 he made inquiry as to the cost of stone wharves. He reluctantly improved his water-front with timber, only when he found, from the depth of water, the cost of stone structures was too great to be warranted by the small income derived by wharf-owners under our present port laws. He persistently declined to sell his lots, except where good private dwellings of brick or stone were engaged to be erected, suited to the future character of his finely-situated property. Time has now proved the soundness of his judgment. His property is now covered by elegant mansions, besides five fine churches, the City Hall, Academy of Music, Mercantile Library, and other public buildings, while the front on the bay is occupied by extensive wharves and warehouses. Mr. Pierrepont possessed great energy of character and a sound judgment; was domestic in his habits and had no ambition for public office, or relish for political life. Yet he gave his services freely to his fellow citizens in aid of their local affairs.

His property in the northern part of the State occupied his attention along with that in Brooklyn, and for years he and his sons, William and Henry, paid annual visits there and steadily effected improvements and induced settlements. But it was slow work, although sufficient to demonstrate that with time it would blossom as a garden as much of it since then has done.

Mr. Pierrepont died in Brooklyn in 1838, and his widow survived him until 1859. They had a family of two sons and eight daughters: William Constable, Henry Evelyn, Anna Constable (deceased, wife of Hubert Van Wageningen), Emily Constable (married Joseph A. Perry), Frances Matilda (married Rev. Frederick S. Wiley), Mary Montague (died in 1859, unmarried), Harriet Constable (married Edgar J. Bartow, died in 1855), Maria Theresa (married Joseph J. Bicknell), Julia Evelyn (married John Constable, of Constableville), and Ellen Isaphine (married Dr. James M. Minor).

William C., the eldest son, devoted himself mainly to the State properties left in his charge by his father's will and made his home at Pierrepont Manor, Jefferson county. He

was an accomplished scholar and a profound mathematician, and carried on an extensive correspondence with many of the leading scientists of Europe. He was elected a member of the State Legislature in 1840, but only served a single term. Under his management the estate prospered and he was noted for his beneficence as well as many other grand qualities of mind and heart. He established scholarships in the General Theological Seminary, New York, and also at Hobart College, from which institution he received the degree of LL. D. At Canaseraga, New York, he endowed a church as a memorial to a deceased son, and several other schemes of practical good were stopped by his death, at Pierrepont Manor, December 20, 1885. His brother, Henry E., confined his life work to Brooklyn. While in Europe in 1833 that village was raised to the dignity of a city, and in his absence he was named one of the Commissioners for laying out public grounds and streets. On receiving notification of his appointment he made a practical study of most of the large cities in Europe and drew up plans which were adopted, in a large measure, by the legislature of 1835. He also submitted plans for laying out a large plot of ground among the Gowanus Hills for a rural cemetery, and in 1838 obtained a charter from the legislature for the formation of the Green-Wood Cemetery corporation. With that enterprise we will deal at length in a subsequent chapter of this history. Under his father's will he took charge of all the family real estate in Brooklyn as well as the State lands in Franklin, Lewis and St. Lawrence counties. In Brooklyn he laid out Furman street, and by the erection of a new bulkhead on the water front added five acres of wharf property to the estate. In the financial and social life of the city he was prominent for many years, and was justly regarded as the finest type of a high-spirited and representative citizen. He died in the city in which he was born and passed his life and which he loved so well, March 28, 1888, in the eighty-sixth year of his age.

We will now revert to a genealogical study, selecting for that purpose the Lefferts family so well known in Brooklyn. So far as can be ascertained its American ancestor was Pieter Janse, who seems to have crossed the Atlantic, with his wife, Femmentje Hermans, in 1660. There is some doubt as to his surname; Pieter Janse is simply Peter, John's son, and Haughwout or Hauwert, which is sometimes given as the surname, is merely the name of a village in Holland, whence the family emigrated. Some of the family, however, used Haughwout with several variations in spelling as a surname. Pieter, whatever his family name was, did not long survive after coming to America, for by October 15, 1662, we find that Femmentje was again married and on that date had two guardians appointed at Flatbush for her children by her previous union,—Leffert Pieterse and Pieter Pieterse. What became of the last named seems unknown.

Leffert Pieterse was probably about seven years of age when he landed in the New World with his parents. He was brought up in Flatbush, and in 1775 settled on a piece of land (seventeen morgens) in that place. He married the same year Abigail, a daughter of Anke Janse Van Nuyse, and seems to have prospered in the world, for in 1700 he was able to buy an additional farm, at Bedford, for one of his sons.

He died July 19, 1748. His children were:

1. Altien, born June 22, 1676, died single.
2. Anke, born April 4, 1678. He married Marytje Ten Eyck, of New York, and prior to 1709 removed to Monmouth county, New Jersey. His descendants still reside there and generally write their family name Leffertson.
3. Pieter, born May 18, 1680, succeeded to his father's farm, and was a supervisor of Flatbush in 1726 and 1727. Signed his name Pieter Lefferts. Married Ida, daughter of Hendrick Suydam, of Flatbush, and had a son Leffert, who founded the Pennsylvania (Berks County) branch of the family; two sons, John

and Jacob, who died young; and five daughters.

4. Rachel, born January 17, 1682, married Jan Waldron.

5. Jan, born January, 1684, who grew to manhood and married, but all trace of whom has been lost.

6. Jacobus: see below.

7. Isaac, born June 15, 1688, died October 18, 1746, resided all his life in Flatbush, of which town, in 1726 and 1727, he was Constable. One of his sons, Leffert, resided during his life in Flatbush. Two others, Hendrick and Isaac, removed to Jamaica. His only daughter, Harmpje (named after her mother, whose surname is not on record), married Hendrick Suydam, of Hallet's Cove.

8. Abraham, born September 1, 1692. Married Sarah Hoogland. Family settled in New York (where he engaged in business) except one daughter, Catherine, who married Peter Luysten, of Oyster Bay.

9. Madalina, born August 20, 1694, married Garret Martense.

10. Ann, born March 1, 1696, died single.

11. Abigail, born August 14, 1698, died young.

12. Leffert, born May 22, 1701, married Catryntje Dorland and died September 27, 1774.

13. Benjamin, born May 2, 1704, died November 17, 1707.

Jacobus (6), born June 9, 1686, settled on the farm which his father had bought at Bedford Corners. He married, in 1716, Fannetje, daughter of Claes (or Nicholas) Barentse Blom. In the local records his name is given sometimes as Isaac Hagewoutt, but he signed himself Jacobus Leffert. He seems to have prospered fairly well in life, for he added pretty extensively to the size of his farm and appears to have owned and rented one or two small farms in the neighborhood. He died September 3, 1768. His family consisted of:

1. Abigail, born October 1, 1717, married Lambert Suydam, who was captain of a troop

of horse in 1749 and died in 1767. Abigail was again married, to Nicholas Vechte, in 1772.

2. Nicholas, born April 6, 1719, died 1780, leaving two daughters.

3. Elizabeth or Eliza, born March 8, 1721, married Hendrick Fine, of Bedford.

4. Neltye, born November 3, 1723, married Jacobus Vanderbilt.

5. Leffert, born March 14, 1727. (See below.)

6. Jannetje, born June 25, 1729, married Jeronemus Rapalje.

7. Jacobus, born November 26, 1731, became a merchant in New York, and died July 20, 1792, leaving several children.

8. Barent, born November 2, 1736, married Femmetje, daughter of Rem Remsen, and lived at Bedford Corners. He owned before his death, June 21, 1819, much land on Jamaica and Cripplebush Roads.

Leffert, through whom the family name was handed down to another generation, married, August 5, 1756, Dorothy, daughter of John Cowenhoven. As County Clerk he had charge of the county and the town records which were afterward taken from his house by his assistant, John Rapalje, and the house itself was tenanted by General Gray during the British occupation. He left a large family, but it is needless to follow their fortunes with the minuteness given to the earlier branches. We must need refer to two, however. Of these Catryna, born in 1759, was killed accidentally April 17, 1783, in a curious manner. A local paper said that "having observed to her mother that a loaded pistol left by a drover, who had been watching his cattle with it the preceding night, upon a chest of drawers, was rather dangerously placed and that some of the children might get hurt by it, proceeded to remove and put it in a holster that hung close by; but in the operation the pistol was discharged, the shot went through her body and she expired immediately." Having told the story, thus succinctly, the paper then prints

an elaborate "Elegy," of which the following are the closing lines:

"Then pray descend, fair Catharina's shade,
Into my dreams and visions of the night;
Put rapturous illusions in my head
That sad realities may have respite.

Too much an angel for a world of woe,
Eternal Wisdom hath conceived it best
On her a crown of glory to bestow,
Among the saints in her Redeemer's rest."

One of the brothers of this young lady, Judge Leffert Lefferts, deserves more than a mere passing notice. He was born April 12, 1774. On May 7, 1794, he was graduated from Columbia College, and then studied law in the office of Judge Egbert Benson. In 1798 he was admitted to the bar and in the following year was appointed Clerk of Kings County, an appointment which had been held by his father. On February 10, 1823, he was appointed Judge of Kings County in succession to Judge William Furman, but he held the office only a short time. His recognized probity and business aptitude had opened up other avenues of usefulness. In 1822, recognizing the great need in Brooklyn of a banking institution, instituted on the firmest basis, and which should be directed so as to aid very materially in the development of the place, he was the leader in the movement which resulted in a charter being obtained for the Long Island Bank in 1824, and he was elected its first president. This office he continued to hold until 1846, when the infirmities of age impelled him to resign. The success of the bank and the great influence it exerted upon the prosperity of Brooklyn were due in great measure to his progressive yet conservative methods, while his courtesy, shrewd common sense and unerring judgment made him personally popular with all those associated with it in any way. He died March 22, 1847. On April 21, 1823, he had married Maria, daughter of Robert

Benson. Their only child, Elizabeth, married J. Carson Brevort (born in New York City, 1818, died in Brooklyn, December 7, 1887), afterward superintendent of the Astor Library, New York, president of the Long Island Historical Society, and a Regent of the University of New York.

Another scion of the family, one whose fame extended far beyond the confines of Long Island, was Marshall Lefferts. He was born at Bedford Corners January 15, 1821, and after various experiences as a civil engineer became a partner in the firm of Morewood & Co., importers, New York. In 1849 he became president of the New York, New England, and New York State Telegraph Companies, and left that office in 1860 to perfect some telegraphic improvements which were afterward patented and put into successful operation. His electrical researches were, however, interrupted by the outbreak of the Civil war. In 1851 he had joined the Seventh Regiment, National Guard, New York, as a private, and became its lieutenant colonel the following year and colonel in 1859. In 1861 the regiment, under his command, left for the front. It volunteered again in 1862 and 1863. In the latter year it was stationed in Maryland, and returned to New York for duty in the draft riots of July in that year. Lefferts became connected with the Western Union Telegraph Company, which had purchased most of his patents and put them in full operation. In 1867 he organized its commercial news department, and in 1869 became president of the Gold and Stock Telegraph Company. He died suddenly July 3, 1876, on a railway train while en route with the veteran corps of the Seventh Regiment, of which he was commander, to attend the Centennial Fourth of July parade in Philadelphia.

His son, Dr. George Morewood Lefferts, who was born in Brooklyn February 24, 1846, was educated for the medical profession, grad-

uating from the New York College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1870, and thereafter studying in Vienna. In 1873 he settled in practice in New York, making a specialty of diseases of the throat and chest. He became Professor of Laryngoscopy in the New York College of Physicians and Surgeons, and in 1875 president of the New York Laryngological Society. In his own branch he stands at the head of American specialists, while his many contributions to medical literature have won for him a widespread recognition in medical circles all over the world.

We must here bring these notes regarding the old families of Long Island to a close. They could easily be continued almost indefinitely, for the study of genealogy, rightly followed, is a most interesting one, and the succession of such families as those bearing the names of Hewlett, Remsen, Van Brunt, Strycker, Cowenhoven, Ten Eyck, Sulphen, Polhemus, Middaugh, Lawrence, Cortelyou, Hegeman, Duryea, De Bevoise, Denyse, Seaman, Halleth, Riker, Youngs, Horton and a score of others present us, with many and varied features of interest in the story of Long Island. We will refer to many of these in the course of this work, to all in fact more or less particularly; but the study itself is hardly one which can be fully carried out in a general history such as this. We have, however, presented sufficient of the subject to demonstrate what an interesting field awaits the genealogical student who devotes himself to it. Genealogy as a general rule, except in dealing with princely families, is generally voted an uninteresting study; but in tracing the descent of the famous names of Long Island we are constantly brought to the consideration of historical details, showing, if the study shows anything clearly, that under our republican form of government the history of the township, city or nation is made by the people.

CHAPTER IX.

SOME PRIMITIVE CHARACTERISTICS—EARLY LAWS—THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE.



WHETHER English or Dutch, the early settlers on Long Island carried there with them the manners and customs of their respective mother lands, and in their daily lives and in their homes endeavored to reproduce what they had been accustomed to before crossing the Atlantic. The line of separation which for long politically divided the island kept the two pioneer races from mingling and adopting each other's ways and habits even to the extent noticeable on Manhattan Island; and the fact that Long Island was so thoroughly cut off from the main land that even a trip across the East River was an event so full of delay and danger that men often put their affairs in order and made their wills before attempting it, led to a maintenance of primitive customs and the primitive order of things long after the pioneers had passed from the cares and troubles and toils of life and their sons and grandsons reigned in their stead.

But, unlike as they were in most things, and different as were their habits of thought and their notions of domestic comfort, the pioneers, both Dutch and English, were alike in at least one respect—they were essentially religious communities. The first thing done in any settlement, whether Southold or Flatbush, was to provide for a place of worship—a house in which they might unite in the praise of God and meditate on His goodness and His commands, and around which their bones might be laid while waiting for the resurrection

and the final judgment. They were each a religious people, and though differing very widely, very radically, on their views as to church government and on many non-essentials, they united in a complete acceptance of the Bible as the sole Book of the Law, as the guide for this life and the only sure guide to the life that is to come. They interpreted the Bible and its promises literally, had no worriment over doubt, no conception of the perplexities of the higher criticism. The Dutch version was an inspired Book to the Dutch; the English version was equally regarded as inspired by the English. Verbal criticism they never paltered over; translators' errors, if they could have conceived them, they would have deemed an impossibility. The Bible said so, and so it was; and this implicit faith, this firm reliance, this complete subservience of their daily lives and inmost thought to the Book of the Law made them even in their own day stand out in bold relief as honest, God-fearing men and women,—people whose word could be implicitly relied upon, people who would have willingly wronged no man; and while they strove hard to acquire a share, perhaps more than a share, of this world's goods, while they treated the Indians as irresponsible children and gave them sugar plums for land, they at least treated them in accordance with the spirit of the age. Each community was a moral one; the laws were implicitly obeyed and as a result the history of Long Island as a whole presents, so far as its own land-owning settlers were concerned, a much more peaceful pic-

ture than is furnished by most of the early settlements of Europeans in America.

In another respect both the Dutch and English settlers were alike—in their love and reverence for their home land. This is seen most conclusively in the names they gave their settlements. Thus, in the section over which the Dutch predominated there was Breukelen



DUTCH DOOR.

From "Flatbush, Past and Present." By permission of the Flatbush Trust Company.

and Amersforte and Vlissingen and Midwout, after places bearing the same name in Holland, and New Utrecht, like New Amsterdam, differed only in the prefix from the original Dutch towns. On the eastern division there is no room for argument as to the originals of Southampton, or Huntington, or "The Island of Patmos," or Smithtown, or Oyster Bay. But in one important respect there was

a wide difference between the two nationalities. While the Dutch at least professed the deepest awe at the power and influence of the States General and revered the very name of "their High Mightinesses," permitting the Governors set over them almost unlimited sway and accepting,—although not without grumbling,—the laws made and provided for them, each English community aspired to be an independent government, to make and enact its own laws, to assess and collect its own taxes, and to say who should and who should not be accepted into citizenship. Both talked of religious freedom, but the religious freedom of the Dutch was bounded by the spectacles of the local classis and in matters of extraordinary difficulty by the classis of New Amsterdam; and Governor Stuyvesant, among his other prerogatives, assumed that of Defender of the Faith. The English were as pronouncedly in favor of freedom and toleration, but they judged the boundary line by their own views, and whatever turned up that did not square with those views was deemed unworthy of freedom and toleration. But both had, to a certain extent at least, a sympathy with the churches each set up and both harassed and persecuted the Quakers and other malcontents with equal zeal. Still there is no doubt that even in such excesses as made martyrs of the early Quakers and Baptists, they acted conscientiously. Different as they were in so many things pertaining to religion, they were alike in the rigidity of their acceptance of Calvinism, and the authority of the company in Holland over religious as well as over secular matters was not one whit stronger than that wielded in the eastern settlements by the local church authorities and the town meeting. They both hated dissenters as much as did the most obdurate high churchman in old England, had an equal hatred of unauthorized religious meetings—meetings which they contemptuously called "conventicles"; and such gatherings were ruthlessly broken up and the attendants punished by fine and imprisonment, or whipping or by the

easier process of ordering their instant removal from the neighborhood. As an instance, take the following from Fiske's "Quaker and Dutch Colonies" (vol. 1, page 232):

The heavy hand of the law was also laid upon a few humble Baptists at Flushing. William Hallett, the sheriff, had the audacity to hold conventicles in his own house and there "to permit one William Wickendam to explain and comment on God's Holy Word, and to administer sacraments though not called thereto by any civil or clerical authority." For this heinous offence Hallett was removed from office and fined 500 guilders, while Wickendam, "who maintained that he was commissioned by Christ and dipped people in the river," was fined 1,000 guilders and ordered to quit the country. On inquiry it appeared that he was "a poor cobbler from Rhode Island," without a stiver in the world; so the fine was perforce remitted; but the Baptist was not allowed to stay in New Netherland.

The wealth of the people consisted principally of land and live stock, since these things naturally were the most convenient and important to a pioneer people. To be a landholder was of course a great attraction and incentive to the average citizen of the old country, like Holland and other densely populated portions of Europe, where no hopes of being the possessor of land and a "landlord" could be entertained by the masses; and the most of them, having been brought up to agricultural and horticultural pursuits, were well versed in the faithful tilling of the soil and also in the care of live stock, especially cattle.

The residences were necessarily simple and the furnishing of the same was meager, since it was altogether too expensive to import furniture across the great Atlantic in sailing vessels. The home of the Dutch settler, was a square, built with a high, sloping roof, with overhanging eaves that formed a shade from the sun and a shelter from the rain. The first settlers probably were content with a dug-out, but not for long, for as soon as timber could be cut

and saplings gathered a more pretentious dwelling would arise over the cellar, a dwelling which could easily be added to as the family increased in numbers or wealth. In the eastern end of Long Island, which was settled principally by people from New England and old England, the dwelling-houses were simply huge wooden boxes, so to speak, divided off into rooms at regular intervals by partitions or windows or both. Many of them were similar to the primitive structures of the early English settlers in Australia,—first a "shack" or rough-board shanty, such as are common to camps in the wilds, and afterward something more elaborate, from time to time, as the owner had means and time for improvement and expansion. Whatever architectural beauty existed was at first bestowed on the church, and after its adornment was completed then something was attempted in the way of adding to the attractiveness of the homes of the people, a weathercock being a mark of gentility in Flatlands, while a garden was deemed a token of advancing civilization and comfort in Southampton. A stone house, however, was the height of perfection, after which most of the well-to-do strived; and as early as 1690 we read of dwellings built of brick, but by that time people had begun to wax wealthy and the importation of brick was a luxury. Stone was more easily made useful, as the pioneer farmers could have told with a sigh. It was a rare thing to see a house more than a single story high in the Dutch settlements; and even in the English end a story and a half or two stories, though more common, was at first regarded as wonderful work. The real pioneers, or first settlers in a country, are generally so well behaved as to need little or no law; they are temperate, honest, social, neighborly, and such a period of simplicity generally endures until burglars and dishonest people begin to infest the country. Therefore, east or west, locks were unknown, until after civilization had considerably advanced, and in summer the Dutch family was sure to gather outside of the house, beneath

the shade of the eaves, and there exchange greetings or discuss the events of the day; while the English settlers were wont to gather in the town square and the women gossiped in the gardens and the children played in the little bit of lawn, a feature as inseparable from an Englishman's notion of domestic comfort as was the long pipe of the Dutchman.

In the interior of the house the general sitting-room and the kitchen were the important features. Bed-rooms were small, and sleeping bunks were common where the family was large; but improvements in this respect came with the extension of the dwelling. Sanitary arrangements there were none, east or west, but cleanliness and good order were everywhere apparent. The Dutch housewife scrubbed everything that would bear scrubbing and polished her treasures of pewter or brass with unfailing regularity. Carpets were unknown, a sanded floor was deemed the perfection of cleanliness and comfort and the ashes from the wood fires were zealously swept up with feather brushes and carefully gathered. In a Dutch farm-house the fireplace in the sitting-room was the family high altar. It was almost a compartment in itself; and its imported tiles, with their scriptural or historical pictures, formed a basis for a post-graduate educational course following the instructions of the schoolmaster and were regarded as works of art of the highest order.

The furniture at first naturally was of the most primitive kind; and as each house was a little community of its own, making its own bread, curing its own meats, preparing its own cloth and manufacturing its own furnishings and household utensils, the aim was strength and usefulness rather than beauty. After a while this primitive simplicity gave way to more ornate effort. Furniture was imported from Holland and the Dutch artificers in New Amsterdam found a ready market for their wares in the farm-houses on Long Island. Very possibly, too, the pioneer families brought with them from Holland many household articles which they deemed especially

valuable or beautiful, and these were accorded a place of honor among the *lares et penates* of the new home. There was much more of old-world furniture to be found among the pioneer homes on the western end of the island than among those of the eastern; if we may judge by the old inventories still extant and the pieces which have survived to his day; but then we must remember that the eastern settlements were not people directly from old England but from New England; and that two or three removals from one strange land to another were not conducive to the life of family relics or even of articles of domestic usefulness which could be reproduced by hammer, saw and chisel.

Such of these old structures as are still remaining serve as mementoes of a simple life, and the memories of the time become more and more sacred with the lapse of years. Even poetry of an inspiring kind seems to gather around the scenes and experiences of that pioneer age, while only "prose" is connected with the present-day changes and customs. Hence relics of that pioneer time, including even the domiciles themselves, are often the most interesting exhibits at fairs and museums, and still serve as centers of eloquence in fervid composition.

Even in 1679, after several years of prosperity and thrift, the Labadist fathers who visited Long Island in that year found very little in the way of interior decoration or domestic elegance in the homes they visited as honored guests. Of their reception at the home of Simon de Hart, which stood close to the present ferry house of the Thirty-ninth street ferry and was only removed a few years ago, to make way for that structure, they wrote:

We proceeded on to Gouanes, a place so called, where we arrived in the evening at one of the best friends of Gerret named Symon [de Hart]. He was very glad to see us, and so was his wife. They took us into the house and entertained us exceedingly well. We

found a good fire, half way up the chimney, of clean oak and hickory, of which they made not the least scruple of burning profusely.

We let it penetrate us thoroughly. There had been already thrown upon it, to be roasted, a pail full of Gowanus oysters, which are the best in the country. They are fully as good as those of England, and better than those we eat at Falmouth. I had to try some of them raw. They are large and full, some of them not less than a foot long, and they grow

key, which was also fat and of a good flavor, and a wild goose, but that was rather dry. Every thing we had was the natural production of the country. We saw here, lying in a heap, a whole hill of watermelons, which were as large as pumpkins, and which Simon was going to take to the city to sell. They were very good, though there is a difference between them and those of the Caribby islands; but this may be due to lateness in the season: these were the last pulling.



THE CORTELYOU HOUSE, 1699, FIFTH AVENUE AND THIRD STREET BROOKLYN

sometimes ten, twelve and sixteen together, and are then like a piece of rock. Others are young and small. In consequence of the great quantities of them, everybody keeps the shells for the purpose of burning them into lime. They pickle the oysters in small casks, and send them to Barbadoes and the other islands. We had for supper a roasted haunch of venison, which he had bought of the Indians for three guilders and a half of "seewant," that is, fifteen stivers of Dutch money (15 cents), and which weighed thirty pounds. The meat was exceedingly tender and good, and also quite fat. It had a slight aromatic flavor. We were also served with wild tur-

It was very late at night when we went to rest in a Kermis bed, as it is called, in the corner of the hearth, alongside of a good fire.

In New Utrecht the Labadists met with an equally hearty reception at the home of Jacques Cortelyou, about which they wrote:

This village [New Utrecht] was burned down some time ago, with everything about it, including the house of this man [Jacques], which was about half an hour distant from it. Many persons were impoverished by the fire. It was now about all rebuilt and many good stone houses were erected of which

Jacques's was one, where we returned by another road to spend the night. After supper we went to sleep in the barn upon some straw spread with sheepskins, in the midst of the continuous grunting of hogs, squealing of pigs, bleating and coughing of sheep, barking of dogs, crowing of cocks, cackling of hens, and especially a goodly quantity of fleas and vermin, of no small portion of which we were participants, and all with an open barn-door, through which a fresh north wind was blowing. * * * We could not complain, since we had the same quarters and kind of bed that their own son usually had, who now, on our arrival, crept in the straw behind us.

In his History of Brooklyn, Dr. Stiles wrote so fully and so graphically of the early home of the Dutch settlers that I cannot forbear making use of his words, even although the quotation is a lengthy one:

Before the English conquest of the Netherlands, the domestic habits and customs of the Dutch were simple and democratic in their character. All had come hither in search of fortune, and had brought little with them in the beginning. Some, indeed, through industry or peculiar sagacity, had attained positions of wealth, and of increased influence, yet it might justly be said of the Dutch, that their social circles were open to all of good character, without regard to business pursuits, or any factitious considerations. Rich and poor mingled together with a freedom and a heartiness of enjoyment which can hardly be expected to exist, except in the formative stage of society. The advent of the English, many of whom had high social connections at home, and corresponding habits, etc., brought change into the social life of the colony, and necessarily developed an aristocratic state of society previously unknown.

In the "best room" of every house, whether of the wealthy or humbler class, the high-posted, corded, and unwieldy bedstead was a principal object, and, with its furniture and hangings, formed the index of the social standing of its owner. Upon it, according to the old Dutch fashion, were two feather beds—one for the sleeper to lie upon, and another, of a lighter weight, to be used as a covering. The pillow-cases were generally of check patterns; and the curtains and valance were of as expensive materials as its owner could afford; while in front of the bed a rug was laid, for carpets were not then in common use. Among

the Dutch, the only article of that sort, even up to the time of the Revolution, was a drugget cloth, which was spread under the table during meal-time, when, upon "extra occasions," the table was set in the parlor. But even these were unknown among the inhabitants of the neighboring Long Island towns. The uniform practice, after scrubbing the floor well on certain days, was to place upon the damp boards the fine white beach sand (of which every family kept a supply on hand, renewing it by trips to the seashore twice a year), arranged in small heaps, which the members of the family were careful not to disturb by treading upon; and, on the following day, when it had become dry, it was swept, by the light and skillful touch of the housewife's broom, into waves or other fanciful figures. Rag carpets were unknown in Kings county until about the middle of the present century.

The capacious chest, brought from Holland, occupied a prominent place in the house, for several generations; as was also the trundle (or "kermis") bed concealed under the bed by day, to be drawn out for the children's couch at night. Chairs, straight and high backed, were mostly of wood, sometimes covered with leather and studded with brass nails, but more frequently seated simply with matted rushes. Tables, except for kitchen use, were unknown to the earlier Dutch, and for many years to their successors. In the principal room, which held the fine bed, and was, also, tea and dining room on special occasions, was generally a round tea-table, with a leaf which could be dropped perpendicularly when not in use, and a large square table, with leaves, for use at tea-parties. Looking-glasses, in the early days, were generally small, with narrow, black frames; and window-curtains were of the simplest and cheapest description, being no better in the best apartments than a strip of ordinary cloth run upon a string. Clocks were rare, and most families marked their time by the hour-glass, the great eight-day clock, which we sometimes see as heir-looms in our oldest families, being first introduced in this country about 1720. Earthenware, until about 1700, was but little used in ordinary table service, wooden and pewter being then universally in use by all classes and preferred because it did not dull the knives. The few articles of china, kept by some for display upon the cupboard, were rarely used; and, though earthenware came into partial use about 1680, pewter

was still the most common up to the period of the Revolution. Among the wealthy, blue and white china and porcelain, curiously ornamented with Chinese pictures, were used "for company." The teacups were very diminutive in size, for tea was then an article of the highest luxury, and was sipped in small quantities, alternately with a bite from the lump of loaf-sugar, which was laid beside each guest's plate. Sometimes china plates were used as wall-ornaments, suspended by a strong ribbon passed through a hole drilled in their edges. Silverware, in the form of tankards, beakers, porringers, spoons, snuffers, candlesticks, etc., was a favorite form of display among the Dutch, inasmuch as it served as an index of the owner's wealth, and was the safest and most convenient form of investment for any surplus funds.

Of books our ancestors had but few, and these were mostly Bibles, Testaments and psalm-books. These Bibles were quaint specimens of early Dutch printing, with thick covers, massive brass and sometimes silver corner-pieces and clasps. The psalm-books were also adorned with silver edgings and clasps, and on Sabbaths, hung by chains of the same material to the girdle of matrons and maidens. Merchants who kept school-books, psalm-books, etc., as a part of their stock, about the middle of the last century, were provided with an equal number of books in the Dutch and English language; showing that, even at that late period after the termination of the Dutch power, the greater part of the children of Dutch descent continued to be educated in the language of the Fatherland. Spinning-wheels were to be found in every family, many having four or five—some for spinning flax and others for wool. A Dutch matron, indeed, took great pride in her large stock of household linen (then cheaper than cotton); and it was the ambition of every maiden to take to her husband's house a full and complete stock of domestic articles. Light was furnished only by home-made tallow "dips."

Marrying and giving in marriage were the occasion of many merry-makings and ceremonies and seemed to engage the attention of wide circles in the western end, although probably the Puritan influence divested such occasions in the eastern settlements of everything except their religious character. In the west-

ern section all the marriages were first sanctioned or licensed by the Governor, and that department of the government was managed by an official styled the First Commissary of Marriage Affairs. Whether the marriage was a civil or a religious one it could not be regarded as legal without this formality, and in the *Calendar of Historical Manuscripts* (Albany, 1865) we read that on April 3, 1648, "William Harck, sheriff of Flushing, was fined 600 Carolus guilders and deprived of his office for solemnizing the marriage of Thomas Nuton, widower, and Joan, the daughter of Richard Smith, without the consent of the bride's parents and contrary to the law of the Province." The parties thus married had to go through a legal ceremonial shortly after.

In the English settlements people intending to get married had to have their names read in public on three successive Sundays in the church of the town in which they resided, and so secure an official license (which in these circumstances cost little or nothing), and then the marriage could legally be performed as a civil or religious service. But the law indeed seems to have called for the publication of the banns three times all over the island; but in the western section, under the early Dutch rule, it was not considered among the fashionables as "correct form," and the Governor's license was held to be all that was necessary. The law seems to have provided for this and doubtless the Governors encouraged it as it swelled their revenues. But in the eastern settlements, such marriages were at a discount, the banns were cried, and the minister was the necessary official at the solemnization. At the same time he did so under heavy penalties should he fail to observe the law, for one record tells in that "any minister or justice who married any daughter, maid, or servant without the consent of her father, master or dame, or without publishing the banns, was subject to a penalty of £20 and a forfeiture of his office." That this was borne out in actual life and no mere ornament on the statute book, is abundantly

borne out by the various town records. Thus we find that in Huntington, June 19, 1690, a court was held to listen to the complaint of her father that Sarah Ketcham had been wooed by Joseph Whitman "contrary to her mother's mind." Evidence was led in the case, and Sarah was ordered to appear and tell her story. How the case terminated does not appear: very likely the marriage was not permitted, for no record of its having taken place remains, but the fact that such an action was begun and carried out shows that the statute was enforced and held in general esteem.

We are in the habit of decrying the present age as too entirely a practical one, too oblivious to sentiment, and speak of money as one of the main factors in matrimony. But there were the same elements of dollars and cents in the matrimonial market even in the Arcadian days of Long Island. Thus on June 9, 1760, the following ante-nuptial contract was filed on record at Huntington:

The conditions of this obligation between me, Rueben Arter, and Sarah Jarvis is such that if we marry, I, Rueben Arter, do quit her estate of all but five and twenty pounds. I, Sarah Jarvis, do allow out of the rent of the farm for the child's bringing up, and if I, Sarah Jarvis, don't have no other Darter, Ruth Jarvis shall have my wearing cloaths; but if I have other Darters then the cloaths to be Divided between them—the wearing cloaths, and I, Rueben Arter, do hereby bind myself in the sum of fifty pounds current money to stand to these Articles by my hand and seal before these witnesses I have chosen.

REUBEN ARTHUR.

John Bunce.

In some cases the bride had an inventory made of the goods she brought with her to her new home, and for some reason it was at times deemed necessary, or in keeping with the fitness of things, to have such inventory recorded. Here is one recorded in Kings County in 1691, which is printed in Gabriel Furman's "Notes on the Town of Brooklyn":

"A half worn bed, pillow, 2 cushions of ticking with feathers, one rug, 4 sheets, 4 cushion covers, 2 iron pots, 3 pewter dishes, 1 pewter basin, 1 iron roaster, 1 schuryn spoon, 2 coves about 5 years old, 1 case or cupboard, 1 table."

Furman also notes that in the Dutch churches the fees paid the officiating clergyman on such occasions were not his personal perquisites but had to be handed over to the classis; and Mrs. Vanderbilt, in her "Social History of Flatbush," notes that in 1660 marriage fees amounting to 43 guilders were applied to the building fund of the church. In the east, such fees were part of the Dominie's wherewithal.

Funerals, however, were the occasions on which the Dutch settlers spread themselves. It was made an occasion for solemn rejoicing—so to speak—and the quantity of liquor consumed on the occasion of the funeral of a well known and wealthy farmer was extraordinary. Mrs. Vanderbilt preserves in print the following bill of expenses at the funeral in 1789 of a citizen of Flatbush:

20 gallons good wine.
2 gallons spirits.
1 large loaf of lump sugar.
 $\frac{1}{2}$ doz. nutmegs.
 $\frac{1}{2}$ gross long pipes.
4 lbs. tobacco.
 $1\frac{1}{2}$ dozen black silk handkerchiefs.
6 loaves of bread.

Furman tells us that "formerly the funerals upon this island were of a very expensive character, and it was a custom in the old families to lay up a stock of superior wine to be used on such occasions; and frequently at those funerals you would meet with wine so choice and excellent that it could scarcely be equalled by any in the land, although our country has always been celebrated throughout the world for its excellent Madeira wine. Christopher Smith of Jamaica, on this island, who died about half a century since [about 1780], had stored away a large quantity of

the most superior wines in the country which were used at his funeral." The funeral services were conducted at the house, not in the church, and the body was generally carried to the grave, which in most cases, any distance from the church, was in a corner of the private grounds of the family.

The Rev. P. Van Pelt thus describes a Dutch funeral conducted in the olden style in 1819 by the Rev. W. Schoonmaker, then in his own eighty-second year :



THE CHURCH ON THE HILL.

It was in 1819 that I last heard, or recollect to have seen, the venerable old dominie. It was at the funeral of one of his old friends and associates. A custom had very generally prevailed, which, though then very rarely observed, yet in this instance was literally adhered to. The deceased had, many years before, provided and laid away the materials for his own coffin. This was one of the best seasoned and smoothest boards, and beautifully grained. Other customs and ceremonies then existed, now almost forgotten. As I entered the room I observed the coffin elevated on a table in one corner. The dominie, abstracted and grave, was seated at the upper end; and

around, in solemn silence, the venerable and hoary-headed friends of the deceased. All was still and serious. A simple recognition or a half-audible inquiry, as one after another arrived, was all that passed. Directly, the sexton, followed by a servant, made his appearance, with glasses and decanters. Wine was handed to each. Some declined; others drank a solitary glass. This ended, and again the sexton presented himself with pipes and tobacco. The dominie smoked his pipe, and a few followed his example. The custom has become obsolete, and it is well that it has. When the whiffs of smoke had ceased to curl around the head of the dominie, he arose with evident feeling, and in a quiet, subdued tone, made a short but apparently impressive address. I judged solely by his appearance and manner; for, although boasting a Holland descent, it was to me speaking in an unknown tongue. A short prayer concluded the service; and then the sexton, taking the lead, was followed by the dominie, the doctor, and the pall-bearers, with white scarfs and black gloves. The corpse, and a long procession of friends and neighbors, proceeded to the churchyard, where all that was mortal was committed to the earth till the last trump shall sound and the graves shall give up the dead. No bustle, no confusion, no noise nor indecent haste, attended that funeral.

The Dutch seemed to have carefully enclosed their burial grounds, whether public or private, and, in the earlier times especially, to have raised no commemorative stones, the grave being often simply marked by an unlettered headstone. In the eastern end, however, whether in private ground or in the God's-acre surrounding the meeting house, a stone was invariably set up, even although the sacred grounds were unenclosed. In 1640 and again in 1684 the Governor and Council ordered all interments in private burial grounds to cease; but the orders were not obeyed, and Furman mentions that private burial grounds were used even in his own day "to a considerable extent."

From funerals to wills is an easy and natural transition, and by studying some of the old "testaments" left by the early dwellers on Long Island we get many a glimpse into mat-

ters illustrative of their characteristics which could not otherwise be had.

Thus we find the Dutch were no believers in widows "throwing off their caps" and entering upon a second matrimonial experiment, for we have frequent instances in the wills still extant of property bequeathed to widows only so long as they remain in that condition. Thus in 1726 Cornelis Van Catts left the bulk of his estate to his wife; "but if she happen to marry then I geff her nothing of my estate, neither real or personal. I geff to my well beloved son, Cornelius, the best horse that I have, or else £7 10s., for his good as my eldest son. And then my two children, Cornelius Catts and David Catts, all heef of my whole effects, land and movables, that is to say, Cornelius Catts heef of all, and David Catts heeff of all. But my wife can be master of all, for bringing up to good learning my two children (*offetten*) school to learn."

But in this respect the English residents were equally prohibitive, for in the will of Benjamin Conkling, of Huntington, 1758, he gave his wife "one equal half of all my household goods and ye 3d third of my estate as long as she remains my widow." Perhaps the best authority on the wills made by Long Islanders is Mr. William S. Pelletreau, whose "Abstract of Wills on File in the Surrogate's Office, City of New York, 1695, 1707," published in 1901, is a mine of information on the subject. From that invaluable volume we glean as follows:

The first will printed in the work is that of William Ludlam, of Southampton, 1665. Among his legacies he leaves to his son Anthony "all my housing and lands at the old ground," and a £50 right of communage in the town of Southampton. In a note appended to this will Mr. Pelletreau writes that William Ludlam came from Matlock, in Derbyshire, England, and was in Southampton as early as 1653. All through the volume, notes of this character give information of the greatest interest. The use of the word "alias" is frequent, but not in the sense of to-day. For instance, Daniel Denton is an executor. He lives

at Rustdorp, "alias Jamaica, Long Island." Alice Goodspeede is declared to be the next heir of John Layton, "late of Middleborough, alias New Towne, upon Long Island." David Carwith (Corwith to-day) in 1665, "being weake in body, but in perfect memory," leaves to his son Caleb "my best suit of clothes and a bed blanket." Mary, his daughter, becomes possessed of a scythe and a Bible. John Marston, of Flushing, leaves to one daughter a gold ring, and to another a silver thimble. Thomas Sayre, of Southampton, whose will is dated September, 1669, leaves many acres of land, and besides much pewter. His son is to receive "a Pewter flagon, a Pewter bowl, and a Great Pewter Platter." Here is a curious bequest to another son: £10 a year, "to begin five years after my decease, to be paid in good merchantable shoes, or other pay that will procure hides toward his setting up a Tannery."

Mr. Pelletreau informs the reader that the Thomas Sayres house is still standing at Southampton, "and is now the oldest dwelling in the State."

John Foster, of Rustdorp, L. I., whose will was made in 1663, is anxious as to the education of his children. So he orders, "My Children are to be taught to read English well, and my son to write, when they come of age."

John Hart, of Maspeth Kills, gives one of his sons a shilling, and to another "one Hog." John Hart discriminated, for to his other two sons he left his plantation. Thomas Terry, of Southold, does not forget his wife. She is to have "15 bushels of corn yearly during her life."

Ralph Hunt, of Newtown, had not a great deal to give. To his daughter Mary he leaves "two cows, six sheep, and the feather bed I now lye on." To Ann, she "now having my red coat in her possession, she is to have it valued, and one-half of the proceeds in money is to be given to my daughter Mary." Thomas Halsey, of Southampton, whose will is of 1677, is possessed of a fair landed property. An inventory shows that the estate was worth £672,

a great deal of money in those days. Among the bequests of Thomas Halsey is one to his wife of "one woolen wheele, my little Iron Pott, and a Yellow Rugg, and one Dutch blanket, and four bushels of wheate to be paid yarly, as long as she liveth, and 4 sheep." In the will of Balthazar De Hart slaves appear. De Hart leaves "a negro woman with her 3 children." The date is 1672. Mary Jansen, in a codicil to her will (1677), leaves her son Cornelius a negro boy. Among Mary Jansen's other legacies there are golden earrings and a diamond rose ring, "the Great Bible," a silver spoon, a silver bodkin, and a silver chain with keys.

Until the promulgation of "The Duke's Laws," in 1665, it cannot be said that Long Island was governed by any general code of regulations. The Dutch system, as interpreted by the Director or Governor and his generally complaisant Council, was the authority west of Oyster Bay, and to the east was the town governments, making their own laws, but in a general way basing their legislation upon the code which regulated affairs in Connecticut. These laws are worthy of a little study, as they show that for many of what were deemed their extravagances, the Puritan settlers on Long Island had full legislative authority and were simply following established and confirmed precedent.

In a now rare volume printed at New London in 1750 and entitled "Acts and Laws Passed by the General Court or Assembly of His Majesty's English Colony of Connecticut in New England in America," we get a thorough knowledge of what these laws were. The statute covering the Sabbath is entitled "An act for the due observance and keeping the Sabbath, the Lord's Day, and for preventing and punishing disorders and prophaneness on the same."

The act provides that all persons on the Lord's Day must apply themselves to the duties of religion, both in public and in private, imposing a fine of 3s. on any one who neglects to attend public worship. Any one who assem-

bles in a meeting house and has a meeting without first getting leave from the minister is subject to a fine of 10s. No person shall neglect the public worship of God in some lawful congregation and assemble in separate companies in private houses under penalty of a fine of 10s. Any one who has worked or played on the Sabbath was subject to a fine of 10s., and the penalty for rude or profane conduct was 40s., and it cost 20s. to travel on Sunday. Drinking was not allowed on Sunday, and a ship could not sail out of the harbor, fines being the penalty for violations. In the event that the person fined refused to pay, he was to be "publicly whipt," and no appeal was allowed.

Concerning swearing, which was prohibited every day in the week, the law reads: "Be it enacted by the Governor, Council, and Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, that if any person within this colony shall swear rashly, vainly, or profanely, either by the Holy Name of God or any other oath, or shall sinfully and wickedly curse any person, or persons, such person so offending, shall upon conviction thereof, before any one, assistant, or Justice of the Peace, forfeit and pay for every such offense the sum of 6s.

"And if such person, or persons so convicted, shall not be able or shall refuse to pay the aforesaid fine, he, or they, shall be set in the stocks, not exceeding three hours, and not less than one hour for one offense and pay cost of prosecution."

Gambling, or "gaming" as it was known then, was prohibited, the act saying that no tavern keeper, ale-house keeper, or victualler "shall have, or keep in, or about their houses, outhouses, yards, back yards, gardens, or other places to them belonging, any dice, cards, tables, bowls, shuffleboard, billiard, coytes, keils, logets, or any other implements used in gaming, nor shall suffer any person to exercise any of the said games within their said houses, on pain of forfeiting the sum of 40s." People convicted of playing any of the games were to

be fined 10s. The head of a family who permitted gaming in his house was subject to a fine of 20s.

Concerning the jails, they were to be kept in good repair, the prisoners were to bear their own charges and allowed to use their own bedding and send for their own food. The keepers who injured their prisoners were to be fined, a poor prisoner was to be allowed to take the oath and the creditor notified and required to pay for his weekly maintenance if he insisted on keeping the prisoner in jail.

The offenses against society were liberally provided for, the punishments being fines and imprisonment, and there were all sorts of laws the same as now, some being more stringent and somewhat peculiar, viewed from the standpoint of the present century.

It is not our purpose here to review the Dutch laws or the town laws, but simply to present a few specimens of the working of these regulations with the view of throwing some additional light upon the manners of the people.

In Bushwick there seems to have been more of a fighting disposition among the people than its old Dutch name should have warranted. Witness the following, mentioned by Dr. Stiles:

On the 20th of August, 1693, Jurian Nagell, of Bushwick, together with two others of Brooklyn, endeavored to stir up sedition among the crowd, who had assembled at a general training of the Kings County militia, on Flatland plains. Captain James Cortelyou deposed before the Court of Sessions that, "being in arms at the head of his company," he heard Nagell say to the people then in arms on said plains, in Dutch, these mutinous, factious and seditious words, following, viz.: "*Slaen wijder onder, wij seijn drie & egen een;*" in English: "Let us knock them down, we are three to their one." Nagell subsequently confessed his error, and was released with a fine.

The women, also, participated in the disorders of the times, for on the 8th of May, 1694, Rachel, the wife of John Luquer, and the widow of Jonica Schamp, both of Bushwick, were presented before the Court of Sessions for hav-

ing, on the 24th of January previous, assaulted Captain Peter Praa, and "teare him by the hair as he stood at the head of his company, at Boswyck." They, too, were heavily fined, and released after making due confession of their fault.

In 1648 the town of Southold agreed to conform faithfully to the New Haven law of 1643 that "none shall be admitted to be free burgesses in any of the plantations within this jurisdiction for the future, but such planters as are members of some or other of the approved churches in New England; nor shall any but such free burgesses have any vote in any election. * * * Nor shall any power or trust in the ordering of any Civil Affayres be att any time put into the hands of any other than such church members." An appropriate oath, binding the subject to the faithful observance of all regulations made under this rule was required of everyone. Southold also ordained that "it was moreover then also ordered, that everie such person as inhabiteth amongst us as shall bee found to bee a comon tale carriere, tatler or busie bodie in idle matter, forger or coynor of reports, untruths, or leys, or frequently provokeinge rude unsavorie words, tendeinge to disturbe the peace, shall forfeite and pay for everie default 10s."

The town of Easthampton in 1656 ordered that "whoever shall raise up a false witness against any man, to testify that which is wrong it shall be done unto him as he had thought to have done unto his neighbor, whatever it be, even unto the taking away of life, limb or member. And whosoever shall slander another, shall be liable to pay a fine of five pounds." In 1651 the same town enacted that "Noe Indian shall travel up and down, or carry any burthen in or through our town on the Sabbath day, and whosoever is found soe doing shall be liable to corporall punishment." In 1656 a woman was sentenced to pay a fine of £3, or stand one hour with a cleft stick upon her tongue, for saying that her husband had brought her to a place where there was neither gospel nor magistracy."

The Sunday laws were rigorously enforced. Daniel Baker of Easthampton in 1682 lost an ox, found it on a Sabbath morning and drove it to his barn. For this desecration of the Sabbath he was brought before the Court of Sessions, which was held at Southold in June, and by that tribunal was fined forty shillings and costs of court, which all amounted to nine pounds, three shillings and three pence. In addition to this he was obliged to give bonds in the penal sum of twenty pounds sterling, for his good behaviour until the following March!

The early records of Flatbush contain the following entry, dated 1659: Schout vs. Jan Klaesen, in Scheppens Court. Schout complained against the defendant for carting in buckwheat with his wagon and oxen on Sunday, contrary to the placards. Condemned to pay costs.

The town of Hempstead in 1650 passed an order imposing a fine upon every person who, "without just and necessary cause," should neglect to attend "public meetings on the Lord's Day, and public days of fasting, and thanksgiving, both forenoon and afternoon."

In 1674 it was enacted in Brookhaven "that Whereas, there have been much abuse profaning of the Lord's Day by the younger sort of people in discoursing of vain things and running races; therefore we make an order that whosoever shall do the like again, notice shall be taken of them and be presented to the next court, there to answer for their faults and to receive such punishment as they deserve; whereas, it have been too common in this town for young men and maids to be out of their father's and mother's house at unseasonable times of night; it is therefore ordered that whosoever of the younger sort shall be out of their father's or mother's house past nine of the clock at night shall be summonsed into the next court and there to pay court charges, with what punishment the court shall see cause to lay upon them except they can give sufficient reason for their being out late."

About 1699 the town of Brooklyn decreed "that no people shall pass on the Sabbath day,

unless it be to or from church, or other urgent and lawful occasions according to act of assembly, upon penalty aforesaid of fine and imprisonment." In the town of Flatlands the civil magistrates were required to be of the Reformed religion, and officers of the church were ex officio officers of the town.

In 1654 at Southampton, according to Prime, it was ordered that "if any person above the age of fourteen shall be convicted of lying, by two sufficient witnesses, such person so offending shall pay 5s. for every such default; and if hee have not to paye hee shall sit in the stox 5 hours." That the stocks were already provided is evidenced by an entry in 1648, as follows: "The 14th daye of November, ordered that there shall hereby be provided a sufficient payre of Stokes, John White having undertaken to make them." In 1651 a woman in that town was "sentenced by the magistrates for exorbitant words of imprecation to stand with her tongue in a cleft stick so long as the offense committed is read and declared. "In the system of alarms for calling the militia together in case of invasion in that town, it was ordered in 1667, that "if any pson soever shall psume to make any ffalse alarum shall for his or there Default pay twenty shillings or be severely whipt, and noe person pretend ignorance."

One of the most humorous outcomes of the Dutch laws is to be found in the following extract from Dr. Stiles. Denton's pond, it may be premised, has long been obliterated in Brooklyn.

Denton's pond was the subject of a curious contract about 1709, between its original proprietors, Abram and Nicholas Brower, and Nicholas Vechte, the builder and occupant of the old 1699, or Cortelyou, house. With the strong predilection of his race for canals and dikes and water-communications, old Vechte added the traits of eccentricity and independence. His house stood on a bank a few feet above the salt-meadow, at a distance of a hundred yards from the navigable waters of the creek. To secure access to them, from his kitchen door, Vechte dug a narrow canal to the

creek, but the ebb-tide often left his boat firmly sunk in the mud, when he wished to reach the city market with the produce of his farm. He therefore contracted with the Browers to supply him with water from their pond; and a channel was dug, in furtherance of his scheme, to a water gate, through which his canal was to be flooded. The old Dutch farmer was accustomed to seat himself in his loaded boat, while it was resting in the mud of the empty channel, and hoist his paddle as a signal to his negro servant to raise the gate. The flood soon floated his boat, and bore him out to the creek, exulting with great glee over his neighbors, whose stranded boats must await the next flood. The contract for this privilege, as well as another, by which Vechte leased the right to plant the ponds with oysters, are in possession of Mr. Arthur Benson.

In 1661 Easthampton passed a curious law that "No man shall sell his accommodation to another without consent of the town, and if any purchase he made without such consent he shall not enjoy the same." This seems to have been intended to prevent unwelcome strangers from getting even a night's lodging. On this question of the settlement of strangers all the eastern towns were decidedly careful and conservative. In 1648 Southampton decreed that "Thomas Robinson shall be accepted as an inhabitant and have a £50 lot

granted unto him; provided the said Thomas be not under any scandalous crime, which may be laid to his charge, within six months, and that he carry himself and behave as becometh an honest man." Again, Samuel Dayton was given similar consideration provided "that the said Samuel (being a stranger to us) were of good approbation in the colony he last lived in, and do demean himself well here for the time of approbation, namely, six months."

But these wanderings among these ancient by-paths of the laws of the island must cease. We may smile at some of them, and feel inclined to ridicule most of them; but they were all the honest outcome of a people's desire to so frame their daily lives as to win the most exact justice, man to man, and to bring about peace, order and the greatest amount of happiness and prosperity to each community. Early Dutchmen and pioneer Englishmen were alike in this, that they believed in law and order, that they loved God and kept His commandments, and they tried to shape their legislation by the Book which was a light unto their feet and a guide unto their path, and which was a much more potent and active factor in the daily life and thought and purpose of each community than it is in these passing days of ours.



CHAPTER X.

SLAVERY ON LONG ISLAND.

THERE is no doubt that the "institution," as they used to call it in the old ante-bellum days of negro slavery, was introduced into the New Netherland by the Dutch. Among the "freedoms and exemptions" granted by the West India Company in 1629 to whoever planted colonies in New Netherland was a clause stipulating that "the company will use their endeavors to supply the colonists with as many blacks as they conveniently can." Negro slaves were employed on the construction of Fort Amsterdam by Wouter Van Twiller, and in an appraisal of the company's property in 1639 the value of a negro slave was placed at 40 guilders, or about \$16 in modern currency. In 1650 it was decreed "that the inhabitants of New Netherland shall be at liberty to purchase negroes wheresoever they may think necessary, except on the coast of Guinea, and bring them to work on their bouweries," paying a small duty on each importation. In 1651 the average value of a negro slave was about \$100, and that price was paid at public auction in New Amsterdam. The Rev. Mr. Polhemus paid \$176 for a negro slave at an auction in 1664.

So far as can be seen the slaves held by the Dutch were humanely treated, although now and again we come across evidences of the existence of cruelty. Even as early as 1644 we read of laws being passed for the emancipation of negroes who by long service and good behavior had earned some mitigation of their terrible lot.

Under the English domination slavery not only flourished, but the laws against the negroes were made more stringent than ever. In 1683 it was enacted that "No servant or slave, either Male or Female shall either give, sell or trust any Commodity whatsoever during the time of their Service under the penalty of such Corporal Punishment as shall be ordered to be inflicted by warrant under the Hands of two Justices of the Peace of the County where the said Servant or Slave doth reside. And if any Person whatsoever shall buy of, receive from or trust with any Servant or Slave contrary to this Law, they shall be compelled by Warrant, as aforesaid, to restore the said commodity so bought, received or trusted for to the Master of such Servant or Slave and forfeit for every such offence the sum of £5. And if any Person whatsoever shall credit or trust any Servant or Slave for Clothes, Drink or any other Commodity whatsoever the said Person shall lose his Debt & be forever debarred from maintaining any writ at Law against the said Servant or Slave for any matter or thing so trusted as aforesaid. If any Servant or Slave shall run away from their Master or Dame, every Justice of Peace in this Province is hereby authorized & impowered to grant Hue & Cry after the said Servant or Slave, the Master or Dame having first given in Security for the payment of the Charges that shall thereby attend. And all Constables & inferior Officers are hereby strictly required & commanded authorized and empowered to press Men, Horses, Boats or

Pinnaces to pursue such persons by Sea or Land, and to make diligent Hue and Cry as by the Law required."

In 1730 another law concerning slavery was passed, which made the lot of the blacks peculiarly hard, their punishment for trivial offenses exceptionally severe, and even put obstacles in the way of their emancipation by kind-hearted owners. This law was one of the results of the so-called plot of 1712,—it is not certain that any plot really existed,—which developed a race riot wherein several whites were killed and the subsequent trial and execution of nineteen unfortunate negroes.

But that plot was as nothing compared to that of 1741, which has been classed as among the most noted of the popular delusions of America. On the 14th of March in that year some goods were stolen from the house of a merchant. Mary Burton, a girl of loose character, or rather of no character at all, an indentured servant of John Hughson, keeper of a tavern of poor repute on the East River opposite Brooklyn, told some one confidentially that the stolen goods were hidden in her employer's house. The news was soon carried to the authorities, and Mary was at once arrested and offered her complete liberty if she would confess all. She certainly confessed, and the prospect of liberty inspired her poor imagination to great efforts. Some at least of the stolen property was recovered, and Hughson and several others, black and white, were fully charged with the robbery. So far Mary's confessions did good service to the community. On March 18th, however, the Governor's house was found to be on fire, and then followed a series of conflagrations, each petty in itself, but with such steady recurrence that the fears of a negro plot, slumbering since 1712, became again aroused, and as usual vague and wild rumors soon fanned fear into desperation, and once this gained possession of the people all sense of justice was thrown to the winds. So it always has been in the history of the world. Mary Burton became a prime agent in the persecution of the

negroes which at once set in, and her outrageous stories were blindly accepted as evidence. The wild confessions of some of the white refuse of New York, and of negroes crazed by fear, added strength to her stories, and with the aid of the law a blind and cruel race war set in the details of which form one of the most revolting passages in the history of New York. Fortunately the story belongs to the annals of that borough and need not be gone into here. Suffice it to say that while the delusion lasted, from May to the end of August, 154 negroes were sent to prison, and of these 14 were burned, 18 hanged and 71 transported. In the same period 24 white people were arrested, four of whom were executed. For all this Mary received her freedom and £100 and was sent adrift on the world, so disappearing from our ken; and the good citizens, when they considered the work done, set apart the 24th of September as a day of thanksgiving for their escape from destruction. The result of all this was that the laws anent slavery were more rigorously enforced than ever and severe measures were adopted restraining still further the personal liberty of those unfortunate victims of colored skin and ignorant credulity.

Writing on the subject of "Slavery in New York," in the *American Magazine of History*, Mr. F. G. Martin said:

As colonists the English did not to any great extent follow in the lead of Sir John Hawkins, the great negro importer of the sixteenth century. Still we find many allusions to the traffic in the manuscript records of the Province of New York. Complaint was made by the Royal African Company, in 1687, that their charter had been infringed upon by the importing of negroes and elephants' teeth from Africa. It was announced, in 1720, that Captain Van Burgh had arrived from Barbadoes with four negroes; but that "Simon the Jew don't expect his ship from Guinea before late in the fall." "Negroes are scarce," says another informant, "but Captain Hopkins will sell one for £50, cash." Between 1701 and 1725 an annual average of less than 100 negroes was imported. The total number was

2,395, of which 1,573 were from the West Indies and 822 from the coast of Africa. In 1712 the list for Kings county showed 1,699 "Christians" and 298 slaves; Orange county, 439 whites and 41 slaves; Albany, 2,879 whites and 450 slaves; New York, 4,846 whites and 970 slaves. In 1723 there were 6,171 slaves in the Province in a total population of 40,564; in 1746, slaves 9,717, total 61,589; in 1774, slaves 21,149, total 182,247. Virginia, at this time, had about 250,000 slaves, or forty per cent. of the whole number in the colonies.

During the Revolutionary conflict slavery as an institution gave rise to considerable trouble on both sides. Both recognized the "institution," but the negroes seemed to see in the condition of affairs a chance for a change of masters, if not for entire freedom. As a result the newspapers of the time present us with many advertisements concerning runaway negroes both from the service of British officers and from civilians, and a number of these will be found in Onderdonk's "Revolutionary Incidents." Almost as soon as independence was accomplished a movement for abolition set in, and it was with reluctance that New York agreed to the continuance of the slave traffic until 1808. In 1794 the abolition societies of many of the States sent delegates to a convention in Philadelphia, and one of its results was the passage of an act in 1799 by the New York Legislature for the gradual abolition of the "black curse." It provided that any child born in the State after July 4 of that year should be free; but, if a boy, should remain in the service of his mother's owner until he was twenty-eight years old; if a girl, she was to remain in servitude until she was twenty-five. If the mother's owner did not care for this arrangement the child could be handed over to the Overseer of the Poor and treated by them in the same way as pauper children. It was also declared "lawful for the owner of any slaves immediately after the passing of this act to manumit such slave by a certificate to that purpose under his hand and seal." This was the beginning of the end, and by slow stages and various en-

actments the institution was steadily legislated against in New York until in 1827 it had no legal standing in the Empire State at all, and within her boundaries negro slavery was wiped out.

So far as Long Island is concerned, it is impossible to discover accurately the extent to which, in its beginning, the institution prevailed. On broad lines it may be asserted that each owner of the soil, as soon as he was wealthy enough, in early times bought at least one slave to aid in its cultivation, and that as wealth increased it became quite fashionable to have one or more negroes as domestic servants as well as farm hands. But we read at no time of entire dependence being placed, either for domestic or farm services, on slave labor; nor do we meet with the slightest signs of the existence of any of the great aggregations of slaves on the lands of individual landowners which marked the institution further to the south. An idea of this is given in the following list of slaves in Long Island, from a census of the State, which was taken in 1775:

BUSHWICK.

A list taken by Captain Francis Titus, of Bushwyck in Kings County, of the Slaves belonging to the Inhabitants of his District, viz.:

Owners' Names.	Males.	Females.
John Misroll	1	1
John Liequare	—	1
George Durje.....	1	1
Abraham Liequare	1	—
Folkert Folkertsen.....	2	2
William Bramebosch	2	1
John Rcsæveldt.....	1	—
Jacob Misroll	—	1
Nicholas Leferts	1	—
Catherine Leferts	—	—
Abraham Miller	—	1
Marritje Woertman.....	—	1
David Van Cots	1	—
Theodorus Polhemus.....	1	1
Samuel Barber.....	2	2
Jacob Durye	1	1
Peter Lot.....	—	1
Abraham Schenck	4	1
Evert Van Ge' der	—	1
Neclos Folkertsen	1	1
Andris Stucholm.....	—	1
Peter Censelve	—	1
Capt. Francis Titus.....	1	2

21 22

Capt FRANS TITUS.

BROOKLYN.

A list taken from the Negro's belonging to the Inhabitation, under the Command of Saml Hopson Captn of the West Company of Brookland in Kings County:

Negroes' Names.	To Whom Belonging
One Negro Man cald Francis ...	Isaac Sebring
Do Sambo....	
One Do Wench Judy.....	John Bargay
One Negro Man Cald Roger	
Do Harry	
Do Peter	
Do Josey	
Do Esquire ..	Derk Bargay
One Negro Wench cald Mary ...	
Do pegg.....	Simon Booram
One Negro Man cald Will.....	
Do Cezer.....	Cornel Sebring
One Negro Man cald prince.....	
One Negro Man cald Ceser	Saml Hopson
One Negro Man cald Dick	
Do Prince.....	Peter Van Pelt
One Do Wench Dine.....	
One Negro Man cald Robin.....	Micael Bargan
One Negro Man cald Tight	
One Do Wench Dine.....	Chrispr Seehar
One Negro Man cald Thom.....	
Do Jack.....	John Carpenter
Do Wench Bett.....	
One Negro Man cald Toney.....	Whitead Cornwell
Do Wench cald Mary...	
Do Tracey..	John Middagh
One Negro Man cald Tobey.....	
Do Wench cald Flora...	John Vandike
One Negro Man cald Ceaser	
Do Wench Jane.....	Clos Vanvaughty
One Negro Man cald James.....	
Do Wench Bett	John Griggs
One Negro Man cald Sam.....	
Do Thom.....	Israel Hosfield Junr
Do Wench Jane.....	
One Negro Man cald Clos.....	Peter Stots
One Negro Man cald Chalsey...	
One Negro Man cald Thom.....	Sam: De Bevoice
Do Wench Libe.....	
One Negro Man cald Harry.....	Mr Van Doune
Do Wench Frank.....	
Do Thom.....	Jacob Sebring
Do Wench Anne.....	
One Negro Man cald Harry.....	Abrm Brewer
Do Wench Phillis	
One Negro Man cald Coffe.....	Israel Hosfield
Do Wench Judy.....	
One Negro Man cald Tight	Jacob De Bevoice
One Negro Man cald Willing...	
One Negro Man cald France.....	Jacob Bennett
Do Wench Elizabeth ...	
One Negro Man cald Sam	Jery Bruer
Do Wench Dine.....	
Do Deyon	George De Bevoice
One Negro Man cald Prime.....	
One Negro Man cald Ceaser.....	Jury Bloue
Do Wench Lil.....	
One Negro Man cald Isaac.....	Winant Bennet

Negroes Names.	To Whom Belonging.
One Negro Man cald Jo	Mrs Vandike
Do Wench Jane	
One Negro Wench cald Jane....	Earsh Middagh
One Negro Man cald Harry.....	
Do Nease.....	Jacob Bruington
Do Dick.....	
Do Charles...	
Do Wench Peg	

43 Negro Men
24 Do Women

Total, 66

The above is a just account of Negroes to the Best of my knowledge belonging to the Inhabitants of the West Company of Brookland
SAML HOPSON.

The list of the Negroes both male and female Who Reside In the District of Capt. John Lott In Kings County in brucklen To Every Person belonging by name as foloing:

Christopher Codwise.....	2 male....	2 female
John Cowenhoven.....	4 male....	1 female
Martin Reyerse.....	1 male....	
Jeremias Remse.....	2 male....	2 female
Lammert Sudam.....	1 male....	1 female
John Lott		2 female
Jacobus Degraew.....	1 male....	1 female
Barent Jansen.....	1 male....	1 female
Jan Ryerse.....	1 male....	
Rem Remsen.....	1 male....	
Hendrik Sudam.....		1 female
Abram Remsen.....	1 male....	
Tuenes Bogaert.....	1 male....	
DW Sara Rapelie.....	1 male....	
Benjamin Waldron.....	1 male....	
Joost Debavois.....	1 male....	1 female
Jakes Durje	2 male....	2 female
Jan Noorstrant.....	1 male....	
Gerritt Noorstrant.....	1 male....	1 female
Jeronemus Rapelie.....	2 male....	1 female
Jacobus Lefferse	1 male....	2 female
Jacob bergen	1 male....	1 female
Pieter V D Voort.....		1 female
Karel Debavois.....	1 male....	2 female
Johanis Debavois.....		1 female
Jacobus Debavois	1 male....	1 female
Cornelis V D hoef.....	2 male....	
Arsus Remsen	1 male....	2 female
Adriaen Hegeman.....	1 male....	
DW Dina Rapalje	1 male....	1 female
John Rapalje	3 male....	2 female

A true Leist of the negroes male and female by me
1755 April 11. Capt JOHN LOTT.

FLATBUSH.

A true List of all the Slaves Both male and female of fourteen years old and above in the township of flatbush in Kings County on Nassaw Island in the Province of New Yorke this Eighteenth Day of April, anog Dom 1755.

SLAVERY ON LONG ISLAND.

123

Owners Names	Males	females	their names
Dominie Van Sindere	1	1	Isabel
Peter Stryker	1	1	Syne
John Stryker	2	1	Dyne
Johannes V: Sickelen	1	1	Lies
John Waldron	1	1	Kea
Doctor V: beuren	3	1	Saar
Barent V: Defenter	3	1	Graes
Barent Andriese	3	2	Bass. and Saar
Widdow Clarkson	1	1	Isabel
hendrick Suydam	1	1	Mary
David Sprong	3	1	Calleen
henry Cruger	2	2	Syne & Bett
Engelbart Lott	2	1	Wyne
Jacobus Lott	1	2	fills & Saar
Cornelis Van D: Veer	2	1	Syne
Johannes Ditmars	1	3	Eva: Bett & Wyntje
Laurens Ditmars	1	1	Dyane
Adriaen Voorhees	2	2	Emme & Susan
Rem Martense	1	1	Doll
Phillip Nagel	1	1	Libb
Phillip Nagel Junr.	1	1	Bett
Seytje V: D Bilt	1	1	Bett
Leffert Martense	1	1	Syne
Rem Hegeman	2	1	Syne
Evert hegeman	1	2	Dyne & Isabel
Peter Lefferts	1	1	Kea
John Lefferts	1	1	Isabel
Jeremyes V: D: bilt	2	1	Jane: Kouba: Mare & Diane
Adrian Martense	3	1	Bett
Antje Ver Kerck	1	1	Isabel
Cornelis V: D: bilt	1	1	Isabel
John V: Der Veer	1	1	Sale
Gerret Cozyn	1	1	Bett
Jeromus V: D: Veer	1	1	Mary
Steven Williamse	1	1	Lybe
Johannes Lott Junr.	1	1	Will
Isaac Snediker	1	1	Susan
Jacob Snediker	1	1	Bett
Gerret boerem	1	1	Dyne
Cornelis Wykhoff	1	1	fills
Abraham Bloom	1	1	Moryn & Lill
Jan boerem	1	1	Eva
Karel boerem	1	1	Isabel
Maurits Lott	1	1	Rachel
Douwe Ditmars	1	1	Jane
Johannes Elderts	1	1	
thomas Batts	1	1	
hendrick Lott	1	1	
Joseph houward	1	1	
harmpje Lefferts	1	1	
Rem V: D: bilt	1	1	

53
the total number 108

PETER STRYKER Capt of flatbush.

FLATLANDS.

A true list of all the Slaves both male and female from fourteen Years and upwards according to an act of assembly:

	Male.	Female.
John Schenck Captain of the said town....	1	1
John V. Der Bilt	1	1
Wilhelmus Stoothof Jur	1	1
harmanis hooglant	1	0
Roelif Van Voorhees Esqr	0	1
Wilhelmus Stoothof	0	1
Abraham Voorhees	1	1
Cornelius Voorhees	1	1

Steve Schenck	1	0
John Ditmars	0	1
Willem Kouwenhoven Esqr	1	1
Gerrit Kouwenhoven	0	1
John Amerman	2	1
Gerrit Wykof	1	1
Marten M. Schenck	0	1
Johannis Lott	2	2
Derrick Remsen	1	0
Johannis W. Wykof	2	1
Pieter Wykof	1	1
Joost Vannuis	0	1
	11	18

JAN SCHENCK, Capt.

GRAVESEND.

A List of the Negroes In the township of Gravesend Male and Female from the age of fourteen years and upward May 1, 1755:

	Males.	Females.
Richard Stillwell.....	2	2
John Grigg.....	2	1
John Voahears.....	2	1
Nicholas Stillwell.....	1	2
Roeliff terhunnen.....	1	1
Isaac Denyce.....	1	2
Samuel Garritson.....	1	0
Neelye Voorhears.....	1	0
Farnandus Van Sicklen.....	1	1
Nicholas Williamsen.....	1	1
James Hubbard.....	0	1
Daniel Lake.....	2	1
Cornelius Stryker.....	0	1
Fernandus van Sicklen.....	1	0
William Johnson.....	0	1
Peter Williamsen.....	0	1
Bengaman Steimets.....	0	1
Cort Johnson.....	1	0
	17	17

The totle Number of Males Seuteen

The totle Number of Females Seuteen

NEW UTRECHT.

A true list of all the Slaves of the Township of Newuytreght in Kings County:

Names of Masters.	The No. of each Man.	Male Sex.	Female Sex.
Petrus Van Pelt.....	3	2	1
Jacobus Van Nuys.....	2	1	1
Hendrick Johnsen.....	1	1	0
Heart Van foerhees.....	3	2	1
Jaques Cortelyou.....	2	1	1
Jaques Cortelyou Junior.....	2	1	1
Pieter Cortelyou.....	4	2	2
Deneys Deneys.....	8	4	4
Saartje Barkeloo.....	2	1	1
Thomas Van Dyck.....	1	0	1
John Laan.....	1	1	0
Casper Crapster.....	2	1	1
Gerrit Kounover.....	2	1	1
Gerrit Van Duyn.....	2	1	1
Willem Van Nuys.....	3	2	1
Willem Van Nuys Junr.....	1	0	1
Rutgert Van Brunt Junior.....	10	6	4
Evert Suydam.....	1	0	1
John Johnson.....	1	1	0
Rutgert Van Brunt.....	3	1	2
Andries Emans.....	2	1	1
Wilhelmis Van Brunt.....	1	1	0
Thomas Pollock.....	3	2	1
Roelof Van Brunt.....	1	1	0
Joris Lot.....	4	2	2
Neelye Pietersen.....	1	1	0
Rebecca Emans.....	1	0	2
	67	37	30

the whole number

PETRUS VAN PELT Captn.

HEMPSTEAD.

Hempsted in Queens County on Nissaw Island and in the province of New Yorck; accompt of the slaves brought in to George Everit Capt. within his Districts. April ye 28—anno. 1755.

Georg Rierson.....	3 mals	Seasor adom, Jack.....	1 female, Diannah
Cornelius Rierson.....	—	—	1 female—bet
Beniamin Dvsenbere.....	1 male—mike.....	—	2 famals, bess, pen
William Cornell.....	3 mals	been, Charls. Sam.....	1 female—nan
Hendrick Hendricksen.....	1 male	savl.....	1 female Gin
Thomas hendricksen.....	—	—	1 female Jvde
John ffoster.....	—	—	1 female—Gin
John : Montonye.....	1 male	Jack.....	—
Jacob Vollintine.....	—	—	1 female Greech
Beniaman Downing.....	—	—	1 female Elly
William Lines.....	3 mals	Dick, prince Eliiah.....	1 female peg
Thomas Seamons.....	1 male—Jack.....	—	—
Jonathan Vollintine.....	—	—	1 female Sarah
Sanvel Searing.....	1 male	franck.....	1 female Cate
Daniel Searing.....	1 male	tie.....	—
Jacob Searing.....	2 mals—Stephen—Lew.....	—	—
Jeams Smith.....	1 male	Yorck.....	—
Timothy Smith.....	1 male	Robbin.....	1 female—nan
Ellixander Davorson.....	2 mals—tom—robbin.....	—	—
John Cornell.....	1 male	Lew.....	2 famals, hannah, Diannah
David Allgoe.....	3 mals,	David, pero Jack.....	2 famals Janna nanot
Sarah Seamons.....	2 mals	Jack—peter.....	2 famals—Dinah post
Robbard Marvil.....	3 mals	Ciah lonnon, hithro.....	1 female Dosh
John Smith.....	—	—	1 female mander
peter titvs.....	3 mals	will Jefroy—bob.....	2 famals sib pendor
John Combs.....	—	—	1 female—nan
beniamin Smith Jeams }	3 mals	Corso oxford John.....	1 female pendor
Smith and Richard Smith }	—	—	—
Richard Titvs.....	1 male	Jeffre.....	1 female—bet
Vriah plat.....	1 male	waterford.....	1 female Gin

John Townsend.....	2 mals	Jack ned.....	1 female	Gin
Richard townsand.....	1 male	Lew.....		
phebe mot.....	1 male	Ciah.....	1 female	pendor
John Petors.....	1 male	York.....		
Epenetos plat.....	1 male	Lve.....		
Ambros fish.....	2 mals	Jack—bendo.....	1 female—ame	
Samvel willis.....	2 male tie.....		1 female—hagor	
Richard Williams.....	1 male	sam.....	1 female	
John Williams.....	1 male	savl.....		
William Titvs.....	1 male	Jeams.....	1 female—francis	
mary titvs.....	1 male	Cato.....	1 female	Nancy
Stephen titvs.....	1 male—ben.....		1 female	Gin
Josiah Martin.....	3 mals	papav Jack sackoe above 60 years old	3 famals present, Jemina and nab	
George hvlit.....	1 male	Jacob.....	1 female	Jydc
John Smith.....	2 mals	Dick—Stephen.....	1 female—hannah	
John Searing.....			1 female	Chat
Samvel Rowland.....	1 male	harre.....		
John hicks.....	1 male	Charls.....	1 female—Gin	
Jacob Smith.....	2 males—will—tom.....		2 famals, biblor—bet	
Isaac Smith.....	1 male	seasor.....	1 female—peg	
Ephraim Vollingtine.....	1 male	peter.....		
Elisabath titvs.....	1 male	Gem.....	1 female—Sarah	
Charls petors.....	2 mals	peter—tie.....	1 female—rose	

A List of the Negro Indian and Mullatta Slaves within the District whereof Benjamin Smith is Captain at Hempstead in Queens County taken the first Day of April 1755:

	Male.	Female.
Jacob Hicks Esqr.....	1	2
Jacob Hicks Junr.....	1	1
Thomas Hicks.....	—	1
Phebe Hicks.....	—	1
James Mott.....	—	1
Daniel Hewlet Junr.....	1	1
John Cornell.....	2	2
Joseph Scidmore.....	—	1
Thos Cornell Esqr.....	1	2
Capt Brown.....	6	1
Richard Cornell.....	1	1
Benja Lewes.....	—	1
Henry Mott.....	1	
Vall : Hewlet peters.....	1	1
Elias Durlum.....	1	1
Eldard Lucas.....	1	1
Jacobus Lawrence.....	—	1
Elias Durlum ye 3d.....	—	1
Abraham Bond.....	—	1
	17	21

P : BENJAMIN SMITH Capt

A List of the Slaves Male and Female above 14 years of Age An Account of which has been brot in to Capt. John Birdsall, for his District in the Township of Hempstead in Queens County, according to the late Act of Assembly:

Owners Names.	Males.	Females.
The Revd Mr Seabury.....	1	1
Benjn Lester.....	2	0
Jerm Bedell.....	1	1

Owners Names.	Males.	Females.
Benjn Hewlett.....	1	1
Josh : Birdsall.....	1	1
Sohn Seaman.....	2	1
James Pine.....	1	1
Benjn Smith.....	3	1
Leffurt Haugewout.....	1	0
Wid : Lininton.....	1	0
Elias Durland Junr.....	1	0
Richard Jackson.....	3	2
Joseph Petit Junr.....	1	1
Thos Tredwell.....	2	1
Jno Carman.....	1	1
Saml Jackson.....	3	2
John Rowland.....	1	0
Thos Seaman.....	0	1
Thos Seaman Junr.....	0	1
James Smith.....	1	1
Jacob Seaman Esqr.....	2	2
Cornell Smith.....	1	0
Patrick Mott.....	1	0
Danl Hewlett.....	0	1
Thos Carman.....	2	1
Jno Jackson.....	1	1
James Seaman.....	1	1
Jno Hall.....	1	0
James Smith Junr.....	1	1
Danl Smith.....	1	0
Daniel Smith.....	1	0
John Grissman.....	1	0
Anthony Semans.....	1	0
Daniel Pine.....	1	0
Benj : Carmon.....	0	1
Richard Suthard.....	1	1
Males.....	43	
Females.....	26	

69

May it please yr Honr

This is a true account of what has been brot in to me

Sr yr most humble & obedient Servt

Hempstead }
April 5th 1755 } JOHN BIRDSALL.

NEWTOWN.

Newtown, May 1st, 1755.

A List of Negroes Male and Female According to the Act of Assembly of the Province of New York taken by me

JEROMES RAPELYE.

	Males.	Females.
Jeromes Rapelye	0	1
Cornelius Rapelye Esqr	1	1
Jacobus Lent	1	1
John Rapelye	1	1
John De Bevoyce	1	3
Jacob Rapelye	1	1
Daniel Rapelye Senr	1	1
Joseph Moore Esqr	0	1
Bernardis Bloom	1	0
Daniel Rapelye Junr	1	1
Nathaniel Fish	2	1
John Levirich	1	0
William Furman	1	1
Samuel Waldron	1	1
Philip Edsal	2	3
Elizabeth Pumroy	2	1
Robert Coö	1	1
Robert Field Senr	0	1
Abraham Brinkerhoff	2	1
Hendrick Brinkerhoff	1	0
Samuel Fish Junr	2	1
Dow Sidam	0	1
Joseph Morrel	1	0
Edward Titus	0	1
Nathaniel Bailly	0	1
Abraham Rapelye	1	2
Samuel Fish Senr	2	4
Abraham Polhemus	0	1
Gabriel Furman	1	0
Revd Simon Horton	2	1
John White	2	1
Widow Titus	1	0
William Sackett Esqr	1	1
Joseph Woodard	2	0
Samuel Moore Esqr	1	1
Samuel Moore Lieut	1	0
John Moore	1	0
Samuel Moore son of Joseph Moore Esqr ..	1	0
Benjamin Waters	1	2
Sarah Burrows	1	1
Cornelius Berrian Esqr	0	2
Jeromes Ramsen	1	1
Rem Ramsen	1	1
Total	44	43
Males 44 Total		
Females 43 —		

26th May 1755.

List of Negroes in Queens County sent by Jacob Blackwell.

Jacob Blackwell	2 Male	1 female
Joseph Sacket	3 Det	2 Det
Samwell Hallett	2 Det	1 Det
George Vannolst	1 Deto	—
Nathon More	1 Det	—
Samwell More	1 Det	1 Det
Richard Hallett	1 Det	—

Richard Hallett Jen	1 Det	—
Jacob Hallett	1 Det	1 Det
Robert Hallett	1 Det	—
Necolos parsel	2 Det	1 Det
John parsel	1 Det	—
Samwell Hallett Jen	1 Det	—
Tunus Brinkkerhouf	1 Det	—
Georg Brinkkerhouf	—	1 Det
Samwell Hallett minor	1 Det	—
Peter Borgow	—	1 Det
Isack Borgow	1 Det	3 Det
Isack Borgow jen	2 Det	1 Det
Richard Alsop	3 Det	3 Det
Beniamin Skillman	1 Det	—
Abraham Skillman	1 Det	—
Isack Lott	1 Det	1 Det
Samwell Allburtes	1 Det	—
Samwell Goslen	1 Det	—
Dannel Bets	1 Det	—
Richard penfold	2 Det	—
Jacob Bennet	—	1 Det
Samwell Scuder	1 Det	—
Johnnathon Hont	1 Det	1 Det
Whillem Bets	1 Det	1 Det
Samwell Way	1 Det	2 Det
Tunus Skank	1 Det	2 Det
Richard Bets	2 Det	3 Det
Jeams Way	2 Det	1 Det
Joseph Bets	2 Det	—
Andros Reiker	2 Det	1 Dt

OYSTER BAY.

A List of ye Slaves Delivered unto me, of the Eastern District of Oisterbay, Pursuant to the Direction of an act of his Honour the Lieutenant Governour the Council and General Assembly of the Colony of New York. Oisterbay April 24th, 1755.

JACOB TOWNSEND.

Masters & Mistresses Names	Nom males	Nom females
George Townsend	1	1
Obediah Seaman	—	1
Thomas Seaman	1	—
John Powell	1	1
James Tillott	1	—
Melanthon Taylor Woolsey	1	2
Benjamin Birdsall	1	—
Metice Lane	1	—
George Weekes	1	1
Samuel MacCoune	1	—
William Hawxhurst	—	1
Simon Cooper	2	2
Henry Whitson	1	1
John Cock	—	2
Cornelius Hogland	1	1
Daniel Duryea	—	1
Joseph Cooper	3	1
George Youngs	1	1
John Wootman	—	1
Thomas Smith	3	1
Sarah Ludlam	1	—
Ezekel Shadbolt	—	1
John Townsend	1	1
Samuel Townsend	1	1
Silas Carman	1	—

Masters & Mistresses Names	Non males	Non females
Thomas Youngs	2	1
Daniel Birdsell	1	
John Schunk		1
William Jones	2	2
Isaac Powell	1	1
Isaac Doty		1
Nathaniel Townsend Estate	1	1
Richard Willits	—	1
Samuel Waters	—	1
Samuel Willis	2	1
Minard Vansyckley	1	
Wright Coles	1	1
Charles Ludlam	—	1
Richard Alsop	1	1
Zuroiah Wright	1	
William Moyles	2	—
Henry Townsend	1	3
Sarah Wright	1	
John Robbins	1	
David Jones Esqr	6	1
Henry Lloyd Esqr of Queens Village	5	3
Total	53	11

Capt. Wright Frost's List of Slaves in Oyster Bay:

Wright Frost	1 male	1 Female
Micajah Townsend	2 males	2 Females
Amos Underhill		1 Female
Henry Cock	1 Male	1 Female
Thomas Rushmore	1 Male	2 Females
Daniel Underhill	2 males	1 Female
James Sands	3 Males	1 Female
Thomas Bound	1 Male	
Jacob Bound		1 Female
Thoms Kirbe	1 male	
George Townsend	1 Male	
Silvenus Townsend	1 Male	1 Female
Hezekias Cock	1 male	
Adrian Hagaman	1 Male	1 Female
Willm Frost	1 Male	1 Female
Meribah Townsend	1 Male	1 Female
John Semicon		1 Female
Willm Larence	1 Male	
Benjamin Wolsey	2 Males	2 Females
Daniel Cock	2 males	
Jacob Frost	2 males	1 Female
Joseph Frost	1 Male	1 Female
Deborah Cock	1 Male	1 Female
Derick Alderson	1 male	
John Striker	1 Male	
Joseph Hagaman	1 Male	1 Female
Joseph Coles		1 Female
Joseph Lattin	1 male	
Willm Walton	5 Males	2 Females
Peter Hagaman	1 Male	
Abraham Underhill	1 male	1 Female
Samll Underhill	1 male	1 Female
Thoms Underhill	1 male	1 Female
Henry Dickenson	1 male	1 Female
Townsend Dickenssen	1 male	1 Female
Jacob Volingtine	1 male	1 Female
Thoms Parsall	2 Males	1 Female
Joseph Wood	1 Male	
Benjamin Wolsey Junr	3 Males	1 Female
Jean Caverly	1 male	

William Kerby.....1 Female
 Daniel Coles.....1 Male
 John Anderson.....1 Female
 Timothy Townsend.....2 Males 1 Female
 Hannah Frost.....1 Male

may it please your Honnourin Compliance with an act of the Generall Assembly & in obedience to your Honnours Command I transmit an accompt of ye negroes in that part of ye Town that is Aderest to me I wait your Honnours further Commands and shall with the utmost pleasure obey & I remain your Honnours most Humble and obedient servant

WRIGHT FROST

Oysterbay April 29
 1755

A List of the Slaves Delivered in unto me by Virtue of An Act of ye Legislature of the Province of New York By the persons hereafter named (viz.):

	Male	Female
David Seaman at Jericho within ye Township of Oyster bay	—	2
Obediah Vallentine at ye North Side In ye Township of Hempsted	2	—
Samuel Seaman at Westbury in Oyster Bay	—	1
William Crooker at Wheatly in Oyster bay	1	—
William Willis at Cederswamp In Oyster Bay	2	—
Jonathan Seaman at Jericho in Oyster Bay	—	1
Sarah Titus at Wheatly in Oyster Bay	1	
Phebe Townsend at Jericho in Oyster Bay	—	1
James Townsend at Jericho in Oyster bay	2	
Jacob Titus at Wheatly in Oyster Bay	1	1
Silas Rushmore near Jericho in Oyster Bay	1	
Daniel Youngs near Oysterbay	1	—
Thomas Vallentine Junr at ye East Woods In Oyster Bay	—	1
Robert Seaman at Jericho In Oyster bay	1	1
Zebulun Seaman at Jericho in Oyster bay	1	1
William Seaman at Jericho in Oyster bay	1	1
Thomas Jackson at Jericho in Oyster Bay	1	—
John Hagewout at Jericho in Oyster Bay	1	—
Jown Hewlet at ye East Woods in Oysterbay	—	1
John Hewlet Jur at ye East Woods in Oysterbay		1
Robert Crooker at Wheatly in Oysterbay	—	1

Jericho in Oysterbay April ye 25th 1755.

To the Honorable James Delancee Esqr his Majesties Lievtanant Governour and Commander in Chief In and Over ye province of New York and Teritorys Thereon Depending In America &c:

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONOR

Whereas there is Sundry free Negroes Melattoes and Mustees Residing within ye Township of Oysterbay that may probably Be Likely In case of Insurrections To be as Mischievous as ye Slaves, Therefore I Thought it my Duty to Acquaint Your Honor Therewith; The following is a List of them Resideing in and about ye Village of Jericho, and I Do Expect that ye Other Captains in Oysterbay will acquaint your Honour of Those Resideing in ye Other parts of ye Township; from Your Very Humble Servant

ZEBULUN SEAMAN.

April ye 25th 1755.

A List of ye Free Negroes Mustees &c:
Residing at ye Severall places hereafter Dis-
cribed (viz.):

	Males.	Females.
David Seaman at Jericho In Oyster Bay...	1	—
Obediah Vallentine at ye North Side in Hempsted..	1	1
John Willis Junr at Westbury in Hempsted.	1	—
Elizabeth Titus at Westbury in Hempsted.	1	—
John Williams at North Side in Hempsted.	—	1
Richard Willets at Jericho in Oyster bay..	1	—
Jeremiah Robbins at Jericho in Oyster bay.	1	—
Total.....	6	2

HUNTINGTON.

Aprill the 12th 1755 Negroes Belonging
to Huntington male & Female:

Capt Isaac Platt.....	one female
Capt Platt Conklin	one male and one female
Doctor Zopher Platt	four males and two females
Mr Ebenezer Prime	two males and one female
Justice Eliphilet Wickes..	two males and two females
Just Jonas Williams.....	
Lievt thomas Jervis	one female
Nathan Volentine.....	one female
Solomon Ketcham	one male
Thomas Brush.....	one male and one female
David Rogers.....	one male
Widow hanah Wood.....	one female
Nathaniel Ketcham	one male
Philip Ketcham.....	one male
Samuel Brush.....	one male
Joseph Ridgeway.....	one male and one female
Denis Right.....	one male and two females
Benijah Jervis.....	one male and one female
Doctor Gilbert Potter.....	one male
Nathl Williams.....	one male and one female
azariah Wickes.....	one male and one female
thomas Bunce.....	one male
Joseph Freland.....	one male
Benjamin Right.....	one male
Philip Vdle	one male
Josiah Smith	one female
Just Moses Scudder.....	one female
John Samis.....	one female
Israel Wood.....	one female
Robert Brush	one male
Epenetus Conklin.....	one male and one female
John Wood Levth.....	one male
Capt Alexander Br.	one male
Epenetus Platt	one female
Timothy Scudder.....	one male and one female
Joseph Smith.....	one male and one female
Isaac Ketcham.....	one male
James Smith	two males
Philip Wickes.....	one male and one female
Alexander Smith.....	one male
timothy Carl Jr.....	one female
Daniel Blackly	one male
Jesse Carl.....	two males and one female
thomas Rogers.....	one male and one female
Bridget Scudder.....	one male
Timothy Carle Sen.....	one male & one female
Zopher Rogers.....	one male
Augustin Bryan	one male

Macy Lewis.....	one female
Mary Platt.....	two females
Simon fleet.....	one male
William Hawxhurst.....	one male one female
Cap John Davis.....	one male
Livt Joseph Luis.....	one male one female
Thomas Denis.....	one female

A True List &c.

ISAAC PLATT
PLATT CONCKLIN
ALEXR BRYANT.

SMITH TOWN AND ISLIP.

A List of Slaves Within the District of
Captain Job Smith or In the Townships of
Smith Town and Islip:

	Males.	Females.
George Norton.....	one 1	0
John Mobrey	one 0	1
Charles Floyd	five 4	1
Obadiah Smith Junr.....	one 1	0
Edmund Smith.....	six 4	2
Richard Smith.....	seven 4	3
Obadiah Smith sener.....	three 2	1
Lemuel Smith.....	one 1	0
Richard Smith Stonebrook.....	one 1	0
Otheniel Smith.....	one 1	0
Isaac Mills.....	one 1	0
Jonas Platt	one 1	0
Zephaniah Platt	four 1	3
Jonas Mills.....	one 1	0
William Sexton.....	one 0	1
Solomon Smith	five 3	2
Floyd Smith.....	three 2	1
Mary Tredwell	six 5	1
Robert Arter	one 1	0
Richard Blidenburge.....	two 1	1
Stephen Smith.....	one 0	1
George Phillips.....	.... 0	1
Job Smith.....	six 3	3
Joseph Vondel.....	two 1	1
Andrew Tid.....	one 0	1
Thomas Smith.....	three 2	1
Anna Willis.....	two 1	1
Rebeckah Willis.....	two 1	1
Richard Willis.....	two 1	1
Obadiah Smith	two 1	1
Daniel Smith Juner.....	one 0	1
Daniel Smith.....	four 2	2
Epenetus Smith	one 1	0
David Bruester.....	one 1	0
Wiliam Nicols	six 5	1
Elnathan Wicks	one 0	1
Caleb Smith.....	one 1	0
Jonathan Mills.....	two 1	1

The above Account Is a true List of all the Slaves as
Came to my knowledge.

Job SMITH Captain.

In 1698, according to returns then made,
there were 113 negro slaves in Flushing, 83
in Southampton and 41 in Southold; in 1723
there were 444 slaves in Kings county, 1,123
in Queens and 975 in Suffolk. In 1727 the

numbers were: Kings, 563; Queens, 1,311; Suffolk, 1,090. In 1771 a return issued by Governor Tryon shows the following: Kings, 1,162 blacks; Queens, 2,236; Suffolk, 1,452. These figures are very likely only approximately correct, and are more likely to be under rather than over estimates. They are near enough to absolute correctness to enable us to see that the "institution" was steadily increasing in number; but the proportion to the white population remained about the same all through.

It would appear that from the passage of the act of 1799 the manumission of slaves on Long Island became a matter of comparatively common occurrence. The following is copied from the Corporation Manual of 1864:

From the manner in which manumission was effected, it would seem that precautions were taken by the local authorities against the slaves liberated under the act from becoming paupers and chargeable upon the public, beyond any prescribed in the act itself. Thus the manumission of any slave must be approved by the Overseers of the Poor, who specified in their certificate that the slave was under fifty years of age, and was likely to be self-supporting. It is to be inferred, therefore, that the manumission of slaves over that age, or such as were decrepid or incapable of providing for themselves, was not permitted. The following instrument, whereby the well-known brothers John and Jacob Hicks (after whom Hicks street has been designated), manumit a female negro, is nearly identical in form with all the deeds of manumission which were executed by the citizens of Brooklyn, and the originals of which are still on file in the official archives of the City Hall:—

Be it remembered, this twentieth day of May, one thousand eight hundred and eleven, I, Jacob M. Hicks, of Brooklyn, in Kings County and State of New York, owner of a female slave named Gin or Jane, do in conformity to the benevolent act of the Legislature of this State, passed the twenty-ninth day of March, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, manumit and set free the said female slave named Gin or Jane, and do hereby relinquish all right, title, claim and demand to her person and her services. In witness

whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and date first written.

JACOB M. HICKS, [L. S.]
JOHN M. HICKS, [L. S.]

In the presence of
JOHN COLE,
WILLIAM FOSTER.

—
We, the subscribers, overseers of the poor for the town of Brooklyn, in the County of Kings, have examined the said Jane or Gin, and find her under fifty years of age and of sufficient ability to gain a livelihood, and we do approve of said manumission, and do allow the same to be recorded.

Brooklyn, 28 May, 1811.

ANDREW MERCEIN,
WILLIAM HENRY.

Subjoined is a list of some of the persons who liberated slaves owned by them, in compliance with the law above quoted, with the date and the witnesses who attested the act. It by no means includes all who had been held and who then manumitted slaves, but it will be found to contain very many representatives of the leading families of the city, and some of the signers of these grants of Emancipation are yet living among us. Under the provisions of the act, as carried out without any apparent reluctance on the part of the citizens interested, the institution gradually and almost imperceptibly disappeared. The following is the list:

On the 4th of September, 1820, Anna Vanderbilt manumits and sets free her female slave named Margaret, aged about 16 years. Witnesses, John Spader, John Sutphine.

On the 24th of March, 1821, John Ryerson, Jun'r., Tunis Johnson and Isaac Cornell, Jun'r., Ex'rs. of Leffert Ryerson, deceased, manumits and sets free a colored male slave of the late Leffert Ryerson named Samuel, aged about 25 years.

On the 10th of May, 1821, Agnes Rappelyea manumits and sets free her colored male slave named Anthony, aged about 30 years. Witness, Chas. F. Rappelyea.

On the 28th of May, 1821, Leffert Lefferts manumits and sets free his colored male slave Henry, aged 33 years. Witness, Marie Lefferts.

On the 7th of July, 1821, Adriance Van Brunt manumits and sets free his female slave

named Sude, aged about 35 years. Witnesses, Teunis S. Barkelow, Gabriel Leverich.

On the 7th of July, 1821, Adriance Van Brunt also manumits and sets free his male slave named Jack, aged about 44 years. Witnesses, Teunis S. Barkeloo, Gabriel Leverich.

On the 12th of September, 1821, Jacob Ryerson manumits and sets free his male slave named William, aged about 33 years. Witnesses, James Degraw, Teunis S. Barkeloo.

On the 22d of March, 1820, John Ryerson, Jun'r., manumits and sets free his slave Francis Thompson, aged under fifty years. Witness, Clarence Sackett.

On the 30th of June, 1820, Jeremiah Remsen manumits and sets free his female slave named Nancy, aged about 31 years. Witnesses, Wm. R. Dean, Fulkert Bennet.

On the 1st of August, 1820, Selah S. Woodhull manumits and sets free his female slave named Fanny, aged about 28 years. Witnesses, Sarah Maria Van Brunt, Mary Herry.

On the 29th of August, 1820, Garreta Polhemus, single woman, manumits and sets free her female slave named Betsey, aged about 24 years. Witnesses, Joseph Dean, Henry Dean.

On the 9th of August, 1820, Theodorus Polhemus manumits and sets free his female slave named Hannah, aged about 40 years. Witnesses, William R. Dean, Henry Dean.

On the 14th of May, 1820, Jacob M. Hicks manumits and sets free his female slave named Hannah, aged about 23 years. Witnesses, Henrietta Hicks, John Dean.

On the 30th day of June, 1820, Jeremiah Remsen manumits and sets free his colored female slave named Nancy, aged about 31 years. Witnesses, Wm. R. Dean, Fulkert Bennet.

On the 1st of May, 1818, Jeremiah A. Remsen manumits and sets free his slave named Susan Dean, aged about 24 years. Witnesses, Clarence D. Sacket, Grenville A. Sackett.

On the 13th of April, 1819, Richard Berry manumits and sets free his slave named Peter Cornelison, under forty-five years of age. Witness, Clarence D. Sackett.

On the 30th of April, 1819, Margaretta Duffield manumits and sets free a slave named Hamilton Smith, aged under 40 years. Witness, William Wager.

On the 2d of July, 1819, Thorne Carpenter manumits and sets free his slave Phillis Simmons, aged under 45 years. Witness, F. C. Tucker.

On the 16th of May, 1820, Cornelia Cornell manumits and sets free her slave named Harry, aged about 36 years. Witnesses, Catherin A. Cluser, Samuel P. Dunbar.

On the 16th of May, 1820, John C. Freeke manumits and sets free his slave named Titus, aged about 21 years. Witnesses, William R. Dean, John Dean.

On the 21st of May, 1819, George Towers Junior manumits and sets free his female slave named Abigail Porter, aged under 45 years. Witnesses, John Lawrence, Grenville A. Sackett.

On the 22d of September, 1817, Jacob Cowenhoven manumits and sets free his female slave Elizabeth Anderson, aged about 28 years. Witnesses, Clarence D. Sacket, Grenville A. Sackett.

On the 20th of December, 1817, Leffert Lefferts manumits and sets free his female slave named Mary McDennis, aged under 45 years. Witnesses, James Foster, Jacob Smith.

On the 13th of January, 1818, Hezekiah B. Pierpont manumits and sets free his slave named John Lubin, aged about 21 years. Witness, Richard Lyon.

On the 16th of April, 1818, Jacob M. Hicks manumits and sets free his slave named Harry, aged 21 years. Witness, Alexd'r. Birkbeck.

On the 18th of April, 1818, John Doughty manumits and sets free his slave named James, aged about 25 years. Witness, Thomas J. Bartow.

On the 1st of May, 1818, Selah Strong manumits and sets free his slave named Susannah, aged about 31 years, and her daughters Susan, about 4 years old, and Louisa, one and one-half years old. Witness, James Strong.

On the 1st of February, 1817, John Bedell manumits and sets free his negro man slave named Harry, aged about 21 years. Witness, Wm. W. Barre.

On the 24th of March, 1817, Nicholas Luqueer manumits and sets free his female slave named Mary, aged about 22 years. Witness, Wm. W. Barre.

On the 9th of April, 1817, Christopher Codwise manumits and sets free his negro man named John Moore, aged about 38 years. Witnesses, James B. Clarke, Aimi J. Barbarin.

On the 6th of May, 1817, William Berry manumits and sets free his negro man named Anthony, aged about 23 years. Witness, Clarence D. Sackett.

On the 17th of July, 1817, John Cowen-

hoven manumits and sets free his male slave Fortune, aged about 25 years. Witness, Clarence D. Sackett.

On the 15th of July, 1817, Teunis J. Johnson manumits and sets free his negro slave named Andrew Hicks, aged about 34 years. Witness, Clarence D. Sackett.

On the 9th of September, 1817, Phebe Fox manumits and sets free her female slave named Betsey Phillips, about 18 years old. Witnesses, Stephen S. Voris and Erastus Washington.

On the 20th of May, 1814, James Thompson manumits and sets free his slave named Betsey, about 35 years old. Witness, P. H. Dickenson.

On the 2d day of July, 1814, Phebe Fox manumits and sets free her slave George Benson, aged about 20 years.

On the 15th of December, 1815, Theod's. Polhemus, Ex'r., manumits and sets free a black slave of John B. Johnson, deceased, about 40 years of age, named Harry. Witness, Charles J. Doughty.

On the 3d of September, 1816, John M. Hicks manumits and sets free his black slave named Phillis, aged about 26 years. Witness, John Duer.

On the 1st of February, 1817, Nich's. Luqueer manumits and sets free his black slave named Samuel, aged about 30 years. Witness, J. Harmer.

On the 4th of March, 1817, Garret Bergen manumits and sets free his black man named Briss, aged about 40 years. Witness, William R. Dean.

On the 10th of February, 1817, Jacob Hicks manumits and sets free his male slave named Benjamin Mott, aged about 27 years. Witness, William R. Dean.

On the 10th of September, 1813, Gideon Kemberly manumits and sets free his slave named Hannah Davis, aged about 25 years. Witness, John Garrison.

On the 20th of October, 1813, Phœbe Fox manumits and sets free her slave named Abraham Benson, aged about 21 years. Witnesses, Itheill Imrad, James B. V. Winkle.

On the 2d of April, 1814, Nehemiah Denton manumits and sets free his male slave named Townsend Cornelison, aged about 26 years. Witness, Elizabeth H. Sackett.

On the 13th of April, 1814, Teunis Tiebout manumits and sets free his slave named Hannah Bristoll, aged about 44 years. Witnesses, Teunis T. Johnson, Maria Cowenhoven.

On the 23d of April, 1814, Elizabeth Field

manumits and sets free her slave named Simon Hicks, aged 29 years. Witness, Ann Osborn.

On the 25th of April, 1814, John Jackson manumits and sets free his slave named Joseph Smith, aged about 34 years. Witness, James B. Clarke.

On the 27th of April, 1814, John Jackson manumits and sets free his slave named Sarah Miller, aged about 30 years. Witness, James B. Clarke.

On the 25th of May, 1812, Jacob Cowenhoven manumits and sets free his slave named Hager Hendrickson. Witness, Peter Cowenhoven.

On the 6th of June, 1812, Nicholas Luqueer manumits and sets free his slave named Hannah Titus. Witnesses, R. Barber, G. A. Cheeseman.

On the 10th of May, 1812, Margaret Elsworth manumits and sets free her slave named Betsey, aged 24 years. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 6th of August, 1812, Henry Hewlett manumits and sets free his slave named Jarvis Jackson, aged about 24 years. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 11th of July, 1812, Joseph Fox manumits and sets free his slave named Phittis Benson, aged about 39 years. Witness, Stephen S. Voris.

On the 12th of April, 1813, Nich's. Boerum manumits and sets free his slave named Diann^o Orange, aged about 40 years. Witness, William Furman.

On the 13th of April, 1813, Andrew Mercier manumits and sets free his slave named Cornelia Brown, aged about 30 years. Witness, John Cole.

On the 30th of June, 1806, Benj'n. Bird-sall also liberates and sets free his female slaves named Cornelia and Jane. Witness, Robert Rhoads.

On the 14th of April, 1807, John Middagh manumits and sets free his male slave named Harry. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 29th of October, —, James B. Clarke manumits and sets free his female slave named Bett. Witness, Daniel Rhoads.

On the 27th of January, 1810, Nicholas R. Cowenhoven manumits and sets free his negro man named Nero, his negro woman named Susannah, his negro boys Harry and James, and his negro girl named Sarah. Witness, Mathew Wendell.

On the 9th of October, 1809, Peter Clarke manumits and sets free his servant woman

named Hannah, ten years thereafter, on condition of her faithful services to himself and family during that time.

On the 20th of May, 1811, Jacob M. Hicks manumits and sets free his female slave named Gin or Jane. Witnesses, John Cole, William Foster.

On the 20th of July, 1802, Joseph Fox manumits and sets free his negro man named Jack. Witnesses, John Harmer, John Hicks.

On the 20th of March, 1806, John Wilson manumits and sets free his negro girl Hannah, aged 12 years, at the expiration of 14 years from the 1st of May next. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 22d of July, 1805, Samuel Bouton manumits and sets free his slave named Samuel Estell. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 27th of July, 1805, George Bennett manumits and sets free his slave named Jacob Lucas. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 3d of May, 1806, Cornelius Vanbrunt manumits and sets free his slave named Henry Hendrickson. Witnesses, Nichl's Luqueer, Wm. Cornwell.

On the 13th of June, 1806, Benj'n Birdsall manumits and sets free his female slave named Sarah. Witnesses, Adrian Van Brunt, John Doughty.

On the 1st of August, 1799, Charles Doughty manumits and sets free his man slave named Nicholas Doughty. Witness, John Doughty, Clerk.

On the same day Charles Doughty also liberates and sets free his female slave named Lucrecia Doughty. Witness, John Doughty, Clerk.

On the 18th of April, 1808, Joshua Sands manumits and sets free his servant girl called Bet, aged 18 years.

On the 28th of September, 1808, Benjamin Carpenter manumits and sets free his negro woman named Isabella Dimand. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 20th of October, 1808, John Leferts manumits and sets free his negro man Esop. Witness, John Doughty, Clerk.

On the 5th of December, 1808, Lewis Sands manumits and sets free his negro man named Ceasar. Witness, John Doughty.

On the 1st of January, 1802, Gilbert Van Mater manumits and sets free his negro woman named Dinah. Witness, John Van D. Water.

On the 4th of March, 1797, John Doughty

manumits and sets free his colored slave named Ceasar Foster, aged about 23 years.

On the 9th of January, 1798, Robert Hodge manumits and sets free his negro boy named Robert Hodge, aged about 16 years.

On the 3d of March, 1798, Jacob Hicks manumits and sets free his negro man named William, aged about 37 years.

On the 28th of February, 1799, Major John Cowenhoven manumits and sets free his negro man named Jacob, aged about 40 years.

On the 10th of April, 1799, John Van Nostrand manumits his negro woman named Sylvia, aged about 27 years.

On the 30th of September, 1799, John Jackson manumits and sets free forever his slave Titus.

On the same day John Jackson also liberates and sets free forever his slave Rachell.

On the 27th of July, 1882, Jacob W. Bennet manumits and sets free his colored male slave named Sharpe Miller, aged about 44 years. Witnesses, George Carpenter and David Carpenter.

On the 26th day of April, 1822, Ann Smith Robert Gröman, aged 38 years. Witnesses, John J. Albirt, Teunis Barkeloo.

On the 21st of September, 1822, Jeremiah Johnson manumits and sets free his colored female slave Betty, aged 26 years. Witnesses, Peter Stockholm, Teunis Barkeloo.

On the 11th of April, 1822, Peter Wyckoff manumits and sets free his colored man named Henry Hendrickson, aged about 28 years. Witnesses, Burdet Stryker, Teunis Barkeloo.

On the 1st of February, 1817, John Bedell manumits and sets free his negro man named Harry, now aged about 21 years. Witness, William W. Barre.

On the 4th day of September, 1823, Martin Schenck, Jr., manumits and sets free his colored man Amos Thompson, who was thirty-one years of age. The witnesses to the indenture of manumission are John Garrison and George Smith, Jun'r.

On the 15th of May, 1824, Henry Pope manumits and sets free his colored female slave Isabella Dennis, aged about 30 years. Witness, Richard Cornwell.

On the 19th of September, 1823, Samuel Ellis manumits and sets free his colored male slave Peter Franklin, aged about 30 years. Witnesses, A. B. Sclover, Mary Brower.

On the 31st of August, 1822, Richard V. W. Thorne manumits and sets free his colored

female slave Hannah, aged about 34 years. Witnesses, John Van Dyke, Teunis Barkeloo.

On the 28th day of December, 1821, John Ryerson, Jr., manumits and sets free his colored female slave named Bet, aged about 33 years. Witnesses, Teunis Barkeloo, Peter Stockholm.

On the 12th of September, 1821, Jacob Ryerson also manumits and sets free his male slave named Thomas, aged about 36 years. Witnesses, James DeGraw, Teunis S. Barkeloo.

On the 22d of September, 1821, Jacobus Lott manumits and sets free his male slave named Sam Johnson, aged about 32 years. Witnesses, Stephen S. Vooris, Teunis S. Barkeloo.

On the 28th of July, 1821, Jacob Cowenhoven manumits and sets free his female slave Mary Hendricksen, aged about 29 years. Witnesses, Peter Conover, W. W. Jackson.

On the 28th of December, 1821, John Ryerson manumits and sets free his female slave named Bet, aged about 33 years. Witnesses, Teunis Barkeloo, Peter Stockholm.

On the 30th of January, 1822, Abraham D. Bevois manumits and sets free his colored female slave named Nell, aged about 30 years. Witnesses, Jeromus R. Cropey, Joshua Talford.

The foregoing manumissions—and there were no doubt many others, the records of which are lost—removed the last traces of the institution from the City of Brooklyn.

While there is no doubt that slaves were bought and sold in the open market in Brooklyn in the early times, in the eighteenth cen-

tury the traffic in human chattels was so generally transacted in private that public sales, and especially sales at auction, became of such seldom occurrence as to be matters of comment. The last of these auction sales, so far as known, was that of four negroes belonging to the estate of the widow Haltje Rappelje of the Wallabout. The first of the recorded manumissions, before the passage of the act of 1799, was that of Cæsar Foster, a slave belonging to John Doughty. The deed was signed March 4, 1797, when Cæsar was twenty-eight years of age. Doughty was a member of the Society of Friends and in early life was associated with his father as a butcher in the Fly Market. In 1785 he helped to organize a fire company in Brooklyn and through that, like so many local "statesmen" afterward, seems to have made his entree into local politics. In 1790 he was one of the assessors of the town and six years later became town clerk, retaining that position for thirty-four years. In 1816, when the village of Brooklyn was incorporated, Doughty was named one of the trustees, and he continued to hold public office of one sort or another up to his death, May 16, 1832. He was a faithful and honest public servant, and it is said that while he was town clerk he recorded more manumissions than any other official. He lived to see the nefarious institution become completely a thing of the past in his home city.



CHAPTER XI.

EARLY CONGREGATIONAL AND PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES.

THE early Dutch colonists may be said to have brought their church with them when they settled in New Netherland. To these good, pious wanderers a place of worship was as necessary as a house; and we never find any settlement without also discovering some arrangement there for divine services, either the setting aside of a sufficient amount for a clergyman's ministrations or for the employment of a teacher and reader, or at least for securing the services of an authorized visitor to the sick, whose duty it also was to read the Scriptures to the people on Sundays.

The first church in the New Netherland was built in the fort at New Amsterdam by Governor Van Twiller in 1633. The credit of building the first church and also the second church on Long Island, however, belongs not to the Dutch but to the English settlers: not to the west end but to the east.

It is difficult with the evidence before us to determine beyond question whether the honor of building the first structure on the island for the worship of God belongs to Southold or Southampton. In a measure both these congregations were actually formed before their members left New England, and in their migration they simply brought with them their church organization and set it up, with their homes, as soon as they found an abiding place. Both towns were settled in 1640, both had a clergyman as a leader, both church buildings were authorized to be built in the same year. Southampton seems to have had its edifice completed first. But the organiza-

tion of the congregation at Southold can be dated a little further back and was apparently maintained intact during the migration. As the late Dr. John Hall, of New York, used to declare, a Presbyterian (or Congregational) church could meet equally in a garret as in a cathedral, could conduct its services with equal solemnity at the roadside or in a kitchen as in the grandest house made with human hand. This being true, the credit of primacy might be given to Southold. But it is a delicate question at the best, one which has exhausted the research, acumen and ingenuity of the local antiquaries and historians; and we may be pardoned from indicating any decided preference in this place. The subject will again be referred to in more detail in treating of the local story of these two ancient settlements. The ventilation of such knotty points in a general history is never conclusive, or satisfying, or profitable, and had best always be left as a pleasant theme for local discussion.

On October 21, 1640, the Rev. John Youngs organized a congregation at New Haven and at once with his flock passed over to Long Island, settling in Southold. Very likely Mr. Youngs had previously visited Long Island and made a selection of the territory on which his little colony was to locate. It was to be a patriarchal community, a little State ruled by the Church, for the voice of the Church was to be pre-eminent in all things and the Bible was to rule over civil as over spiritual affairs. No one was to be admitted to full citizenship, if admitted even to residential privileges, who was not a member "of

some one or other of the approved churches in New England." It was also thus decided at a General Court in 1643: "Nor shall any power or trust in the ordering of any civil affairs be at any time put into the hands of any other than such church members, though as free planters all have right to their inheritance and to commerce according to such grants, orders and laws as shall be made concerning same."

The first church was built upon a corner of an acre lot in the north end of the present Southold cemetery. We have no description of it, and doubtless it was a plain frame structure, with seats on either side of a central aisle for men and women, with cross seats at the rear for those who might wander that way, for those, in short, who had not attained the dignity of membership. The floor would be the natural soil, and the pulpit a box-like arrangement placed at the further end in the centre. The clerk or precentor had his seat at the bottom of the pulpit structure and in front was a long table around which sat the elders and from which the communion was dispensed. The building was not heated, even in the dead of winter,—at first, at all events; and from the nature of the town's constitution it was at once a town hall, and possibly a school-house, as well as sanctuary. There was apparently nothing fanciful or pretty about the architecture, or the internal arrangements, nothing in the way of interior or exterior decoration; but everything about it was substantial and honest as befitted its purpose, and the settlers put into it the very best material they had. We read that its four windows were made of cedar, an expensive and highly prized wood in those days, and which, when in course of time they were to be removed, were sold for no less than £3. In 1684 the primitive meeting-house was abandoned and a structure erected close by. The old church was not torn down, but at an appraised valuation of £30 (minus the cedar-wood windows) was turned over to the town and altered to the extent of having a sub-

terranean cell dug out in its centre. Very likely the entire internal fittings of the old meeting-house were transferred to the new. In 1699 the population of the town had so increased that it was necessary to furnish more seating capacity in the church, and the internal arrangements were altered somewhat so as to permit the erection of a gallery which would be devoted mainly to the occupancy of hired help, negro servants and children. The erection of this gallery cost the good people £17 10s 9d. As an evidence of the method and economy of those days it may be stated that when the work was completed the church authorities received from Samuel Clark, the contractor, four shillings for nails and lumber provided for him and which he had not found it necessary to use!

The second church was pulled down in 1761, and a larger and more commodious structure was erected on its site and fitted up in such a way internally that the various social distinctions of wealth and official position might be fully preserved in the arrangement of its pews,—rather a queer proceeding according to our modern notions for a church organization founded on Christian and democratic lines, but perfectly in keeping with the practice of all churches at the time, not only in old communities, but in those which had survived the first struggle with the wilderness and were introducing into their dwellings and their surroundings some of the features of "modern civilization." The fourth church was erected in 1803.

The Rev. John Youngs, the founder of this religious community, and during the last thirty years of his life its real head and most influential member, was a native of England. He was born about 1602 and is believed to have been a native of Norfolkshire and to have been engaged as a preacher in Hingham, in that county, where he married and six of his eight children were born. Being a nonconformist, he felt the effects of the religious intolerance of his time and made up his mind to emigrate to the shores of New England, then the hope

of the English Puritan. According to a passage in Drake's "Founders of New England," Youngs, with "Joan, his wife, aged thirty-four years, with six children,—John, Thomas, Anne, Rachel, Mary and Joseph,"—applied to the proper ecclesiastical authorities for permission to proceed to Salem "to inhabit." The request was refused. This was in May, 1637; but about a year later we find him safely located with wife and children at New Haven and engaged in "preaching the Word."

Of the personal history of Youngs little has come down to us. He seems to have combined in his make-up many of the qualities of the statesman with those of a minister. He was a Calvinist of the strictest school, and had no toleration for the doctrine that the church should be separated from the state; nay, he believed that the church was the state, that the two could not be separated without the church failing in its mission and the state becoming a Godless and an unwholesome thing. He believed in the acquisition of wealth, he bought as largely as he could of real estate in the township, and in all his policy and conduct he was in every way a pattern to his neighbors, an exemplary friend, a loyal member of a compact commonwealth, and a zealous and hard-working clergyman. He was a man of considerable learning and possessed a fair working library (valued after his death at £5), only one of the treasures of which is now extant,—*"the Writings of William Perkins, of Cambridge,"* the leading English exponent of Calvinism of his time—which is now preserved in the stores of the New Haven Colony Historical Society. He continued in the pastorate of the Southold church until his death, in 1672, and on the stone over his grave was engraved the following:

"Here lies the man whose doctrine life well
known
Did show he sought Christ's honour, not his
own;
In weakness sown, in power raised shall be
By Christ from death to life eternally."

Mr. Youngs' descendants continue to the present day to loom up prominently in Suffolk county history.

The death of Mr. Youngs occurred in the depth of winter (February 24) and it was impossible to begin in that season a hunt for a suitable successor. On the succeeding April 1, however, the people held a meeting at which it was "agreed that the inhabitants would provide themselves of an honest, godly man to perform the office of minister amongst them, and that they would allow and pay to the said minister sixty pounds sterling by the year."

Captain John Youngs, son of the deceased minister, was intrusted with the task of crossing over to New England "and use his best endeavor for the obtaining of such a man above mentioned to live amongst us," and for his trouble was to receive £5. His journey was not immediately successful, but in the following year he brought to Southold the Rev. Joshua Hobart, son of the Rev. Peter Hobart, of Hingham, Massachusetts, the first minister of that town and by whom it was named in honor of the Norfolk town from whence he came. Very likely the Youngs and Hobart families were neighbors in the old land. Joshua Hobart was born in England in 1629 and came to this side of the Atlantic with his parents in 1635. He was graduated at Harvard in 1650. After several years in Barbadoes he settled in London, England, until 1669, when he returned to America. At first he seems to have simply acted as "supply," possibly with the conscientious desire of making sure that his ministrations would be acceptable to the people before finally casting his lot in their midst. Changes of ministers were not then made as easily or as heartlessly and heedlessly as now, and an aged pastor was not expected to bow gracefully to the inevitable and make way for a younger man. In October, 1674, however, the period of trial was over, and Mr. Hobart was ordained to the charge. His salary was fixed at £80 a year, and four years later it was advanced to £100, and in addition he re-

ceived a gift of thirty acres of land "toward the North Sea" and some other pieces of real estate. He was also lodged in a dwelling which cost £100, so that altogether the good man's lot must be regarded as having fallen in pleasant places. So far as we may judge he took up most of the work and wielded much of the political influence of Mr. Youngs, but not by any means to the same extent, for he was not the pioneer patriarch, the father of the colony. His ministry was a successful one, however, and continued until the end of his life-long journey, February 28, 1716, and then his people summed up his virtues on his tombstone by saying "He was a faithful minister, a skillful physician, a general scholar, a courageous patriot, and, to crown all, an eminent Christian."

It was not until 1720 that the pastorate was again filled, when the Rev. Benjamin Woolsey was installed. He was a native of Jamaica, Long Island, and a graduate of Yale. For sixteen years he continued to hold forth at Southold and then he resigned and took up his abode on an estate which had been bequeathed to his wife by her father, John Taylor, at Glen Cove in Queens county. Woolsey renamed the property Dos-Oris (Dos Uxoris, a wife's gift), and Dosoris it has been called ever since. Notwithstanding his wealth, he did not abandon entirely his work as a minister, but continued to officiate in vacant pulpits as general pulpit supply wherever his services were needed until the end. He seems to have been a most lovable man, and his death, in 1756, was deeply regretted over a wide section of Long Island. Mr. Woolsey left Southold in 1736 and it was nearly two years later ere his successor, the Rev. John Davenport, was installed. The story of this man, which has been held to "form an important element in the history of the Long Island Churches," may be briefly summed up by saying that he was born at Stamford in 1710, was graduated from Yale in 1732, ordained minister of Southold in 1738, dismissed

in 1746, and afterward settled at Hopewell, New Jersey, where he died in 1755.

Regarding his ministry and the features that made it famous, we cannot do better than copy the details which are given in Prime's "History of Long Island:"

About two years after his settlement at Southold, Davenport became satisfied that God had revealed to him that his kingdom was coming with great power, and that he had an extraordinary call to labor for its advancement. He assembled his people on one occasion and addressed them continuously for nearly twenty-four hours, until he became quite wild.

After continuing for some time in exerting labors in his own neighborhood, he passed over into Connecticut, where the same spirit has been developed and was producing disastrous results in many of the churches. "He soon became animated by a famous zeal," says Dr. Miller, in his life of Edwards, "and imagining that he was called to take a special lead in the work, he began to set at naught all the rules of Christian prudence and order, and to give the most unrestrained liberty to his fanatical feelings. He raised his voice to the highest pitch in public services, and accompanied his unnatural vehemence and cantatory bawling with the most vehement agitations of body. He encouraged his hearers to give vent, without restraint, both to their distress and their joy, by violent outcries in the midst of public assemblies. When these things prevailed among the people, accompanied with bodily agitations, he pronounced them tokens of the presence of God. Those who passed immediately from great distress to great joy, he declared, after asking them a few questions, to be converts; though numbers of such converts, in a short time, returned to their old ways of living, and were as carnal, wicked and void of experience as ever they were. He openly encouraged his new converts to speak in public, and brought forward many ignorant and unqualified persons, young and old, to address large assemblies in his own vehement and magisterial manner. He led his followers through the streets singing psalms and hymns. He was a great favorite of visions, trances, imaginations and powerful impressions, and made such impulses and inward feelings the rule of duty for himself and others. He claimed a kind of prescriptive right to sit in

judgment on the characters of ministers, and, after examining them as to their spiritual right in private, would often pronounce them in his public prayers to be unconverted. Those who refused to be examined were sure to suffer the same fate. He made his prayers the medium of harsh and often indecent attacks on ministers and others, whom he felt disposed, on any account, to censure; and in his harangues he would inform the people that their ministers were unconverted, and tell them that they had as good eat ratsbane as hear an unconverted minister. On more than one occasion he publicly refused to receive the sacramental symbols, because he doubted the piety of the pastors. Congregations were exhorted to eject their ministers, and dissatisfied minorities were encouraged to break off and form new churches, and in this a number of congregations were greatly weakened and others nearly destroyed."

It is stated on good authority that he declaimed much against pride of dress, which he styled idolatry; and on one occasion, at New London, he kindled a large fire at a place previously designated, and calling upon his followers to come forward and destroy their idols, and not only many useless ornaments but numerous garments and other valuable articles were committed to the flames! In a like manner, under the guise of rooting out heresy, many books, and some of them of sterling excellence, such as Beveridge's and Flavel's works, were cast into the fire. Of his manner of preaching and the extravagant measures he pursued the following description is given by Dr. Bacon:

"He would work upon the fancy until they saw, as with their eyes, and heard, as with their ears, the groans of Calvary, and felt as the Popish enthusiast feels when, under the spell of music, he looks upon the canvas alive with the agony of Jesus. He would so describe the surprise, consternation and despair of the damned, with looks and screams of horror, that those who were capable of being moved by such representations seemed to see the gates of hell set open and felt as it were the hot and stifling breath, and the hell-flames flashing in their faces. And if by such means he would cause any to scream out he considered that as a sign of the special presence of the Holy Spirit, and redoubled his own exertion till shriek after shriek, bursting from one quarter and another in hideous discord, swelled the horrors of the scene."

"Although this deluded man," adds Prime, "did not enact his wildest extravagances in the churches on this (Long) island, yet even here his labors were productive of many unhappy results. Dissensions and divisions were produced in many congregations, the effects of which are visible at the present day (1845), and although much good was done and souls were hopefully converted, yet many prejudices against the work of grace were exerted and the enemies of the cross emboldened to blaspheme. It is due to the memory of Mr. Davenport to add that, after pursuing this disorderly course for a few years, he became deeply sensible of the error of his ways and published to the world an ingenuous confession in which he acknowledges that he 'had been influenced by a false spirit in judging ministers, in exhorting their people to forsake their ministry; in making impulses a rule of conduct; in encouraging lay exhorters, and in disorderly singing in the streets.'"

It is not likely that in the present day the conduct of Mr. Davenport would be regarded as being so fully liable to the censure which Dr. Prime and others have passed upon it. The Rev. Dr. S. D. Alexander, of New York, in a recent work describes him as "the brilliant and eccentric pastor of Long Island." While guilty of a few extravagances, due to the time and circumstances, his course was hardly different from that of many of our modern evangelists; and it is easy to recall conduct very similar to his which has been applauded in these modern days, and by no class more heartily than by the clergy—the modern clergy—themselves. It is no longer the fashion to sneer at lay exhorters; and while we seldom hear of ministers sitting in judgment on their fellows the records of almost each presbytery furnish evidence that the practice has not altogether fallen into disuse. At the same time, in a settled community, in a deeply religious community like Southold, a community anchored to the cool and merciless logic of Calvinism, we are not surprised to find that Davenport's sensational methods were

not congenial, and to find that most of his wild work was done elsewhere. But even in Southold his performances caused trouble, and we learn that its effects hampered the usefulness and disturbed the equanimity of his successor, the Rev. William Throop, who was installed September 21, 1748, and ministered in Southold until his death, September 29, 1756. A still shorter career was that of Smith Stratton, who took up the work which Mr. Throop laid down. He was ordained to preach in 1755 and died March 10, 1758. He acted as pulpit supply, probably the state of his health preventing his assuming the full duties of the pastorate. It was while he occupied the pulpit that a case of church discipline arose which occasioned considerable comment then and after. In the records of the Suffolk County Presbytery it is stated as follows:

A member of this church married the sister of his deceased wife, who was likewise a member of said church, which affair occasioned an uneasiness and grievance in the church. The deacons of the church did (in behalf of the church) relate the case to this Presbytery, and desire the opinion of the Presbytery relating to the case, both as to their present duty and to the lawfulness of the marriage. The Presbytery, after considering and conversing upon the case, gave it as their opinion and judgment that the aforementioned marriage is unlawful and sinful; and that consequently the married couple should be set aside from the sacrament, when it is administered, till satisfaction be made.

In the line of pastorates the sixth occupant of the office was the Rev. John Storrs, who when he was inducted August 15, 1763, was the first to introduce into the ecclesiastical history of Long Island a name that has since been held with peculiar reverence by the people of every class and creed. He was born at Mansfield, Connecticut, December 1, 1735, and descended from the old Nottinghamshire family of Storrs of Sutton. He was graduated from Yale in 1756. He had married, soon after his

graduation, Eunice Conant, widow of Dr. Howe, of Mansfield. She died on March 27, 1767, and was buried in the churchyard at Southold, and in December of the same year Mr. Storrs married one of his parishioners, Hannah Moore. In 1776 the British troops compelled him to leave his church and Long Island, as his sympathies with the Patriot cause were too outspoken to be ignored; but he continued his clerical work as a chaplain in the Continental army. He was gazetted to that office in the Second Battalion of Wadsworth's Connecticut brigade in 1776, and in 1781 was attached to Colonel Waterbury's Connecticut brigade. On the close of hostilities he returned to Southold and took up his old work there, and so continued until 1787, when he was dismissed at his own request. He then removed to Mansfield, where he died, October 9, 1799.

One of his sons, Richard Salter Storrs, was for a time a teacher at Clinton Academy, Easthampton. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Suffolk and took charge of the parishes of Islip and Smithtown, but afterward became minister of the Congregational church at Braintree, Massachusetts. He died there, August 11, 1873. His son, the Rev. Dr. Richard S. Storrs, was the famous pastor of the Church of the Pilgrims in Brooklyn, whose death in 1900 was regarded as a loss not only to the ecclesiastical life of Long Island but to all its best interests.

Since the resignation of the Rev. John Storrs the pulpit of the old church at Southold has been filled by the following:

Rev. Joseph Hazzard from June 7, 1797, to April, 1806; Rev. Joseph Huntting, from June, 1806, to August, 1828; Rev. Ralph Smith, from July 15, 1836, to December, 1840; Rev. H. F. Wiswall, June 18, 1845, to November 12, 1850; Rev. Ephraim Whittaker, D. D., from 1856 to 1892, since which time he has been pastor emeritus, the active work of the pastorate having been since carried on by the Rev. James B. Freeman and by the present pastor, the Rev. W. H. Lloyd.

In addition to these, many brilliant men served the church from time to time as pulpit supply, and their memories are yet precious inheritances in a community which still adheres to many of the lovable characteristics and to much of the devout and practical faith of the fathers. Some of those ministers and supplies will be found spoken of at length in other parts of this work.

The pastor emeritus of the church, Dr. Whitaker, was born at Fairfield, New Jersey, March 27, 1820. He was educated with a view to the ministry and after his graduation from Delaware College, in 1847, he continued his studies in the Union Theological Seminary, New York, taking the full theological course. On leaving there he was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of New York, April 9, 1851. He was ordained the eleventh minister of Southold September 10, in the same year, and now after almost half a century of work continues the duties of his sacred office as zealously as ever. Far beyond the confines of Southold, however, the name of Dr. Whitaker has been known as a writer, historian and antiquary. In 1865 he published "New Fruits from an Old Field," a volume of essays and discourses; and his later work, "History of Southold: Its First Century, 1640 to 1740," is pre-eminently the local authority on facts, dates and family history. It was published in 1881, and in the following year he issued a work of much interest to the local student, "Old Town Records." He has been a contributor to magazine literature for over half a century and his work is invariably characterized by clearness and force. He never writes without having a story to tell or a point to illustrate or drive home, and he presents it to his readers in plain, nervous English and in simple yet captivating and convincing fashion. Some of his pulpit discourses are models of their kind. In 1877 he received the degree of D. D. from Delaware College.

The first settlers of Southampton also had a clergyman as their leader, a good man, a

man, so far as we can learn, of many brilliant parts, but not so gifted by any means as was the pioneer statesman-preacher, John Youngs, of Southold. The Rev. Abraham Pierson was a native of England, a graduate of Cambridge, and is said to have preached the Word in his home land before he cast in his lot with America. He was ordained in Lynn, Massachusetts, in 1640, as minister of the church colony then about to proceed to Long Island and so became the first pastor of Southampton. He was one of those who witnessed the Indian deed in December, 1640. It is supposed that the church structure was by that time erected and



SOUTHAMPTON.

in use, and of course could this be proved beyond question the honor in that matter would rest with Southampton and the claims of Southold be completely shut out; yet we fear the matter will ever remain one of the mooted points of local history, one of those little conundrums which are so useful in the way of developing an interest in historical and antiquarian study. At best, however, the church edifice at Southampton, standing in 1640, was a flimsy affair, probably only a structure of logs, hurriedly put together. We judge so from the fact that in March, 1651, a new meeting-house was erected, and the contracts called for a structure thirty feet long and twenty-four feet wide, the laborers receiving two shillings in wampum for each day's work. The con-



EPLER WHITAKER.

tractors were Ellis Cook and Richard Post. The fate of the pioneer building seems strange. At a town meeting held in April, 1651, it was agreed "that Richard Mills shall have the old meeting-house with the appurtenances to help to enlarge his house, for which gift the said Richard Mills doth engage himself to keep an 'ordinary' for strangers for diet and lodging. Long before this new sanctuary had been erected, or probably before it was even thought of, Abraham Pierson had resigned the pastorate, having a difficulty with the people on a question of church prerogative in local affairs, and, with a number of his congregation, removed to Branford, Connecticut, in 1647. Mr. Pierson moved to Newark, New Jersey, in 1662, or soon after that year, and there set up another tabernacle, the supremacy of the church over all secular affairs being to him a burning question; and the progress of events in Connecticut made such a claim no longer possible there. He continued his ministry at Newark until his death, in 1678. It is said that when he quitted Branford he left the town without an inhabitant, all the people going with him to New Jersey, and he carried away all the local church records and papers. For some twenty-three years he exerted a great amount of political influence in Connecticut. Governor Winthrop, one of his warmest friends, spoke of him as "a godly man" and he won the approval of the Rev. Cotton Mather. In the question of the evangelization of the red men he took a deep interest. He studied their language and prepared (1660) a catechism for their use. In the campaign against the Dutch in 1654 he served as chaplain to the forces.

Mr. Pierson was succeeded in the charge of Southampton by the Rev. Robert Fordham, minister at Hempstead, who took up the burden in 1648, at a salary of £60 for the first year and £80 a year thereafter. Mr. Fordham continued to hold the pastorate until his death, in 1674. Of his personal career more particular mention will be made later on in this chapter. Some time before his decease he was incapacitated from active work by bodily in-

firmity, and in 1674 the Rev. John Harriman was installed as his colleague and successor. As salary, it was arranged Mr. Harriman should receive from Mr. Fordham £40 a year—one-half the regular salary—and £20 from the people, besides the use of thirty acres of land and of "a good house of two stories with a brick chimnie and two chamber chimnies." A provision was also made that if Mr. Fordham could take no part in the work the salary of his young colleague was to be made up to £80.

Mr. Harriman seems to have been a gentleman with an eye constantly open to improving his own worldly prospects and appears to have been absent from Southampton very frequently, turning up as a candidate in vacant churches where the stipend was more liberal and the prospects brighter than in Southampton. As a result the honest folks there were not over-particular in seeing to it that his salary was promptly forthcoming. This apparently led to squabbles, and when he finally resigned, in 1679, he claimed that half a year's stipend was due. This the people, after due consideration, finally and peremptorily refused to pay.

Harriman was succeeded, in 1680, by the Rev. John Taylor, a graduate of Harvard and a preacher at New Haven. In way of remuneration he was most liberally dealt with, probably to remove any ill reputation which may have come to the place through the bickerings with the departed Harriman. The people promised him "a salary of £100 and the sole use of the house and land formerly built and laid out for the ministry, together with another end to be built to the said house, and 100 acres of commonage." In addition they gave "to him and his heirs forever 100 acres in the woods or commons," and another small parcel of four acres. It was further stipulated that the salary of £100 should be paid in this manner:

In winter wheat at 5s the bushel.
In summer wheat at 4s 6d bushel.

In Indian corn at 2s 6d bushel.
 In beef at 40s per cwt.
 In pork at 10s per cwt.
 In tallow at 3d per lb.
 In green hides at 3d per lb.
 In dry hides at 6d per lb.
 In whalebones at 8d per lb.
 In oil at 30s per bbl.
 All good and merchantable. To be collected by the Constable.

Mr. Taylor did not live long to enjoy his worldly prosperity, for he passed away in 1682. It was during the ministry of his successor, the Rev. Joseph Whiting, who seems to have entered upon the charge in 1683, that the second church was abandoned, in 1707, for a new edifice, which was completed in 1709, at a cost of £55 7s 5d. It was furnished up and a steeple added in 1751; improved, almost rebuilt, in 1820, and continued to serve the congregation until 1845, when the now existing church was erected. It is singular that each of these four churches occupied a different site, thus departing from the general usage.

The Rev. Mr. Whiting continued as pastor of the old church until his death, in 1723, when he had attained the patriarchal age of eighty-two years. His successor, the Rev. Samuel Gelston, was associated with him as colleague from 1717 and remained in charge of the congregation until 1727, when he removed to Pennsylvania, where his career was by no means a creditable one. On Gelston's retirement the Rev. Sylvanus White became pastor and so continued until his death, in 1782, a period of service of fifty-five years. His successors have been Revs. Joshua William, Herman Daggett, David S. Bogart, John M. Babbitt, Peter H. Shaw, Daniel Beers, Hugh N. Wilson, John A. Morgan, Frederick Shearer, Andrew Shiland, Walton Condict and R. S. Campbell.

The oldest congregation in Queens county is that now known as "Christ's First Church" in Hempstead. It was organized, it is claimed, in 1643, the same year in which the town had been settled by a colony from Stamford, Con-

necticut, made up mainly of people who had emigrated from England a few years before. The leader of this colony was the Rev. Robert Fordham. It has been the custom to give the honor of founding this colony to Richard Denton, but a series of patient investigations undertaken by Dr. William Wallace Tooker, of Sag Harbor, seems to prove that that preacher was the third and not the first religious leader of the Hempstead colony. From a manuscript essay by Dr. Tooker the following facts are gleaned:

Robert Fordham was the son of Phillip Fordham, of Sacombe, Hertfordshire, England. He came to America with his wife Elizabeth and family in the year 1640. After his arrival in America he spent brief periods at Cambridge and Sudbury, Massachusetts. From Sudbury he probably went to Stamford, Connecticut, and organized the migration to the Hempstead Plains in 1643.

The Journal of New Netherland [says Dr. Tooker], written previous to 1646, translated from Holland documents (Documentary History of New York, Vol. 4, page 15), declares that there was an English colony at Hempstead dependent on the Dutch before the hostilities of 1643-4. Underhill's attack upon the Massapeag Indians did not take place in 1653, as some of our historians have placed the date, but it was actually in the winter of 1643-4. The question now arises, Was there an English colony there previous to that winter as claimed by the Dutch? According to circumstantial evidence there certainly was one. * * * The Indian deed to Hempstead is dated November 13, 1643, and conveys to "Robert Fordham and John Carman, on Long Island, Englishmen, the halfe moiety or equal part of the great plain lying toward the south side of Long Island," etc. This deed surely locates Fordham and Carman there in the fall of 1643, a date previous to the hostilities against the Long Island Indians, and being named first proves that Fordham was the leader in the enterprise as well as in the purchase, whatever else he might have been.

In the Dutch work called "Breedden Raedt," printed at Antwerp in 1649, it is stated that

"in April of the year 1644 seven savages were arrested at Hempstead, where an English clergyman, Mr. Fordham, was Governor. * * *" This proves that in April, 1644, Robert Fordham, an English clergyman, was the head of the Hempstead colony, and the record would surely indicate he had been there some time. After quoting several other authorities which show conclusively that Fordham was the head of the Hempstead colony, Dr. Tooker proceeds to prove that he was the first minister of the colony just as Mr. Youngs was at Southold. He says, "Edward Johnson, a New England contemporary and historian, in his 'Wonder-Working Providence' (Mass. His. Col., Vol. 7, page 22), says, 'Chap. XVIj, of the Planting' of Long Island:' 'This people [Southampton] gathered into a church and called to office Mr. Pierson, who continued with them seven or eight years, and then with the greatest number of his people removed farther into the island; the other part that remained invited Mr. Fordham and a people that were with him to come and joyne with them, who accordingly did, being wandered as far as the Dutch plantation and there unsettled, although he came into the country before them.' There are some errors in this story, but the lines relating to Mr. Fordham are to all intents true, for many of his people did follow him to Southampton and became citizens of that town, which even at that early day possessed many advantages over Hempstead. The lines also demonstrate that he had been up to that time the minister of Hempstead and the people coming with him were his parishioners."

Dr. Tooker also says:

We have still another witness whose testimony cannot be questioned, and although it has been printed for nearly fifty years we cannot understand why it has been ignored or overlooked. This testimony is by none other than Peter Stuyvesant, who writes in his own hand to the people of Hempstead under date of July 17, 1657, nine years after Fordham and his people had abandoned the Hempstead

plantation and Dutch rule: "You all do know that Mr. Robert fordin sum tymes minister of the town off Hempstead, du leave that pleic and alsoo the exercise of the ministry without our wish or knowledge and for no or littel reasons, therefore we ken not ad mitt him in such a mennor of comminge againe." This Stuyvesant letter is a harmonizing sequence to the earlier Dutch record as before quoted and taken altogether they form a connecting narrative authentic and undisputable, confirming as they do beyond question the historical fact that the Rev. Robert Fordham's ministry antedated that of the Rev. Richard Denton some years, and from Stuyvesant's remarks it is evident that at the time of his visit to Hempstead some of the people had expressed a desire for Mr. Fordham's return, a desire perhaps unknown to, and not approved, by Mr. Fordham himself, who was then firmly established and prosperous at Southampton, as the records of that period bear witness. Mr. Fordham and his followers undoubtedly had good and sufficient reasons for leaving Hempstead, and with it the rigorous government of the Dutch, which was oppressive in his day and later.

Rev. John Eliot, the well known apostle to the Indians, in a letter of May, 1650, describing New England and speaking of Long Island, says: "50 myles to the southwest end is Hempstead, where Mr. Moore preacheth." This is confirmed in a complaint against the Indians dated September 25, 1651, by the inhabitants of Hempstead to the Directors at Amsterdam, which is attested as a true copy by "John Moore, the minister of the church of Hempstead." With the Hempstead people, among whom were Robert Coe and Richard Gildersleeve, he migrated to Middleburg (Newtown) in 1652 and became pastor there."

In view of this there seems no doubt that the first minister of Hempstead was Mr. Fordham, who labored from 1643 to 1649, that the second was Mr. Moore, who held the office until 1652, and that the third minister was the Rev. Richard Denton, who became minister in that year, probably by appointment of Governor Stuyvesant. If we accept Woodbridge's statement that a church building was erected at Hempstead in 1648, it would seem that the honor of being its builder should be given to Mr. Fordham, which would deprive its present day representative of its claims to be "the first Presbyterian church in America," for Mr. Fordham and Mr. Moore would assuredly

rank as Congregationalists rather than Presbyterians.

Richard Denton was a native of Yorkshire, England. He was graduated at Cambridge in 1602 and for some years was minister of Coley Chapel, Halifax, England. In 1630 the famous Act of Uniformity forced him to relinquish his church and in search of religious liberty he crossed the Atlantic, settling first at Watertown, Massachusetts. In 1650 he was engaged in preaching in New Amsterdam to the English people and seems to have won the good will and friendship of Stuyvesant. The Rev. Cotton Mather, who apparently knew Denton well, gives him the character of being an excellent man and an able preacher and mentions that he wrote a voluminous work, a system of divinity, under the title of "*Soliloquia Sacra*;" but all trace of it has apparently been lost.* It may be said in passing that a son of this clergyman, Daniel Denton, wrote a work entitled "*A Brief Description of New York, with the Customs of the Indians*," in 1670 (London), which is said to have been the first description in print of New York and New Jersey. An edition of this work (100 copies) was printed in 1845 by Gabriel Furman, with some valuable notes.

It has been doubted whether even Denton was a Presbyterian, and the matter has fre-

quently been argued at considerable length, many holding that he was simply an English "nonconformist" and what would be termed nowadays a Congregational minister. Still the Rev. Sylvester Woodbridge, who was pastor of the Hempstead church from 1838 to 1848, and wrote its history, claims Denton to have been a Presbyterian; and as he is as good an authority as any other we may be content to take our stand on that matter with him; for if Denton be deposed from the honor of being the first minister of Hempstead the denominational point at issue is lost. Woodbridge is also our authority for much of what follows concerning the story of the church. "It was not until 1648," he tells us, "that the congregation was able to move into its own meeting-house. It stood near the pond, in the northwest part of the village (northwest corner of Fulton and Franklin streets), and was surrounded by, or at least connected with, a fort or stockade. It may be proper to observe that at this time the most intimate connection existed between church and state in all Christian countries. In towns which, like Hempstead, were Presbyterian (that is, which chose their own officers) this was particularly the case. The same persons constituted 'the church' and 'the town' and elected the two boards of magistrates and elders who were often the same individuals."

The Rev. Mr. Denton continued to officiate as minister, evidently after rather a stormy pastorate, until 1659, when he returned to England. He died at Essex in 1662. In 1660 the Rev. Jonas Fordham became the pastor, but how long he remained is not clear; but we do know that the Rev. Jeremiah Hobart was installed to the pastorate in 1683 and remained until 1696, although he seems to have had some trouble in receiving his salary with due punctuality. The authorities to whom he appealed ordered a tax to be levied to meet the amount, and this naturally rendered him very unpopular. The next minister was the Rev. John Thomas, who died in 1724, and after him came a period of struggle during which

*Cotton Mather's reference was as follows: "Among these clouds (meaning the ministers who early came to New England) was one pious and learned Mr. Richard Denton, a Yorkshire man, who, having watered Halifax, in England, where, first at Weathersfield, and then at Stamford, his doctrine dropped as the rain, his speech distilled as the dew, as the small rain upon the tender herb, and as the showers upon the grass. Though he were a little man, yet he had a great soul; his well accomplished mind, in his lesser body, was an Iliad in a nut shell. I think he was blind of an eye, yet he was not the least among the Seers of Israel; he saw a very considerable portion of those things which eye hath not seen. He was far from cloudy in his conceptions and principles of divinity, whereof he wrote a system entitled '*Soliloquia Sacra*,' so accurately, considering the four-fold state of man, in his created purity, contracted deformity, restored beauty, and celestial glory, that judicious persons, who have seen it, very much lament the churches being so much deprived of it. At length he got into heaven beyond the clouds, and so beyond storms, waiting the return of the Lord Jesus Christ, in the clouds of heaven, when he will have his reward among the saints."

the congregation dwindled down to a few families, lost their church property to the Episcopalians and became "a remnant," meeting in each other's houses. Their devotion, however, ultimately found its reward, and in 1762 they again worshipped in a church, a small building which they erected near the site of the congregation's present meeting place.

The Rev. Benjamin Woolsey and the Rev. Abraham Keteltas acted as pulpit supply, if not as regular pastors, and kept the people together. The Rev. Joshua Hart was minister during the continuance of the Revolutionary War, but his labors were sadly interfered with by the military operations. The church building was used by the British as a stable and received pretty rough usage. The congregation again dwindled down to a remnant of some fifteen or twenty members, and it seemed as though it would soon become extinct. Still the brethren held together.


On June 5, 1805, the Rev. William P. Kupors was installed. The roll of communi-

cants showed but twenty-three names when he retired in 1811. For some four years the pastorate was filled by the Rev. Samuel Robertson as a "side issue" in connection with his own church at Huntington, but he did little more than keep the people together. With the installation of the Rev. Charles Webster in 1818 a better state of things began to set in. A new house of worship was erected and the members began slowly, but steadily, to increase. He remained in charge until 1837, and when he retired he had the satisfaction of announcing that the congregation numbered one hundred and twenty-five. His successor was the Rev. Sylvester Woodbridge, Jr., who remained with the people until 1849. Then followed in succession Revs. Charles W. Shields, 1849-50; N. C. Locke, 1851-60; J. I. A. Morgan, 1860-7; James B. Finch, 1867-75; Franklin Noble, 1875-80; F. E. Hopkins, 1881-4; Charles E. Dunn, 1884-8; John A. Davis, 1890-3; and from 1894 the present pastor, the Rev. F. M. Kerr.



CHAPTER XII.

RELIGIOUS PROGRESS IN KINGS COUNTY.

HE first church in Kings county, the Reformed Church, Flatbush, has a most complete and interesting history from its inception in 1654 to the present day. Its annals have been fully and ably detailed in a most interesting little brochure written by Mrs. Gertrude Lefferts Vanderbilt, so well known as an entertaining and painstaking writer on old and new Flatbush, and we herein reproduce her study of the history of the old church, with but trifling changes, feeling that so interesting a contribution to local history should be preserved in a more permanent form than that in which it originally appeared:

The West India Company, then the ruling power in the New Netherland, recognized the authority of the Church of Holland over their colonial possessions, and the care of the transatlantic churches here was extended by the Synod of Holland to the Classis of Amsterdam. The first provision made for the spiritual comfort and edification of the colonists was the sending of pious men whose duty it was to officiate at religious meetings, to read a sermon on the Sabbath day and to lead the devotions of the people. These were not ordained ministers; from their particular duties they were called "Krank-besoeckers" or "Zeikentroasters"—comforters of the sick. In 1626 two of these godly men were sent over with Governor Minuit. They conducted religious service in the colony of New York until 1628, when Domine Michaelius was sent by the North Synod of Holland. He formed the first regular church organization in the colony, and had about fifty communicants at the first communion administered there.

In 1633 he was succeeded by Domine Everardus Bogardus. In that year the first church used exclusively as a place of public worship was erected; previously they had worshipped in the upper story of a mill. This church was a plain wooden structure, standing near the East river, on what is now Pearl street.

The increase in number, as well as the wish of the people to have a more imposing and commodious structure, led them, in 1642, to build a church of stone, seventy-two feet long and fifty-two feet broad, at a cost of \$1,000. The worshippers seem to have taken pride in their new edifice, for they placed a marble slab on the front of it with this inscription: "Anno 1642: William Kieft Directeur General; Heeft de Gemente Desen Temple doen bouwen." This church was erected by the people in 1642, William Kieft being Directeur General.

It is probable that at this period the people from all the surrounding Dutch towns and the small scattered settlements gathered from time to time to worship in this church. We must admit that this could not be done without encountering many obstacles, for, pleasant as it may have been to join in worship with their old friends, yet the journey to the Fort at that day was not an easy one. In a report upon the state of religion in the Province, written to the Classis of Amsterdam in 1657, we read that the "people living in the three villages of Breukelen, Medwout and Amersfort [Brooklyn, Flatbush and Flatlands] come with great difficulty to the preaching here" [New York]. Again we read, "It was some three hours' work for some of them ere they could reach here." The ferry established about this time had no better accommodations than could be offered by a small boat rowed by a farmer who came at the blowing of a horn hung upon a neighboring tree. Somewhere about 1697 there was



FIRST REFORMED CHURCH OF FLATBUSH, L. I.

a ferry from what is now the foot of Joralemon street, Brooklyn, to the Breede Graft, now Broad street, New York; through the centre of this street ran a creek which the boats could ascend to the ferry house there. As it was not until 1704 that the main road to the ferry, known as the King's Highway, was opened, we do not wonder that the journey from the various settlements in Kings county was a toilsome one, and that the people resident there began to petition for a more accessible place of worship. To the real obstacles there may have been added those which, in the absence of reliable information, were supplied by fancy; for in a letter written from Amsterdam in 1671 an imaginative traveller describes some remarkable animals supposed to roam through the woodlands. They are unknown to the naturalists of the present day and are of a type chiefly found among the unicorns and griffins of heraldic devices.

Under these circumstances we do not wonder that the attendance upon public worship in the sanctuary, erected by the "gemente" of New York in 1642, was not so constant as might be desired, and that Governor Stuyvesant recognized the necessity of having a church on Long Island. It seems to have been generally conceded that Midwout, now the little town of Flatbush, was most central as to position and most accessible. This spot was, therefore, honored in being selected for the site of the first church in Kings county. Here, in 1654, was erected a place of worship upon a spot where for nearly two and a half centuries those who have held to the doctrines of the Church of Holland have assembled Sunday after Sunday for worship.

It appears upon the records that the first church in Kings county cost \$1,800; as a conscientious historian I am bound to admit that the whole of this sum was not raised in this county. It seems to have been collected throughout the whole colony, Governor Stuyvesant himself contributing toward the liquidation of the debt left upon the building.

In after years, however, this indebtedness was returned in kind, for there is a petition still to be found among the church records bearing date January 19, 1784, in which New York appeals to the country churches for help. In response to it the sum of £20 6s 8d was raised, and is acknowledged as coming from Kings county. But an examination of the names on this paper will show that all the contributors were residents of Flatbush ex-

cept two, and from these two the amount collected was very small.

The farms in the village of Flatbush were originally laid out in long, narrow tracts on each side of the Indian path which at the present time forms the main street. Central among these was a long strip of land set aside for the church. It was not a poor, barren tract, but as fertile and as pleasantly situated as the land reserved for their own farms. They gave of the best they had for the service of the Lord's house. They made ample provision for the continuance and maintenance of the ordinances of the sanctuary for generations to come. They planned wisely and well, and the church to this day holds a large portion of this goodly tract.

The first church was in the form of a cross. It was sixty-five feet long, twenty-eight feet broad, and about twelve or fourteen feet high. The rear was reserved for the minister's dwelling.

Like a mote in the otherwise pure amber, the dignified ecclesiastical records of this period have preserved an incident which indicates that readiness to find fault which sometimes accompanies our best works. We are told that the people of Flatbush sent a complaint to Governor Stuyvesant, to the effect that, while they did all the work in building the church, the other towns stood idly looking on. The Governor came to the rescue with an order to the other towns to "assist in cutting and hauling wood." The other towns determined to draw a line somewhere, and did so at the minister's house. They agreed to help build the house of the Lord, but as for the house of the minister they replied that the "Medwoud folks were able to do it themselves." As in 1656 the minister complained that his house was not yet completed, the "Medwoud folks" do not seem to have been as prompt in fulfilling their share of the contract as they should have been.

The clergymen sent to the colony were men of thorough theological training; "for," says Brodhead, "the people, who at Leyden preferred a University to a Fair, insisted upon an educated ministry."

In New York Rev. Everardus Bogardus was succeeded by Rev. Johannes Megapolensis; his singular name was in its original form of a family name, Jan Van Mecklenburg. He seems to have been a man of liberal views and kindly feelings. He saved the life of a Jesuit missionary, Father Jogues, who was captured

by the Mohawks and kept for torture. After this he showed a similar kindness to another priest, Father Poncet. In 1658 a friendship grew up between himself and Father Le Moyne, a priest who spent that winter in New Netherland. He was settled over the church in New York, but seems to have had the oversight of the congregations in Kings county, and was expected to see that their spiritual wants were supplied, although not to officiate regularly as the pastor of the church at Flatbush.

Rev. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus was the first regular ordained minister in the county towns worshipping here. He had for a time joint charge of the churches of Breuckelen, Midwout and Amersfort. He was quite an aged man and required an assistant.

The first church at Amersfort (Flatlands) was erected in 1662; the first church in Brooklyn in 1666. The morning service for Brooklyn, Flatbush and Flatlands was held at Flatbush; the afternoon service alternately at Brooklyn and Flatlands.

The Rev. Henry Solyns, or Selwyn, was called from Holland in 1660, and the Rev. Casparus Van Zuren in 1677. After Domine Selwyn was installed in Brooklyn Domine Polhemus confined his services to Flatbush and Flatlands; when Selwyn returned to Holland in 1664, then the associated towns were again in care of Domine Polhemus. Carel De Beauvoise, the schoolmaster, was directed to read prayers and some sermon from an approved author every Sunday until another minister was called.

It is probable that about this time the church at New Utrecht was organized and added to the pastoral care of the minister preaching in the churches already established, for Rev. Mr. Van Zuren in 1677 states that two elders and two deacons were chosen for the church in New Utrecht.

In 1681 the consistory of the church at Flatbush was enlarged by the addition of one elder and one deacon chosen from among the members living in New Lots. For many years after this none of the churches on Long Island had more than two elders and two deacons, with the exception of the Flatbush church.

Rev. Casparus Van Zuren returned to Holland in 1685, and was succeeded by Rev. Rudolphus Varick.

The last minister who officiated in this second church edifice was Rev. W. Lupardus.

He preached here until his death, which occurred in 1701.

Arrangements were made in 1698 to build a new church. It seems probable that the old building was too small to accommodate all who by this time assembled together for worship, as the inhabitants of Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, Gravesend, New Utrecht and Bushwick all united in the service. Brooklyn, Flatbush and Bushwick communed together, and Flatlands, Gravesend and New Utrecht.

These people gladly contributed to the erection of a larger house of worship, rejoicing that such was needed. They may have talked over the matter as did their fathers in 1642, when they built the church in New York. "It is a shame," said they at that time, "that the English should see when they pass nothing but a mean barn in which public worship is performed. The first thing they did in New England when they raised some dwellings was to build a fine church; we ought to do the same."

As, according to the old proverb, actions speak louder than words, we may certainly credit them with an alacrity in collecting funds for the new church, which speaks well for their interest in the matter. A subscription was taken up, amounting to what would be in our money about \$6,291.20. This is certainly a large sum in view of the few from whom it was collected, for there is no record this time of calling for outside help to liquidate the debts left upon the church, and there is no appeal made to other settlements for assistance. The people who worshipped there built the church and paid for it.

We copy from Rev. Dr. Strong's History the following description of this building: "It was located on the spot on which the first church stood. It was a stone edifice, fronting the east, with a large arched double door in the centre. It had a steep, four-sided roof, coming nearly together at the top, on which was erected a small steeple. The building was wider in front than in depth, being about sixty-five feet north and south and about fifty feet east and west. The roof rested on the walls and was partly supported by them and partly by two large oak columns standing in a line within the building in a northerly and southerly direction. The two columns supported a plate in the centre of a lofty arched, planked ceiling, the north and south ends of which rested on the wall. In consequence of this, the

north and south walls of the building were considerably higher than those of the east and west. There were two large and broad braces extending from each column to the plate. The roof appeared to be badly constructed, for its pressure on the walls was so great that in process of time the upper part of the northerly wall was pressed out more than a foot over the foundation, and the four braces attached to the columns within the building were considerably bent from the weight and pressure above. The pulpit was placed in the center of the west side of the building, having the elders' bench on the right and the deacons' bench on the left. The male part of the congregation were seated in a continuous pew, all along the wall, which was divided into twenty compartments with a sufficient number of doors for entrance; each family had one or more seats here. The rest of the interior of the building was for the accommodation of the females of the congregation, who were seated on chairs; these were arranged in seven different rows or blocks, and each family had one or more chairs in some one of these blocks. Each chair was marked on the back by a number, or by the name of the person or the family to whom it belonged. The windows of this church were formed of small panes of glass; those on either side of the pulpit were painted or ornamented and set in lead."

As the minister's family had previously lived in the extension of the first church, it is probable that, when it was pulled down, a parsonage was built south of and adjoining the new church, upon the property on which the present parsonage stands.

There is no record of changes made in this building from 1698 until 1775. Then the seats were remodeled and pews were substituted for chairs. With the consent of the congregation sixty-four pews, to hold six persons each, were placed in the church. Two short galleries divided by the door were built on the easterly side: one was occupied, probably, by those who were too poor to pay for seats in the body of the church; the other was given for the use of the colored people, there being at this time a large colored population in this town. There were two seats more conspicuous than the rest, the one for the minister's wife and family, the other for any notable person who happened to be present. (The wife of the minister was always called the *Yeffrouw*; the minister was known as the *Dominie*.)

A board, on which were placed the numbers of the Psalms to be sung during service, was hung in a conspicuous position, for all the members of the congregation were expected to take part in the singing. These curious old Psalm books had silver corners and clasps. There were also small silver rings on them; through these were cords or long silver chains, by means of which they were hung on the backs of the chairs when chairs were used instead of pews. We look with interest at the quaint, four-sided notes printed on the bars, for each Psalm was set to music, and we wonder how they sang in those days; slowly, of course, for there are no short notes. The New Testament and Psalms were bound together, and these were carried to church every Sunday.

It is probable that all the Dutch families own one or more of these books still. Some of them were published at Dordrecht, 1758, others in Amsterdam, 1728; there may be others of a still earlier date. The title page is as follows:

Het NIEUWE TESTAMENT
ofte alle Boeken
Des Nieuwen Verbondts
OUZES HEEREN JESU CHRISTI
door last
van de H. M. Heeren
Staten General
der Vereenigde Nederlangen
en volgens het besluit von de
Sinode Nationale gehouden in
de Jaren 1618 en de 1619 tot
Dordrecht 1758.

Below the date of the copy from which the above was taken there is a lion holding a sword, encircled with the motto "Een dracht maakt macht." A picture of a city facing the North Sea finishes the page. Most of the books which have been preserved in the families of the Dutch are of a religious character, and we cannot but feel that they were a religious people. Although the Psalms only were sung in the churches, they were fond of sacred poetry. In a time-stained book entitled "Finding the Way to Heaven," published at Nymegen, 1752, which seems to have kept its place beside the Dutch Bible, we find an old hymn to which the well-worn volume opens at once, as if to some favorite page:

Den Hemel zelf,
 Dat schoon gewelf,
 Daar 't dag is zonder'nachten:
 Is 't hoog vèrtrek daar 't Engelen choor,
 Al zingend ous verwachten.
 O zalig! zalig Zinken!
 O zalig te verdrinken!
 In 't eenwig zalig ligt.

We infer from this that the Dutch people were not lacking in that religious fervor which finds expression in hymns of love and faith.

The church, erected in 1698, was still standing at the time of the American Revolution. As the steeple rose from the centre of the building, the bell rope, by which the bell in the tower was tolled, was easy of access as it hung to the floor in the middle of the church. For that reason it was used to give alarm in case of attack. When the British landed, while they were yet some distance from the village, this bell gave the first warning note of their approach. Long and loud the bell resounded over the quiet village. It did not this time ring out a call to assemble and hear the message of peace on earth, good will to men. It was now an alarm, the clangor of war and the announcement of carnage and bloodshed soon to come.

After the battle of Long Island, the wounded soldiers were carried into this church, and it was temporarily used as a hospital. Afterward, when other provision was made for the sick and wounded, it was taken possession of by the British troops, who thoroughly ransacked it; some artillery men even stabled their horses in the pews and fed them there. It outlasted this desecration, however, and was in use as a place of worship until near the close of the century.

At this period the school and the Dutch church were united in one common interest. The doctrines which were taught in the church were also taught in the village school. The Town Clerk was both schoolmaster during the week and the minister's assistant on Sunday. He stood up in front of the pulpit and read the Commandments before the morning service and the Apostles' Creed in the afternoon. Until 1790 this was in the Dutch language. He also led the congregation in singing. To these duties he added the work of sexton, for he rang the bell and kept the church in order. He had not the care of heating the church, like the sexton of the present day, for

that was not required. We can only wonder how they could sit all through a freezing winter's morning in a stone church and not take cold!

After the death of the Rev. Wilhelmus Lupardus in 1701, the Rev. Bernardus Freeman was called to succeed him, and was installed in the Church of New Utrecht in 1705. This was the beginning of a long and serious disturbance in the churches of the colony. Those who were opposed to Domine Freeman made application to the Classis of Amsterdam, and in response the Rev. Vincentius Antonides was sent from the Fatherland and was installed in the Church of Flatbush. A long and bitter controversy followed, which continued to agitate the church until 1714.

Two parties sprung up, one of which seems to have held the opinion that the English Governor of the Provinces should be consulted in the matter; the other party asserted that they had the right within themselves to choose their own pastor. To use their own words, they "do reject this Position That all the Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction of the Dutch Churches in this Province is wholly in the Power of the Governor according to his will & pleasure." The Dutch love of law and order seems, however, to assert itself; "that yet nevertheless all parties do firmly own that the Dutch churches in this Province are accountable to the Gov't for their peaceable & good behaviour in their Doctrin, Disciplin and Church Government." Once more the independent spirit of these old fathers shows that willing as they are to submit to law, it must be consistent with their religious rights, for these were descendants of the old Hollanders who drove out the Duke of Alva and worshipped God according to their own faith even in sight of the Inquisition. Thus they continue: "that is to say as farr as it does consist with the Rules and Constitucons of their own national Church always enjoyed at New York; as well as they have the right and privilege to be protected by the Civill Gov't in the free exercise of their religion according to their own Constitution."

The first party alluded to favored calling the Rev. Bernardus Freeman, of Schenectady; the latter desired to send to Holland for the Rev. Vincentius Antonides. The congregation at Schenectady seem a little vexed at this interference with their minister, but they regard it rather as a matter of pecuniary loss than of personal regret, for they say in a petition on the subject to her Majesty's Gov-

error, that for the expenses of his passage and other charges they have disbursed the "valiable summe of near upon eighty pounds." On account of this "valiable summe," they seem unwilling to part with Mr. Freeman, who does not, however, seem equally unwilling to part with them. As we know that no Dutchman can consistently give up what he considers to be his rights, so in this case neither party being disposed to yield, both ministers were called, and the consequent disturbance agitated the whole country.

His Excellency, Viscount Cornbury, Captain General and Governor in Chief of Her Majesty's Provinces of New York and New Jersey, and Vice Admiral of the same, was not silent for want of information on the subject, for each party besieged him alternately with petitions. We are sorry to say, for the literary credit of Domine Freeman's party, that their first petition was returned to them by Col. Beekman, who, they say, "writt us a letter that said petition was not well penned, and that there was some ffaults therein." The Viscount finally issues a warrant appointing Bernardus Freeman as minister, ordering Mr. Antonides, the "pretended minister," as he calls him, with his "pretended" elders and deacons, to give up all possession of house, land, stock and books in their possession or answer the contrary at their peril.

On January 21st, 1709, the friends of Mr. Antonides petition his excellency, Lord Lovelace, Baron of Hurley, the next Governor in chief. The Baron of Hurley calls a meeting to inquire into the difficulties of "ye Dutch Reformed Protestant churches of ye Towns of fflatbush, fflatlands, Brookland, New Utrecht and Bushwick." Of course Domine Freeman's friends again send in another petition, in which they again express themselves to the effect that they are "humbly of oppinion that all Ecclesiastical affairs And the Determination of all things relating thereto in this Province lie solely before your Lordship." The result was that in order to put an end to "ye dispute," these ministers were appointed to act in concert, alternately preaching in the churches, each one to choose his own consistory. But "ye dispute" cannot be easily settled: we are a people who cling to our opinions with wonderful tenacity, particularly upon church matters. The friends of Domine Antonides would not look with complacency upon the admirers of Domine Freeman, and vice versa,—and no fiat of a Baron of Hurley

could remove the difficulty. There are more meetings and petitions, and minority reports, and majority reports, and petitions again. We can imagine the hum it occasioned through the towns, the discussions in front of the church at the gathering of the congregation and the excitement of the younger people. Yet we must feel that this bit of human nature brings us nearer to these old worthies who seem more real to us than when their names only appear in old deeds and wills and dry records.

Next the Hon. Richard Ingoldsby, Governor and Commander-in-Chief of her Majesty's Province, is vigorously petitioned by both sides; and he finally orders that Mr. Freeman and Mr. Antonides shall "preach at all ye sd churches in Kings Co., alternately, and divide all ye profits equally, share and share alike, and to avoid all farther disputes between the said ministers, Mr. ffreeman shall preach ye next Sunday at fflatbush, & ye Sunday following Mr. Antonides shall preach at fflatbush; if either of them refuses to comply with this order, to be dismissed."

Domine Antonides, notwithstanding the threat, refuses to comply with the order, and again resorts to a petition, but Lord Lovelace has had enough of petitioning, and curtly says that he "has already determined the matter; he will hear nothing further thereon."

On one occasion, Col. Girardus Beekman, President of her Majesty's Council in "ye City of New York," met one of the elders of the church at the ferryboat. Crossing the river was probably in those days a work of time, and on landing they went into the ferry house together. Of course, during all this time, they had been discussing the engrossing subject as to who was the rightful minister, and the good elder so far forgot himself as to get angry in the dispute, and as he owns, he told Col. Beekman he had a good mind to knock him off his horse, both at that time getting upon their horses to go home. But like a warm hearted man, quick to speak, he is equally quick to admit his error, for he says: "I could wish that these last words had been kept in."

We cited this as showing how generally this matter interested the whole communtty and was the subject of discussion among those who met even on ordinary business. The trouble was finally settled in 1714, by having both ministers preach alternately in the different Dutch towns. They certainly had

ample space to discharge their several duties without interfering with each other. Both of these ministers resided in Flatbush. In regard to the communion, it was arranged that Bushwick, Brooklyn and Flatbush should commune together, and that Flatlands, Gravesend and New Utrecht should join together in the same service. A new church which had at this time been formed at Jamaica, had separate communion.

The rotation in preaching was as follows: one minister preached on one Sabbath in Bushwick, and the other at New Utrecht; on the next Sabbath, one in Brooklyn and the other in Flatlands; on the third Sabbath, one in Flatbush and the other in Jamaica.

Domine Freeman died soon after 1741. He was succeeded by the Rev. J. Arondeus, who until the death of Domine Antonides in 1744 remained his colleague; but he was subsequently deposed. Rev. Ulpianus Von Sinderen was called to take the place made vacant and he entered upon his duties in 1746.

The Classis of Amsterdam speak of Rev. Vincentius Antonides as "a man of great learning and fine talents," and the Rev. Bernardus Freeman was said to be "a very learned divine."

Levity of any kind was very rare in the pulpit of the Dutch church. The ministers were men of learning, ability and dignity of manner.

However, while Domine Van Sinderen was a very learned and excellent man, he was also very eccentric; this was a drawback to his usefulness. It is said that he would introduce the occurrences of the week in his discourse on the Sabbath, which was something more unusual then than it is now. On one occasion, upon being checked by one of his consistory for this, he became indignant, and invited the elder who had interfered to come up in the pulpit and try if he could preach any better! On another occasion he attempted to draw the outlines of the Ark, in order to illustrate a sermon on the subject; it is needless to say that this did not meet the approval of his consistory. The old people used to say that he did not hesitate to call the attention of the whole congregation to any member who, being dilatory, entered after the service had been opened.

In a letter on the state of religion from Domine Megapolensis to the Classis of Amsterdam dated August 5, 1657, he reflects very severely upon a "parson," fortunately not a

minister of the Reformed Dutch church, of whom he says: "He is a man of godless and scandalous life, a rolling, rollicking unseemly carl, who is more inclined to look in the wine-can than to pore over the Bible and would rather drink a can of brandy for two hours than preach one, and when the sap is in the wood then his hands itch and he becomes excessively inclined to fight whomever he meets," which shows us that even from the earliest days of the settlement when a rude state of things prevailed the Dutch were very quick to observe and condemn anything in the behavior of the minister which might bring reproach to the church.

Upon the deposition from office of Mr. Arondeus, the Rev. Antonius Curtenius was called to be the colleague of Mr. Van Sinderen, but he died within the year.

Rev. Johannes Casparus Rubel was appointed to fill this place, and these two ministers officiated during the war of the Revolution. Rubel had not only strong Tory proclivities, but his character and actions were inconsistent with the office he held and he was deposed.

Domine Van Sinderen and Domine Rubel were the last ministers called from Holland.

The writer has in possession an English translation of Domine Rubel's call. The coarse yellow paper upon which it is written and the antiquated penmanship attests its genuineness, had proof been needed, but the value of the papers among which it was found, like the company which a man keeps, is a testimonial to its accuracy. It was addressed to the Reverend and Pious Do. Joh's Caparus Rubel at present High Dutch Minister in the Church of J. C. in the Camp and Rhinebeck, from the Elders and Deputies of the five united townships of Kings Co., on Long Island, viz.: Flatbush, Brooklyn, Bushwick, Flatlands and New Utrecht for a second Low Dutch Minister with Do. Ulpianus Van Sinderen, at their meeting held in the church at Flatbush, the 20th of June, 1759.

As it is God who out of the riches of his all-sufficiency fulfills the wants of his Creatures, So he does such in a particular manner to his people and chosen ones, whom he blesses above all earthly blessing with the Revelation of his precious Will, by the means of which to assemble his Elect, to confirm and to strengthen them, and that by the services of them who bear the Riches of God's Secrets

in their Earthly Vessels, to the Glory of God and to the Salvation of his Elect. In full confidence of which, we have thro' the Grace of God been enabled to bring matters so far as to have fallen upon ways and means, by the union of Love again to join and thus be in a condition to make up a sufficient Support for two Ministers. Our choice is then fallen upon you, Reverend Sir, as on one of whose good report in the services of the Gospel, both in your present and former congregations, there is full evidence; So are we in expectation that thro' the grace and goodness of God your services amongst us we must have. That which we shall expect from you generally is that you should do and perform all the Duties incumbent on a faithful Servant of the Gospel and worthy of God's approbation in the promulgation of the Gospel doctrines, the Administration of the Sacraments; making use of the Discipline of the Church, together with the other Church officers according to the Word of God and the Constitution of the Church of Netherland, established in the Synod of Dort in the years 1618 and 1619; in particular, that you shall preach twice on each Lord's Day, as also on each Fast or Thanksgiving Day; on the usual holidays of Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide; a sermon shall be preached on the second day, as also on New Year's and Ascension days; as also a proof of Preparation sermon at the place where the sacrament of the Lord's Supper is to be administered, which shall be celebrated four times a year, with necessary visitation of the Communicants; the taking on of members, and instructing the Congregation by Catechising in the foundation of the pure reformed Religion.

On our parts, Reverend Sir, we promise to pay you for your yearly salary the sum of One hundred and Seven pounds, New York money. N. B.—The sum of 107 pounds is thus to be divided:

Flatbush shall give..	£29
Brooklyn	29
Flatlands	16.10.0
New Utrecht.....	16.10.0
Bushwick	16.10.0

1st. Each half year punctually to pay the Just one half part thereof.

2d. A free and proper dwelling in the Town of Flatbush, with an orchard, some pas-

ture land with pasturage for one cow and horse and other conveniences thereto annexed.

3d. Free Firewood is to be delivered at the Dwelling House of the Minister.

4th. It has been the custom when the Minister preached out of Flatbush that he was fetched and brought back and at such place was provided with Victuals, Drink and Lodging, which having proved very inconvenient both for the Minister and the Congregation, it is therefore determined upon, as you keep your own horse and carriage, to pay you yearly for making use of your own carriage, But you are to be provided with house room and victuals and drink gratis.

We, underwritten, the Deputies of our Congregations, Sign this Call as our own act in order faithfully to fulfill all that is herein expressed and mentioned; and so shall our Successors who may from time to time be chosen in our stead also do.

Gerret Van Duyn, Jan Couenhoven, Jac. Sebring, Willem Van Nuys, Rutger Van Brunt, Jan Lott, Roulof Voorhees, Jan Van der Bilt, Laurenz Ditmars, Abraham Bloom, Barent Andriese, Jeremias Van der Bilt, Cornelis Coerte, Stephen Schenk, Johannes Lott, Joost de Bevois, Jeremias Remsen, Andreas Stockholm, Daniel Bodet, Jacobus Coljer, Folkert Folkertson, Abrm. Schenk.

Thus done and concluded in our presence on the 20th and 25th of June, 1759.

Johannes Ritzema V. D. M.
in New York.

Ulpianus Van Sinderin. V. D. M.
in K. County.

The congregation of Gravesend was formally added to the combination of Kings County churches in 1785. In that year a call had been made upon the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, and in 1787 Rev. Peter Lowe was ordained as his colleague. These two ministers preached alternately in the church at Flatbush until the second building was taken down in 1794.

About the year 1750 the church was greatly agitated in reference to certain difficulties in the church between two parties known as the Coetus and Conferentie. The difference between these lay chiefly in the exercise of church authority and the right of ordination.

The Coetus party contended that there should be regular organization of the churches into Classes and Synods, and that these should have all the rights and privileges belonging

to such ecclesiastical bodies in Holland. The Conferentie party maintained that all ministers should be ordained in Holland and sent to the churches here by the Classis of Amsterdam. This controversy caused trouble in the church until 1772.

The landed estate and general financial interests of the Flatbush church had from the time of its organization been entrusted to the management of church masters according to the usage of the Reformed churches in Holland. An annual statement of the receipts and expenditures was certified on the church books. For a period of one hundred and seventy years the church property was prudently and judiciously managed by these church masters; then the church became incorporated under an Act passed by the Legislature in 1784, authorizing the incorporation of religious societies; some years after this a special Act provided for the incorporation of the Reformed Dutch churches by which the ministers, elders and deacons become the Trustees. This is the oldest religious corporation in this country.

The church erected in 1698 was pulled down in 1793, and the church at present standing was finished in 1796. It is, therefore, the third upon the same spot and is still in an excellent state of preservation, as it was substantially built and has always been kept in good repair. The stones of the former churches were all placed in the foundation of this, the foundation wall being six feet broad.

The small Dutch bricks around the doors and windows were brought from Holland as ballast in one of the ships belonging to the Hon. John Vanderbilt. The stones for the wall were quarried at Hurlgate, N. Y., and the brown stone used in the construction of the courses above the foundation were broken from the rocky ridge of hills dividing Flatbush from Brooklyn. The cost of this church was £4873, 7, 7, a sum equal to \$12,183.44. This is exclusive of a great amount of labor and cartage gratuitously given by the members of the congregation; in that age the people were not ashamed to do their share of the manual labor. We were told years ago by an aged person who was living at the time this church was built that it was esteemed a privilege to assist in building the house of the Lord.

The consecration sermon of this church, in January, 1797, was in the Dutch language, by Dominie Schoonmaker. That being almost ex-

clusively the language of the family, it was taught in the schools and used in the church services entirely until 1792. After that date the English came gradually into use. The regular and public preaching in the Dutch language ceased altogether upon the death of old Domine Schoonmaker, which occurred in 1824. Until 1818 sermons were preached in the towns of Flatbush, New Utrecht, Gravesend and Bushwick by Domine Schoonmaker in Dutch and by Domine Lowe in English. Domine Schoonmaker preached until he was nearly ninety years of age. He was the last connecting link of the chain which had bound the churches together from 1654. The six collegiate congregations of Kings County were those of Brooklyn, Bushwick, Flatbush, New Utrecht, Flatlands and Gravesend. In 1805 Rev. Selah S. Woodhull was called as pastor of the church of Brooklyn. In 1811 Dr. Bassett was called to Bushwick. In 1809 Dr. Beattie was called to New Utrecht. Dr. Bassett supplied also the church at Gravesend when Domine Schoonmaker preached in Dutch at Bushwick. Flatlands and Flatbush were the last churches to separate. In 1818 they extended a pastoral call to Rev. Walter Montith. He resigned from these churches in 1820. In 1822 Rev. Dr. Thomas M. Strong was installed as pastor of the church at Flatbush. He was the first minister who had sole charge of this church.

All the ministers who died after 1701 were interred under the church. This practice was continued until 1794. All persons belonging to the church who could afford it were also allowed this privilege. This accounts for the fact that there are not more old tombstones in the burying ground attached to the church. In that portion of this graveyard which has apparently no graves in it, the bodies of those who died in the battle of Flatbush are buried. They were gathered from the woods and hills in the route of the invading army. As they were hastily interred, without coffin or tombstone, that part of this old graveyard was not used afterwards.

At this present time, in order to have room for church extension, a small portion of the ground immediately adjoining the church has been disturbed, but very few bones have been found; they have nearly all mingled with the dust during the century and more that they have lain there.

For some twenty years interment in this graveyard has been forbidden. A plot was

purchased in Greenwood for the church in 1873, so that the ministers preaching here should, at their death, be interred there, and not in the old churchyard.

There is a significance in this, as being part of the constant change which the old church has undergone. There are no more burials here; no more Dutch tombstones; Dutch speaking and Dutch preaching are no more to be heard. The binding link of the six collegiate congregations was long ago broken. We approach so close to other churches that everything distinctively Dutch is lost.

Since its completion in 1796, the Flatbush church has been several times changed as to its interior arrangements. Until 1836 the back and front of the pews were very high, having resemblance to pens. The wood was grained; there were no blinds on the windows and the walls were white. A mahogany pulpit was some five or six feet above the floor, supported on columns and reached by means of spiral stairs. The pews were lowered in 1836, and blinds were placed in the windows to soften the light. Two cast-iron stoves, known as Dr. Nott's patent, supplied the heat. The woodwork was painted white, and for the first time the aisles and the pulpit were carpeted.

In 1862 the church was again renovated. The high mahogany pulpit was removed, and a reading desk on a broader platform took its place. Two large heaters made the church more comfortable than the cast-iron stoves had done. An organ was built in the east gallery of the church, and a clock was placed in the steeple. The clock strikes upon the old bell which was presented to the church in 1796 by Hon. John Vanderbilt, who imported it for this purpose from Holland in one of his merchant ships. It is said that this bell was injured by being captured by the British and carried into Halifax in the belief that it was the property of a Holland merchant. It was released and returned when the fact was proved that the owner of the bell was a citizen of the United States. Since that first strife over its possession it has not been called to give the alarm of war, as did its predecessor in the little bell tower in 1776. Only the call to worship or the solemn announcement of a funeral has awakened its voice. It formerly gave warning of fires, but of later years even that duty has not been required, and now we hear its sound only for church services.

In 1887 the building was once more remodel-

ed. An entrance for the minister in the rear of the church and a robing-room added accommodations which had been much needed, for the example of the Holland clergy and long custom in this country favors the black Geneva gown in the pulpits of the Reformed Church. The interior of the building was stencilled in quiet colors. With the new upholstering and dark carpets a subdued effect was produced, and the pervading tone is rich and unobtrusive. A steam heater adds to the comfort of the church, and by the contrast suggests the accounts given of days when the church was not warmed even in midwinter. Some of us may recall the two tall stoves in the rear of the church, which heated it so unequally that it was necessary for comfort to supply small foot stoves for every pew; these were carried into the church by the colored servants before the opening of the morning service.

The addition built in the rear of the pulpit at the west end of the church, however, was chiefly for the new organ which was placed there at this time (1887) and for the convenience of the choir. The organ is a large one and of good tone, and the choir has been increased in numbers. The music forms an important part of the worship, and great pains has been taken by those who love church music to interest the young people in the service of song.

In the more primitive days the "voorzanger," or precentor, stood in front of the pulpit to lead in the singing of the hymns. The next step was to have the young people of the congregation serve as a choir in the gallery opposite the pulpit. The first organ was purchased in 1860. This latest arrangement of a larger organ and the choir facing the congregation has been made in accordance with the requirements of the age in regard to church music, and in the desire on the part of the consistory that nothing should be left undone which should tend to a devotional spirit in the church worship.

The latest change made in the interior of the church has been in regard to the windows. The light was found to be at times too strong without blinds; the church too dark with closed blinds. In the winter of the present year (1890) the advisability of inserting stained glass windows was suggested. After some consideration, the consistory agreed to give those desiring it an opportunity to replace with memorial windows the coarse glass in the

sashes. Most of these memorial windows have been made for families rather than for individuals. By adding dates, something of an historical character is included in this change, for it tends to perpetuate the names of families who have supplied its membership through the two hundred years and more of its organization, who have upheld its ordinances, and have worshipped here on this spot through successive generations.

The following are the ministers who have had charge over the church since its organization in 1654:

1. Johannes Megapolensis, born 1603. Sent to America by the Classis of Amsterdam in 1842. He was settled in New York with oversight over the congregations worshipping on Long Island. Died about 1668.

2. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus. First pastor of the collegiate churches on Long Island. Born in Holland 1598. Died in 1676.

3. Henricus Selwyn or Selyns, born in Holland in 1636; had charge chiefly of church in Brooklyn, although he preached occasionally in the church at Flatbush. Died about 1701.

4. Casparus Von Zuren. Returned to Holland 1685.

5. Rudolphus Varick. Preached in the Long Island collegiate churches until 1694.

6. Wilhelmus Lupardus. Preached 1695. Died about 1702.

7. Bernardus Freeman came to America in 1700. Entered upon his ministry here in 1705. Emeritus 1791. Died soon after.

8. Vincentius Antonides. Born 1670. Preached in the Long Island churches. Died 1744.

9. Johannes Arondeus came from Holland 1742; preached in the Long Island churches. He was suspended in 1751, and died about 1754.

10. Antonius Curtenius. Born in Holland 1698; came from Holland 1730. Preached in Hackensack and Schraalenburgh first, afterwards preached in the Long Island churches. Died in 1756.

11. Ulpianus Von Sinderen. Preached in the Long Island churches. He was declared emeritus in 1784. He died July 23, 1796.

12. Johannes Casparus Rubel. Deposed.

13. Martinus Schoonmaker. Born in Ulster Co., New York, 1737. He was the last minister who preached in the Dutch language in this county. He died in 1824.

14. Peter Lowe, born at Kingston 1764. Died 1818.

15. Walter Monteith accepted a call in Schenectady in 1820. Died 1834.

16. Thomas M. Strong, born at Coopers-town, N. Y., 1797. Preached in Flatbush from 1822 to 1861, at which time he died.

17. Cornelius L. Wells, present pastor, born at New Brunswick, N. J., 1833. Called to the ministry of this church 1863.

With the exception of the Rev. Dr. Strong and Rev. Dr. Wells, all these were collegiate ministers preaching in the churches and presiding over the six congregations in this county.

In the early days of settlement the various ministers do not seem to have remained long in charge over the churches, but this century shows the reverse and presents a remarkable record in this respect.

Rev. Dr. Strong remained for nearly forty years in charge of the church at Flatbush. He was removed by death in 1861. He was greatly beloved by his people; the younger members of his congregation looked up to him as a father. He was a man of great learning, with great fluency as a speaker and ease of manner in the pulpit. He was genial and affable in social life, and by his daily conduct exemplified the beauty of the precepts he held up to his people.

Dr. Strong was succeeded by Rev. Dr. C. L. Wells, who was called to the ministry of this church in 1863. The twenty-fifth anniversary of this call was the occasion of a very pleasant celebration given to Dr. Wells by his people, in recognition of their love and esteem for him as their pastor and personal friend. His pastorate has been a very successful one. The church has flourished under his care and the utmost good feeling prevails. The membership has increased, and that, to a great extent, from among the young people. Surely nothing can be more gratifying to the heart of a faithful pastor than this. May he be long continued in his place, with the same encouraging results that have blest his labors in past years.

This church was formerly known as the Reformed Dutch Church. In 1867 the word Dutch was dropped and the distinctive title became "The Reformed Church in America."

In this country the "patrial adjectives" have been retained in many of the Reformed churches to indicate their origin.

The name with us had lost much of its

significance owing to the various nationalities in church membership; because a false impression was created as to the language used in the church service, the change was thought by many to be desirable, and it was accordingly made.

We do not, however, wish to have the fact lost to history that the churches of this denomination were those established by the Holland settlers in America. The doctrines taught are the articles of faith formulated by the reformers in the Netherlands. They had gone through the most terrible struggle recorded on the pages of history, maintaining for some forty years a most unequal combat against bigotry and despotism of Spain, at that time the most formidable power in Europe.

The church at Flatbush was designed, as we have seen in the preceding extract, to supply the needs in the way of public worship of the people in Flatbush, in Flatlands and in Breuckelen. The Rev. Mr. Polhemus, however, seems never to have been able to win the favor of the people of the last named place. He was a man pretty well advanced in years when he took hold of his charge at Flatbush, and while no complaints were ever made as to his neglecting his sacred work, yet from the first the Brooklyn settlers and he did not get along well together. They were quite willing to help the Midwout (Flatbush) folks to build their church as by the Governor's order, but they strenuously objected to help in the work of building a house for the dominie, and it required some of the usual Stuyvesant persuasion, a big oath, or a violent stamp of the silver-mounted wooden leg, to make them bear a helping hand. It was quite a distance from Breuckelen to the church at Flatbush and possibly it was more fashionable for the former people now and again, when the weather was fine and the water smooth, to cross over into Manhattan Island and listen to the words of the Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, one of the most gifted preachers of his time, in the handsome stone church in the fort. At all events they gave Polhemus the cold shoulder. In 1656 the people of Flatbush (Midwout) and Flatlands (Amersfort) asked

their brethren in Breuckelen to help in paying the salary of Brother Polhemus, but this met with polite refusal, as they replied they did not feel disposed to pay for the upkeep of a minister who was of no use to them. They suggested that if Polhemus would agree to preach in their midst on alternate Sundays they would be willing to aid in his support. Possibly they thought this beyond the dominie's physical ability. Stuyvesant and his Council settled the matter by declaring that Polhemus should preach in Breuckelen when the weather permitted. The dominie at first apparently did his best to visit Brooklyn on alternate Sundays, and while the Flatbush folk were satisfied with this the people of Flatlands and the other towns began to complain. So to end the matter Stuyvesant decreed that the dominie was to preach each Sunday forenoon in the church at Flatbush and on alternate Sunday afternoons at Brooklyn and Flatlands. The two towns last named were assessed each 300 guilders and Flatbush 400 guilders on behalf of the dominie's annual salary.

But the Brooklyn people were even then by no means satisfied. They did not care for Mr. Polhemus, did not want him for a pastor, and it looks as though all their agreements were but subterfuges, hoping that the other communities would not live up to them and that thereby the ire of the peppery old Governor would be directed against the other parties to the agreements rather than against themselves. But in 1657 they could bear it no longer and so came out openly in an appeal to Stuyvesant and the Council to be forever rid of the good man. Through their chosen town officials they said, under date January 1, 1657:

The Magistrates of Breuckelen find themselves obliged to communicate to your Honors that to them it seems impossible that they should be able to collect annually 300 guilders from such a poor congregation, as there are many among them who suffered immense losses during the late wars, and principally at the invasion of the savages, by which they have been disabled, so that many, who would

otherwise be willing, have not the power to contribute their share. We must be further permitted to say that we never gave a call to the aforesaid Reverend Polhemus, and never accepted him as our minister; but he intruded himself upon us against our will, and voluntarily preached in the open street, under the blue sky; when, to avoid offense, the house of Joris Dircksen was temporarily offered him here in Breuckelen. It is the general opinion and saying of the citizens and inhabitants of Breuckelen generally, with those living in their neighborhood, that they could not resolve, even when it was in their power to collect the money, to contribute anything for such a poor and meagre service as that with which they have thus far been regaled. Every fortnight, on Sundays, he comes here only in the afternoon for a quarter of an hour, when he only gives us a prayer in lieu of a sermon, by which we can receive very little instruction; while often, while one supposes the prayer or sermon (which ever name might be preferred for it) is beginning, then it is actually at an end, by which he contributes very little to the edification of his congregation. This we experienced on the Sunday preceding Christmas, on the 24th of December last, when we, expecting a sermon, heard nothing but a prayer, and that so short that it was finished before we expected. Now, it is true, it was nearly evening before Polhemus arrived, so that he had not much time to spare, and was compelled to march off and finish so much sooner, to reach his home. This is all the satisfaction—little enough, indeed—which we had during Christmas; wherefore, it is our opinion that we shall enjoy as much and more edification by appointing one among ourselves, who may read to us on Sundays a sermon from the "Apostille Book," as we ever have until now, from any of the prayers or sermons of the Reverend Polhemus. We do not, however, intend to offend the Reverend Polhemus, or assert anything to bring him into bad repute. We mean only to say that his greatly advanced age occasions all this, and that his talents do not accompany him as steadily as in the days of yore; yea, we discover it clearly, that it is not the want of good-will in Polhemus; but as we never did give him a call, we cannot resolve to contribute to his maintenance.

Their pathetic appeal, however, had no effect on the Governor. He held that the ar-

rangement in force should continue, and then the Brooklyn folk neglected to pay their share of the dominie's salary, to the temporal confusion and discomfort of the poor old man. The others, too, seemed to become laggard in their payments. Stuyvesant, however, was equal to the emergency and on July 6, 1658, ordered that no grain should be removed from the fields until all arrearages in the minister's salary had been paid—and paid they at once were. So the dominie was supreme for a year or so longer, encountering roads the poorer and weather the more wretched as his age and infirmities increased.

Then the people of Brooklyn adopted fresh tactics to get rid of his ministrations, by asking permission to call a minister to dwell among themselves and so relieve Polhemus of his tiresome journey. This was agreed to. The Classis in Amsterdam was communicated with, and in September, 1660, the Rev. Henricus Selyns, sometimes described as Henry Solinus and Henricus Selwyn, was installed as minister of Brooklyn, the first of a long line of gifted men who have made the name of the old town famous over the Christian world.

Selyns was born in Amsterdam in 1636, and was descended from a family which for a century previous had furnished a succession of Protestant ministers to the Church in Holland, and his own ability as a preacher had won him high commendation in his native town. He was installed into his pastorate with considerable pomp, the Governor being represented by two of his officials. Stuyvesant seems to have taken kindly to the young minister from the first, and to help him to earn an increased salary he engaged him to spend his Sunday afternoons on his country residence in New York, his famous Bouwerie, and there preach and teach the servants and poor neighbors, black and white. For this Stuyvesant agreed to pay 250 guilders each year, thus bringing up the minister's salary to 600 guilders. Selyns was a man of many accomplishments, a poet, lipping in sacred numbers, and



THE CHURCH AT BROOKLYN, 1766.

now and again in Latin, and he possessed considerable historical acumen and diligence, for he transcribed all the records of the Dutch Church in New York down to his own time, and his transcription, still preserved, has kept alive much of the history of that body which but for his patient labor would long ago have been lost. Cotton Mather valued him highly and said that "he had so nimble a fancy for putting his devout thoughts into verses that upon this, as well as upon greater accounts, he was a David unto the flocks in the wilderness."

Although ushered into his charge with becoming ceremony, Selyns had neither a church nor a congregation. So far as church membership went his flock was enrolled on the books of the Flatbush organization, but in answer to a letter the Rev. Mr. Polhemus sent him a list of those on his roll who resided in Brooklyn (at the Ferry, the Wallabout and Gowanus) including one elder, two deacons and twenty-four others. This epistle probably acted as a letter of dismissal and doubtless the good old dominie was heartily glad to be rid of a people that had proved so rebellious and contumacious. A church building seems to have been erected under Selyns' ministry, or else the services were held in some building set aside for his use, for we find that the people in 1661 petitioned the home authorities for a bell which would not only call the people to worship but would be of service in all time of danger. If a church was there built all trace of it even on paper has disappeared. It seems that the people after a time were not quite satisfied with Selyns' ministrations, their main grievance being that he did not make his home among them, but preferred to reside on Manhattan Island. The congregation had strengthened slowly: in 1661 it had over fifty communicants, but latterly he had some difficulty in collecting his salary, and, probably feeling that the field was not a promising one and experiencing some of the plain speaking which had been used to Polhemus, he tendered his resignation in 1664, giving as his reason

a desire to comply with the request of his aged father that he return to Holland. There he went, returning to America in 1682 to become pastor of the Dutch Church in New Amsterdam, in which service he continued until his death, in 1701.

The spiritual welfare of Brooklyn was thus again placed under the pastoral care of Dominie Polhemus, Schoolmaster Debevoise apparently doing the active work and reading a discourse from an "approved author" each Sabbath. Apparently the people desired a pastor as soon as possible, and probably in the hope of being the better able to induce a desirable one to settle in their midst they decided to erect a substantial church and have it ready for his ministrations when he did come. Accordingly they erected in 1666 on what is now Fulton street, near Lawrence street, about a mile from the Ferry, on the site of a fort, some of the stones of which were used in its walls, what is generally held to be the first church in Brooklyn. It remained in active use for exactly a century, when it was pulled down and a new edifice erected on its site. Stiles describes this, the structure of 1766, as "a large, square edifice, with solid and very thick walls, plastered and whitewashed on every side up to the eaves; the roof as usual ascending to a peak in the centre, capped with an open belfry in which hung a small, sharp-toned bell brought from Holland shortly after its erection, and afterward (1840) hung in the belfry of the district school-house in Middagh street. The interior was plain, dark and very gloomy, so that in summer one could not see to read in it after four o'clock in the afternoon, by reason of its small windows. They were six or eight feet above the floor and filled with stained-glass lights from Holland, representing vines loaded with flowers. The old town of Breuckelen, it will be remembered, comprised at this time several divisions or settlements, each possessing local names—squares and avenues of the new city—Gowanus, Red Hook, Bedford, Cripplegate, Wallabout—and

for all these the old church occupied a very central position." It was pulled down in 1810 and a new building for the congregation erected on what is now Joralemon street.

Although the Rev. Mr. Selyns was undoubtedly the first minister called to Brooklyn, he seems to have been regarded as a part of the establishment of the church at Flatbush, a collegiate pastor, and as such appears to have frequently filled its pulpit. For many years after he left the pastors of the senior Brooklyn church were identical with those of Flatbush. This arrangement fell through—how, it is not exactly clear, probably by a process of evolution—about the beginning of the century, for in 1802, when the Rev. John Barent Johnson was called to the pastorate of the Brooklyn church, his ministrations were to be confined to it. His death took place August 29, 1803, about eleven months after his installation. The congregation remained without a pastor, Flatbush filling the pulpit as regularly as possible, until 1806, when the Rev. Selah Strong Woodhull was installed to the charge. It was under him that the erection of what is known as the third church was brought about. The corner-stone was laid May 15, 1807, by the Rev. Peter Lowe, then one of the ministers of the parent church at Flatbush. It was completed at a cost of \$13,745.53, and dedicated on December 23 of the same year, when the sermon was preached by the Rev. Dr. John H. Livingston.

Mr. Woodhull in 1825 resigned the pastorate on becoming Professor of Ecclesiastical History, etc., in Rutgers College, and the Rev. Ebenezer Mason, son of the famous Dr. John Mason, of New York, became pastor. Two years later another change was made, and the Rev. Peter J. Rouse was installed, October 13, 1828. He was succeeded in 1833 by the Rev. M. W. Dwight, and within a month the congregation began taking steps to erect their present building—the fourth—which was completed and dedicated in May, 1835. The succeeding pastors have been

Revs. A. P. Low Giesen, 1855-59; A. A. Willets, 1860-5; Joseph Kimball, 1865-74; H. Dickson, 1875-1877; Dr. D. N. Vanderveer, 1878-1896; and J. M. Farrar, 1896—.

This survey practically completes the story of the pioneer churches on the island in its different divisions, and the history of the others calling for particular mention on account of their historical or other interest will be found treated in the local sections of this work. We have taken up these churches in their order, just as their respective histories told us they were formed without any heed to their denominational affiliations, and we may now enter on a somewhat wider field of survey by speaking of the introduction, on the island, of the various great divisions of the Christian fold.

The churches at Southold and Southampton were, properly speaking, Congregational, and as such their story might be held to mark the date of the advent of that body, while if we could accept the church at Hempstead, of which we have spoken as Presbyterian, then the advent of that body is also determined. Such affiliations, however, would be strenuously objected to. The institution of the church at Flatbush in 1654 gives that date beyond question as that on which the Reformed Dutch church began its labors. For a time the island was given over to these two bodies (if we may be permitted to class the early Congregationalists or Presbyterians as one body, which they practically were), in which the Dutch church showed the union of Church and State, with the authority of the latter paramount, while the other was purely democratic—church and state combined, with the church as the ruling influence.

But they were not permitted very long to retain their undisputed sway over the spiritual destinies of Long Island, for in 1702 we find that the Episcopalian body began with the advent to the island of the Rev. George Keith, whom we have already met in a previous chapter. He was accompanied by the Rev.

Peter (or Patrick, the names there being interchangeable) Gordon, who, it seems, had been sent out to America as a missionary by the English "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." His work on Long Island was assigned for him before his departure, and so was his title of "Rector of Queens County." His acquaintance with his rectorial field was, however, very brief. He was suffering from fever when he reached Jamaica, which was to be his headquarters, and about a week later, July 25, 1702, he was dead. He was buried beneath the stone church or meeting-house which had been erected about 1700 by the trustees of Jamaica by means of a tax levied on the inhabitants, after a plan of voluntary subscription had fallen through. On that fact was based one of the most noted conflicts between Church and State which the history of the island records.

When the church and its adjoining minister's house were completed they were given over to the Presbyterian minister by vote of a town meeting, although there was some understanding that other Protestant denominations were to be permitted to use the church for their services when occasion required. In this way Keith seems to have preached from its pulpit. When Lord Cornbury became Governor in 1702 he ordered the English law of uniformity in religion to be enforced throughout the province and ordained that all meeting-houses and parsonages erected out of public moneys, by tax or otherwise, should belong to the Episcopal body, which he declared to be the established church. The missionaries of that body, thanks to this viceregal patronage, were then very active, and the adherents to the Church of England in Jamaica were consoled by frequent visits from them. Emboldened by Lord Cornbury's order, they not only held services in the stone church, but claimed its possession as a right. The crisis came on July 25, 1703, when the Rev. John Bartow visited Jamaica. On the day before he announced that he would hold serv-

ice in the stone church, but the Presbyterian minister got into the building on the following morning ahead of him and so held the fort. Bartow walked into the sacred edifice and ordered John Hubbard, the Presbyterian divine, to stop his service. This the latter refused. In the afternoon the tables were turned, for the Episcopalian got into the building before the Presbyterian arrived. The latter announced that he would preach under a tree and so drew away the bulk of Mr. Bartow's auditors. Not only that: those who went out carried with them benches and returned for more, so as to make Mr. Hubbard's hearers comfortable, and the noise and confusion that ensued forced the "established" divine to stop for a time. He finished, however, locked the door of the church, and handed the key to the sheriff as the representative of law and order. The other body soon afterward broke a window in the church wall, helped a boy through the aperture, and, on his opening the door from the inside, entered the church and put back the benches. They, however, took away the pulpit cushion, which they would not permit any to use but the Presbyterian minister.

Cornbury, when the matter was reported to him, summoned Mr. Hubbard and the heads of his congregation before him, laid down the law and threatened them with its penalties. He also defined the statute as to the church building itself and forbade Mr. Hubbard from preaching in it. As it was either submission or prosecution, they submitted, and the stone church passed from their hands. But their humiliation was not yet ended.

In 1704 the Rev. William Urquhart was appointed "Rector of Queens County," and when he arrived at Jamaica and viewed his domain over he claimed the house and lands on which the Rev. Mr. Hubbard dwelt as a parsonage, they having been set aside for the use of the preacher in the stone church by the same process of taxation. This view was indorsed by Cornbury, and on July 4, 1704,

the sheriff ordered Hubbard to vacate, which he did, and the triumph of the Episcopal church in Jamaica was complete. The further history of the stone church litigation really belongs to the local story of Jamaica.

There is a good deal of similarity between the early history of the Episcopal Church in Hempstead and in Jamaica except in the way of disturbance and legal conflict. In the former place work was begun about 1701, by the Rev. John Thomas, who was sent out from England as a missionary and given charge of Hempstead by Lord Cornbury. He also took possession of the old Presbyterian church building and minister's house, but the Presbyterians at the time had no minister and had dwindled down in numbers, so that Mr. Thomas, who appears to have been a soft-mannered and agreeable sort of man, a veritable peacemaker, not only induced them to acquiesce in the charge without much grumbling, but persuaded many of the weak-kneed brethren among them to become regular attendants at his service. So the "established church" continued slowly to spread, backed by the Gubernatorial authority, and in some instances stiffened by royal gifts; for we read that in 1706 Queen Anne "was pleased to allow the churches of Hempstead, Jamaica, Westchester, Rye and Staten Island each a large Bible, Common Prayer Book, Book of Homilies, a cloth for the pulpit, a communion table, a silver chalice and paten." Churches were established at Newtown in 1734 (the charge of the rector at Jamaica extended over Newtown and Flushing), at Flushing in 1746, at Huntington in 1750 and at Brookhaven in 1752; but it was not until 1766 that one was established in Brooklyn. This date seems to have been fixed by tradition, for there is really no evidence to substantiate it.

In 1774 a lottery was proposed for the erection of a church conformable to the doctrines of the Church of England, but the matter either was unsuccessful or was allowed to be dropped owing to the political exigencies of the times. During the British occupation

there is no doubt Episcopal services were regularly held and some of the discourses then preached by the Rev. James Sayre are still preserved. It was not until 1784, after the cloud of battle had passed away, that those who adhered to the Episcopal Church set up a tabernacle of their own. Says Furman: "It scarcely took the form of a church: there were few, very few Episcopalians in this town or country at that period,—so few that they were not able to settle a minister among them and were supplied with occasional services from the clergymen of the city of New York, for which purpose they assembled in a room of the old one-and-a-half-story brick house known as No. 40 Fulton street, Brooklyn, then called the Old Ferry Road, owned by Abiel Titus, Esq. There is no reason to believe that this little congregation was ever incorporated as a church or had any regular officers. The first regularly established Episcopal church in this town or county was that formed in the year 1786. The congregation was at first very small, not having in it more than fifteen or sixteen families, and they were not able to go to much expense about erecting a church. They therefore hired the old and long one-story house owned by Marvin Richardson on the northwesterly corner of Fulton and Middagh streets." The Rev. George Wright was chosen as the pastor of this little flock, and from this humble beginning sprang the now famous Church of St. Ann's.

The Methodist Episcopal church apparently antedated the Established Church of England on Long Island. The pioneer preacher was Captain Thomas Webb, of the British army, who held services in a house he rented in New York, and in 1766 frequently crossed over to Brooklyn and held forth there. He had some relatives in Jamaica and preached in that village regularly, building up, Dr. Prime tells us, a society of about twenty-four persons,—half of them negroes. The progress made, however, was slow. In 1785 a congregation was formed in Sands street, in

a cooper's shop, by Wollman Hickson, and from that beginning developed the once famous Methodist church in Sands street, now only a memory, although its name is still retained in another structure. In 1793 Joseph Totten and George Strebeck were appointed to take charge of the entire island, laboring alternately one month in Brooklyn and a month elsewhere. In 1794 the Brooklyn church was incorporated and in 1795 its people had completed the purchase of a site and erected a place of worship on Sands street, the site now being part of the territory occupied by the big bridge. In 1795 its membership was given as twenty-three whites and twelve negroes. In 1820 a church was established at Southold, and another ten years later at Riverhead.

Although we read of the appearance of Baptists in America as early as 1662, it was not till long afterward that the denomination really won a foothold on Long Island. A congregation was formed at Oyster Bay in 1700, one at Brookhaven in 1747, and one at Newtown in 1809; but it was not until 1823 that a church was organized at Brooklyn,—with ten members.

In another chapter we tell of the early experiences of the Quakers in this country and their reception at the hands of the Dutch authorities and Governor Stuyvesant, and so need only remark that the earliest trace of a meeting-house is found in the story of Oyster Bay, where we are told one was set up in 1659. The visit of George Fox to America in 1672 did much to strengthen the Friends, and we know that he made several visits to Gravesend where the doctrines of his people had been known and welcomed to a more or less extent since 1657. It was at Jericho, a few miles from Oyster Bay, that the first Long Island meeting-house of the society, of which we have record, was erected, in 1689, and in 1694 another was erected at Flushing. About the last named year small houses of worship were also erected by the Friends at Bethpage and Matinicoek. A meeting-house

was maintained at Brooklyn before 1730, and slow progress was made until in 1845 they had twelve meeting-houses in Kings and Queens counties and two in Suffolk. It can hardly be said that their numbers have much increased, compared, at least, with other religious bodies.

Oyster Bay township was for many years the centre of Quaker activity on Long Island, owing to the zeal and work of Elias Hicks, a most remarkable man, of whose labors and life an account appears elsewhere in this work.

The Roman Catholic Church had a late beginning. There were few of that faith on Long in early times, and it was not until after the Revolutionary War that we find traces of the visits of missionary priests to the island; but the results of their labor appears to have amounted practically to nothing. Early in the present century quite a number of members of that church were domiciled in Brooklyn, but they crossed the ferry and worshipped in old St. Peter's Church in Barclay street, New York. The late Cardinal McCloskey, in 1868, when laying the corner-stone of the still unfinished cathedral on Lafayette avenue, referred to this when he said:

There are many here who hardly hoped to see this day. Of that number I can mention one, and it is he who now addresses you. He well remembers the day when there was neither Catholic church, nor chapel, nor priest, nor altar, in all these surroundings. He remembers when, as a youth, when Sunday morning came, he, as one of a happy group, wended his way along the shore to what was then called Hick's Ferry to cross the river, not in elegant and graceful steamers as now, but in an old and dingy horse-boat; going, led by the hand of tender and loving parents, to assist at the sacrifice of mass in the old brick church of St. Peter's in Barclay street.

In fact it seems that the rectors of St. Peter's looked upon Long Island as part of their parish, and for many years were in the habit of sending priests across the ferry to hold services and perform the various offices

of the church. Mass was celebrated, at times in private houses, and while smaller bodies would have rushed in and built a church under the circumstances, the Catholics were hindered from doing so by the scarcity of priests, their own poverty and the desire of the church authorities not to be burdened in their spiritual work by hopeless accumulations of debt. In the beginning of the second decade of the nineteenth century, however, the then existing condition of things was really regarded as against the interests of Roman Catholicism, and on January 7, 1822, a meeting was held to consider the advisability of undertaking the erection of a church building. It was then found that only seventy of the proposed parishioners were able to contribute in money or in labor to the project, but it was finally determined to proceed. Cornelius Henry offered as a gift a piece of property at Court and Congress streets (afterward, 1836, used as a site for St. Paul's church); but it was thought that the eight lots at Jay and Chapel streets would be much more convenient and these were secured. The price paid was \$700. The erection of the building was at once proceeded with, and on August 28, 1823, St. James' church started in its history. From St. James' the church spread out all over the island. In 1835 a chapel was built in Flushing, in 1838 another at Jamaica. A preaching station was established at Islip in 1840, at Smithtown, at Sag Harbor and so on. In 1845 there were ten Roman Catholic churches on Long Island: now there the eighty-eight in the borough of Brooklyn alone, and twenty-five in the borough of Queens.

Of the other religious bodies we need give little more than the dates of their first being represented by actual church buildings erected by them. The Hebrews in Brooklyn in 1856, having previously crossed over to New York to worship, hired a room which they fitted up as a synagogue, and it was retained until the Synagogue Beth Israel was built and opened for service in 1862. The Unitarians date from 1833, the Universalists from 1841, and the Lutherans from 1847.

A curious feature of the story of religion on Long Island is the long and patient struggle of the Swedenborgians. Dr. Prime in his history spoke of their first church as follows: "In 1813 or 1814 a member of the Congregational church at Baiting Hollow by the name of Horton imbibed the doctrines of Emanuel Swedenborg and in 1815 set up a separate place of worship. In 1831 a New Jerusalem church was organized, consisting of thirteen members. In 1839 a house of worship twenty-four by thirty-six feet was erected, but until recently Mr. Horton has been the principal conductor of their services. Since November, 1844, the Rev. Mr. Carll has been employed here a part of the time. From fifteen to twenty families attend. The present (1845) number of members is twenty-four."

In 1839 one of the members of that church, Elijah Terry, organized a society in Riverhead, with ten members. They built a church and school-house combined and engaged part of the labors of Rev. Mr. Carll, but made no further progress in numerical strength. It was not until 1856 that a Swedenborgian church was organized in Brooklyn, and it now has three, with a united membership of 249.



CHAPTER XIII.

PERSECUTIONS—RELIGIOUS—THE TROUBLES OF THE EARLY QUAKERS—TRIALS FOR WITCHCRAFT.

IT is often stated by newspaper and other writers—sometimes even by reputable historical writers—that Long Island has been free from those persecutions which form a blot on the history of some of the other sections of this continent. Certainly, they tell us, there were persecutions on Long Island—there is no use denying it—but they were not such as came from the malignant passions of the people, passions aroused by ignorance, or hysterical enthusiasm, or prejudice, or popular caprice. Even those who admit the existence of such a blot assure us that what persecutions there were were official rather than popular. “It is true,” says Dr. Prime (*History*, page 57), “that at an early period the Dutch Government of the New Netherland enacted severe laws against the Quakers and other sects whom they regarded as heretics; and in numerous other instances these laws were enforced with a degree of cruelty that was shocking to every feeling of humanity. But the people had no hand in the enactment of these laws and but few of them could be induced to take any part in their execution.” But we must remember that these were persecutions, and also that these persecutions were rendered possible in spite of the arbitrary and paternal rule of the Dutch Governors only by the fact that the people either acquiesced in them or were indifferent to them. Obnoxious laws—that is, laws which were really obnoxious to the hearts and consciences of the people—could not

easily be enforced in New Netherland even in the days of the Dutch regime, and a people who could defy Governor Stuyvesant and bring him to terms were not likely to be coerced into actively supporting any law of which they did not more or less heartily approve. The Director was a powerful potentate in the days when old Governor Pietrus stumped about, but he needed the help of the people when action was necessary.

There certainly were times of persecution on Long Island, as elsewhere; but they were never carried to the same extent as in many parts of New England; and indeed it seems to us that so long as a man behaved himself even in the western end of the island where the Dutch influence was most secure, his religious or other sentiments were seldom, if ever, interfered with. When we went around proclaiming his differences with the ruling regime, or with the views held by the mass of the people, then trouble began. In the eastern end, where Puritan ideas held sway, each community passed judgment on each new-comer, and if he did not prove acceptable he was told to pass on. If he obeyed quietly, that was the end of the matter. But even among the Long Island Puritans a Quaker or other heretic was never persecuted for the sake of his belief unless he persisted in proclaiming that belief “from the housetops.”

That was the trouble with the Quakers at the beginning of their story in New Netherland, and that really led to all that was done

against them in the way of persecution on Long Island. The Friends at that time were an aggressive body; and in the New World, where they expected that freedom of conscience would prevail, they never lost an opportunity of preaching the Word and proclaiming their doctrines. This aggressiveness led to their persecution in New England and to the severe penal laws there enacted against them. But penal laws have never yet been able to kill religious sentiment. Even the scaffold did not crush out Quakerism in Boston, and public whippings and banishments and confiscations only served to show that these people were perfectly willing to suffer and even to die for the sake of the dictates of their conscience. They aimed to bring about a universal religion, they had no respect for mere forms, and believed the spirit could and did find utterance even through the most ignorant voice, and they put women, as public exhorters and in religious and all other matters, on an equality with men. They scowled at form, at "isms," at lavishness in dress, and at mere human authority, whether manifested on a throne or in a pulpit. To them the theocratic notions of New England were as utterly unworthy of regard as the claims of the Church of Rome or that of England. It was a theocracy founded on work; their theocracy was founded of the Spirit; it was a theocracy founded on worldly principles, on arms, on oaths, preserving social distinctions and upholding the authority of the civil magistrate, the representative of royalty, a combination at once of the cross and the sword; their theocracy was measured only by love. Their ideas of religious toleration were complete and thoroughgoing, the ideas of the Puritans on that question were bounded by their meeting places and their church edicts. Certainly these early Quakers were extravagant in many ways, even at times extravagant enough to shock all sense of decency and propriety; but they were terribly in earnest and openly and vigorously proceeded, as they declared the Spirit impelled them, to denounce

what they regarded as the shortcomings of the Puritan system as practiced in New England as soon as they reached that favored land and surveyed its fleshpots and extravagances. To the Puritan, regarding himself as the most perfect product of the religious spirit of the time, the representative of the chosen prophets of old, the highest development of religious thought and toleration, the extravagances of the Quakers, and in particular the extravagances of the Quaker women, were all wrong and needed to be repressed with a strong hand; and the strong hand at once put forth all its strength.

In August, 1675, a boat arrived in New York Bay from New England, having on board eleven Quakers who had been expelled from that colony. Two of them, women, as soon as they landed in New Amsterdam, began preaching on the streets to the astonishment and disgust of old Peter Stuyvesant, a straight-laced, single-minded supporter of the Dutch church. He did not understand the Quakers' theology, and as they seemed to him to mix questions of public policy along with their religion he soon pronounced their sentiments and ongoings seditious, heretical and abominable. That settled the Quaker question and peace of mind in New Amsterdam for the time being.

The Quaker visitors soon scattered in pursuance of their mission to disseminate their doctrines, but at least one of them, Robert Hodgson, went to Long Island and as he journeyed held conventicles by the way. He was arrested for this at Hempstead and promptly lodged in jail, along with two women who had entertained him in their home. Stuyvesant at once ordered the three prisoners to be sent to New Amsterdam, where he seems to have released the women after giving them the supreme benefit of a piece of his mind. Hodgson, however, was to feel the full force of the ire of the doughty Governor. He was sentenced to two years' imprisonment at hard labor or pay a fine of 600 guilders. Such a fine was beyond his power to liquidate and he

was quickly put to the alternative. Chained to a wheelbarrow, he was ordered to work, but refused, and was thereupon lashed by a negro until he fainted. He remained in prison for some months, scourged at frequent intervals until insensibility rendered the infliction of further pain unnecessary, and was humiliated in many ways. The cruelty practiced toward him was brutal in the extreme and its effects were threatening even his life. Then from sheer pity at his awful condition the Governor's sister interposed on his behalf and he was released, under a new sentence of banishment from the province.

The Governor seems never to have lost his enmity to the Quakers; but it is possible that his venom was aroused by his political notions and by reasons other than religious. He certainly did not love their religious views, yet had they entertained these quietly it is possible he would not have bothered his head about them. But he hated to see women preaching in public, and especially in the public streets, and he was opposed to conventicles or unauthorized religious meetings, because such gatherings, especially among people of English birth or New England associations, might be used to hatch conspiracies against the State or colony. So he determined to stamp out conventicles whenever he found them, paying particular attention to Long Island, which was peculiarly subject to infection from Connecticut and Rhode Island. Prosecutions were accordingly directed from time to time against William and John Bowne, Henry Townsend, John Townsend, Samuel Spicer, John Tilton, William Noble, Edward Hart and Edward Feake, all of whom openly confessed their adherence to the doctrines of the Quakers. Most of these (including Spicer, Tilton and the Bowne family) were residents of Gravesend, and several, it is said, had accompanied Lady Moody from New England. In fact her ladyship's home was the headquarters of Quakerism, although she did not seem to have embraced all its teachings until a later period in her career.

The Townsends belonged to Flushing and the story of their persecution was different from that of the others, inasmuch as it evoked a spirited protest from their fellow citizens. On September 15, 1657, Henry Townsend was adjudged guilty of calling conventicles and fined eight pounds (Flanders), with the alternative of leaving the province. On the news of this becoming public the people of Flushing and Jamaica held a public meeting and drew up a remonstrance to the Governor in which they admonished him that Scripturally he was wrong in his policy of suppression, and that he was also acting in disregard of the laws of the Province, and against the tenor and the purport of the patent under which these two communities were prospering. This document was signed by Edward Hart, the clerk of the meeting, Tobias Feaks, the local Sheriff, and by William Noble, Nicholas Parsell, William Thorne, Sr., Michael Milner, William Thorne, Jr., Henry Townsend, Nicholas Blackford, George Wright, Edward Terk, John Foard, Mirabel Free, Henry Bamtell, John Stoar, N. Cole, Benjamin Hubbard, Edward Hart, John Maidon, John Townsend, Edward Farrington, Philip Ed, William Pidgion, George Blee, Elias Doughtre, Antonie Field, Richard Horton, Nathaniel Coe, Robert Field, Sr., and Robert Field, Jr.

As will be seen by these names the Dutch population seemingly took no interest in this affair and it was left for those of British stock to take the initiative in this skirmish for religious liberty. Very likely all of those who signed the document were themselves Quakers, or had pronounced leanings toward Quakerism; but be that as it may there is no reason to doubt that so far as the Dutch were concerned they were heartily in accord with the position assumed by Stuyvesant. Sheriff Feaks presented the remonstrance to the Governor and was promptly arrested. Farrington and Noble, two of the signers who held office as Magistrates, were arrested as soon as possible after the redoubtable Governor Peter had deciphered their names in the re-

monstrance, or Nicasius De Sille, his Attorney General, had deciphered them for him. Clerk Hart was also called in question, admitted drawing up the remonstrance and was thereupon promptly arrested. Townsend was again fined. On January 8, 1658, the Magistrates of Jamaica (Rustdorp) turned informers and conveyed word to the irate Governor that Henry Townsend was still having conventicles in his house. So he was cited to appear before Stuyvesant. His brother John was also cited, but as his connection with the whole matter was not clear he was held under only £12 bail to ensure his appearance when desired by the authorities.

The position of Henry was more grave, and we quote from Thompson:

On the 15th of January Henry Townsend attended and was told by the Attorney General that as he had treated the placards of the Director General and Council with contempt and persisted in lodging Quakers, he should be condemned in an amende of £100 (Flanders) to be an example for other transgressors and contumelious offenders of the good order and placards of the Director General and Council in New Netherland, and so to remain arrested till the said amende be paid, besides the costs and mises of Justice.

On the 28th Sheriff Feaks was brought from prison, and "though," says the record, "he confessed he had received an order of the Director General not to admit into the afore-said village (Jamaica) any of that heretical and abominable sect called Quakers, or procure them lodgings, yet did so in the face of the placards, and, what was worse, was a leader in composing a seditious and detestable chartabel, delivered by him and signed by him, and his accomplices, wherein they justify the abominable sect of the Quakers, who treat with contempt all political and ecclesiastical authority and undermine the foundations of all government and religion." He was therefore degraded from his office and sentenced to be banished or pay an amende of 200 guilders.

On the 26th of March, 1658, the Gover-

nor, in order to prevent as much as possible the consequences of Quaker influence among the people, resolved to change the municipal government of the town of Flushing, and therefore, after formally pardoning the town for its mutinous orders and resolutions, announced that "in future I shall appoint a sheriff, acquainted not only with the Dutch language but with Dutch practical law, and that in future there shall be chosen seven of the most reasonable and respectable of the inhabitants to be called tribunes or townsmen, and whom the sheriff and magistrates shall consult in all cases; and a tax of twelve stivers per morgen is laid on the inhabitants for the support of an orthodox minister, and such as do not sign a written submission to the same in six weeks may dispose of their property at their pleasure and leave the soil of this government."

On the council records of January 8, 1661 (says Thompson), it is stated that the Governor addressed the people of Jamaica, informing them that he had received their petition for a minister to baptize some of their children, and their information that the Quakers and other sects held private conventicles. He tells them that he had dispatched his deputy sheriff, Resolve Waldron, and one of his clerks, Nicholas Bayard, to take notice thereof, and requiring the inhabitants to give exact information where and in what house such unlawful conventicles were kept, what men or women had been present who called the meeting, and of all the circumstances appertaining thereto. In consequence of this inquisitorial espionage of the Governor's deputy, Henry Townsend was a third time dragged to the city and again incarcerated in the dungeons at Fort Amsterdam. On the day following he and Samuel Spicer, who had also given entertainment to a Quaker at his mother's house in Gravesend, were brought from their loathsome prison. It was proved by witnesses procured for the occasion that Townsend had given lodging to a Quaker, and besides notifying his neighbors had even allowed him to preach at his house and in his presence, also that Spicer was present both at the meeting at Jamaica and Gravesend and procured lodging for the Quaker at his

mother's house. They were accordingly condemned in an amende of 600 guilders each, in conformity to the placard respecting conventicles, and to be imprisoned until such amende be paid. And further, that Henry Townsend be banished out of the province, for an example to others. The widow Spicer, mother of Samuel, was also arrested, accused and condemned to an amende of £15 (Flan-
ders).

The case of John Tilton and his wife, Mary, is also interesting. Tilton settled in Gravesend at the same time as Lady Moody and probably accompanied her from New England, where doubtless he got his first impressions of the doctrines of the Friends, the "abominable sect," according to Stuyvesant, "who vilify both the political magistrates and the ministers of God's holy Word." Tilton and his wife were arrested October 5, 1662, and lodged in the prison at Fort Amsterdam. They remained in durance vile for a few days, when they were brought before the Council, found guilty of entertaining Quakers and attending conventicles and ordered to leave the province before the 20th of November following, under the alternative penalty of being publicly whipped. Their sentences seem to have been remitted, however, probably through the influence of Lady Moody, for Mary Tilton continued to reside at Gravesend until her death, May 23, 1683, and John Tilton also maintained his home there until he, too, passed away, in 1688. He was, we take it, a man of deep religious sentiment and so continued to the end, most probably becoming more and more devoted to Quakerism as the time went on, for by his will, which he had drawn up about a year before his death, he bequeathed a piece of land as a burial ground "for all persons in ye everlasting truthe of the Gospel."

In many ways the most notable of all Stuyvesant's experiences with Quakers lay around the case of John Bowne, of Flushing, not only because the extreme measure which he adopted showed the malignancy of his feel-

ings toward these people, but because it brought down upon him, what he probably felt more keenly than he could any other form of misfortune, a clear-cut rebuke from his home Government and the nullification of the sentence he imposed.

On September 1, 1662, Bowne was arrested, and on the 14th of that month the Governor and his Council considered his case and imposed a fine of £25 on his being found guilty of lodging Quakers and permitting conventicles to be held in his house. Being a man of substance, he was permitted at once to go at large; but as he showed no intention of paying his fine he was again arrested. On Bowne peremptorily refusing to pay, the Governor determined to make a terrible example of him and ordered him to be deported to Holland and there be punished by the highest authorities and in a manner in keeping with the enormity of the case. Accompanying Bowne was a formal letter on his offense, drawn up by the Governor and Council and addressed to the Directors of the West India Company, "honorable, right respectable gentlemen," Stuyvesant called them.

In the communication the authorities were told how the Governor's "placards" against Quakerism were treated with contempt, how the local authorities complained about the "unsufferable obstinacy" of these people, and so forth. "Among others as one of their principal leaders, named John Bowne, who for his transgressions was, in conformity to the placards, condemned in an amende of 150 guilders in seawant, who has been placed under arrest more than three months for his unwillingness to pay, obstinately persisting in his refusal, in which he still continues, so that we at last resolved, or rather were compelled, to transport him in ship from this province in the hope that others might, by it, be discouraged. If, nevertheless, by these means no more salutary impression is made upon others, we shall, though against our inclinations, be compelled to prosecute such persons in a more severe manner, on which

we previously solicit to be favored with your honors' wise and far-seeing judgment."

Bowne's case was patiently investigated by the West India Company at Amsterdam, and he was finally set at liberty and declared free to return to his home across the sea whenever he so listed. Besides, the company sent the Governor a letter, dated Amsterdam, April 6, 1663, conveying a most severe and pointed rebuke for his entire policy against the Quakers, saying, "Although it is our anxious desire that similar and other sectarians (Quakers, etc.) may not be found among us, yet we doubt extremely the policy of adopting rigorous measures against them. In the youth of your existence you ought rather to encourage than check the population of the colony. The consciences of men ought to be free and unshackled as long as they continue moderate, peaceable, inoffensive and not hostile to the Government. Such have been the maxims of prudence and toleration by which the Magistrates of this city have been governed, and the consequences have been that the oppressed and persecuted of every country have found among us an asylum from distress. Follow in the same steps and you will be blessed."

The blood in Peter Stuyvesant's veins doubtless bounded with such vigor when he read this stinging but polite rebuke that he must have felt it circulate even in the silver ferrule of his wooden leg! We can imagine how he swore; but it was the beginning of the end; his reign was virtually over and his whims and prejudices and opinions were beginning to lose their authority. Unknown to him then, the enemy was almost at his gates, and by the time John Bowne reached New Amsterdam on his return from Europe the Province was in the hands of the British and Stuyvesant had retired to his Bouwerie, to nurse his wrath and moralize over his fallen greatness as best he could. It is said that he afterward acquired a measure of respect for Bowne and was impelled to regard him as a good, honest citizen. That we doubt. But

the Governor was himself an honest man, a man of undoubted courage, and he probably could not help entertaining a feeling of admiration for the man who had worsted him in the height of his power and had drawn down upon him the frowns of those whom he duteously regarded as "the salt of the earth."

But Governor Stuyvesant was not the only persecutor of the Quakers in Long Island. The same prejudice existed in the eastern division of the island against these people that existed in the west where the Dutch ruled, possibly because the people in the east were in touch with the dwellers in New England, and the stories of the doings of, and against, these religious enthusiasts aroused the same sentiment of animosity east of Oyster Bay that existed in Boston and Rhode Island. We find a notable instance of this in the history of Southold. One of the most outspoken and troublesome of the New England Quakers, Humphrey Norton, made a name for himself there by the force of his denunciations against the Puritan preachers and by the assiduity with which he wrote insulting letters to the Magistrates wherever he sojourned. He had no sooner reached Southold on his travels than he went to its church, interrupted good old Dominie Youngs in his discourse, denounced the local authorities, and raised a disturbance all around. This was more than Southold could endure: so Norton was at once placed in confinement and as soon as possible sent to Connecticut for trial. That event took place in March, 1658, when he was duly convicted, after conducting himself in "an insolent and boisterous" way in the presence of the judges. After careful consideration these Solons declared that "the least they could do and discharge good conscience towards God" was to order Norton to pay a fine of £20, to be severely whipped, to be branded with the letter H upon his hand, and then to be banished from the jurisdiction of the court. This was a pretty cumulative array of punishments; but certainly Norton's manner and methods were not such as to inspire much sympathy

for his religious views; and in his case, at all events, he was probably punished as much for being a general disturber of the peace, and for his outspoken contempt for the lawful rulers of the people, as for his theological tenets. In the eastern end of the island the Quakers were regarded as malefactors and as people to be shunned, but this seems to have been the only instance when the law was invoked against one of them and pushed to its limit. But it was not for nearly a century later that the animus against the Friends subsided, and by that time these people had themselves thrown off much of the vehemence and angularities which had for a long time raised up enemies against them wherever they went.

Under the British Government they found no more scope for their antics than they had experienced under doughty old Peter. In the opening of the eighteenth century we read of a case which created a great deal of interest in its day, and with a recapitulation of its incidents we may fittingly close this section of the present chapter.

One of the strangest and most erratic of the early preachers in America was George Keith, who was born at Aberdeen, Scotland, in 1645. He was educated at Mareschal College, with the view of becoming a Presbyterian clergyman. Soon after he was graduated, Keith renounced Presbyterianism and joined the Society of Friends. He was then induced by the leading Quakers in his native city to emigrate to America, with the view not only of improving his own temporal position but also of helping to spread their doctrines in the New World. He arrived at New York in 1684, and for four years was Surveyor of New Jersey. In 1689 he removed to Philadelphia, where he conducted a Friends' school, but that occupation was too quiet and monotonous to suit his notions, and he soon gave it up. We next find him traveling through the country like a Quaker Don Quixote trying to win people over to the views of the Society. In New England he engaged in heated controversies with Increase Mather, Cotton

Mather and others, and he made considerable commotion, but, so far as can be made out, few converts. On his return to Philadelphia, being in a belligerent mood, he quarreled with the Quakers there, the quarrel being undoubtedly caused by his own infirm temper, his own sense of the failure of his mission, and to some peculiar innovations he advocated and which none of the brethren seemed disposed to listen to. Then he went to England and laid his whole case before William Penn; but that leader denounced him as an apostate and Keith was excommunicated from the Society, as completely as the gentle Quakers could excommunicate anybody.

Then Keith founded a religious denomination of his own, which he called the Christian or Baptist Quakers (properly called the Keithians), and in which he had a chance for ventilating some original views he held on the millennium and concerning the transmigration of souls. The Keithians, however, did not hold long together, and in 1701 its founder was a full-fledged and enthusiastic minister of the Church of England! Here, probably, because years had softened the natural contentiousness of his disposition, or the church itself allowed more latitude for individual views on various doctrinal matters, he found a secure foothold. Nay, more, he found an opportunity for repaying the Society of Friends for its rather summary treatment of him. He was sent as a missionary to Pennsylvania and New Jersey, with the view of converting, or perverting, as many Quakers as possible, and he afterward was wont to boast that in that expedition some 700 Friends were by his instrumentality received into communion with the English Church. It was then that he visited Long Island. Soon after his return to England he was appointed vicar of Edburton, in Essex, and in that beautiful parish his declining years were spent in tranquillity.

Keith was a man of a decidedly superior cast of intellect, an eloquent and attractive speaker and preacher, an able and ready con-

troversialist, and, but for his choleric disposition, would have lived a life of more than ordinary usefulness and might even have attained to real power and eminence. He was a voluminous writer, and in the fifty or more volumes, some in bulky quarto, or pamphlets which we know to have come from his pen, we can trace the current of his religious views through all their changes. He appears in them all to have been singularly honest, made no attempt to conceal or belittle his own denominational changes and even published retractions of his own published writings. His later works were mainly taken up with what he regarded as the fallaciousness of Quakerism, and he attacked the Society of Friends from every point of view and with the utmost savagery!

On March 24, 1702, Samuel Bownas left England, as a missionary from the Society of Friends, and landed at Baltimore. From there after a while he started out on a preaching expedition, but wherever he went he was followed by Keith, who by that time had fairly entered upon his campaign against his former co-religionists, and the two passed through Pennsylvania and New Jersey to Long Island, the one preaching the Gospel of love, the other virtually the "gospel" of hate. At Hempstead, on November 21, 1702, Bownas preached in the home of Thomas Pearsall. Then knowing the despicable attitude of the reigning Governor, Lord Cornbury, toward all shades of sectarianism, Keith, finding he could silence Bownas in no other way, manipulated matters so that information of the meeting should be laid before the magistracy. As a result Bownas was arrested on November 29, while engaged in a "conventicle" in a house at Flushing. He was taken to Jamaica and given an examination before Justices Joseph Smith, Edward Burroughs, John Smith and Jonathan Whitehead; but the result of the hearing was never in doubt, although it is said that Whitehead not only sympathized with the prisoner but would have set him at liberty. He was ordered to give bail in £2,000 to answer, but

he replied that he would give no bail, not even were it reduced to three-half pence. Justice Whitehead expressed his willingness to provide the bail, but the prisoner remained obdurate and was sent to prison for three months. He passed the days of his incarceration in learning how to make shoes, in which he ultimately became so proficient that he was able to earn fifteen shillings a week and so support himself wherever he went.

In February, 1703, Bownas was duly brought to trial at a special Oyer and Terminer Court held in Jamaica, with Chief Justice Bridges and Justices Robert Miller, Thomas Willet, John Jackson and Edward Burroughs as associates. A grand jury was impanelled, consisting of Richard Cornell, Ephraim Goulding, John Clayer, Isaac Hicks, Robert Hubbs, Reginald Mott, Richard Valentine, Nathaniel Coles, Joseph Dickerson, Isaac Doughty, Samuel Emery, John Smith, John Sering, John Oakley, Samuel Hallet, Richard Alsop, John Hunt, James Clement and William Bloodgood, men whose memory should ever be held in honor by all who value the blessings of religious liberty and toleration. An indictment against Bownas was prescribed to this Grand Jury for consideration and approval, but it was returned to the bench indorsed "Ignoramus," the legal term formerly used on a bill of indictment when there was not deemed sufficient evidence to convict or sufficient ground to form an offense. The Judges appear to have stormed and threatened, but the members of the Grand Jury not only remained unmoved but even threatened the Judges in their turn. Bownas was re-committed to prison, Judge Bridges ordering him to be confined more closely than ever and threatening even to send him to England in chains. The little crisis created quite a commotion and Keith made it the excuse for issuing a pamphlet on the case full of the vituperation of which he was such a master and which so vilified Bownas that it defeated its purpose and added to the number of the Quaker's friends. One of the Grand Jurors,

Thomas Hicks, visited Bownas in prison and comforted him to the best of his ability, assuring him that the threat to send him to England could not be carried out, as it was in direct opposition to the laws of the province. Despite his many friends, however, Bownas remained in close confinement until October, when he again faced a grand jury. It also considered his case, indorsed the word "Ignoramus" across the indictment and he was accordingly discharged from custody and legal persecution.

The movement against witchcraft which is such a foul disgrace in the history of New England as well as of old England, may well be—as it often is—put down among the list of religious persecutions which, together or singly, darken the story of the Christian religion. In the case of witchcraft there was added not only the horror of an alleged association with the Prince of Darkness and his cohorts, and the implied upsetting of all goodness and piety, but also a sense of personal danger which brought the resultant malignant horrors of witchcraft into the homes even of the humblest people, and so imposed on all the duty of suppressing it not alone by the meshes of the law but also by any means which might safely bring it about. The witch, unlike the Quaker, was not alone the enemy of the magistrate and the minister, but of all classes of the people, for the spells and cantrips of all those who had sold themselves to the Evil One were directed as freely against the babe in the cradle, the woman engaged in her household duties, the farmer in the field, against the live stock, the growing crop, the ship at sea, as against those who held high places, those who made and enacted the laws; against the mansion, the cottage. Therefore we can understand how, when the delusion against witchcraft once seized the popular mind, it aroused passions and instigated cruelties to an extent at which in the present day we wonder and shudder.

To the credit of Long Island be it said

that while the people there seemed to fully realize all the imputations against witchcraft, to believe in them, and to possess a fair share of the element of superstition which seems to enter into the human mental make-up in spite of education, of experience, of the dictates of science and common sense, they did not proceed to any of the outrageous excesses which disfigure the annals, for instance, of Boston. We do not read of torturings and persecutions and indignities and wanton insults which throw such a hideous haze over the story of New England's greatness. Still the craze found root in what we now call the Empire State and its most noted local instances form part of the record of Long Island. The most curious of these took place in 1660, when Mary Wright was arrested in Oyster Bay charged with having sold herself to Satan and with practicing witchcraft. We know nothing of the details of her alleged crimes and misdemeanors, but local gossip and inherent fear doubtless called aloud for her conviction. She was old, and poor, and ignorant, and apparently without any friends. The local Dogberrys sat in judgment on her case, but, after due cogitation, concluded it was too involved to be understood by them or too diabolical in its nature for them to inflict a severe enough punishment. Possibly, too, they wanted to get rid of a case which seemed to be full of trouble all around and in which any punishment they should inflict might by some unseen agency result in their own spiritual and natural undoing. So they resolved to steer clear of it altogether and sent the poor woman for trial to the General Court of Massachusetts, where all the most absolute and up-to-date methods of detecting witchcraft were employed with the most perfect results. There she was conducted and in due time tried; but as no evidence could be found she was acquitted. Her evil fate, however, still pursued her, for she was no sooner cleared of the charge of being a witch than she was accused of being a Quaker, and on that grave indict-

ment she was tried, found guilty, sentenced to banishment, and so passes from our view.

Somewhat similar in several of its details was the case of Goody Garlicke of Easthampton, who, in 1657, was arrested and hailed before the magistrates of that town charged with practicing witchcraft. The evidence against her was held to be remarkably clear and involved among other details the death of a child. Goody, before her marriage to John Garlicke, had been employed as a domestic in the house of Lion Gardiner. One of the other women servants employed about the place had taken an Indian child to nurse for the sake of some small remuneration therefor, and in doing so had starved her own child who pined away and died. To shield herself from the consequences of her own cruelty and neglect she ascribed the death of her child to witchcraft and in due time openly accused Goody of being the witch. From this, however, she was ultimately cleared by the evidence of Lion Gardiner, who openly accused the mother of being a murderess. The magistrates of Easthampton, however, with the evidence before them, entertain no doubt of Goody's guilt, but, owing to the heinousness of the crime, ordered the case sent to the General Court at Hartford for final adjudication. There the matter seemed to have somehow ended. It is indeed doubtful if Goody was really deported to Hartford, and probably the influence of Gardiner saved her from further legal persecution, if it did not restore her to the good opinion and confidence of her neighbors and gossips.

Brookhaven furnishes us with a case which gives us a much clearer view than do either of the above of the manner in which such prosecutions were carried on. In 1665 Ralph Hall and his wife were suspected by their neighbors at Setauket with practicing witchcraft, and probably Dominie Brewster, a descendant of one of the Pilgrims and a Puritan of the strictest school, believed in their guilt or otherwise the case would never have reached the stage of public trial. As in the other

cases the local authorities declined the final adjudication of the matter and after a hearing the prisoners were sent to New York. There the trial came off Oct. 2, 1665, before a jury composed, as will be seen, of six men belonging to Long Island and six from the city of New York. We copy the account of the trial which appears in O'Callaghan's "Documentary History," vol. 4, page 133:

At ye Court of Assizes held in New Yorke
ye 2d day of October 1665 &c.

The Tryall of Ralph Hall and Mary his wife, upon suspicion of Witchcraft.

The names of the Persons who served on the Grand Jury: Thomas Baker, fforeman of ye Jury, of East Hampton; Capt. John Symonds of Hempsteed; Mr. Hallet, Anthony Waters, Jamaica; Thomas Wandall of Marshpath Kills; Mr. Nicolls of Stamford; Balthazer de Haart, John Garland, Jacob Leisler, Anthonio de Mill, Alexander Munro, Thomas Searle, of New Yorke.

The Prisoners being brought to the Barr by Allard Anthony, Sheriffe of New Yorke, This following Indict was read, first against Ralph Hall and then agst Mary his wife, vizt.

The Constable and Overseers of the Towne of Seatalcott, in the East Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island, Do Present for our soveraigne Lord the King, That Ralph Hall of Seatalcott aforesaid, upon ye 25th day of December; being Christmas day last, was Twelve Monthes, in the 15th yeare of the Raigne of our Soveraigne Lord, Charles ye Second, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, ffrance and Ireland, Defender of the ffaith &c, and severall other dayes and times since that day, by some detestable and wicked Arts, commonly called Witchcraft and Sorcery, did (as is suspected) maliciously and feloniously, practice and Exercise at the said Towne of Seatalcott in the East Riding of Yorkshire on Long Island aforesaid, on the Person of George Wood; late of the same place by which wicked and detestable Arts, the said George Wood (as is suspected) most dangerously and mortally sickned and languished, And not long after by the aforesaid wicked and detestable Arts, the said George Wood (as is likewise suspected) dyed.

Moreover, The Constable and overseers of the said Towne of Seatalcott, in the East Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island aforesaid, do further Present for our Soveraigne Lord

the King, That some while after the death of the aforesaid George Wood, The said Ralph Hall did (as is suspected) divers times by ye like wicked and detestable Arts, commonly called Witchcraft and Sorcery, Maliciously and feloniously practise and Exercise at the said Towne of Seatalcott, in the East Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island aforesaid, on the Person of an Infant Childe of Ann Rogers, widdow of ye aforesaid George Wood deceased, by wh wicked and detestable Arts, the said Infant Childe (as is suspected) most dangerously & mortally sickned and languished, and not long after by the said Wicked and detestable Arts (as is likewise suspected) dyed, And so ye said Constable and Overseers do Present, That the said George Wood, and the sd Infante sd Childe by the wayes and meanes aforesaid, most wickedly maliciously and feloniously were (as is suspected) murdered by the said Ralph Hall at the times and place aforesaid, agst ye Peace of Our Sovereigne Lord ye King and against the Laws of this Government in such Cases Provided.

The like Indictmt was read, against Mary the wife of Ralph Hall.

There upon, severall Depositions, accusing ye Prisonrs of ye fact for which they were endicted were read, but no witsesse appeared to give Testimony in Court vive voce.

Then the Clarke calling upon Ralph Hall, bad him hold up his hand, and read as follows:

Ralph Hall thou standest here indicted, for that having not ye feare of God before thine eyes. Thou did'st upon the 25th day of December, being Christmas day last was 12 moneths, and at seu'all other times since, as is suspected, by some wicked and detestable Arts, commonly called witchcraft and Sorcery, maliciously and feloniously practise and Exercise, upon the Bodyes of George Wood, an Infant Childe of Ann Rogers, by which said Arts, the said George Wood and the Infant Childe (as is suspected) most dangerously and mortally fell sick, and languisht unto death. Ralph Hall, what dost thou say for thyselfe, art thou guilty, or not guilty?

Mary the wife of Ralph Hall was called upon in like manner.

They both Pleded not guilty and threw themselves to bee Tried by God and the Country.

Whereupon, their case was referr'd to ye Jury, who brought in to the Court, the following verdict vitz:

Wee having seriously considered the Case

committed to our Charge, against ye Prisoners at the Barr, and having well weighed ye Evidence, of what the woman is Charged with, but nothing considerable of value to take away her life. But in reference to the man wee finde nothing considerable to charge him with.

The Court there upon gave this sentence, That the man should bee bound Body and Goods for his wive's Appearance, at the next Sessions, and so on from Sessions to Sessions as long as they stay within this Government, In the meanwhile to bee of ye good Behavior. So they were return'd into the Sheriffs Custody and upon Entring into a Recognizance, according to the Sentence of the Court, they were released.

The end of the case was reached some three years later, when Governor Nicolls peremptorily removed it from further legal consideration by issuing the following order:

A Release to Ralph Hall & Mary his wife from ye Recognizance they entered into at the Assizes.

These Are to Certify all whom it may Concerne That Ralph Hall & Mary his wife (at present living upon Great Minifords Island) are hereby released acquitted from any & all Recognizances, bonds of appearance or other obligations—entred into by them or either of them for the peace or good behavior upon account of any accusation or Indictment upon suspicion of Witch Craft brought into the Cort of Assizes against them in the year 1665. There haueving beene no direct proofes nor furthr prosecucon of them or either of them since—Giuen undr my hand at Fort James in New Yorke this 21st day of August, 1668.

R. NICOLLS.

There is no doubt that the influence of the Dutch preachers as well as the presence among the population of so much Dutch practical common sense not only prevented the spread of the witchcraft craze to the western end of the island but exerted a material influence in averting its wild development in the eastern section. Indeed the Dutch influence was everywhere sturdily set against it and it is to this factor more than to anything else that the State of New York is free from a reproach which darkens the bright pages of the record of so many other places in the Old World and the New.

CHAPTER XIV.

CAPTAIN KIDD AND OTHER NAVIGATORS.

AMONG the curiosities which the history of Long Island brings before us, none is more interesting than the story of the noted pirate, Captain Kidd, whose name was and is more or less closely associated with every wild and dangerous-looking nook and eddy of its extensive coast line north and south. The historians have not dealt kindly with the memory of Capt. Kidd, and so far as our reading goes not one of them has found a single redeeming feature in his character on which to base a word of praise or a sentiment of regret at the outcome of his strange career. He was a pirate, pure and simple, with all the usual attributes of his class, was captured and hanged and by his ignominious death satisfied the ends of justice: such is the popular and historical summing up. The many vague stories afloat concerning him, most of which gives a human touch to his character, are cavalierly dismissed without a thought of investigation, by a wave of the hand, as it were, while every attributed crime is rehearsed as solemn and unqualified truth.

In his "History of the United States," Bancroft dismisses the case of Capt. Kidd in this wise: "In the attempt to suppress piracy, the prospect of infinite booty to be recovered from pirates or to be won from the enemies of England, gained from the King and Admiralty a commission for William Kidd and had deluded Bellomont into a partnership in a private expedition. Failing in his hopes of obtaining opulence, Kidd found

his way, as a pirate, to the gallows. In the House of Commons the transaction provoked inquiry and hardly escaped censure."

Divested of all prejudice and unsubstantiated data, the actual life story of this man may be outlined as follows:

William Kidd was born about 1650, it is thought, at Greenock, Scotland, at which place his father, was, it is said, a clergyman. The father was a man distinguished not only for his piety, but for his steadfast adherence to principle, for he "suffered," to use a favorite word of the old Scottish Covenanters, for his views of Church and State Government. He was tortured, we are told, by "the boot," a hideous instrument, but remained stanch to his principles until his death, August 14, 1679. There is no evidence to support all this, but the literary effect is excellent. At an early age William was sent to sea and seems to have risen rapidly until he was given command of a merchant vessel. He won a reputation not only as a skillful mariner, but as one who was ready as well as able to defend his ship against all sorts of marauders. He had sailed a vessel between New York and London for several years and was well known in the former city not only as a daring and able seaman but as a man of culture.

According to Mrs. Lamb ("History of New York," vol. 1, p. 425), he had "a comfortable and pleasant home in Liberty street, New York, and a wife beautiful, accomplished and of the highest respectability. She was Sarah Oort, the widow of one of his fellow-

officers. They were married in 1691, and at the time of his departure for the Eastern Ocean they had one charming little daughter." He seems by that time to have, to a great extent, retired from the sea, and to have won not only a modest fortune, but a most enviable reputation. He was personally acquainted with the leading men in the colony and held by all in the highest esteem, as an honest, law-abiding, respectable citizen, and one who had done the colony much service.

The first mention of him in authentic Colonial history occurs in 1691, in which year the Journal of the New York Colonial Assembly tells us that on the 18th day of April much credit was allowed to be due to him "for the many and good services done for the Province, in attending with his vessels." But in what capacity or for what object he thus "attended with his vessels" does not appear. It was also declared that he ought to be suitably rewarded. Accordingly, on the 14th day of May following, it was ordered by the same Assembly "that the sum of £150 be paid to Capt. Kidd" as a "suitable acknowledgment for the important benefits which the colonies had received from his hands." The presumption is that these services were in some way connected with the protection of the Colonial merchant marine from the attacks of the pirates at that time hovering along the coasts of the northern colonies. Indeed the harbor of New York was no stranger to such piratical vessels, and the commerce between the outlaws and "the people of figure" in that city was not inconsiderable. In fact, it was no great secret that the coast pirates were frequently operating in the Sound, and were freely supplied with provisions by the inhabitants of Long Island. Still further, it was well known in the year 1695 that the English freebooters had fitted out vessels in the very harbor of New York itself. On the arrival in New York harbor of the pirate vessels from their cruises their goods were openly sold in the city, and the conduct of the Colonial Government was such that collusion, if not

direct partnerships, between the pirates and the public authorities was not doubted.

In 1695 the Earl of Bellomont was appointed Governor of New York and one of the most imperative of the instructions given him was to put down the piracy which was then so flauntingly carried on in the New World with New York as one of its centres, a centre where much of the booty obtained by the sea robbers was easily disposed of, and where many of the pirate captains were living in opulent retirement. Macaulay tells us that before Bellomont sailed for his post King William spoke to him sternly about the freebooting which was the disgrace of the colonies. "I send you, my Lord, to New York," he said, "because an honest and intrepid man is wanted to put these abuses down and because I believe you to be just such a man." As soon as Bellomont landed in New York he made known his purpose among such of the colonists whose official or commercial position might render their advice and co-operation valuable. Robert Livingston (the founder of the famous New York family) entered heartily into the views of the new Governor and suggested that the task of exterminating the pirates should be given to Captain Kidd. Lord Macaulay, who has become the authority from whom most of the recent biographies of Kidd derive their data, says ("History of England, Chap. 25") :

Kidd had passed most of his life on the waves, had distinguished himself by his seamanship, had had opportunities of showing his valor in action with the French and had retired on a competence. No man knew the eastern seas better. He was perfectly acquainted with all the haunts of the pirates who prowled between the Cape of Good Hope and the Straits of Malacca and he would undertake, if he were entrusted with a single ship of thirty or forty guns, to clear the Indian Ocean of the entire race. The brigantines of the rovers were numerous, no doubt, but none of them was large; one man-of-war which in the Royal Navy would hardly rank as a fourth rate, would easily deal with them all in succession and the lawful spoils of the enemies

of mankind would much more than defray the expenses of the expedition.

Bellomont was charmed with this plan and recommended it to the King. The King referred it to the Admiralty. The Admiralty raised difficulties, such as are perpetually raised when any deviation, whether for the better or for the worse, from the established order of proceeding is proposed. It then occurred to Bellomont that his favorite scheme might be carried into effect without any cost to the State. A few public-spirited men might easily fit out a privateer that would soon make the Arabian Gulf and the Bay of Bengal secure highways for trade. He wrote to his friends in England imploring, remonstrating, complaining of their want of public spirit. Six thousand pounds would be enough. That sum would be repaid, and repaid with large interest from the sale of prizes, and an estimable benefit would be conferred on the Kingdom and the world. His urgency succeeded. (Lord) Shrewsbury and (Lord) Romney contributed. Orford, though, as First Lord of the Admiralty he had been unwilling to send Kidd to the Indian Ocean with a King's ship, consented to subscribe a thousand pounds. Somers (Keeper of the Great Seal) subscribed another thousand. A ship called the *Adventure Galley* was equipped in the Port of London and Kidd took the command. He carried with him, besides the ordinary letters of marque, a commission under the Great Seal empowering him to seize pirates and take them to some place where they could be dealt with according to law. Whatever right the King might have to the goods found in the possession of these malefactors he granted, by letters patent, to the persons who had been at the expense of fitting out the expedition, reserving to himself only one-tenth part of the gains of the adventure, which were to be paid into the treasury. With the claim of merchants to have back the property of which they had been robbed, his Majesty, of course, did not interfere. He granted away, and could grant away, no rights but his own.

The press for sailors to man the Royal Navy was at that time so hot that Kidd could not obtain his full complement of hands on the Thames. He crossed the Atlantic, visited New York and there found volunteers in abundance. At length in February, 1697, he sailed from the Hudson with a crew of more than a hundred and fifty men and in July reached the coast of Madagascar.

Robert Livingston was one of the shareholders in this syndicate and Kidd himself seems to have invested some hard cash in it. On his way to New York he captured a French ship, which he carried to the Hudson with him. The date for the sailing of the expedition is erroneously given by Macaulay and should have been September 6, 1696, for in January, 1697, Kidd was at work among the followers of the black flag off Madagascar. During the interval between his arriving in the Hudson and finally leaving it on his memorable expedition, he seems to have cleared the vicinity, and especially the shores of Long Island, from the horde of pirates who infested it. All writers seem to agree that when Kidd started out on the voyage which was to place his name on a pedestal of infamy along with that of Henry Morgan he had no idea of turning pirate on his own account. Macaulay sums up the general opinion by saying:

It is possible that Kidd may at first have meant to act in accordance with his instructions. But on the subject of piracy he held the notions which were then common in the North American Colonies, and most of his crew were of the same mind. He found himself in a sea which was constantly traversed by rich and defenseless merchant ships, and he had to determine whether he would plunder those ships or protect them. The rewards of protecting the lawful trade was likely to be comparatively small. Such as they were they would be got only by first fighting with desperate ruffians who would rather be killed than taken, and by then instituting a proceeding and obtaining a judgment in a Court of Admiralty. The risk of being called to a severe reckoning might not unnaturally seem small to one who had seen many old buccanniers living in comfort and credit at New York and Boston.

Whatever was the process of reasoning or evolution, there is no doubt that the *Adventure* soon became a terror to all trading vessels in the Indian seas and that on November 23, 1698, an order was sent to all the Governors of British colonies ordering the capture of the ship and the arrest of Kidd and

his crew. In the course of his "business" the *Adventure* was abandoned for another ship which he had captured, the *San Antonio*, and in that vessel he returned to America, anchoring in Gardiner's Bay; but according to local report only for a short time, as he seems to have kept constantly on the move and entered every safe harbor on the shore of Long Island. During the time those movements were being executed he was negotiating for his personal safety with his employer, Lord Bellomont, the emissary being a Boston lawyer named James Emett. The matter might have been satisfactorily arranged to all concerned had not Kidd's notoriety made even his name a by-word of reproach and infamy on both sides of the Atlantic. Bellomont declined to commit himself to any terms, but his demeanor to the emissary was such that Kidd determined to trust himself in Boston and to personally interview his noble employer. There he was ordered to appear before the Council and his arrest followed. He was vaguely charged with piracy, massacre, wanton destruction of property, brutality to his men and to all who fell into his clutches. The result was he was sent to England and was there tried for piracy and for the murder of William Moore, one of his crew, found guilty and, with nine of his sailors, was hanged May 24, 1701.

In reviewing all the evidence thus placed before us it seems impossible to arrive at any other conclusion than that Kidd made two grave mistakes,—the first in touching British ships, and the second in being found out. If ever a licensed pirate was sent adrift that pirate was William Kidd. Even the lines we have quoted from Macaulay show that he was sent forth with a commission under the Great Seal of England in his pocket to prey upon the high seas and to return as large a dividend as possible to those who invested in the enterprise. It was a joint stock speculation, nothing more, and Kidd was induced by the necessity, to use a modern phrase, "of making money for his stockholders," to capture any

fat prize which came in his way. Money could not be made fighting pirates, as Macaulay admits, and it had to be made somehow. Financially Kidd was a success. He brought home on the *San Antonio* alone £14,000, more than enough to recoup his stockholders, principal and interest, and there were besides vague stories of other treasure, fabulous in amount, which lay in the hold of the vessel when she first anchored in Gardiner's Bay. But the hue and cry had gone forth, Kidd had certainly passed over the boundary between right and wrong which his patrons had vaguely laid down, and the honest shipping interests of the world arose against him. Being the executive head of the enterprise, he was made to furnish an example, with several of his sea companions accompanying him as ballast.

The matter was made the occasion of a memorable debate in Parliament in which Somers and the rest of the syndicate were held up as partners of the piratical *Adventure*, who gave the protection of the Great Seal to their own nefarious business enterprise, men who invested a thousand pounds each and expected to get back tens of thousands when the expedition should return "laden with the spoils of ruined merchants." It was made a question of the life or death of the Ministry of the day, but the friends of the syndicate prevailed, and the owners of the *Adventure* were indorsed by a vote of 189 votes in the House of Commons against an opposition of 133. And so ended the Parliamentary story of the *Adventure*. When the vote was cast Kidd ceased forever to be a factor in politics and his memory is now popularly enrolled only in the long gallery of notorious enemies of society. His name became a synonym for murder and rapine, was used by mothers to frighten their children, and all sorts of evil deeds and wanton cruelties were fixed upon him by the ballad-mongers, who found in the legends of his career a rare field for their crude imaginations.

Long Island is full of stories of Captain

Kidd, very few of which contain much more than a bare modicum of truth. Mr. W. D. Stone, of the New York Commercial Advertiser, once wrote an article on the pirate, in which he told about all of the Long Island traditions which could readily be substantiated. He said:

It is beyond doubt true that Long Island contained several of his hiding places. "Kidd's Rock" is well known at Manhasset, up on Long Island, to this day. Here Kidd is supposed to have buried some of his treasures, and many have been the attempts of the credulous in that section to find the hidden gold. There is also no doubt that he was wont to hide himself and his vessel among those curious rocks in Sachem's Head Harbor, called the "Thimble Islands." In addition to the "Pirates' Cavern," in this vicinity, there is upon one of these rocks, sheltered from the view of the Sound, a beautiful artificial excavation in an oval form holding, perhaps, the measure of a barrel still called "Kidd's Punch Bowl." It was here, according to the traditions of the neighborhood, that he used to carouse with his crew. It is also a fact beyond controversy that he was accustomed to anchor his vessel in Gardiner's Bay. Upon one occasion in the night he landed upon Gardiner's island and requested Mrs. Gardiner to provide a supper for himself and his attendants. Knowing his desperate character, she dared not refuse, and fearing his displeasure she took great pains, especially in roasting a pig. The pirate chief was so pleased with her cooking that on going away he presented her with a cradle blanket of gold cloth. It was of velvet inwrought with gold and very rich. A piece of it yet remains in the possession of the Gardiner family, and a still smaller piece is in my possession, it having been given to my father, the late Col. William L. Stone, by one of the descendants of that family.

On another occasion, when he landed upon the island, Kidd buried a small casket of gold containing articles of silver and precious stones in the presence of Mr. Gardiner, but under the most solemn injunction of secrecy. * * * He appears to have disclosed the fact of having buried treasure on Gardiner's island, for it was demanded by the Earl of Bellomont and surrendered by Mr. Gardiner. I have seen the original receipts for the amount, with the different items of the de-

posits. They were by no means large, and afford no evidence of such mighty "sweepings of the sea," as has been told of by tradition. Of gold, in coins, gold dust and bars, there was 750 ounces; of silver, 506 ounces, and of precious stones, 16 ounces.

The account mentioned by Mr. Stone as describing the jewels found in Captain Kidd's treasure box buried on Gardiner's island reads as follows:

A true account of all such gold, silver, jewels and merchandise late in the possession of Captain William Kidd which have been seized and secured by us pursuant to an order from his Excellency, Richard, Earl of Bellomont, bearing date July 7, 1699:

Received the 17th inst. of Mr. John Gardiner, viz.:

		OUNCES.
No. 1.	One bag of gold dust.....	63¾
No. 2.	One bag of coined gold.....	11
	And one in silver.....	124
No. 3.	One bag gold dust.....	24¾
No. 4.	One bag of silver rings and sundry precious stones....	47⅞
No. 5.	One bag of unpolished stones.	12½
No. 6.	One piece of crystal, rings, two agates, two amethysts	—
No. 7.	One bag silver buttons and lamps	—
No. 8.	One bag of broken silver....	173½
No. 9.	One bag of gold bars.....	353¼
No. 10.	One bag of gold bars.....	238½
No. 11.	One bag gold dust.....	59½
No. 12.	One bag silver bars.....	309

SAMUEL SEWALL,
NATHANIEL BYFIELD,
JEREMIAH DUMMER,
ANDREW BELCHER,
Commissioners.

H. G. Onderdonk, of Manhasset, speaking of Kidd's Rock, mentioned in the passage quoted from Mr. Stone, says:

The celebrated "Kidd's Rock" just east of Sands' Point stands upon the shore of a small island at the northeasterly extremity of Cow Neck. This is a very large stone, equivalent to a cube of about 2,000 feet, and under it tradition says the notorious Captain Kidd concealed vast amounts of the treasures accumu-

lated by his numerous piracies. The immense rock has been on all sides dug around, undermined, excavated, blasted and wrought with various charms and incantations by superstitious or visionary persons who have here repeatedly searched for Kidd's treasures, but all in vain. There is a similar large boulder, called Millstone Rock, at Manhasset, a quarter of a mile southeasterly from the Friends' meeting-house, which contains 24,000 cubic feet, as measured by Dr. Mitchell and Captain Patridge, and there formerly was another of similar size, on the Haydock property near the head of Cow Bay. But this latter has disappeared, having been blasted and broken up into fencing stone. Boulders of so great a size are an anomaly on Long Island.

East of these, other boulders seem to have popularly rejoiced at one time or another under the name of "Kidd's Rock," and the one last referred to was recognized by B. F. Thompson, the historian of Long Island, as the one in his day best entitled to the designation. But then, as we have said, almost every likely spot on Long Island, as well as on Gardiner's Island, Block Island and even the coast of New Jersey, has been reputed as the hiding place of Captain Kidd's mighty treasure. To recover them many a diligent search has been made, many an expedition organized, many a divining rod manipulated; but all to no purpose. If any treasure was hidden it has been forever lost; but the more likely solution of the matter is that none was hidden, and that all the wealth at Kidd's command was actually recovered by Bellmont's agents.

Gabriel Furman gives us a vague account

of another redoubtable pirate whose home was near Fort Neck and whom he called Captain Jones. Nothing is known apparently as to the career or the deeds of this marauder, but popular tradition gave him a rather doubtful character and told how when he was dying a large black crow, a sure emissary of Satan, settled above his bed and watched until the vital spark fled, when it made its escape through a hole in the west end of the house and departed to realms unknown. The hole through which the bird passed could never after be stopped up, according to popular tradition, although Furman, who saw the house in 1827, did not vouch for the truth of this by personal investigation. The building was then uninhabited and hastening to ruin, so the experiment would have annoyed nobody and its result would have been satisfactory to future historians whichever way it went. But probably Furman was too good an antiquary to attempt to disturb an old legend, so he simply contented himself with "passing it on." However, he visited the burial place of the pirate, a grave "about half a mile south of the house in a small piece of ground surrounded by an earth wall. The tombstone is of red freestone. The ground also contains the graves of his wife, his son, and his son's wife. There are no other persons buried there but these four. It is quite a solitary spot."

Surely pirate was never more honored! To die quietly in bed! An emissary of a prince to watch his passage, a grave among his own kin, and a red freestone tomb! An honest mariner could hardly expect more!



CHAPTER XV.

THE ANTE-REVOLUTION STRUGGLE.

IN a rough and ready way the position of Long Island regarding the sentiment which culminated in 1776 in separation may be stated by saying that Suffolk county was Whig in its sympathies, while Queens and Kings were the opposite. In other words, one might draw the old line on the map of the island from Oyster Bay to Great Island and find that to the east of that line the people were in favor of independence, while to the west the loyalist spirit reigned. Of course, there were many exceptions. Kings and Queens held their Whig citizens, plenty of them, and Suffolk might have produced a small army of Tories; but in a general fashion the boundaries thus given hold good for the time, say about 1765, when the troubles with the home Government began to reach the acute point. In making this distinction I do not desire to intimate that the loyalists were blind to the faults of the system to which they were attached. That there were faults, and grievous faults, even the most devoted loyalist of the disinterested variety would confess; and up to a certain point in the struggle they were as outspoken and imperative in their demands for redress as the most violent Whig could suggest. They only stopped short at separation, and although the hard logic of events has demonstrated that they were wrong and proved conclusively that separation was the only cure for the evils which then threatened the people in Britain as well as those in the colonies, it seems unnecessary to tax them with all the sins in the calendar of crime on that account.

In fact Long Island, east and west, maintained a constant struggle for political liberty long before. Several instances of this spirit will be found recorded elsewhere in this work, but one or two may be mentioned most fittingly here to demonstrate more clearly the views entertained by the people and the spirit which animated them. In 1669 the towns of Hempstead, Jamaica, Oyster Bay, Flushing, Newtown, Gravesend, each presented petitions to Governor Lovelace when that dignitary sought by virtue of his own power to levy a special tax. In their petition the people deplored their exclusion from any share in legislation and asked to be permitted a voice in the making of the laws by which they were to be governed, "by such deputies as shall be yearly chosen by the freeholders of each town and parish." The petitions practically produced nothing, but the fact that they were made, and gravely considered, are significant when we remember how summarily old Peter Stuyvesant a few years previously had broken up a meeting of the lieges and told them not to let him hear any more of such business. Dr. Prime says ("History," page 78): "The first assembly of deputies that the representation of royal power condescended to convoke for consultation, the year after the surrender of the province to British arms, was held at Hempstead March 1, 1665, and (with the exception of two) was composed entirely of representatives from the several towns of the island. The first legislative assembly, convened in 1683, was not only procured through the remonstrances and demands of Long

Island, more than any other part of the colony, but was in a great measure made up of its representatives. The first speaker of that body was either then, or afterward, a resident of the island, and the same office was afterward held by one of its representatives sixteen out of twenty-one years."

A significant hint of the reverence of the people for royal authority in the abstract is found in the following extract from Bergen's "Early Settlers of Kings County:"

Joores Van Nestus (may be intended for Joris Van Ness), with John Rapalie, Joris Danielse Rapalie, Isaac Remsen, Jacob Reyerse, Aert Aersen (Middagh), Theunis Buys, Gerrit Cowenhoven, Gabriel Sprong, Urian Andriese, Jan Willemse Bennet, Jacob Bennet and John Messerole, Junr., were fined ten shillings each for defacing the King's arms in the County Court House on the evening of September 14, 1697, as per court record. From this it may be inferred that these residents of Brooklyn failed to have that respect for their "Dreade sovereign" which loyal subjects were expected to entertain.

It is curious to read some of these names in the light of after events in connection with such a contemptuous disregard for the sacredness of royal insignia.

It is generally agreed that the first direct move, although not then so intended, against the royal authority was made in the same tavern at Brushville, near Jamaica, where afterward General Woodhull, the hero of Long Island, received the wounds which resulted in his death. It was kept by Increase Carpenter, who afterward figured prominently in the Tory ranks. The meeting held in his place seems to have been quite an informal gathering when the news was received of the action of the British Parliament in declaring the port of Boston closed in retaliation for the doings of the Boston Tea Party. The deliberations in the tavern, however, resulted in the issuance of a notice to the freeholders of Jamaica urging them to meet in the old court-house in that village and consider the

condition of affairs. That meeting was held on December 7, 1774, and passed a series of resolutions as follows:

I. To maintain the just dependence of the colonies upon the Crown of Great Britain, and to render true allegiance to King George.

II. That it is our right to be taxed only by our own consent, and that taxes imposed on us by Parliament are an infringement of our rights.

III. We glory to have been born subject to the Crown and excellent Constitution of Great Britain; we are one people with our mother country, and lament the late unhappy disputes.

IV. We sympathize with our brethren of Boston under their sufferings.

V. We approve the measures of the late General Congress at Philadelphia.

VI. We appoint for our committee of correspondence and observation Rev. Abraham Keteltas, Waters Smith, Captain Ephraim Baylis, Captain Joseph French, William Ludlam, Captain Richard Betts, Dr. John Innes, Joseph Robinson, Elias Bailis.

This was a most significant document, breathing profound loyalty to the mother country yet not yielding one iota of what the meeting regarded as among inalienable rights, and it failed not to go on record as in hearty sympathy with those of the colonists who, for upholding these rights, had fallen under the ban of the British authorities. Had the British Government weighed such expressions even then the crisis of 1776 might have been averted or at least postponed, although in reviewing the history of the world since then we cannot escape the conviction that it was well for the sake of popular liberty that pig-headedness rather than statesmanship ruled Great Britain for the moment.

The men who organized and attended the meeting seem to have formed part of a colony of New England people, by birth or descent, who had settled in Jamaica. Those named in the Committee on Correspondence were afterward more or less prominent in the movement for independence. Ephraim Bailey, in

fact, became notorious as one of the most bitter and cruel of the persecutors of the local Tories. French was afterward elected to the Provincial Congress, but declined to serve, because he was convinced that the majority of the freeholders of Jamaica did not want to be represented in that body. Perhaps the most remarkable member of the committee was the Rev. Abraham Keteltas, of whom Dr. Prime writes: "He was born in New York, December 26, 1732, and graduated at Yale in 1752. He was first settled at Elizabethtown, New Jersey, September 14, 1757, and dismissed in 1759. He removed to Jamaica, where he occupied a farm and spent much of



OLD LIBERTY POLE AT VAN PELT MANOR.

his time in preaching to the vacant congregations on the island and elsewhere. He was a man of strong mind and extensive and varied learning. He often preached in three different languages—Dutch, French and English. He was chosen a member of the convention of 1777 that formed the first Constitution of the State of New York. Being a zealous and devoted patriot, he was peculiarly obnoxious to British rage and was therefore obliged to leave the island during the war. His property was taken possession of, his mansion defaced, his timber destroyed and his slaves taken and enlisted as soldiers of the King. He was a man of strong feelings and independent spirit. From some dis-

satisfaction, in 1764 or 1765 he withdrew from the presbytery of New York and declined the jurisdiction of the Presbyterian Church. He continued, however, to bestow his services where needed until the close of life, and he is still remembered (1845) by the surviving few in many of the churches of the island. He died September 30, 1798, at the age of sixty-five years."

Before following the progress of the movement for freedom on Long Island, it may not be out of place to review, briefly, the progress of events in the country generally, which led to many meetings such as that we have just chronicled and finally ended in the complete independence of the Colonies. In 1763 the long war which had been waged between Britain and France for the possession of the North American Continent was settled by a formal treaty of peace in which France ceded all its territory north of the St. Lawrence to its "ancient enemy." It retained the peninsula of Florida, but soon after transferred it to Spain and the French empire in the New World came forever to an end. The colonists as we have seen took a loyal part against France in this memorable contest, and it is a pity that the patriotism aroused by sacrifice and blood did not meet with a better reward at the hands of those in authority in London than inspiring the notion that such devotion could be made a source of revenue. The withdrawal of the French from the scene left the colonists free to work out their own destiny, and it was not long before their mettle was put acutely to the test.

From the beginning of the Colonial system in America the home Government had imposed taxation on the people, as was right and proper. They had to be defended against Indians and Spaniards and Frenchmen. At first there was nothing to tax except the products of the soil, but as the country advanced in population and these products increased in value the navigation acts were steadily extended until they became oppressive. Almost from the time a colony was

numerically strong enough to form a local legislature it appealed against the right of the Parliament in England to impose Colonial taxes without the Colonists' consent, against taxes levied by royal representatives for purposes in which they had no concern, and out of which it was impossible for them to get any benefit; and the long list of dissolute and incapable nonentities sent over to represent the King's Sacred Majesty contains but few names of men who were likely either willing or fit to govern for the sake of the governed, or for any other purposes than their own personal profit and aggrandizement. Rulers like Bellomont and Cornbury were alone sufficient to incite and justify rebellion.

But the question of taxation without representation, or rather of taxation without consent, was the question which underlay the entire struggle in America. Bit by bit as the country advanced the navigation laws became more and more oppressive. "The open door" was unheard of. No goods could be imported except in English vessels manned by English sailors; all exports must go to England or to some port belonging to the Crown; tobacco, cotton, sugar, for instance, intended for France had to be sent to England and then reshipped; free trade between the colonies was prohibited; every advantage was given the British manufacturer at the expense of his American cousin; the American producer, at the mercy of the English merchant, could only receive what the latter was willing to pay; the English claimed and exercised a full and crushing monopoly over American commerce, and any effort looking to its extension was met by new levy, a vexatious addition to the existing laws. Such were some of the restrictions imposed upon the colonies, and they were submitted to for several reasons. Great Britain was simply carrying out the recognized Colonial policy of the time; the Colonies were too much scattered to resist, the imposts and annoyances were not felt by the majority of the Colonists directly, only one class felt the full force of the imposition; and although the entire pop-

ulation had to contribute to the taxation thus imposed, the contribution was made in an indirect and therefore unnoticed way. Indirect taxation has ever been the favorite system for the levying of imposts, especially those likely to arouse discontent. It still prevails in America, and is the cause of most of the municipal maladministration which is so pronounced a blot upon our system of local government.

But the abuse got in time out of the stage of indirect taxation. In 1763 Lord Grenville introduced in Parliament, and had passed, as an amendment to a sugar bill, a resolution that "It be proper to charge stamp duties on the colonies and plantations." Franklin, who was then agent of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania in London, appealed against this new imposition, but the best that resulted from a series of conferences was that the Colonies must bear an increased share of the taxes, but were given a year in which to devise some way less obnoxious than the proposed stamp duties by which the increased revenue might be raised. In America the proposal at once excited hostile comment and protests were sent to London from the various Colonial assemblies. But they proposed nothing to take the place and yield the expected revenue of the proposed stamps, and Grenville adhered to his determination. In 1765 he introduced the Stamp Act and it was passed by Parliament. It was deemed an equitable measure all round, and, with their clearer eyesight dimmed by the general sentiments of approbation they heard around, even the American agents, even Franklin, did not seem to understand that their constituents across the sea would do aught but grumble and submit. So Great Britain prepared the stamps and appointed the stamp collectors, who were to begin business in October, 1765.

The news raised a howl of disapproval throughout the Colonies, and nine Colonial assemblies sent delegates to New York to meet in a Continental Congress in the old City Hall in Wall street, to consider the situation. That Congress passed some clear-cut resolutions

which fully expressed the views of the people. These held such doctrines as, "No taxes have been or can be constitutionally imposed upon the people of these Colonies but by their respective legislatures;" and, "All supplies to the Crown being free of the people it is unreasonable and inconsistent with the spirit of the British Constitution for the people of Great Britain to grant to his Majesty the property of the Colonists."

But the people did more than pass resolutions: they acted. In New York the Sons of Liberty inaugurated an active movement against the stamps, the citizens declined to use the stamped paper when it arrived, forced the agent to resign, hanged in effigy the aged Lieutenant Governor, and determined to import no goods from Britain. In Boston they smashed the windows of the stamp agent's house and sacked the mansion of Governor Hutchinson. In Baltimore they burned the agent in effigy and forced him to fly to New York, where he was only permitted to reside on condition that he resign his hated office. So the story ran over the Colonies. The people seemed unanimous in their opposition to the impost, the sale of the stamps became an impossibility, and indeed it seems certain that not a single stamp of that issue was used in the colonies.

The doings in America created a tumult in Parliament, "and never," says May, "was there a Parliament more indifferent to Constitutional principles and popular rights." An inquiry was appointed. Franklin, who was examined by the committee, frankly declared that the stamp duties could only be enforced by arms. The sentiment of the sheep-headed ministry was that arms should be used, but the sentiment expressed by Pitt and a few others in favor of the attitude of the Colonists called a halt in that direction, and, as a result, after the usual winding and unwinding of red tape and a display of what has been called circumlocutionary extravagances, the stamp act was repealed. The news of this result was received with wild enthusiasm in

the Colonies and the expressions of devotion and loyalty to the mother land and the Crown were marvelous for their intensity, and, we believe, for their honesty. New York ordered statues of George III and of Pitt. Virginia voted to erect a statue of the Sovereign, and Conway, Barre, Wilkes, Pitt and others became popular Colonial idols.

But this state of things did not long continue. The stamp tax was repealed, yet the Colonists soon learned that the act repealing it contained a rider which declared that Parliament had full power over the government of all the Colonies. The sugar tax, a tax for revenue pure and simple, was not repealed. The Mutiny act was made more stringent than ever, and the provisions for the billeting of royal troops more and more oppressive. Soldiers began to be sent out to America in greater numbers than before and this alone, especially in Massachusetts, carried a profound feeling of distrust. The navigation acts were yearly becoming more obnoxious. The climax of this sort of "baiting the tiger" was reached in 1767, when Charles Townsend brought forward in Parliament his scheme for the pacification of the Colonies and the profit of the mother country. "Our right of taxation," he said, "is indubitable; yet to prevent mischief I was myself in favor of repealing the Stamp Act. But there can be no objection to port duties on wine, oil and fruits, if allowed to be carried to America directly from Spain and Portugal, on glass, paper, lead and colors and especially on tea. Owing to the high charges in England, America has supplied herself with tea by smuggling it from the Dutch possessions; to remedy this duties hitherto levied upon it in England are to be given up and a specific duty collected in America itself."

We need not follow up the details of these proposals. They were adopted by a large majority vote and the trouble with the Colonies at once reached an acute stage. There is no doubt that even the most prominent American loyalist, outside of those in the direct service of the crown, felt that the Colonists were be-

ing wronged; but outside of the faint whisperings of a few zealots no voice had even then been raised for separation. But the crisis was approaching and events were hurrying to it fast. The taxes, of course, were the feature that strengthened the undercurrent of anti-British sentiment, and taxation without the consent of the taxpayers, or in other words, taxation without representation, the exaction of an income which was not to be expended for local matters, were repudiated on every side.

But the determining factor which developed the Revolution was the presence in the country of the British soldiers. On March 5, 1770, in a scrimmage with the populace, five citizens were killed and six wounded by a squad of soldiers at the Boston Custom House. In answer to the demands of the citizens the soldiers were then removed from the city to Castle William in Boston Harbor. On the previous January there was armed resistance to the British soldiery by a party of the Sons of Liberty in which a sailor was killed on the popular side and at least one soldier was wounded. This shedding of blood magnified what was really only a petty skirmish into a battle, and the historians of New York are proud to claim in the fight at Golden Hill the first battle of the Revolution. But the Revolution was even then some years off. Even on December 16, 1773, when the Boston Tea Party threw overboard the tea in the harbor and thus refused to honor the only remaining port tax, it was still in the distance.

Such momentous events culminate very slowly,—much more slowly than most people imagine; and the Revolution which gave the United States a place among the nations attained its headway from many contributing causes and sources. Each colony had from the time it was freely settled its own legislature, with varying degrees of authority, and it was really in these rather than in unpremeditated outbursts on the part of scattered portions of the people that the spirit of opposition, which led in time to the spirit of '76,

was really fomented and fostered and brought to fruition. We have not space here to refer to the magnificent service rendered to the cause of human liberty by the legislatures of such Colonies as Massachusetts or Virginia, and must confine our study to a brief review of what was done in New York. But that alone will be sufficient to enable a reader to follow the trend of public sentiment until the sword was unsheathed and an appeal for justice gave away to a stern demand for independence.

From the beginning, almost, of the history of its legislature, that of New York, as we have already seen, was a series of constant struggle against the incroachments, in one form or another, of the representative of the royal powers. Besides financial matters, a struggle between Episcopalians and Presbyterians, the right of free speech and a free printing press, one standing bone of contention, was that of the independence of the judiciary. In 1761, fresh from the people, the Assembly tried to compel the appointment of Supreme Court Judges, with no limitation except as to good behavior, practically with life appointments; but Cadwallader Colden vetoed the measure and insisted that all judges should hold during the pleasure only of the appointing power. In this he was fully sustained by the home authorities; but the sentiments of the bar and the people can be understood from the fact that when a Chief Justice had to be appointed it was necessary to seek in Boston an appointee who was willing to hold "during his Majesty's pleasure." The Assembly refused to vote the salaries of such judges. On December 11, 1762, the Assembly memorialized the home Government asking for a royal hearing on the subject of the independence of the courts. But no attention was paid, and there followed a series of similar memorials, which if the British authorities had not been a squad of adlepaters might have shown them in spite of fervent protestations of loyalty the direction in which the popular will was tending. The demands

of the petitioners seemed to grow in boldness and clearness as they proceeded, and even Colden was fully persuaded of the justice of most of the demands. But he asked the people to trust the King and continued so to ask until it was only too evident that the King, or whoever from time to time controlled him, had not the slightest idea of granting, except in the way of a temporary subterfuge, any of the demands thus loyally and dutifully made.

On July 9, 1771, William Tryon was transferred to the Governorship of New York from that of North Carolina. Notwithstanding the somewhat ignoble role which he afterward played, when his chair of state was on the quarterdeck of the frigate "Asia," there is no doubt that he was a man of rare executive qualities and seemingly influenced at first by a desire to do some good to the colony over which he was sent to rule. He devoted the most marked attention to local affairs and effected many improvements. But the ghost of taxation continually hovered over the land and seemed to upset every good work suggested or begun. The tax on tea was persisted in by the British Government, and in the hope of breaking through the determination of the people not to use the taxed tea, cargoes were sent to Boston, Philadelphia, Charleston and New York. That movement proved a flat failure in each of the seaports named. In New York the Sons of Liberty, or "Mohawks" as some of them called themselves, watched the arrival of the "Nancy," containing the offending cargo, and forbade any pilot guiding such vessel past Sandy Hook, and means were put in readiness to throw the cargo overboard, as was done in Boston, should the ship surmount all obstacles and tie up at a dock. But the ship, expected late in November, did not make its appearance, being driven out of its course by a storm. Governor Tryon determined that the tea when it arrived should be delivered to the consignees, "even," as he said, "if it was sprinkled with blood;" but the people held a public meeting, discussed the

situation, and grimly adjourned "till the arrival of the tea ship." On April 7, 1774, Tryon sailed for England for consultation with the home Government, and before his departure was entertained at dinner, at a ball and at receptions, and received any number of loyal addresses, complimentary to himself and his administration, and full of expressions of devotion to the King. He reported to the home authorities that New York was at all events a loyal colony. For this we cannot blame him. There were no Atlantic cables in those days. But before he had reached England the *Nancy* had arrived (April 18) in New York harbor and lay in the lower bay. The Sons of Liberty went on board and explained the situation so forcibly to the captain that he agreed to approach no nearer and turned his helm around en route for the mother land. On the following day another ship, the *London*, arrived with eighteen chests of tea, being a private venture of its captain, on board. It was confiscated by the local "Mohawks" and the eighteen chests were dumped into the river.

Tryon had not long returned to the Colony when a meeting was held in the Fields (New York City Hall Park) to protest against the act of Parliament which closed the port of Boston and a call for a Continental Congress was indorsed. That Congress met in Philadelphia September 5, 1774, and from it emanated that declaration of rights which threw aside the gossamer veil of loyalty that had up till then covered the proceedings of the Colonial leaders. To the people of Great Britain it said:

"If you are determined that your ministers shall wantonly sport with the rights of mankind; if neither the voice of Justice, the dictates of Law, the principles of the Constitution, nor the suggestions of Humanity can restrain your hands from shedding human blood in such an impious cause, we must then tell you that we will never submit to be hewers of wood or drawers of water for any ministry or nation in the world."

There was no mistaking these words; but when they reached Britain the answer was principally an increase in the military forces and preparations for augmenting the military strength. The home Government seemed to hold to the belief that the storm centre was New England—Boston mainly—and that if any signs of rebellion were there crushed the submission of the other colonies would be easy. But, although neither side seemed to be fully aware of it, the die had been cast and the Colonies were arrayed against the old land. The Congress was weak, its representative quality was by no means of the best, its authority had no legal foundation, its edicts could not be sustained by force; but, weak and irresponsible as it was, it came from the people and it proved strong enough to carry the new cause—the now freely hailed cause of liberty and independence—over the initiatory stages of the struggle.

In New York, as elsewhere, it was now felt that the die was fairly cast and the people ranged themselves into Patriots or Tories according to their bent. On Manhattan Island and throughout the State the former vastly outnumbered the latter. As usual the Tories found their supporters among the wealthier classes, the landed gentry in the country and the prosperous merchants in the towns. This was evident particularly in the New York Assembly, where, by a majority of one, it was decided not to consider the proceedings of Congress, and even so ordinary a piece of politeness as a vote of thanks to the provincial delegate, proposed by General Woodhull, was voted down. That Assembly adjourned on April 3, 1775, for a month, but it never met again. Events rushed on with irresistible force and the lines became more and more sharply drawn. After the skirmish of Lexington became known a Committee of Safety was organized at Albany and it sanctioned the formation of four companies of militia. In New York a Committee of One Hundred issued a call for a Provincial Congress and April 19 was afterward declared as the day

on which Royal authority had ceased in the Commonwealth of New York. That Provincial Congress, which assembled May 22, 1775, assumed all the powers of a governing body, the old Tory Assembly was buried ignominiously by the sheer force of public sentiment, and under the presidency of General Woodhull essayed the task of directing the energies of the Patriots so as to win success for the new movement not only in New York but over all the land.

That Provincial Congress, in spite of the popular enthusiasm, had a most difficult part to play. Its powers rested on no foundation but the will of the people, expressed in what in ordinary times would be regarded as a loose and illegal fashion. It apportioned its representatives over the commonwealth as it thought just, ordered the election or selection of delegates in places not represented and filled vacancies as best it could for districts, notably many on Long Island, where the majority of Tories was so great that no selection could be made in any fashion that might be called popular, or where the delegates selected actually refused to serve either because their convictions were not in sympathy with those of the patriots, or because they honestly believed they did not represent the views of those supposed to be their constituents.

The representatives of Long Island in the Provincial Congress were as follows:

Suffolk county—Nathaniel Woodhull, John Sloss Hobart, Thomas Treadwell, John Foster, Ezra L'Hommedieu, Thomas Wickham, Selah Strong.

Kings county—Henry Williams, Nicholas Cowenhoven.

Queens county—Jacob Blackwell, Jonathan Lawrence, Samuel Townsend, Joseph Robinson.

The Provincial Congress at once plunged into warlike measures. On May 29 a letter was received from John Hancock, president of the Continental Congress, at Philadelphia, directing it to take all steps necessary to de-

fend the "City and Province," and on the following day it indorsed the views submitted in the resolution of Congress which accompanied Hancock's letter and "resolved that it be recommended to the inhabitants of this Colony in general immediately to furnish themselves with necessary arms and ammunition, to use all diligence to perfect themselves in the military art, and if necessary to form themselves into companies for that purpose." From that time on until the close of hostilities the Provincial Congress was in more or less complete control of the popular government of New York.

George Washington received an address from the Provincial body on June 25, 1775, as he passed through New York to take command of the Continental force in Massachusetts, but the same body, at the time it agreed to honor Washington, learned that Governor Tryon was at the Sandy Hook and showed an equal readiness to honor him; so that the door of peace was not altogether fast. But events were hurrying to their logical conclusion with a rush which no signs of halting on the part of any body of men could stop for an instant.

On June 30 Tryon again assumed the duties of the Governorship and old Governor Colden retired forever from official life, although his services to his King, such as they were, continued to the end of his career. In spite of the presence of the representative of royalty the Colony raised its quota of 3,000 men, as called for by the Continental Congress, and had received as its share of military leaders four major generals and eight brigadier generals. On August 22 Captain Isaac Sears was ordered to take the guns from the Battery, but a broadside from the frigate "Asia" killed three of his men and for the time being put a stop to that proceeding. When the Provincial Congress adjourned, a Committee of Safety carried on the Government, and the preparations for the approaching struggle were carried on with such force and made such headway that on October 19, 1775, Governor Tryon, for his personal safety, took

refuge on the sloop of war "Halifax," and from then until after the battle of Long Island the gubernatorial headquarters continued on the quarter deck of the "Duchess of Gordon," the "Asia" or some other of his Britannic Majesty's vessels in the harbor of New York. To give Tryon his due he had even then seen the futility of the struggle on the lines determined by Britain, and as early as July 4, 1775, wrote to Lord Dartmouth that "oceans of blood may be spilled, but in my opinion America will never receive Parliamentary taxation." The second Provincial Congress met December 6, of that year.

The full list of delegates designated for the first Provincial Congress from each of the three counties of Long Island was as follows:

Suffolk county—Nathaniel Woodhull, John Sloss Hobart, Ezra L'Homedieu, William Smith, Thomas Wickham, Thomas Tredwell, David Gelston, John Foster, James Havens, Selah Strong, Thomas Deering.

Queens county—Jacob Blackwell, Captain Jonathan Lawrence, Daniel Rapalje, Zebulon Williams, Joseph French, Joseph Robinson, Nathaniel Tom, Thomas Hicks, Richard Thorn.

Kings county—Johannis E. Lott, Henry Williams, J. Remsen, Richard Stillwell, Theodorus Polhemus, John Lefferts, Nicholas Cowenhoven, John Vanderbilt.

As will be seen from a comparison of these names with those given in the records of the Provincial Congress, only a few attended of those here presented. In fact, in spite of the undoubted influence of General Woodhull, Long Island continued to be a thorn in the side of the Provincial assembly. Several of those delegates named above absolutely refused to serve. Thomas Hicks, of Little Neck, a Quaker, declined to share in Congress, on the advice of "several leading men" who assured him that Hempstead wished to remain at peace with all men. Thomas French, the delegate from Jamaica, based his refusal on the ground of his conviction that the people in his bailiwick were opposed to the Congress

and to being represented in it. Nicholas Cowenhoven, who was, if anything, lukewarm in his devotion to the Patriot cause, publicly declared at the beginning that his constituency of Flatbush desired to take no part in the Congress, and afterward narrowly escaped execution by order of Washington as a spy. He was one of the most pronounced "trimmers" of his time. Theodorus Polhemus did not appear at the Congress until three months after his election, and then was permitted to sit

The Tory sympathies of the majority of the people in Kings and Queens and of a respectable minority in Suffolk had long caused uneasiness in the Patriot ranks, and the Continental Congress, the Provincial Congress, as well as the various Whig Committees of Safety, dealt more or less hastily with it from time to time. General Lee attempted extreme measures, and even Washington at one time entertained the belief that it was necessary for the success of his cause that the



REDOUBT IN VALLEY GROVE, 1776.

because no one else from Kings was on hand, and his sphere and powers as a delegate were circumscribed. Briefly, it may be said that Queens and Kings counties were at the best only slimly represented in the Patriot councils, while Suffolk county was, for a time at least, as prominent by the number and influence of its delegates as any of the political divisions of the Commonwealth. To the second Provincial Congress Queens did not even name a delegate; but neither for that matter did Richmond, although the reason for the latter's complete abandonment of the Loyalists is evident to every reader of the history of the period.

Long Island Loyalists should be exterminated by forcible removal from their homes. The Whigs, even in places in Kings and Queens where they were in a very decided minority, made up their lack of numbers by their aggressiveness and boldness, by the outspoken manner in which they upheld their principles and by the reckless use of derogatory adjectives and uproarious nouns in their descriptions of those whose views did not coincide with their own. Arrests began to be made by order of Congress more with the view of showing the Loyalists the power of that body than with any idea at first of inflicting

serious punishment; but it was soon evident that harsher measures were required.

On September 16, 1775, Congress passed a disarmament resolution, directing that "all arms as are fit for the use of troops in this Colony which shall be in the hands of any person who has not signed the General Association," should be seized. Although general in its terms, it was in reality directed against the Loyalists of Long Island, who were known as having been recently well stocked with arms, and no time was lost in putting the resolution into effect. For several days the confiscators carried out their mission without encountering much opposition, but at the same time without accomplishing much in the way of results; then the opposition grew so strong that to persevere would have precipitated an actual conflict, and that, just at that juncture, the Patriots were anxious to avoid, as an open quarrel in the ranks of the Colonists would have only added to the perplexities of the Continental leaders, and might even have proved fatal to the cause they had at heart. So the disarming party was allowed to dissipate itself into a state of desuetude.

Before the close of the year, however, the Provincial Congress formally declared Kings and Queens counties in a state of insurrection and asked the advice of the Continental Congress as to what measures should be taken in the premises. The sending of troops to the island was urged, and it is significant that the suggestion was made that if troops were employed they should be selected from outside the State. Congress at once took up the matter and ordered Colonel Heard with 600 militia from New Jersey and two companies from Lord Stirling's regulars under Major De Hart to proceed to Long Island and subdue or pacify the Tories there. The orders of Congress were imperative. Everyone was to be disarmed who had shown any opposition to Whig rule, and whoever objected was to be arrested. Queens county was singled out as the scene of his operations, for it was thought that, with it in line or quiescent,

the patriotism of Suffolk would be strengthened while that of Kings would have opportunity to assert itself. Accordingly Colonel Heard was given a list of twenty-six citizens of Queens who were to be arrested anyhow, and a list of 788 citizens who had voted against sending deputies to the Provincial Congress was ordered to be published, so that they might be known as traitors. Says Field: "All who in the exercise of the natural and legal right of voting according to their own judgment and conscience had given their names against the election of deputies were placed under the ban of the Revolutionary Government and deprived of every right and privilege which the laws could give them. Nearly 800 freeholders of Queens were thus put out of protection of the law. All persons were forbidden to trade or hold intercourse with them; they were subject to arrest and imprisonment the moment they crossed the boundary of the county; no lawyer was to defend them when accused, or prosecute any claim for debt, or suit for protection from outrage or robbery."

According to Congress the troops in disarming and the population were to act with "dispatch, secrecy, order and humanity," and in no respect were these instructions obeyed. Indeed it is difficult to understand how they could be, considering the other instructions to the troops and the entire purpose of the expedition. On January 18, 1776, Colonel Heard with his militia left New York with Major De Hart's regulars and a gang of volunteers associated with the latter, made up it seems to us mainly of jail-birds, robbers and rascals. Colonel Heard was a man of prudence, forbearance and excellent judgment. If Major William De Hart possessed any of those qualities, which we doubt, his volunteer associates gave him no opportunity to display them, and so this "eminent lawyer" of Morristown really comes before us as the associate and friend of a lot of blacklegs of whose conduct he afterward confessed he was ashamed. The expedition crossed the East River near Hellgate and

marched to Jamaica, disarming the farmers en route, ransacking their houses and robbing right and left, and even worse crimes were committed, the blame of which was laid on De Hart's volunteers. Jamaica was for a few days the headquarters of the raiders and there large numbers of prisoners were taken, the required oath administered and the examination of Tories conducted; then Hempstead became the scene of operations, where the same formalities, or whatever we may call them, were gone through, but there De Hart's volunteers became so thoroughly intolerable even to their allies that they were summarily ordered back to New York. Colonel Heard then sent out scouting parties in various directions,—Flushing, Oyster Bay and the like. His expedition, although it elicited a formal vote of thanks from Congress, was not a complete success. He had gathered 1,000 arms, most of which were old and worthless, he had made many arrests, he had reduced the material wealth of many of the Tories, but the spirit of disaffection was as strong as ever, nay, was even more rampant, as hate in many breasts now took the place of apathy. Even the prisoners were soon released, so that no practical result really came of Heard's expedition, unless we consider that the thieves profited any who accompanied it and revelled in their spoils.

As soon as it became apparent that this raid had been a failure, another was proposed and an effort was made to force all the able-bodied Whigs which the island possessed into the four regiments of militia which had been designated as the military contribution of Long Island to the Continental forces. But the effort did not produce results as generous as had been hoped. The situation had really become a serious one. Washington had foreseen that New York was likely to become the centre of the war after he had completed the mission at Boston on which he was engaged, and no one knew better than he that New York City was not by any means a unit

for the Patriot cause. He anticipated, too, that Long Island might form a convenient passage for the royal troops to Manhattan Island and he wrote quite a number of letters on the subject to Congress and to individuals. Congress seemed indisposed even then to proceed to extreme measures, and we find him writing January 23, 1776, to General Charles Lee, who had been appointed military Governor of New York and Long Island: "I * * * am exceedingly sorry to hear that Congress countermanded the embarkation of the two regiments intended against the Tories of Long Island. They, I doubt not, had their reasons; but to me it appears that the period is arrived when nothing less than the most decisive measures should be pursued." General Lee from the beginning treated Long Island as though it was indeed a part of "the enemy's country." He planned the famous line of fortifications from Gowanus to Wallabout, and he made many a raid on the Long Island farmers for supplies while his troops were so engaged. Congress agreed to pay for such military necessities, but the agreement for patent reasons was not honored except in a few cases. He strung a line of sentinels along the shore to prevent any communication with the British ships in the harbor and forbade any trading with them. He rode pretty rough-handed over the people, treated the orders of Congress with contempt and on the whole seems to have been animated by pretty much the same spirit which in modern days we associate with the last traces of Spanish rule in America. Under Lee commenced that grand hunt after Tories which within a few months was to be repaid by the latter with terrible interest. He ordered several well known Tories to be arrested and removed from the island, not only without the sanction of Congress but even against its expressed wishes. For this he justified himself in the following impertinent letter to Congress—the letter of a braggadocio, not of a hero:

I agree, sir, entirely with you that the apprehension, trial and punishment of citizens is not my province, but that of the Provincial Congress. But, irregular as it was, I had the assurance of many respectable men that he (Gale, whose arrest had been made the basis of a specific complaint) was a most dangerous man and ought not to be suffered to remain in Long Island, where an enemy is perhaps more dangerous than in any part of America. However, their assurance and my opinion form no excuse, and I heartily repent that I did not refer him to you, his proper judges. I must inform you now, Sir, that in consequence of the last instructions from the Continental Congress to put this city (New York) and its environs in a state of defense, I have ordered Col. Ward as a previous measure to secure the whole body of professed Tories on Long Island. With the enemy at our door, forms must be dispensed with. My duty to you, to the Continental Congress, and to my own conscience have dictated the necessity of this measure.

Then began the round-up, but the Tories had taken warning, and the leaders most wanted, such as Capt. Hewlett, could not be found. Isaac Sears, "Lieut. Col. and Deputy Adjutant General," was a most effective, fussy, and disagreeable factor in carrying out Lee's views, but even he captured few Loyalists and conducted his operations so that wherever he went he made friends for King George. Even the Whig leaders murmured against him and his ways, and one, Daniel Whitehead Kissam, of the Great Neck Committee of Safety, formally lodged a complaint with the Provincial Congress. By that time, however, all civil rule in New York had been reduced to a shadow, Congress felt powerless to assert itself against the military arm and Lee determined to answer the complaints by redoubling his efforts to crush out the Tories. So he wrote Sears:

As I have received information from the Commander in Chief that there is reason soon to expect a very considerable army of the enemy, I should be in the highest degree culpable, I should be responsible to God, to my own conscience, and the Continental Congress of

America, in suffering, at so dangerous a crisis, a knot of professed foes to American liberty to remain any longer within our own bosom, either to turn openly against us in arms, in conjunction with the enemy, or covertly to furnish them with information, to carry on a correspondence to the ruin of their country. I most desire you will offer a copy of this test enclosed to the people of whom I send you a list. Their refusal will be considered an avowal of their hostile intentions. You are therefore to secure their persons and send them up, without loss of time, as irreclaimable enemies to their country, in close custody to Connecticut. Richard Hewlett is to have no conditions offered to him, but to be secured without ceremony.

This letter was written on March 5, 1776. On the following day Lee was superseded in his command and Lord Stirling appointed in his place. It was hoped that gentler measures might now prevail, but Lee, Ward and Sears and the like had fanned the discontent into almost open revolt, certainly into unconcealed repugnance to the Continental Congress, and while much of the capricious cruelty which had characterized Lee's methods was abandoned the isolation of Long Island from British influence was more stringently attempted than ever. Col. Ward sent an expedition against a notorious pirate named James, which sunk that hero's boat and captured four painted wooden guns, the sight of which were wont to inspire terror. The beach opposite Staten Island and from there to Rockaway was closely patrolled, the chain of forts was steadily strengthened, and Captains Birdsell and Nostrand secured 186 bay boats which had been suspected of carrying produce to the hated fleet. This wholesale capture did not inspire any feelings of satisfaction with the Continental force and the fussy, Tory-baiting propensities of such hair-brained creatures as Colonel Benjamin Sands, intoxicated with the possession of a degree of power which threw them far beyond their mental bearings, helped to drive many a waverer into the ranks of the avowed Tories. The various Committees of Safety again determined to do what

had hitherto been found impossible—disarm the Loyalists—and ordered all the men in the three counties capable of bearing arms to enroll in the militia. This was a most disastrous move, as events proved from the moment the British arrived. However, it served to show who were what were then called “Black Tories.” The goods of those who refused to enroll, or neglected to enroll, or to attend the prescribed drills, were seized and heavy fines were inflicted, in addition to

who enlisted from these counties were worse than useless when the crisis came.

“The most stringent efforts,” says Field, “were not put forth to force every man, Loyalist and Whig alike, into the hands of the militia. The iron despotism of military discipline, it was believed, would soon surround them all with its invisible yet impassable walls. Notwithstanding the sleepless vigilance of the Whig committee and of the partisan bands which patrolled the island, by far the largest



THE BRITISH FLEET IN THE LOWER BAY.

the inevitable arrest as the last resource. The island was now aroused into a sort of hell, with hate as the distinguishing characteristic of both parties to each other. It was an awful time. Families were separated forever, brothers became avowed enemies, fathers cursed sons, and friends were friends no longer. The impotency of all that had been done was clearly seen in the returns which came to Congress of the enrollment into the militia it had ordered on May 1, 1776. Suffolk was thoroughly in line, but Kings and Queens were hopelessly delinquent. Half even of those

part of the inhabitants of Kings and Queens counties sturdily refused to appear in arms against the royal cause. Squads of armed Whigs, constantly in active pursuit, arrested the disaffected and thrust them with entire indifference into the ranks or the common jail. The severities with which the Loyalists were now pursued afforded a fatal precedent for the British; and the subsequent sufferings of Whig prisoners in the provost, the sugar houses and the prison ships, are attributable in some degree to the rigors inflicted by their own partisans at this time. The jails through-

out the northern Colonies were soon crowded with the New York Loyalists, a large proportion of whom were from Long Island."

There is no doubt that it was on Long Island that the plot was hatched which was to abduct Washington and so cause such confusion in the ranks of the Continentals as to end the war. Around the story of this plot much secrecy was thrown at the time and immediately after it was exposed,—why, we can only conjecture. We can also only guess at its extent, but it really seems to have been widespread over the Colony of New York at least, and to have had in view risings of the Tories at several points as soon as the abduction of Washington was accomplished, by means of which the Loyalists were to seize the reins of government. Of the 100 persons afterward alleged to have been engaged in it fifty-six were residents of Kings and Queens counties, and Richard Hewlett was distinguished as the leader of them all. Mayor Matthews, Col. Axtel, Dr. Samuel Martin of Hempstead, Dr. Charles Arden of Jamaica, Capt. Archibald Hamilton of Flushing, and John Rapalye of Brooklyn were prominent among those for whom warrants were afterwards issued and there was also the usual modicum of the scum of civilization, such as Michael Lynch and Thomas Hickey, jail-birds and counterfeiters—Gilbert Forbes, a spy, and Mary Gibbons, a female in the "confidence" of Washington, whatever that may imply. Hickey and Lynch and Mary were to be the actual abductors of the Chief, Mary seemingly being designed to act the part of a modern Delilah. The best contemporary account of the plot which we have seen is contained in a letter written by Surgeon William Eustis to a friend in Boston and which is printed in volume III of the "Memoirs of the Long Island Historical Society." The letter is dated at New York, June 28, 1776, and while extravagant in its language, and it seems to me ridiculous in its fears, is nevertheless an undoubtedly honest account of the affair, as it seemed to the writer and as doubtless it

seemed to most of those actively engaged with the Continental army.

Perhaps I may give you a better idea of it (the plot) than as yet you have obtained. The Mayor of New York, with a number of villains who were possessed of fortunes and who formerly ranked with Gentlemen, had impiously dared an undertaking big with fatal consequence to the virtuous army in York and which in all probability would have given the enemy possession of the city with little loss. Their design was, upon the first engagement which took place, to have murdered (with trembling I say it) the best man on earth. Gen. Washington was to have been the first subject of their unheard-of sacrifice; our magazines which, as you know, are very capacious, were to have been blown up; every general officer and every other who was active in serving his country in the field was to have been assassinated; our cannon were to have been spiked up; and in short every the most accursed scheme was laid to give us into the hands of the enemy and to ruin us. They had plenty of money and gave large bounties and larger promises to those who were engaged to serve their hellish purposes. In order to execute their design upon our General they had enlisted into their service one or two from his Excellency's Life Guard who were to have assassinated him; knowing that no person could be admitted into the magazines or among the cannon but those who were of the artillery, they have found several in our regiment vile enough to be concerned in their diabolical designs: these were to have blown up the magazines and spiked the cannon.

Their design was deep, long concerted and wicked to a great degree. But, happily for us, it has pleased God to discover it to us in season, and I think we are making a right improvement (as the good folks say). We are hanging them as fast as we find them out. I have just now returned from the execution of one of the General's Guard (Thomas Hickey). He was the first that has been tried; yesterday at 11 o'clock he received sentence; to-day at 11 he was hung in presence of the whole army. * * * The trial will go on and I imagine they will be hung, gentle and simple, as fast as the fact is proved against them. That any set of men could be so lost to every virtuous principle, and so dead to the feelings of humanity as to con-

spire against the person of so great and good a man as Gen. Washington, is surprising; few of our countrymen (as you may well imagine) are concerned. They are in general foreigners; upward of thirty were concerned; and it is said Gov. Tryon is at the bottom.

Of course the data contained in this letter are made up, much of it, most of it, indeed, of rumor with its usual exaggerations; but there is no doubt of the existence of a plot and of some of the consequences of its discovery, such as the execution of the unfortunate Hickey; but the men who were supposed to be instigators, the leaders, aiders and abettors, the concocters, all seem to have escaped. Hewlett was already in hiding and so prepared for any such unpleasant consequences as arrest; Mayor Matthews was arrested and his home searched, but no incriminating evidence against him could be found.

Washington arrived in New York from New England April 14 and took personal charge of the work of fortification and defense. On May 21 he went to Philadelphia to consult with the leaders of Congress and on June 14 he was again on the Hudson and inspecting the defense at King's Bridge. It seems to have been during his absence in Philadelphia that the plot was matured and its design, whatever it was, was to go into operation on his return.

He seems to have been at once informed of the conspiracy, and on June 20 its existence was known throughout the Continental army in and around New York. A waiter in a tavern is given as the informer, and it was alleged that on his statements the warrants were issued. The fact that Hickey and Lynch had by that time been arrested for issuing counterfeit notes and were in jail and anxious to save their own lives by turning informers, had possibly more to do with the "discovery" than anything else. The legal and military proceedings taken against many of the accused certainly showed that the Continental army was full of spies; that plans of the fortifications and the like had been placed in the

hands of the British commander on Staten Island; and that there were traitors in the American army; but so far as the abduction of Washington was concerned it dwindled down to the work of vengeance of a discarded mistress and two unprincipled scoundrels; and was frustrated unconsciously so far as the Continental authorities were concerned by the imprisonment of the latter. Mary Gibbons disappeared forever from the scene on the moment of discovery.

The discovery of this plot and its accompanying wild rumors did not improve matters on Long Island: on the contrary it served to make it be regarded more than ever as part of "the enemy's country." Capt. Marinus Willett was at once dispatched to Jamaica, where a party of those alleged to have been engaged in the conspiracy were reported to be in hiding, and after what seems to have been a regular old-fashioned Indian sort of fight, in which one of the Loyalists was killed and several wounded, made the party prisoners, but was not fortunate enough to capture any of those for whom the Continental authorities were most anxious. The coast was so thoroughly patrolled by Continental troops that communication with the British vessels became almost impossible except to pirates like James and dare-devils like Hewlett, and the iron hand of the dominant power was felt in all directions in the two disaffected counties. But even threats and all sorts of coercive measures failed to make the delegates to the Provincial Congress attend its sessions and the incessant fussy and sometimes cruel pressure of the Whig Committees of Safety not only failed to stay the spirit of the spirit of Toryism but rather caused it to increase, resolved, as it were, the spirit of loyalty from being merely a sentiment into a dogma. The fast gathering strength of the British force in the bay and on Staten Island could not be hidden from the Loyalists, and not only served to embolden them to defy the Continental powers, but the evident certainty of the island being soon again under British domination,

a certainty that was zealously promulgated by their leaders, turned many a half-hearted Loyalist into a Tory of the Tories, ready even to make sacrifice for his cause, because he believed such sacrifice would only be temporary.

But the Revolutionary authorities were vigilant to the last, because as developments unfolded themselves it became evident that Long Island was likely to become the key to the military situation. The forts were strengthened in men and in resources, the line of defenses was duly made more formidable and the patrolling parties along the shore more numerous and vigilant.

But the people in Kings and Queens remained callous to the slogan of Liberty. An election for delegates to the Provincial Congress was held on the 19th of August, but the delegates never had a chance to serve. Three days later Gravesend was in the hands of the British and the campaign was on which ended in Long Island being for seven years in the hands of the British, and the Tories had a chance to repay their persecutors for the indignities and cruelties and wrongs which had been perpetrated upon them in the name of Liberty. They availed themselves of the opportunity and added interest in the way of new cruelties and prison horrors that robs the story of their loyalty of all sense of nobleness, and has served to add only a new and sickening page to the history of human oppression and deviltry and persecution.

It is difficult at this stage in the world's history to put ourselves into the places of the leaders of public opinion, the men of action, in this country, in 1776, and to know all their information, the rumors which reached them, the various now generally hidden and forgotten data on which they based the details of their policy; and so it is difficult to clearly and fully give judgment on their doings. At the same time, the passage of the years has made things clear to us which were not so to them, and we can weigh their policy in the light of its results more truly and unerringly

than was possible to them. All we can read of the policy of the Continental leaders regarding Long Island impels us to believe that their policy was wrong, that it only drove into practical rebellion a part of Long Island which otherwise would have remained neutral in its loyalty, which really did not care whether King or Congress reigned, so long as it was left to pursue its way in peace. When the conflict opened, of course, Kings and Queens had their rabid Tories; so also they had their violent Whigs; but the bulk of the population really felt like saying "a plague on both your houses." As soon as they felt themselves supported by Congress the Whigs by their violence started in to make their own cause an instrument of oppression, and such measures as the enforcement of militia service and disarmament were not only liable to turn the entire population against those who thus deemed coercion necessary to liberty, but created a feeling of false strength in their own ranks which had most inglorious results when the time for action came. The Provincial Congress, it is fair to say, seems to have had some sense of the unstatesmanlike nature of the policy of force in this instance, but the hotheadedness of such fire-eaters as Charles Lee and the antics of such fanfarons as Col. John Sands, the men of action when the military crisis came, crushed out whatever statesmanship then struggled in the brains of the delegates to Congress. Even Washington, usually so clear-headed and sagacious, fell in line with the reports of his military subordinates and treated the people of Kings and Queens as enemies to the cause to which he had with rare single-heartedness devoted his life, his all. But the effects of all this are clearly evident to us as we review the events of 1775 and 1776, and see how easily the British effected a landing and found hosts of friends in a spot which ought to have been one of the natural defenses of the country and on an island on which, had the people been loyal to the Whigs, even Howe's army could not have landed in triumph.



MAP OF THE BATTLE OF BROOKLYN, AUGUST 27, 1776.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE BATTLE OF BROOKLYN.

THE Battle of Brooklyn, or of Long Island, as it is often called, was a marked disaster to the forces of the Revolution. It showed that in point of strategy the Continental Generals, outside of their chief, were hardly fitted to cope with the trained warriors of Britain. There is no doubt that the battle was lost mainly through a tactical blunder on the part of Gen. Putnam, or rather through the want of tactical knowledge on his part and a strange carelessness on the part of Gen. Sullivan. A review of the battle, however, would almost seem to force the conviction that the American army would have been defeated at any rate when an issue was made on that ground, for certainly it was a foregone conclusion that from the time the British were permitted to land in force (some 20,000 veteran troops), with a fleet at their service, they were bound to become masters of the situation when opposed only by some 6,000 half trained militia.

At the same time the heroic resistance offered by the Continentals, their behavior under the most dispiriting circumstances, their stubborn defense, their willingness under a misconception of orders to resume the fray, and the masterly retreat from their position, not only saved the military reputation of the Patriot forces but proved that the men had in them that stuff of which heroes—victorious heroes—are made. The courage of Smallwood and the dash of Stirling were in themselves lessons to the militia forces; the stolid

resistance of Sullivan was worthy of all praise, even although his inactivity at a critical moment was among the primal causes of the defeat; and up to a certain point the disposition of his forces by Putnam was masterly, while the tactical pre-eminence of Washington, aided by fog and the elements, turned the edge of what might have been an irrecoverable blow into merely a military mishap.

Certainly the generalship of the British commander in putting his finger upon the weak point in the American line of defense and taking full advantage of it was a personal triumph which, at this day, need not be withheld from him. But he lost the fruits of his victory by his remarkable inactivity, an inactivity which it is said to his credit was prompted by a hope that his victory might lead to a cessation of hostilities and a stoppage of the shedding of blood. But the time for that had not yet come on either side, and Washington took advantage of the halt in affairs and of a generous fog to concentrate the Continental forces of the northern part of Manhattan Island. The principal result of the battle to the British was that it gave them the control of Long Island and Manhattan Island, both of which they continued to hold until peace was declared and the new nation was formally recognized on every hand.

With the triumphant ending of the campaign at Boston and its occupation by Washington, one chapter in the story of the Revolutionary struggle was closed, and closed in

a manner that inspired the Patriots with high hopes for the ultimate success of their arms. It was felt that now they were in a better position, with the prestige of success behind them, and the experience gained in actual conflict, to meet the further onslaughts of the enemy. The result of the evacuation of Boston in fact left the country in the entire possession, in a military sense, of the Patriot force, and great naturally were the rejoicings.

But Washington and the leaders of the Revolution well knew that only a chapter had been closed and that another would soon open. In fact, across the St. Lawrence another chapter had even then been worked out, with disastrous results. Montgomery was killed at Quebec and that fortress with its rich stores of munitions of war defied the efforts of the American army. Montreal and other places were still in their hands, but sickness as well as the fortunes of war was decimating their ranks, and step by step the Patriots were forced to recross the St. Lawrence. That territory, therefore, was then more than a menace to the fortunes of the movement of Freedom: it was a storehouse for the common enemy, and its port of Halifax was a convenient gathering place for future operations.

Then General Howe had practically left Boston with his forces intact, with the honors of war, carrying with him his arms and his supplies, and his baggage; and although his destination was unknown for some time the existence of that force was a menace. Washington naturally thought that New York, with its magnificent opportunities for naval and military manoeuvres, would be the scene of its operations, and accordingly orders were issued for the immediate defence of that port. General Lee was at once dispatched to hurry on and superintend this work; and the army, as rapidly as possible, was transferred to Manhattan Island and its vicinity. It was felt, indeed, by many that the Continental army could not hold the island against a combined

attack of the military and naval forces of the enemy, but the strategical importance of the place, its immense value to the British as an entreport, and its pre-eminence as an industrial centre—which it had even then assumed—made its retention in the hands of the Patriots a matter of prime importance. If it could not be held, it could at least be made debatable ground, and unless a signal victory was gained by them at the outset this was the most that could be hoped for. All preparations were therefore made for defense, when it was learned that Howe had sailed to Halifax, determining to wait there for reinforcements before entering upon a new campaign.

When he returned a significant change was taking place and the separate Colonies were formally united into one defensive government by the signing of the Declaration of Independence at Philadelphia July 4, 1776, by the representatives of the thirteen original States.

With the defenses of Manhattan Island, except in a general way, this history has nothing to do; but it may be said that quite an extensive chain of forts was constructed in what was then the city with a grand battery of twenty-three guns at the most southern point. Beside it was Fort George, and near Trinity church was another, and two more further along the water-front were intended to command the approach to the Hudson. The other side of Manhattan Island, opposite the Long Island shore, was protected by an even more formidable chain, Coentie's battery of five guns, Waterbury's battery of seven guns, Badlam's battery of eight guns, on Rutgers Hill near the old Jewish burying-ground; Thompson's battery of nine guns at Hoorne's Hook, and a battery at what is now the junction of Grand and Centre streets. There were also breastworks covering other points, and sunken ships and chain lines were added to the means by which it was hoped to prevent the passage up either the North or East rivers and hamper the efforts of a fleet to

aid any landing party. The main reliance of Washington, however, was the elaborate scheme of defense at Kingsbridge and the upper extremity of the island, knowing that so long as they remained in his hands the island itself would be practically useless to the invader, for by that term the British forces could then justly be called.

Second in importance only to Harlem Heights in that it did not hold the key to

close attention. The fort on Red Hook was strengthened, and, as Fort Defiance, was expected to challenge any ship or landing party before the guns on the Grand Battery became available. Gen. Nathanael Greene took charge of the defense of the island and lost no time in completing his work. Brooklyn at that time lay between the Wallabout and Red Hook and was encircled by a chain of small hills, some of which are still to be seen in



THE BATTLE PASS. Sketched by G. I. Burdette in 1792.

the continent but of equal importance to the defense of Manhattan Island itself, was the retention of Long Island to the Patriot forces. With that in the hands of the British Manhattan Island was at their mercy practically, and so the campaign of the midsummer of 1776 resolved itself into this: the defense of Long Island for the protection of New York City proper and the defense of the Heights around the Harlem and the southern part of Westchester county for the protection of the Hudson River and the northern States.

Long Island was therefore the subject of

Prospect Park and Greenwood Cemetery, although the landscape has been sadly changed by the march of modern improvement. Between this stretch of hills and the water-front facing Staten island and Sandy Hook was a stretch of flat ground dotted with such villages as Gravesend, Flatlands and New Utrecht, an admirable landing ground for an offensive force. But the screen of hills formed a natural line of defense, and so long as these could be held New York was safe from that side. Gen. Greene took full advantage of this natural breastwork and covered the passes be-

tween the hills through which an enemy must pass.

Behind these hills a series of forts extended from the Wallabout to the Red Hook.

Fort Stirling commanded the water-front at what is now the junction of Hicks and Pierrepont streets.

Fort Putnam (now Fort Greene).

Fort Greene, near the present intersection of Nevins and Dean streets.

Forts Putnam and Greene were connected by an oblong redoubt.

Cork Screw Fort was on the space now lying between Atlantic, Pacific, Court and Clinton Streets.

There was also a small redoubt eastward of Fort Putnam, near the Jamaica road.

Fort Box, a redoubt (four guns) on the slope of Bergen Hill west of Smith street, not far from Hoyt and Carroll streets.

No one can look at a map of early Brooklyn without seeing that these defenses were skillfully planned so far as their situation goes to protect the town behind them; but as has been said, the main purpose of Greene was to prevent any passage across the chain of hills which nature had placed ready to his hand for purposes of defense. Of course, could the landing of any force have been contested, an even better defense might have been insured; but his force was too small to guard an extensive stretch of territory; there was no way of telling which the enemy, if he did land at all, might select; and it was not an age when the telegraph could instantly give warning of an approach, and when the means were at hand for quickly massing large forces of men at any given point. Besides, his troops were not numerous enough to do more than guard the defenses, and so he wisely determined to concentrate his attention on them and leave the landing to fate.

Meanwhile General William Howe was not idle. He left Boston on March 17, landed with his forces at Halifax some ten days later and remained there until the middle of June. By that time communication had been entered

into with the home Government, reinforcements promised and new plans for the subjugation or submission of the Colonies, warlike and pacific, duly considered and agreed to. In accordance with these General Howe gathered up his army and again set sail, arriving on Staten Island on June 29. A landing was soon effected and the British troops went into camp. New York was naturally greatly excited by the appearance of the visitors, and the excitement deepened as time went on and no hostile demonstrations of any account were made, showing that re-inforcements were expected. The whole of Staten Island was at once under the control of Howe, even the local militia organization renewing its allegiance to the king, and, until the close of the conflict, it so remained. The possession of the island naturally gave the British a commanding position in front of New York. By it they controlled a wide section of the water-front: they commanded, indeed, the entrance to New York harbor, while it afforded many landing places for their troops safe from all interference or obstruction except in the remote and unlikely event of an attack from the Jersey side, across the Kill von Kull. Reinforcements continued to arrive, but it was not until July 14 that, with the arrival of Admiral Lord Howe and his fleet, the British felt strong enough to begin their plans for bringing about peace either by persuasion or compulsion. Into the story of the first of these we need not here enter: they belong to the general history of the country. It was perfectly understood, however, in the Continental camps that there was no hope of peace as long as surrender was the basis of the British proposals, and so the work of defense was carried forward with incessant zeal.

The defense of Long Island was pushed on with especial haste, and as the position of the British indicated whence an attack on New York might possibly come the hills that encircled Brooklyn were thoroughly covered by the Continental leader. He also, it is said, prepared for the eventuality that the enemy

might land on Long Island, pass his chain of defenses and by making a detour endeavor to gain the narrow passages towards Hell Gate and so gain possession of the upper part of Manhattan Island. Much discussion had been created as to the military value of Greene's arrangements, but it must be remembered that his plan was fully approved by Washington, who visited the works several times while in course of formation, and, also, that before his arrangements were fully completed he was seized with fever and compelled to take to his bed, unable even to discuss his plans with General Sullivan, who was appointed temporarily to the military command of the island. We know the adage about the impropriety of swapping horses while crossing a stream, but the "swap" had to be made in this instance and with the usual results.

Sullivan was a brave man, but had the reputation of being careless at times, knew little of strategy, was a magnificent leader of an onslaught, and ignorant of mathematical calculations, which enter so largely into warfare. Rumors began to thicken that the descent on Long Island was about to be made, and reinforcements were sent over from the main army on Manhattan; and then, on Aug. 22, it was definitely learned that the British had actually crossed and had effected a landing at what is now the village of Bath between New Utrecht and Gravesend. As it was also known that they had only three days' provisions with them, there seemed no longer any doubt that they meant to attempt the capture of New York by the most direct land route possible, across the Gowanus range to Brooklyn. Still, although everything so indicated, so far as information among the Patriots went, this movement might only be undertaken by one part of the army to detract attention from another movement, directed against King's Bridge, so that virtually the entire force at the command of Washington was called into requisition to guard quite a great extent of country against a foe which might throw an overwhelming force at a moment against whatever part was

weakest. It should be remembered that a system of spies was carefully maintained by both sides. Every movement on Staten Island appeared to be known at once to Washington and doubtless the same espionage brought to a knowledge of the Howes the weak points in the long and tortuous line of defense.

It did not take long for the mystery of the moment to clear away and the plan of campaign via Long Island to unfold itself, although even after it was seen that the British were landed in force at Bath the watchful vigilance all along the shores of Manhattan and the approaches of the Hudson. In fact one of the spies employed by Gen. William



DEWEY'S COPY OF THE BRITISH
LANDING PLACE

Livingston of New Jersey brought in to that patriot such information that he wrote to Washington on the 21st that 20,000 men had already embarked to occupy Long Island and the entrance to the Hudson simultaneously while 15,000 were in readiness for other service touching New Jersey itself. Washington at once saw that Long Island was the crucial point in the new campaign and as soon as the news of the landing reached him dispatched six battalions of his troops to reinforce the defensive struggle. Five battalions more in New York were held in immediate readiness to cross the East River should their services be needed, but the defense of Manhattan Island demanded their retention there except in case of a great emergency. The stories of

the spies could not always be depended on. Washington afterward (Sept. 9) wrote to Congress: "Before the landing of the enemy on Long Island the point of attack could not be known, nor any satisfactory judgment formed of their intention. It might be on Long Island, on Bergen, or directed on the city."

The landing of the British was conducted in a masterly manner and proceeded without much incident. The movement began in the early morning; by nine o'clock 9,000 troops had been landed and before noon the entire attacking force of 15,000 men with their arms and baggage, stood on Long Island. The movement was clearly seen from the American line, but no serious attempt was made to interrupt it. Col. Reed, in a letter dated August 23, indeed wrote: "As there are so many landing places and the people of the island generally so treacherous, we never expected to prevent the landing." For military purposes under all the existing circumstances no better landing point could have been selected. As soon as it was known that the British had landed, an alarm seized New York which the Patriots could hardly allay. On the 24th, Washington at once crossed to Long Island and gave personal instruction as to the defense. He judged that, in accordance with news which had reached him, the first purpose of the invaders was to win the lines held by Gen. Sullivan, either by a surprise after a forced march or an attack in force, and he strengthened that commander's position with six regiments. Certainly Washington's judgment in this instance was in full accord with the dictates of military science, and had Sullivan understood that science as well, or had he exhibited the watchfulness his position demanded, he might have forced the fighting at his lines and so changed the entire aspect of the campaign.

After issuing a stirring address to his troops Washington returned to New York and at once sent General Putnam to take chief command on Long Island. Washington

was not entirely confident of Sullivan's judgment, and it is said that the latter justified his commander's doubt by "sulking at being verbally superseded in the direction of affairs by the veteran." Putnam, we are told, had a fair knowledge of the campaigning ground and had the entire confidence of his chief. He at once began to strengthen the defense wherever he perceived the opportunity or necessity, but the time of his disposal was too limited to enable him to grasp the whole scheme of defense as laid down by Greene, and the absence of that skillful soldier was regretted more keenly by none more than the brave soldier who was thus suddenly called to assume his part. At the same time it should be remembered that the real commander in chief was Washington, and he it also said that he never shirked the responsibility of that position. On the morning of the 26th he again crossed to Brooklyn, rode over in company with Putnam, Sullivan, and other officers much of the line of defense, visited and encouraged the outposts and carefully examined the position of the British forces, some of whom by that time were near Flatbush. The entire line of defense seemed a strong one, every avenue of approach, it appeared to the hurried investigators, was fully covered, and such as under experienced troops would have formed an impassable barrier. Possibly Gen. Greene alone could have told its weak points, but his usefulness for this campaign was a thing of the past.

On the night of the 26th Washington, with a heavy heart but not without strong hope, returned to New York, and it has been calculated that while he was crossing the river the British forces began their forward movement.

From the moment of landing on the 22d the British troops had not been idle, but were engaged in a series of movements the precise nature of which was difficult to judge, although the Patriots adhered to the view that one of the passes, most likely that held by Sullivan, was to be the object of a concen-



BATTLE OF LONG ISLAND.

trated attack. The army was steadily extending itself over the level country between the sea and the hills, gradually forcing the American outposts back to the latter and seizing the various roads. Many skirmishes took place between the outposts, but the precise design of the enemy was cleverly concealed, and until the 26th the main purpose of the British was to wear out the raw continental levies by keeping them continually on the alert. On the 26th the Hessian troops under De Heister took possession of Flatbush, while Sir Henry Clinton, the real commander of the forces, occupied Flatlands, and General Grant carried his column within sight of General Stirling's division. Still the precise purpose of all these movements was concealed, or rather nothing offered a better explanation than that one of the defensive posts was to be carried by force. General Howe's spies were better informed than those of the Continentals and he knew and seized upon the weakest spot in the whole line of defense. The Battle of Brooklyn was a battle of strategy and it is no disgrace to say that on that point the Patriots were worsted. Their strategist was lying hovering between life and death. He alone knew the full scope of the plan he had conceived and put into effect.

Washington had not time to review the ground thoroughly, neither had Putnam, neither for that matter had Sullivan, the next in command, but he might have saved the day, or changed its entire aspect, had he been more watchful at the moment when watchfulness was most needed.

In the early hours of the morning of August 27th word was brought in by pickets that a column of the enemy under General Grant had moved against the lines held by Stirling. The latter, in accordance with orders received from Putnam, advanced toward Gowanus creek with Hazlet's Delaware regiment and Smallwood's Maryland regiment. At the creek they were joined by Col. Atlee's Pennsylvania regiment, which had been stationed

around there as an advanced outpost. The advance of the British was soon heard and Stirling ordered the Pennsylvanians to await the foe in an orchard on the left of the road, while he with his Delaware and Maryland men took possession of a ridge which overlooked the route the enemy must pass. Word was at once sent back to the main body urging reinforcements, as it seemed that the expected battle was to open at that point. When the light began to dawn the approach of the enemy was clearly perceived and their strength in the wavering light was at once overestimated. The Pennsylvanians fired several volleys at the approaching column and then retired to a position on the left of the ridge held by Stirling's troops. That force had already been strengthened by Kichline's regiment of riflemen which was scattered around the base of the ridge and well under shelter so as to retard any advance which might be made to storm the position by an attack in force. That seemed likely when some of Grant's troops in advance of the column took possession of an orchard about 150 yards away and commenced firing into the ranks of the Patriots. For two hours thereafter, until long after the darkness had disappeared, a battle of musketry was kept up between the two forces, with the view of "drawing each other," or in other words in the hope of each gaining a clearer understanding of the movements of the opposing side. On the part of the British Stirling's purpose was divined as to keep them in check until his forces were strengthened so that he could give them battle. Grant's purpose was to keep Stirling so employed until a certain crisis in the engagement was reached. Two field pieces were hurried to Stirling's aid and placed in position to sweep the roadway along which the British would advance, and Grant brought up some artillery and after much deploying took up a position about 600 yards from the Americans, occupying also a series of ridges. Thereafter there was a continuous firing by the artillery of the armies, but

neither was inclined to attempt a general engagement. Grant was carrying out his part of the British leader's scheme by keeping Stirling in front, while Stirling, unaware of the strength of the enemy, could only with safety hold the invader in check until his request for reinforcements should be complied with or until General Putnam should appear to take command at the point with a strong force.

Meanwhile another part of the British plan was put in operation and failed. It was to land a force on Manhattan Island, but contrary winds defeated that purpose. The ships with the troops could not get through the Narrows and after several efforts landed their men at Bath, and one of the ships, the *Roebuck*, bombarded Fort Defense on Red Hook and in that way added to the uncertainty of the Patriot leaders as to the exact nature of the entire movement. The four eighteen-pounders in the fort made a gallant response to the *Roebuck's* five and prevented any salient damage at that point, although it must be admitted that the noise of these cannons aided the success of the British plans.

Meanwhile another part of the British strategical movement was being played with marked success. De Heister's Hessians at Flatbush commenced an artillery attack on the fort held in the hills in front by Col. Hand of General Sullivan's division. Sullivan himself at once repaired to the spot and was apparently convinced that the attack in force was to be made against his lines. But the British made no advance and contented themselves with a brisk fire, which was answered as briskly from the hills.

On the part of the British all these movements were merely feints to engage the attention of the Continentals while the main movement was in progress. All through the night Sir Henry Clinton, with a force of some of the best and most experienced of the British troops, had been marching by a most circuitous route past the chain of defenses with

the view of seizing what was reported to them as being a slimly guarded pass through the Bedford Hills, and so turn the flank of the whole line of defense. Until Grant and the other commanders heard the guns announcing that the movement had been successfully carried out and that the Continentals were between two fires, they simply held their opponents in check. The British sped on from Flatlands on their journey without noise and, with a British sympathizer belonging to the locality as a guide, came within a mile of their objective point before daybreak. Then their advance troops surrounded an American Patriot and discovered that the Bedford Pass, for which they were making, was practically unguarded, and that no troops were around that important point except a few patrolling squads who had to guard quite an extensive section of that front. Clinton at once pushed forward sufficient light infantry to take possession of the pass and to hold it. This was easily done and the prime strategic move of the fight had been accomplished without even attracting the attention of the enemy. By daybreak the British army was in full possession of the pass and its surrounding heights, and the soldiers halted for breakfast and to enjoy a brief period of rest before entering upon the second stage of the movement.

The army pursued its journey to Bedford village, on what was known as the Jamaica road, and it was not until it had reached that spot that Col. Miles, the officer who seems to have been responsible for the patrolling of that section of the defensive works, was aware of the presence of the foe within the lines, and he arrived near enough to see them only to find that most of the force had passed him and he was virtually cut off from his own support. But firing was at once begun and the disjointed commands of Col. Wyllys, Col. Miles and Col. Brodhead did their best to oppose the advance. But that at best was of very small account: its main result as the noise of the guns reached the different points

along the line of defense was to announce to the defending forces that they had actually been caught in a trap.

The British movement was then directed against General Sullivan's position, and that soldier soon found himself between two fires, for the Hessians, hearing the guns, knew that Clinton had accomplished his purpose and was on the other side of that natural fortification. Count Donop's Hessian regiment made an attack on the redoubt, with De Heister's entire remaining force supporting the advance at short distance. Sullivan, seeing how hopeless was his position, gave orders for a retreat to the main American lines, and the Hessians were soon in full possession of the pass. But Sullivan's order was given too late, and his battalions were met by Clinton's infantry and cavalry and the retreat turned into a rout. The British in front and the Hessians in the rear attacked the dispirited and disheartened Continentals with the utmost severity, and it is said the Hessians showed no quarter. Commands were quickly broken up in this terrible ordeal, and all trace of discipline was lost. Some managed to cut their way through weak spots in the advancing column to the American lines, while others contrived to escape from the scene of carnage by accident or luck, whatever it may be called. It is difficult to harmonize all the details which have come to us of that scene of carnage or to clearly understand why the retreat should have turned out so disastrously that the pursuit was kept up even to within rifle-shot of the inner chain of forts, such as Greene and Putnam. The Americans, wherever they had a chance, exhibited marked courage and made a gallant fight,—a fight in every way worthy of the splendid cause with which their lives were bound up; but individual or even battalion feats of heroism could not accomplish much when all around was confusion, all around was despair, and escape seemed cut off on every side. Sullivan, whose shortcomings as a commander brought about the rout, distinguished himself by his bravery

while there was any hope and then tried to escape from the field. For a time he managed to conceal himself, but he was finally captured by three Hessian troopers and conducted within the British lines.

In the meantime Stirling was rendering a much more gallant and soldierly account of himself than Sullivan. He, too, found himself caught between two fires. The sound of the guns on Sullivan's front gave him notice of the movement and it is said that Sullivan sent him an order to retreat within the inner lines as soon as he realized how the outer defenses had been turned. But that order never reached its destination. The sound of the approaching guns was heard by Grant quite as soon as Stirling, but the British general at once knew their full significance and prepared to carry out the remainder of the task allotted to him. His previous inactivity had been mistaken by some of the raw Continental troops for temerity; but that notion was soon dissipated. When the proper moment came, Grant's troops advanced and cut off the commands of Col. Atlee and Col. Parsons from the main body, and this sudden display of aggressiveness with the nearer and nearer noise of the guns in his rear warned Stirling that retreat had become a necessity. Leaving a part of his force to impede, at least, the British advance, he hoped to reach the inner line of fortification without interruption by leaving the beaten way, crossing a creek fordable at low water, and that plan he put into execution. He had not advanced far, however, when he was confronted by a force under Cornwallis. Nothing remained but fight or capitulation, and the Americans accepted the former. It was a splendid conflict, carried on on both sides with indomitable courage and infinite resource. The Maryland troops especially distinguished themselves, and for a brief interval it seemed as if Cornwallis would be compelled to withdraw his forces, leaving the Americans' passage clear; but reinforcements, coming up, nearly surrounded the Patriots and they were in much the same

sort of a trap which had enmeshed Sullivan's troops earlier in the day. Retreat was ordered all along the line, but the enemy constantly increased in numbers. Some of Stirling's force managed to enter the American lines in form, early in the engagement, but latterly those who thus reached safety did so in disjointed numbers. Stirling himself fought throughout the conflict with the most devoted heroism, cheered and encouraged his men at all points, and it was only when further resistance seemed absolutely useless, when there was no doubt of the issue of the day, that he surrendered himself as a prisoner.

With the collapse of Stirling's brigade the battle was past. Early in the afternoon Washington crossed over to Brooklyn and witnessed the defeat, unable, with the raw militia remaining in the forts, to offer any resistance. He quickly made up his mind, as soon as he learned of the success of Clinton's movement, that the day was lost, and devoted himself to staying the victors at the lines guarded by the chain of forts. The battle of Stirling's troops was watched by him with particular solicitude, as it seemed impossible that any of that brave body of men could ever return to his lines. That so many did was the only relieving feature in a day that was undoubtedly one of disaster. General Washington passed an anxious day and night, expecting every moment that the enemy, flushed with success, would at once turn against the chain of forts, and he fully realized their

weakness. This the British did not do, their commanders evidently thinking enough had been gained for one day; but in spite of this inaction no one knew better than Washington that the main defense of Brooklyn had been wiped out, that Long Island was virtually completely in the hands of the British and that the army of the defenders was in a most critical position.

It is difficult to estimate the losses sustained by both armies during the day, not alone on account of the inaccuracy with which such details were then kept and the consequent unreliable nature of even official reports, but on account of the widely varying estimates made by those engaged in the fight and the remarkable figures deduced by many of the later historians of the battle. The British commander in chief estimated his loss in killed and wounded at 367. The Americans' loss has been placed at under 200, while some 800 were held as prisoners. These figures of casualties bear out to a degree Washington's assertion that the British "suffered a loss in killed and wounded equal to that inflicted upon the Americans." But it is difficult to accept Washington's statement as being anything more than an off-hand calculation, made without being in full possession of the facts or figures. Field in his sketch of the battle estimates that the American loss in killed and wounded and prisoners was not far from 2,000, and probably that is as correct an estimate as can now be made.



CHAPTER XVII.

THE RETREAT FROM LONG ISLAND—A STRATEGIC TRIUMPH.

IF in point of strategy the British proved themselves in the battle of August 27th as the superiors of their opponents, the retreat of the American forces from Long Island on the night of the 29th and morning of the 30th amply demonstrated the fact that there was certainly one man at the head of the Continentals who was at least their equal in that regard. While the battle of Brooklyn was a defeat, a disastrous defeat, the retreat was a masterly movement and a moral triumph. Of course, in its success General Washington was aided by nature, inasmuch as a dense fog concealed his movements; but many noted commanders meet us in the procession of history who did not understand or appreciate the value of such aid when offered them.

In all the story of the Revolutionary struggle there was not a more disheartening time than the twenty-four hours which followed the night of August 27th. Had the British plans been fully carried into effect the Continental leaders would have been left without an army and the entire story of the struggle for liberty been more prolonged than it was, even supposing that it could then have survived such a blow as the loss of the 9,000 or more troops which on the morning of the 28th made up the inner line of defense around Brooklyn. There is no doubt that the capture of these patriots was the final point in the British movement, and had the latter pressed their advantage without cessation, as the troops themselves desired, there seems little

doubt that the result would have been attained; but the fatuity which so often distinguished the British Generals throughout the Revolutionary War in this instance aided the Patriots just as much as did the weather.

Washington, who was now in direct command and expected every moment an attack upon his lines, seems to have spent most of the night following the battle in passing over the works and personally inspecting every point. A call was sent out for reinforcements and in the early hours some of the troops which had been assigned to guard King's Bridge and the upper part of Manhattan arrived with General Mifflin, some 800 men in all. Then 1,300 Massachusetts soldiers, mainly fishermen, arrived under Colonel Glover, and their appearance seems to have infused a new spirit of hope in the hearts of the Patriots. Troops in New Jersey under General Mercer were ordered with all haste to march to New York, and there virtually to await further orders—orders which could only be formulated as events unfolded themselves. Even with the reinforcements Washington's position was a most critical one. True, his lines were strong and well chosen, but in front of him lay a well disciplined, well fed and well officered army of regular troops, flushed with success, while the majority of his force of 9,000 (or 9,500 as the highest estimate gives it) was an untrained mass, poorly armed, officered by men of little experience and disheartened by defeat. The weather on the 28th was wet and disagreeable

and so it continued to be on the 29th, and the dull, cheerless sky seemed to add to the depression of the troops and to emphasize the gloom of their position.

Possibly the weather and an idea that the Continental position could be captured at any time led the British commanders to delay the final part of their work. All through the 28th there were skirmishes along the entire line. In the afternoon the British began digging trenches and raising earthworks within

a dense fog, and this continued all through the day. As a result, inactivity again prevailed in the British camp, while in the American lines the vigilance was not withdrawn for a moment. That vigilance saved the army. In the forenoon General Mifflin, in company with General Reed, Adjutant General, visited the redoubt on Red Hook. While there the fog lifted a little over the harbor and the American officers saw the British fleet at anchor, but noticed that an unusual degree of com-



THE RETREAT FROM LONG ISLAND, AUGUST 29, 1776.

500 yards of the American position, evidently with a view of bringing up their entire force there and making a decisive attack on the defences. Nothing shows the weakness of Washington's forces clearer than the fact that he permitted this proceeding to go on unmolested, and when night fell the contending armies were thus brought close together with the apparent certainty that the next day would develop important events.

But the morning of the 29th found the island, or at least that portion of it which formed the scene of operations, covered with

munication was passing between the vessels and the shore. It seemed as though some important movement was about to commence and they concluded it to be a descent upon New York by the East River, which could easily be accomplished as soon as the fog was dissipated, if the wind continued to hold as it then did.

This was the movement regarding which Washington was most concerned from the beginning. Could the British vessels silence the paltry battery at Red Hook and, passing the fort at the Battery, sail into the East

River and lie off the shore of Long Island, his entire force would be caught in a trap from which there seemed no possible hope of escape. In the afternoon the rain descended incessantly, and in places the Patriots had to "stand up to their middles in water." Cooking was out of the question and the men were compelled to take up with the unaccustomed fare of hard biscuits and raw pork. "We had no tents to screen us from the pitiless pelting, nor if we had them would it have comported with the incessant vigilance required to have availed ourselves of them."

These extracts from letters written by participants in the fight in the American lines show how illy prepared the latter would have been had the British engaged them in any determined assault. Indeed, although in many of the skirmishes the enemy were beaten back, it was quite plain to Washington that on the whole the British were steadily strengthening their position all along the line. Indeed, on the morning of the 29th they held, after hard fighting and several repulses, a breastwork only about 150 rods from Fort Putnam.

This test of strength had forced Washington to the conclusion that the line, even under the most favorable conditions possible, could not be held, and the news brought by General Mifflin showed him the immediate danger of the British fleet getting between him and his only avenue of escape, that by way of New York. At first it seems that Washington really thought he might hold the lines, but events had carried him to a different conclusion and he hoped to use the fog as a means of aiding in the scheme he had now thought out of carrying his entire force away to a position whence they could carry on the war with greater chances of success. Hastily summoning a council of war to meet at the residence of Philip Livingston on Hicks street, near Joralemon street, he laid his plan before the assembled officers. These included Major Generals Putnam and Spencer, and Brigadier Generals Mifflin, McDougall, Parsons, Scott, Wadsworth and Fellows. The proposition to

retreat was presented to the auditors by General Mifflin, with the following array of reasons:

1. The defeat on the 27th.
2. The loss in officers and men on that occasion had discouraged the troops.
3. The rain had injured the arms and ammunition and the men were so worn out by privation that they could not do effective work on the defenses.
4. The enemy were endeavoring to get control of the East River.
5. There were no obstructions sunk between Long and Governor's Islands to prevent the passage of ships.
6. The actual weakness of the lines. The redoubts were strong, but the general works were weak, being abattised with brush in most places.
7. The divided state of the army made a defense precarious.
8. Several British men of war had made their way into Flushing Bay from the Sound and with their assistance the enemy could land a force in Westchester county and gain the American rear near King's Bridge.

After a long discussion, in which the idea of retreat was at first apparently scouted by many of the Generals, the reasons above briefly stated were fully considered, with the result that the decision was finally unanimous in favor of evacuating Long Island.

The fact, however, seems to be that from the time he received General Mifflin's report of the seeming movement of the British fleet, Washington determined upon effecting a retreat, deeming that the movement had become imperative. Even while the council was in

*There is some uncertainty as to where this council was held. The authority for its taking place in the Livingston house is a letter written by General John Morin Scott, who was present, to John Jay, dated Sept. 6, 1776. Some antiquaries have indicated the old Dutch Church as the scene of the meeting while others have asserted that the old Pierrepont mansion, which stood on what is now the line of Montague street. General Scott's evidence, however, seems to settle the question.

session preparations for the movement had begun. Every boat possible was ordered to the lower portion of the East River and Assistant Quartermaster Hughes at New York was instructed to "impress every kind of water craft from Hell Gate on the Sound to Spuyten Duyvil creek that could be kept afloat and that had either sails or oars, and have them all in the east harbor of the city by dark." These orders were so well carried out that by nightfall quite a flotilla lay off the Brooklyn shore in readiness to approach it. An order was given about 6 o'clock for the troops to get in readiness for a night attack, as it was not deemed prudent to trust to anything that might cause word of the evacuation to reach the enemy, for there were, it was feared, many spies within the lines. The weary and bedraggled troopers were astonished, even dismayed, at the order, but all responded with a readiness that was worthy of veterans. This device enabled the commander to enjoin absolute silence on the part of the troops and to make it easy to transfer portions from one post seemingly to another, without question. Another ruse was that reinforcements were expected from New Jersey and that an equal number of those who had been fighting since the landing of the British would be transferred to New Jersey in their place. By 7 o'clock all the troops were ordered to parade with arms and accoutrements in front of their encampments, leaving on active duty only those who were manning the forts and guarding the lines. When darkness fell the movement commenced, and as the night was particularly gloomy everything favored the scheme and a splendid beginning was made.

The militia and raw troops were the first to cross at what is now Fulton Ferry, and General McDougall superintended the departure. About 9 o'clock the rain fell in torrents and the wind changed, making it impossible to use sails, and only row-boats could be utilized. At this rate it was only a matter of calculation to know that the troops

could not get away before daylight. McDougall dispatched an aide to find Washington and inform him of the trouble, but was unable to locate him and returned without the chief. About 11 o'clock the wind took another change, a most fortunate one, and permitted every sort of craft to be pushed into the service. No time was now to be lost and some of the smaller boats were loaded down to within three inches of the water. But no accident occurred and each vessel delivered its human cargo safe in Manhattan.

The most awkward blunder occurred on the forts. General Mifflin, at his own request, had been assigned to cover the retreat, and the troops in his division were accordingly to remain on the lines to the last. About 2 o'clock in the morning one of Washington's aides mistakenly carried a message to Mifflin to withdraw, and, gathering his troops together, that hero left the lines and marched his men down the main road to the ferry. On their way they were met by Washington, who expressed the utmost dismay and declared unless the division marched back and remained on the lines the entire movement would fail. Without even a murmur of dissent the troops returned to their posts and awaited the call calmly, although they expected that it would be daylight before their turn should come, and they well knew that as soon as the enemy discovered the condition of things their position would be a most perilous one. The order for their retreat was not given until the sound of shovel and pickaxe showed that the British were already at work on their entrenchments. Fortunately the fog was particularly dense at that time and enveloped the whole of the scene of operations, and so the gallant reserves silently left the lines and got down to the ferry in safety. Then they were joined by Washington and one of the last boats carried across to New York that intrepid hero, the Father of the Nation.

One of the British patrols discovered the

empty lines not very long after Mifflin's troops had left, but the report was hardly credited at first, and by the time it was confirmed most of the American force, with the exception of four stragglers who were captured, as they deserved to be, was safe on Manhattan with the open country behind. Every detail was carried on in the most masterly manner and even many of the American troops on landing were unaware that they had taken part in a wholesale evacuation and imagined they were only part of a command that had been relieved. But all knew the danger of their position in Brooklyn and were glad to escape from its shores.

Throughout the country itself this most successful and difficult movement did not arouse the confidence in the courage of the troops and the ability of its officers which it deserved. It was simply regarded as the natural conclusion to the defeat of the 27th, but military critics from then have been most unstinted in its praise, and now that we can review the situation calmly and correctly it is everywhere conceded to have been one of the noblest military achievements of him whose genius in the field made the Declaration of

Independence a real, enduring and valid instrument.

With the passage of the Continental troops across the East River the story of the Revolutionary campaign on Long Island necessarily closes. It is not in keeping with the scope of this work to follow the progress of the Continental troops, to describe the succeeding battles around New York City, by the result of which Washington was compelled to abandon Manhattan Island, and finally, after fighting an indecisive battle at White Plains, to abandon Fort George and Harlem Heights and leave New York completely in the hands of the British. All that belongs to the general history of the Empire State, or rather of the country at large.

The result of the battle of Brooklyn, so far as our history is concerned, was to leave the British in full control of Long Island, and so it remained along with Manhattan Island until the conclusion of hostilities in 1783, when the British army, by terms of the treaty of peace, sailed out of New York harbor and the Stars and Stripes were hoisted on the historic Battery, the scene of so many stirring and memorable events.



CHAPTER XVIII.

THE BRITISH OCCUPATION.

AS soon as the British realized that the lines had been evacuated no time was lost in taking possession, and but for a coolness, or lack of coherence, rather, between the different commanders, it is hard to say what damage might not have been done to the American troops, a few of whom even then were at the ferry and many on the water. As it was, some of the guns left unspiked on Fort Stirling were turned against the fugitives in the boats, but happily with no effect other than in some instances to add to the confusion always ready to spring up on such occasions.

The British could not pursue. They had not the means momentarily at hand, and at that junction the question was one of minutes rather than hours. Then the movement was so complete that it was difficult for some time fully to recognize its extent. Fort Stirling was regarded in both armies as the key to the position, as from it the then city of New York could be cannonaded, and that movement was expected to take place as soon as guns could be brought into position. But the British had no desire to destroy New York. They wished its possession, regarded it as the main point in the then campaign, and its retention as the best possible basis for all future operations. Besides, there was even yet the chance of capturing the Continental army in a fresh trap equal to that from which such a miraculous escape had been made in Brooklyn. So the British contented themselves with stretching their forces along the

shore overlooking Manhattan and the Harlem, threatening every point at which a landing could be made or a defense officered. For several days General Washington was in a constant state of anxiety; many of his raw troops had become disheartened and hundreds deserted, even entire companies returning to their homes. But his main trouble was the absence of information from the British lines. For once the prevalent spy system utterly failed, the strip of water could be so effectually guarded, and while counselling his Adjutant General of the necessity for keeping a close look all along the shore for any uncommon movements, said: "I should much approve of small harassing parties stealing, as it were, over in the night, as they might keep the enemy alarmed, and more than probably bring off a prisoner from whom some valuable information may be obtained."

Washington claimed that he could hold New York against any attack which might be made upon it provided "the men would do their duty;" but this he finally admitted was doubtful, and he decided to acquiesce in the desire of his associates and abandon the city. Many of the leaders were in favor of not only evacuation but destruction, and for this Nathanael Greene (who by this time had recovered from his illness) and John Jay were particularly outspoken. Washington was opposed to destruction, but referred the entire question to Congress, and that body decided against such a measure as "they had no doubt of being able to recover it even though the

enemy should obtain possession of it for a time." On September 12th evacuation was finally decided upon, the stores and sick were at once moved to the Heights, across the Harlem River, and on the evening of the 14th Washington established his headquarters at the Morris Mansion, at what is now One Hundred and Sixty-first street on the mainland across the Harlem River. On the 15th the British were in full possession of old New York City and in control of the whole of Manhattan Island, but not without meeting with a sturdy opposition, although many of the Continental levies retired in wild confusion. But the details of what happened in New York on that eventful day need not be recounted here. Our main concern is with the fact that on it the main force of the British army left Long Island, which was then turned over to the military rule of a detachment of some 5,000 men.

We may now pause here for a while, in the course of this chapter, and attempt to estimate the active support which the Continental army had, up to this time, received from Long Island. As has doubtless already been gleaned from what has been written in these pages, both Kings and Queens counties were regarded by the leaders of the Continentals as disaffected, as being mainly inhabited by Tories, while Suffolk county was deemed much more loyal, although its situation interfered with the full development of its loyalty. At the same time the three counties were represented all through the struggle on the forces which fought for the new nation. The Continental Congress made three calls upon New York for military assistance, the first in 1775, the second early in 1776, and the third in the summer of that memorable year. Beyond the names of most of the officers little has been preserved of the extent to which the first two calls were anywhere answered, and on Long Island especially the returns are exceedingly meagre. But enough remains to show that the spirit of liberty dwelt among the people, and that

it found expression, even in Kings and Queens counties, by sending substantial additions to the fighting forces in answer to the Congressional calls. Suffolk was patriotic clear through, although the Tories there were numerous and demonstrative. In estimating the strength of the representation of Long Island in the Continental armies, its peculiar situation should be remembered, and especially the fact that from the summer of 1776 until the close of hostilities it was practically a British fortress.

The officers of a regiment of Long Island militia were commissioned in Kings county March 11, 1776, presumably in answer to the second call. They were at first as follows:

Colonel, Richard Van Brunt.
Lieutenant Colonel, Nicholas Covenhoven.
First Major, Johannes Titus.
Second Major, John Van Der Bilt.
Adjutant, George Carpenter.
Quartermaster, Nicholas Covenhoven.
Companies:

Light Horse—Captain, Adolph Waldron; Lieutenants, William Boerum, Thomas Everett; Ensign, Jacob Sebring, Jr.; Quartermaster, Isaac Sebring.

Troop of Horse—Captain, Lambert Suydam; Lieutenants, Daniel Raplye and Jacob Bloom; Ensign, Peter Van Der Voort; Quartermaster, Peter Wykoff.

Flatlands—Captain, Jeremiah Van Der Bilt; Lieutenants, Albert Stothoff and Thomas Ellsworth; Ensign, Peter Van Der Bilt.

Gravesend—Captain, Rem. Williamson; Lieutenants, Samuel Hubbard and Garret Williamson; Ensign, John Lane.

Brooklyn—Captain, Barent Johnson; Lieutenants, Barent Lefferts and Joost De Bevoise; Ensign, Martin Schenck.

Brooklyn—Captain, F. Suydam; Lieutenants, Simon Bergen and William Brower; Ensign, Jacob Stillenwert.

Flatbush—Captain, Cornelius Van Der Veer; Lieutenants, Peter Lefferts and John Van Duyn; Ensign, John Bennem.

Bushwick—Captain, John Titus; Lieutenants, Abraham Van Ranst and Peter Colyer; Ensign, John Skillman.

New Utrecht—Captain, Abraham Van Brunt; Lieutenants, Ad'n Hegeman and Harmanus Barkulo; Ensign, William Barre.

No roster exists as to the names of the non-commissioned officers and privates in this regiment; all such details seem to have been lost except that of the two cavalry troops. The record of this regiment, the infantry section of it at all events, does not seem to have been a very creditable one. Most of the men were really forced into the service and they seem to have left it as soon as possible. Its strength does not appear to have exceeded 250 men, and even before the landing of the British some fifty of these had deserted. Henry P. Johnston estimates that the regiment, then under command of Colonel Jeronimus Remsen, paraded 200 strong on the morning of the battle of Brooklyn.

They were mainly employed in fatigue duty after a brief experience in sterner details, and on August 24 General Sullivan held them up to ridicule in an order then issued, in which he said, "The General is sorry to find that regiment flying from their posts, when timid women would have blushed to have betrayed any sign of fear at anything this regiment discovered at the time of their flight."

After the battle of Long Island the total strength was still further reduced, mainly by desertion, to about 150. These took part in the evacuation of the city and crossed to Manhattan under Captain (then Major) Barent Johnson of the Brooklyn Company, but soon after reaching Harlem most of them deserted and returned to Long Island. Major Johnson, however, proved a gallant officer and took part in the battles of Harlem and White Plains. He remained with the Continental army until his health gave way, when he returned to Brooklyn.

Of the Queens county troops still less is known, and the following list of officers of companies is all we have been able to trace. It is doubtful if these companies were ever, even temporarily, united into a regiment:

Great Neck and Cow Neck Company—Captain, John Sands (appointed October 12, 1775); First Lieutenant, Henry Allen (de-

clined); Second Lieutenant, Thomas Mitchell (promoted First Lieutenant March 8, 1776, vice Allen); Ensign, Aspinwall Cornwell (Cornell) (promoted Second Lieutenant, vice Mitchell); Andrew Onderdonk, appointed April 15, 1776.

New Town District, Southermost Beat—Captain, Abraham Remsen; First Lieutenant, Benjamin Coe (Captain June 17, 1776); Second Lieutenant, Robert Furman (First Lieutenant June 17, 1776); Ensign, Benjamin North (Second Lieutenant June 17, 1776); Jonah Hallett (June 18, 1776).

New Town District, North Beat—Captain, Jon'n Lawrence (promoted Brigadier Major); First Lieutenant, William Hackett; Second Lieutenant, William Lawrence (promoted Captain August 14, 1776); Ensign, Jesse Warner.

Light Horse Company—Captain, Richard Lawrence (resigned on account of ill health); First Lieutenant, Daniel Lawrence (promoted Captain); Second Lieutenant, Samuel Riker (promoted First Lieutenant); Cornet, Jon'n Coe (superseded by Jon'n Lawrence); Quartermaster, Peter Rapalje. Original commissions issued May 10, 1776.

Flushing Company—Captain, Nathaniel Tom; First Lieutenant, Matthias Van Dyck; Second Lieutenant, Jeffry Hicks; Ensign, Nich's Van Dyck. All commissioned June 8, 1776.

Jamaica Company—Captain, Ephraim Baylies; First Lieutenant, Increase Carpenter; Second Lieutenant, Abraham Vanausdale; Ensign, Othniel Smith. All commissioned March 27, 1776.

While some of these companies were represented in the battle of Long Island and the movements preparatory thereto, there is no trace remaining as to what they did. It has been claimed that some of them did outpost duty at the passes, but the fair inference under all the circumstances is that they were by that time practically broken up and that Queens county was represented by only a few of the officers named, among them being Captain Jonathan Lawrence, who was appointed Major of General Woodhull's (Long Island) brigade.

Suffolk county showed a much better and certainly a much more agreeable and com-

mendable record, though even in that section of the island there was a strong pro-British sentiment which rendered recruiting or conscription difficult. The roster from this county, taken, as were the preceding lists, from "New York in the Revolution" by Berthold Fernow, is as follows:

FIRST REGIMENT.

Colonel—William Floyd of St. George's Manor, vice Platt Conckling (who declined).

Lieutenant Colonel—Dr. Gilbert Potter, of Huntington.

First Major—Nathan Woodhull, of Brookhaven.

Second Major—Edmund Smith, Jr., of Smithtown.

Adjutant—Philipp Roe, of Brookhaven.

Quartermaster—James Roe, of Brookhaven.

Huntington and Smithtown Companies.—Captain John Wickes; First Lieutenant, Epenetus Conckling; Second Lieutenant, Jonah Wood; Ensign, Ebenezer Prime Wood.

Captain, Jesse Brush; First Lieutenant, Jon'n Titus; Second Lieutenant, Phillipp Conckling; Ensign, Joseph Titus.

Captain, Timothy Carll; First Lieutenant, Gilbert Fleet; Second Lieutenant, Joel Scudder; Ensign, Nath'l Buffet, Jr.

First Brookhaven — Captain, Samuel Thompson; First Lieutenant, Ab'm Woodhull; Second Lieutenant, Isaac Davis; Ensign, David Satterly. Commissioned September 13, 1775.

Second Brookhaven—Captain, Eben'r Miller; First Lieutenant, Caleb Woodhull; Second Lieutenant, James Davis; Ensign, Davis Davis. Commissioned September 13, 1775.

Third Brookhaven — Captain, William Brewster; First Lieutenant, Isaac Davis; Second Lieutenant, Uriah Smith; Ensign, Benj'm Woodhull. Commissioned September 13, 1775.

Smithtown — Captain, Philetus Smith; First Lieutenant, Ednund Smith, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, Daniel Tillotson; Ensign, Richard Smith. Commissioned September 13, 1775.

Islip (formed from east part of Smithtown and west part of Southampton)—Captain, Benijah Strong; First Lieutenant, Jeremiah Terry; Second Lieutenant, Samuel Oak-

ley; Ensign, Annen Mowbrey. Commissioned February 13, 1776.

South'o'd—Captain, Nathan Rose; First Lieutenant, Hugh Smith; Second Lieutenant, David Fanning; Ensign, John Smith. Commissioned September 13, 1775.

Changes in the regiment:

December 12, 1775, Jon'n Titus, Captain of the Second Company, vice Jesse Brush, promoted Major; Joshua Rogers, First Lieutenant, and Thomas Brush, Second Lieutenant.

February 7 and 8, 1776, Platt Neil (Vail), Captain Cow Harbour or Fifth Huntington Company: Michael Hart, First Lieutenant; Isaac Dennis, Second Lieutenant; Jacob Concklin, Ensign; John Buffet, Captain. South or Fourth Huntington Company: Isaac Thompson, First Lieutenant; Zebulon Ketchum, Second Lieutenant; Joseph Ketchum, Ensign.

A return of this regiment, dated April 5, 1776, gives the following changes:

Majors Jesse Brush and Jeffry Smith; Quartermaster John Roe; Captain Samuel Tomson; Capt. Eben'r Miller; Capa. Nathan Rose, Capt. Wm. Brewster, Capt. Philetus Smith, Capt. Joshua Rogers, Capt. Epenetus Conckling, Capt. Joel Scudder, Capt. John Buffet, Capt. Platt Vail, Capt. Gilbert Carle, Capt. Benijah Strong.

SECOND REGIMENT.

This regiment was authorized to be raised early in 1776, and there seems to have been no difficulty in filling up its ranks. The official record gives the following details:

Colonel, David Mulford.

Lieutenant Colonel, Jon'n Hedges.

First Major, Urial Rogers.

Second Major, George Herrick.

Adjutant, John Gelston.

Quartermaster, Phinias Howell.

Sergt. Major, Lemuel Peirson.

Drum Major, Elias Mathews.

These officers were so returned February 10, 1776.

A return of the names of the persons for the officers of the Second Battalion in Suffolk county taken according to the directions of the Provincial Congress by the Committee of Easthampton and Southampton:

First Company—Captain, David Howell; First Lieutenant, Jeremiah Post; Second Lieutenant, Paul Jones; Ensign, Zaphaniah Rogers.

Second Company—Captain, John Dayton; First Lieutenant, Isaac Mulford Hunting; Second Lieutenant, John Miller, Jr.; Ensign, Wm. Heges.

Third Company—Captain, David Pierson; First Lieutenant, Daniel Heges; Second Lieutenant, David Sayre; Ensign, Theophilus Peirson.

Fourth Company—Captain, David Fithen; First Lieutenant, Samuel Conckling; Second Lieutenant, Thomas Baker; Ensign, Daniel Conckling.

Fifth Company—Captain Stephen Howell; First Lieutenant, John White, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, Lemuel Wick; Ensign, Isaiah Hallsey.

Sixth Company—Captain, Wm. Rogers; First Lieutenant, Jesse Halsey; Second Lieutenant, Henry Halsey; Ensign, Nath'l Rogers.

Seventh Company—Captain, Josiah Howell; First Lieutenant, Nathaniel Howell; Second Lieutenant, Mathew Howell; Ensign, Wm. Stephens.

Eighth Company—Captain, Samuel L'Hommedieu; First Lieutenant, Silas Jessup; Second Lieutenant, Edward Conckling; Ensign, Daniel Fordham.

Ninth Company—Captain, John Sandford; First Lieutenant, Edward Topping; Second Lieutenant, Phillipp Howell; Ensign, John Hildreth. Commissions issued September 13, 1775.

THIRD REGIMENT.

A third regiment of Suffolk county is mentioned and commissions were issued to officers of the same, but no record of its roster has been found except the following:

Captain, Israel Scudder; First Lieutenant, Nath'l Buffet; Second Lieutenant, Epenetus Smith; Ensign, John Hart. Commissioned December 12, 1775, for Third Company, Third Regiment.

First Lieutenant, Ednund Howell; Second Lieutenant, Selah Reeve; Ensign, James Wells. Commissioned June 29, 1776, for Second Company, Third Regiment.

REGIMENT OF MINUTE MEN.

Colonel, Josiah Smith; Lieutenant Colonel, John Hulbert; First Major, Isaac Reeve; Sec-

ond Major, Jon'n Baker; Adjutant, Ephraim Marvin (April 4, 1776, vice Isaac Overton, declined); Quartermaster, Eben'r Dayton.

Easthampton Company—Captain, Ezekiel Mulford; First Lieutenant, John Miller; Second Lieutenant, Nath'l Hand; Ensign, ——. Commissioned February 23, 1776.

First Southampton Company—Captain Zephaniah Rogers; First Lieutenant, Nath'l Howell, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, Mathew Sayer; Ensign, ——. Commissioned February 23, 1776.

Second Southampton Company—Captain, David Pierson; First Lieutenant, John Foster, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, Abraham Rose; Ensign, Edward Topping. Commissioned February 23, 1776.

First Southold Company—Captain, John Bayley; First Lieutenant, Joshua Youngs; Second Lieutenant, John Tuthill; Ensign, James Reeves. Commissioned May 3, 1776.

Second Southold Company—Captain, Paul Reeves; First Lieutenant, John Corwin; Second Lieutenant, David Horton; Ensign, Nath'l Hodson. Commissioned May 3, 1776.

Brookhaven, Smithtown, Manor of St. George and Moriches Company—Captain, Selah Strong; First Lieutenant, Wm. Clark; Second Lieutenant, Caleb Brewster; Ensign, Nath'l Brewster. Commissioned April 4, 1776.

Artillery Company—Captain, Wm. Rogers; Captain-Lieutenant, John Franks; First Lieutenant, Jeremiah Rogers; Second Lieutenant, Thos. Baker; Lieutenant Fireworker, John Tuthill. Commissioned February 20, 1776.

The return of this regiment of May 30, 1776, gives:

Isaac Overton, Second Major, vice Baker, and Captains Nath'l Platt and Thos. Wicks, in addition to above.

Benjamin Coe, Captain, mentioned October 9, 1776.

Capt. Wm. Ludlum and Second Lieutenant Ephraim Marston, mentioned December 2, 1776.

None of the Suffolk county troops took part in the battle of Brooklyn with the exception of Colonel Josiah Smith's regiment, which, to an estimated strength of 250 men, was massed in General Woodhull's brigade with Remsen's regiment. But there is plenty of evidence that many of them were employed

on outpost or picket duty. One writer tells us, for instance, that Colonel Floyd's "military services were confined to heading a detachment of militia that was suddenly called to repel a boat invasion from a British ship at the outset of the war;" but the Suffolk Patriots were ready to do their duty when called upon and gave many evidences of that.

In "New York in the Revolution," by Comptroller James A. Roberts, Albany, 1898, the roster of another Suffolk county regiment of minutemen (there called the Third) is given as follows:

Colonel, Thomas Terry; Captain, Jonathan Bailey; Lieutenants, John Tuthill, Joshua Young; Ensign, James Reeves.

ENLISTED MEN.

Beebe, Lester	Racket, Absalom K.
Booth, Prosper	Racket, Noah
Brown, Daniel	Rogers, William
Brown, James	Rogers, William
Conkling, Nathaniel	Salmon, Joshua
Demmon, Jonathan	Salmon, Jonathan
Dickerson, Nathaniel	Tabor, Ammon
Drake, Richard	Tabor, Frederick
Gardaner, James	Terry, David
Glover, Ezekiel	Terry, Elijah, Jr
Goldsmith, John	Terry, Thomas
Griffing, Peter	Truman, David
Havens, John	Truman, Jonathan
Hemsted, Thomas	Tuthill, Christopher
Horton, Benjamin	Tuthill, David
Horton, Calvin	Tuthill, James, Jr.
Horton, David	Vail, Benjamin, Jr.
Horton, James	Vail, Daniel
King, Benjamin	Vail, Elisha
King, Jeremiah	Vail, Jonathan
King, John	Vail, Thomas
King, Jonathan	Wells, Jonathan
Newbury, Samuel	Wiggins, David
Overton, Aaron	Wiggins, William
Pain, Benjamin	Youngs, John
Prince, Thomas	Youngs, Joseph

This, of course, can hardly be called a regiment and seems merely to have been, judging from the names of the officers, the First Southold Company in Colonel Josiah Smith's regiment. Why such a company should possess a colonel is hard to say. The records of the Revolutionary forces in this

State even after the reverent care bestowed upon them during the past quarter of a century are still very imperfect.

Before leaving the subject of the personnel of the troops furnished by Long Island to the war, we may here refer to a regiment which was raised for operation on the British side. While the Tories in Kings and Queens counties were numerous enough to leaven the whole, it is questionable if any of the mass of the people would have cared to fight on either side. There is ample evidence that this was so with those who trailed a musket or bumped in a saddle on behalf of the Congress, and the evidence is equally strong as to the unwillingness of those of them who were enrolled on the other side to display even the rudiments of heroism.

The active military leader on the side of the Tories was the infamous Edmund Fanning, who for a time was Private Secretary to Governor Tryon, his father-in-law. He was born at Smithtown, Long Island, April 24, 1739, his father being James Fanning, a Captain in the British service, and his mother, Mary, daughter of Colonel William Smith, of Smithtown. He was educated at Yale, and admitted to the bar in North Carolina in 1769. In that colony he had a somewhat remarkable career, becoming one of the Judges of its Supreme Court, and was distinguished for the energetic measures he took against every movement tending toward popular government. In New York his course was marked by crime, cruelty and bloodshed in the earlier stages of the Revolution, but it was not until he raised the corps which he called "the Associated Refugees" or "King's American Regiment" that he found full scope for the innate fiendishness of his disposition. Many instances of this will be found scattered throughout these pages, and it is not necessary to refer to it here beyond this general mention. At the same time it can be said with truth that he was a brave man and that afterward, especially during the nineteen years he served as Governor of Prince Edward Island,

he won the admiration of the people over whom he ruled, for his splendid executive ability, his sense of exact justice, and the possession of all the very qualities which we associate with the make-up of a wise, indulgent and beneficent ruler. He died at London, England, February 28, 1818, with the full rank of General in the army, and his last years were passed in the enjoyment of a generous measure of official and public esteem and a liberal pension.

Another active militia organizer on behalf of the Tories was Major Robert Rogers, who, in spite of the almost demonstrated theory that he attempted to play the part of a British spy, led a most stirring life and one that was full of all the elements of bravery, adventure, and zeal which made up the lives of all historic figures in our annals. So far as can be judged from the facts before us, this man was to a certain extent a soldier of fortune and was not really very much concerned, so far as his personal sentiments went, as to which side he should cast in his lot. He chose that of King George, probably because he thought it was certain to win, and thereby made the great strategical mistake of his life, for had fortune landed him among the Continentals he would have achieved fame and honor, if not more substantial rewards, and his memory would have been held in veneration, as his many fine qualities would have amply justified.

He was born in New Hampshire in 1727, and, early embracing a military career, took part in the French War of 1754-63 and as the head of "Rogers' Rangers" performed many heroic exploits and won considerable fame. When that war was over he visited England, but his career there was an unhappy one. In 1765 he was appointed Governor of Mackinaw, Michigan, but was accused, apparently on good grounds, of a design to surrender it to the French, and was sent, a prisoner in irons, to Montreal. How he got out of this disgraceful charge is not very clear. When the Revolutionary War broke

out he tried to ingratiate himself with Washington, but was suspected by that leader of being one of the spies then so plentiful, and was ordered sent under arrest to New Hampshire, to be dealt with by the authorities in his native State. While on parole he accepted a commission as Colonel in the British service and raised a corps called the Queen's Rangers. A large number of the members of this command were recruited among the Loyalists of Long Island immediately after the battle of the 27th of August.

When the Revolutionary War was over Rogers went to England and died there in obscurity, so much so that the date of his passing away is not known. He was a man of considerable literary ability, wrote at least one tragedy which is known to bibliographers, and his other works contain many brilliant descriptive passages. Altogether he deserved a better fate; and possibly, had he only displayed some stability of moral character, that fate might have been his. The "Queen's Rangers" served little, if at all, on Long Island, and it is even doubtful whether Long Island was much represented in its ranks after the campaign around Harlem; but his leadership carried the command through many a daring exploit until the termination of hostilities.

We read of several other Tory commands being raised on Long Island,—notably a corps of guides, or more properly spies, gathered together and officered by Colonel Macpherson; and, according to Field, "a company of more abandoned wretches, it is probable, was not created by the disorders of a period so prolific of inhuman and bloodthirsty men." Such commands always crop up along the edge as it were of regular armies and find their uses, ignoble though they be. They can hardly be regarded as combatants, however, and ought to be considered as land pirates, being quite as ready for the sake of plunder to turn against those along with whom they march as against the enemy in front or in rear. In a place like America, then a refuge

place for men who had failed in their own native land, or who had fled from the majesty of their native laws, there were thousands on either side of the conflict whose purpose was simply personal adventure or opportunities for plunder or the chance of getting food and raiment, which necessities their own misfortune or misdoings denied their procuring in any other way. That is the story of every war,—the scum which the reign of the sword brings to the front when the reign of justice is interrupted.

Having thus discussed in a general way the military array on both sides which the island furnished the combatants in that memorable conflict,—a conflict in which Washington and his confreres were fighting for the cause of popular liberty in Great Britain just as much as in the United States,—we may now turn to see how the triumph of the British arms and the stay of British troops affected the residents of the island. To sum it up briefly, it might be said that the prevailing sentiment, outside of the enthusiastic on both sides, was that of “a plague on both your houses.” In Suffolk county there was continued sullen opposition to British rule, in Queens and Kings the change was more vociferously welcomed, but the entire island was under military rule, military law, and all classes felt the restraint and the irksomeness. Even those loyal, or disposed to be loyal, to the Crown had to submit to the officiousness, the humptiousness, the dogmatism, the licentiousness, the oaths, the drinking, the total contempt, often, of all regard to public decency which so frequently disgraced the royal officers, while the soldiers under these officers not only copied the vices of their superiors, but, as opportunity offered, plundered friend and foe with equal equanimity. Such conduct was at times sternly repressed when the perpetrators were caught, and the officer in command was of finer clay than his fellows, but in proportion to the number of complaints such exhibitions of military justice were few and far between.

But outside of the village of Brooklyn, Long Island was the home of farmers, engaged in raising produce of some sort or other, and the presence of armed men on either side, the constant condition of excitement, the surprise parties which performed their daring feats for the Continentals, the constant surveillance of the military forces of the Crown, all gradually became more irksome as the years of the occupation passed on and the military necessities of the situation caused the grip, as it were, of the Crown on the island to remain unrelaxed, if not to become tighter as the prospects of Continental success became clearer and more pronounced. Even supposing that the majority of the islanders were enthusiastic Tories, which they certainly were not, they could hardly have been more severely used had they been pronounced Whigs. They were in fact neither regraded as King’s men or Continentals; without the need of careful watching by the party in power. Their loyalty to Britain was praised in dispatches to London, but a sharp watch was kept by the military leaders on all their doings. Possibly a sigh of relief went up when the war was declared over and the farmers were permitted to till their fields in peace, although, in view of their losses and in spite of the active part which so many of their best sons took in the conflict in the right side, it seemed like adding to the general misery for the Legislature of New York on May 6, 1784, after the British had retired forever, to impose a fine of £37,000 on Long Island “as a compensation to the other parts of the State for not having been in condition to take an active part in the war against the enemy.”

In describing the British occupation the Hon. Silas Wood wrote: “From 1776 to 1783 the island was occupied by British troops. They traversed it from one end to the other and were stationed at different places during the war. The whole country within the British lines was subject to martial law, the administration of justice was suspended, the

army was a sanctuary for crime and robbery, and the grossest offences were atoned by enlistment. * * * Those who remained at home were harassed and plundered of their property, and the inhabitants generally were subject to the orders, and their property to the disposal, of British officers. They compelled them to do all kinds of personal services, to work at their forts, to go with their teams in foraging parties and to transport their cannon, ammunition, provisions and baggage from place to place as they changed their quarters; and to go and come on the order of every petty officer who had the charge of the most trifling business.

"During the whole war the inhabitants of the island, especially those of Suffolk county, were perpetually exposed to the grossest insult and abuse. They had no property of a movable kind that they could, properly speaking, call their own; they were oftentimes deprived of the stock necessary to the management of their farms; and were deterred from producing more than a bare subsistence by the apprehension that a surplus would be wrested from them either by the military authority of the purveyor or the ruffian hand of the plunderer. The officers seized and occupied the best rooms in the houses of the inhabitants; they compelled them to furnish blankets and fuel for the soldiers and hay and grain for their horses; they took away their cattle, sheep, hogs and poultry, and seized, without ceremony and without any compensation, whatever they desired to gratify their wants or wishes."

After detailing some of the pecuniary losses suffered, the writer continues: "Besides these violations of the rights of person and property the British officers did many acts of barbarity for which there could be no apology. They made garrisons, storehouses or stables of places of public worship in several towns, and particularly of such as belonged to the Presbyterians. * * * In the fall of 1782, about the time that the provisional articles of the treaty of peace were

signed in Europe, Colonel Thompson (since Count Rumford), who commanded the troops then stationed at Huntington, without any assignable cause except that of filling his own pockets by furnishing him with a pretended claim on the British treasury, caused a fort to be erected; and, without any possible motive except to gratify a malignant disposition by vexing the people, he placed it in the centre of the public burying ground, in defiance of a remonstrance of the trustees of the town against the sacrilege of disturbing the ashes and destroying the monuments of the dead."

Colonel Benjamin Thompson, so unpleasantly pilloried in the above extract, was commissioned Lieutenant Colonel of the King's Dragoons, which body of troops he raised February 24, 1782; and so far as actually known his warlike operations were confined to Long Island, with Huntington as his headquarters. He was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, March 26, 1753, and but for silly jealousy on the part of some officers of the New Hampshire militia when he received his appointment as Major, would have become one of the leaders of the Continental forces. That same opposition prevented Washington from giving him a commission, and, tired of inactivity and of being regarded with suspicion as a Tory, he left the country. Returning in 1781, he actively engaged in the military life of the time, and received his British commission. Before hostilities closed he returned to England and henceforth his life was passed away from his native land. He died in France in 1814, with a deserved world-wide reputation as a scientist and philanthropist. It is one of the regrettable features of the Revolution that such men should by the necessity of things be forced into exile.

The greatest evil, morally as well as in all other respects, was that of billeting, although in that matter the Long Islanders were not one whit worse off than were people in any country where, even in time of peace,

billeting was part of the military system. Even in England, in the days when the people—the masses—were regarded as mere hewers of wood and drawers of water, much more than they were even in 1776, the billeting of soldiers was an evil which elicited constant grumbling and sometimes even incited a riot. In Long Island, among the Tory section of the population, the practice was thoroughly disliked, and where possible every effort was made to get rid of that special development of the fruits of victory excepting in the case of a few ultra Tories, who regarded it with a feeling of awe and veneration, believing the troops were in their midst representing the highest of all earthly authority. But if the practice caused much discontent among the ordinary classes of Tories it was received with detestation by the avowed Whigs, and with sullenness by that seemingly large part of the population which was neither Whig nor Tory, and only desired to be permitted to make their way through the world in peace. In connection with this phase of the occupation, Henry Ondendonk, Jr., wrote:

During the summer British troops were off the island on active service; or, if a few remained here, they abode under tents; but in winter they were hutted on the sunny side of a hill, or else distributed in farmers' houses. A British officer, accompanied by a justice of the peace or some prominent Loyalist, as a guide, rode around the country, and from actual inspection decided how many soldiers each house could receive, and this number was chalked on the door. The only notification was: "Madam, we have come to take a billet on your house." If a house had but one fireplace it was passed by, as the soldiers were not intended to form part of a family. A double house for the officers, or single house with a kitchen for privates, was just the thing. The soldiers were quartered in the kitchen, and the inner door nailed up so that the soldiers could not intrude on the household. They, however, often became intimate with the family and sometimes intermarried. The Hessians were more sociable

than the English soldiers, and often made little baskets and other toys for the children, taught them German and amused them in various ways; sometimes corrupting them by their vile language and manners. Any misconduct of the soldiers might be reported to their commanding officers, who usually did justice; but some offenses could not be proven, such as night-stealing or damage done the house or to other property. As the soldiers received their pay in coin they were flush, and paid liberally for what they bought, such as vegetables, milk, or what they could not draw with their rations. These soldiers were a safeguard against robbers and whale-boat men. Some had their wives with them, who acted as washerwomen, and sometimes in meaner capacities.

From a perusal of the orderly book of General Delancey, it appears that he used every means to protect the persons and property of the inhabitants of Long Island from the outrages of British soldiers. They were not allowed to go more than half a mile from camp at daytime (and for this purpose roll was called several times during the day), nor leave it under any pretext after sundown without a pass; but now and then they would slip out and rob. On the 11th of June, 1788, Mr. John Willett, of Flushing, was assaulted at his own house, at 11 o'clock at night, by persons unknown but supposed to be soldiers from having bayonets and red clothes, who threatened his life and to burn his house. The general offered a reward of \$10 to the person who should first make the discovery to Major Waller; and a like reward for the discovery of the person who robbed Mr. Willett on the 9th of June of two sheep, a calf and some poultry, as he was determined to inflict exemplary punishment and put a stop to practices so dishonorable to the King's service. Again, March 9, 1778, Mrs. Hazard, of Newtown, having complained that the soldiers of the guard pulled down and burnt up her fence, that was near the guardhouse, the general at once issued an order to the officer that he should hold him answerable thereafter for any damage done the fences. So, too, if a soldier milked the farmers' cows, he should be punished without mercy; nor should he go in the hayfield and gather up new mown grass to make his bed of. Generally the farmers were honestly paid for whatever they sold. For instance, April 23,

1778, they were notified to call on Mr. Ochiltree, deputy commissary of forage at Flushing, with proper certificates and get payment for their hay.

To adduce one notable case. When Captain Lambert Suydam was in hiding from the British, some time after the battle of Brooklyn, and, having lost his troop, was seemingly employed as one of the Continental spies, he frequently visited, by stealth, his own

mitted to return to his home on parole. Says T. W. Field, who evidently regarded Suydam as a sort of opera-bouffe hero:

The dangers he had undergone had not, however, tamed his valiant spirit to that degree which permitted him to suffer without resentment the indignities and outrages daily perpetrated by British soldiers on his neighbors. One morning an unwonted clamor in his barnyard aroused the Captain from his slumbers, and, creeping to the window of his



BEDFORD CORNERS IN 1776.

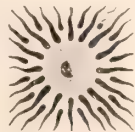
home at Bedford. A squad of soldiers was billeted in the house during that period and such visits were naturally enough attended by great danger. Indeed the redoubtable Captain had many narrow escapes from capture, and, of course, an ignominious death; and on one notable occasion, but for the appeals of Mrs. Suydam and the tender-heartedness of the Sergeant in command of the troops, his career would have had a tragic and a summary end. After a year of this sort of life Suydam made his peace with the British, took the required oath and was per-

mitted to return to his home on parole. Says T. W. Field, who evidently regarded Suydam as a sort of opera-bouffe hero: The dangers he had undergone had not, however, tamed his valiant spirit to that degree which permitted him to suffer without resentment the indignities and outrages daily perpetrated by British soldiers on his neighbors. One morning an unwonted clamor in his barnyard aroused the Captain from his slumbers, and, creeping to the window of his bedroom, he became assured in a short time that the marauders were at some nefarious work among his cattle. The dim light of early morning was rendered still more obscure by a fog, which, however, did not prevent him from observing unusual objects moving in the cattle yard. The irate trooper was not deterred from the protection of his property by the hazard of his own delicate position as a prisoner on parole, for there was little disposition in his reckless soul to submit to outrages upon his person or his goods. Reckless of the consequences, he seized his musket, already loaded with a heavy charge of buckshot, and fired it in the direction of

the sound which attracted his attention. The groans and screams of agony which ensued sufficiently indicated the effect of the shot; and when, a few minutes subsequently, the morning light broke through the mist, it was discovered that three British soldiers, who had slaughtered one of the Captain's cows and were then engaged in removing the skin, had all been wounded by the shot! As soon as information of the occurrence reached the adjacent camp a squad of soldiers was sent to carry away the wounded men, one of whom soon after died. No notice of the affair was ever taken by the British authorities, nor was Captain Suydam ever molested. There was always underlying in the character of most of the British officers, when its influence was not deadened by the paralyzing effect of what they deemed duty to the King, a great liking for fair play, which kept them silent to severe measures taken by the Whigs for the protection of their property.

In spite, however, of the hardships of billeting, the nefarious doings of marauders under the guise of Whigs or Tories, the necessary incidents inseparable from a state of war, the loose morals of the soldiery and the evils always and everywhere attendant upon military occupation, it must be said that Long Island in reality prospered in many material ways during the occupation. It was not the policy of the British authorities to stifle whatever loyal sentiments prevailed, and whenever a "rebel" wished to make his peace the matter was easily accomplished. Then it was from Long Island and Staten Island

that the army calculated to draw their supplies, and as a natural result agriculture was sedulously protected in all cases except those where an ultra Whig farmer was concerned. The transit of produce from the island was placed under strict regulations, although it seems to us not more strict than was necessary under the circumstances. It may be said that the British strove to promote the widespread sentiment in favor of the Crown which certainly existed, and they succeeded to a marked degree in Kings and Queens counties. Suffolk county, on the other hand, continued to be mainly Continental, although the farmers seemed to be as willing to raise corn for King George as for George Washington. Even Suffolk county, had the occupation lasted long enough and had victory rewarded the invading forces, would have gradually settled down to view the situation with equanimity. But the spirit of liberty was abroad. Its influence was winning its way even among the Tories of Long Island, and by the time the conflict was over they quietly accepted the changes, and it was not long after the close of hostilities before the entire island welcomed the results of the Revolution and took place with the rest of the State in the forward march of the new nation, recognizing, as has since been recognized by British historical writers and thinkers, that the "ragged Continentals" were not alone fighting for liberty in America but also for its progress throughout the world.



CHAPTER XIX.

SOME LONG ISLAND LOYALISTS—RICHARD HEWLETT—JOHN RAPALYE
—MAYOR MATHEWS—GOVERNOR COLDEN—COLONEL
AXTELL—LINDLEY MURRAY AND OTHERS.

NOW that the passage of over a century has softened many of the sentiments inspired by the Revolutionary struggles and has put in the background the errors, mistakes, hardships, cruelties, sufferings, amenities, estrangements, hates, lies, exaggerations and extravagances of thought, word, deed and action which characterized the struggle, we see more clearly than aught else the sacrifices made on both sides and the magnitude of the result attained—a grand star of liberty, illuminating morning and evening, day after day, the horizon of all the nations. The grass has long waved over the graves of those who took part in the contest on either side, and their children have followed them; the personal element in the struggle has long since disappeared and we can review the events of 1776 and the years which followed until peace was proclaimed with the calmness and impartiality due to the consideration of an historical epoch. The age of polemics, of personality, of sophism, of simple assertion, has gone, and we must guide our study by the hard logic of facts; and that logic impels us to say that the Loyalists on Long Island were just as sincere in their convictions, as devoted in their loyalty, as willing to suffer for their sentiments, as honest in their views, as were those who espoused the cause of the young nation. That they were wrong, that they were virtually trying to break a spoke in the wheel of human

progress, does not militate against their loyalty, their honesty, their patriotism even. They took an erroneous view and suffered; went down with the wreck of that ship of state to whose stanchness they trusted their all; but we have no reason in this year of grace to think unkindly of them, and, solely because of their views, to stigmatize them as “reptiles” and “thieves” and “traitors” and all manner of evil names such as were commonly applied to Tories a century ago or so.

Even British historians have come to look upon our glorious Revolution with different eyes than formerly. Bryce has said somewhere words to the effect that George Washington was in reality fighting the cause of liberty in Great Britain as much as in America; and one has only to read the chapter in Green’s “History of the English People” (chapter II, vol. 4), to see how that grand historic student rejoiced in the significances of the movement for liberty under Washington and understood the healthful influence its success exerted over the British Empire. In these circumstances it is but honest for us to devote a chapter in this work to recalling the lives and deeds of a few of those who were conspicuous in their opposition on Long Island to the success of the new condition of things.

In all such lists a prominent position must be given to Captain Richard Hewlett, one of the most singular characters which the story of the Revolution brings under our notice.

He was recognized as a Tory of the Tories, and while the struggle lasted was probably more hated by the local Continentals, the Whigs, than any other one of their opponents. Certainly he gave them abundant cause for this, and as we read the story of his career from 1775 until 1783 we can fully understand the reasons for the order, once issued by General Chas. Lee, that Hewlett "should have no terms offered to him, but must be secured without ceremony." Richard Hewlett was born at Hempstead in 1712. He took part in the French War of 1757-9, and was at the capture of Fort Frontenac in command of a company. To that campaign Queens county had furnished 290 men, and in the war Hewlett had among his comrades such men as General Woodhull, and many other well-known Long Island men. But most of the veterans of that brave army remained loyal to Britain when the time came to make a declaration, and they formed the main strength of the force which Hewlett gathered together to fight for King George. He was an indefatigable plotter and as outspoken in his denunciation of the Whigs as the Whigs were of him. Like most of the Tories in the early days of the movement for independence, he affected to despise the patriots; probably he honestly did despise them, and when, before the battle of Brooklyn, the Provincial Congress tried to whip Long Island into line for the new cause, he suffered many indignities at the hands of those on whom he would have heaped indignity had circumstances been reversed. When the island was practically under martial law he defied the powers that inflicted it and stood out in open rebellion. He gathered arms and supplies, secreting them in safe places for the conflict which he saw was surely approaching, and trained his men unceasingly. There was no hiding of sentiment on his part, and when he told his old comrade, Major Williams, who had espoused the Continental cause and had command of a battalion in the work of suppressing the local Tories, that had he met that body "we should have warmed their

sides," Williams believed it, and so far as we can see was devoutly thankful that the meeting did not take place.

Into the details of these repressive measures we need not here enter, having dwelt upon them in another chapter; but from the Patriot standpoint they were amply justified by the attitude of the Long Island Loyalists, and the dread of a conspiracy which existed, and which was seen to be well founded when the facts became known of a deep-laid plot among them to destroy the young nation by a grand coup. Into this conspiracy, which had for its main object the capture of General Washington, Hewlett was a prime mover. He was in fact the leading medium of communication between the quarter deck of the frigate *Asia*, on which Governor Tryon often held his court, and the Long Island Loyalists, and he was almost constantly passing between that vessel and the island. We have been unable to discover what part, if any, Hewlett took in the battle of Long Island; but we may be sure he was not far away from its scene, at any rate; and when the sun went down on that eventful day in August he found himself in the changed position he had for so many months desired, so far as his Whig neighbors were concerned. He became the hunter, they the hunted; behind him was power, behind them was the grim shadow of defeat, a cause that appeared hopeless, seemingly ruined lives and abandoned homesteads. Probably no one was more astounded than Hewlett at the pertinacity with which, even in the face of repeated defeat, the Continentals carried on the struggle.

He received a commission as lieutenant-colonel in De Lancey's corps of Loyalists. In August he was in command of a detachment and had turned the village church of which the Rev. Benjamin Tallmadge, father of Major Tallmadge, of Revolutionary fame, was then the pastor, into a fort and barracks, while the surrounding country was overrun by the usual gangs of ruthless marauders which generally accompanied such inferior commands of the Royalists. Hearing of this, General Parsons

determined to try and dispossess the enemy and sailed from Black Rock Harbor, Connecticut, with a considerable force and a six-pounder cannon, his flotilla including a sloop and six whaleboats. Landing at Crane Neck, he marched to Setauket, surrounded the church and demanded its surrender. The proposition was submitted by Hewlett to his men, but they were unanimous in their desire to fight it out. Then Hewlett said, in his usual impetuous way, "I will stick to you as long as there is a man left." Soon the assault was begun and continued for some three hours, much gallantry being displayed on both sides and the church steadily holding fast in spite of the musket shots and the balls from the brass six-pounder. Then word was brought to Parsons that some British ships were in the neighborhood, and fearing his retreat might be cut off, he retreated to his boats, carrying away a few of Hewlett's horses, and reached Black Rock in safety. Hewlett was highly praised in the British reports for his share in the affray. It is noted by all who chronicle this fight that Zachariah Green, one of Parsons's soldiers, afterward, in 1797, became pastor of the very church he had on this occasion so zealously tried to storm and destroy.

Green was born at Stafford, Conn., in 1760, and appears to have been a regular daredevil. He entered the Continental service at the outbreak of hostilities, was engaged on the fortifications of Dorchester Heights, fought at White Plains and in several other engagements. At White Marsh he was severely wounded in the shoulder. "This," quaintly observes the good Dr. Prime, "was probably the cause of his changing his course of life." He studied at Dartmouth, was licensed to preach in 1785, and became minister of Setauket September 27, 1797.

During the continuance of the British occupation Hewlett seems to have been kept busy on Long Island in military work, and his treatment of the Whigs was often marked by gross cruelty, while he certainly permitted his command at times, as in the raid on South-

old in 1778, to degenerate into little better than an organized band of robbers. When the evacuation took place he was rewarded with a pension, and, settling in St. John, New Brunswick, began there a new and very different career, becoming Mayor of that city. His son Thomas, as pronounced a Tory as himself, was killed in 1780 at Hanging Rock, North Carolina, by some Patriot skirmishers. Thomas was at that time a captain in the New York Loyal Volunteers.

In John Rapalye we meet a Loyalist of another stamp, equally determined and outspoken, but less headstrong, a man of peace, but with all the courage of a hero. The name is the oldest in Brooklyn, and tradition long presented the name of Sarah de Rapalje as that of the first white child born on Long Island. The date given for that event was June 9, 1625, in which year her parents, Joris Jansen de Rapalye and Catalyntje Trico, resided in Albany, and there seems no doubt that her birth took place there. So the tradition has long been abandoned by the Brooklyn antiquaries.

Joris Jansen de Rapalje came to America from Rochelle, in France, in 1623. He was a Huguenot, and crossed the Atlantic in company with many other Rochelle Protestants to escape religious persecution, or rather to escape from its continuance. From him descended all of that name on Long Island, a name that is virtually a part of the history of Brooklyn. John Rapalje, the great-great-grandson of this pioneer, owned, when the Revolutionary War broke out, a valuable tract of land of some 160 acres. This property extended along the shore north from the ferry and some distance up what is now Fulton street, his house being at the junction of the present lines of Fulton and Front streets with a garden running back to the river. He was long recognized as one of the most influential men in the place, and was chosen to a seat in the Provincial Assembly. He was a man of wide, liberal views, of unblemished character, and possessed of many grand qualities. All this is gathered from the writings of the Whigs, to

whom the name of Tory was a synonym for all that men generally hold unworthy. He adhered to the Loyalist cause steadfastly and outspokenly, and his influence was so dreaded by the Patriots that, in one of the raids made with a view of wheeling the British sympathizers into line with the Continental ideas, he was arrested and sent into exile in New Jersey.

It was while he was in this enforced seclusion, and because of it, that his wife nearly succeeded in bringing to an unhappy conclusion the cause of the struggling republic. She had suffered much indignity and insult at the hands of the Whigs, and it is said that some of the soldiers in the line of defenses, while practicing with artillery, aimed a cannon at her home and sent a bullet into its walls. Such things did not tend to improve her natural disposition, however sweet and Christian-like it may have been, although as long as she could not help herself she was contented with nourishing a spirit of revenge. Finally her opportunity came, and she fully arose to it. After the battle of Brooklyn, her home being within the Continental lines, her property was in more jeopardy than ever, and so she continued to lie quiet and wait. From her windows, on the afternoon of the retreat, she could see by the hundreds of boats gathering around the ferry from all quarters that some important movement was on foot; but it was not until 8 o'clock, when the first detachment of the retreating forces marched past her house to the shore, that she grasped the situation and realized its full import. Now came her opportunity. Knowing the importance of the British being at once apprised of the retreat, and aware that she would be detected and arrested if seen out of doors, she told the circumstances to a negro slave and sent him out to reach the British camp and impart the information to the first British officer he should meet. The negro made his way in safety out of the American lines; but, as fortune would have it, he entered the British lines at a point held by Hessian

troops. These worthies, of course, could not understand his talk, and, thinking him merely a petty thief, retained him all night under guard instead of haling him before some one who could understand his jargon. In the morning, when matters were cleared up, it was too late for his information to be of any use. The retreat had passed into history. On what a slight thread do the histories and fortunes of nations often hang!

During the British occupation of Long Island Rapalye returned to Brooklyn, and probably heard with equanimity that on October 27, 1779, a decree of attainder and confiscation was passed against him by Congress. In October, 1783, when the end of the conflict was in sight, knowing that there was little use in his trying, like so many others, to make an arrangement with the victors, he went to England and settled in the old town of Norwich. The British government seems to have recompensed him, to a certain extent, for the loss he sustained by his loyalty, and he died at Kensington, London, January 12, 1802. When he left Long Island he carried with him the deeds of his estate and a large number of public papers, including, it is said, the early town records of Brooklyn. In course of time these papers came into possession of his granddaughter, Mrs. Weldon, of Norwich. In 1810, accompanied by her husband, that lady came to this country, bringing with her the old papers with the view of instituting proceedings for the recovery of her grandfather's property, which, on July 13, 1784, had been sold by the Commissioners of Forfeited Estates to Comfort and Joshua Sands for \$12,430 in state scrip. Mrs. Weldon placed her case in the hands of Aaron Burr and B. D. Ogden, but after a thorough inquiry they advised her against pressing the matter, as the Act of Attainder barred all chance of success. So she gathered up her papers and departed, and the Brooklyn records once more passed over the sea. Many eminent lawyers have regretted that a writ of replevin had not been secured, by which the municipality could have claimed

and won possession of documents belonging to it which should never have become private property, but around 1810 people were not so thoroughly appreciative of the value of such records.

David Mathews, Mayor of New York City during the troublesome years between 1776 and 1784, was a noted and prominent figure in the ranks of the confirmed Tories. He was the grandson of Colonel Peter Mathews, who came to America in the suite of Governor Fletcher in 1692. This pioneer had a son Vincent, who married Catalina, daughter of Mayor Abeel, of Albany, and their children were David (the Mayor) Fletcher, James and a daughter. All the family except the Mayor were Whigs, or at least were indifferent as to the outcome of the great events then passing. Mathews was appointed Mayor on the resignation of Whitehead Hicks, of Flushing, in February, 1776, and the appointment was confirmed by Governor Tryon on board the *Duchess of Gordon*, a frigate in New York harbor. Most of his time for a while from that on seems to have been spent at his country home at Flatbush, and the deck of the vessel on which the then nominal Governor of New York kept up his dignity as the representative of King George. Probably Mathews could be more fittingly described as a plotter than a Mayor, and it seems reasonably certain that every scheme evolved between in the early part of 1776 to undermine the strength of the Continental forces was either planned in his country home, or if conceived elsewhere was there studied out and prepared for being put in operation. Chief of these was what is called the Hickey plot to capture General Washington. Says Field:

"The plot undoubtedly had its inception on board of the *Asia*, was matured at Flatbush, the residence of Mayor Matthews, and relied for its principal sustainers and adherents upon the Loyalists of Long Island. The nightly return of Matthews to his residence, not more than four or five miles from the landing place of boats from the *Asia*, and his daily return to

the city, made him the fittest organ of communication between the Governor and the Loyalists. The conspiracy failed to accomplish anything except to increase the rigors of the surveillance over the Long Island Loyalists, who felt its influence for many months subsequently."

Mathews was arrested and held in close custody in Connecticut for some time. There was really no evidence discovered against him in connection with the plot, although suspicious circumstances were plentiful. He was subsequently released and resumed his office of Mayor, an office which was merely a nominal one even during the British occupation. In 1782 Mathews was appointed Registrar of the Court of Admiralty. On the conclusion of the war he retired to Canada, where he became President of Council of the island of Cape Breton, and so passes out of our history.

A much more important, more honorable and lovable figure among the Loyalists was the sturdy old Lieutenant Governor, Cadwallader Colden, whose home, Springhill, Flushing, was for many years the real gubernatorial mansion of the colony; in fact, for the fifteen years which preceded the Revolution he was regarded as the most conspicuous representative of the royal authority. His career has been sketched in a previous chapter, but the story of his family may here be referred to, showing, as it does, that while most of them continued to hold Loyalist views, others were really indifferent about the matter; but the third generation developed into devoted American citizens. This was generally the case all around, so far as the writer's research has discovered, except in the case of a few ultra Tories, whose descendants even at the present day have a sentimental loyalty for the British throne, just as the British Jacobites have, or pretend to have, for the living descendants of "the auld Stuarts."

Regarding Colden's family, Thompson, in his "History of Long Island," gives the following details: "He had five sons and five daughters, a part of whom only survived him.

His daughter Elizabeth married Peter de Lancey; Jane married Dr. William Farquhar; and Alice married Colonel William Willett. Three of Governor Colden's sons, Alexander, Cadwallader and David, were successively Surveyor Generals and prominent men in the colony. His son David, to whom he bequeathed the farm at Springhill, becoming a warm and active Loyalist in the Revolution, lost his estate by forfeiture and retired to England in 1784, where he died July 10 of the same year. He was bred to the profession of physic, which, however, he never practiced. He was fond of retirement, was much devoted to scientific pursuits, and his correspondence with learned men in Europe and America is to be found in the publications of the time. His wife was Ann, daughter of John Willett, of Flushing. She died at Coldenham, Orange county, in August, 1785. They had one son and three daughters. Their daughter Mary married the late Jonah Ogden Hoffman, Esq.; Elizabeth married Edward W. Laight; and Catherine married the late Thomas Cooper."

Alexander Colden seems to have made his peace with the Federal Government. He appears to have resided at Coldenham and in 1742 opened the first store in that village, and in 1752 was one of the company who received a renewal of the Newburgh patent from Governor Clinton.

Cadwallader D. Colden, only son of David Colden and grandson of the Lieutenant Governor, was the next man of the family to become really prominent in public affairs. He was born at Springhill April 4, 1769, and was educated at Jamaica. In 1784 he accompanied his father to England, but returned to New York in about a year. He then engaged in the study of law, was admitted to the bar and entered upon practice in Poughkeepsie in 1791. In 1793 he married Maria, daughter of Bishop Provost, of New York, and three years later settled in New York City, of which he became district attorney. He rapidly rose at the bar until he held the most prominent position in

the profession in the city, especially in connection with commercial matters.

But his ambition lay in another direction than his profession, and the highest aspirations of his life were for a political career. He early won the friendship of De Witt Clinton, and through the influence of that great statesman speedily found an honored place in public affairs. At the same time he lost no opportunity in personally exerting himself to add to his popularity among the people, and this led him, among other exploits, to raise a regiment of volunteers in the War of 1812 and to be active in the work of preparing the city to meet the expected invasion of the British at that time, although probably he cared as little for military matters as he cared for astronomy. In 1818 he was elected by Clinton's influence a member of Assembly, and that same influence, in the same year, landed him in the chair of the Mayor of New York, which he continued to occupy until 1821. It was, however, only a step toward the goal of his ambition, the Governor's seat at Albany; and another step thitherward was taken in 1824, when he was chosen a State Senator. He supported Clinton in all public measures and projects, and was particularly outspoken in advocacy of the latter's canal policy. In 1827 he retired from the Senate, and seemed somehow to lose his grip on the situation. So, much against his own desire, he retired to private life, a sadly disappointed man.

In 1829 he publicly renounced Freemasonry, in which, as in politics, he had been a prominent figure for many years, and in which, as in politics, he missed the goal of his ambition, the Grand Mastership of the State, when it seemed within his grasp. In 1829 the famous anti-Masonic movement over the disappearance of William Morgan was just reaching its height, and he probably hoped to win a new lease of political influence by casting in his lot with the "anti-Masons," even then showing signs of becoming a prodigious power in State and also in national politics. Certainly he was

welcomed into his new fold, and his skillfully written letter of renunciation was circulated by thousands, reaching every hamlet in the State. But even this produced no lasting effect on his fortunes, and he fell back into obscurity, in which he remained until his death at Jersey City, in 1834.

He was a man of more than ordinary ability, endowed with much of the literary taste of his grandfather, was a reputable citizen in all respects and fulfilled every duty imposed upon him with marked fidelity and usefulness. He never could be described as brilliant, nor could he be called a mere figurehead. He won many powerful friends and he exerted for a series of years a potent degree of influence in the councils of his political party; but there was an air of insincerity about everything he did which prevented his friends or the people becoming enthusiastic in his behalf at any point, and so in the merciless kaleidoscope of political life he went down into obscurity, unwept, unhonored and unsung. He was the last of his race to acquire any prominence in local or State affairs.

We may now turn again from civil to military life and recall the once well-known name of Isaac Corsa, for many years a prominent merchant in New York City. His firm, Corsa & Bull, was so long prominent that the establishment it occupied near Peck Slip became a landmark. John Austin Stevens, in his volume on "Colonial Records of the New York Chamber of Commerce," writes: "He (Corsa) was a distinguished officer in the old French War. He received his commission as captain on the 25th of September, 1775. He led a detachment of Queens county men as colonel at the capture of Fort Frontenac (Kingston), August, 1758, and on the night of the 25th of August volunteered to erect a battery under the enemy's fire. Here he was slightly wounded. The next day the fort surrendered, under the fire. On the breaking out of the Revolution he clung to the crown, and on the 12th of August, 1776, was arrested by order of General Washington and sent prisoner to Nor-

wich and Middletown. He was released on his parole and promised to return when sent for the following December. He married Sarah Franklin in April, 1758. She was the sister of Walter Franklin, a wealthy New York merchant, who resided at Maspeth. After his death Colonel Corsa occupied the mansion. Colonel Corsa died at Flushing, 3d May, 1807, in the eightieth year of his age. He is said to have been small in stature and juvenile in appearance, though an intrepid officer. His only child, Maria Franklin, was married to John I. Staples."

One of the most violent and unscrupulous, and in many respects most depraved, of the Long Island Tories was Colonel William Axtell, of Melrose Hall, Flatbush. He claimed descent from an officer in Cromwell's army who was beheaded by Charles II; but if so his descendants must have entertained very different notions respecting the monarchical institution, for William Axtell saw, or pretended to see, no blot on the royal escutcheon.

He was born on the island of Jamaica, a member of a family possessing extensive landed interests; but he seems to have sold all his property in that island before settling in New York in 1759. He appears to have been received with open arms by the local gentry in New York City, married into the De Peyster family, and became a member of the King's Council. In 1763 he purchased Melrose Hall, which continued to be his home until it was wrested from his possession by an act of forfeiture, which took effect as soon as the British evacuated New York and the American flag was run up at the Battery.

The house, even in pre-Revolutionary days, was a notable one. It was built about 1749, in the style of an old English country mansion, by a gentleman named Lane, and its surrounding grounds and flower gardens and ample lawn were alone sufficient to give it prominence in a neighborhood where such adornments were neglected, and a kitchen garden was regarded as the embodiment of horticultural skill. But the interior was even more

wonderful. Its large chambers and gilded halls, its luxurious furniture, and, above all, its abundance of secret chambers, dismal and roomy vaults and skillfully contrived hiding places, invested it with a degree of mystery in the minds of the simple people around it and gave rise to the usual routine of ghost stories so familiar a part of the history of most old English country mansions. Its first owner used it—probably built it—as a means of ministering to his low and debauched tastes, and its walls often witnessed bacchanalian excesses and sensual orgies, while the air rang with



MELROSE HALL, 1883.

From "Flatbush, Past and Present." By permission of the Flatbush Trust Company.

laughter and the wild shrieks of maudlin, dissipated, degraded pleasure-seekers. In Axtell's hands the morals of the place became more pure, but it remained a center of intrigue, a splendid place for secret meetings, and the ghost stories grew more vehement, and, according to the popular mind, more easily confirmed. In its vaults many an ardent Patriot, it was averred, was confined until his spirit was broken and his life cast out; many cruelties were inflicted upon those who were beguiled into its mysterious chambers; and the spirit of a young woman who had met her fate in one of its apartments was seen to wan-

der around at intervals and bemoan her untimely end. So the stories used to run, and the Flatbush folks grew to believe in the ghost and to revel in the notion of having a haunted house in their midst.

In the measures adopted against the Whigs prior to the battle of Brooklyn, Colonel Axtell felt the heavy hand of successful rebellion and had to submit to many humiliations. But these he afterward repaid with a more than usually liberal measure of interest and continued to pay with equal liberality until the curtain was rung down upon British dominion over what by that time was the United States. But while the Whigs were supreme he was made to feel that he was on the losing side, and the last act undertaken against an individual by the Continental forces on Long Island prior to the defeat was directed against him. A day or two before the battle of Brooklyn, when Flatbush was in the hands of the British, Axtell was jubilant and had gathered around him at dinner a large party of red-coated officers. In the midst of the hilarity of the occasion a well-directed shell from one of the Continental batteries on a neighboring height plunged into the house. It created considerable consternation, naturally enough, but did no real damage, although it effectively reminded Axtell that he was not yet entirely rid of his persecutors, even although surrounded by one of the most magnificent armies which up to that time Great Britain had sent across a wide stretch of sea.

In 1778 Axtell raised a regiment of Colonial infantry, of which he was commissioned colonel. During the entire length of the British occupation Axtell rode, it may be said, "rough-shod" over his former oppressors, and became more overbearing and cruel than ever rumor had imputed even to the most rampant of the Whigs. He showed the power of an iron hand without even the slightest pretext at covering it with a silken glove. So obnoxious did he become that Captain Marriner, the Whig freebooter, once made a special descent on Flatbush with the avowed intention of capturing him and Mayor Mathews, as well as

one or two others of like stamp. The descent might have been successful had it not been for the fact that Axtell and Mathew's happened to be away from their homes on the night it was planned. However, Stiles, in his "History of Kings County," very pertinently says that "even if Colonel Axtell had been at home his capture would have been no easy task, for the house abounds in secret closets and out-of-the-way nooks where one could easily hide."

When peace was concluded the Axtell home at Flatbush was sold by the Commissioners of Forfeited Estates to Colonel Aquilla Giles, an American officer who had married Miss Ship-ton, a niece of Mrs. Axtell. In 1809 Colonel Giles transferred the property to another soldier of the Revolution. In 1836 it became the home of James Mowatt (husband of the once famous actress, Mrs. Mowatt, afterward Mrs. Ritchie), and so continued until 1841. In 1880 the march of "modern improvements" necessitated the removal of the old structure, and part of it—the central portion—was removed to Bedford avenue, near Winthrop street, where it still stands, shorn of its fine proportions, its historic fitness and its usefulness even as a "relic."

We may now mention another Tory, or rather a reputed Tory, who won renown much more widespread and lasting than the measure accorded to any treated in this chapter, but in an entirely different direction. This was Lindley Murray, whose name as a grammarian was for years a familiar one on the lips of children wherever the English language was taught, and even to-day, although his grammar has long since met the usual fate of school-books and been relegated to the catalogue of educational curiosities, his name is still regarded as a synonym expressive of the study itself. I have designated Murray as a reputed Tory, for although up to a certain point in the controversy with the mother country he was in full accord with the Patriots, was even elected, in May, 1775, a member of the Committee of One Hundred, still when the war broke out his religious sentiments did not permit him to take

part in any bloodshed; and, to be away from the armed strife and also to recruit his weak strength, he removed to Islip, where he spent some four years mainly engaged in the enjoyment of country pleasures, boating, fishing, etc. It was while in retirement that he earned the title of Tory, the result of his kind and generous heart. Speaking of this in connection with the measures adopted against the Tories prior to the defeat of August 27, 1776, Mr. Field, the historian of the battle of Long Island, says:

"There was at this time residing at Islip a Quaker gentleman of some estate in whom the troubles of the times developed a perspicuity of reason and an acuteness of expression which have left their mark upon our language. Lindley Murray, whose name is almost as devoutly hallowed for his high virtues as it is famous for his eminence in learning, had retired to this remote and quiet spot to escape the angry turbulence of the city; but his benevolence would not permit him to remain in idleness while so many of his countrymen were suffering for want of the common necessities of life. The strict blockade of the port by the British cruisers had so obstructed the transactions of commerce that salt was sold at a price that made it almost unattainable by the poor. To supply this want Mr. Murray established salt works at Islip and devoted himself to its manufacture. The kindly Quaker was but little molested in person by his Whig neighbors, but he retired from the country to the city when he saw the rancor which was kindling between the factions and the severity with which some of his Loyalist friends were treated."

Such was the man whose innate kindness caused him to be dubbed 'a Tory at a time when every evil attribute possible to mankind was held to be included in such a title! It is very possible that Murray was a Loyalist in heart; indeed, his career seems clearly to prove that; but he was a non-combatant and unconnected with intrigue, while his known philanthropy and blameless life might have spared

him the obloquy which was thrown upon him during those years of trial and long afterward.

Lindley Murray was born at Swataca, Pennsylvania, April 22, 1745. His father, Robert Murray, soon after Lindley's birth, removed to New York, where he became one of the greatest merchants of his time. His firm, Murray, Sansom & Company, occupied a large building on Queen (Pearl) street, between Beekman street and Burling slip, and Murray became so wealthy that he was one of the five men in New York who owned a private carriage. Being a Quaker and not given to boasting, however, he never spoke of "my carriage," but always of "my leather convenience." The great merchant was a loyal American and steadfastly kept abreast of the movement for reform which finally developed into a struggle for independence. His wife was even more pronounced in her patriotism, and it is said that her womanly wit had much to do with the successful retreat of the American army to King's Bridge in September, 1776. Walter Barrett, in his "Merchants of New York," says:

"Old Robert Murray had a farm out on the East River in the neighborhood of old Dr. Gerardus Beekman's place at the head of King's Road. There Mrs. Murray entertained General Howe and his staff with refreshments after their landing at Kipp's Bay on purpose to afford time to General Putnam to lead off his troops in retreat from the city, which he effected."

Mrs. Lamb, in her "History of New York," tells the story in much similar style. "Mrs. Murray, the mother of Lindley Murray, the grammarian, was personally known to Tryon; he introduced the British Generals, who, charmed with the beauty of her cool parlors and the tempting wine with which she bountifully supplied them, loitered in gay and trivial occupation. For Mr. Thatcher, relating this incident in his journal, says: 'It has since become almost a common saying among our officers that Mrs. Murray saved this part of the American army.'"

Lindley was intended by his father to be his associate in business, but the young man seems to have had little taste for trade and ran away from home to escape from it. His escapade did not last long, but when he returned he was sent, in accordance with his own wishes, to study law, and in 1765 was admitted to the bar. His legal business never amounted to anything, but his health was weak and he was unable to maintain the routine and study necessary to success in that most jealous of the learned professions.

I again quote Walter Barrett: "When the war broke out Lindley's law business was used up. So he retired to Islip and determined to stay there until the war storm had passed away. He kept quiet four years and then went to New York to try commerce instead of law. His father gave him a large credit to import goods from London. The goods arrived. He sold them at great profits and kept on doing so until the war closed. Every year added largely to his capital, and when independence was established he was well off and able to retire from business. He did so and purchased a country seat three miles from New York, at Bellevue. Alas! after a few months his health failed in this paradise and he removed to Bethlehem, Pennsylvania. Finding his health feeble, he consulted one of the first physicians of New York. He advised a permanent change of climate, where the summers were more temperate and less relaxing and where he would not lose in warm weather the bracing effects produced by the rigor of winter. The advice was accepted. Yorkshire, in England, was thought a proper place. The voyage was made in 1784. He selected and bought a place at Holdgate, near York, and that became his habitation for many years of his life. There he wrote the books which have immortalized his name. His affairs in America were managed by his father until he died, in 1786, then his brother John managed them until Lindley died, in 1826."

Murray's first work, "The Power of Religion on the Mind," was published in 1787,

and enjoyed a remarkable degree of success, although in that respect it was far surpassed by his "English Grammar," written for the use of a female seminary near York and published in 1795. His other writings were mainly of religious character and have long been forgotten, even his once famous grammar, as we have said, being little more nowadays than a name. Chambers's Encyclopedia contemptuously dismisses it with the remark: "There can be no stronger indication how entirely the systematic study of the English language was until recent years neglected than the fact that Murray's Grammar was for half a century the standard text-book throughout Britain and America."

In concluding several notices regarding the Murray family, Walter Barrett, in the

delightful work from which I have quoted, says:

"Lindley earned an immense sum by his various works, but the profits he invariably devoted to benevolent purposes. When he died he left by will several bequests to charities in England. After his wife deceased the residue of his property was to be transferred to New York City and vested in trustees so as to form a permanent fund, the yearly income in produce of which was to be appropriated in the following manner: In liberating black people who may be held in slavery, assisting them when free and giving their descendants or the descendants of other black people suitable education. What became of the money to do this is a question of curiosity that arises to one's mind when he reads this."



CHAPTER XX.

A FEW REVOLUTIONARY HEROES—GENERAL WOODHULL—COLONEL TALLMADGE—GENERAL PARSONS—COLONEL MEIGS.

IT WILL not be out of keeping with the plan and scope of this work to pause before leaving the period of the Revolution and devote a chapter to briefly recording the life stories of several of those heroes belonging to the island who were foremost in the fight for liberty and independence. Such a study will serve two ends: it will enable us to dwell more particularly upon the personal careers of these men than could well be done in the course of the general story, and it will afford room for the narration of several interesting details which throw instructive side lights upon the progress of that grand struggle which developed the American Colonies into a nation.

In many respects the greatest of the Long Island Revolutionary heroes was General Nathaniel Woodhull, a man of most lovable character, a stanch patriot, a sincere Christian, a statesman, and a soldier who had won a reputation for personal courage and military skill long before the time came for him to give up his life in the service of his native land.

Nathaniel Woodhull was born at Mastic, Brookhaven township, December 30, 1722. He was the son of Nathaniel Woodhull of Brookhaven, who was descended from Richard Woodhull, a native of Thetford, Northampton, who had to leave England in 1648 on account of some political trouble shortly before the restoration of Charles II to the throne. He was one of the original settlers of Ja-

maica, his name being recorded in the original deed as one of the "proprietors;" but he seems to have soon (1655) removed to Brookhaven, where he settled on an extensive tract of land. Thompson, in his sketch of Woodhull, says: "An original paper of Lord Crew to him (Richard) dated in 1687, in answer to one of his, is among the papers of the late Abraham Woodhull, Esq., of Brookhaven, in which he styles him as cousin and speaks of his relations, among whom he enumerates a bishop [of Durham] and a number of families of the first rank in society."

The accuracy of all this is rendered somewhat dubious by the fact that in 1687 there was no personage as "Lord Crew" or Crewe, that title in the baronage having only been created in 1806, and that the head of the Crewe family and holder of the estate in 1687 was a young woman. However all that may be, there is no doubt that Richard Woodhull, when he arrived in New York, was a man of considerable means, and the possessor also of much personal influence. He received two patents for his property, one from Governor Richard Nicolls in 1666 and one from Governor Dongan in 1686. He soon acquired a measure of importance in his Long Island home, for we find that in 1663 he represented Brookhaven in a General Court convened at Hartford, Connecticut. This importance followed him throughout his career, whether British or Dutch held sway. The former appointed him in 1666 a Justice of the Court

of Assizes, and the latter in 1673 commissioned him a Magistrate for Brookhaven. He died in 1690, at the home he had founded.

General Nathaniel Woodhull was third in descent from this pioneer, and being the eldest son was educated according to old English ideas, with the view of his being called upon, in time, to the duty of administering the family estate. His many excellent qualities and eminent ability soon marked him for public service, and he seems to have early entered upon a military career. There is some doubt as to when he entered the military service, but in 1758 he served as Major under General Abercrombie in the campaign against Crown Point and Ticonderoga, and distinguished himself by his gallantry at Fort Frontenac (Kingston). In 1760 he took part, as colonel of the Third Regiment, New York Provincials, in the campaign under General Amherst, which resulted in the conquest of Canada, and at the close of the campaign he returned to his home on Long Island with the view of enjoying a life of pleasant retirement. In 1761 he married Ruth, daughter of Nicoll Floyd, of Brookhaven, and sister of General William Floyd, one of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence representing New York.

In 1768 the New York Assembly passed a resolution to the effect that no tax could or should be imposed upon the people of New York without the consent of the people through their Representatives in the Assembly, and that they had a right to consult with other Colonies on all matters pertaining to the liberties of the people. As a result Governor Moore, having no use for men who held such sentiments, dissolved that Assembly. In the election which followed in the spring of 1769 the people of Suffolk county by their votes upheld the position of the Assembly, and to represent their views elected William Nicoll (a member of the former Assembly) and Nathaniel Woodhull. For the six years which followed of peaceful struggle to preserve the freedom of the people, the two representatives from Suffolk gave many evidences of their

sincere and disinterested patriotism. As a result, when the crisis approached, Woodhull was the chosen Representative of his county in the convention which met in New York City April 10, 1775, to elect delegates to the Continental Congress. On May 22, 1775, he represented Suffolk in the Provincial Congress, which then met in New York, and which body at once assumed complete sovereign control over the affairs of the Colony. This Congress, as one of its first steps, reorganized the militia service, dividing it into brigades, and in this arrangement the forces of Suffolk and Queens counties were united with Colonel Woodhull as Brigadier General, and Jonathan Lawrence, Representative of Queens in the Provincial Congress, as Brigade Major, or, as it would now be called, Adjutant. In August, 1775, General Woodhull was elected President of the Provincial Congress, and was re-elected to that office in the still more pronounced anti-British Congress which was elected in 1776 and which on July 9 of that year, as soon as it met for the first time, at White Plains, adopted the immortal Declaration of Independence, which had been signed at Philadelphia on the Fourth, a few days preceding.

On July 10th the New York Provincial Congress threw royalty aside without ceremony. While busy with his legislative duties General Woodhull was unceasing in his efforts to wheel Long Island into line on the side of the Continentals, and although his work was by no means successful in Kings or Queens it was amply so in Suffolk. He certainly, however, reduced the Tory resistance to its narrowest dimensions in the two first-named counties, and as certainly prevented many waverers from going over openly to the enemy. If, sometimes, we cannot justify all that was done in his name as President of Congress against the Loyalists, we must remember that a state of war prevailed, and such a state is never conducive to the exemplification of the Christian beatitudes, even though, at times, Psalm-singing and prayer may accompany it.

Meanwhile the British force had landed on Staten Island.

On August 10, General Woodhull obtained leave of absence from Congress to attend to some private affairs at Mastic, and he was there when word was received that the enemy had landed troops near Bath and seemed to be threatening New York from Brooklyn. It should be remembered that even then the precise British plan of operations for the capture of New York had not become fully evident. Orders were at once sent to him to call out the entire militia of Queens county and part of the forces of Suffolk county and remove, or when that was not practicable, destroy, stock and such other supplies as might be useful to the invaders on the island, or on such parts of it as were likely to be reached by their scouting and foraging parties. Accordingly he at once proceeded to Jamaica to carry out his orders, but found that the whole force consisted of about 100 men, led by Colonel Potter, of Suffolk, and fifty horsemen, representing Kings and Queens. The other forces ordered to support him did not, for many reasons, do so, and the Queens county militia, by its unwillingness to serve or open desertion, had dwindled down to a mere skeleton organization. Despite the weakness of his force, General Woodhull at once proceeded to carry his instructions into effect as well as he could, and he succeeded in capturing a considerable quantity of cattle and other live stock, which he sent out of the immediate reach of the foe. In the course of these operations his little army steadily dwindled until it numbered less than 100. The result of the battle of Brooklyn on August 27th completely cut off Woodhull's little force from the rest of the army, and he retired to Jamaica with the view of awaiting developments or new orders. He had sent Major Lawrence to the Provincial Congress and to General Washington asking instructions and reinforcements. Congress sent messages to Connecticut asking the aid of the towns on the Sound in removing the stock from Long Island and forwarded a letter to General

Washington requesting that the two Long Island regiments, or what was left of them, be sent to Jamaica. It also sent two of its members with instructions and advice to Woodhull, who, it was hoped, was able to maintain his headquarters at Jamaica.

These representatives never reached Jamaica. Washington, for sufficient military reasons, refused to send him the two regiments, or 1,000 men, as one communication put it. All this dickering and letter-writing occupied time, and the delay somehow inspired Woodhull with the belief that the reinforcements so much needed would be sent. Therefore he decided upon remaining at Jamaica until these arrived or until orders to retreat had been received, although instant retreat across the Sound or to the east end of the island would have been amply justified. But he believed a soldier should obey orders, and having received no fresh orders, he felt that he could not honorably leave the post to which he had originally been assigned. Early on August 28th he ordered his handful of men to take up a position four miles east of Jamaica; but he lingered in that village himself until the afternoon in the hope of receiving some message from Congress or from General Washington. But none came and he then reluctantly and with a sorrowful heart proceeded to join his troops. Two miles east of Jamaica he was surrounded by a detachment of the Seventeenth Dragoons.

Thompson, in his "History of Long Island," gives the following account of the capture of Woodhull:

"The General, immediately on being discovered, gave up his sword in token of surrender. The ruffian who first approached him (said to be a Major Baird of the Seventy-first), as reported, ordered him to say 'God save the King!' the General replied, 'God save us all!' on which he most cowardly and cruelly assaulted the defenseless General with his broadsword, and would have killed him on the spot if he had not been prevented by the interference of an officer of more honor and hu-

manity (said to be Major Delancey of the Dragoons), who arrested his savage violence."

This story, which seems to be based mainly on the details given us by Silas Wood in his "Sketch of Long Island," is apocryphal—one of the wonder tales with which the details of the incidents of every war are embellished by the ignorant narrators who, in the spirit of natural poetry which is part and parcel of every intelligent peasantry, seek to bring such details into prominent relief by the introduction of matter which lightens the glory of the successful party. It is this spirit of natural poetry to which England and Scotland owe their unrivalled stores of ballad minstrelsy. Of such minstrel tales this is a fitting example, and the entire story seems strangely familiar. There was no "Major Baird of the Seventy-first" at that time, or indeed at any time. In the affidavit of Colonel Robert Troup to the Convention, sworn to January 17, 1777, before Gouverneur Morris, the affiant states that when Woodhull was carried on the transport "Snow Mentor," where he was for a time confined, "deponent asked the General the particulars of his capture and was told by the said General that he had been taken by a party of light-horse under the command of Captain Oliver Delancey; that he was asked by the said Captain if he would surrender; that he answered in the affirmative, provided he would treat him like a gentleman—which Captain Delancey assured him he would, whereupon the General delivered his sword, and that immediately after the said Oliver Delancey, Jun'r., struck him, and others of the party, imitating his example, did cruelly cut and hack him in the manner he then was."

Edward F. De Lancey, in Appleton's *Cyclopædia of American Biography* (Vol. 2, page 133), tells a different story. He says:

"On the evening of the 28th of the same month (August) Sir William Erskine, with the Seventeenth Light Dragoons and the Seventy-first Foot, about 700 men in all, surprised and seized at Carpenter's House, Jamaica, General Woodhull and many of his

men. The General, who tried to escape under cover of the night, being discovered by the sentries getting over a board fence, was cut down, severely wounded in the head and arm, and only saved from instant death by the interference of Captain De Lancey."

The affidavit made by William Warne before the New York Committee of Safety a few days after the capture, says that:

"One of the light-horsemen told him (Warne) that he had taken General Woodhull in the dark in a barn and that before he would answer, when he spoke to the General, he had cut him on the head and arms."

Of the truthfulness of the two affidavits (Troup's and Warne's) that of Troup is the only one worth considering; but in the condition in which he met his former chief (he had been aide to Woodhull), wounded, fever stricken and despondent, it might be regarded as the ravings of a man unconscious of his utterances owing to his physical pains. It certainly seems unlikely that De Lancey would so treat one who was his kinsman. Then, too, in another important factor all the stories fall short, for it was not in keeping with the character of General Woodhull, as described by those who could correctly estimate it, to tamely deliver up his sword; nor is it in keeping with the probabilities for solitary captives when surrounded by an enemy's force to dictate or attempt to dictate terms to their captors. The true story seems to be that Woodhull was captured sword in hand and that he was struck down by one or more of the dragoons when trying to effect his escape.

Another traditional story given by Thompson may be repeated here:

"It is said that one of the battalions employed in this inglorious warfare against an unresisting individual was commanded by a Major Crew, a distant kinsman of the General, and that, when he came to be apprised of that fact and of the circumstances of the case, he was so disgusted that he either resigned his commission and quit the service,

or obtained permission to leave the army and return to England."

This is simply a historical embellishment, having no foundation in truth. There was no "Major Crew" near General Woodhull when he was captured, or even in this country during the Revolution. So he has to figure in the same shadowy gallery along with "a Major Baird." Historic statements whose

his wounds bleeding he was mounted behind one of the troopers and taken to Jamaica. It is thought that the soldiers were suspicious of being surrounded by the troops which Woodhull had in the vicinity, not being aware as to their strength, and on that account hurried along with their charge more rapidly than humanity should have dictated.

On reaching Jamaica Woodhull was as-



RESIDENCE OF NICASIVS DE SILLÉ, NEW UTRICHT, L. I. 1657 WHERE GENERAL WOODHULL FIED

Demolished in 1850.

sole foundation are the words "it is said" ought even to be regarded with suspicion, in fact, may safely be put down as untrue, and therefore as not in keeping with history at all.

However all this may be, there is no doubt that as a result of the circumstances of his capture Woodhull was seriously wounded in the head and his arm slashed in several places. No attention was paid to his wounds when the affray of the capture was over, and with

signed to quarters in Mrs. Hinchman's tavern, where his wounds were dressed by a British army surgeon. It was then found that his injuries were more serious than had been imagined, there being several deep gashes on his head, while one arm was almost severed from the body. After resting that night he was removed on the following morning to the stone church and confined there with several other captives. On the 29th of August Woodhull and the other prisoners in Jamaica

were removed to the old church at New Utrecht, which was being used for the time as a military prison. He is presumed—for the matter is not very clear—to have been detained here for several days and afterward removed to the prison ship *Pacific*, where he endured the misery and dirt and experienced all the physical and mental torture which the evidence of most witnesses testifies, came to all who were confined in those hulks. On Sept. 2, he was transferred, as a "measure of humanity," to another hulk, the *Snow Mentor*, and there it became only too evident that the lack of medical attention and the foul air of the transports had done their work, and that the General was dying. On Sept. 6 he was sent to the house beside the church-jail at New Utrecht, used as a hospital, for treatment, and there, after suffering the amputation of his wounded arm, he died on Sept. 20, his last thoughts being for the alleviation of the sufferings of those about him.

Gen. Woodhull's only child was his daughter, Elizabeth, who married Henry Nicoll, a member of a family which had been settled in New York State for many years. After his death she married Gen. John Smith, one of the Tangier Smiths, a native of Mastic who, after serving in Congress for several years (1779-1804) succeeded to the seat, in the United States Senate, of DeWitt Clinton, and held it until 1813. He was a Major General of Volunteers and United States Marshal for the Southern District of New York and held these two appointments at the time of his death, Aug. 12, 1816. His widow resided on her father's estate at Mastic until her death. By her first marriage she had several sons, and by her second marriage a daughter who married John K. Lawrence. From these two marriages the present living descendants of Gen. Woodhull may be enumerated as follows: James Woodhull Walsh, New York; Henry Nicoll Wayne, New Britain, Conn.; Alvan Riker Lawrence, Justice of Supreme Court of New York; Rev. Alexander Hamilton, and John R. Suydam.

In many ways the figure of Gen. Woodhull is one of the most notable, most beautiful, which the entire story of the Revolution brings under our notice. In his case love of country was the predominating feature in his whole career. He acquired, while a soldier in the armies owing allegiance to King George, a high reputation for personal courage and for military ability, and when the time came for him to believe that in the interests of his country that allegiance should be thrown off, there was no half-heartedness, no shrinking, no thought of self in his course, but a clear, emphatic and determined stand on behalf of liberty in which life and property were both placed at stake. As a statesman he exhibited, while a member of the Provincial Congress, many splendid qualities, and as the presiding officer of that body, while he steadfastly and honestly carried out its orders as its executive head, he strove to mingle pity and mercy even when dealing with pronounced Tories.

It is one of the mysteries of the war how it came about that a man who by the training of long service and study was every inch a soldier should, when the crisis came, be found in an obscure position, mainly that of a driver of cattle in face of the enemy, while men like Putnam and Sullivan and Greene, who had no real knowledge of warfare, or whose knowledge was mainly confined to skirmishes with Indians, were invested with high commands. It is safe to say that had he been in military command of the island on August 27th the British would not have found at Bedford so easy a flanking point and that he would have met them with something at least of their own tactics; but instead, he found himself, when the crisis came, away from the scene of action; but obeying orders like a true soldier, and doing the best service he could with less than 100 men under his command. It is pitiful to read his letters at that critical junction, knowing as we do the opportunities which were being lost to the struggling nation by the trifling employment which had been given him, and how tenacious-

ly he held on to the humble duty to which he had been assigned without any thought of retreat except under pressure of the circumstances of war or of direct orders from those in authority. On the 27th he wrote: "I have got all of the cattle southward of the hills in Kings county, to the eastward of the cross road between the two counties, and have placed guards and sentinels from the northward to the south side of the island to prevent the cattle's going back and to prevent the communication of the Tories with the enemy."

On August 28th he wrote the Convention: "I have about seventy of the men and about twenty of the troops, which is all the force I have or can expect, and I am daily growing less in number. The people are so alarmed in Suffolk that they will not any more of them march; and as to Cols. Smith and Remsen they cannot join me, for the communication is cut off between us. I have sent about 1,100 cattle to the great fields on the plains yesterday. About 300 more have gone off this morning to the same place."

Thus the only trained General on Long Island, except the immortal Chief, was herding cattle, while Generals Putnam, Sullivan and Stirling, mere soldiers by accident, with all the shortcomings such a designation implies, were participants in a great battle in which American Patriots were being mowed down like grass, simply for the want of proper and trained leadership! It is, as we have said, one of the mysteries of the time how such a disposition of leadership became possible. Justice Marshall afterward (1834), in correcting an error in his life of Washington in which he expressed the idea that Woodhull's district was assigned to him that he might guard among others the very pass through which the British made their flanking movement, finally said of Woodhull's position: "It is an additional example of the many inconveniences arising in the early part of the war from the disposition of the civil authorities to manage affairs belonging to the mili-

tary department." In other words, Gen. Woodhull was the victim of politics,—that politics which has given rise to so much scandal at the opening of every American war, down even to the opening of the recent glorious war with Spain.

It seems to us there is something more than ordinary heroic in the manner in which Woodhull held on to the duty and the spot assigned to him, even with his small command steadily diminishing, and a great and finally victorious host lying between him and the forces of the Continental army. As we read the story we are impelled to cry, "It is magnificent, but it is not war!" Prudence would have impelled him at once, on the night of the 27th, to have crossed the Sound to Connecticut; but he had received no orders to retreat and retreat he would not.

But noble as was his entire career, disinterested as were his services to his country, and pure and noble as was his personal life, lighted up as his pathway was with all the glow of Christianity—love, faith, charity—and with unwavering fidelity to whatever he believed to be right and just, it seems to us that his true nobility of character and disposition reached its highest development when life was closing for him in darkness and horror and he suffered all the ignominy, and torture, and cruelty of captivity, whether in a temporary prison on land or a vile transport in a harbor. Cruelly wounded as he was, without proper medical attendance, breathing impure air, placed among scenes at which even the slightest sense of delicacy might be shocked, often with no bed but a plank, with food almost unfit to eat, and only putrid water at times to drink, he never seems to have made audible complaint. His record he knew was clear, his course through life had been consistent and just, and he had a humble yet thorough confidence in an Almighty Power who ever rules and ordains all things well. So he met his fate calmly and bravely, faced the inevitable end of his sufferings with true Christian fortitude, and passed through the

veil with words on his lips invoking mercy and charity and help for those who were his companions in misfortune and whose time of release had not yet come.

It seems a pity that the memory of such a hero—the hero of Long Island—should not be perpetuated by some public monument in its most populous quarter, or at least in Jamaica, where in reality he surrendered his life to the cause of national liberty. It is said often that such memories as his never die, that they are enshrined in the hearts of their countrymen, and so on; but we should not enshrine too closely, and it is well to give public expression to our sentiments. Children seeing such a monument would ask about his life story and gain thereby a sense of what true patriotism really is; strangers would know what sort of men are the heroes we delight to honor; and the fact of such public honor being paid a hero might nerve others to study his life, his motives and his exploits and be nerved to imitate all these should dark days ever again fall on this blessed and glorious country. An effort, indeed, has once or twice been made to erect a memorial statue, but each failed to win material support; and so Woodhull, like many another gallant Patriot, has his memory perpetuated only on history's page: there only are his services acknowledged, and his virtues recalled.

Perhaps no soldier more seriously and persistently annoyed the British and their Loyalist supporters on Long Island during its occupation than Lieut. Col. Benjamin Tallmadge, a man who not alone for his intrepid bravery, dauntless resolution, unceasing energy and successful accomplishments has won a place among the heroes of the Revolution, but one who acquired a degree of importance in the history of the nation as the custodian of Major Andre from the time that unfortunate victim of war was captured until his execution, on October 2, 1780. Tallmadge walked with that ill-fated officer to the place of execution, and, while he sternly aided in carrying out the sentence of the court-martial, could not

help a feeling of commiseration for the unfortunate victim of the just laws of warfare.

The Tallmadge family in America traces its descent from Robert Tallmadge, an Englishman who came here prior to 1640 and was one of the founders, in 1643, of the New Haven Colony. The great-grandson of this pioneer was the Rev. Benjamin Tallmadge, who was the first of the family to become identified with Long Island. In 1753 he was called to the pastorate of the Congregational Church at Setauket, and continued to minister to that body until 1785, when he retired. He died on Feb. 5th in the following year. Dr. Prime in his "History of Long Island" characterized him as "a fine scholar and an able divine." He married Susannah, daughter of the Rev. John Smith, and by her had a large family. She died in 1768 and some two years later he married Zipporah Strong of Brookhaven, but of that marriage there was no issue.

The eldest son of this clergyman, William Tallmadge, born July 9, 1752, took an active part in the movement for freedom, and was captured by the British at the battle of Long Island. He died during his captivity, from ill treatment and starvation, it is believed.

Benjamin Tallmadge, the second son, was born in the little parsonage at Setauket Feb. 25, 1754. Under the tuition of his father he made such rapid progress in his education, and particularly in the classics, that he was pronounced, when only twelve years of age, as being fitted for entering Yale by the Rev. Naphthali Daggett, sometime minister at Smithtown, L. I., and from 1766 to 1777 President pro tem. of Yale University, in which he held the chair of theology.

Dr. Daggett is, we fear, now one of the many forgotten heroes of the Revolution, who showed that he considered his sacred vocation no bar to his assuming the active duties of patriotism. In 1779 he shouldered a musket and aided in the defense of New Haven against the British. He was taken prisoner, however, and compelled to act as a guide,

his natural repulsion to such an office being overcome by bayonet thrusts made on the slightest sign of hesitancy or halting. He received many such wounds and never recovered his health, dying from the effects of his butcher-like treatment Nov. 25, 1780.

In time Tallmadge entered Yale and was graduated in 1773. He then became Master of the High School at Wethersfield, Conn., and so continued until the outbreak of the war, when he received a commission as Lieutenant in Colonel Chester's regiment of Connecticut militia, remaining in active service until the conflict was over and the United States took a place among the independent powers of the world. He took part in the Battle of Brooklyn and was one of the detail which held the lines of intrenchments until the last, stood on guard until the retreat was completed and had become one of the wonders of military story. On Dec. 15, 1776, he was commissioned by the Continental authorities as Captain of the Second Light Dragoons, on April 27, 1777, he received the rank of Major, and in 1783 the brevet rank of Lieutenant Colonel. All his promotions were honestly won and gallantly earned. He participated in the battles at White Plains, Short Hills, Brandywine, Monmouth, Germantown and White Marsh.

Tallmadge enjoyed the implicit confidence of General Washington and was frequently invested by that hero with a separate command for the purpose of carrying out some difficult, or dangerous, or delicate piece of work, or, as generally happened, something which involved all three. Thus it was while in New Castle township, in command of a detachment appointed to do scouting duty among the passes by which the enemy in New York and the Tories in Westchester county carried on their machinations, that Andre was captured and conducted to Tallmadge's headquarters.

It was, however, on Long Island that Major Tallmadge's military talents were most brilliantly employed. Two noted instances

are on record, but his services were pretty continuous, and, besides an active correspondence with the Patriots on the island, he used all sorts of means for keeping himself thoroughly informed of the doings of the enemy. This knowledge he invariably put to some effective use, but it is noticeable that he consulted his great chief regarding every important move.

In 1777 the British had a strong post on Lloyd's Neck between Huntington and Oyster Bay. Quickly and decisively were the details of the a gang of outcasts and pirates carried on a regular system of plunder, their victims being alike those living along the shore and the seamen in the small vessels trading in the Sound. Tallmadge determined to break up this band of cut-throats and at nightfall on Sept. 5, 1777, he left Shippen Point, Conn., with 130 men and crossed the Sound. So quickly and decisively were the details of the expedition carried out that on the following morning he was back in Connecticut with almost the entire band of desperadoes as his prisoners.

In 1780, after a considerable absence from Long Island, and possibly with a view to remove the Andre impression from his mind, he again turned his thoughts thither. He proposed to General Washington to secure or destroy a large quantity of supplies which the British had collected and stored at Coram, Brookhaven, and, incidentally to see what could be done with the subjection of a fort near Mastic known as Fort St. George. Washington, ever regardful of the lives of his men and ready to frown on any expedition which seemed recklessly hazardous, was inclined to demur and advised Tallmadge to abandon the scheme. The latter, however, disregarding all personal danger, stealthily crossed to the island and inspected the proposed scene of operations, and then, armed with this personal observation, ventured again to communicate his views at full length to his chief. The latter finally authorized the movement in the following letter, dated

"Headquarters, Nov. 11th, 1780," which we print in full as showing the confidence which Washington reposed in this brave soldier:

Sir: I have received yours of the 7th inst. The destruction of the forage collected for the use of the British army at Coram, on Long Island, is of so much consequence that I should advise the attempt to be made. I have written to Col. Sheldon to furnish you a detachment of dismounted dragoons and will commit the execution to you. If the seizure of the party at Smith's house can be attempted without frustrating the other design, or running too great a hazard, I have no objection. But you must remember that this is only a secondary object, and in all cases you will take the most prudent means to secure a retreat.

Confiding entirely in your prudence as well as enterprise I wish you success.

G. WASHINGTON.

Gathering together a force of eighty men, Tallmadge left Fairfield, on the Connecticut side of the Sound, on the afternoon of November 21, 1780. The party occupied eight boats and landed at Old Man's Harbor about 9 o'clock, at what was afterward known as Mount Sinai. After marching inland for a few miles the soldiers had to return to their boats, a heavy rain not only rendering the roads or tracks soft and muddy, but making it impossible to attain the rapid progress necessary to the successful accomplishment of the scheme. They took shelter in their boats or in the bush that night, and, the storm continuing, throughout the following day. Then, when night again came on, the elements becoming more favorable, they once more started out. Dividing his party into three, Tallmadge ordered that the attack on the fort should be made simultaneously by each division. His plans were so well made that the fort was carried within ten minutes after the onslaught was begun. Several British vessels laden with stores attempted to escape, but the guns of the fort were turned on them and they were burned, as were the fort and its outworks and approaches. Fifty-

seven prisoners were captured, and, after sending them under an escort to his boats, Tallmadge, with the remainder of his little army, proceeded by a rapid movement to Coram, where they destroyed some 300 tons of hay which had been collected by the British. This done, he at once pushed on for his boats and arrived at Mount Sinai just as the party with the prisoners reached there. No time was lost in embarking, and by eleven o'clock the expedition was back in Fairfield, triumphant, with all their prisoners, and without one of their own men missing. It was a glorious deed, well planned and bravely carried out, and richly deserved the complimentary resolution in which Congress acknowledged the services of all concerned. Much as he undoubtedly valued this acknowledgment however, Tallmadge probably valued still more the following letter from his leader, dated at Morristown, Nov. 28, 1780:

I have received with much pleasure the report of your successful enterprise upon Fort George and the vessels with stores in the bay and was particularly well pleased with the destruction of the hay at Coram, which must, I conceive, be severely felt by the enemy at this time. I beg you to accept my thanks for your judicious planning and spirited execution of this business, and that you will offer them to the officers and men who shared the honors of the enterprise with you. The gallant behavior of Mr. Muirson gives him a fair claim to an appointment in the Second Regiment of Dragoons when there is a vacancy, and I have no doubt of his meeting with it accordingly, if you make known his merit, with these sentiments in his favor. You have my free consent to reward your little party with the little booty they were able to bring from the enemy's works.

Yours, etc., G. WASHINGTON.

Heathcote Muirson, so flatteringly mentioned in the above epistle, did not get his commission but continued as opportunity offered to serve his county as a volunteer. His career soon ended, however, in 1781, for he

fell mortally wounded, in an attack on Fort Slongo, near Smittstown, and some eight miles from Floyd's Neck. Major Tallmadge was also conspicuous in this affair, but it failed to effect its purpose, the strength of the place having been underestimated. During the remainder of the war Tallmadge was stationed mainly in Westchester county, watching the notorious "cowboys and skinners" and keeping an eye on Long Island, now and again making a descent upon its shores and always inflicting considerable damage to the enemy's stores and shipping. When peace was restored, he retired from the army with the rank of Colonel; but as treasurer, and afterward New York State President of the Society of the Cincinnati, he kept himself fully in touch with those associated with him during the greatest struggle for liberty in modern history.

Major Tallmadge married, March 16, 1784, Mary, eldest daughter of General William Floyd, of Mastic, Long Island, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. She died June 3, 1805, and on May 3, 1808, he married Maria, daughter of Joseph Hallet of New York City, who survived him. By his first marriage he had four sons and two daughters—William Smith, Henry Floyd (married Maria Canfield, daughter of Andrew Adams of Littlefield, Conn.), Frederick Augustus, Benjamin (who became an officer in the United States Navy and died at Gibraltar, unmarried,) George Washington (married Pacera M., daughter of Hon. Calvin Pease of Warren, Ohio), Maria Jones (married the Hon. P. Cushman of Troy, N. Y., Circuit Judge), and Harriet Wardsworth (married John Delafield of New York City).

The Tallmadge family may be considered as represented in the next generation by Major Tallmadge's third son, Frederick Augustus Tallmadge, who was born at Litchfield, Connecticut, August 29, 1792. He was educated at Yale, whence he was graduated in 1811, and, after a course of special study at the

Litchfield Law School, was admitted to the bar. During the War of 1812 he engaged in a brief military experience as Captain of a troop of cavalry on Long Island, but soon settled down to practice his profession in New York City. In 1834 he served in the local Aldermen and Council boards, and was a member of the State Senate from 1837 to 1840, serving part of the time as President of that body. From 1841 to 1846 he held the high office of Recorder of New York City and was again elected to it in 1848, serving until 1851. He was elected to Congress as a Whig, and served from December 6, 1847, till March 3, 1849. From 1857 to 1862 he was General Superintendent of the Metropolitan Board of Police, and in 1862-5 he was Chief Clerk of the Court of Appeals. He afterward engaged in the practice of law in New York City. During the time he was Recorder of the city the Astor Place riot occurred, and he was highly commended for the firm and determined stand he took in suppressing that tumult and in the trial of the ringleaders.

Mr. Tallmadge married Eliza, daughter of Hon. Judson Canfield, of Sharon, Connecticut, a descendant of Thomas Canfield, of Milford, Connecticut, 1646. The issue of this marriage was Eliza, married John T. White of Philadelphia; Julia, married William Curtis Noyes, of New York; William Floyd died unmarried; Frederick Samuel; and Mary Floyd, married Hon. Edward W. Seymour, Judge of the Supreme Court of the State of Connecticut.

The present representative of the family is Frederick Samuel Tallmadge, fourth child of Frederick Augustus and Eliza (Canfield) Tallmadge, and grandson of Major Benjamin Tallmadge, was born in New York City, January 24, 1824. He was graduated at Columbia College and studied law in the office of William Curtis Noyes, Esq., with whom he subsequently formed a copartnership. He has enjoyed for many years a successful practice and is ranked among the leading men in his profession in New York. Mr. Tallmadge was one of the founders of the Society of the Sons

of the Revolution, and from the date of its organization has been steadfast and earnest in his efforts to build up and enlarge its sphere of influence. He was elected President in 1884, soon after the Society was incorporated, and still holds that position. He is an honorary member of the Connecticut State Society of the Cincinnati; member of the Military Society of the War of 1812, constituting the Veteran Corps of Artillery, and of other organizations. Mr. Tallmadge married, in 1857, Julia Louisa, daughter of George Belden, of New York City. Mrs. Tallmadge died in 1894, leaving no issue.

Major Tallmadge's memory deserves to be held in more vivid remembrance by the American people at large than we fear it is at the present day. He was by no means a man of commanding genius and he seems to have lacked many of the qualities which might have proclaimed him a statesman; but he was a man of courage, resource and nerve; and all he possessed he freely gave to the cause of his native land, the cause by which he abided with unfaltering zeal during the darkest hours of the conflict. Whatever was given to him to do he invariably did well, and he enjoyed the entire confidence of those over him in authority as well as of those he commanded. As a member of Congress during eight successive terms, he was conspicuous for his useful rather than his brilliant services, but he performed his duties with the same closeness and unfailing sagacity which he showed while watching the Tory emissaries in Westchester county. In many respects he proved a model member of Congress and the Legislature, and his constituency both joined in regret when, at the end of sixteen years of service, he declined reelection.

In private life Major Tallmadge enjoyed the personal friendship of many of the most eminent men of his age, while his thoughtful benevolence and kindly charity, as well as his services to the county, endeared him to the community in which he lived. He was a splendid type of the patriot citizen of his time, a

man with no ambition but for his country, with no need of rendering any service but to the people, who willingly, cheerfully responded to every call, and whose entire record was clean, pure and above reproach. The memory of such men should be regarded as a priceless heritage in a country where the people rule and make and enforce the laws.

Although neither Gen. Parsons nor Col. Meigs belonged to Long Island by ties of birth, yet their names are so interwoven with its Revolutionary history that some notice of these two heroes may not be inappropriate here.

Samuel Holden Parsons was born at Lynn, Conn., May 14, 1737, and was the son of the Rev. Jonathan Parsons and Phoebe, sister of Gov. Matthew Griswold. Parsons studied law and after eighteen years at the bar became a member of the local Assembly. When the war broke out he took part under Ethan Allen in the capture of Ticonderoga, and was in part the instigator of that bold deed. He was present at the battle of Brooklyn and was one of the court-martial which tried Major Andre. Parsons performed many brilliant services while the war lasted and retired at the close of hostilities with the rank of Major General. Resuming the practice of law in Middletown, Conn., he so continued until 1788, when he was appointed by Washington as first Judge of the Northwest Territory and settled in Marietta, Ohio. He was accidentally drowned in Big Beaver River, Nov. 17, 1789.

Return Jonathan Meigs was born at Middletown, Conn., Dec. 17, 1734, and died in Georgia, Jan. 28, 1823. His services in the war began immediately after the skirmish at Lexington, when he marched to Boston with a company of his neighbors and was given the rank of Major under Col. Benedict Arnold. At the attack on Quebec he was taken prisoner but was exchanged after a few months. In 1777 he raised a regiment and was commissioned its Colonel, serving with that rank until the close of the war. In 1788 he went to Ohio and resided in that then wilderness until 1801, when he was appointed Indian agent among

the Cherokees and resided in Georgia until his death. His son was Governor of Ohio, 1810-14, and was Postmaster General in the Cabinet of President Madison, and continued to hold the office under President Monroe until 1823, when he retired to private life and died at Marietta, Ohio, March 29, 1825.

The deed which has forever woven the name of Col. Meigs into the history of Long Island occurred in 1777. The plan of the incident and its general outline were conceived by Gen. Parsons, but he confided its execution to Col. Meigs and as the outcome proved his confidence was not mistaken. I quote the following account of the incident from Prime's "History of Long Island" mainly because that reverend historian compiled it in great measure from statements made to him by Deacon John White of Sag Harbor, who was one of Meigs's party and whom the author described as "a man of observation and sterling integrity:"

Every reader of American history recollects the rapid and successful expedition of Lieut. Col. Meigs in 1771 to Sag Harbor for the purpose of destroying a quantity of provisions which the British forces had collected here. Embarking at New Haven on the 21st of May, in whale-boats, he was compelled by the roughness of the Sound to hold the Connecticut shore until the 23d. In the afternoon of that day he left Guilford with 170 men in whale-boats under the convoy of two armed sloops and arrived at Scuthold about sunset. Taking 130 men and transporting their boats

across the northern branch of the Island, he embarked on the bay for Sag Harbor, where he arrived after midnight and landed at the foot of the beach about two miles above the village. There concealing his boats in the bushes, and leaving a few men for a guard, he proceeded toward the harbor. At the house now (1845) occupied by Mr. Silas Edwards, which was used as a hospital, he seized two men who were taking care of the sick, whom he used as guides, and whom he threatened with instant death for the least failure in executing his requirements. Under their direction he was led to the quarters of the commanding officer whom he arrested and secured while lying in his bed. At this juncture an alarm was given, and a single shot was fired from an armed vessel, which, however, was not repeated, from the inability to determine the cause of the alarm. An outpost was immediately carried with fixed bayonets and the land forces secured. He then proceeded to the shipping at the wharf, where, after being exposed to the fire of an armed schooner of twelve guns and seventy men for nearly an hour, he completely effected the object of the expedition. In a short time twelve brigs and sloops, one of which carried twelve guns, were enveloped in flames, and with them one hundred and twenty tons of hay, ten hogsheads of rum and a large quantity of grain and merchandise were completely destroyed. Of the enemy six were killed and ninety taken prisoners. The same day Col. Meigs embarked for Guilford, where he arrived after an absence of only twenty-five hours, during which he had transported his troops alternately by land and water a distance of ninety miles without the loss of a man. A more successful and brilliant affair does not grace the annals of the Revolution.



CHAPTER XXI.

THE WAR OF 1812—NAVAL OPERATIONS AROUND LONG ISLAND.

FOR some years before the crisis actually came it was evident to all thoughtful observers that the country was slowly but surely drifting into war with Great Britain. The causes for that belong to the general history of the country, but they were admirably summarized by President Madison in his famous war message to Congress on June 1, 1812, and included the violation of the United States flag on the high seas and seizing persons sailing under it, wantonly shedding the blood of American citizens, plundering American commerce, and the introduction of an iniquitous system of blockades. The President with his message left the matter in the hands of Congress as the war-declaring power, and it was not slow to act. On June 3d the Committee on Foreign Relations reported in favor of war and the next day the bill authorizing the appeal to arms reached the Senate.

Professor McMaster (*History of the People of the United States*, vol. III, page 457) says:

When the vote cast in the House on that memorable day is examined it appears that not a Representative from Ohio, Kentucky, Tennessee, South Carolina or Georgia voted for peace, and that not a Representative from Rhode Island, Connecticut or Delaware voted for war; that in Massachusetts, New York and New Jersey the majority was for peace; that in Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia and North Carolina the majority was for war; that, in short, the Eastern and Middle States, with two exceptions, were against war, and the

Southern and Western States were for it. The deliberations of the Senate consumed two weeks, so that it was not until June 18 that the act was passed and approved by Madison. On June 19 the proclamation was issued. As the riders hurried from Washington to spread the news throughout the land, Madison visited the Department of War and of the Navy, "stimulating everything," said one who saw him, "in a manner worthy of a little commander-in-chief with his little round hat and huge cockade."

It could hardly be said that at the beginning the war was popular, and the vote in the House of Representatives at Washington fully bears this out, showing particularly the position of the States on the northeastern seaboard. The total vote showed 79 for war, 49 against. New York cast 11 votes for peace and 3 for war, three of her Representatives being absent. New Jersey cast 4 votes for peace and 2 for war; Massachusetts cast 8 votes for peace and 6 for war, three of her Representatives being absent; New Hampshire voted 2 for peace and 3 for war; Vermont, 1 for peace and 3 for war. In this matter the lower house of Congress may be said to have fairly reflected the sentiment of the country generally as well as of the States. All over New England town meetings were held in opposition to the war policy, and in some places bells were tolled and flags were placed at half mast. New York was equally divided although not so demonstrative, but from the moment the plunge actually was made she arrayed herself loyally on the side of the Government and so continued while the con-

flict lasted. On Long Island the news of the war was received calmly at first, and outside of Kings county it can hardly be said to have aroused excitement at any time. The effect felt was more of inconvenience than of danger, and, while so far as the island itself was concerned the struggle was a bloodless one, yet the blockade of the coast was an annoyance and a source of hardship. Business was prostrated and the farmers tilled their fields with the feeling hanging over them that a descent might be made at any time which would rob them of their labors by the wanton destruction of their crops or the looting of their barns and their homes. In fact, even as it was, descents from armed vessels for the purpose of robbing the farmers were of frequent occurrence while hostilities lasted. Mr. Richard M. Bayles says:

The war of 1812 gave Suffolk county comparatively little trouble. In 1813 a British fleet occupied Gardiner's Bay and from their headquarters there made attacks upon the shipping at various points. A draft was made upon the militia for a three months' service at Sag Harbor, where the danger of an attack seemed greatest. Several frigates cruised the Sound and harassed the trading ships plying between the ports along the north shore of the country and New York. The cruising frigates were on the alert and their diligence was every now and then rewarded by a prize. Some of the vessels thus captured were held for a ransom, on receipt of which they were returned to their owners, and others were burned.

At Sag Harbor, as soon as the news of the declaration of war had been sufficiently digested, an arsenal was built of brick on the site of an old burial ground, and there munitions of war of all sorts were stored to await events. Information of this reached the British ships and an armed force under Commodore Hardy was sent to capture the stores. A landing was effected but the invaders met with a reception that compelled them to beat a speedy retreat to their boats, the only damage done being the destruction of a small sloop by fire. This was

offset by the large quantity of arms and ammunition which in their hurry to get away the invaders unceremoniously left behind and which helped to swell the stock in the little arsenal.

On March 20, 1813, the entire coast line of the United States was practically blockaded with the exception of Rhode Island, Massachusetts and New Hampshire. A month later it was reported that a British frigate was cruising about Long Island Sound, along with several privateers, and that quite a number of coasting vessels had been captured by them and destroyed. Much complaint was made that no effort to stop such ravages was attempted although two American war vessels were in the Brooklyn navy yard undergoing repairs, which might have been completed, it was declared, within one week. What the government failed to do was in a measure accomplished by private enterprise, and in June the American privateer "Governor Tompkins," one of the most noted of the many vessels of its order sent out during the war by New York merchants, passed boldly through the Sound, and although hotly chased by the British cruisers made her escape into the open sea, where she gave a good account of herself as a commerce destroyer. Her last known engagement resulted in a victory and she sent her prize, a valuable merchant ship, to New York in charge of her Lieutenant, Edward Dodd, who afterward resided at Babylon for many years and died July 17, 1843. He brought his charge safe to port, but the "Governor Tompkins" was never heard from afterward; and as no record of any engagement in which she might have taken part exists, it is supposed she foundered in a gale which it was known sprung up shortly after Lieut. Dodd and his prize crew left her side.

In September, 1813, Commodore Lewis of Boston with a fleet of thirty gunboats passed through the Sound from Hellgate to Cow's Neck in search of some of the enemy's vessels that were playing havoc with the coasting trade. The result was the exchange of a few

shots, but that was all, although the British saw enough of the determination of the Yankee sailors and their preparedness for a fight to be exceedingly wary in that vicinity for some time to come. On November, 16 Admiral Warren, commanding the British fleet, issued a formal proclamation in which he declared as under blockade "all that part of Long Island Sound being the seacoast lying within Montauk Point, or the eastern point of Long Island and the point of land opposite thereto, commonly called Plack Point, situated on the sea-coast of the main land, together with all the ports, harbors, creeks and entrances of the East and North Rivers of New York, as well as all the other ports, creeks and bays along the coast of Long Island and the State of New York," etc.

As a result of this the coast of Long Island was more closely watched by the people than ever and reports were in frequent circulation of intended landings in force of the British. Such landings as were made, however, seemed intended only to secure fresh provisions for the ships,—foraging parties rather than anything else. But the shipping felt the watchfulness of the blockades severely. "The Fair Trader" of Babylon was captured near the New Inlet, one of the entrances to the Great South Bay. With her rich cargo she was sent to Nova Scotia and there sold, her stanch timbers enabling her to remain in service for many years. "The Amazon" of Huntington (Capt. Conkling), "The Sally" of Cow Harbor (Capt. Arkerly) and "The Juno" of Brookhaven (Capt. Jones) were among the other Long Island vessels captured in 1813.

In 1814 the cordon was drawn more closely than ever. The fleet in Gardiner's Bay sent out cruising parties in all directions, and these parties ravaged and destroyed property without scruple, as much from wantonness as from any necessity. A schooner was set on fire at Rockaway, where she had been beached to prevent capture; and the British warships "Pomona" and "Dispatch" entered the harbor of Setauket and captured "The Herald," "The

Hope," "The Mercantile" and "The Two Friends" and burned "The Oncida" in Drowned Meadow (Port Jefferson) Bay. Jamaica Bay was a favorite cruising place for the barge crews of the blockading fleet, and though the inhabitants there, rendered desperate by the frequent landings and confiscations, erected a blockhouse to keep the marauders off, it proved of little practical avail and the depredations continued to the end of the war.

Mr. James B. Cooper, Babylon, for many years clerk of Suffolk county, relates the following incident:

In the month of July, 1814, the village of Babylon and its vicinity were thrown into a state of high excitement by the appearance in Sumpawam's creek of a whale-boat loaded with armed men in uniform. It proved to be Captain David Porter and ten of his sailors who had survived the hard-fought and sanguinary engagement of Valparaiso (March 28, 1814). * * * After a voyage of seventy-three days they arrived on the south coast of Long Island and on the morning of July 5, 1814, fell in with H. B. M. ship Saturn, Captain Nash, who examined the papers of the "Essex, Jr.," treated Captain Porter with great civility, furnished him with late newspapers, sent him a basket of fruit and made him an offer of kindly services. The boarding officer indorsed the papers and permitted the ship to proceed. But in a couple of hours the "Essex, Jr.," was again brought to, the papers re-examined and the ship searched. Capt. Porter, regarding this treatment as a violation of all honorable rules of warfare, and finding that he was about to be made a prisoner, determined to escape from his base captor. The next morning about 7 a boat was lowered, manned, armed and provisioned. In this boat Capt. Porter, with about ten men, pulled off; but he was soon discovered and pursued by "the Saturn," which was favored by a fresh breeze that sprung up about the same time. Fortunately for the Americans a fog then set in, concealing them, and, changing the course of their little craft, they were soon out of danger from their pursuers.

After rowing and sailing about sixty miles, Capt. Porter with much difficulty succeeded in entering Fire Island Inlet. Here he was found by James Mountfort, who piloted him up Sumpawam's creek. When he stepped from

the boat Stephen B. Nichols told him he doubted his being an American naval officer and intimated that he might be from the other side. "Then, my good friend," said the Captain, "I will surrender to you," at the same time handing Nichols an iron cutlass. When they reached the center of the village a large and excited crowd gathered. The story of Capt. Porter was so extraordinary that few believed it. Of course nothing had been heard of the battle at Valparaiso, no vessel having reached the United States with an account of the same. Mr. Rushmore, a local storekeeper, informed Captain Porter that his neighbors still believed him to be a British officer in disguise. Upon this he pulled out his commission, which he fortunately had with him. Then all doubts were dispersed and he was treated by the villagers with the greatest hospitality. The best carriage and horse that could be had were soon ready and at his disposal. The whale-boat was hoisted upon a farm wagon and into the boat sprang the brave tars. In this manner the party was conveyed to the Brooklyn Navy Yard. Capt. Nash, finding that the commander of the "Essex, Jr.," had escaped, permitted the latter vessel to go in peace.

As illustrating how the people on shore were prepared to defend their homes in case of attack, it may be said that on one occasion a corps of 200 militiamen marched from Huntington to Lloyd's Neck on the circulation of a report that the British were there effecting a landing in force. The following excerpt from Huntington's town records is also in evidence on this point:

At a special town meeting held in the Town of Huntington, held at the house of Ebenezer Gould, on Saturday, the 5th day of November, 1814, it was voted that the sum of \$207.86 be paid by the town, being the amount of two bills paid for 6 casks of powder, 400 lbs. of musket balls, and a quantity of buck shot by the trustees of said town, for the militia to defend the said town with in case of invasion.

Also voted, that 1 cask of the powder, and the sixth part of the ball and shot be deposited with Captain Samuel Muncey at South.

Also voted that 1 cask of the powder and the sixth part of the ball and shot be de-

posited with Matthew Gardiner, Crab Meadow or Fresh Pond.

Also voted that $1\frac{1}{2}$ casks of the powder and the sixth part of the ball and shot be deposited with Epenetus Smith, Cow Harbor.

Also voted that $1\frac{1}{2}$ casks of the powder and the equal proportion of the ball and shot be deposited with Capt. Abel Cockling.

Also voted that $1\frac{1}{2}$ casks of powder and the equal proportion of the ball and shot be deposited with Capt. John Robers.

Hitherto, in this chapter, we have been treating of naval matters; and we will now turn to the military side of the story. Gov. Daniel D. Tompkins, soon after he was inaugurated, in 1807, foresaw that war between America and Britain was among the probabilities of the near future and beset himself to put the military establishment of the State on a sure footing. That purpose he fairly accomplished, but the general Government seemed strangely careless about the defences around New York, although the fact was only too apparent that in case of war with a naval power its approaches practically offered no obstacle to any demonstration which might be made. This was often pointed out, but without avail. From 1808 to 1816 the State of New York appropriated \$272,000 upon the fortifications for the defence of its harbor, so that the condition of things prior to the outbreak of the war was not chargeable to any neglect on the part of its authorities or any lack of public spirit on the part of its citizens. What defence there was seems to have been a continuation of the theory which prevailed in 1776 that there was no need of fortifying Long Island. The Narrows, Buttermilk Channel and the shores of Staten Island and Manhattan Island were equipped in more or less degree, but Long Island lay practically at the mercy of any invader who might happen along; and this in spite of the terrible lesson of August 28, 1776! There was a block-house, mounting a twenty-four pounder at the west end of Rockaway Beach, placed there with a view of re-

elling boat parties, and that was all, unless we include two trumpery forts at Hell Gate and an earthwork on the site of the present Fort Hamilton; hastily thrown up after the war was fairly started and to which was given the name of Fort Lewis.*

Gov. Tompkins strove to improve the defences of the coast as rapidly and as thoroughly as time and circumstances permitted. On Aug. 26, 1812, three companies of forty men each, belonging to the Thirty-third Brigade, New York, were ordered to proceed to Suffolk county, and one of these was to be stationed at Sag Harbor. Special attention was paid to that point. "In 1813," says the State Historian, Mr. Hugh Hastings, "Sag Harbor was one of the most enterprising trading towns on Long Island. The town itself consisted of but eighty or eighty-five houses, but it was a port of entry and was thriving and growing. Throughout the war Gov. Tompkins maintained a detachment of New York militia at Sag Harbor." It was the military headquarters of Suffolk county during the war, and its importance may be gathered from the following order, issued May 1, 1813:

The superintendent of the arsenal at Sag Harbor is authorized to deposit in the several exposed towns of Suffolk, not already supplied, upon the request of the inhabitants thereof, and upon taking a bond to the people of this State with good and sufficient

surety for the safe return thereof, arms, ammunition and military stores belonging to the State, provided General Rose (in military command of Suffolk County) shall deem and certify the same to be proper. In case of invasion or other emergency the exempts of Southampton and other towns may be supplied with arms and equipments from the arsenal, but for all articles delivered under this order to companies of exempts the like security above mentioned must be taken.

On Jan. 8, 1814, "in consequence of the imminent danger of the invasion of Sag Harbor and the adjoining coast," the garrison there was considerably augmented and volunteers were called for with the view of organizing another corps of artillery.

The Company of Exempts (from military duty) at Sag Harbor referred to above was organized in September, 1812, "for the protection of Sag Harbor against invasion." It was officered as follows. Captain, John Germain; Lieutenants, Elisha Prior, Cornelius Sleight and Thos. Beebee.

In November, 1812, Southold contributed to the defence of the county a company of exempts of which Gilbert Horton was made Captain; Jonathan Horton, Lieutenant; and Benjamin Hallock, Ensign. Probably there were other corps of the same character raised in nearly all the townships in Queens as well as in Suffolk. In most of the military arrangements of the war these counties were freely assessed and seemed to have won the approbation of the Governor for the alacrity with which they responded to each call for troops. They supplied their full quota to the infantry and several well equipped cavalry troops, but their main strength was in the artillery.

In 1811 we find that an artillery company was organized at Brookhaven, with John S. Mount as captain, Henry H. Howell and Samuel Davis as Lieutenants, and other towns followed suit. By order issued Dec. 7, 1813, the artillery of the Three Long Island coun-

*"On the Long Island shore of the Narrows a block-house was erected on the site of the present Fort Hamilton by the first inhabitants, who settled there in 1654. The work was as much of a protection against pirates and buccaneers as invaders. The English authorities for years discussed the feasibility of building a strong and permanent work at this point, but nothing ever came of it. During the war of 1812 the Americans constructed a small earthwork which they called Fort Lewis * * * Work on the present Fort Hamilton on the Long Island side of the Narrows was not begun in earnest until after the close of the second war with Great Britain."—Hugh Hastings, State Historian, "Life of Gov. Tompkins" (Military Papers), Vol. 1, page 73.

ties were organized into the Second Battalion of the Thirteenth Regiment under the command of Major Barbarin, and on Feb. 28, 1814, the cavalry of Queens, Suffolk and Westchester were changed into heavy artillery and became the Second Regiment, with Lieut. Col. Williams Jones as its commander.

All this showed that among the people the ancient spirit was not dead, and that had the stern occasion demanded the Long Islanders of 1812 would have presented a more united front to the enemy than had their predecessors in the days when independence was the question of the hour.



CHAPTER XXII.

THE CHAIN OF FORTS—MILITARY ACTIVITY IN KINGS COUNTY—THE KATYDIDS AND OTHER HEROES—THE POPULAR UPRISING.

IN the counties of Queens and Suffolk, however, the war was more a dream than a stern reality, more read and talked about than anything else. The trifling descents made on their coasts did little damage and resulted in no loss of life, and while the people were prepared for the worst the worst never came, and at no period during the whole of the conflict do we find any evidence of the deep and all prevailing love of country which impelled so many Suffolk county men to sacrifice all for home and freedom, for principle and loyalty in the War of the Revolution.

With Kings county it was altogether different; and while, happily, the tide of war rolled in a different direction, the war fever set in there with a bound as soon as the formal declaration was made known and gathered impetus, and the days sped on and news of the progress of the struggle began to come in. While, as in many other places, some of the Kings county people regarded the war as a mistake, a war which was simply the result of a failure to agree on the part of the politicians, news was no sooner received of American blood having been spilled than all whys and wherefores were forgotten and the war spirit rose to fever heat. By 1814 the spirit of '76 had again descended on all of Kings county and suffused itself over all classes of the people, harmonizing and blending for the time all shades of po-

litical opinion. Differences were forgotten, the Tories were dead and Toryism was a past and gone issue; the prejudice against the Loyalists had developed into a sentiment, and those who were their descendants were as enthusiastic for the Stars and Stripes as were those who had the blood of Revolutionary heroes flowing in their veins. For a time the military spirit predominated over all else. It was natural that with the announcement of the declaration of war the people of Kings county should have regarded it as possible that their territory would become one of the scenes of the conflict. The memory of the Battle of Brooklyn had not been wiped out, although its lessons seemed to have been forgotten by those to whom the destiny of the nation had been consigned.

Several military companies were in existence, or were formed, in 1812, immediately after the declaration of war. The Fusiliers under Capt. Joseph Herbert, though small in numbers, made a gallant appearance on parade with their green coats and leather caps, while the "Katydids," as the company of rifles commanded by Capt. Burdett Stryker were called, on account of their uniform,—green coats trimmed with yellow,—was among the most popular of the old-time independent military bodies ever seen in Brooklyn. Captain Barbarin's artillery was one of the most effective in the service, and we are told that on one occasion (Aug. 5, 1812), when they took a trip to the Narrows to en-

gage in target practice, they hit the ten-foot target twenty times at a distance of 450 yards, out of forty shots fired, which was wonderful marksmanship for those days. A troop of horse artillery was organized by John Wilson, who became its Captain, and in addition to such commands the county contributed its full quota to the militia of the State. On June 27 Gov. Tompkins called out the militia of New York, Westchester, Kings and Richmond counties and they remained in active service until the close of the war. The Sixty-fourth Regiment was furnished by Kings county to the military establishment of the commonwealth with the following officers: Major, Francis Titus; Major, Albert C. Van Brunt; Adjutant, Daniel Barre; Quartermaster, Albert Van Brunt; Captains, William Denyse (New Utrecht Company), Joseph Dean (Brooklyn Company), Francis Skillman (Wallabout Company), ——— Van Cott (Bushwick Company), Peter Cowenhoven (Gowanus Company), Jeremiah Lott (Gravesend and Flatbush Company).

It was not, as we have said, until 1814 that Kings county became fully aroused, for early in that summer a report was spread that there was more than a chance that a British army might again use it as a field of operations against Manhattan Island. Information had been received from Bermuda that a strong British fleet was concentrating there for the purpose of striking a blow on some part of the American coast, and the current idea there was that New York was the point at which the fleet would aim. As soon as this news reached the city vigorous measures for defence were at once adopted. It had been fondly hoped that the negotiations then in progress would have led to a complete cessation of hostilities and the public tension had been somewhat relaxed. But now the community was brought face to face with a grave danger.

DeWitt Clinton, then Mayor of New York, at once proceeded to put that city into a

state of preparation and the fortifications on the Battery and other points were strengthened, while a Committee of Defense was appointed. It was felt, however, that the fate of the city would be decided by a battle if battle there was to be, outside of its limits, and numerous points lay invitingly open to an enemy, points which were practically undefended. A landing might be made not far from where Howe landed in 1776, or a fleet might sail through Long Island Sound and command the city from some point in Westchester or the Long Island shore, for the passage through Hell Gate was open to friend or foe. The Committee of Defense at once took prompt measures. It recommended the immediate removal of the ships in the harbor, the enrollment of volunteers, asked the Governor to increase the quantity of arms and ammunition at the disposal of the local authorities, to put the field artillery, etc., in thorough order, to call out a competent number of militia, while the general Government was petitioned among other things to finish the incomplete fortifications surrounding the city, to construct such new ones as were necessary, and to augment the regular forces serving around New York. The committee offered to defray liberally a share in the cost of all this, and it proposed the construction, at its own cost and mainly by the work of the militia and of volunteer laborers, of two fortified camps,—one on Harlem Heights and the other at Brooklyn. It is with the latter of these we have here to deal in detail.

The fortifications were deemed a prime necessity, and even before the plans were ready voluntary offers of labor on the sites, either in the way of grading or levelling—labor that was ready to be of service in any way it could be utilized—began to pour in on the Committee as soon as their purposes were known. The construction of these fortifications was the feature by means of which the people testified to their determination to do what they could, to make what sacrifice of

time they could, to aid in the country's defense, seeing that all could not become soldiers and carry a musket.

So great were the number of proffers that it was soon seen a selection of the workers would have to be made. Trades, professions, societies, and associated bodies of all sorts applied for the honor of being permitted to labor as organizations. Men of wealth and day laborers were equally zealous of doing some work on the camps, old men were as desirous of serving as the young, and hundreds who for physical reasons were unable to do effective manual work asked to be allowed to pay a substitute for one day or more so that they, too, might have a direct share in helping along the defensive plans. The colored people were as ready to contribute their labor as were their white brethren, while firms, banks and corporations sent sums of money to the Committee to hire laborers in their name, each \$1.25 paid being regarded as equal to a day's work. Even the publication of the local newspapers was suspended one day to give the printers a chance to work with pick and shovel. It was, more apparently than ever, the old Revolutionary spirit alive again! The defenses which were the subject of such a popular outburst were designed by General J. W. Swift, one of the best military engineers of his time, who in 1830 constructed the railway from New Orleans to Lake Pontchartrain, a wonderful feat in engineering, and, in 1839, was chief engineer of the Harlem Railroad. His plan was in the main a reproduction of the line of defense of 1776. From Gowanus to the Wallabout, on the hills which then encircled Brooklyn, but are now in its very centre, was to be a line of forts connected by bastions. On Manhattan Island a line of forts and block-houses was to run from the Hudson to McGowan's Pass and across the Harlem Heights to the Sound, there to connect with the Long Island shore by means of a small fort on Mill Rock and a larger one on the high ground on the island coast. Other forts

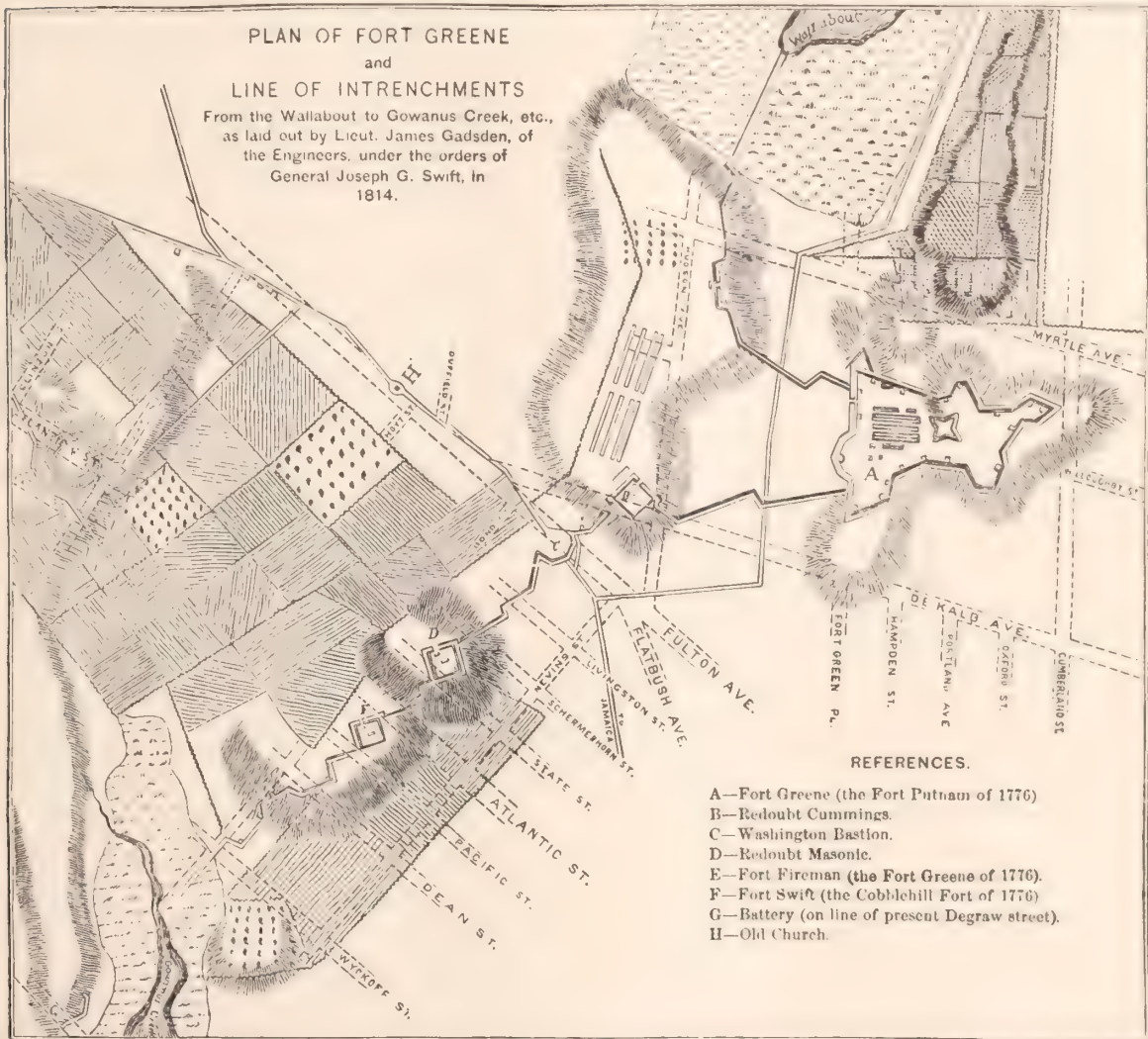
were to be erected so as to form a complete chain of defense. The line around Brooklyn was not so long drawn out as in 1776, but it was felt as being self-evident that if a landing on Long Island was effected at all the place to meet it was behind the forts and not in the open field, while the defenses in the harbor were relied upon to prevent a fleet from operating with an invading army. The tactical blunder which gave to the British the Battle of Brooklyn, the weakness of any one link in the chain of defense, was not to be repeated. It was known that any effort made on Long Island was in reality directed against its neighbor, Manhattan, and the defense of the nation's commercial capital was the object kept steadily in view, and so the attack, if it should come, was in the first instance to be met not in the open field, but with the assistance of forts and bastions and redoubts, and behind carefully watched and strongly fortified lines.

As soon as the plans were ready work commenced with a rush. It would almost seem that at first a "tour of work" on the fortifications was regarded in the light of a fad, of a good-natured holiday, and the "patriotic toil," as one of the orators of the time called it, proceeded the more eagerly on account of the novelty and fun, until the news was received that the British forces had captured Washington, burned the White House and other public buildings, and were in force before Baltimore. Then the holiday notion passed away and the people almost immediately realized that the labor they were engaged upon was of the most serious import, and that at any moment the utility and strength of the fortifications might be tested in the most grim and cruel fashion. Then all feeling passed except that of sturdy determination to complete the chain of defenses and give the invaders a warm reception. Work was even carried on by moonlight, and as the City Treasury was practically empty and nothing could be got from the general Government to aid the means of defence, New

THE CHAIN OF FORTS.

York City asked its people for a loan of \$1,000,000, and got it, although some argumentative citizens claimed that the authorities had no legal right to negotiate a loan for any such purpose. Such citizens always turn up with their arguments and objections at

Federal six-pounders and a heavy outburst of cheering commenced work with pick and shovel on the site of the old Fort Putnam of 1776, which was now to be known as Fort Greene. On the following day the work was continued by some artillery companies and



every stage of the nation's progress and are especially busy at every historical crisis.

The work on the fortifications was begun on the Brooklyn scheme first, on the morning of Aug. 9, 1814, when a company of artillery and a body of volunteers from New York crossed and under a salute from one of the

by bodies of tanners, curriers and plumbers and several hundred military exempts. On the 12th the medical students, wire workers, foundry workers, the members of the Hamilton Society and a number of artillerymen were at work, and on the 13th the New York cabinet-makers had an inning. The 15th,

being a Sunday, was observed as a day of rest. On the Monday following Brooklyn itself had a chance, for then Captain Laurence Brower's Company of Artillery, raised in that place and attached to the Thirteenth Regiment of Artillery, went over to the heights from Castle Garden, where they were stationed, and broke ground on the site of the old Cobble Hill Fort for a new stronghold which was at first proposed to be given the name of Fort Pitt; but that was changed when work was fairly begun to Fort Swift, in honor of the designer of the defenses. Brooklyn also came to the front on August 16th, when the work was done by local military companies under the command of Captains Stryker, Cowenhoven and Herbert, by the exempts of Bedford and the Wallabout and a fire company. On the 17th the people of Bushwick contributed their share. A contemporary newspaper said: 'The operations were commenced by a prayer from that venerable patriot, the Rev. Dr. John Basset, and an exhortation of zeal and unanimity in their country's cause, in defense of which they were then to be employed on the works which he had nearly forty years ago assisted in erecting. He continued encouraging them, and distributing refreshments throughout the day, and at evening returned with his flock satisfied with having set an example, impressive, admirable and commanding, the plaudits of an approving conscience and a grateful country.'

The scene of their work was Fort Swift. During the course of the day they held a meeting over which Dr. Basset presided, while Tunis Wortman acted as secretary, at which resolutions were passed, some of which, as they serve to show the spirit of the people, may be reproduced here:

Next to the duties which we owe to Heaven, those which belong to our country demand our chief attention. As a people we are pre-eminently blessed. Divine Providence has favored us with a free and excellent Constitution, and commands us to preserve it. In

defense of our liberties, property and lives, for the protection of our native land or the land of our choice, we this day solemnly step forward to take up arms for general preservation, and will not lay them down while danger exists.

In a crisis like the present no good citizen should consider himself exempt. The spirit of party should be lost in the generous ardor of universal patriotism. All who feel that they possess a country to defend and love, should step forward with a degree of zeal and alacrity, which shall teach the enemy and convince the world that America is a virtuous, great and united nation.

Resolved, That the citizens and inhabitants of the town of Bushwick, exempt from ordinary military duties, embody themselves into a volunteer Company for the protection and defense of Nassau (Long) and Manhattan Islands, under such officers as they shall select.

Resolved, That a committee of eleven citizens be appointed to request the assistance and co-operation of our fellow citizens of Long Island and to prepare and publish a suitable address for that purpose.

Resolved, That such committee be authorized and instructed to enter into such arrangements and to form such correspondence as may be necessary and proper to carry the objects of their meeting into effect, and that the committees consist of Major Francis Titus, Dr. Cornelius Lowe, John Skillman, Sen., Alexander Whaley, Sen., Peter Wyckoff, William Conselyea, Sen., Peter Meserole, Gysberte Bogert, Abraham Meserole, John Van Alst and Tunis Wortman.

On the 18th Flatbush contributed the laborers, on the 19th Flatlands was represented, and on the 20th Gravesend had its turn. On the same day a corps of some seventy volunteers from Paterson, N. J., under Col. Abraham Godwin, a Revolutionary hero whose son was then at the front, did a full "turn" of work on Fort Greene. In fact by this time the great importance not only to New York but to the nation at large of the defense of Manhattan Island was thoroughly understood and parties were daily sent from the valley of the Hudson and the interior of New Jersey to help along the good work.

On the 20th part of the fortifications received the first quota of troops in several companies of militia from the interior of the state who had been ordered into camp at Fort Greene. As they landed in Brooklyn in the evening they were met by a contingent of 1,200 of the Patriotic Sons of Erin, who had just completed a day's work. The good-natured Irishmen gave them a grand welcome, for they opened ranks and caused them to pass between, while we are told two bands of music discoursed martial airs and there was a general outburst of cheering while the militia and their baggage remained in sight. In fact nothing strikes the student of this episode in local history more than the enthusiasm and good nature which prevailed all through it. We do not read of a single quarrel or hear the echo of a single angry word in all its details,—apart, of course, from the epistles of the argumentative citizens already referred to. Party spirit for the moment may be said to have fled, political animosities to have been buried and race and other prejudices to have been obliterated while the people turned, as with one heart, one thought, to meet the advance of the common foe. All this found expression in many popular songs, one of which, by Samuel Woodworth, author of the "Old Oak-en Bucket," was sold for six cents and enjoyed a widespread popularity. It was entitled "The Patriotic Diggers," and some of its verses ran:

Johnny Bull, beware!
 Keep at proper distance,
 Else we'll make you stare
 At our firm resistance.
 Let alone the lads
 Who are freedom tasting;
 Recollect our dads
 Gave you once a basting.

Pick-axe, shovel, spade,
 Crowbar, hoe and barrow:
 Better not invade:
 Yankees have the morrow.

To protect our rights
 'Gainst your flints and triggers,
 See on Brooklyn Heights
 Our patriotic diggers.
 Man of every age,
 Color, rank, profession,
 Ardently engage
 Labor in succession.

Here the mason builds
 Freedom's shrine of glory,
 While the painter gilds
 The immortal story.
 Blacksmiths catch the flame,
 Grocers feel the spirit,
 Printers share the fame
 And record their merit.

Scholars leave their schools
 With their patriot teachers;
 Farmers seize their tools,
 Headed by their preachers.
 How they break the soil,—
 Brewers, butchers, bakers!
 Here the doctors toil,
 There the undertakers.

Plumbers, founders, dyers,
 Tinmen, turners, shavers,
 Sweepers, clerks and criers,
 Jewelers, engravers,
 Clothiers, drapers, players,
 Cartmen, hatters, tailors,
 Gaugers, sealers, weighers,
 Carpenters and sailors.

On August 24 the free colored people of Brooklyn and vicinity worked on the defenses, and on that date the people of that town and its vicinity took a more active part than ever in the work. The local committee of defense issued a call for the citizens to volunteer to perform a second tour of duty on the line of forts, and this met with a most hearty response. The 25th and 26th were what might now be called Brooklyn military days, and on the 27th Bushwick contributed its second tour. On the 29th the scene was enlivened by the arrival of three military companies from up the state—the Albany Riflemen, the Trojan Greens and the Montgomery Rangers—who took up their quarters in Fort Greene, where

the Flatbush people were contributing their second tour. On the 30th the people of Flatlands and Gravesend were both represented. Meanwhile every day bodies of workers continued to pass over the ferry from New York, and while a prodigious amount of work was done the news constantly arriving as to the progress of the war indicated that there was no time to lose and appeals were steadily made for laborers not only on the Brooklyn works but also on those at Harlem. A new trouble also confronted the committee,—that of adequately provisioning the soldiers in the camp and an appeal for fresh food, especially vegetables, was made. An appeal for fascines brought among other contributions 120 loads from Jamaica as a gift from the citizens of that town. The spokesman of the deputation which carried the welcome gift was the Rev. Dr. Jacob Schoonmaker, who for nearly half a century was the minister of the Dutch Reformed church in Jamaica and in Newtown. August closed with the appearance of a large number of ladies who worked for a few hours on the lines, but the feature of that day was the appearance of the Tammany delegation, 1,150 strong, who crossed the ferry and marched to the works with banners flying and bands playing. G. R. Horton, in his "History of the Tammany Society," tells us that the Tammany Society made a similar patriotic journey to Brooklyn several times while the works were being constructed.

On the 1st of September a new feature was introduced into the already strange story of the rise of these fortifications when the Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons for the first, and so far as time has developed the last, time, turned out to engage, "in the character of Masons," in what was practically a warlike enterprise. DeWitt Clinton, then Mayor of New York, was at that time Grand Master, Cadwallader Colden, the head of the local militia, was Grand Warden; Governor Tompkins was destined to be Grand Master, and General Jacob Morton had preceded Clinton as holder of that honor. Doubtless it was the influence

of these men that caused the twenty-one lodges in New York City on the morning of September 1, to assemble, clothed in regalia and with flags and staves to meet in the City Hall Park and escort the officers of the Grand Lodge to Brooklyn, where, having been joined by the local lodges, they all threw off their aprons and jewels and exchanged them for picks and shovels. After having diligently labored throughout the day the Freemasons returned at evening to the New York City Hall, where they were dismissed. On reaching Brooklyn they were joined by two lodges: Fortitude, still existing and now the oldest lodge of Masons in the borough; and Newtown Centre Lodge, a body which was founded in 1808 and was crushed out of existence in the Morgan persecution which so nearly wiped out the fraternity in the State. The visit of the Masonic fraternity aroused much local pride, and they had worked so well that the place upon which they had labored, a part of the old Revolutionary Fort Greene, was at once given the name of Fort Masonic. It is difficult to estimate the number who took part in the unique Masonic experience, but probably it was in the neighborhood of 500. The reception their labors met with so pleased the "Sons of Light" that at a meeting of the Grand Lodge, on September 7, the giving of another day's labor to Fort Masonic was resolved upon and this was faithfully performed on the 19th.

On September 3d "the Columbian" reported: "Nearly 800 citizens of Newark transported in a line of wagons nearly covering the causeway on the road reached Paulus Hook Ferry, crossed the North River and passed through the city to Brooklyn Ferry before 1 o'clock this morning. They had several bands of wind and military music, with flags and a label on each hat reading "Don't give up the soil," and proceeded to work on the fortification at Brooklyn with an alacrity truly admirable and commendable. Such an instance of patriotic enthusiasm in the inhabitants of a neighboring State, from a distance of seven miles, cannot be too highly appre-



DEWITT CLINTON.

ciated or recorded in terms too honorable to the zeal and disinterestedness of our fellow citizens of New Jersey."

All through the building of the fortifications nothing was more gratifying to those concerned than the aid received from the churches. Almost every day work was commenced in some part of the long line, at least, with a prayer, and clergymen wielded a pick or trundled a barrow with as much zeal, if not with as much effectiveness, as an ordinary outdoor laborer. On one day the members of the Mulberry Street Baptist Church, of which the Rev. Archibald Maclay, a sturdy Scotch Highlander and a stanch lover of liberty, both civil and religious, was then and long afterward minister, did a most gratifying amount of work, and their clerical leader did not the least. It was not until November that the preparations were regarded on the Brooklyn side as being practically completed,—completed, that is, so far as the necessity for volunteer labor was concerned, and the continuance of work on the fortifications was left to the care of the constituted authorities and the military forces; but while the trouble lasted, until the news came that peace had been signed, those who still toiled knew that behind them stood ready a determined and dauntless people prepared at a moment's notice to fill up any breach or perform whatever service might be demanded of them in defense of their rights and their homes.

As each section of the Brooklyn fortifications was completed Governor Tompkins began sending on what troops he could to take possession; but it was not until September had advanced a week or ten days that troops were present in strength at all equal to what the long line of fortifications actually required for its adequate defense, or the artillery was armed in proper shape to offer effective defiance to an invader. As might be expected, the Long Island militia were present in force, brigaded under General Johnson, of Brooklyn.

But the fortifications, happily, were destined never to be tested. They were hardly

completed when it began to be seen that the peace negotiations were most likely to be successful, and all military movements on land, in the northern section of the country at any rate, ceased, and only the cruisers at sea continued peppering at each other wherever they met. Peace was formally brought about by treaty at Ghent, on December 24, 1814, but it was not until February 18th that it was ratified. In those days, of course, news traveled slowly, and to that is due the opportunity which gave General Jackson his title to the "Hero of New Orleans" when he defended that city from a determined attack on January 8, 1815. Even after the treaty was ratified the war was still carried on at sea and the "Constitution" added to the list of victims and her roll of prizes, and "The Hornet" closed a chapter in naval warfare full of glorious incidents for its history in connection with the story of the United States by capturing the "Penguin."

Still these were but incidents, and with the proclamation of peace came jubilation throughout the land, and in no section was that jubilation more heartfelt and sincere than in the district of which Manhattan Island was the center and which had so lately been seriously threatened. A day of thanksgiving was proclaimed. The bells which had been in readiness to rouse the citizens now united in a merry peal, the death-dealing snap of the musket was replaced by the jollier rattle of the fire-cracker and the ping of the blank cartridge; the cannon which frowned on Brooklyn Heights and the heights of Harlem, and from fort and block-house on the water front, now boomed in recognition of peace; and on the hills of Gowanus bonfires blazed and towns and villages were illuminated. The citizen soldiery, America's strength and pride, began returning to their places in the industrial walks of life, and by the following June, when Commodore Stewart in the gallant "Constitution" sailed into the New York Harbor after a cruise which added much to the well-earned honors of the American navy, he was received

with the plaudits and praises he so richly deserved; but the plaudits were those of a people who had already unbent from all thought of war and were at peace with the world.

The Long Island hero of the war of 1812 was undoubtedly Brigadier General Jeremiah Johnson, and although his later active labors in Brooklyn would warrant him a place among the memories of the prominent citizens of that borough, he deserves to be remembered here in connection with the great service he rendered his country at a most critical period in her affairs. He was descended from Jan Barentse Van Driest, a carpenter by trade, who in 1658 emigrated from Sutphen, in Gelderland. We know nothing of his movements until 1672, when he turns up as a resident of Flatbush. He evidently prospered, for in 1666 he bought some land at Gravesend, and in 1674 extended his holdings by buying the plantation lot and building which belonged to Daniel Morgan. In 1679 he married the daughter, Janet, of William Jansen Van Barkeloo, and died some time prior to 1697. One of his sons, Barent Janse, lived in Gravesend and carried on farming, while another was a merchant in New York, and it seems to have been from this Barent that the name of Johnson was adopted as the family cognomen. The family gradually spread over Gravesend and Brooklyn, and appear to have always stood well in the community, although the records show that at least one was unfortunate as a merchant and had to depend in the end upon the assistance of his relatives. Business, like war, has its ups and downs, its varying fortunes. General Jeremiah Johnson was fourth in descent from Jan Barentsen Van Driest, and we deem it a privilege to reproduce here the sketch of his life, written by Dr. Henry R. Stiles and published in that author's "History of Brooklyn:"

His father, Barent Johnson, born in 1740, was distinguished as an active patriot during the Revolutionary struggle. He was encamped, in command of a portion of the Kings county militia, at Harlem in 1776, and in the following year was captured by the British, and only obtained his parole (from General Howe)

through the kind interposition of a Masonic brother. In order to help on the cause to which he was devoted he shrank not from personal and pecuniary risks, but suggested loans from friends in his county to the American government; and himself set the example by loaning, first \$3,500, and afterward sums amounting to \$5,000, all the security for which was a simple private receipt, given, too, in time of exceeding peril and discouragement—a noble and memorable deed. Jeremiah, his son, was born January 23, 1766; was, at the time of the breaking out of the war, in his eleventh year, and old enough to understand the full meaning of passing events. That these stirring scenes made an indelible impression upon his mind and character is evident from the fact that his reminiscences, descriptions, maps, etc., have since formed the largest and certainly the most valuable portion of the Revolutionary lore of Kings county handed down to our day, and has been largely drawn upon by every local and general historian of Long Island.

His father dying before the peace, young Johnson was thrown the more upon himself; and, though the times were very unfavorable to regular education, he improved his opportunities as he was able; attended night schools; taught himself, and gradually disciplined and developed the elements of a manly, self-made and self-reliant character. Then, as a good, quiet citizen, he lived upon his farm in faithful industry; married (1) Abigail, daughter of Rem. Remsen, in 1787, who died in 1788; (2), Sarah, daughter of Teunis Rapalye, in 1791, who died in 1825. He had ten children (two sons Barnet and Jeromus; and two daughters, Sarah Anne, married to Nicholas Wyckoff, and Susanna, married to Lambert Wyckoff), all of whom well sustain the parental reputation of benevolence and usefulness, patronizing every worthy cause. The old homestead was taken down and the fine substantial mansion, now occupied by the family, was erected near the same spot, in 1801. In 1796 he became a trustee of the town of Brooklyn, an office which he held for twenty years. Naturally of a social turn, of benevolent impulses, and public spirited withal, and from his very character, position and associations, he became early connected with public affairs. From 1800 until about 1840 he was a supervisor of the town, during a large portion of which time he was chairman of the board. In 1808 and in 1809 he represented Kings county in the State Assembly. He took an active part, also, in

military matters. During the war with Great Britain, from 1812 to 1815, he was at first only a junior captain; but, when one was solicited to go out in command on the frontier, others declining, he volunteered for a dangerous duty, and so took precedence by consent, and early became colonel. Meanwhile he was very active in military affairs, and held himself ready at call. He was then honored with a brigadier-general's commission, and was in the command (of the 22d Brigade of Infantry, numbering 1,750 men) at Fort Greene, in Brooklyn, for three months. Whilst there he was conspicuous for his soldier-like ability; proved himself an excellent disciplinarian; and was a great favorite with officers and privates. He was fortunate, as well, for, in that three months' time, no one of his soldiers died. After the peace he was promoted to be a major-general, an office which he held during his life, though not in actual command of a division.

When (in 1816) Brooklyn became a village his residence was left outside of the village bounds, and, of course, he could not (except by his own influence in a private capacity, which he ever largely exercised) participate in its public affairs; but, in 1835, the city charter was obtained, and the bounds included the 8th and 9th wards, which brought his home again within the lines. In 1837 he was elected mayor of the city of Brooklyn, and re-elected in 1838 and 1839. As a public officer he was faithful, prompt and indefatigable, while his punctuality was proverbial. In 1840, and again in 1841, he was elected again a member of the State Legislature. At one time, also, he was judge of the Common Pleas. In 1848 he was chosen the first president of the St. Nicholas Society of Nassau Island, an office which he held until his death. In 1849 he was unanimously elected an honorary member of the American Institute (having been a member since 1836), and at the time of his death was chairman of its board of agriculture. As chairman of this committee he was quite active in urging to its final passage the act for the encouragement of agriculture in the State of New York.

Besides all these there was hardly an occasional or incidental duty in the business of agriculture, of education, of improvements, of reference, of management, to which he was not summoned, by reason of his business capacity and experience, as well as the reputation and high confidence he maintained amidst the community. He made no pretense to litera-

ture, and seldom wrote anything for the public eye; he nevertheless wielded an efficient pen, when his feelings were aroused, or his sense of justice and propriety were violated by official malpractices or the wrong-doing of others. He was fond of putting down memoranda and scraps of history, and interesting facts which his observation and experience had gathered; though in an incidental way, rather as materials for a more labored attempt. Well acquainted with the language of Holland, he was fond of making translations from its writers; as, for example, his excellent translation of Von der Donk's "History of New Netherland." Indeed, there has not been an author meditating a work upon Long Island, or publishing one, who has not conferred with General Jeremiah Johnson, or who has not borrowed and used his communications and his notes, and made grateful mention of him and his assistance. He was a modest, consistent, obedient, habitual, conforming Christian. He belonged to the old Dutch Reformed congregation in Brooklyn. In that congregation for fifty years he was a communicant; and a standing member of the consistory, in and out, alternating, according to the parish method, continually; and the clerk of its consistory for forty years, until his resignation in 1843. General Johnson was remarkably active, prompt, decided; never idle; of indefatigable industry; kindly to all, warm-hearted and affectionate; generous in all his instincts, sympathizing with the young. He was of a social, genial mood; was fond of his pipe, even to the last, and handled it from his seventeenth year to within a quarter of an hour of his death. He was fond of his gun, of walking, and of manly exercise; from youth up an early riser, and early to bed. His free, easy, unreserved manners made him ever a welcome and delightful guest. He could give information upon the gravest and most important themes; he could sympathize with the most common. If there was an ancient tree, or stump, connected with some memorial of the past, he knew of it, and he was the one to mark it by a monumental stone. His perception was quick and clear, and his tact admirable; and well nigh to the last his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated, and his voice continued full and strong. His death, which occurred on the 20th of October, 1852, was in harmony with his life—calm, trustful and serene—and caused a widespread and profound sensation of sorrow throughout the city of Brooklyn.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE STORY OF EDUCATIONAL PROGRESS.

THE people of Long Island have ever been proud of the educational privileges they have placed before the children in their midst. The Dutch were stanch believers in the benefits of careful religious and moral training to the young, and the schoolmaster was as essential in their communities at home and abroad as the minister. Wherever a Dutch church was erected a school-house was not far away, and in small communities, where the voice of the ordained preacher could only be heard at intervals, the schoolmaster was supposed to call the people together for public worship, or at least to hear a portion of the Sacred Book read and a word of prayer spoken. The early English authorities, while not so thoroughgoing in their educational ideas as the Dutch, did not neglect the school. As the island advanced in population and wealth so did the facilities for education increase. Academies were founded which in other parts of the country would have been dubbed colleges, and which conferred educational privileges which are generally associated with the highest institutions of learning, and the fame of these academies spread over the entire country. When at length the whole question of education was removed from private hands and became the subject of municipal or township care, when pedagogy itself became a study and a feature of professional life, we find a constant striving all over the island to introduce into every school the newest and most approved methods, and attain the highest possi-

ble results. The position of the teacher was steadily advanced under all these changes until, instead of being virtually a servant to the minister, a sort of generally handy man, he became a recognized member of the professional class.

Long Island has never possessed a university, although the desirability of such an institution has several times been discussed; but her system of elementary and academic education has just stopped short of what are regarded in modern times as university requirements, and the public-school system of Brooklyn has long been regarded as the highest development of American pedagogics.

Much doubt seems to prevail as to who was the first schoolmaster on Long Island. The honor of being the scene of his operations seems to belong to Flatbush; that much, apparently, has been happily settled. Two antiquaries of such local fame as Dr. Strong and Teunis G. Bergen, writing over a generation apart, differed as to the personality of the earliest preceptor. Strong (*History of Flatbush*, page 109) awarded the honor to Adrien Hegeman, and the dates of his occupancy of the office as 1659 to 1671. Later research has shown these dates to be wrong, and Dr. Stiles suggests in their stead 1653 or 1654 to 1660, which, were they anything but mere suggestion, would give the honor unquestionably to Flatbush. Hegeman, the common ancestor of that now numerous family, came here from Amsterdam about 1650 and took up his residence at first in New Amsterdam. In 1654

he was a magistrate of Flatbush, and in 1661 schout fiscal of the five Dutch towns; and he held other public offices, besides being described as an auctioneer. He died in 1672, leaving a family of eight sons and one daughter, Elizabeth, who married in 1684 Tobias Ten Eyck.

Hegeman appears to have been a man of wealth, and it is impossible to conceive of his performing the full duties of schoolmaster, which, as we shall see, included much that were rather servile in their nature. Besides, the records nowhere speak of him as holding minute as to the offices held by him. It is possible, therefore, that he simply performed a part of the duties which fell to the lot of a schoolmaster until a regular and full appointment was made. This was in 1660, when Reynier Van Giesen was installed. Bergen (*Genealogy of Kings County*) says: "Reynier Bastiaensen Van Giessen (probably from Giesen, a village in North Brabant) married Dirkje Cornelis, and entered into an agreement, June 6, 1660, with the Magistrate of Flatbush and the Consistory of the Reformed Dutch Church of said place, to teach school, perform the duties of court messenger, to ring the bell, perform the duties of precentor, attend to the burial of the dead and all that was necessary and proper in the premises, for an annual salary of 200 florins, exclusive of perquisites. This agreement was signed by Adrian Hegeman, William Jacobse Van Boerum, Elbert Elbertson, Jan Snediker, Jan Strycker and Peter Cornelise, probably as the local Magistrates, and by Johannes Theodorus Polhemus, Jan Snediker, Jan Strycker and William Jacobse Van Boerum as the Consistory of the Church. Dr. Strong omits Van Giesen from his record, but the above agreement shows this to be an error, and that Van Giesen was probably the first schoolmaster." There seems no doubt that Mr. Bergen's conclusion was correct. Van Giesen held the office until 1663, when he removed to Bergen county, New Jersey, and Pilgrom Clocq was appointed schoolmaster in his stead, continu-

ing as such until 1671. From the agreement made with the latter we find that the Consistory agreed to pay one-quarter of his annual salary of 200 guilders, and that his perquisites included 2 guilders for teaching the alphabet, 2 guilders, 10 stivers, for teaching spelling, 3 guilders for teaching reading, and 5 guilders for teaching writing, payable by each scholar.

Whatever reliance may be placed on the claims of Flatbush, there seems no doubt that Huntington was a close second to it, if not actually first, in the appointment of a schoolmaster. It appears from the town records that in 1657 an agreement was made "at a corte or town meeting betwixt the inhabitants of the Towne of Huntington, of the one partie, and Jonas Houldsworth, of the other partie," by which Jonas was "to schoole such persons or children as shall be put to him for that end by ye said inhabitants" for a term of four years. For this service the "inhabitants doth likewise engage themselves to pay unto ye said Jonas Houldsworth twenty-five pounds (English accompt) and his diet the first year, and also to allow him what more may come in by ye schooling of any that come from other parts. The said twenty-five pounds is to be paid ye said Jonas as followeth: Three pounds twelve shillings in butter at six pence ye pound, and seven pounds two shillings in good well-sized merchantable wampum, that is well strung or strand, or in such commodities that will suit him for clothing. These to be paid him by the first of October, and three pounds twelve shillings in corne, one-half in wheat and ye other in Indian at three and five shillings ye bushel (provided it be good and merchantable) to be paid by ye first of March. Also ten pounds fourteen shillings in well thriving young cattle that shall then be betwixt two and four years old, one-half being in the steare kind—these to be delivered him when the yeare is expired." For the second and third year his pay was to be £35, and for the fourth £40, the amounts being payable after the fashion of the first year. In

addition to his pay, the inhabitants were to provide him with a suitable house, and in the proper season the children were to bring with them to school the necessary fire-wood. All these agreements seem to have been faithfully kept, the house was provided, and the entire outfit and the salary were defrayed by a tax laid upon the "inhabitants." It was a free school in the fullest acceptance of the phrase.

In 1661 Brooklyn received its first teacher in Carl de Bevoise, who, Bergen says, emigrated from Leyden in 1659, and after a short stay in New Amsterdam removed to Breuckelen, where in 1687 he took the oath of allegiance. He was the common ancestor of the now widespread and influential De Bevoise family. His duties as schoolmaster were much the same as those of his confrere at Flatbush, as is evident from the following petition, dated July 4, 1661, in which the Brooklyn folks asked help from the Provincial authorities in the way of paying him a proper salary:

To the Right Honorable Director General and Council of New Netherland:

The Schout and Schepens of the Court of Breuckelen respectfully represent that they found it necessary that a Court Messenger was required for the Schepens' Chamber, to be occasionally employed in the village of Breuckelen and all around where he may be needed, as well to serve summons as also to conduct the service of the church and to sing on Sundays; to take charge of the school, dig graves, etc., ring the bell and perform whatever else may be required. Therefore the petitioners, with your Honor's approbation, have thought proper to accept for so highly necessary an office a suitable person who is now come before them, one Carel Van Bevois, to whom they have hereby appropriated a sum of 150 guilders, besides a free dwelling; and whereas the petitioners are apprehensive that the aforesaid C. Bevois would not and cannot do the work for the sum aforesaid, and the petitioners are not able to promise him any more, therefore the petitioners, with all humble and proper reverence, request your Honors to be pleased to lend them a helping hand, in order thus to receive the needful assistance.

Herewith awaiting your Honors' kind and favorable answer, and commending ourselves,

Honorable, wise, prudent, and most discreet Gentlemen, to your favor, we pray for your Honors God's protection, together with a happy and prosperous administration unto salvation. Your Honors' servants and subjects.

The Schouts and Schepens of the village aforesaid, by order of the same,

ADRIAN HEGEMAN,
Secretary.

In answer to the above the "Honorable, wise, prudent and most discreet gentlemen" agreed to pay the teacher, grave-digger, etc., fifty guilders a year in wampum; and as he was afterward appointed reader "and Secretary to the Town Clerk," his remuneration in time became fairly respectable. De Bevoise appears to have been a personal protege of Governor Stuyvesant, and this probably accounts for his success both with the local and the Provincial authorities. From the agreement made in 1682 with Johannes Van Eckelen who was then appointed schoolmaster of Flatbush, we learn more of the duties of these early preceptors. Eckelen, it may be said, resided at Albany before settling on Long Island, and continued to act as schoolmaster until 1706, probably the date of his death. In 1698 he was appointed clerk of the county.

The agreement referred to reads:

I. The school shall begin at 8 o'clock in the morning and go out at 11 o'clock. It shall begin again at 1 o'clock and end at 4 o'clock. The bell shall be rung before the school begins.

II. When the school opens, one of the children shall read the morning prayer, as it stands in the catechism, and close with the prayer before dinner. In the afternoon it shall begin with the prayer after dinner and close with the evening prayer. The evening school shall begin with the Lord's Prayer, and close by singing a Psalm.

III. He shall instruct the children in the common prayers and the questions and answers of the catechism on Wednesdays and Saturdays, to enable them to say their catechism on Sunday afternoons in the church before the afternoon service, otherwise on the Monday following, at which the schoolmaster shall be present. He shall demean himself

patiently and friendly toward the children in their instruction, and be active and attentive to their improvement.

IV. He shall be bound to keep his school nine months in succession, from September to June, one year with another, or the like period of time for a year, according to the agreement with his predecessor; he shall, however, keep the school nine months, and always be present himself.

He shall be chorister of the church, ring the bell three times before service, and read a chapter of the Bible in the church between the second and third ringing of the bell; after the third ringing he shall read the Ten Commandments and the twelve Articles of Faith, and then set the Psalm. In the afternoon, after the third ringing of the bell, he shall read a short chapter, or one of the Psalms of David, as the congregation are assembling. Afterward he shall again set the Psalm.

When the minister shall preach at Brooklyn or New Utrecht he shall be bound to read twice before the congregation a sermon from the book used for the purpose. The afternoon sermon will be on the catechism of Dr. Vander Hagen, and thus he will follow the turns of the minister. He shall hear the children recite the questions and answers of the catechism on that Sunday, and he shall instruct them. When the minister preaches at Flatlands he shall perform a like service.

He shall provide a basin of water for the baptism, for which he shall receive twelve stuyvers in wampum for every baptism from the parents or sponsors. He shall furnish the minister, in writing, the names and ages of the children to be baptized, together with the names of the parents and sponsors; he shall also serve as a messenger from the consistory.

He shall give the funeral invitations and toll the bells, for which services he shall receive, for persons of fifteen years of age and upward, twelve guilders; and for persons under fifteen, eight guilders. If he shall invite out of the town he shall receive three additional guilders for every town. If he shall cross the river to New York he shall have four guilders more.

He shall receive for a speller or reader in the day school three guilders for a quarter, and for a writer four. In the evening school he shall receive for a speller or reader four guilders, and five guilders for a writer per quarter.

The residue of his salary shall be four hundred guilders in wheat, of wampum value, deliverable at Brooklyn ferry, and for his service from October to May 234 guilders in wheat, at the same place, with the dwelling, pasturages and meadow appertaining to the school.

These regulations were those which practically, with the trifling local variations, prevailed in the early schools all over Long Island. The great differences between them and their modern successors was that in them moral and religious training were the most important features, while in our day secular education in the public schools takes precedence of all else.

The schoolmaster was little better than an inferior assistant to the minister, "the minister's man," as the kaleyad novelists and the Scotch story tellers call him; and while, as in Brooklyn, he gradually emerged from the status of being a grave-digger and local handy man, he continued until long after the Revolution was over to eke out his salary as teacher by assuming various humble duties.

It is impossible to estimate very clearly the value of these schools in the way of secular training. That they were the means of instilling into the minds and hearts of several generations of Long Islanders a knowledge of God and His Commandments, a reverence for the Scriptures and all things sacred, and won for the people of the island most deservedly a reputation for being a God-fearing, honest, moral and reliable race, is certain; but they certainly failed to make the mass educated, which in modern times we would interpret as what was most to be desired in any system of education. The letters and manuscripts of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries which have come down to us show equally a sovereign contempt for spelling and capitalization; grammar was an unknown quantity, and punctuation a mystery beyond human ken. We question if, say in 1750, a boy on Long Island could be found who would be able to define the boundaries of the province in which

he lived, or who could repeat the names of a dozen men outside of his own circle of acquaintances or tell the whereabouts of a dozen places in the country apart from the section in which his own days were spent. Of history he knew nothing beyond a few bare facts concerning Holland or England, which came to him more in the form of traditions than as actual incidents. He took his notions of civil government from his church, and the minister was his guide, philosopher and friend, at once his spiritual and his secular director, his prayer-book and his encyclopedia. As he advanced in life his leading idea about government was that it was good when it interfered the least with his movements and cost the smallest possible amount in taxes. Whatever else their "High Mightinesses" or the "Lord Protector" might do, all would go well when such conditions prevailed. They could read Kieft's proclamations or bear the fussiness of Stuyvesant with equanimity; but the increase of taxes under a Dutch or an English ruler caused trouble, and a rumor that the old church was to be sacrificed to that of England gave the first start to the idea of political freedom.

The educational records prior to the Revolution, apart from such church schools, as they may be called, of which we have been writing, are very meager. A school was established in Bushwick as early as 1661; and it continued in existence until replaced in almost modern times by another similar institution on its site.

In 1703 the Society of Friends decided to build a school in Flushing, and at once set about erecting a suitable building "about Richard Griffin's lot, which is near the center of the town," and Thomas Makins was appointed teacher. In 1721 there was a school at Bedford Corners, which for some sixty years was taught by John Vandervoort, who was imprisoned during the Revolution. It lasted until about 1812. In 1749 a school was kept at the Ferry by John Clark, who described himself very aptly as a "philomath," and at whose establishment "reading, writing, vulgar and

decimal arithmetic, the extraction of the square and cube root, navigation and surveying" were taught—a thoroughly practical and satisfactory selection of studies, it seems to us, for the time.

In 1763 it was advertised that several of the land owners, including John Rapalye, who afterward lost his estate on account of his Tory principles, Jacob Sebring and Aris Remsen had hired Punderson Ansten, A. B., of Yale College, to teach Greek and Latin at the Ferry; but whether in the same establishment then or formerly presided over by Philomath Clark is not stated. In 1773 an advertisement tells us that Latin and Greek were taught at the Flatbush Grammar School, of which John Copp was then master. About 1770 a school was established on the old Gowanus road, near Forty-fourth street, which remained in active existence for many years. In 1775 a school was opened in the Wallabout district, but the teacher, Elipah Freeman Paine, was too much of a patriot to wield a ferrule when he might shoulder a musket, so he soon left the school and joined the Continental army at Boston. In 1778 an effort to revive the school was made when a teacher was advertised for to teach reading, writing and arithmetic. "Immediately prior to the Revolutionary War," says Gabriel Furman in his "Notes" (1824), "that part of the town of Brooklyn which is now comprised in the bounds of the village and for some distance without those bounds, supported but one school, of nineteen scholars, five of whom were of the family of Mr. Andrew Patchen. The school was situated on the hill, on property that was then owned by Isaac Horsfield (between Doughty and Willow, Hicks and Columbia streets), but now belongs to the heirs of Cary Ludlow, deceased. The teacher was Benjamin Brown, a stanch Whig from Connecticut."

Even when the Revolutionary struggle was fought and won it is impossible to say that education, secular education, had advanced much beyond the 1750 stage on Long Island. The children at school still plodded on much

as before, wrestling with moral and religious questions, but the political upheaval had taught the people much more. The agitation and discussion prior to the outbreak of hostilities had brought to their knowledge ancient and modern history, an understanding of the principles of government and a full realization of the drift of human progress. It brought them face to face with the rest of the world, and

year to Erasmus Hall, at Flatbush, although it did not actually begin its work until some two years later. General William Floyd, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, presided at the meeting at which Clinton Academy was called into being; but its real founder, the prime figure in the movement for its establishment, was the Rev. Dr. Samuel Buel, a native of Coventry, Connecticut, and



THE HOWARD PAYNE COTTAGE, AT EASTHAMPTON, L. I.

showed what had to be accomplished, so that they might hold their own in the national struggle for existence which set in as soon as peace was declared and liberty was acknowledged, in 1784.

The change for the better came in, however, not long after the sword was sheathed. In 1784 Clinton Academy at Easthampton, the first institution incorporated by the Regents of the State of New York, was built and organized, and in 1787 it received its charter. A similar document was issued in the same

a graduate of Yale, who was the minister of the Presbyterian Church at Easthampton from September 16, 1746, until his death, July 19, 1798,—a period of near fifty-two years. The academy was divided into two departments,—classics and English and writing,—and the first master of the latter department was William Payne, the father of John Howard Payne, the author of the "world-song" of "Home, Sweet Home," who spent several years of his early life in Easthampton. Thompson gives Payne the highest praise for his ability as a

teacher, and credits him with having started the practical work of the institution on the high plane which led to its prosperity and fame. For a long time it held the leading position among Long Island's seminaries, and it received pupils from widely distant parts of the country. Toward the middle of the century just passed, however, its attendance began to fall off, other institutions equal in educational merit and with more modern notions and appliances gradually forced it to become merely a local institution and slowly but surely to lose its hold even in its humble capacity as a village school, until it became more valuable as a relic of the past than as a developer of the knowledge and thought and manners and aspirations of youth. Yet in its time it performed a grand service, many men of more than local celebrity received part, at least, of their educational training within its walls, and its influence on the moral and intellectual progress of Suffolk county was great beyond measure.

The credit of founding Erasmus Hall at Flatbush mainly belongs to another zealous minister of the Gospel, the Rev. Dr. John H. Livingston. As this institution approached more nearly to collegiate rank than any other on Long Island, and holds a much higher place to-day as a place of learning than many more-talked-about western colleges and universities, we may be permitted to examine its early history at some length.

Dr. Livingston was a descendant of the old patroon and a member of a family which gives to New York many of its brightest names. He was born at Poughkeepsie in 1746, was graduated at Yale in 1762, and afterward studied for the ministry at Utrecht. Throughout his career he was a stanch and uncompromising advocate of American independence in all things, and this he showed even as early in life as when in Holland studying for his life work; for he is credited with securing the independence of the Reformed Church in America from the Classis at Amsterdam.

Returning to New York in 1770, he took

up the pastorate of the North Dutch Church on William street, near Fulton street. His ministry was interrupted by the British occupation of New York, but he spent the interval in preaching in various parts of the State. In 1784 he was appointed professor of theology, and it was this appointment which led to the establishment of Erasmus Hall. It was not until 1786, however, that a building was erected in which the proposed work could be carried on. The sum of £915 had been raised for the purpose, mainly by citizens of Flatbush, and



REV. DR. JOHN H. LIVINGSTON.

a structure of one hundred feet front and thirty-six feet in depth was erected. The local church lent its aid, and, besides securing to the institution, practically free of cost, the land on which it stood, awarded it other practical aid. But the movement was not regarded by the entire population of Flatbush with placid approval; many indeed of the oldest and most influential of the residents were really and emphatically opposed to its location in their midst; and it is curious that while their arguments seem crude and silly their conclusions were in many ways amply sustained. How-

ever, the friends of the institution persevered and were rewarded by receiving from the Regents of the State University on November 20, 1787, a deed of incorporation. The incorporators named were John Vanderbilt, Walter Minto, Peter Lefferts, Johannes E. Lot, Aquilla Giles, Cornelius Vanderveer, George Martense, Jacob Lefferts, W. B. Gifford, Hendrick Suydam, John J. Vanderbilt, Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, Philip Nagel, Peter Cornell, Rev. John H. Livingston, D. D., James Wilson, Sam. Provost, John Mason and Comfort Sands.

The first principal was Dr. Walter Minto, a native of Scotland, who was born at Coldenham December 6, 1753, and for a time was a tutor in the family of George Johnson, M. P., one of the Commissioners who came here in the interests of peace in 1778. Minto settled in the United States in 1786. He did not hold his connection with the Hall very long, for at the close of 1787 he was called to the chair of mathematics at Princeton College and continued in that position until his death, in 1796. He was the author of several erudite scientific works, now practically forgotten. The opening exhibition of the school was held on September 27, 1787, and was attended by Governor Clinton and many men prominent in the affairs of the State.

From the first it was aimed that the institution should take a high position as a seat of learning, and this was emphasized in its being named after Desiderius Erasmus, the greatest exponent of literature and learning which the old Netherlands had produced. When Dr. Livingston was chosen as principal a corps of able teachers was engaged, while the course of study as laid out was far in advance of any other then to be found in such institutions. Dr. Livingston hoped to make Erasmus Hall one of the recognized educational centers of the then young republic, and this hope seemed about to be fully realized in 1794, when the Dutch Reformed Church resolved to establish its Theological Seminary in Erasmus Hall, and in connection with it.

and under the direction of Dr. Livingston. But this arrangement lasted only for a few years, and then the Theological Seminary was removed to New Brunswick, New Jersey, where it still remains. The following story of the fortunes of the Hall after that is from the pen of Dr. Stiles:

Rev. Dr. Livingston resigned in 1792, and Dr. Wilson was chosen in his place. He held the position of Principal, though employed also as Classical Professor at Columbia College, until 1804. This he was enabled to do by employing experienced men as his teachers. Rev. Peter Lowe was appointed to succeed Dr. Wilson as Principal, and remained until his death in 1818. Dr. Strong states that in 1797, and again in 1809, the trustees sought, but did not obtain, from the legislature, the privilege of raising £1,200 by lottery, in order to liquidate the debt. The plan adopted by the trustees in former days was to employ some prominent man as principal, and then engage experienced teachers who should serve under him. The principal exerted merely a governing power, and participated only to a very limited degree in the work of teaching. In later years the principal has acted also as the first teacher, and employs experienced assistants. Mr. Albert Oblenis was employed while Rev. Mr. Lowe was principal, as first teacher. Next we find the name of Joab Cooper, in 1806, the author of Cooper's Virgil, so well known as a text book in the schools and colleges, for so many years. He remained for two years and was succeeded by Mr. Valentine Derry, upon whose resignation, in 1809, Mr. Richard Whyte Thompson was appointed first teacher. He resigned in 1814, and was followed by William Thayre, appointed in December, 1814. He remained, however, only a part of a year, when the trustees called Mr. William Ironsides. In 1816 Mr. Joab Cooper was again appointed, but resigned at the end of the year. The position was held for the next two years by Mr. Andrew Craig. Upon the death of the Principal, Rev. Peter Lowe, and the resignation of Mr. Craig, due to failing health, the trustees appointed, in August, 1818, the Rev. Joseph Penney, as Principal. He was the first Principal who resided at the Hall and had charge of the classes. He employed as assistant Rev. John Mulligan. They held the position until 1821, when Rev.

Timothy Clowes, D. D., accepted the office. In 1823 Mr. Jonathan Kellogg became Principal. Under his administration the academy flourished greatly; he made many changes in methods of teaching, and in the arrangements about the school-rooms. The trustees in 1826-27 built a large wing, 50 by 25 feet, for additional school-rooms, on the northeast corner of the building, at a cost of \$1,500. Mr. Kellogg also made great improvements upon the exterior of the academy, and in the appearance of the grounds. Nearly all of the beautiful trees which now adorn the grounds

of the Albany Academy, Professor in the Theological Seminary at New Brunswick, and President of Rutgers College. During the time Dr. Campbell was Principal the Regents, in 1835, determined to establish a department for the instruction of common-school teachers in each of the eight senatorial districts. Erasmus Hall was chosen for the Southern District. High price of board, and other agencies, hindered the success of the plan in relation to Erasmus Hall, and only two applications were received. Consequently, in 1836, the trustees resigned the trust, and



ERASMUS HALL IN 1845.

were planted by him. Matters did not, however, proceed satisfactorily after a few years; and, because of intemperance, he was called upon, in 1834, to resign the position. In May, 1834, the trustees appointed Rev. William H. Campbell, who had for some time taught a select school in the village, as Principal. "Through his superior qualifications as teacher he not only gave the highest satisfaction, but also infused in the hearts of the inhabitants an earnest desire for a liberal education to a degree which had never before existed." Dr. Campbell remained until 1839, when ill health forced him to resign; and he afterward occupied the position of Principal

of the Salem Academy, in Washington county, was chosen by the Regents.

In May, 1839, Rev. Dr. Penney, who, since his resignation in 1821, had held the position of President of Hamilton College, returned to Flatbush and succeeded Dr. Campbell as Principal, which position he held until November 1, 1841, when Mr. James Ferguson, A. M., was chosen. In June, 1843, he resigned the position, and the trustees appointed Rev. Richard D. Van Kleeck as Principal. Mr. Van Kleeck was a most thorough and efficient teacher, and under his care the institution was greatly prospered. A large number of scholars came from other States,

and, for many years, a number of Mexican and Cuban students boarded at the academy. Mr. Van Kleeck's health having failed, he resigned on February 22, 1860, and was succeeded by Rev. William W. Howard. On April 19, 1863, Mr. Howard, having received a call to the Presbyterian church, at Aurora, Cayuga county, New York, resigned as Principal. The trustees then chose the Rev. E. F. Mack as Principal. Mr. Mack held the position for eleven years, and, in September, 1874, was succeeded by Mr. Jared Hasbrouck. Upon the resignation of Mr. Hasbrouck the trustees appointed, as Principal, in February, 1879, Rev. Robert G. Strong, a former graduate of the academy, who for several years had conducted a large and prosperous select school in the village. Mr. Strong accepted the position and in September, 1879, moved his school into the academy.

In 1878 Flatbush appropriated \$19,000 for the erection of a new school building, which was occupied in the following year. When consolidation with Brooklyn became effected Erasmus Hall fell into line as one of the schools in the general system, but in 1896, when the high-school system was introduced, Erasmus Hall, under the able direction of Dr. Gunnison, started on a new lease of usefulness and has every year advanced until it now ranks as one of the institutions which may be called the pride of America's system of education.

Union Hall, Jamaica, was erected in 1791 and received its charter March 9, 1792, being the sixth establishment of its kind authorized by the Regents of the New York University. It received its name, it has been said, because its establishment was the result of a united effort on the part of the people of Jamaica, Flushing, Newtown and New York. The initiatory step was taken at a meeting held March 1, 1791, in the house of Mrs. Johanna Hinchman in Jamaica, at which the Rev. Rynier Van Nest presided. A committee was there appointed to collect subscriptions for the establishment of an academy, and £800 set as the limit needed. When the amount

was fully raised the building of the institution was begun. It was opened for the reception of students May 1, 1792, amid much ceremony, a procession, an oration (by Abraham Skinner), the singing of psalms and the chanting of an ode which had been written for the occasion by the Rev. George Faitoute. The festivities concluded with a dinner and on the viands being disposed of there was an outpouring of oratory in connection with toasts and sentiments. The first principal was the Rev. Maltby Gelston, and it was probably according to his ideas that the school curriculum was laid out. The Bible was the subject of daily reading. In Latin the text-books used included Ruddiman's "Rudiments" or Holmes' or Ross' Grammar, "Colloquia Corderii," Nepos, Aesop, Cæsar, Virgil, one of Cicero's Orations, and Horace, while the Greek students toiled through Moore's Grammar, the New Testament, Lucien's "Dialogues," "Longinus" and selections from Homer's "Iliad." Blair's "Belles Lettres" was the text-book in the rhetoric class, and the other text-books included Stone's "Euclid," Martin's "Trigonometry," Warden's "Mathematics" and Guthrie's or Salmon's "Geography." These books will give an idea of the scope of the academy and the high plane at which it aimed much better than any amount of description. The institution does not seem to have become the success its friends had anticipated: possibly the aim was too high and the cost too great for the times. At all events it was not until L. E. A. Eigenbrodt, LL. D., a man of many rare accomplishments, became principal in 1797, that the institution began to attract students from far and near and that the influence of the academy became commensurate with its original purpose. Eigenbrodt continued in the principalship until his death, in 1828, and during that period of over thirty years its record is a most brilliant one. Encouraged by this success, the trustees in 1817 established a female branch of the academy and engaged as teach-

ers Mrs. Elizabeth Bartlette and Miss Laura Barnum, "by whom the young ladies will be instructed in all the branches of a polite and well finished education."

The fame of Dr. Eigenbrodt, or rather the high reputation his genius as a teacher had won for the academy, carried it safely during the principalship of his successors, Michael Tracy, the Rev. William Errenpeutch and the Rev. John Mulligan; but a new impetus was given to its fame by Henry Onderdonk, Jr., who became principal in 1832. This graceful and painstaking student of history and enlightened antiquary was born at Manhasset June 11, 1804, and belonged to an old and prominent Long Island family, he being fifth in descent from Adrian Andriese Onderdonk, who settled in Flatbush from Holland before 1675. One of his uncles was the fourth Protestant Episcopal Bishop of New York, and another, Bishop of Pennsylvania. Henry was graduated from Columbia College in 1827 and received his bachelor's degree from Harvard in 1828. He was a most accomplished classical scholar and a steady and zealous advocate of temperance, on which he often spoke in public, and the subject of local history was also a theme with which he delighted many audiences. He retired from his connection with Union Academy in 1865, and thereafter busied himself with literary pursuits, especially historical and antiquarian researches, until his death, on June 22, 1886. Mr. Onderdonk was the author of quite a number of works, which are of value to the historical students of Long Island and more particularly of Kings and Queens counties, among them being "Revolutionary Incidents of Kings, Queens and Suffolk Counties," "Battle of Long Island and British Prisons and Prison Ships," and "Queens County in Olden Times."

With the retirement of Onderdonk from the principalship, Union Academy began gradually to decline, the extension and elevation of the public-school system having prob-

ably as much to do with its lack of success as any other cause. At all events, after an existence of eighty-three years the institution was abandoned, in 1873, and the buildings were then sold for \$5,250 and converted by their purchaser, Alexander Hagner, into dwellings.

Another eighteenth-century academic institution, and the only other one, was that at Huntington, in Suffolk county; but there was this difference between it and the three already named, that while they were under the Regents and to a certain degree under State control and supervision, Huntington Academy, from the time it opened its doors until it was abandoned, remained a private institution. Regarding this academy Mr. Charles R. Street, the historian of Huntington township, writes:

Many will remember the old Huntington Academy standing on the hill near the centre of the village. It was in its day a monument of the enterprise and liberality of the generation who endured the trials of the Revolutionary War, for it was built about 1793 by an association of fifty of the leading citizens of Huntington. It was a two-story building with a belfry, and was quite an imposing edifice for the period in which it was built. It was outside of the common-school system and was intended to, and generally did, furnish the means for a more liberal education than was provided by the surrounding common schools. It stood for more than fifty years, and many of the best educators of the period taught generation after generation of Huntington youths within its walls. It prepared for college the sons of those who were ambitious to give their sons a liberal education. A complete list of the teachers employed in the earliest years as principals of the academy cannot now be obtained. Among those of later years may be mentioned Dan Ditmas, John Rogers, Charles Nichols, Selah Hammond, Samuel Fleet, Mr. Rose, Mr. Branch, Ralph Bull, Adison L. Hunt, D. G. York, James H. Fenner, Horace Woodruff, Charles R. Street, John W. Leake and Israel C. Jones.

The academy was torn down about 1857 to make way for the present Union school

building. The bell from its tower, which rang out its tones over hill and vale for fifty years, calling together the boys and girls of Huntington, is now in the engine house of the Huntington Fire Company.

In 1800 Oyster Bay was able to boast its academy, another private enterprise, and the spread of such institutions slowly but surely over almost the entire island testified to the steady awakening of the people of Long Island to a full realization of the benefits which flow to the commonwealth from full and ample educational privileges. The common school is a duty, the establishment of such institutions was deemed a matter of prime necessity by the Dutch and the New England settlers on Long Island, but it took time to instil into people's mind a true conception of what is really included in the term education. As early in the history of the Commonwealth of New York as 1789, two lots in each township were set aside by the Legislature for school uses, and in 1795 \$50,000 was voted to be paid annually for five years for the maintenance of schools. Even lotteries were authorized by the Legislature in aid of education. In 1805, as a result of a message from Governor Lewis, 500,000 acres of the public lands in the State were ordered to be placed on the market, the proceeds to be laid aside as a school fund, the interest of which was to be divided among the common schools when it amounted to \$50,000 a year. It was not, however, until the middle of the nineteenth century that steps were really taken to lift education—primary, high-school and academic—out of the hands of individuals and make it a part of the work of the State, a central bureau working in harmony with local authorities in each section. "In 1848," writes Ellis H. Roberts in his "History of New York," "Nathaniel S. Benton reported that many cities and villages by voting to remit tuition had made their schools free, and he urged that the State should render the system uniform. His successor, Christopher

Morgan, argued the imperative duty of the State to educate all its children as a preventive of crime and pauperism; and March 26, 1849, an act was passed submitting to the people at the ensuing election a proposition for free schools, supported by the existing funds and by taxation, to be kept for at least four months in each year, for all children between the ages of five and twenty-one. Every county except Tompkins, Chenango, Cortland and Otsego gave for the policy majorities aggre-



GOV. MORGAN LEWIS.

gating 158,000. Difficulties in the administration of the law caused a demand for its repeal, and seventeen counties voted for sustaining free schools, and showed a majority in their favor of about 25,000. Under pledge made during the canvass the details of the law were modified by the Legislature, especially those which related to the raising and distribution of school moneys and to the retaining of rate bills; but legislation soon followed providing for free and union schools in the cities and villages and chief towns, and in 1867 all

the common and normal schools, and the departments in academies for the instruction of common school teachers, were declared absolutely free."

Progressive legislation of this character proved the death-knell of such institutions as Union Academy and Huntington Academy

and other locally managed schools. Since then the educational system of Long Island has fully kept pace with modern requirements, and in many respects has proved itself a leader in the most approved methods of scholastic training in primary as well as advanced schools.



CHAPTER XXIV.

INTERNAL COMMUNICATIONS—ROADS AND RAILROADS—THE MAGNIFICENT OUTLOOK FOR THE FUTURE.

SO far as we can learn the road system of Long Island, apart from the Indian trails, commenced with the wagon clearing which started from what is now Fulton Ferry and led up the hillside to the plateau on which the city hall of Brooklyn is the present most pronounced architectural feature. In modern times it would hardly be deemed worthy of being called a road, and probably it was simply a development of an Indian trail widened enough to permit a wagon to pass, and leveled where it was absolutely necessary that leveling should be done to prevent a horse or an ox from breaking its neck. We have no actual description of that primitive road: possibly it differed in no respect from the other roads which then served as the means for internal communication in the country. The fact that it elicited no comment, that it was neither better nor worse than its neighbors, however, enables us to form an idea of what it was like from the description we have of others. It was not straight. If a clump of trees stood in what ought to have been its course, it was easier to direct the road around the obstruction than to cut the trees down. No part of the road was hardened, and where a gully crossed it the hole was filled in by a tree or by a number of branches being thrown into it and loose earth piled on top. In summer the growth of weed and fern which spread over it from the luxuriant hand of nature prevented it from becoming a bed of sand. In other sea-

sons it was a bed of mud, especially in the spring-time, when the snows were melting and the rivulets and creeks were bursting with the waters rushing from their sources in the high ground nearer the centre of the island, and when nature was throwing off the passiveness of winter and preparing to adorn hill and dale, field and meadow, in her own beautiful and unaided way. Should a loaded wain once get stuck, it had to remain fast until a dozen men could be gathered to give it a fresh start; and sometimes that operation itself lasted an hour or two. No stage coach in the earlier days ever ran over such a road; none was needed. The stolid passenger, unencumbered by baggage, passed along as well as he could regardless of mud, or flower, or creeping thing, with rifle ready to unsling at a moment's notice should a wild animal cross his path, or the savage glare of an angry Indian dart on him from some near-by thicket. If he had to use a wagon, the solid sturdy Dutch wain, innocent of springs and an adept in the art of jolting, was the only thing at command. The road really belonged to everybody and so, of course, belonged to nobody. When an accident happened through a fissure caused by rain, or the action of frost and ice, or if a tree fell across the track, those who essayed to repair the effects of the accident tried to remedy the trouble while on the spot; otherwise nothing was done. It was, part of the way, a steep and toilsome ascent for man and beast, and the descent, in places, for horses

or wagons was even more dangerous. A similar path stretched from the Wallabout to the ferry and these two were the pioneer roads of an island which now holds up its system of highways to the admiration of the world.

As the population increased the roads naturally continued to lengthen and to become more numerous, following possibly in all cases the old Indian trails. We soon read of a road from the old village of Breuckelen to Gowanus, and one which passed onward until Coney Island was reached, and that road was good enough to arouse no invidious remarks when the Labadist fathers passed over it in 1670. That the early roads were narrow, crooked and irregular, that they crossed each other in reckless fashion, that they often ended in a farmhouse gate, and a new road had to be discovered or pointed out for further progress, did not seem to detract from their value in the eyes of the traveler or awaken, apparently, a desire for improvement on the part of the residents. The cow-paths, as they called most of them, were convenient, cost nothing or next to nothing for maintenance and repair, and in a settled community were as good as could then be contrived, or even apparently desired.

Brooklyn, however, early showed an interest in improving or at all events in maintaining the roads which gave it access to the outer world, and Gabriel Furman tells us that "there are many instances in record previous to 1683 of the Constable of Brooklyn being ordered to repair the roads and in case of neglect impose a fine." It was not, however, until 1704 that a real effort was made to improve the roads, not only around Brooklyn but throughout the entire State. In that year the Legislature passed a law by which three commissioners were appointed in each of the counties on the island to lay out a highway from Brooklyn Ferry to Easthampton. The Kings county Commissioners, Joseph Hagaman, Peter Cortelyou and Benjamin Vandewater, lost no time in attending to their part of the project, and straightway proceeded to lay out

what is now part of Fulton street, beginning at "low water marke at the ferry," following the line of the old path as much as possible, and extending it to New Lots, Flatbush. The road was of a uniform width of four rods, and it was "to be and continue forever." The entire road was in due time finished to Easthampton and as "the King's Highway" became the first of the famous highways of Long Island. Part of it retains that name even to the present day. For many years it was the standard road of the island and a landmark which was regarded as so ineffaceable that boundaries of real estate were regulated by it, and cross roads were from time to time laid out so as to strike it at different points. At the Brooklyn end especially the amenity and proportions of the road appear to have been zealously guarded, and prosecutions in connection with it were not unfrequent. It would seem that abutting property owners were ever ready to encroach upon it bit by bit, especially near the ferry, and it was frequently discovered that its width was seriously diminished in other places. Thus in 1721 complaint in individual cases of encroachments were made to the General Sessions against various trespassers, and the serious condition of things may be estimated from the reply of Jan Rapalje and Hans Bergen to one complaint. They did not deny the trespass or confiscation on the public property, but averred that in so doing they were no worse than others. "If all our neighbors will make the road according to law," they said, they were "willing to do the same, but they are not willing to suffer more than their neighbors." However, they were indicted, and steps taken to restore the road to its legal width of four rods. The subsidiary roads were as a general rule two rods in width and in most cases a fence or hanging gate separated them from the highways or from the farm paths, and it was a part of the common law that such gates should be always shut or put to by persons that pass in or out.

By 1733 three fairly good high roads trav-

ersed the island from east to west, one on the north shore, one on the south and one through the centre. In places these thoroughfares were left just as nature had made them with little done by the hand of man except to mark out their boundaries. In modern times they would not be regarded as roads at all, but they fully served their purpose and probably were about as good as the soil permitted or as the sparse population could provide. They were mainly used at first for the transportation of produce and farming supplies, and, supplemented pretty freely, as it seems to us, by cross roads, they served every practical purpose.

By the year 1735 probably every village on Long Island was connected, if not on the highway, by a road which led directly to it and so those at the west end could readily do business with Brooklyn, while at the east end the ports which opened up to the settlers the Sound and the Connecticut shore towns were easily available. In 1764 the main roads, those on the shore lines especially, acquired an additional importance as the route over which the mail was transported and the bi-monthly passage of the mail-carrier on horseback was not only an event but served to arouse, slowly indeed, it must be admitted, an interest in the great thoroughfares. That was indeed the weakness of the prevailing road system. The farmer struggled with the roads probably twice a year and then thought no more about them. The dweller at Southampton did not see he had any business with the condition of the roadway at Islip; those who were supposed by law to look after the roads had no money to effect improvements, and the people, say of Bridgehampton, or Gravesend, would certainly have rebelled had they been assessed for road improvements two miles beyond their limits,—improvements which it was quite probable they might never see, for people did not travel much in those days. The introduction of the mail-carrier service was the first cause which made the question of the public roads became equal to general inter-

est with the poll tax. It was a beginning in that direction. That was all, for the post route then established, one of those laid out by Franklin when he was Postmaster General, did not flourish and the service appears to have been withdrawn, at all events in its entirety, long before the Revolution. Of course, in winter time it could not be maintained with anything like regularity, and the service was not much missed, for the early Long Island settlers were not at all given to the use of the pen. Furman tells us that while the Revolutionary struggle was in progress, and for some years after it was over, "a respectable old Scotchman named Dunbar was in the habit of riding a voluntary post between the city of New York, along the south road, to Babylon and from thence a few miles to the east, and then across the island to Brookhaven. He thus brought to the inhabitants of the central portions of the island their letters and newspapers about once a week or once a fortnight, depending upon the state of the weather." Up almost to the beginning of the nineteenth century there was not a single post office on Long Island. Those living on the west end got their mail in one way or another from the postoffice at New York, and those on the east end and along the Sound generally had their mail matter addressed to some office in Connecticut whence it was carried as near to them as possible in some trading vessel.

It was not until the introduction of turnpike roads that much progress in real road-making was seen. About 1810 turnpike road building first began to obtain a foothold in the country, and although it was considered un-American to have public roads which could not be used by all and sundry free of cost, a brief experience developed the fact that the small fees paid at each turnpike amply repaid those assessed. On Long Island the first of these roads was laid out by the Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike Company, and in quite a short time it demonstrated itself to be such a public convenience that it was extended to Hempstead and to Jericho, and from the

latter an extension was built to Smithtown. Jamaica soon became the centre of other roads until it was possible to drive along a turnpike from there to Oyster Bay, on the north, and to Babylon on the south shore, while a short stretch of four and a half miles from Sag Harbor to Bridgehampton showed the people of the eastern end what could be accomplished by taking advantage of the Turnpike Companies' acts. Toll bridges were also introduced in connection with the turnpike system and quite a number of these were erected, such as those at Flushing, Williamsburg, Gowanus, Sag Harbor and Coney Island.

About the middle of the century a new development in road building was inaugurated by the introduction of the plank-road system. It seemed for a time as if the people at the eastern end of Long Island had fully awakened to the need of good roads, and as the plank system seemed to fill the want by affording a quick, cheap and satisfactory solution the craze for that form of road-building reached such a point that it was described as a mania. Probably the most noted of these roads was the one owned by the Myrtle Avenue & Jamaica Plank Road Company (incorporated with a capital of \$55,000), which built a stretch of road five and a half miles long, extending from the end of Myrtle avenue to a point about a mile west of Jamaica, where it joined another similar structure, known as the Jamaica & Brooklyn Plank Road. After a while it was found that the maintenance of such roads was pretty costly, owing to the need of constant watchfulness and incessant repair, and they were gradually abandoned. Still the public convenience and profit arising from the possession of good roads was not lost upon the people, and the roads throughout the island steadily improved year after year. The introduction of the bicycle and the cry raised in its palmy days by the League of American Wheelmen led, in 1890 or thereabout, to a revived interest in the question of good roads all through the State. In that

movement Long Island was particularly active and her systems of roads soon became recognized as among the best in the metropolitan district, much better in the aggregate than those of Westchester county and those of New Jersey outside of a limited area. The question of by-paths was not taken up by the local authorities as quickly as the cycling enthusiasts demanded and much grumbling resulted, but that problem has been happily settled, for the steadily extending mileage of what are called cycle paths is opening up almost every corner of the island to the pedestrian as well as to the cyclist, and also bringing slowly but surely a good road to every little village, no matter how remote it may be from the great arteries of travel, and even to every farm homestead.

A capital sketch of the condition of the Long Island roads in 1845 is given in Prime's "History," and as that reverend historian wrote on the subject from personal observation his remarks have more than passing value and are worth being quoted here. He said:

The roads of Long Island are exceedingly numerous and difficult for strangers. There are three principal avenues running nearly through the whole length of the island, which are distinguished as the North, Middle and South Roads. These are not only intersected by others leading from one town and neighborhood to another, but in the most uninhabited parts there are numerous wood-paths well worn by constant carting which vary so little from the course of the main road, and not infrequently appear the most direct and most used, that the stranger is constantly liable to go astray; and that, too, where he might remain a whole day without meeting a person to set him right. Some of these turnouts have been guarded by guide-boards, but in general the inhabitants have been too inattentive to this important provision.

A large portion of the South and the Middle Roads, after you enter the county of Suffolk, leads through large sandy plains and forests, and to one who has never traveled such a region of country it is impossible to convey an adequate idea of the inconvenience and obstruction to locomotion which are here

presented. After a heavy rain, if only a single carriage has preceded you to open the ruts, you may get along with tolerable speed, provided your wheels fit the track. But in a time of drought the sand in many places is so fine, deep and fluid that you may travel for miles with the lower fellow of your wheels constantly buried out of sight.

But while the people of Long Island are not to blame for the natural condition of their

compact and by the gradual admixture with the sand improves for many years, though like all human works it does not become everlasting, but its advantage is seen for a long period.

The entire counties of Kings and Queens both in the public roads and numerous turnpikes present as pleasant journeying for man and as comfortable traveling for beast in every direction, and at all seasons of the year, as any other equal district in the State; and the north



A PICTURESQUE BIT OF ROAD.

roads, for, unlike in many other parts of the country, they have not selected the best lands for themselves and devoted the hills and hollows and slough-holes to the roads, but have given as good as they had, they are entitled to great credit in many places for the efforts which have been made, with vast toil and expense, to improve upon nature. Where a bed of loam has been discovered they have dug out and hauled thousands and thousands of loads covering the whole path from six to twelve inches deep for miles in succession. By this process the road soon becomes com-

side of the island throughout furnishes a compact substratum and excellent material for roads, though there is too much reason to complain of negligence in their improvement. The most of the labor done in cutting down hills and filling up valleys is performed by the direct agency of water during copious rains. The work thus executed, without the direction of human intelligence receives a few finishing strokes from the hand of man, when the necessity is imposed by some frightful gully formed or some huge rock dislodged by the powerful but senseless agent.

Next to the post roads, the exigencies of travel by stage was the next factor in forcing attention to the necessity of having good roads and keeping them in more or less thorough repair. Even before the Revolution was inaugurated and while order prevailed throughout Long Island, we read of stage coaches running into and out of Brooklyn. On March 5, 1772, for instance, it was advertised that "a stage will run from Brooklyn to Sag Harbor once a week as follows: From Brooklyn Ferry to Samuel Nicholl's on Hempstead Plains, where passengers will stay all night: fare, four shillings. To Epenetus Smith's at Smithtown, four shillings. To Benjamin Haven's in St. George's Manor, four shillings and stay all night. To Nathan Fordham's, Sag Harbor, six shillings." Probably few stages ran with any degree of regularity during the British occupation. Soon after the Easthampton road was completed a stage seems to have been put on the route, but the service was miserable, the patronage poor and the modern methods of building up traffic such as promptness in starting and in arriving, were neglected, while none of the schemes to promote the comfort of passengers, so well understood in our day, were ever dreamed of. One great drawback to the popularity of the stage-coach system was that the people, living mainly in the early times on the coast or near it, did most of their business with the outer world by boat. Thus all along the Sound were vessels ready to convey passengers and goods to points in Connecticut, while even for parts of the south shore that was the quickest way of reaching markets and for having business of any kind transacted. Besides, in the east end the people preferred to deal with New England. The stage coach, under even the best weather and road conditions, was decidedly slow. In 1830, or thereabout, Prime tells us, the journey from Easthampton or Oysterponds to Brooklyn occupied three days. In 1840 a stage left Gravesend for Brooklyn in the morning and returned some time at night, the exact time

depending on a wide variety of causes,—no two exactly alike.

A capital sketch of a journey about 1835 from Brooklyn to Easthampton is given in Gabriel Furman's "Antiquities of Long Island;" and as that work is now rather scarce it may be fitting to reprint the passage here:

The practice was to leave Brooklyn about nine o'clock in the morning,—they were not, however, particular to half an hour,—travel on to Hempstead, where they dined; and after that jog on to Babylon, where they put up for the night. A most delightful way this was to take a jaunt; there was no hurry, no fuss and bustle about it: no one was in a hurry to get to his journey's end, and if he was and intended going the whole route he soon became effectually cured of it. Everything went on soberly and judiciously and you could see what was to be seen and hear all that was to be heard, and have time enough to do it all in; no mode of traveling ever suited our taste better; it was the very acme of enjoyment. The next morning you left Babylon just after daylight, which in the summer was itself worth living for, journeyed on to Patchogue, where you got your breakfast between nine and ten o'clock, with a good appetite for it, we warrant you. You would get no dinner this day, nor would you feel the want of it after your late and hearty breakfast; but travel along slowly and pleasantly until you reached the rural post-office at Fire Place, standing on the edge of a wood. Here, if you had a taste for the beautiful in nature, you would well walk down the garden to look at the trout stream filled with the speckled beauties. Here you need give yourself no uneasiness about being left by the stage, as is the case in some of the go-ahead parts of our country. In this particular region the middle of the road is sandy and the driver, like a considerate man, gives his horses an opportunity to rest, so that they may the better travel through this piece of heavy road. You might, therefore, after enjoying yourself at this spot, walk on leisurely ahead of the stage, with a friend and some one who is conversant with the country and its legends, and this walk would prove by no means the least pleasant part of your excursion, for many are the tales you would hear of awful shipwrecks, of pirates and their buried wealth, of treasures cast up by the sea, of all those horrors and

wonders of which the ocean is the prolific parent. After walking for some two or three miles upon the green sward at the edge of the road, gathering and eating the berries as you strolled along until you were tired, you would find the stage a short distance behind you, the driver ever complaisant, for you have eased his horses in their journey through the heavy sand, and the passengers are pleased to see you back in your seat again, that is, if you have done as every traveller ought to do, studied the comfort and convenience of your fellow passengers as well as your own.

Shortly after sunset you would stop for the night, the second of your journey, at a place called Quagg or Quogue. The following morning you would breakfast at Southampton, after passing through a pine forest in a portion of which from the early hour and blindness of the road you would probably require a guide to go ahead of the horses with a lighted lantern. You would also this morning, before arriving at Southampton, cross the remains of the first canal constructed in what is now the United States by Mongotucksee, the chief of the Montauk Indians, long before the white settlement of the country, and also traverse a region of hills known as the Shinecoc Hills, on which not a tree has grown since they were known to man,—certainly not since the European settlement of this island. Sag Harbor would be reached in time for dinner, after which the mail stage would travel on to its final destination at Easthampton, arriving there just before sunset on Saturday afternoon, thus occupying nearly three days to traverse a distance of 110 miles.

In the internal development of the resources of the island the most important part has been done by the railroads. In 1832 the first railroad company of Long Island—the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad—was chartered, but the road itself, over a distance of twelve miles from South Ferry to Jamaica, was not put in operation until April 18, 1833. It proved financially a failure from the start. In 1834 the Long Island Railroad was chartered. The history of this road is one of the most remarkable in the record of railroad achievement in the United States. It has had a more than ordinary share of difficulties to contend with, and in some instances the story

of its progress reads rather like passages from a romance than details of actual fact, in which common sense and judicious use of capital alone accomplish results which seem wonderful even to the casual observer. In order to present the story of this great Long Island institution and benefactor to the reader with the utmost correctness, even to the most minute details, we here present a sketch, printed in 1898 by Judge E. B. Hinsdale, of New York, who for many years was general counsel of the system, and possibly better acquainted with the actual facts of its history than any living man:

HISTORY OF THE LONG ISLAND RAILROAD.

The history of the Long Island Railroad presents features of considerable interest to those who have studied the growth and development of railroads in this country.

Its position is unique in this—that it does not form any part of the great trunk lines, nor does it feed one of them. It is exclusively a local road, serving a population on an island adjacent to the great city of New York. The Long Island Railroad of to-day is the development and outgrowth of many fiercely conflicting interests, and a study of them will explain many things that to the observer of to-day seem inexplicable.

The first railroad chartered on Long Island was the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad. This road started from the then village of Brooklyn, running to Jamaica, a distance of about ten miles. Its charter is dated 1832. The projectors of that railroad started at once to construct the same, and seem to have pushed its construction with commendable vigor. Short as it is, this road played an important part in the system of railroads on Long Island, some of the time dominating the Long Island Railroad, and finally at one time being reduced to the position of a mere spur or branch, and later on in its history becoming again a very important factor.

The Long Island Railroad proper was chartered in 1834, by a special act of the Legislature. At that early day there was no general railroad law, so-called. The Long Island Railroad Company is the only railroad corporation existing in the State of New York

that has preserved its name and corporate franchises from its original charter intact. It is perhaps without a peer in the United States in length of life and preservation of name and charter. Its act of incorporation provided for a railroad to be built from a point in or near the village of Greenport, in the county of Suffolk, and extending from this along the most practicable route through or near the middle of Long Island to a point on the water's edge in the village of Brooklyn, county of Kings, and to a point on the water's edge in the village of Williamsburg, in the last named county. Its charter provided a scheme for absorbing the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad, which had been chartered only two years before. The dominant idea of the incorporators seems to have been to adopt the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad either by purchase, or in some other way, as a part of its line of railroad, running the entire length of Long Island. One of the first acts of the Long Island Railroad Company was to lease the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad in 1835, at a rental of \$33,000 per annum for forty-five years, being ten per cent. on the cost of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad. In 1836 they adopted the location of a line from Jamaica eastward as far as what was then called a point on the Jericho road, now Hicksville, and at the same time adopted a map of location from Bedford to Williamsburg, on the water's edge.

The company proceeded at once, with such vigor as they could command, to construct the road from Jamaica to Hicksville, but owing to the hard times that were then reaching the culmination in the great disaster of 1837, the progress of the work was slow, and they found great difficulty in collecting their assessments and raising the means to pay the necessary expenses. They also found the burthen of the lease of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad to be very great, and that it was sapping their resources in ready cash to their very serious embarrassment. There soon broke out a controversy between the Long Island Railroad Company and the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad Company, touching the onerous terms of this lease, the Long Island Railroad Company sometimes pleading with the directors of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad, and sometimes threatening. They were often behind in paying their rent, until finally there was a substantial modification of the same, and no abandonment of

the leased line by the Long Island Railroad Company ever occurred.

A few words with reference to the location from Bedford to Williamsburg will dispose of that contemplated line. It seems that a little work was done on the line, and according to the minutes of the Company, it was occasionally referred to by the directors, but it was never completed, and whatever was done on it seems to have disappeared from the history of the Long Island Railroad, and the whole scheme was abandoned.

The Long Island Railroad Company was engaged in a struggle to build the line from Jamaica to Greenport. By March, 1837, they had succeeded in constructing a single track from Jamaica to Hicksville, a distance of about fifteen miles. This work was completed in the very crisis of the financial embarrassments of that time, and on April 5th of that year all work was suspended on the line east of Hicksville, and also on the Williamsburg branch.

The following time table appears in the minutes of the railroad, and the same, in this exact form, was issued on a card:

LEAVE HICKSVILLE:	LEAVE JAMAICA.	LEAVE BROOKLYN.
8¼ A. M.	9 A. M.	10½ A. M.
1 P. M.	1¾ P. M.	3½ P. M.

This time table is recorded here as a curiosity, illustrating the crude ideas of railroading and railroad time tables that prevailed at that time. It will be observed that the time of the trains is given at only one intermediate station between the terminals. The fair presumption is that whoever wished to board a train at any other station could drive there and guess at the time when the train should arrive, guided only by the time of departing and arriving at the terminals.

According to the engineer's report at this time, there were only three engines on the road, named, respectively, Ariel, Postboy and Hicksville. The first collision referred to on the island was between the Ariel and Postboy, which the engineer reports as a case where they "came in contact" and were considerably damaged. He recommended that another engine be purchased. If, however, another engine should not be purchased, he then recommended that the number of passages per diem be reduced. In 1838 the subject was taken up by the board, and a committee was

appointed to report on the purchase of a new engine. The company seems then to have been in the very depths of its financial troubles. In May, 1838, the committee on purchasing an engine reported against making the purchase, but stated that they could "borrow a crank axle and wheel for temporary use" until new ones could be made for one of the disabled engines. If this record of the expedients of that date provokes a smile, we can only say that it marks the great advance that has been made in railroad methods and railroad ideas up to the present day.

At this time the position of the company was exceedingly unsatisfactory. It was embarrassed by constantly accumulating rents of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad, and its line was not completed so that the company could avail itself of the supposed advantages of its charter to run to Greenport, as a part of a through line to Boston. The men of those days set to work earnestly to find the ways and means to complete the road. There were fierce contests between the stockholders at elections for directors, and on two occasions elections were set aside by the courts for irregularities. At almost every meeting of the board resolutions were passed forfeiting the stock of stockholders for non-payment of assessments; but through all this turmoil the corporation lived on, and finally fell into the hands of a class of men of more financial ability, who succeeded ultimately in completing the road.

In 1838 they began an agitation to secure a loan on the credit of the State to assist the company, and in 1840 the State did loan its credit for \$100,000 of State stocks. In 1838 the company also succeeded in getting a reduction of the rent of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad from a ten per cent. basis to a six per cent. basis. It is curious to note in passing that prior to the State loan the Morris Canal & Banking Company, of New Jersey, had recovered a judgment of about \$60,000 against the corporation, on account of loans it had made. This judgment was assigned to the commissioner of certain funds of the State of Indiana, supposed to be school funds, so that at this early date the State of Indiana was a creditor of the Long Island Railroad Company for the large sum of \$60,000. After the State loan was obtained, this judgment was liquidated about the year 1840.

In 1836 the Legislature authorized the Long Island Railroad Company to build a

branch from some convenient point on its main line of railroad to some proper place or point in the village of Hempstead. In 1838 they surveyed a branch line in pursuance of this act of the Legislature, which was subsequently built, and known as the Hempstead branch, running from what is now Mineola to the village of Hempstead, a part of which track is still in use, as will be hereafter more fully explained.

In the year 1840 the resumption of the work of construction was commenced from Hicksville to Greenport, and after various struggles and disappointments the road was finally completed and opened to Greenport on the 27th day of July, 1844. It is plain that there was new life and greater financial ability infused into the direction of the road, as new members appeared in the board of directors. Among the directors who were then or have since become famous in the affairs of the country were the names of Jacob Little, George Law and Cornelius Vanderbilt.

When the road was completed to Greenport a line of steamers was run from Greenport to the coast of New England, connecting chiefly with the Old Colony Railroad, and by that connection making a through line from New York to Boston. At that time the connections between New York and Boston through the New England States were mainly by steamboat or stage lines. There was no such thing known as a through railroad from New York to Boston, or any other method of transportation at all comparable with the line of the Long Island Railroad, via steamboat line and the Old Colony Railroad. This line, for a short time, was the principal passenger and mail route between New York and Boston, but very soon the opening of direct railroad communication by land from New York to Boston seems to have, so far, cut into the profits of the business done by the Long Island Railroad as to again put the corporation in great financial straits, and on March 4, 1850, a receiver was appointed. So far as the Long Island Railroad Company was interested in the steamboats, they were sold and the Boston connection practically given up. The railroad now became, for all practical purposes, a local road on Long Island.

The subject of building branches and extending its facilities on the island seems to have now engaged the attention of the management. They were also greatly aided in this by the citizens in communities who were

not, as they conceived, sufficiently served by the line of the Long Island Railroad, as then located and constructed. One of the first efforts in this direction was the Hicksville & Cold Spring Railroad. This corporation was organized for building a railroad from Hicksville in a northeasterly direction to Cold Spring. An enabling act was passed on June 28, 1851, authorizing the formation of a railroad corporation under the general railroad act but with relief from some of the provisions of that act. Subsequently the corporation was organized and the construction of the railroad entered upon. It seems to have progressed very slowly. At some time before 1859, the date of which does not appear in the minutes of the company, the road was constructed and put under operation as far as Syosset. In 1859 an act was passed extending, among other things, the time for completing this road. It is well known that a considerable part of the right-of-way from Syosset to Cold Spring was purchased and graded and made nearly ready for laying the track before 1862, but no rails were ever laid on this portion of the line, and it now belongs to one of the numerous abandoned lines. The portion of the road between Hicksville and Syosset now forms an important part of the present Long Island Railroad. For many years Syosset was an important terminal station. The inhabitants from the surrounding country on the north side of Long Island would drive there by private conveyance or stage to take the trains.

A new difficulty began to confront the Long Island Railroad Company between 1850 and 1860 in another direction. Notwithstanding they had secured a reduction of the rent of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad, the city of Brooklyn had grown to such an extent that it was believed by the citizens that the operation of a steam railroad through the city down to the water's edge was a detriment to the city and a menace to the lives of its citizens, and they commenced an agitation to have steam power removed from within the city limits. At this time the pressure was very hard upon the Long Island Railroad Company to compel it to surrender the franchise to use steam power in the city of Brooklyn, and, on the other hand, it would be a practical ruin to the company not to have a terminus at the water's edge. When originally built the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad ran in Atlantic avenue from South Ferry to Flatbush avenue,

and at Flatbush avenue its right-of-way had been secured through farming lands without any regard to city streets, and ran pretty generally north of the present Atlantic avenue from Flatbush avenue to East New York, so-called at that time. In laying out the streets of the city, the corporations interested were induced to surrender their right-of-way that they had secured north of Atlantic avenue, and to have the rails placed in the present Atlantic avenue as laid out by the city authorities. Another object of this scheme also was to have the use of steam power on the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad surrendered within the city limits, but, before these rights were surrendered the interests of the Long Island Railroad Company were safeguarded by provisions for opening a new line to the East River from Jamaica to what was then called Hunter's Point, now Long Island City. To effect this purpose the New York & Jamaica Railroad Company was organized about 1857, and constructed a railroad from the terminus of the Long Island Railroad in Jamaica to the water's edge at Hunter's Point, and when ready for opening the trains of the Long Island Railroad, instead of running over the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad into the city of Brooklyn, turned off at Jamaica and were brought to Hunter's Point. This diverted the main line of travel on Long Island from the city of Brooklyn to the new terminus. This new line was opened in 1860. About the same time its property, corporate rights and franchises were acquired by the Long Island Railroad Company. From that time the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad was run as a branch road between Jamaica and East New York. The effect of this readjustment was to take the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad out of the main line of travel, and reduce it to a road of very insignificant importance, so far as its steam traffic was concerned. The Long Island Railroad Company continued to operate this road as a branch until it was again made to assume an importance which will be hereafter noted.

On April 14, 1863, there was another change in the management of the Long Island Railroad. Oliver Charlick* and his associates

*Oliver Charlick, for many years a most potent figure in the stormy sea of New York City's politics, was born near Hempstead in 1813. He received his business training in the establishment of Gardiner & Howell, wholesale grocers, New York, and when that firm failed he went into business on his own account. The great

were elected directors. They were a new set of directors, with new ideas and new policy. Their policy was characterized with considerable vigor, but they seemed to be actuated solely by the desire to make money, rather than to conserve the convenience of the citizens of the island, or to promote their interests. This policy nearly ruined the Long Island Railroad Company. In a very short time there sprang up between the railroad corporation and the citizens antagonistic feelings, which resulted in great changes in the railroad map of Long Island.

It may not be amiss at this time to take an account of stock, and for those who are interested, to look at the map of Long Island and see the exact position of the railroads at that date. The Long Island Railroad Company had a main line running from Greenport to Hunter's Point on the East River. It also had a branch from Mineola to Hempstead, and a branch from Hicksville to Syosset. It was also operating that part of the old Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad between Jamaica and East New York by steam power. This was the entire mileage of the Long Island Railroad in 1863.

Prior to 1863 the scheme of building a

fire of 1835 wiped out his store, but he soon re-established himself, and as a grocer and shipchandler built up a large and profitable business.

In 1843 he made his first prominent entry into politics, when he was nominated and elected Assistant Alderman of New York's First Ward, on an independent ticket, and he afterward became Alderman. As president of the board during the latter part of his term he frequently acted as Mayor of the city, during the absence of Mayor Havemeyer. In 1849 he went to California and engaged in business there for some eighteen months.

Returning to New York he entered upon the work of constructing the Eighth Avenue street-car line and ran it successfully for seven years, recouping the stockholders their original capital and paying regularly a dividend of twelve per cent. In 1860 he gave up his street car interests and devoted himself to steam railroading and became active in the management of several lines in and around New York. It is with the management of the Long Island Railroad, however, that he is best remembered, in this connection. In later life Mr. Charllick again became prominent in New York City's politics, and as a member of the Board of Police Commissioners his name was actively bandied about at a time when deals and dickers formed the professional politician's stock in trade in New York. He had hosts of enemies and troops of friends; by the former he was denounced for having committed practically every crime in the calendar; by the latter he was credited with brains, smartness and inflexible honesty.

However, all that may be, it is certain that his career as a politician did not add to his personal reputation, nor has it won for his memory the regard which is paid even to that of a respectable mechanic.

railroad from Mineola to Locust Valley seems to have been agitated by the citizens along that line and the Long Island Railroad Company, and to have culminated in a paper railroad, which was never built. After Oliver Charllick was elected president of the Long Island Railroad Company, and in May, 1863, the board brushed aside this paper organization and voted that it was expedient to build a road from Mineola to Glen Cove. Soon thereafter the Long Island Railroad Company took measures to construct the road, and on September 17, 1863, executed a mortgage on that branch for the purpose of providing the means for its construction and completion. The date when this branch was finished and opened does not appear in the minutes of the company, but it was probably about the year 1864 or 1865. The road as originally constructed still remains in active operation.

For several years after 1863 there was nothing done in the way of railroad construction on Long Island that was antagonistic to the interests of the Long Island Railroad Company. There did grow up, however, a feeling of great tension between citizens and property owners on the island and the railroad company by reason of the non-progressive management of the corporation. One can hardly resist speculation as to what would have been the systems of railroads upon the Island or what would have been the effect upon the Long Island Railroad property, had there been a liberal and progressive administration of the railroad's affairs at that time.

For several years after 1863 the people traveling from the south side of Long Island, and from many parts of the north side, would drive to the middle of the island to meet trains. In those days there was a very considerable activity around all of the stations on the main line between Farmingdale and Riverhead, where now it seems so dull and lifeless. The attractions of the shores of Long Island were such that, notwithstanding the inconvenience of access, population increased so rapidly that a time finally came when, despairing of having their reasonable wants met by the Long Island Railroad Company, a series of railroad constructions began that were antagonistic to the Long Island Railroad Company, and which continued for several years, with the result of almost destroying all railroad property on the Island, the new with the old. The history of this

contest will explain very much that is hard to understand in the tangled web of corporations, railroad tracks and abandoned tracks on Long Island.

It is necessary now to retrace our steps and dates a little for the purpose of recording the history of a railroad that has been a very considerable factor in the railroad contests on Long Island. The Flushing Railroad Company was organized in 1852, to build a road from Hunter's Point to the village of Flushing. This road was soon thereafter constructed, and was an outlying piece of road, serving only the wants of a local community, and apparently in no way related to the Long Island Railroad. Its location was from Main street, in the village of Flushing, to Newtown Creek, and thence along the northerly side of that creek to the East River. The location of its terminus on East River was in about the middle of the large lumber yard south of the present Long Island Railroad depot. That land was under water and had not then been filled in, and there was a pile dock out for a considerable distance to get sufficient depth of water for the landing of a small steamboat. The passengers were brought down by rail to this dock, and there they embarked on board a small steamer that landed them at Fulton Ferry. This method of transportation continued for a number of years. When the branch of the Long Island Railroad was built from Jamaica to Hunter's Point it crossed this old Flushing road at Winfield at nearly right angles to that line. The Flushing Railroad was not successful financially, and about 1858 a first mortgage on its property and corporate franchises was foreclosed, which resulted in the title passing to a new corporation, called the New York and Flushing Railroad Company, organized in 1859. The new corporation continued to operate this road about the same as the old one had done, but its management was about as bad as any management could be, and the service was totally inadequate to the wants of so large a community as that residing at Flushing and in the adjacent country. The line of this road having been crossed by the main line of the Long Island Railroad at Winfield made the road a property desired by the management of the Long Island Railroad. It was well understood that they had negotiated with the owners of the New York and Flushing Railroad and tried to acquire the property, but were unsuccessful for many years. The citizens of Flushing and vicinity,

chafing under the bad service of the New York and Flushing Railroad, were stimulated to secure an outlet in some other direction. The management of the Long Island Railroad encouraged this sentiment with promises of aid over another line, and it resulted in the organization of a corporation known as the Flushing and Woodside Railroad Company. The line of this road was located from the Bridge street station, in the village of Flushing, to Woodside, on the line of the Long Island Railroad, the intention being to have a through line from Hunter's Point to Flushing over this route. Work was actively commenced building the division between Woodside and Flushing, and the same was about half completed when the owners of the New York & Flushing Railroad, discovering that there was to be an active competitor in the field, sold their stock to the management of the Long Island Railroad, who at once suspended work on the Woodside line, and it was not completed for many years thereafter. Prior to this purchase by the Long Island Railroad Company the East River terminus of the New York & Flushing Railroad had been changed from the small dock referred to, and a lease had been executed between the Long Island Railroad Company and the New York & Flushing Railroad Company, giving the latter road terminal facilities for ten years in the Long Island Railroad station at Hunter's Point. The resulting position was, at the time we are speaking of, that the Long Island Railroad Company had acquired the New York & Flushing Railroad, and was operating it as a branch of their road. The Flushing & Woodside Railroad Company, by special act of the Legislature, had acquired the right to build a drawbridge over Flushing Creek, and the only corporate rights of that railroad that has now any value to the Long Island system is the right to cross this drawbridge, the same having been acquired, as will be subsequently explained, from the Woodside corporation by another railroad organization.

About the time the Flushing & Woodside Railroad was being built, another railroad company was organized to build a road from Flushing eastward, known as the North Shore Railroad Company. This railroad was never completed. It was, however, actually constructed from Flushing to Great Neck, and was operated for a number of years under a contract with the New York & Flushing Railroad Company.

The Long Island Railroad Company did something in the way of extending its mileage between 1863 and 1870. One of the first moves in this direction was in April, 1863, when the corporation elected to purchase the stock of the branch which has been spoken of before as having been built from Syosset to Hicksville as a part of the Hicksville & Cold Spring Railroad. The Legislature had theretofore conferred upon the Long Island Railroad Company the power to build branches on Long Island at any point east of the village of Jamaica, or to purchase the stock of such connecting railroads. In 1867 the Long Island Railroad Company filed a map of a route, and entered vigorously upon the construction of a branch from Syosset to Northport. This branch was built under the corporate powers of the Long Island Railroad Company. The movement met with the vigorous opposition of those interested in having the railroad extended to Cold Spring; but the opponents of the location were divided, and it resulted in the abandonment of the right of way, and work between Syosset and Cold Spring, and the opening of a new line to Northport, the terminus of this line being in the village of Northport and not at the junction of the Smithtown & Port Jefferson Railroad, to be hereafter referred to. The result of these operations was to take in the piece of road built from Hicksville to Syosset, with the extension from Syosset to Northport, making one continuous branch from Hicksville to Northport.

In 1869 the Long Island Railroad Company projected another important work, which was conducted under its own corporate powers. It entered upon the construction of a line from Manor to Sag Harbor. The effect of this was to grant railroad facilities to the citizens on the south side of Long Island, at the east end thereof. This branch became an important feeder to the main line of the Long Island Railroad, and contributed greatly to the development of that part of the south side of Long Island.

Another important extension was stimulated by the Long Island Railroad Company, although not built by them. In June, 1870, the Smithtown & Port Jefferson Railroad Company was organized for the purpose of building a road from Northport to Port Jefferson. This was practically an extension of the branch of the Long Island Railroad then in operation from Hicksville to Northport, the

details of which have been above stated. This road was about sixteen miles in length, and was constructed in its entirety. At the point of junction with the branch near Northport, the departure was made on the high lands out of the village of Northport rather than by extending from the terminus of the branch road, the effect of which was to have two stations in Northport, one of them on the hill, at which the through trains stopped, and another a short distance from the point of junction down in the village of Northport.*

The most serious menace to the business of the Long Island Railroad Company appeared in 1866, when the long-talked-of project of building the South Side Railroad was entered upon. So much had the population increased along the south side that the inhabitants and property owners along that section of country determined at all hazards to have a railroad that would let them out with greater facility than they could possibly get by driving to the center of the island to the main line of the Long Island Railroad. Numerous negotiations and schemes were projected for building branches toward the south, but for some reason Oliver Charlick and his associates failed to comprehend the growing importance of that section of the island, nor did they believe it possible for it to escape from their control. The South Side Railroad was constructed and opened between Jamaica and Brooklyn in the fall of 1867. At that time the South Side Railroad Company had not succeeded in acquiring their right-of-way and facilities for transporting passengers to the river's edge in the city of Brooklyn. They

*"The people of Smithtown made many efforts to bring the railroad here * * These negotiations resulted in a proposition by Oliver Charlick, representing the Long Island Railway, by which the people of this town [Smithtown] should organize an independent corporation (it never possessed the first elements of independence), should raise \$80,000 in cash, lease its franchise to the Long Island Railway in advance, expend the money as far as it would go in constructing the road and raise the balance of the money necessary to complete it by issuing bonds, the principal and interest of which should be guaranteed by the Long Island Railroad. That plan, after much negotiation, was finally adopted. The town of Smithtown agreed to raise \$50,000 of the \$80,000 required by bonding the town and taking that amount of stock at par, the bonds to run thirty years, at seven per cent. interest. The people of the town have accepted and enjoyed the benefits of the railroad but now complain of the heavy interest."—J. Lawrence Smith.

[The road from Hicksville to Syosset in 1854, and extended to Northport in 1868, and from there, passing through Smithtown to Port Jefferson in 1872.]

were straitened for means, and had not entirely given up hope that at Jamaica they might enter into some arrangement with the Long Island Railroad Company by which their cars and passengers could be transported to Hunter's Point. The writer was present at a long interview between representatives of the South Side Railroad Company and Mr. Charlick, in which every consideration was urged upon the Long Island Railroad Company to enter into such an arrangement, but Mr. Charlick was obdurate. His motive was not easy to define, except that it is highly probable he anticipated that at some future time this road would become more embarrassed and better terms could be made with it by the Long Island Railroad Company. All hope of reaching Hunter's Point over the Long Island Railroad having disappeared, the South Side Railroad corporation proceeded vigorously to build their line between Jamaica and Bushwick, which was as far as they were permitted to go with their locomotives into the city of Brooklyn. The location of this line was south of the present line from Jamaica to Springfield, and the station in Jamaica was at a point a little south of the present Long Island Railroad station in Jamaica. The line then passed westward for about two miles, and crossed the line of the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad, passing thence to Glendale, Fresh Pond and Bushwick. From Bushwick to the ferry on the East River the cars were hauled by dummy engines through the streets of the city of Brooklyn. About the time this line was completed to the East River, it was also opened as far east as Patchogue. Thereafter for a number of years, the main line of travel for the South Side Railroad was from Patchogue to the East River via Bushwick. It drew travel very heavily from the Long Island Railroad at all points on the south side west of Patchogue, and was also a sharp competitor in the village of Jamaica.

In 1868 the parties interested in the South Side Railroad Company organized the Far Rockaway Branch Railroad Company for the purpose of building a railroad between Valley Stream and Far Rockaway. This road was promptly constructed and put into operation. It proved to be a valuable feeder to the South Side Railroad. At that time, the terminus of the road was near the beach, at a point just west of the village of Far Rockaway. After a year or two of operation at this point, one winter there came a remarkable change in the

shore line off Far Rockaway. In a single winter the coast in front of this South Side station fell off one-quarter to one-half of a mile out to sea, and a new shore line was formed and a beach thrown up along the front of the village of Far Rockaway, leaving a considerable sheet of water between the village and the sand beach. The South Side Railroad Company, finding that the attraction of being near the beach had been so suddenly and summarily terminated by the action of Nature, instead of extending their road directly out to the new line of beach, changed their plans, and in 1871 organized another railroad corporation, called the Rockaway Railroad Company, and located the line westerly along and parallel to the beach and not a great distance therefrom. This road was built through the sand hills of the beach for a distance of about four miles, and was the beginning of the large railroad business since transacted on Rockaway Beach. But little of the line of this road now enters into the trackage of the Long Island Railroad.

In 1869 the Hempstead and Rockaway Railroad was organized for the purpose of building a road from Valley Stream to the village of Hempstead. While this road was built in connection with the South Side Railroad and was operated by it after its construction, it formed no part of the corporate property of the South Side Railroad Company. Their station was conveniently located on the southerly side of the village of Hempstead, and it drew off for many years the major part of the travel from the Long Island Railroad in the village of Hempstead, diverting it to the South Side Railroad.

While the business to Far Rockaway and Rockaway Beach was being developed by the South Side system, the Long Island Railroad Company determined to enter this field, and in 1870 the managers organized the New York & Rockaway Railroad Company, to construct a railroad from Jamaica to Far Rockaway. This road was located from what is now known as Rockaway Junction, about one mile east of the village of Jamaica, running southerly and in a pretty direct line crossing the main line of the South Side Railroad at Springfield, now Springfield Junction, continuing its course to the village of Far Rockaway, and crossing the Valley Stream branch of the South Side Railroad at a point a short distance north of Far Rockaway, and entered the village of Far Rockaway at a point much more convenient for public travel than that located by the Valley

Stream branch of the South Side Railroad. This corporation was organized apparently for the purpose of having the corporate rights and franchises vested in a corporation distinct from the Long Island Railroad Company. It was mortgaged and built upon the proceeds of the bonds sold. The line was leased to the Long Island Railroad Company for the term of thirty years, at a fixed rental sufficient to pay the interest on the bonds, and has been operated to this day by the Long Island Railroad Company under this lease. The corporate organization of this railroad has not been kept alive, and the Long Island Railroad Company's authority and control over the property is based upon the provisions of the lease. Upon the completion of this line, there sprang up a sharp competition between the South Side Railroad Company and the Long Island Railroad Company for the business accessible to both roads on the two lines.

We will now turn our attention to operations that were inaugurated on the north side of the Island, which resulted in an entire revolution and change of railroad affairs in that direction, and which preceded the final combination of all the railroad interests. We have before stated that the New York & Flushing Railroad had fallen into the hands of the Long Island Railroad Company, and that after the accomplishment of that purpose there was an abandonment in the construction of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad, by reason of the purpose having been accomplished that seemed to actuate the directors of the Long Island Railroad in entering upon the building of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad. The citizens of Flushing and vicinity, smarting under what they conceived to be a trick to induce them to enter upon the construction of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad, only for the purpose of using it as a club to scare the management of the New York & Flushing Railroad by the Long Island management, determined to revive that enterprise and push it to completion, as a rival of the New York & Flushing Railroad. To accomplish this object, they secured the co-operation of some wealthy citizens in the villages of College Point and Whitestone, who in 1868 proceeded to organize a new railroad company, called the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company. The articles of association were filed for constructing and maintaining a railroad from Hunter's Point to the village of Roslyn, with a branch at a point in the main line in or near

the village of Flushing to run to the villages of College Point and Whitestone. The Flushing interests having secured a majority of the old Woodside Company's stock, and thereby secured control of the franchise to cross Flushing Creek with a drawbridge, the new company located its line from a point on the north side of the East River, as follows: Starting at Hunter's Point and running thence immediately adjacent to and parallel with the Long Island Railroad as far as Woodside; then continuing their location over the line of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad to Bridge street, in the village of Flushing; continuing from there to the villages of College Point and Whitestone. This part of the line from Flushing to Whitestone was the branch contemplated in the articles of association.

In the sequel of the history of the road, no attempt was made to build the main line to Roslyn, and that part of the organization of this company need not be further considered. Work was pressed vigorously in the construction of this line, and finally, in the autumn of 1868, it was completed and opened for public travel. This road was new and well equipped, and very popular. The result was that it drew almost the entire travel off from the old line of the New York & Flushing Railroad. Soon thereafter negotiations were opened between the Long Island Railroad management and the management of this new enterprise to sell out to the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company the New York & Flushing Railroad. Competition had so far reduced the value of the New York & Flushing Railroad that the Long Island Railroad management were willing to get rid of it, and the management of the Flushing & North Side Railroad deemed it advisable to get rid of the competition of that line, and the transfer of the entire stock of the New York & Flushing Railroad to parties interested in the Flushing & North Side Railroad was the result. Thereafter, in April, 1869, the Legislature passed an enabling act, authorizing the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company to purchase the stock of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad, and to purchase a part of the New York & Flushing Railroad, and to consolidate them into one corporation. In pursuance of this act, the stock of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad was merged into that of the Flushing & North Side Railroad, and a deed was executed by the New York & Flushing Railroad Company, transferring the real estate and franchises of

that part of its road lying between Winfield and Main street, Flushing, to the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company. Thus terminated the property and franchises of the New York & Flushing Railroad Company to operate a railroad between Winfield and Flushing, but the New York & Flushing Railroad Company remained intact as a corporation with a railroad from Winfield to Long Island City, with its property rights unimpaired, and with its terminal facilities, such as they were, lying south of the depot and yards of the Long Island Railroad.

As the question of communication with New York was the all-important factor in all these railroad lines, the position of the New York & Flushing Railroad at Long Island City was unfortunate, in that it was cut off from access to the ferry by the depot and yards of the Long Island Railroad, and that it was impracticable to maintain a separate line of boats for the purpose of carrying its passengers to New York. It was this reason that moved the owners of this property to sever it as they did, taking the eastern end into the new organization, and leaving the western end to be disposed of as time and subsequent events might point a way. The problem that now presented itself to the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company was to utilize its property and make it available in serving the public. To effect this object, the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company filed a new map of location, extending its lines from Woodside to Winfield, where it formed a junction with the old main line of the New York & Flushing Railroad, continuing along the line of that road to a point a short distance west of Flushing Creek, on the Meadows, near Flushing, and running thence along the creek, on the westerly side thereof, to a junction with what was the former Woodside line, crossing the creek on the drawbridge of that line, and so making a continuous line to College Point and Whitestone. These changes were effected soon after the purchase was made, and have continued in operation to this day, forming the line as now operated between Long Island City and College Point. The line between Woodside and the drawbridge was abandoned.

Railroad matters on Long Island remained substantially unchanged until 1872. Prior to that date the late A. T. Stewart had purchased a large tract of land known as the Hempstead Plains, lying in the town of

Hempstead, and proposed to develop the same by building houses and locating improvements on the lands. There was no railroad through this tract of land, except the short cross road from Hempstead to Mineola, before referred to. He began active negotiations, first with the Long Island Railroad Company, and afterwards with the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company, to form a connection with either road as he could negotiate the best terms with. It resulted in a contract to form a connection with a proposed road, that Stewart was to build, with the Flushing & North Side Railroad, and in 1871 the Central Railroad Company of Long Island was organized. The proposed line was to run from a point on the line of the Flushing & North Side Railroad east of the Flushing Creek drawbridge, running thence easterly to the westerly boundary of the land of A. T. Stewart, and thence easterly through said lands to a point near Farmingdale, and thence to Bethpage, with a branch from the main line to the village of Hempstead. This road was constructed in all its parts, and proved a most disastrous enterprise to the Flushing & North Side Railroad Company, who were under contract to operate the road. In building that part of the line between Flushing and the westerly boundary of the land of A. T. Stewart, the road passed through the high lands forming the center of Long Island, and in making the cut on that portion of the line there was executed the largest and most expensive piece of earthwork on Long Island. This road was opened on January 1, 1873. The branch line from Garden City to Hempstead is the same line that is now operated to that village. It ran a short distance easterly from the old branch of the Long Island Railroad, and is now the only line that the Long Island Railroad Company operates into the village of Hempstead on the north side. That part of the old Mineola & Hempstead branch, built in the early days of the Long Island Railroad, lying south of the Stewart line and between that line and the village of Hempstead, was abandoned about 1878, and has never been opened or operated since.

The traffic on this central railroad of Long Island, otherwise known as the Stewart line, between Farmingdale and Flushing, including that from the village of Hempstead, proved entirely unremunerative, and the management of the Flushing & North Side Rail-

road, determining to try and secure further traffic for this line, entered upon the scheme of extending the line to the south side of Long Island, and organized the Central Railroad Extension Company. The articles of association for this new company were filed in April, 1873. The location of the line was from a point near Farmingdale, running southeasterly, crossing the South Side Railroad about one mile west of Babylon, and running to the Fire Island steamboat dock. The road was constructed and put in operation to the highway leading to the dock, thus forming a through line from Babylon, through Garden City, Flushing, reaching Hunter's Point, and landing its passengers on the north side of the ferry. Considerable traffic was thus drawn to the road, but, while operated from Babylon in competition with the South Side Railroad, the rates were low and the effect was damaging upon the South Side Road. It should be noted, in passing, that the opening of the branch road from Garden City to Hempstead practically destroyed the business of the Long Island Railroad to that village.

There now developed a distinctive system of railroads on Long Island, connected with the North Side roads, and it was deemed desirable to combine them into one system. The management contemplated further extensions, and organized the North Shore & Port Washington Railroad Company, and the Roslyn & Huntington Railroad Company. They then proceeded to consolidate these corporations, called the Flushing, North Shore & Central Railroad Company. This was effected by agreement of consolidation made the 19th day of June, 1874. The position of this corporation at that date was as follows: It owned a continuous line from Whitestone to Hunter's Point, with a passenger and freight depot on the north side of the ferries. It also had a branch from Great Neck to the junction of the main line in the village of Flushing. It had a line from Babylon to Flushing, where it united with the main line. It also had a branch from Hempstead to Garden City. It should be stated, however, that at this time it held the real estate of the Stewart line, from the westerly end of the Stewart purchase to Bethpage, and also the branch into Hempstead, under a contract of lease with A. T. Stewart, and had not at that time acquired the title to the lands over which it ran. It should

also be noted that the Port Washington Railroad and the Roslyn & Huntington Railroad were contemplated extensions easterly from Great Neck; but as they were never constructed, they need not be again referred to in this history. The Whitestone & Westchester Railroad was a short line extending from the main station in the village of Whitestone down to the water's edge. This road was actually constructed about 1883, and is now owned and operated by the Long Island Railroad Company.

Immediately upon the commencement of operations to construct the Central Railroad from the junction in Flushing to Garden City and Hempstead, and thence eastward on the Stewart property, the Long Island Railroad Company determined to deliver a counterblow to that system of roads, and promoted the construction of the Newtown & Flushing Railroad, which corporation was organized in 1871. This line ran from a point of junction on the main line of the Long Island Railroad at Winfield to the village of Flushing, a distance of about four miles. It thus formed, in connection with the main line of the Long Island Railroad, a rival line from Flushing to Long Island City, and tapped the most important railroad station of the North Side system. Immediately upon its opening the rates were reduced about one-half. It became a formidable rival to the North Side system at its most vital point, reducing the revenues of that road to a very material extent. The cars run on this road were painted white, and it was familiarly called by the public the "White Line."

Again returning to the South Side Railroad, to bring up the history of that division and record its progress in the contest for business on Long Island, it is proper to note that that corporation had no facilities on the waters of the East River for the transportation of freight over its line, nor were they satisfied with their terminal facilities for the transportation of passengers through Brooklyn from Bushwick to the East River by dummy engines. In looking for an outlet in another direction to relieve them from these two embarrassments, they organized the Hunter's Point and South Side Railroad Company in 1870. The articles of association proposed to build a road from a point on the South Side Railroad Company's line at Fresh Pond, running thence to the East River at a point between the Hunter's Point ferry and Ra-

venswood, that being the name of the village next north of Hunter's Point, opposite Blackwell's Island. Had this line been constructed in its entirety it would have crossed first the old line of the New York & Flushing Railroad between Winfield and Hunter's Point; secondly, the main line of the Long Island Railroad, and thirdly, the main line of the Flushing, North Shore & Central Railroad. Whatever may have been the ideas of its management as to the feasibility of the line contemplated, they never undertook to construct it in its entirety, but did construct their line from the point of junction at Fresh Pond to the contemplated crossing of the New York & Flushing Railroad, which was then a branch lying idle and not operated. Having reached this point of junction, and having already negotiated the purchase of the stock of the New York & Flushing Railroad, the Hunters' Point & South Side Railroad formed a connection with the New York & Flushing Railroad, and by this means secured an outlet on the property of the latter company to navigable waters on Newtown Creek, with such rights as that company had south of the Long Island Railroad station. They proceeded at once to put as much of this road as was necessary in order, so as to reach a freight dock which they constructed on Newtown Creek, and were thus in the field as competitors with the Long Island Railroad and the Flushing, North Shore and Central Railroad for the transportation of freight from all competitive points. They did not, however, change their terminal for passenger traffic. That continued as above stated. By an enabling act, the South Side Railroad Company was authorized to purchase the stock of the New York & Flushing Railroad, the Far Rockaway Branch Railroad and the Rockaway Railroad, of Queens County, and the Hunter's Point & South Side Railroad.

In September, 1872, by the authority of this act, the Far Rockaway Railroad Company was consolidated into the South Side Railroad Company, and a proper certificate filed in the office of the Secretary of State on September, 1872. On the same day a similar certificate was filed in the same manner, consolidating the Rockaway Railway Company and the Hunter's Point and South Side Railroad Company with the South Side Railroad Company. By these three acts the South Side Railroad Company became vested with the title of the

branch from Valley Stream to the western terminus on Rockaway Beach, and also to the branch from Fresh Pond to the junction of the New York & Flushing Railroad. For some reason, not apparent at this day, the management of the South Side Railroad saw fit not to avail themselves of the provisions of the act of the Legislature and complete the consolidation of the New York & Flushing Railroad with the South Side Railroad Company, and so that corporation continued outside of the corporate life of the South Side Railroad Company until the same was absorbed at a later date.

The details of construction of all the steam roads on Long Island up to 1874 that have since fallen into the Long Island Railroad corporation have now been stated. A summary of the position of these roads in 1874 will be profitable to an understanding of subsequent events, for it was at about this time that the contest was most bitter and severe between the three systems that we can now properly designate as the North Side system, the Main Line or Central system and the South Side system. To recapitulate and state the lines that were in active operation at this date, the North Side system had a line running from the north side of the East River ferry at Hunter's Point, running thence through Flushing and College Point to Whitestone; an extension from Main street, in Flushing, to Great Neck; a branch from Flushing through Rocky Hill and Garden City to Babylon, and a branch from Garden City to Hempstead. The Long Island Railroad proper controlled what we have designated the Main Line or Central system, which consisted of a road from Hunter's Point to Greenport, with a branch from Mineola to Hempstead, a branch from Manor to Sag Harbor, a branch from Jamaica to Far Rockaway, a branch from Hicksville to Port Jefferson, a branch from Mineola to Locust Valley, a branch from Winfield to Flushing, and a branch from Jamaica to East New York.

The South Side system consisted of a main line from Grand street, in the city of Brooklyn, through Bushwick, Jamaica, Springfield and Babylon to Patchogue, a branch from Valley Stream to Hempstead, a branch from Valley Stream to Rockaway Beach, and a branch from Fresh Pond to a point on Newtown Creek, in Long Island City. This summary gives a statement of all the lines of railroad in actual operation at the date spoken of, but does not include uncompleted parts of roads, nor

projected schemes that had not to that date been constructed. A person who will take a map of Long Island and look at the lines as stated cannot fail to observe that the three systems of railroads cross and intersect each other at numerous points, and competed on the same ground for travel and business that one railroad could easily handle. The effect of this situation was to have the sharpest kind of competition to secure the business, with the result that wherever competition could reach it was done at ruinous rates.

The first of these railroad systems to succumb to the ruinous effects of this competition was the South Side system. It defaulted in the payment of interest upon its bonds, in 1874, and was unable to pay a large floating debt that had accumulated. Foreclosure proceedings were instituted upon a series of second mortgage bonds to the amount of \$1,000,000, and such proceedings were had that the road, its property and franchises were sold and bid in by parties representing the North Side system of railroads. The North Side system had been promoted and carried forward chiefly by Conrad Poppenhusen, a gentleman of very large means, of the highest character and of a sanguine temperament. He had very limited experience in railroad matters, and for a few years was a very important factor in railroad affairs on Long Island until he came to financial grief.

Upon the purchase of the South Side property upon this foreclosure, a new corporation was organized, called the Southern Railroad Company. Its articles of association were filed in September, 1874. This new corporation succeeded to all the property and franchises of the old South Side Railroad, except a branch from Valley Stream to Hempstead, which had never been consolidated with the South Side Railroad. At this time it will be noted that the North Side system was now in harmony with the South Side system; that, while there was no actual consolidation, the same parties were owners of both systems of railroads. Considerable modification resulted from this uniformity of interests in the administration of the business of the two systems of railroads on the island. Very soon after the new corporation was organized, it abandoned the branch from Valley Stream to Hempstead. There was a first mortgage upon that branch, which was subsequently foreclosed and the property sold. No attempt has ever been made to open that line of road since that date, and it is among the abandoned roads on the island. Another

change that was effected took place near Babylon. It will be remembered that when the Central Extension Railroad was constructed, it crossed the line of the South Side Railroad, continuing its way towards the Fire Island Dock. That part of it lying south of the South Side Railroad was abandoned, the track was taken up, and a curve put in at the junction, so as to make a connection with the South Side Railroad. No other material changes were made in this road until a subsequent event of great importance. For two years the fastest passenger trains were run from Patchogue to Babylon, thence over the Flushing, North Shore & Central Railroad, via Garden City and Flushing, to Hunter's Point.

Practically the railroad fight was now on against the Long Island Railroad by the combined roads on the north and south, although legally the two corporations, the north and the south, were still distinct properties. A war of rates continued with unsatisfactory results to the railroads. In 1875 the earnings of the Long Island Railroad were only \$798,000; the Flushing, North Shore & Central, \$429,691, and the Southern Road \$340,000, making a total of \$1,567,691. In 1876 a great change came, which was the precursor of the present Long Island Railroad system. Mr. Conrad Poppenhusen and a few of his associates bought out a majority of the stock of the Long Island Railroad, and thus for the first time were all the railroad properties on Long Island brought under one harmonious control.

Immediately upon the control of all the railroads being substantially under one management, changes were inaugurated to facilitate business and combine the corporation under one management. To effect this object, a tripartite agreement or lease was executed between the three systems, by which the Long Island Railroad Company was the lessee of the North Side and South Side systems. This lease was dated in 1876. It is not out of place to state here that if these leases had been judicious and fair to all the corporations, at this point would have been established the permanent co-operation and the ultimate consolidation of all these roads. At the time the leases were executed, there were very sharp and conflicting differences of opinion as to the basis of the leases. On one side was a conservative element who contended for rates very different from those that were established by the contract. On the other hand, there was a sanguine element in the board who believed that if the whole system were relieved from the effects

of competition the Long Island Railroad would be able justly and properly to assume the fixed charges established by the terms of the lease. The sequel showed that the conservative element was in the right, and that the sanguine element was doomed to a bitter disappointment. The whole structure thus brought together was doomed to fall apart, to be again reconstructed into the system now prevailing. The one weak point was the excess of fixed charges over and above that which the lessee road could, by any possibility, pay. It was the same rock upon which so many railroad schemes have been wrecked.

We will now turn our attention to changes that quickly followed the making of the lease, or tripartite agreement of 1876, many of which changes have remained to this day in the operation of the road. The first change was to immediately stop the running of cars over the White Line, so-called, running from Newtown to Flushing. This line was soon thereafter entirely abandoned, and no attempt has ever been made to open it for public travel. The next most important change was to extend the western freight line of the southern system from the freight dock on Newtown Creek into the passenger station of the Long Island Railroad, thus making it possible for the trains destined for the South Side system to depart from Long Island City and proceed via Fresh Pond to Jamaica, and from thence along the South Side Railroad. After this change was made, the continuance of transportation of passengers by dummy engines through the city of Brooklyn, from Bushwick to the East River, was discontinued, but the line from Fresh Pond to Bushwick was continued as a branch line or spur of the main line, a condition of things that still remains unchanged. Important changes were also effected at Hunter's Point, which was then known as Long Island City, by connecting the line of the North Side division with the main line of the Long Island Railroad, and thus carrying the passenger trains of that division also into the Long Island Railroad depot on the south side of the ferry. A connection was also made between the tracks of the North Side division that ran to the north side of the ferry and the main line of the Long Island Railroad, and the property of the North Side division on the north side of the ferry became the principal depot for the receipt of freight for the united systems, and still continues the freight yard for New York freight. Another change of lesser importance,

but of great practical convenience, was effected, by putting in a curve at Springfield Junction, uniting the Rockaway branch of the Long Island Railroad with the main line of the Southern division, and transferring the through passenger business from the short line, cutting off from Jamaica to Springfield onto the Long Island main line as far as Rockaway Junction, and thence to Springfield on the New York and Rockaway Road, and from Springfield eastward on the main line of the southern division. The effect of this was to get rid of one of two stations in the village of Jamaica, with its attendant expenses. Another change of minor importance was effected by abandoning entirely the operation of the old line from Garden City to Hempstead. By these various minor changes two stations were gotten rid of in the village of Hempstead, one station in the village of Jamaica, and one station in the village of Flushing.

The roads were operated in this manner by the new management for about eighteen months, but the Long Island Railroad Company became so embarrassed by the fixed charges and a rapidly accumulating floating debt that in the fall of 1877 it passed into the hands of a receiver, Mr. Thomas R. Sharp being appointed to that position. Then was entered upon a series of movements by bondholders that would have dissipated and divided the scheme of union of the three systems, except that the bondholders were unable to see how it was possible to operate the separate divisions with any better success than had been found in the former experience; and while they knew it was necessary to readjust matters, the general sentiment on all sides seemed to be that there was no prosperity for the roads on Long Island except by united management. The details of the processes by which the new adjustments were made would be tedious, and could only be fully stated by reciting the proceedings in full. The results only will be stated here. A mortgage on the Southern Railroad was foreclosed, thus cutting out the lease-hold right of the Long Island Railroad Company in that road, and temporarily severing it from the Long Island Railroad system. The purchasers under the mortgage foreclosure of the Southern Railroad of Long Island organized a new railroad corporation under date of November, 1870, under the name of the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company, and took title to all of the South Side Rail-

road system, except the line from Valley Stream to Hempstead, and also the line from Valley Stream to Far Rockaway, and thence along the Rockaway Beach, these properties not being covered by the mortgage foreclosed. The property covered by the mortgage was the line from Brooklyn to Patchogue, and the branch from Fresh Pond to the junction with the New York & Flushing Railroad. The road from Valley Stream to Hempstead was mortgaged, and the bondholders foreclosed that mortgage, but were never able to dispose of the line of road between Valley Stream and Hempstead, and it has been abandoned to the present date. A mortgage upon the road from Valley Stream to Far Rockaway was foreclosed, and title to the same was taken by Henry Graves on such foreclosure. Thus Henry Graves became the purchaser of the line from Valley Stream to Far Rockaway. On the 19th day of December, 1882, Henry Graves conveyed this property from Valley Stream to Far Rockaway to the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company, and thus this branch railroad again became attached to the South Side system. The title to that piece of road from Far Rockaway westward along the beach passed to the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company through the two foreclosures of the mortgage on the South Side Railroad and the mortgage on the Southern Railroad.

We will now turn our attention to the changes that were effected on the north side many of which were more radical than those effected on the south side. During the receivership of Thomas R. Sharp, and about the year 1878, he determined to abandon the part of the line of the Central Railroad between Flushing and the western line of the Stewart property, and effected a connection between the western end of the road on the Stewart property and the main line of the Long Island Railroad, thus bringing the passengers who had formerly passed from Babylon westward to Long Island City, *via* Flushing, down on the main line to Long Island City. A foreclosure of the mortgage of the Central Railroad was effected in 1879, by which the title to that road passed to Egisto P. Fabbri. The policy having been entered upon of abandoning that line and yet preserving at each end of it a piece that might be of advantage to the contemplated system, Mr. Fabbri, in October, 1879, conveyed to the Long Island Railroad Company a por-

tion of the eastern end of the old Central Railroad between Creedmoor and the crossing of the main line of the Long Island Railroad. A curve was put in between the main line and this piece of road, and thus the Long Island Railroad Company became entitled to the spur from Floral Park to Creedmoor. A piece of this road in the village of Flushing was at a later date conveyed to the Long Island City and Flushing Railroad Company.

On the 30th day of December, 1880, another great change in the affairs of the railroads on Long Island was consummated. On that day, Receiver Sharp was discharged, and Austin Corbin was substituted as receiver in place of Mr. Sharp. This change was the result of a purchase by Austin Corbin and his associates of a large majority of the stock of the Long Island Railroad, and other securities connected with the railroad system. Mr. Corbin* ran the road

*Austin Corbin, whose best and most enduring memorial in the Long Island Railroad, was one of the most noted capitalists of his time, and his career was from first to last truly an American one,—one that could not be paralleled in any other country in the world. This was conspicuous especially in his later years, when he strove to utilize his means and brains and influence to promote what was really a magnificent series of projects for the public benefit. In most other countries a man who had successfully engaged in the battle of life would have retired to enjoy himself "under his own vine and fig tree;" but almost until the close of his career Mr. Corbin was interested in improving matters around him, in using his resources in benefiting the public, and while he never posed as a philanthropist, expected a fair return for all the capital he employed, and engaged in business on business principles, all he did was with a view of placing some benefit within reach, and at the service, of the people. Even his management of his private property, his summer home, had this end in view.

Mr. Corbin was born at Newport, N. H., July 11, 1827. He studied law at Harvard and when he was graduated, in 1849, returned to his native town and began to practice. He soon found it too slow, however, and he determined to try his fortune in the west. In 1852 he settled in Davenport, Iowa, where he organized what is now the First National Bank, and remained there until 1866, when he came to New York and fully entered upon that career as a banker and financier which long before he passed away made his name famous throughout the country, and indeed throughout the whole financial world. He established the Corbin Banking Company in 1873 and entered upon his remarkable series of exploits as a railroad financier by the reorganization of the Indiana, Bloomington & Western Railroad. His connection with the Long Island Railroad is fully told in the body of this work and need not be repeated here. He was also at one time receiver of the Philadelphia & Reading Railroad and became its president, and he was president of the New York and New England Railroad Company, and of the Elmira, Cortland & Northern Railroad Company, and a director in a host of financial institutions of every description.

He died, the result of an accident, June 4, 1896.

as receiver until the 15th day of October, 1881, when he was directed by an order of the Supreme Court to restore the property of the Long Island Railroad Company to the control of its directors. Mr. Corbin infused into the management of the Long Island Railroad a new spirit of energy. He inaugurated many and great reforms, that placed the system of railroads on the island on a much higher plane of efficiency than they had ever before enjoyed. The most important enterprise entered upon in Mr. Corbin's administration was undertaken the first summer after he had been appointed receiver, and had also been elected President of the Board of Directors of the Long Island Railroad Corporation. By the co-operation of the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company, that corporation, under its corporate powers, extended the road from Patchogue to Eastport on the Sag Harbor Branch of the Long Island Railroad, forming a junction there with that branch line, and thus was inaugurated a through line of railroad from Sag Harbor along the south side of the island as far as Springfield; running thence to Jamaica; and uniting with the main line of the Long Island Railroad that point. This was the only piece of railroad construction inaugurated by Mr. Corbin for several years, but the general characteristics of the road and its rolling stock were radically changed under his vigorous administration.

In 1881 the mortgage on the Central Extension Railroad was foreclosed. This was the road built from Farmingdale to Babylon, before referred to. On this foreclosure the title was taken in the name of Benjamin S. Henning, who subsequently on the 9th day of February, 1882, conveyed the same to the Long Island Railroad Company. Thus the Long Island Railroad Company became entitled to that branch of railroad.

In 1880 a foreclosure had been consummated of a mortgage on the Flushing & North Side Railroad, and on the sale title to that property was taken by Egisto P. Fabbri and Charles Knoblauch. In March, 1881, Fabbri and Knoblauch filed a certificate organizing the Long Island City & Flushing Railroad Company, and on the first day of April, 1881, Fabbri and Knoblauch conveyed to that corporation the property they had acquired on the foreclosure proceedings. By this conveyance the Long Island City & Flushing Railroad Company became entitled

to a line of railroad from Long Island City to Main street, in the village of Flushing, and also the line of road from the junction near the drawbridge over Flushing Creek, running thence to Whitestone. By this deed, and by virtue of the former consolidation of the Flushing & Woodside Railroad, the new corporation became vested of all there was remaining of value in the Flushing & Woodside Railroad. It consisted chiefly of the franchise to cross Flushing Creek near the Bridge street station in the village of Flushing. The road heretofore spoken of as the North Shore Railroad, extending from Main street, in the village of Flushing, was thus severed from any legal connection with any corporation, but in fact was an outlying branch, which was subsequently acquired, as will be now explained. In 1882 a mortgage upon this North Shore Railroad, running from Flushing to Great Neck, was foreclosed, and on the sale title was taken in the name of Austin Corbin and J. Rogers Maxwell. On the 2d day of October, 1884, Corbin and Maxwell conveyed this piece of road to the Long Island City & Flushing Railroad Company, and thus for the first time the fee of this road became vested in the corporation that owned the title to the line from Flushing to Long Island City.

During the year 1886 a mortgage on the Whitestone & Westchester Road was foreclosed, and the property sold to John R. Maxwell and Henry Graves. On the 28th day of April, 1887, Maxwell and Graves conveyed this property to the Long Island City & Flushing Railroad Company, and thus the latter company became entitled to the railroad to the water's edge in the village of Whitestone.

No attempt was made by the owners of the North Side system of railroads, that had become legally severed from the control of the Long Island Railroad Company, nor by the owners of the South Side system of railroads, that had also become severed from the Long Island Railroad Company, to operate them as independent properties, but they were operated for a few years under leases made with each of the new organizations by the Long Island Railroad Company.

On the 30th day of September, 1889, a certificate was filed in the office of the Secretary of State of New York, that the whole capital stock of the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company had been surrendered or trans-

ferred to the Long Island Railroad Company. By this certificate of surrender under the statute the property and franchises of the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company became merged in and consolidated with the Long Island Railroad Company, and thus the Long Island Railroad Company acquired title to all those roads that had been merged into the Brooklyn & Montauk Railroad Company. On the 2d of April, 1889, a certificate was filed in the office of the Secretary of State, certifying that the entire capital stock of the Long Island City & Flushing Railroad Company had been surrendered or transferred to the Long Island Railroad Company. The effect of this was to merge and consolidate the line of road from Long Island City to Great Neck, via Flushing, together with the branch from College Point to Whitestone, in the Long Island Railroad Company.

In April, 1891, a certificate was filed in the office of the Secretary of State, that the entire capital stock of the New York & Flushing Railroad Company had been surrendered and transferred to the Long Island Railroad Company, thus effecting a legal union between the Long Island Railroad Company and the remnant of the old New York & Flushing Railroad, which was being utilized in the system. That part of the New York & Flushing Railroad lying between Winfield, and the junction of the South Side Railroad had been abandoned for many years, and still remains an abandoned line.

It will be remembered that the Stewart line, so-called, running across Hempstead Plains, had never been acquired in fee, but up to 1892 had been run as a leased line. On June 1, 1892, the heirs of A. T. Stewart conveyed the fee of that line to the Long Island Railroad Company. The line conveyed by this deed extended from the junction of that road with the main line at Floral Park eastwardly to Farmingdale and Bethpage, together with the branch from Garden City to Hempstead. By the operation of this deed, the Long Island Railroad Company became vested with the title and property of this piece of railroad.

The history of all of the railroad property owned by the Long Island Railroad Company in its own right is now complete. There are other railroads on Long Island operated by the Long Island Railroad Company that will need further consideration and explanation, but at this stage it will facilitate an un-

derstanding if we stop and look at the property of the Long Island Railroad corporation standing in its own name, regardless of the attached leased lines. We will now recapitulate the lines owned by this company, disregarding all old names and treating the present property as a unit as it is in fact:

A line from Long Island City via Winfield, Jamaica and Farmingdale, to Greenport.

A branch from Mineola to Locust Valley.

A branch from Hicksville to Northport.

A branch from Manorville to Eastport.

A branch from Mineola to Hempstead.

A branch from Floral Park to Creedmoor.

A branch from Floral Park, via Garden City, to Babylon.

A branch from Bethpage Junction to Bethpage.

A line from Long Island City, via Fresh Pond, Jamaica and Babylon, to Sag Harbor.

A branch from Fresh Pond to Bushwick.

A branch from Valley Stream to Rockaway Beach.

A line from Long Island City to Great Neck.

A branch from Flushing to Whitestone Landing.

Such are the lines and branches owned by the present Long Island Railroad Company. That part of the Southern division owned by the Long Island Railroad Company is the old line from Jamaica to Springfield, not now much used. The principal trains pass eastward to Rockaway Junction, and thence to Springfield Junction. This piece of road of the New York & Rockaway Railroad between the two junctions is operated under lease from the New York and Rockaway Railroad Company. The balance of the New York and Rockaway Railroad from Springfield Junction to Far Rockaway was abandoned many years ago.

There are a number of leased lines now operated by the parent company of more or less importance. By far the most important one is the line from Jamaica to Flatbush avenue in the city of Brooklyn. We have not undertaken to give the history of the old Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad. For the purposes of this history it is sufficient to say that through foreclosures and reorganizations the property of that corporation finally vested in the Atlantic Avenue Railroad Company. A part of the road between East New York and the ferry

was for many years run as a street railroad, and the part between Jamaica and East New York was run for about ten years as a leased line of the Long Island Railroad Company. In 1876 the Legislature, in response to the then urgent demands of the authorities and citizens of Brooklyn, passed an act restoring the use of steam power in Atlantic avenue, in the city of Brooklyn, from Flatbush avenue to the city line. In pursuance of this authority, a new lease was effected in 1877 between the Long Island Railroad Company and the Atlantic Avenue Railroad Company, by which the former leased the line from Jamaica to Flatbush avenue for ninety-nine years, upon a basis of a per cent. of the earnings being paid as rent. This percentage basis was on the 30th day of April, 1895, changed to a fixed rental. When the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad was first constructed, that corporation acquired a considerable tract of land in the village of Jamaica, and erected a station and other terminal facilities there. The use of this land passed under the various leases to the Long Island Railroad Company, and in the construction of depots, side-tracks, yard facilities and other structures appurtenant to so large and important a station and junction, the lands of the two corporations have been used in common, disregarding the property lines between the two corporations, so that at this day, without an actual survey, no one could determine in the tangle of tracks and structures at Jamaica on which company's land they are built. This is probably not a very material matter at this time, but it is a fact worth noting in the history of the Long Island Railroad Company. Under the new lease, the track between Jamaica and Flatbush avenue was relaid in the early summer of 1877, and on the first day of July in that year locomotives and cars began running between Flatbush avenue and Jamaica. While this road is only a leased line of the Long Island Railroad Company, it is a very important factor to that corporation.

Another leased line of importance to the Long Island Railroad Company is that of the New York & Rockaway Railroad. This line was leased to the Long Island Railroad Company in 1871 for a period of thirty years, and the lease on the same will expire in 1901.

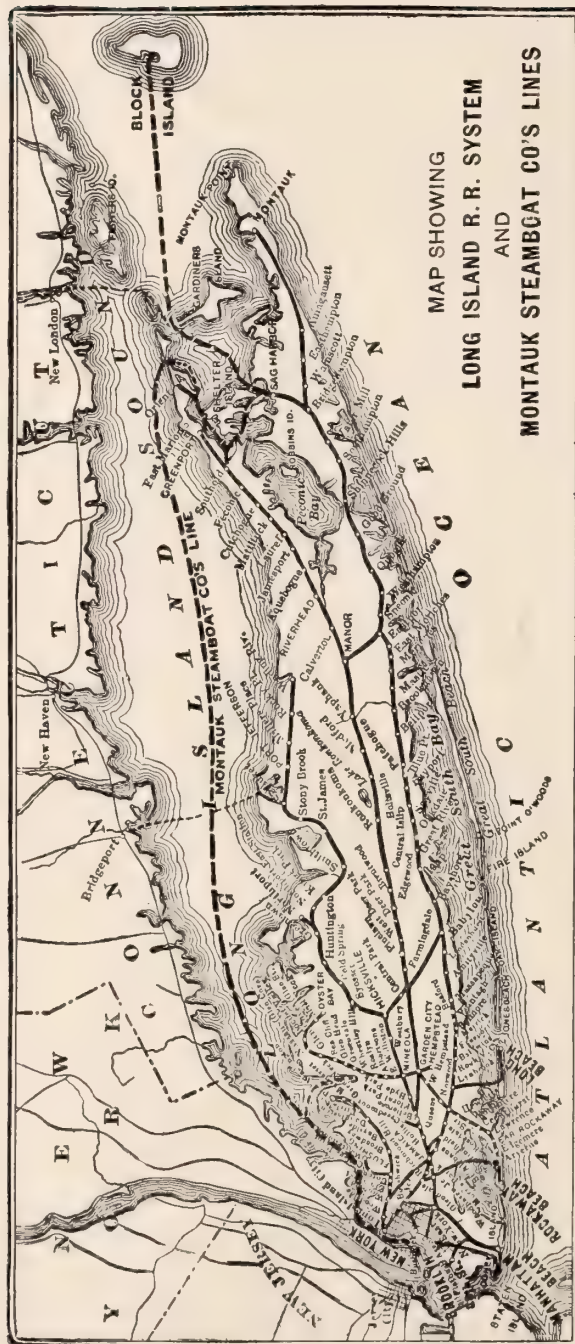
In 1886 a railroad was organized under the name of the Oyster Bay Extension Railroad Company. The purpose of this organization was to extend the line of the Glen Cove branch, so-called, from Locust Valley to Oys-

ter Bay. This road was constructed by the Long Island Railroad Company, the latter corporation having subscribed for or secured the entire capital stock under the provisions of its charter, allowing it to subscribe for or purchase the stock of any connecting road on Long Island. The Long Island Railroad Company guaranteed the bonds issued in the construction of that railroad, and has operated it since its construction as a leased line, without having executed any written lease, but have paid by the way of rental the interest on the bonds issued for its construction.

In 1870 another railroad was organized, entitled the New York & Long Beach Railroad Company. This road was constructed from what was then known as Pearsall's Corners, now Lynbrook, to Long Beach, where a summer hotel and numerous cottages were erected. In February, 1880, it was leased to the Long Island Railroad Company, under an agreement by which a per cent. of its earnings should be paid to the corporation. In the sequel it was found that this per cent. was not sufficient to meet the interest on the bonds issued for the construction of the road, and a mortgage to secure the bonds was subsequently foreclosed, which terminated the lease, and a new corporation was organized. Since the reorganization of this road, it has sometimes been operated by the Long Island Railroad Company as a leased line, but much of the time it has been idle.

In July, 1892, the Long Island Railroad Company, North Shore Branch, was organized. The purpose of this branch was to extend the Smithtown & Port Jefferson Railroad eastward to Wading River. In September, 1892, the corporate rights and franchises of this corporation were merged and consolidated with the Smithtown & Port Jefferson Railroad Company, and the name adopted by this new organization was the Long Island Railroad Company, North Shore Branch. By this operation the name of the Smithtown & Port Jefferson Railroad disappears from the map of Long Island, and the entire branch from Northport to Wading River is now the Long Island Railroad Company, North Shore Branch, and is now operated as a branch of the Long Island Railroad.

In 1892 a corporation was organized under the name and title of the New York Bay Extension Railroad Company. The line of this road was to be from Garden City, in the town of Hempstead, to a point in the city of Brooklyn (formerly the town of New Lots) in the



county of Kings, at or near the intersection of the New Lots road with the tracks and right-of-way of the New York, Brooklyn & Manhattan Beach Railway Company. This line, if constructed in its entirety, would cross the line of the Southern division at Valley Stream. It has been constructed from Garden City to Valley Stream, and is now operated as a leased line.

In 1893 the Montauk Extension Railroad Company was organized. The purpose of this organization was to build a road from Bridgehampton to Fort Pond Bay, on Montauk Point. The road was subsequently constructed and is now operated by the Long Island Railroad Company as a leased line.

In 1896 there was organized a railroad corporation called the Great Neck & Port Washington Railroad Company, to construct an extension of the North Shore division from Great Neck to Port Washington. This railroad is now in process of construction, and when completed will undoubtedly prove a valuable feeder to the Long Island Railroad system.

We have now given all of the lines on Long Island that attach themselves in any way to the main line east of the city of Brooklyn, but which have not been incorporated into the Long Island Railroad Company. There is another railroad, however, that holds an anomalous position connected with the Long Island Railroad Company, and yet not one of its leased lines. A short history of this enterprise will explain the position of that corporation. In 1879 the New York, Woodhaven & Rockaway Railroad Company was organized for the purpose of building a railroad from Hunter's Point (Long Island City) to Rockaway Beach, crossing the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad at Woodhaven, and thence across the Meadows to the beach. The project originally contemplated an independent line to the East River, but the projectors of the scheme, encountering what to them were insurmountable obstacles in getting through Long Island City, entered into a contract with Thomas R. Sharp, as receiver for the Long Island Railroad Company, by which they commenced building at Glendale, and completed their road to Rockaway Beach. Their contract with the Long Island Railroad Company gave them track privileges and terminal facilities in the Long Island Railroad depot in Long Island City. This road furnished its own equipment and operated its own trains under this contract, but, coming to financial embarrassment, its corporate property and

franchises were foreclosed and sold to Austin Corbin and others, who, on the 20th day of August, 1887, conveyed the property to a new corporation, called the New York & Rockaway Beach Railroad Company. By agreement between the Long Island Railroad Company and this corporation, track privileges and terminal facilities were given it in the Long Island Railroad station in Long Island City, and also a sort of joint occupation and a readjustment of that part of the Long Island Railroad tracks between Far Rockaway and the western terminus of its property on Rockaway Beach was made between the two corporations. The business of this corporation, while apparently a branch line, has been conducted under these agreements separate and distinct from the Long Island Railroad Company.

There are other lines leased or controlled by the Long Island Railroad Company, running to Coney Island, of which no attempt is made here to trace their history or status. The name of one is the New York, Brooklyn & Manhattan Beach Railway Company, and the other is the Prospect Park & Coney Island Railroad Company. These lines are operated chiefly for summer traffic to Coney Island, and form properly no part of the Long Island Railroad system as such.

Soon after the death of Austin Corbin the Long Island Railroad Company was re-organized and Mr. W. H. Baldwin, Jr., became President. Under him the road was worked to its fullest capacity; its mileage was extended until it controlled 415 miles and the entire road was put in splendid physical condition, with new rails, rolling stock and the like. The patronage of the road, under a liberal construction as to rates, steadily increased, the summer business at an especially gratifying rate; but the isolated condition of the system prevented a full measure of success being attained. For four months in each year the road had all the business it could attend to; for the remainder it had barely enough to pay expenses, although the winter schedule of trains compared with that of the summer was a sadly abbreviated one and running expenses were cut down to a minimum. It has become conceded in railroad circles that only trunk lines, or lines

having trunk connections can be made to pay; but the Long Island road seemed so completely isolated that there appeared no possibility of effecting an improvement in that regard. Austin Corbin had tried the experiment of running a line to Boston, with the aid of ferryboats, and so bringing the Long Island road into touch with the railroad system of the country; but the effort was a flat and pronounced failure. The public would not use the route and that settled it. A scheme was subsequently broached of having European steamers land passengers at Montauk Point, but that project never got beyond the stage of discussion. In fact all such schemes of expansion seemed doomed to disappointment until the announcement was made that the Pennsylvania Railroad Company had acquired a controlling interest in the road and the exclusion bogey of over half a century disappeared as if by magic.

This move on the part of the Pennsylvania system was not made without thorough calculation, but it was not until the summer of 1901 that the schemes made possible by the acquisition of the road had sufficiently advanced to be made public. Briefly put, these plans are based on the possession or control, first, of the present lines of the Long Island Railroad; second, on connections across the island at its western end with the New York Connecting Railroad, giving an outlet by means of three bridges across the East River over Ward's and Randall's Islands to the mainland, where connection will be made with the New York & New Haven Road and with the Harlem; third, on the tunnel from Hunter's Point to Manhattan at the neighborhood of Long Acre Square, and, finally, on the tunnel from the Battery in Manhattan to the present terminus of the Long Island Railroad, at Flatbush and Atlantic avenues, in

Brooklyn. The plans have two general objectives. One is the development of freight and passenger traffic with the old city of New York and the extensive region on Long Island, including the old city of Brooklyn and the Borough of Queens. The other relates to comparatively close connection between the Pennsylvania main lines from the West and the whole of New England. It is proposed to build a great central station for the entire system at East New York, and when the improvements are completed Brooklyn will be a station on a through trunk line having connections with the entire country.

The improvements thus outlined are to cost in round figures \$18,000,000. A beginning is to be made at once,—in fact the plans for the tunnel from Hunter's Point (Long Island City) to Long Acre Square were filed on June 22 in the office of the County Clerk of Queens. On Long Acre Square, Manhattan, the Long Island Railway is to have a Union depot, and as the Pennsylvania Company at the present time is organizing a corporation to build a bridge across the Hudson, a bridge that will connect with the station thus proposed, it is easy to see that changes are about to begin which will amount to a revolution.

Whatever the other results of that revolution may be, Long Island is certain to be benefited. When the details thus outlined are completed the Long Island Railroad will be a link in a transcontinental route, and the project is so thorough that no part of the island will be left outside the benefits of the general scheme. It means an addition of thousands to the regular home-makers of the island, a vast increase in its trade, its manufactures and its commerce generally and a thorough development of its magnificent summer resorts.

KINGS COUNTY

CHAPTER XXV.

KINGS COUNTY.

KINGS COUNTY in its beginning was essentially a Dutch community. Gravesend, of course, was English, but its existence does not change the fact of Dutch pre-eminence, for it was permitted to be established by the authority of a Dutch Governor, and was at first as completely under Dutch laws and Dutch protection as was any other settlement on the island. When Col. Nicolls made his memorable descent upon New Netherland and forced the surrender of New Amsterdam and the abdication of the lion-hearted Peter, and wiped out the authority of "Their High Mightinesses," he formed the towns in what is now Kings county, with Newtown, Staten Island and part of Westchester into one of the Ridings—the West Riding—of his then newly created Yorkshire. That was in 1664. The reconquest by the Dutch under Governor Colve was too brief an interlude to permit much of a change in geographical nomenclature, or such frivolous things as territorial divisions, and so the West Riding of Yorkshire may be said to hold good for the west end of the island until 1683, when the present county of Kings was formed along with those of Queens and Suffolk. It had an area of some 70,000 square miles, and was divided into six towns,—Brooklyn, Bushwick, Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht and Gravesend. These towns, with the exception of Gravesend, "just grew,"—that is, they were not definitely settled at first with the

idea of becoming towns and rose into that pre-eminence simply because local conditions attracted settlers to given points, and also because it was necessary that the settlers should have rallying places for defense. Gravesend on the other hand was settled at first as a town colony. Over the territory included in these townships, and indeed over all the territory west of Oyster Bay, the authority of the Dutch rulers of the New Netherland was nominally supreme until Capt. Nicolls' upheaval sent Stuyvesant into retirement to his "Bouwerie," and not even the claims of Connecticut acting under its charter of 1662, which awarded it territorial jurisdiction over the whole of Long Island, could change the allegiance of the sturdy Dutch farmers, there was nothing to gain by the change, and they understood their rules, although the paternal rule of such men as Kieft and Stuyvesant was sometimes felt irksome. Of Long Island outside of the towns in Kings County it can hardly be said that the rule of the West India Company was ever secure with the exception of Hempstead, Jamaica and Newtown; but these towns, like Gravesend, were permitted to choose their own officers and to manage their own affairs subject to review and approval by the Governor, a right that was rarely exercised. Oyster Bay, too, the boundary town, was another English settlement over which the Dutch claimed sway, but it finally was yielded up to Connecticut. In the Dutch

towns of Kings county (to use the best known name for the territory) the rule of the Governor in New Amsterdam was supreme. It used to be the boast of the old chroniclers that the Dutch honestly bought from the aborigines—and honestly paid the stipulated price—all the land in what afterward became Kings and Queens counties. In this claim they are perfectly justified by the record, although it seems to us that they drove a pretty hard bargain on their part, while, so far as the Indians went, it was a question of either sell or fight, for the white man had come to stay and the time had come for the native to go west in search of new lands, or remain and accept the virtues or the vices of the new order of things. Most of them remained; most of them, nay all of them, it might be said, the exceptions were so few, accepted the vices of the white man; and gradually, but surely, disappeared from the face of the earth. The Dutch Governors, as we have seen, were autocrats; but autocracy is inseparable from a system of paternal government. They were loyal, except perhaps Minuit, to their task of building up the province over which they ruled, or making the people happy and contented and as comfortable in surroundings and wealth as possible,—always, however, remembering the paramount claims of their High Mightinesses and the success of the West India Company's venture. Every effort was made to build up Long Island—or what they could see of it from the New Amsterdam shore of the East River or could discover of it in a day's journey. By order of the company a settler could easily get a patent for a piece of meadowland, more indeed than he could cultivate, on a scale of payment little more than nominal and which would have made the modern phrase of "easy terms" to seem extortionate. To some farmers, indeed, free passages from Holland were given, and there is no doubt that the company did its best to people the territory. Large estates were even given to enterprising capital-

ists who promised to induce settlers, and patents for land were freely given at times to all who had interest with the Governor and Council or could show a probability of their turning them to some use. A few of these people held the land simply for speculative purposes, much as property is similarly held in our day. But the bulk of those who crossed the East River with a patent went there to stay. In this way was the territory of Kings County first built up, but the process was naturally a slow one, and its early difficulties and dangers were many and serious.

The leading event in the history of Kings county is the Battle of Brooklyn (or Battle of Long Island, as it is generally and incorrectly called); but as that is fully narrated in one chapter, and the story of the British occupation told in another, there is no need of recurring to it here beyond this scanty mention. The part which Long Island played in the war of 1812 is also told—and these practically exhaust its story—with the momentous change which took place on Jan. 1, 1897, when, as the result of the vote of a majority of its inhabitants, it became part and parcel of the Greater New York, although still retaining its standing as a district county. A forecast of this great amalgamation was seen in 1857, when an act of the Legislature turned the counties of New York, Kings, Westchester and Richmond into a single police district, under the designation of the Metropolitan district, under the direct control of the State. This innovation did not last long, nor can it be said to have been in any way a success, although it seems to have proved beneficial to the police administration in Brooklyn.

Kings County and the Borough of Brooklyn are coterminous in their boundaries; but for administrative purposes the county administration is maintained,—that is, there is a distinct set of county officials in Kings,—sheriff, county clerk, public administrator, district attorney, etc.,—the county administrations of the component parts of Greater New

York not having been altered in that respect by consolidation. The County Courts are also maintained, and the general Government appears in its arrangements to have ignored the great fact of consolidation altogether. Kings County may be described as occupying the entire southwestern end of Long Island and to be bounded on the north and west by the county of New York: on the west by New

York Bay; on the south by Gravesend Bay, the Atlantic Ocean and by Jamaica Bay, and on the east and north by the county of Queens, including all wharves, piers, docks and basins lying southerly and easterly of the centre line of the East River.

The history of Kings County is simply a history of its townships and that history we will now proceed to relate.



CHAPTER XXVI.

FLATLANDS.

BY a narrow margin of a few months the old town of Flatlands could claim, in fact did claim, when the claim was worth anything, priority over Breuckelen and the other towns of Kings county. The first recorded purchase of land in the old town was dated June 16, 1637, when Andres Hudden and Wolfert Genretse Van Couwenhoven bought from the Canarsie Indians "the westernmost of the three flats (prairies), called by the sellers Kas-kutenu." On July 16th in the same year Gov. Van Twiller secured by patent another of the flats; and Jacobus Van Curler (or Corlear), who in 1638 was a teacher in New Amsterdam, secured a patent for the third flat. The two latter transactions seem to have been in the nature of land speculations, but Hudden and Van Couwenhoven bought a place on which they might settle and earn their living. Their holding they called Achtervelt. In 1639 Hudden gave up, or sold, his interest in the plantation to Van Couwenhoven, although they appear to have continued for some time in partnership as regards other lands which they held in the neighborhood, and removed to New Amsterdam. Hudden seems to have been a politician, an almost continuous office-holder. Such was the beginning of Flatlands. In an inventory taken in 1638 it seems the owners of Achtervelt "had a house set around with long, round palisades, the house being twenty-six feet long, twenty-two feet wide, forty feet deep, with the roof covered above and around with plank; two lofts, one above another, and

a small chamber at their side; one barn forty feet long, eighteen feet wide, and twenty-four feet deep; and one bergh with five posts, forty feet long. The plantation was stocked with six cows, old and young, three oxen and five horses."

It was not long before the plantation became the centre of a settlement. Peter Stuyvesant had a Bouwerie there which was farmed for him by Peter Wyckoff, who worked it, apparently in connection with sixty acres he had bought from Van Couwenhoven. Hans Hansen or Jansen, the ancestor of the Van Nostrands, also bought a tract of land, as did Elbert Elbertse, the ancestor of the Stoothoffs. Elbert appears to have had the land fever quite strong, for he not only kept steadily adding to his purchases on shore but became the possessor of Bergen's Island and Barren Island. In 1673 Governor Colve appointed him Captain of a company of militia, with Roelof Martense as his lieutenant and Derrick Janse as his ensign. He became the possessor of Achtervelt by marriage with the widow of the pioneer Couwenhoven's son and assumed the care of her young family. This Elbert faithfully performed, for he appears to have been a most honorable and upright man. By the time he thus came into prominence, Flatlands had become quite a settlement, and the Strykers, Van Sigelens, Romeyns, Ammermans and a dozen other families were located around the palisadoed mansion of the original settler, a mansion that was so arranged as to be a stronghold to which the people might

readily fly for refuge should Indian or other dangers arise.

But while first as regards settlement—if it was first, for the old records are a little confusing—Flatlands was much slower than some of its neighbors in acquiring municipal rights. Gravesend and Flatbush secured such privileges ahead of it. The people were to a great extent more isolated than those in the other settlements and probably attracted little attention in New Amsterdam. It really needed little attention from the ruling powers. It was essentially a religious community, and in its earlier days the dictum of the Dominie and Elders at Flatbush was sufficient to settle all the little disputes which might arise. To a certain extent, too, when it required some decision at law, it had to arrange with the Magistrates at Flatbush to hold the scales of exact justice, and that was too troublesome a procedure to be invoked except on very grave occasions. In 1661 it assumed the dignity of possessing a local government, for it then was empowered to elect three Magistrates of its own, and the people chose Elbert Elbertsen, Pieter Cornelissen and Simon Jansen as the holders of this dignity—the old dignity of Schepen; and their successors were to be elected annually. It was not until the arrival of Col. Nicolls and the overturn of the Stuyvesant regime that the town was called into being with the full dignity of a charter; and in that document, which was dated Oct. 4, 1667, it is called “Amersfoort, alias Flatlands.” The boundaries of the town were laid down so indefinitely in this charter that an amended one was issued February 3, 1668, by Gov. Lovelace, and yet another by Gov. Dongan March 11, 1685, but none of these proved clear enough to prevent litigations more or less bitter and acrimonious and tedious between Flatlands and Flatbush. In fact a local historian tells us that Flatlands in June, 1679, got a judgment against Flatbush for £10, and that the amount with interest is still due! In 1788 Flatlands was officially recognized as a town

by the State Government of New York, and it continued its independent existence until Jan. 1, 1896, when the town was wiped out and its territory became the Thirty-second ward of the then Greater Brooklyn.

A list taken in 1687 gives the following as the names of those who took the oath of allegiance to the British authorities in accordance with the orders of Gov. Nicolls, and as the list is a valuable one for genealogical purposes we here give it in full:

Pieter Claes Wyckoff, 1636; Gerret Pieterse Wyckoff, Claes Pieterse Wyckoff, Hendrick Pieterse Wyckoff, Jan Pieterse Wyckoff, *natives*; Elbert Elbertse (Stoothoff), 1637; Gerret Elbertse (Stoothoff), Hans Janse (Van Nostrandt), 1640; Roelof Martense Schenck, 1650; Jan Martense Schenck, 1650; Jan Roelof Schenck, Martin Roelof Schenck, Derick Janse Ammerman, 1650; Jacob Stryker, 1651; Ferdinandes Van Sickelin, 1652; Christoffle Janse Romeyne, 1653; Ruth (or Rut) Bruynsen, 1653; William Davies, 1653; Jan theunis Van duyckhuys, 1653; Simon Janse Van Arts Daelen, 1653; Cornelius Simonen Vanarsdalen, Pieter Cornelius Luyster, 1656; Thys Pieter Luyster, 1656; Pieter Pieterse Tull, 1657; Jan Brouwer, 1657; Dirck Brouwer, Hendrick Brouwer, Dirk Stofflese, 1657; Stoffle Dirckse (Langstraet), Adriaen Kume, 1660; Court Stephense Van Voorhees, 1660; Albert Courten Van Voorhees, Luycas Stephense (Van Voorhees), 1660; Jan Stephense (Van Voorhees), 1660; Abram Williamse, 1662; Johannis Williamse, 1662; Evert Janse Van Wickelen, 1664; theunis Janse Van Amach, 1673; Gerret Hansen (Van Nostrandt), Gerret Hendrickse Bresse, Wellim Gerretse Van Couwenhoven, Gerret Williamse Van Couwenhoven, Anthony Warnshaer, William Williamse Borcklo, Jan Albertse Terhune, Pieter Nevins, Pieter Manfoort.

The date appended to some of these names indicate those in which were of foreign birth and show when they settled in the country. Of course such a list is not a complete census. The

Rev. Dr. Du Bois prepared the following list from church and other records of those who resided in the town in 1687 and previously:

Gerret Seerjersy, Hendrick Freemensen (here in 1670); Gerret Gerretsen, Abram Joeresy (Brinkerhoff), Jan Cornelis, Jan Barentsen (Van Driest), Albert Albertse (Terhune), died 1672, and Vaereyck Fliexsen, all here in 1672; William Iobbertse, Wm. Williamse (Wyckoff), Gerrit Remers, Barent Jureyaensy, Thunis Helebrantsy, here in 1673; Klaes Kornelesen, Barent the Tailor, Sawaern Jans, Hans Janse (Van Nostrandt), Hendrick Hermanze, Widow of Frederick Ebbcott, here in 1674; Widow of Gerraen Keest, Willem Gansen Van Barkelo, Klaes Smit, Widow of Geromus Boeck, Willem Kuyken, Jan Snedeghyer, here in 1675; Abraham Jorissen (Brinkerhoff), Fookie Hansen, 1679; Cornelius Barentsen, Simon Jansen (Romeyne), Simon Jorissen, 1680; Albert Terhune, Jr., Lawrence Koeck, Hendrick Aswerus, 1682; Jan Hansen (Van Nostrandt), Johannis Machgilssen, Jan Manfordt, Vls Homes, Jammes Willer, William the Shoemaker, De Fris the tanner, Jacob Fardon, Jan Albert Terhune, 1685; Rut Joosten (Van Brunt), Cornelis Simonsen Van Aersdalen, Joost Rutjen (Van Brunt), Johannis Holsa, Jan Kilement a mason, Master Toon, the Doctor, here in 1687; also 1677-1685; Bruno Hendrickse, Rutgert Brunoos, Tjellette Reimers (Wizzelpfinnig), Pieter Tull, Jan Poppe, William Stryker, Gerret Remmerts, Jan Kiersen, Dirckye Roelffsen, Pieter Hendricksen, Albert Steven (Voorhees), Steven Coerten (Voorhees), Martin Pieterse (Wyckoff), Luykas (Voorhees), Teunis Jansen, Swaen Jansen, Adam Michilse, Dierckie Williamse, Lourens Cornelise, William Hulett.

A census taken in 1698 showed a total of 40 men, 39 women, 130 children and 40 negro slaves. The name of the heads of families are given as follows, the first figure after the name (when two are given) being the number in the family and the second the number of slaves:

Gerret Elbert Stoothoff, 7, 4; Jan Teunis

Dykhuys, 5, 5; Roelif Martense (Schenck), 6, 4; Coert Stevense, 5, 2; Gerret Wyckoff, 5, 2; Hendk Wykof, 2, 2; Dirk Jans Amerman, 9; Adriaen Kenne, 8; Dirck Langstraet, 5; Jans Kiersen, 2, 1; Alexander Simson, 10; Jan Hansen, 5; Pieter Nevins, 9, 1; Jacob Tysse Lane, 6; Helena Aertsen, 5; Simon Jantz Van Aersdaelen, 5, 1; Cornelis Simontz Aersdaelen, 8, 1; Willem Gerrittz Van Couwenhoven, 8; Aernont Viele, 2, 2; Jan Albertz ter hennen, 8, 2; Jan Brouwer, 8, 1; Thunis Jantz Amack, 7; Ferdinand Van Sigelen, 7, 4; Claes Wykof, 8; Jan Wykof, 4, 1; Willem Bruynen, 7, 4; Adriaen Langstraet, 1; Lucan Stevense, 12, 4; Pieter Pieterse Wyckoff, 1; Hendrick Brouwer, 1; Albert Amerman, 1; Pieter Van Couwenhoven, 4; Martin Schenck, 5, 2; Jan Stevense (Voorhees), 12, 1; Pieter Monfoor, 8, 1; Steven Caerten (Voorhees), 5; Rutgers Bruyn, 9.

According to a census taken in 1738 the population consisted of 195 whites and 42 negroes, so that there was evidently no land boom or other excitement to disturb the even tenor of the place during these pre-Revolutionary years. In fact, outside of a scrap or two with Flatbush the annals of Flatlands were of the quietest description possible and centered round the story of the local church. The good people claimed that their religious history began with 1654, as they had an equal interest with Flatbush in the church then built there, and whose history had been already told in an earlier chapter. Certainly the structure at Flatbush was legally their religious home. The Governor said so. They contributed \$48 toward the cost of its erection; and Dominie Polhemus, they held was their pastor as much as he was the spiritual director of their neighbors in Flatbush and Brooklyn. Indeed he was pretty regularly in Flatlands, preaching in barns and private houses until 1663, when they finished the construction of a church building in their midst.

It was a quaint little structure, according to our ideas, but doubtless Dominie and the

people were equally proud of it, standing as it did on quite a commanding site on a piece of already sacred ground,—ground which had been consecrated by the Indians as a burial spot from remote ages. In appearance the building was similar to the other temples of worship in the Dutch towns. Like them, it was octagonal in form, with a high-pitched roof, surmounted with an open cupola, over which a weather-cock showed the citizens the direction of the wind and assisted the local weather prophets in their prognostications. The cupola, of course, was to contain a bell, but by the time the building was finished the resources of the brethren for church decoration were exhausted and so the people were called to public worship by the beating of a drum until 1686, when a subscription netted 556 guilders and a bell was imported from Holland. The building was fitted up in the interior in quite elaborate style. The pulpit was a lofty structure, but rather a slender arrangement, surmounted with a sounding board that looked heavier than the pulpit it covered. The worshippers were seated on wooden benches except that a chair was reserved for the minister's wife and another for the magistrate. The accommodation was for 130 and the Dominie could see every corner of the building when he was conducting the sermon: perhaps even when sitting on the hard bench provided for him in the pulpit he could mentally note the absentees and prepare to admonish the late-comers. The little edifice stood in its original form until 1762. At that time the members were Cornelius Voorhees, 5 sittings; Steve Schenck, 4; Johannes Lott, 7; Hermann Hooglandt, 5; William Kouwenhoven, 5; Roelof Voorhees, 4; Fammetie Ditmars, 3; Roelof Van Voorhees, 4; John Van Der Bilt, 5; Jeremiah Van Derbilt, 1; Abraham Voorhees, 5; Folkert Sprong, 2; Abraham Dorye, 4; Coustyn Golneck, 1; Peter Wykof, 3; Johannes Lott, Jr., 3; William Van Gelder, 3; Derrick Remsen, 4; Henrick Lott, 4; Jan Schenck, 5; Wilhelmus Stoot-hoof, 7; Jan Ouke, 1; Marte Ouke, 1; Samuel

Garreson, 1; Bernardus Ryder, 3; Albert Terhune, 4; James Holbert, 2; Fernandus Van Segelen, 1; Barent Vanderventer, 1; Abraham Schenck, 1; Callyntje Janse, 1; Garrett Wykoff, 3; Getore Heyn, 2; Jan Amerman, 6; Annatie Wykof, 5; Petrus Amerman, 3; Jacob Ouke, 1; Helena Ouke, 1; Eisack Selover, 1.

The church at that date was enlarged by having the three front octagons of the walls built out in a straight line so as to make a square side and in that way twenty-eight new sittings were added. The sittings in the church were allotted to the farms—not to individuals—and were part and parcel of the property of each holding and subject to transference with it, and the dues to the church seemed to have been regarded down even to the year 1876 as a lien on certain pieces of property in exchange for the right to sittings. In 1794 the old weather-beaten building began so plainly to show the effects of time that an entire new structure was demanded. So the octagon building was torn down and a new church was erected which was opened for public worship December 26, that year, with a sermon by the Rev. Peter Lowe, one of the ministers of the home church in Flatbush. This structure lasted until 1848, when the present church building was erected. This has since been improved several times, and its usefulness was increased in 1853 by the erection beside it of a building for school and lecture purposes. The connection between the churches in Flatbush and Flatlands terminated in 1820, and in 1824 Flatlands and New Lots were united ecclesiastically and the Rev. William Cruikshank accepted the joint pastorate. During his term the church at Flatlands underwent one great change, inasmuch as it was, for the first time in its history, heated in winter by the introduction of a wood-burning stove. In 1827 a new pulpit was introduced and the ladies of the congregation subscribed a sufficient sum to have it appropriately dressed.

Mr. Cruikshank resigned in 1834, and was followed in 1836 by the Rev. J. Abeel Bald-

win, who served until 1852, when the association with New Lots came to an end, and the Rev. T. M. Davie became minister of Flatlands. Since then the church has prospered under a succession of pastors, on the work of one of whom, the Rev. Dr. Anson Du Bois, much of this sketch has been founded. Before leaving the church history of Flatlands we may here state that the Methodist Church at Canarsie was organized in 1840, with twelve members, and that the Methodist Episcopal Church at Flatlands had its beginning in 1851. The other churches are of recent date.

In every old Dutch community school and church generally went hand in hand and formed part of the same organization. We have already seen this exemplified in the chapter wherein the story of the church at Flatbush is told. Such was undoubtedly the case at Flatlands, although the earliest records have been lost. The Rev. Dr. Du Bois in his historical sketch tells the early story of education in this town so completely that we quote it:

We have found no records touching it (the school) earlier than 1675, when it was evidently in a mature and vigorous career under the care of the church elders. It was called "The School of the Town." The first notice we have of it is in regard to a supply of books by the deacons; and entries and bills, of elementary and religious books paid for, appear in their accounts from 1675 for a long period of years, along with every variety and order of expenses.

According to the tradition in our town, and the well-known usages of other Dutch settlements, the schoolmaster was, by virtue of his office, Reader in church, Chorister, and commonly Sexton also. If this be true, we are able to name some of the honored leaders of mental progress in Flatlands from very early times.

The first who claims this honor is Willim Gerretse (Van Couwenhoven), 1675; the next Jan Brouwer, 1688; the third Pieter Tull, 1691, though the fact that he afterward became a pauper does not argue liberality of salary. Various items were paid "to the schoolmaster," for salary and other services, until

1704, when the incumbent was Martin Schenck, who was also a deacon of the church. Isaac Slover was teacher in 1712; Yan Sudam in 1715 and apparently to 1729; when Yohannes Van Siggelon succeeded him. In 1733 Abraham de Lanoy occupied the place. His name would indicate that he was French, while his receipts for his salary of £6 a year are written in a bold and elegant English hand. He was doubtless able to teach in English. Isaac Voorhees held the place in 1742; Johannes Nevius in 1743; Abram Voorhees, 1744-47; Luykas Voorhees, from 1748 to 1752, when Derick Remsen served part of a year, and Luykas Voorhees again, 1755-1757. As no new name occurs, it is fair to infer that Voorhees continued to receive the annual salary of £4 from the deacons as chorister, and probably an additional sum from the elders as schoolmaster, until 1768, when he was succeeded by Abraham Voorhees, the same probably who had served in 1744-47, and who now held the position until 1792. This teacher first introduced a stove into the school-house in June, 1789, costing £12 15s. 6d. We judge the previous winter must have been uncommonly cold and they would no longer trust to an open fire even though they had to bring in the stove in the first month of summer.

We have assumed that the chorister was also the school teacher as was the universal custom of the Dutch. But the practice was now falling into disuse. It seems that Thomas Whitlock was employed during the latter years accredited to Abram Voorhees and that John Baxter, whose journal of daily events continued by his son Garret extends from 1790 to 1840, taught the school about 1790. We have also the following as teachers: Peter Labagh, 1792; Geo. Parker, 1795; Jas. Smith, 1798; Elijah Elwell, 1801; Patrick Noon and Hugh McGarron, 1802; John Burns and Alex. Johnson, 1804; ———Cuthbert, 1805; ———Cassidy, 1810; Hugh McGarron again, 1811-16; Tibbetts and Blundel taught a short time; James Bolton some years; Esterbrook, Bledsoe, Kingsley, Topping, and Leach; Slauson to 1827, when Chas. Leach resumed and taught to 1830; Ed. Berry, 1830, when David Baldwin (whose conversion is recorded by his pastor in a tract of the American Tract Society) assumed charge, but retired from ill health; Albert Smith, 1831; Willis, and the same year H. D. Woodworth, now principal of a public school in Brooklyn; W. S. Webb, 1833; and after him E. S. Johnson and Stephen

Voorhees; since whom Messrs. Sutton, Wade, Blake and Sowles have taught.

Principal Voorhees Overbaugh took charge of this school in 1845. He was then expected to teach from 8 o'clock A. M. to 4 o'clock P. M., with a noon recess, five days each week, without a vacation of any kind during the whole year. He did not receive a stipulated salary, but a fee per capita on the scholars, and collected his own bills.

The original school-house of District No. 1 probably stood on Hubbard's Lane, opposite John L. Williamson's. On February 3d, 1696-7, the heirs of Elbert Elbertse, viz., Garrett

the same parties, "Elders of the Dutch Church of flatlands," the church-lot and burying-ground, and describe the latter as "Bounded north by Tunis Janse's fence, south by the pound, west by the highway," with the church-lot at the east. Thus the whole of the present school-lot and burial-ground is included, without any mention of the school-house being then upon it, and excluding the Van Syckelen lands from contiguity. The evidence seems conclusive that the original school-house stood east from the residence of John B. Hendrickson.

A new school-house seems to have been built about this time. Between September,



IN FLATLANDS A BIT OF THE BOROUGH OF BROOKLYN.

Stoothoof, Thos. Willes and Jan Van Duyckhuisen, deeded to Coert Stevense, Derick Amertman and Claes Peterse, for themselves and others, freeholders, etc., premises described as follows: "All that house and garden spot, as it is now in fence, lying * * * in the town of flatlands, adjoining to the house and land of Ferdinand van Sycklyn, and now used and occupied for a school-house for said town." Van Syckelen lived at the southeast corner of the church-lot, where his son Johannes lived in 1747.

Confirmatory of this view is the fact that on the next day, viz., February 4th, 1697, the Stoothoff heirs, who seem to have been engaged in settling up the estate conveyed to

1694, and August, 1697, the Deacons paid "for the school-house" in various items of material and work no less a sum than \$654.40, which could not have been for repairs. Probably, at this time, the new school-house was placed on an unused part of the burial-ground. The lot described in 1696 as the school-house lot must, soon after this, have fallen into private hands, for, in 1729, it is deeded by Abram Westervelt, and Margaret, his wife, to the Town, together with an acre where the house of B. Stafford now stands. We know that the school-house was near its present location in 1733, for in that year Pieter Wyckoff conveys "a certain piece of land adjoining the school-lot, being in breadth two rods and in length

as far as the school-lot runs, bounded southerly by said school-lot, northerly by ground of said pieter Wyckof, westerly by the highway, and easterly by the land belonging to the church." The school-house first placed within the original lines of the grave-yard, in 1699, was extensively repaired about 1765, the work having been begun in 1762, simultaneously with the extensive improvements and enlargement of the church. At this time the sum of \$356 was paid for materials and work "for the school-house." In 1771 "a well for the school-house" cost £1, 11s. 3d.

In April, 1816, the town ordered a new school building. It was completed and occupied two years later, and the old house sold to Nicholas Schenck for \$20. This new building continued to be used by the school until 1861, when it was sold to John L. Ryder for a carriage-house. The school-lot was fenced in by the trustees, as such, in 1861, by advice of counsel. The building of 1861 was enlarged to more than twice its former capacity in 1876.

A school was early established in Flatlands Neck, the section of the town that lies between Jamaica Bay, New Lots and Flatbush. A new school-house was built there in 1835 and another at Canarsie in 1844. The modern story of education in Flatlands, however, is associated with that of Brooklyn.

It has been said that the annals of Flatlands are uneventful and uninteresting, yet at the same time the story of the battle of Brooklyn might be woven into its history. There was, of course, rare excitement in the township when the British troops landed, and the excitement deepened during the strategical operations that followed. But after the battle was over things resumed their usual quiet sway. One regiment, Colonel Knipphausen's horse, was quartered for some time on a farm in Flatlands, but this is only a tradition and it does not seem likely that they were there beyond a few days. A few guards were placed on duty in residences at Canarsie Point and Flatlands Neck, but they seemed not to have been very offensive and made themselves humbly comfortable in the kitchens of the houses to which they were assigned. The British, of

course, took possession of the grain, the produce and much of the live stock,—that was part of the incidents of any war, and nothing else could be expected. But the best evidence that Flatlands was not seriously molested lies in the fact that services in the church were regularly conducted all through the British occupation, although there was a strong patriotic sentiment in the town, and the Dominie expressed himself very freely on all occasions against the invaders, and nowhere on Long Island was the triumphant close of the war celebrated with more enthusiasm than in this old stronghold of the Dutch sentiment. With the return of peace Flatlands retained her quiet mode of living, advanced slowly but surely, and the years passed on so uninterestingly that the historian finds little to narrate in the routine of its calm, domestic, home-living current. It was the last of the suburbs of Brooklyn to feel the quickening influence of that city, but when the influence was felt the dwellers in the community met it with avidity. The old farms were placed on the market, the land-boomers got in their work, and "lots" instead of acres began to dominate in the real-estate transactions. With the introduction of the trolley the old seclusion of Flatlands began to vanish, and since it has itself disappeared and become simply a city ward it has been wholly cut up into streets and avenues, and everywhere the march of improvement represented by the modern builders is apparent. It has many new features, but Barren Island is still devoted to the manufacture of fertilizers and its smells are as fragrant as ever; Canarsie is still a haven for fishermen and those who enjoy rowing or yachting, and Jamaica Bay yet yields a harvest of pleasure or profit; but Bergen's Island has become, under the name of Bergen Beach, a resort of the nature of Coney Island, and on each Sunday in the season more people pass through Flatlands in trolley cars than has been seen in it since that eventful day in August, 1776, when an old lady said that "the red coats were so thick in Flatlands you could walk on their heads."

CHAPTER XXVII.

FLATBUSH.

ONE local writer has given 1630 as the date of the first settlement at 't Vlavke Bros., Middle-Wout, or Midwout, the earliest names by which Flatbush was designated. There is, however, no definite proof as to this. It would seem that the patents given for lands in Flatlands to Hudden and Van Couwenhoven and Van Twiller included ground which overlapped into what was afterward across the border of that township and into the township of Midwout, but even that would hardly give us the right to claim the date of these patents as the beginning of the story of this, in many ways the most interesting of the five Dutch towns. From Flatlands an Indian trail led to Brooklyn, and while using this trail the rich and fertile fields, now the streets of Flatbush, lay invitingly open and the overflow of population, so to speak, from Flatlands took them up. These early Dutch farmers were mighty particular as to places of settlement. They were strong believers in meadow land, and those who can recall Flatbush before the rush of the trolley and the march of modern improvements changed things all around could easily imagine it, in its still more primitive stage, as lying ready and prepared for adaptation into farm, garden and grazing ground with but little labor. By 1651 the place had a sufficient population to warrant the issuance to it of a town patent, and Governor Stuyvesant incorporated in the document the names of Jan Snedecor, who had prospered as a tavern-keeper in New Amsterdam; Arent Van Hat-

ten, burgomaster of the same city; and one of its ministers, Johannes Megapolensis. The lands of Midwout also began very early to have a speculative value, for in 1653 we find that Edward Griffin bought fifty acres of land "on the west side of the road near the Flatbush" in February, and he sold the same in July to Bartel Loot and Peter Loot (Lott). When the patent was issued, Dr. Strong says, "farms were laid out into forty-eight lots, or tracts of land, extending 600 Dutch rods east and west on each side of the Indian path and having generally an average width of twenty-seven rods." Before the farms were drawn for, 102 lots were laid aside for the use of the church, which it was even then determined should be built, while the unappropriated lands, mainly stretches of woodland on the outskirts of the town, were left for the common use and so continued for many years.

It seems that there was not enough meadow land to satisfy the wants or ambitions of the Dutch farmers in Flatbush, and they squatted on some of the rich meadows of Canarsie, which the Flatlands people claimed as their own. This led to trouble between them; and to end it, and also with the view of substituting an English charter for the Dutch one, Governor Nicolls caused a fresh survey to be made, and then issued a new patent which bore the date of October 11, 1667. It was then that Flatbush, the English rendering of 't Vlacke Bosche, came into legal use. But the good farmers no sooner had this trouble adjudicated than a new and even more serious

one arose. The land comprising their town had originally been bought from the Canarsie Indians, but in 1670 another tribe, the Rockaways, claimed the soil, denying the right of the Canarsies to ownership, and demanding payment. The probability is that the Canarsies were honest in their intentions, but they sold more than they ought to have done, and unwittingly disposed of some territory to which the Rockaways had some claim. Lands were not very closely surveyed in those days. Of course the Flatbush title was clear, so far as the settlers were concerned. They had complied with all the forms of the law, Dutch as well as English, and could have defended their holdings in any court of law successfully. But the Indians had ways of enforcing their demands which were much more unpleasant than those of the courts, and an angry dispute with them meant much loss of life and destruction of property—all the horrors, in fact, of Indian warfare. So the settlers made the best of the situation and secured a fresh deed from the wily claimants. It reads as follows:

To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come: Eskemoppas, Sachem of Rockaway, upon Long Island, Kinnarimas and Ahawaham his brothers, send greeting: Whereas they, the said Sachem Eskemoppas, and his two brothers aforementioned, do lay claim to the land now in the tenure and occupation of the inhabitants of Midwout, alias Flatbush, as well as other lands adjacent thereto as the right born Indian owners and proprietors thereof: Know ye that in consideration of certain sums of seewant, a certain sum of wampum and divers other goods (hereinafter specified) unto the said Sachem and his brothers in hand paid, and received, from Adrian Hegeman, Jacob Stryker, Hendrick Jorise and Jan Hansen, for and on behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants of Midwout alias Flatbush, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves to be fully satisfied and paid: Have given granted contracted and sold * * * All that said parcel of land where the said town of Midwout stands, together with all the lands lying therein, stretching on the east side to the limits of Newtown and Jamaica, on the south side to

the meadow ground, and limits of Amersfort; on the west side to the bounds of Gravesend and New Utrecht, and on the north side along the Hills; that is to say, all those lands within the limits above mentioned &c. * * * In witness whereof, the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and seals this 20th day of April, in the 22d year of his Majesty's reign, in the year of our Lord 1670.

ESKEMOPPAS £ Mark. (seal.)

KINNARIMAS & Mark. (seal.)

AHAWAHAM f Mark. (seal.)

Signed and delivered in the presence of

THOMAS LOVEFACE.

CORNELIUS VAN RUYVEN.

Recorded the day and year within written.
per MATHIAS NICHOLS, Secretary.

The consideration agreed upon in the purchase herein mentioned was as follows viz.: 10 Fathoms of black seewant; 10 Fathoms of white seewant; 5 Match coats of Duffells; 4 Blankets; 2 Gunners sight Guns; 2 Pistols; 5 Double handfulls of Powder [Gispen bunches of Powder]; 5 Bars of Lead; 10 Knives; 2 Secret Aprons of Duffell [Cuppas of Duffell]; 1 Half vat or half barrell of Strong Beer; 3 Cans of Brandy; 6 Shirts. All the above particulars were received by the Sachem and his two brothers, in the presence of the persons under written, as witnesses hereof.

John Manning.

Sylester Salisbury.

John Hough.

Jacob Van Cortlandt.

Teunis Jacob Hay.

Edward Carlisle.

Acknowledged before me, the Sachem and his two brothers, and the goods delivered in my presence, the day and year within written.

FRANCIS LOVEFACE.

In drawing up this deed the Flatbush people took good care to have their old boundaries clearly fixed, and it would seem that the territory known as Oostwoud was thrown in by the Rockaways in their joy at the prospects of the possession of the powder and beer and brandy and other commodities stipulated by their head men. This territory, afterward known as New Lots, claims 1670 as the beginning of its history, although it was not until 1677 that Adrian Lambertsen and thirty-four others secured a patent for ownership in it. For many years, in fact until 1721, the most notable feature of the history of Flat-

bush was its constant defense of its territory against claims made by Flatlands, Newtown and even by private individuals; but as the course of events has long since rendered the story of such disputes of no practical value, of no responsible bearing on the real history of the town, there is little use of recounting them here. There seems no doubt that the Flatbush settlers were in some of these disputes the real aggressors,—the courts so more than once decided; but the probability is that in most cases the trouble arose from want of exact knowledge as to boundaries, or, as is equally likely, indifference on the part of the settlers to political divisions. It was probably with the view of settling all this on an enduring basis that the inhabitants in 1685 applied to Governor Dongan for a new patent which should confirm to them all that had been granted at various times and for which various patents had been issued. That application was granted, and the document, one of the most important in the early local history, reads as follows:

Thomas Dongan, Lieutenant-Governor and Vice-Admiral of New York, &c., under his Majesty James the Second, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland Defender of the Faith, &c., Supreme Lord and Proprietor of the Colony and Prince of New York and its dependencies in America. To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth Greeting: Whereas, there is a certain town in Kings County, upon Long Island, called and known by the name of Midwout, alias Flatbush, the bounds whereof begin at the mouth of the Fresh-Kill, and so along by a certain ditch which lies betwixt Amersfoot and Flatbush Meadows, and so running along the ditch and fence to a certain white-oak marked tree, and from thence upon a straight line to the westernmost point of a small island of woodland lying before John Stryker's bridge; and from thence with a straight line to the northwest hook or corner of the ditch of John Oakie's meadow, and from thence along the said ditch and fence to the swamp of the Fresh-Kill, and so along the swamp and hollow of the aforesaid Kill to the land of Keuter's Hook; thence along the same to a white-oak tree; from thence with a straight line to a

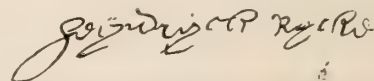
black-oak marked tree standing upon the northeast side of Twiller's Flats, having a small snip of flats upon the southeast side of the line; and so from thence to a white-oak tree standing on the west side of Moschito Hole to a small island, leaving a snip of flats in the Flatlands bounds; and from thence to a certain marked tree or stump standing upon the highway which goes to Flatlands, upon the Little Flats, about twenty rods from Flatbush Lots, and so along the fence six hundred Dutch rods to the corner of Flatbush fence, and so along the rear of the lots to a sassafras-stump standing on Cornelius Jansen Berrian's lot of land; and from thence with a straight line to a certain marked tree, or stump, standing by the Rush Pond under the hills, and so along the south side of the hill till it comes to the west end of Long Hill, and so along the south side of the said hill till it comes to the east end of the Long Hill; and then with a straight line from the east end of said Long Hill to a marked white-oak tree standing to the west side of the road, near the place called the gate or port of the hills, and so from the east side of the port or gate aforesaid, upon the south side of the main hills, as far as Brooklyn Patent doth extend, and so along the said hills to the bounds of the Jamaica Patent; and from thence with a southerly line to the kill or creek by the east of Plunder's Neck, and so along the said kill to the sea, as according to the several deeds or purchases from the Indian owners, the patent from Governor Nicolls, and the award between Brooklyn and the town of Flatbush, relation thereunto being had, doth more fully and at large appear: And, whereas, an application to me hath been made for a confirmation of the aforesaid tracts and parcels of land and premises: Now, Know ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Majesty, James the Second, by the Grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, Supreme Lord and Proprietor of the Province of New York, in consideration of the premises and the quit-rent hereinafter reserved, I have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and confirm unto Cornelius Vanderwyck, John Okie, Joseph Hegeman, Aries Jansen Vanderbilt, Lafford Pieterse, William Guiliamsen, Hendrick Williamse, Arien Ryers, Peter Stryker, John Stryker, John Remsen, Jacob Hendricks, Derick Vandervleet, Hendrick Ryck, Okie John-

son, Daniel Polhamus, Peter Lott, Cornelius Vanderveer, Derick Johnson Hooglandt, Denise Teunis, John Johnson, Ditimus Léwis Jansen, William Jacobs, Hendrick Hegeman and Garret Lubbertse, for and on behalf of themselves and their associates, all the freeholders of the said town of Flatbush, and to their heirs and assigns forever, all the before recited tract and tracts, parcel and parcels, of land and islands within the said bounds and limits, together with all and singular, the woods, underwoods, plains, hills, meadows, pastures, quarries, marshes, waters, lakes, causeways, rivers, beaches, houses, buildings, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, with all liberties, privileges, hereditaments and appurtenances to the said tract of land and premises belonging, or in any wise appertaining; To have and to hold, &c. * * * To be holden of his Majesty in free and common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majesty's Kingdom of England. Yielding, rendering and paying therefor, yearly, and every year, at the City of New York, to his Majesty, his heirs or successors, or to his or their officer or officers, as by him or them shall be appointed to receive the same, eighteen bushels of good merchantable wheat, on or before the five and twentieth day of March, yearly, and every year. In Testimony whereof, I have caused these presents to be entered upon record, in the Secretary's office in the said Province, and the seal thereof, have hereunto affixed, and signed with my hand the twelfth day of November, in the first year of his Majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1685.

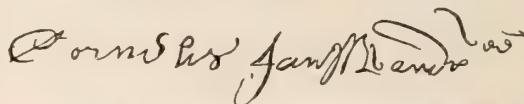
THOMAS DONGAN.

Governor Dongan willingly granted such charters not only because their issuance added to the income of his office and settled many vexed questions as to boundaries, but they provided an income from the townships in the shape of a tax which was termed "quit rent" and which in the case of Flatbush was placed at "eighteen bushels of good, merchantable wheat." No objection seems to have been raised anywhere to this certainly very moderate impost. It was some years later changed to a regular cash payment, and continued in force until 1786, when future payment was commuted on payment of a lump sum, according to an act passed by the Legislature April

1 of that year. It seems that Flatbush fell in arrears from 1765 until 1786 and was required to pay up the amount which then accrued with a rebate of eight years' payments, covering the period of the Revolutionary struggle.



HATTHORCK REYCKEL, the ancestor of the SUTDAM Family of Kings County.



CORNELIS JANSSE VANDER VEER, the ancestor of the Vanderveer Family of Kings County.



JAN STRYCKER, the ancestor of the Stryker Family of Kings County.



LEFFERT PIETERSEN, (van Haugwout, North Holland, 1600,) the common ancestor of the Lefferts Family in Kings County.

AUTOGRAPHS OF SOME OF THE PATENTEES OF FLATBUSH, 1685.

The early story of Flatbush centers around the story of the church, and it, with the school-house and later the court-house, made up the dorp or town,—the rallying point of the life of the village. As in most of the Dutch settlements, the homes of the farmers were located as close to the dorp as possible and spread into what used to be called Rustenberg, a trace of rich sandy loam to the south of it, which was within easy reach. In the dorp the Schout posted his notices and the Schepens held their meetings. These functionaries were the representatives of the Governor, of law and order. Jan Teunissen, Schout in 1646 of Brooklyn, held that office for Middlewout and Amersfoot, and seems to have been succeeded in 1654 by David Provoost, although there is some dubiety about the latter's appointment, so far as his jurisdiction over the territory outside of Brooklyn is concerned. The first local man appointed to this office was Adriaen Hegeman, who was thus honored in 1661, his authority extending over Brooklyn and Flat-

lands. Adriaen was the ancestor of the family bearing his name and appears to have been a prominent and popular citizen. He came here from Holland in 1650 and was one of the Schepens of Flatbush from 1654 until his appointment as Schout. Afterward he became again a Schepen and secretary of the five Dutch towns, and rounded off his appointments by acting as auctioneer. He owned two valuable lots of land in Flatbush and prospered generally. His death took place previous to 1688. The Schout was the direct representative of the Governor and Council, and was appointed by them, but the Schepens, or local magistrates, were appointed on the nomination of the people. Midwout enjoyed three of these dignities.

At first the nominations for these representatives of the people seem to have been practically dictated by the Governor. But the Midwout flocks were not remiss in asserting what they considered their just rights even at this early period in their history, and we find them represented at the conventions held in 1652, which demanded that the laws by which they were governed should resemble those of the old land from which they had emigrated. The story of this primitive constitutional struggle has already been fully told, and may be dismissed here by saying that Governor Stuyvesant fully asserted his authority, and the towns lost some of their privileges. They did not long remain under the Governor's displeasure, however. The shores of Long Island, and even of Manhattan Island, were at that time infested with river thieves and desperadoes, who often made a successful descent upon a village or farm-house and easily escaped with their plunder. It was held that most of these thieves were English, or that at all events they made Gravesend their headquarters and had the sympathy of the people there, whose property it seems was unmolested. To protect themselves the three Dutch towns of Breuckelen, Flatlands and Midwout in 1654 organized a company of militia, with a sergeant for each town and a regularly organized patrol.

This movement, undertaken by the people themselves without apparently any urging on the part of the authorities, appealed to Stuyvesant's military sympathies, and he granted to the Dutch towns, of his own volition, all the privileges they had formerly asked and which he had so stubbornly refused. Midwout became entitled to send a list of six names to the Governor as the choice of the people for their Schepens, and from this list the ruler selected three to whom the usual commissions were issued. It is believed that the first three so appointed were Adriaen Hegeman, Willem Jacobse Van Boerum and Jan Sueberingh. A district court was also instituted, composed of delegates from each town along with the Schout, and this court had charge of all local matters, such as the laying out and maintenance of roads, establishment of schools and the like. This condition of things continued until 1661, when New Utrecht and Bushwick were added to the combination and the whole formed into a district called the Five Dutch Towns. Over these a Schout Fiscal was placed as the head of the legal and municipal authorities, while a secretary or clerk was appointed to perform much of the duties of the modern town clerk and notary,—acknowledge deeds, wills and other legal papers, and probably to act as the legal adviser of the Schout Fiscal. The first to hold the latter office (1661) was Adriaen Hegeman, of Midwout, quite a standing officeholder, his successor being Nicasius de Sille, of New Utrecht. Michil Hainelle, of Brooklyn, was the town clerk from 1674 to 1680. The fact of his holding this office so long after the Dutch regime had passed away shows that the changes introduced by Governor Nicolls as to the Five Dutch Towns did not affect them greatly. The changes, in fact, were more in name than anything else; and although the New Netherland passed under a "proprietor," the changes which were effected were in reality in the direction of a broadening of the liberties of the people.

Under Nicolls, as we have seen, Long Island became the main portion of the new

county of Yorkshire, the Dutch towns became part of the West Riding, Midwout became Flatbush, the Schouts and Schepens became memories, and law was administered by a deputy sheriff and a selected array of justices. The local government in the towns was under the care of overseers,—“men of good fame and life chosen by plurality of voices of the freeholders,”—and a constable was to be chosen from among the ex-overseers, and seems to have been the executive officer of the latter. The overseers assessed the local tax rate, kept the church and roads in repair, looked after the poor, saw to it that the minister’s salary was forthcoming, regulated bounds and fences and held court in all cases in which less than £5 was involved. When an overseer or constable was elected and refused to serve, a fine was imposed—£10 for an overseer and £5 for a constable. The overseers continued to administer affairs under that name until 1684, when the first Colonial Legislature, under Gov. Dongan, changed their title to supervisors, and so they remained until the end of the history of Flatbush. That same Legislature did away with the nonsensical arrangement of Yorkshire and the West Riding became Kings county. One particularly beneficial result of Governor Dongan’s legislation to Flatbush was the settlement of the courts within its bounds. In 1668, by the desire of the Hempstead Convention, the courts were transferred from Flatbush to Gravesend. By an act passed November 7, 1685, Flatbush was again made the center of the legal world of what was then Kings county, and, as if to perpetuate this distinction, a court-house was at once erected. In 1758 this building was superseded by another, which served until 1793, when a larger edifice was constructed. In 1832 that building was burned and with the flames passed the legal glory of Flatbush, for Brooklyn then became the county town. In 1695, beside the first court-house, a whipping-post and a pair of stocks were erected as terrors to evil-doers as well as for use, while the village pound was not far away.

The progress of the years passed slowly and uneventfully in Flatbush until the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, and that memorable struggle found the inhabitants sadly divided in their allegiance; but it would seem as if the majority was in favor of taking no part in the contest. Possibly the older residents, not from any love for King George and British rule, but from a dislike to radical changes, desired matters to remain as they were. They admitted that wrongs existed, but hoped for their abatement by peaceful agitation. The younger element, however, seemed to throw their hearts into the cause of the Patriots, and were anxious to demand their rights and a removal of all obstacles to the liberty of the people; but their ardor appears to have been restrained by the counsels of their elders. Still Flatbush was desirous in bringing about reforms in the government relations, it hated the stamp duties as much as did New York or Boston, and it was represented in the convention that met in New York City April 10, 1775, to choose delegates to the First Continental Congress, by David Clarkson, Adrian Voorhees, Jacobs Vandeventer and John Vanderbilt. These were elected at a meeting held in Flatbush five days previously, and the convention elected three citizens of Flatbush to the congress,—Johannes Lott, John Lefferts and John Vanderbilt.

These three men deserve more than a passing notice, for they were foremost among the upbuilders of Flatbush. Johannes Lott was the great-grandson of Peter Lott (or Lodt), who emigrated from Holland in 1652. In 1662 he secured a patent for twenty-four morgens of land in Flatbush, which he sold in 1674 to Jan (Cornelise) Boomgaert. He held other tracts of land in the town, and his name appears in Governor Dongan’s patent to Flatbush in 1656, and he took the oath of allegiance there in 1687. For a time he was one of the local magistrates. His son, Engelbert, also took the oath of allegiance to Britain, in 1687, and in 1698 was High Sheriff of Kings county. John Lott, the eldest son of this latter dignitary,

was born in Brooklyn July 21, 1701, and died prior to 1733, leaving among other children a son, Johannes, born September 2, 1730, who was the Patriot already named as being returned to the Continental Congress. Mention has already been made of John Vanderbilt in connection with the history of Flatbush Church. "The Senator," as he was familiarly called, afterward rendered considerable aid in the Provincial Legislature. John Lefferts was a prominent member of a family whose story is elsewhere told in these volumes.

But while the good folks of Flatbush were as loud, if not as strenuous, in their complaints as others against the wrongs inflicted on the colonies by the British Parliament prior to the outbreak of hostilities, they were, as a whole, of a rather halting turn of mind when the time came to choose at the parting of the ways. At a meeting of delegates held in Flatbush on May 22, 1775, at which all the towns in Kings county except Flatlands were represented, the Flatbush representatives, Nicholas Cowenhoven and Johannes E. Lott, reported that their constituents desired to remain neutral in any conflict which might arise. "Prudence," as one writer said, "had taken the place of valor." The fact is that the proximity of Flatbush to New York and Brooklyn, both of which were Tory in their sympathies, had overawed the local patriotic sentiment, and, besides, the Tories who resided in the township itself were active, powerful and influential. Flatbush answered to the call of the Provincial Congress for troops so far as to provide a company for the Long Island regiment of militia, but there is no evidence that it ever furnished its full quota. Cornelius Van der Veer was captain; and Peter Lefferts and John Van Duyn lieutenants, and John Bennem, ensign, were the other officers, but it is doubtful whether the company ever fired a shot for independence, although it is vaguely hinted that they actually did outpost duty prior to the landing of the British. Mayor Mathews, of New York, had his county seat at Flatbush, and, as has already been chronicled, kept up an active in-

tercourse from there with Governor Tryon, while the latter maintained his gubernatorial chair and dignity on the quarter-deck of the *Asia* or one of the other British ships in the harbor while the city of New York was in the hands of the Patriots. His neighbor, Colonel William Axtell, was equally pronounced in his devotion to Toryism, and there seems no doubt that it was in Axtell's mansion, Melrose Hall, that the plot for the abduction of Washington was hatched. Until the British landed, August 22, 1776, Flatbush, indeed, appears to have been the center of Tory plots and projects and schemes of all sorts. That landing and the story of the seven or eight days which followed until Washington had carried his troops from Long Island to New York is Flatbush's real contribution to the history of the nation. The story of that brief and interesting campaign has already been told in this work, and we need only refer here to a few local incidents related in Field's elaborate monograph on the history of the battle, by which it would seem that most of the few honors gained by the American troops in the short campaign were won in Flatbush on its western boundary. The vanguard of the British forces under Colonel Donop got to Flatbush late on the evening of August 22. Says Field:

Three hundred American riflemen, who had occupied the village, abandoned it as soon as the Hessian battery of six guns had taken position and opened fire. The possession of this slumberous little Dutch village by the Hessians was not, however, destined to be maintained without a struggle. The awe inspired by the imposing array of the German troops had worn away in the cool night, and early on the morning of the 23d the slumbers of the heavy-eyed Hessians were broken by a dash upon their right wing, resting near the west end of the village. On the thickly wooded hills near Flatbush, Colonel Hand was in command of the whole Pennsylvania battalion of riflemen, consisting of 553 officers and privates. Believing that the familiarity acquired by combat with the formidable strangers would dissipate the increasing dread with which they were regarded, Colonel Hand or-

dered an assault upon their lines. The attack was spirited, though feebly maintained, as the Americans retired to the woods as soon as a field-piece was brought to bear upon them.

On the afternoon of the same day the Continentals again tried to drive Donop out of Flatbush. So impetuous and fierce was the assault that that portion of the Hessian corps was driven back upon the main body, then lying south of the Dutch church, and the whole detachment was held at bay for more than one hour. The fire of the American

to the horrors which war had brought upon this quiet village. Although it has been a popular habit to charge this incendiarism upon the Hessian invaders, it is yet certain that these dwellings were fired by the Americans to prevent their occupation as defensive positions by the enemy.

On the 25th the Americans determined to meet the Hessian artillery with the same arms; and, accordingly, a strong body of riflemen, accompanied by several guns, pushed forward beyond the edge of the woods, and



THE LEFFERTS HOMESTEAD.

From "Flatbush, Past and Present." By permission of the Flatbush Trust Co.

riflemen was so galling that the Hessians were compelled to improvise redoubts, from the houses of Adrian Hegeman and Lefferts Martense, for the purpose of repelling their attack. In these buildings they cut holes, wherever these afforded them position for firing upon the American sharpshooters. At length the cannon, from which the Hessian gunners had doubtless been driven by our riflemen, were brought into position, and opened their fire upon the assaulting party. At this time the houses of Jeremiah Vanderbilt, Leffert Lefferts and Evert Hegeman were in flames, and added, by their conflagration,

opened fire with round and grapeshot upon the devoted village, behind whose walls the enemy sought shelter from the rebel sharpshooters. The attack was well maintained for a time, but was at length repulsed by the greater weight and steadiness of the Hessian artillery.

We read of several other annoying attacks upon the Hessians by the daring American militia, the latter even arousing their enemies to fight at two o'clock one morning, an hour which was against all well regulated notions

of warfare, but the defeat on the 27th practically ended the fighting on Long Island and the crisis was settled elsewhere. During the British occupation Flatbush seems to have been prosperous enough except that signal vengeance was wreaked, immediately after the battle of Brooklyn, on those whose sympathies were known to have been with the Patriots. Most of the farmers lost their cattle and horses and growing crops were destroyed. Many houses were burned and the vast number of unburied dead infected the air and fever became epidemic. Those who could left the town, and business for a time was at a standstill. Soldiers were quartered in dwellings without regard to the wishes of the owners and without any compensation, while on the least sign of grumbling or discontent all sorts of rude pranks were played and property was wantonly destroyed. We read of feather beds being emptied into wells, of woodwork and furniture being slashed and destroyed, of fences and tables and chairs being torn up for firewood; and not only property but life was in constant danger. Thugs and thieves crowded the streets and even took possession of the court-house and held their orgies in it, as well as made it the receptacle of much of their plunder. After a while matters quieted down considerably and law and order resumed sway,—as much as was possible under martial law. The township began to prosper even under British rule, but the Long Island campaign, brief as it was, had left a trail of havoc and disaster behind and the people learned a grim lesson of the uselessness of being neutral when the dogs of war have been unchained and are sniffing at their gates.

With the passing away of the British occupation Flatbush fell into line as an American township, and as the angry passions between Patriot and Tory died out it resumed its quiet, dreamy existence with hardly a ripple, except in connection with church affairs or around election time, to disturb the sweetness of its repose. As the legal centre

of Kings county it attracted many visitors at intervals from the outside world, was the scene of some general business and loomed up considerably in the affairs of the county. It had even progressed a little on modern lines, its sidewalks were kept in good order and well graded, and in 1830 a daily line of stages was introduced by Smith Birdsall to run between Flatbush and Brooklyn, replacing the farm wagons which had previously been in use. But the progress of Flatbush was ruthlessly arrested by the fire which in 1832 destroyed the court-house and so led to the transference of the courts to Brooklyn, which became the county seat. Flatbush then quietly sank into the status of a mere country village; its glory had apparently departed; even its kerche only shed its light within its own territory and was no longer a lamp that sent its spiritual rays over almost an entire county. But the citizens made the best of the situation, and with wealth and energy on their side seemed determined that Flatbush should not be altogether forgotten. Its beauties as a residential neighborhood were soon exploited and every effort was made to induce new settlers. For a time these efforts seemed to bring very slow results, for the town was removed from any centre of population; it had no manufactures and transit was slow, uncertain, and in winter time decidedly unpleasant. However, a beginning was made in 1834 when Gerrit L. Martense (a descendant of "Martin the Boor," who settled in Flatbush prior to 1687), laid out a tract of land into lots and opened two streets,—Johnson and Erasmus. Some six or eight cheap houses were built on this property, but the scheme was not a financial success.

In the following year Dr. Adrian Vanderveer had his farm surveyed and mapped out in city lots, opened Vernon avenue, and laid out Bedford avenue and Lott, Prospect, Lawrence, Franklin and Clinton streets. This enterprise likewise failed for the time, and the survey lay practically dormant for some thirty

years, when its provisions began to be put in operation. In fact it was not until 1866 that Flatbush began to grow in the modern sense, and since then there has gone on within it a steady stream of street-opening and home-building. Land booms of all sorts have flourished and faded within its boundaries, but, in spite of the misfortunes which always attended such schemes, its beautiful situation, superior surroundings and healthful climate have carried it safely through many a forced march and enabled it to grow prosperous, while other boomed localities have disappeared from the map and returned to wild-wood. Two notable results of judicious booming were the establishment, in 1852, of two villages in the township,—Greenfield (afterward Parkville) and Windsor Terrace. They flourished for a while and brought to their sites quite a number of particularly desirable settlers, most of whom erected beautiful homes and spent money in embellishing their neighborhood; but neither village ever commanded a large population and both are now simply sections in Brooklyn's Twenty-ninth Ward.

There is no doubt that the upward movement in 1866 was brought about by the introduction of street cars in 1860, following the opening up of Flatbush avenue from Fulton avenue, Brooklyn. At first there were grave doubts as to the success of the venture, but when these were removed and the village could be reached by a reliable, and, what was then considered an expeditious, mode of transit, its upward progress was assured. In 1864 gas was introduced and in the same year the fire department (which had existed since 1821, when it was called the "Flatbush Engine Company") was equipped with a modern engine and equipment, at a cost of over \$6,000; and in 1872 the town reached the dignity of having a newspaper, when the "Kings County Rural Gazette" was issued. The old Dutch Reformed church long ere 1866 had several neighbors,—the Methodist Episcopal church, organized in 1844, and St.

Paul's Protestant Episcopal church, organized in 1836, being among the earliest, while, as might be expected in such a community, schools were abundant and all the resources of social and religious life and culture found ample scope. The town had had a board of health since 1832, and could point to its usefulness with justifiable pride. Saloons increased naturally with the population; but the establishment in 1874 of an excise commission served to curtail the number of these places, while a Law and Order Association, organized in 1880 under the presidency of the Rev. Dr. C. L. Wells, closed many objectionable resorts which had crept into the town—overflowed into it from its big neighbor, in spite of the organization in 1878 of a small police force and Police Board. The establishment of a Board of Improvement in 1871, just when the upward movement was beginning to gain headway, did much not only to preserve the amenity of the place but proceeded to open up streets and avenues only when the public welfare so demanded, and with the most scrupulous care that the interests of the property-owners and the public should be equally safe-guarded. To this body of seven residents, serving without compensation, modern Flatbush owes much. Not the least of their good works was the building of the much desired Town Hall. On this subject the Rev. R. G. Strong wrote:

"The subject of a town hall was repeatedly agitated in the local village paper. After the destruction of the county court-house at Flatbush, great difficulty was experienced in finding a suitable place to hold the village courts, the town elections and other public meetings. For many years the elections were held at the hotels of the village; and the justices held their courts either at their own houses, or in the parlor of one of the numerous hotels of the village. There being no place in which to confine prisoners, or persons awaiting trial, constables were compelled to take such persons to the jail in Brooklyn, and then return them for trial to the village. After the erec-

tion of the public school-house, in 1842, the elections and justice courts were held, for nearly twenty years, in its upper story. About the year 1861 it became necessary to use this room for school purposes. During this year Schoonmaker's Hall, on Flatbush avenue, was completed, and was used for ten years as a place for all public gatherings, church fairs, sessions of court and for election purposes. The discussion of this subject in the local paper brought the matter prominently before the public.

"A call for a public meeting to consider the subject of a town hall appeared in the Rural Gazette of February 14, 1874. Pursuant to this call a large and enthusiastic meeting of prominent citizens was held at Schoonmaker's Hall on Thursday, February 19, 1874, Supervisor J. V. B. Martense being Chairman, and Abraham Lott, Secretary; at which, after various motions and considerable discussion, the matter was referred to the Board of Improvement, with power, the expense for land and building being limited by resolution to \$40,000. At this meeting the town authorities were directed to issue thirty-year bonds, and provision was made for payment of interest and principal by taxation. The Board of Improvement immediately entered upon the accomplishment of the task assigned to them. A building committee, consisting of John Lefferts, John J. Vanderbilt and John L. Zabriskie, M. D., was appointed. Architect John Y. Cuyler was engaged to draft plans for the building. On May 18, 1874, the Board procured the enactment of a law authorizing them to proceed legally in their work (Chap. 456 of the Laws of 1874 of the State of New York). A section of land (100 feet front and 200 feet deep) was purchased on Grant street (then Union Place) 200 feet east of Flatbush avenue, at a cost of \$5,800. The contract was let to William Vanse for \$29,000, the building to be completed September 1, 1875. Though not completed, the building was nevertheless used on November 2, 1875, for the annual fall elec-

tion. On February 7, 1876, the new town hall was formerly transferred by the Board of Improvement to the town authorities. On this occasion a large and enthusiastic meeting was held. The formal transfer was made by Hon. J. A. Lott in an able address, a portion of which, in these days of robbery in high places, is worthy of historical record, and is as follows: 'It was found, on adjustment and settling of the interest realized on the money deposited in the bank, and in making up the final account, that the said expenditure exceeded the sum of forty thousand dollars borrowed, and the interest realized thereon, by the amount of ninety-eight dollars. That excess was *paid by the seven members of the Board out of their own pockets*, in equal sums, to the treasurer, who was thus enabled to defray and pay the entire expenditure incurred without leaving any outstanding indebtedness therefor, beyond the amount authorized by law under which the Board acted.'

While Flatbush had been enlarging her population and increasing the extent of her streets and the number of her homes, Brooklyn had been advancing with mighty strides. In 1855 the latter had gathered in to itself one of the five Dutch towns,—Bushwick (including Williamsburg and Greenpoint); and it had no sooner got settled down with that increase than it began to cry out for more, to bring into its bounds the three remaining Dutch towns—Flatbush, Flatlands and New Utrecht—and the old English town of Gravesend. The question naturally created a great deal of earnest discussion, but it reached the stage of action on June 28, 1873,—seven days after the first telegraphic message was sent from Flatbush to the outside world,—when a bill was passed in the Legislature directing the local Supervisors to meet and appoint five commissioners who, with six to be appointed by the Mayor of Brooklyn, were to draft a plan for consolidation. The commissioners were duly named as follows: Brooklyn—J. N. Wyckoff, Jr., E. J. Lowber, A. G. Bay-

liss, Edmund Briggs, George C. Bennett and George L. Fox; Flatbush, Hon. John A. Lott; New Lots, C. Warren Hamilton; Flatlands, Peter Lott; Gravesend, William Bennett; and New Utrecht, Teunis G. Bergen.

There were many difficulties in the way of the proposed consolidation, not only in the matter of local taxation, but from the fact that the city would occupy all of Kings county, and unless some arrangement was made there would be two sets of officials to be paid with any amount of future trouble in the way of conflicts over jurisdiction. The credit for grappling with the numerous intricate questions which arose has been awarded to John A. Lott, president of the commission, and the plan outlined by him was adopted by the entire body. The scheme was submitted to the electors at the election of November, 1873, and repudiated. Brooklyn was in favor of the annexation by a majority of some 20,000, but the other towns decided against it by a majority of 21,568. Even in face of that the question of annexation was not permitted to rest and the agitation in its favor was kept up until in January, 1894, separate bills for the annexation of each town were introduced in the Legislature and all were passed. That for the annexation of Flatbush came before Governor Morton for his signature April 28, 1894, and as he laid down his pen the separate history of old Midwout came to an end and it became simply Brooklyn's Twenty-ninth Ward.

Since consolidation, the progress of Flat-

bush has been little short of wonderful. Almost every month has seen improvements,—streets and avenues opened up and homes of all sorts, from the princely villa to the mechanic's cottage, erected. Even the tenement house is finding sites in some of its streets. Much of the old has disappeared, few of the ancient landmarks remain. Melrose Hall has been torn from its site, lost its glory, and what remains of it re-erected at Winthrop and Robinson streets, and is but, as it were, the shadow of the old structure. The Dutch church still stands in its hallowed God's-acre. The Bergen house, erected in 1735, is still extant in all its old-time usefulness, and so are the Lefferts' homestead, the Vanderbilt homestead, the old home of the Vanderveers, and that of the Birdsalls, the Martenses and several others. But time is against them and it seems only a question of a few years when Flatbush will have little in the way of antiquity to show the stranger within its gates. Hardly a building season passes without at least one of these survivors being torn down to make room for a modern structure or permit a street to be laid out. Even during the past year (1901) the old home of Dominie Freeman was torn down. It was erected in 1707, was badly shattered during the battle of Brooklyn and roughly used afterward by the British troops; but it survived until the demand of modern progress finally secured its demolition. It is a pity that we could not make certain the retention of some at least of such local historical landmarks.



CHAPTER XXVIII.

NEW UTRECHT.

NEW of the prettiest and the most popular of the old townships in Kings county, New Utrecht, has less of a really interesting history than any of them. It somehow had, until the arrival of the ubiquitous trolley, always lived practically within itself. It covered an area of eight square miles—rather more—and boasted of its villages of New Utrecht, Bath, Fort Hamilton and Bay Ridge. The New Utrecht water front as a place for summer residence has been popular since early in the past century. For many years the Hamilton House, kept by Hawley D. Clapp, was a favorite resort for summer boarders. Curiously enough, a point on the New Utrecht shore was selected by Drs. Bailey, Bard, Rogers, Tillary and others as the site for the first bathing establishment erected on Long Island. This institution flourished, and when burned, in 1802, was rebuilt and long continued to be a favorite resort of New Yorkers. As time went on hotels and boarding houses increased in number and popularity. Of late years, however, many attractive all-the-year-round settlements have been added to it, of which Bensonhurst may be regarded as the chief. The land boomer has been particularly busy in New Utrecht and to his efforts we owe such communities as West Brooklyn, Van Pelt Manor, Homewood, Blythebourne and, as the auctioneers say, "a host of others." It is now all surveyed, a mass really of streets, driven with mathematical-like regularity in straight lines and at equal distances in spite of all natural obstacles, historical association

or family sentiment, and while only a few of these streets, comparatively, have been thoroughly opened and built up, still every year is adding to the number and the time is not far distant when New Utrecht will be but a memory and it will recognize as gracefully as possible its new position as Brooklyn's Thirtieth Ward. It was the last of the five Dutch towns to come into existence, and it was the last which really threw off the old condition of things and accepted emphatically the new,—those which now prevail.

The first patent issued for lands in what afterward became the township was granted in 1643 by Governor Kieft to Anthony Jansen, who came here from Holland at an early age. He did not seem to succeed on his 200 acres and sold them in 1660. In the meanwhile Cornelius Van Werckhoven essayed to start a colony in the territory, but the unfortunate result for that colonizer has already been told in these pages. Jacques Cortelyou, who succeeded to his interests, established a settlement in 1657 and named it in honor of the ancient city of Utrecht. Twenty-one grants, each of fifty acres, and a house lot were that year issued by Governor Stuyvesant. Nineteen of these were given to the settlers and the remaining two were reserved for the poor. Those to whom the patents were issued were: Jacques Cortelyou, Nicasius de Sille, Peter Buys, Johann Zeelen, Albert Albertson (Terhune), William Willemse (Van Engen), Jacob Hillickers (alias Swart), Pieter Jansen,

Huybert Hoock, Jan Jacobson, Yunker (or Squire) Jacob Corlear, Johann Tomasse (Van Dycke), Jacobs Backer, Rutgert Joosten (Van Brunt), Jacob Pietersen, Peter Roeloffse, Claes Claessen (Smith), Cornelis Beeckman and Teunis Joosten.

The most noted of these pioneers was De Sille. He emigrated from Gelderland in 1653 and settled at New Amsterdam, where he became a close friend of Governor Stuyvesant, who at once appointed him to the high office of First Councillor. De Sille was a widower when he came here, and in 1655 he married a Dutch lass; but the marriage proved an unhappy one and the couple separated on account of incompatibility of temper; but which of the two was to blame in the matter the records fail to state. The lady survived him, however, and the law records show that she had something to say in the disposal of his property; so that very likely it was the husband's temper that was out of joint. Stuyvesant, however, did not lose faith in De Sille on account of his matrimonial misfortune, and in 1656 he appointed him Schout Fiscal of New Amsterdam. On receiving his patent in New Utrecht De Sille appears to have at once removed there and built a house, where he resided until his death, some time prior to 1674. "This house (which was demolished in 1850) was," says Van Bergen, "a fine relic of colonial life. Substantially built after the manner of the Dutch architects of the time, with its thick stone walls, its capacious fireplaces, its prominent chimney, its long, rambling sort of roof of red tiles brought from Holland, its heavy beams and long rafters, and its odd windows with their little panes of glass,—this ancient colonial house was for nearly 200 years an evidence of the care, stability and comfort of the early settlers of New Utrecht. Into this house General Nathaniel Woodhull, the Long Island hero in the Revolution, was taken to die, and before the old fireplace which had warmed the colonists for more than a century

the brave patriot enjoyed some comfort before his death.

"De Sille was a man of many accomplishments, well versed in the law, not unacquainted with military affairs, of fine character, a poet and a historian." For the last named quality we still have evidence in his "History of the First Beginning of the Town of New Utrecht," which was translated by the late Teunis G. Bergen. De Sille's only son returned to Holland in 1662 and died there. Of his two daughters, Gerdientje married Gerretse Van Couvenhoven, of Brooklyn Ferry, and Anna married Hendrick Kip, Jr. It is curious to note as an instance of how things were done in those days that when Anna's son, Nicasius, was fourteen years of age "she bound him to Jan Montange (Flatbush) to learn the cooper's trade. Montange was to board the apprentice, find his washing and mending, give him eight stivers every Sunday for spending money, send him to evening school and at the end of his term give him a Sunday and every-day suit of clothes."

Bergen tells us—and no man was a better authority—that of the pioneer settlers of New Utrecht named above Joosten Van Brunt is alone represented by male descendants in the town to this day, although Cortelyou, De Sille, Van Dyck and Terhune are represented through female descendants, while Jansen Van Salee, the first patentee, is represented by the Sicklen and Emmanis families. Joosten Van Brunt was quite a prominent man in his day and a useful and prosperous citizen. He came here from the Netherlands in 1653, and was a Magistrate of New Utrecht for several years, extending his landed property considerably beyond the limits of his original patent by judicious purchases as well as by securing additional patents. In 1674 he bought De Sille's house, when it was put up at auction by the latter's administrators and it continued in the possession of his descendants until its demolition, in 1850. Some of his descendants still reside on property which he pur-

chased or secured. He had three sons,—Nicholas, Cornelius and Joost. Nicholas, who was a farmer on some one of the parental holdings, married Helena, daughter of Jacques Cortelyou, and died in 1684, leaving a son, also named Nicholas, who was born in the same year. The latter, on the death of his grandfather prior to 1713, became heir to most of his property, but did not long survive, for his own will was probated in 1714. He was married, but his children appear to have died in infancy and the bulk of the original owner's estate reverted to his second son, Cornelis, who had long before that time won wealth as well as prominence in the affairs of the colony. He was assessed in 1706 on 144 acres of land in New Utrecht. From 1698 to 1717 he was a member of the Colonial Assembly. 1718 he bought the Pennoyer patent in Gravesend for £365, rather a large transaction for those days. Cornelis died in 1748, leaving a family of four sons and five daughters. His younger brother, Joost, was of a military turn, and was in succession Ensign, Captain, Lieutenant Colonel and Colonel of militia. For over forty years he held the office of Supervisor. He died in 1746, leaving a son, Rutgert, who in 1744 succeeded him in his office of Supervisor and was a Captain in the local militia. Rutgert acquired considerable wealth,—so much that he was known as "Ryke Bood" or rich brother, and he became the owner of considerable real estate. In 1752, six years before his death, he transferred, for £2,200, a tract of 246 acres in New Utrecht to his son-in-law, Joris Lott, husband of his daughter Maria. Such were the pioneers of a family which has continued to be connected with New Utrecht to the present day.

Governor Stuyvesant gave New Utrecht a patent in 1662, when Jan (Tomassen) Van Dyke, Rutger (Joosten) Van Brunt and Jacob Hellakers were chosen as Magistrates and the dominion of Adriaen Hegeman as Schout was extended over the new township. Soon after the patent was issued Stuyvesant

made a visit to New Utrecht in solemn state, hoisted the flag of the Netherlands, and wound up by partaking at a feast in the home of the pioneer, Van Brunt. This may be said to be the first excitement in the history of New Utrecht. The second occurred in 1663, when the adventurer John Scott rode into the village with his gang of braggadocios, took possession of the unguarded blockhouse, fired one of its guns, and proclaimed Charles II the sovereign ruler of New Netherland. Scott tried to make Jacob Hellakers and others swear allegiance to the English sovereign, threatened several women with the sword and then clattered away to win fresh victories. Little over a year later there was a still more serious excitement, for on December 8, 1664, a fleet of English vessels appeared in Nyack Bay and it was not long before Colonel Nicolls' coup changed New Netherland into an English colony, sent Peter Stuyvesant, indignant and bellicose to the last, into retirement and brought New Utrecht as well as the other Dutch and English towns on Long Island under the British flag. New Utrecht seems to have submitted to the change with placid submission and was represented by two delegates at the convention which Governor Nicolls called in 1665 after he had secured a firm grip of the reins of government. In the following year it accepted a new patent from his hands, found itself one of the towns of the West Riding of Yorkshire, and the "Duke's Laws" became the supreme legal code of the town. The English rule lasted for nine years and then disappeared as suddenly as it came, for on July 29, 1673, a fleet of vessels with the flag of Holland at each of their mastheads was seen in Nyack Bay and were heartily welcomed and soon New Netherland was Dutch once more. Governor Colve's rule was especially welcomed in the Dutch towns on Long Island, and on August 29 every male inhabitant of New Utrecht of suitable age took the oath of allegiance to the Fatherland and swore to it undying fidelity. They also accepted a new charter or

patent for the town from the astute Colve, for that enterprising potentate had found out, like Nicolls and Stuyvesant and all the rest, that there was money in such things.

Matters were just beginning to settle down into their accustomed dreary routine when a fresh change occurred. On August 27, 1674, another fleet was discovered lying in Nyack Bay, and before the burghers fully realized the nationality or purpose of the strange craft the sailors were in possession of New Utrecht, helped themselves to beef and other good things and took possession of all the cattle, grain and vegetables in the place. That night



DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH
OF NEW UTRECHT, AT VAN PELT MANOR.

New Utrecht was once more annexed to the British crown and it was not long afterward that the Dutch rule in New Netherland became forever a thing of the past. English laws and government were planted again, to stay this time until revoked by the people themselves. In 1686 Governor Dongan issued another patent to the town, and in it the quit rent was fixed at six bushels of winter wheat, payable in the city of New York March 25, in each year.

Beyond what has been related above, the story of New Utrecht is practically destitute of interest until the time of the Revolution. It made progress but slowly. In 1647 it had a population of some 35, in 1698 it had 259,

of which 48 were slaves. Perhaps the only matter which aroused general interest was the local congregation, and even that had but little incident to record excepting the same quiet progress which characterized the civil history of the town. Ecclesiastically New Utrecht was the ward of Flatbush. Church services were at first held in the schoolhouse when the weather was unpropitious, but those who were able were expected to walk to the sanctuary at Flatbush. Provision was made in the schoolhouse, however, for the spiritual edification of those who were unable for one reason or another in any weather to undertake such a journey. In 1677 the people formed themselves into a congregation and the dedicatory services were conducted by the Rev. Casparus Van Zuren. Bergen tells us that "the names of the first elders were: Jan Guysbertz and Myndert Korten; the first deacons were Arian Willemsen (Bennett) and Jan Hansen (Van Nostrand). More than 26 families formed the congregation, and 27 persons were communicants at the beginning of the church organization. The following is the list of the original members: Jan Hansen (Van Nostrand) and wife; Myndert Korten and wife; Daniel Vorveelen and wife; Jan Gysbertz; Willemetje; Neeltje; Adrian Willemsen Bennett and wife; Jan Pietersen Van Deventer and wife; Nyntie Van Dyck; Gysbert Tysz Van Pelt and wife; Adriaantje; Joost Du Wien and wife; Pieter Veritie; Jean du Pre; Nicholas du Pre; Lourens Jansen and wife; the mother of Joost du Wien; Annetje Bocquet; Magdalena Van Pelt."

It was not until 1700 that the first church building was erected, an octagonal stone structure something like that of Flatlands with a large rooster perched on the top of an iron cross over the belfry.

Like so many other Long Island towns, the control of New Utrecht's civil government was vested for many years in the same hands by which the affairs of the church were managed. On this point a recent writer says:

The first church officers chosen performed the duties of overseers of the poor. The control of town and church affairs by the same individuals thus early begun was continued throughout the eighteenth and into the present century. Here as elsewhere in the county the past died hard and the town records were kept in the Dutch language until 1763. Oddly enough church officers were elected at town meetings, the same as other functionaries, and were *ex officio* poor overseers. It was also common to confer the offices of constable, collector and poundmaster on the same individual, for the plausible reason that neither alone was of much value and might be considered a burden rather than a favor to the incumbent. So unwelcome was the post of constable that it was necessary to assign it to the married men of the community in rotation, and in case the receiver of the honor was unable to serve he had the right to name a substitute, whose fidelity he was willing to vouch for. At first five and afterward ten pounds was the compensation allowed to the collector. In 1799 the elders of the church were chosen commissioners and the deacons trustees of common schools, which regulation continued till 1812, when the present state common-school system was adopted. Political distinctions were not recognized in town affairs.

Apropos to the long continued church government it is interesting to recall a case of a dominie who performed his own marriage ceremony in 1663, while another wife was still living. The defendant alleged that the first wife had eloped and he therefore presumed that he might perform the ceremony for himself as well as for any one else. This plea was set aside, the marriage annulled and the defendant fined in two hundred guilders and forty beaver skins, besides forty guilders more for his insolence and impertinence to the court.

At first the ministers were those of Flatbush, but when the collegiate compact, as it was called, was dissolved, the Rev. Dr. John Beattie became sole minister of New Utrecht. His pastorate lasted from 1809 to 1834, and he was succeeded by the Rev. Robert Ormiston Currie, who continued until 1866, when the Rev. David S. Sutphen became pastor. He held the pulpit until 1880, when he was

succeeded by the Rev. Alfred H. Brush. The old graveyard of New Utrecht, which still is preserved amid all the modern changes at what is now Sixteenth avenue and King's Highway, may be said to mark also the site of the first church. In his sketch of New Utrecht, of which much use has been made in preparing this sketch, Teunis G. Bergen wrote:

The old graveyard of the village, near where the first church edifice stood, still preserves the old lines and shows the grassy mounds over the graves of the early dead of pioneer times, as well as over the remains of those who died but a short time ago. The graceful monument erected to the memory of Drs. DuBois and Crane commemorates deeds of noble sacrifice. In the year 1856 some shipping in the quarantine, then opposite Staten Island, communicated the fatal seeds of yellow fever to the inhabitants of Bay Ridge and Fort Hamilton. Family after family was broken up or sadly ruined by the terrible scourge. In the endeavor to stay the ravages of the disease and help the afflicted, these two physicians bravely did their utmost until they, too, fell victims to the pest and were interred in the ancient church-yard. Since then the quarantine hospitals have been established lower down in the bay, near Sandy Hook; and nothing has occurred to detract from the salubrity of the air of New Utrecht throughout its whole area.

Of late years, however, this old burying ground has been sadly neglected, and a recent visitor described it as "uncouth and unkempt," the weeds luxuriant, the stones decaying, broken or fallen, the inscriptions fast becoming unreadable, and the whole place, with the exception of a few plots, left "to hang as it will grow." This reproach to New Utrecht, this slur upon the memories of the village fathers who there rest, should not be permitted to continue. The people should strive to preserve as long as possible the amenity and sacredness of the little enclosure. It is a part of the history of the old town.

For a month or two prior to the landing of the British forces on August 22, 1776, New Utrecht was the scene of constant excitement. In 1740 or thereabout* a ferry was established between Bay Ridge and Staten Island and the landing on the Long Island end was beside the bluff now occupied by Fort Hamilton and was locally known as Denyse's ferry. A small battery was placed there early in August, 1776, by the Americans with the view of stopping the traffic between the shore and the British ships then in the harbor. The good folks of New Utrecht were not above turning an honest penny by supplying the enemy with fresh meats and farm and garden produce, and the ferry to Staten Island not only carried over to the enemy an abundance in the way of provender but was the means of much information being conveyed concerning the doings of the patriot forces which should have been zealously withheld from the British troops then on Staten Island or from the British sailors in the bay. From its very nature the water front of New Utrecht presented many convenient places for sending to the enemy on the waters or on the land across the bay the persons or the communications of spies and informers of all sorts, and it also gave the British a stretch of coast line which from its extent and unguardedness almost in-

*The following data bearing on this are taken from an article in the story of New Utrecht from a recent issue of the "Brooklyn Eagle;"

"In 1749 the seines of Justice Cortelyou secured the enormous catch of 9,000 shad. The farmers and shore dwellers were in such constant communication with Staten Island that in 1738 a regular ferry was established between Yellow Hook, near Bay Ridge, to an opposite point across the Narrows. This service was conducted by John Lane. The latest instance of large game is recorded in 1759, when a full-sized bear attempted to swim across to New Utrecht from Red Hook and was shot by Sebring of Brooklyn. From 1776 to the end of the British occupation, sympathizers with the Patriot cause were forced to make nightly trips across the Narrows in fishing boats to Staten Island and New Jersey. At this period the bluff on which Fort Hamilton was afterward built was occupied by the houses of Denyse Denyse, Abraham Bennett and Simon Cortelyou. In the bombardment from the ships, on August 22, 1776, the Bennett and Denyse dwellings were struck by shots from the English guns."

vited a descent. The little battery of two or three twelve-pounders gave a good account of itself while it had the opportunity. It put a stop, to a great extent, to the illicit and unpatriotic traffic in its vicinity and it opened fire on the frigate Asia when that famous ship came within its range. The Asia responded, and while the battery escaped harm the houses in the neighborhood suffered severely. Bergen says that this battery opposed the landing of the British on August 22, but there seems no clear warrant for this. The invaders in the disposition of their fleet on that eventful morning certainly placed a vessel—the Rainbow—to cover the place where the little fort was supposed to be. All the historical evidence shows that the British landing was practically unopposed, and indeed General Parsons in his minute report of the matter to John Adams mentions nothing of such a defense. Probably, therefore, the armament had been moved to some of the forts in the established line of defenses where it might be enabled to do more effective service than in an outpost to which was opposed an entire fleet and a veteran army.

It is generally held that the landing from the British army was effected at Denyse's ferry, but probably the coast from there to what is now Bensonhurst was soon alive with the red-coated troops and the European mercenaries. For two or three days New Utrecht swarmed with the invaders, and roar of cannon and the din of musketry deadened all other sounds, while fields of grain were ruthlessly trampled down and farm houses and cottages despoiled of their provender, battered by shot, or doomed to flame by the exigencies of the short campaign or the brutal malice of the soldiery. It was a terrible episode in the story of the quiet township, a whole epoch as it were crowded into a few days; but after it passed matters resumed their wonted quiet and the people were given a chance to repair the damage and prepare their fields for fresh crops. During the British occupation the town felt the iron hand of the invader more

heavily than those of any other of the old Dutch towns, for they had lived even more among themselves than had the others, and their Dutch doggedness, and determination and loyalty, were more marked; but when the occupation, with all its bitterness, became a thing of the past New Utrecht gradually resumed its old ways and contentedly sowed and reaped, laughed and dozed, as the seasons came and went and the years slipped on.

It got another awakening when the war of 1812 broke out, for then a rock lying off the then famous Denyse's ferry and locally known as Hendrick's Reef was selected as the site of one of the forts forming the defenses of the harbor. This fort was originally called Fort Diamond, on account of the shape of its little island site, but the name was afterward changed to that which it now bears,—Fort Lafayette. In the other defenses of Long Island, when the war of 1812 seemed to threaten them with another British invasion, the people of New Utrecht took an equal interest with their neighbors. On August 22 they worked on the Brooklyn fortifications and the New Utrecht company in the Long Island (Sixty-fourth) Regiment was maintained easily at its full strength. It was officered by Captain William Denyse, Lieutenants Barcalo and Van Hise, and Ensign Suydam. There was also another military company formed under Captain J. T. Bergen, while in New Utrecht was an armed camp for drill and instruction which bore the name of General Morgan Lewis.

In 1824 Fort Hamilton (the locality known to the Indians as Nyack) was commenced and was pronounced as completed in 1832. But military evolution is a constant evolution and even to the present day it is still undergoing enlargement and improvement. It now occupies a reservation of 155 acres and ranks as one of the most complete fortifications on the North Atlantic coast. At the time of this writing an army board is considering several very extensive improvements, to cost in the neighborhood of \$1,000,-

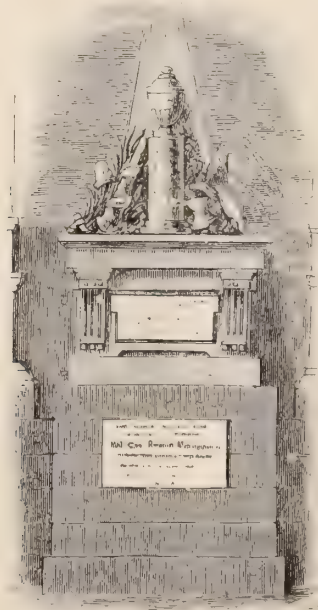
000. The barracks are to be rebuilt, and the parade ground will be graded and enlarged and also beautified by extensive tree planting. The government reservation is to be transformed into a fine park through which will pass a driveway connecting Bay Ridge with Bath Beach, Bensonhurst and Coney Island. Fine macadamized streets are to take the place of the old dirt roads. The redoubt at the southeastern corner of the grounds will be leveled, as it is in the way. The stables, store-room, hospital and the quarters of the non-commissioned officers are to be left standing. The improvements include a new sewer system. In fact little of the old barracks will be left when the improvements now under consideration are completed. Most of the officers' quarters, however, will remain, and it is hoped that the old Cortelyou mansion at the southeastern corner of the grounds will be spared. It is a historic landmark, having been General Howe's headquarters when he effected his landing on Long Island in August, 1776.

The modern history of New Utrecht is one simply of peaceful progress. Its villages—Bay Ridge, Fort Hamilton, Bath, Lefferts Park, Dycker Meadow, Bensonhurst—are, as we see them, mainly new developments, whose existence in these later days are due to the general desire for suburban homes and the wiles and ways of the land boomer. None of them has any history in the strict sense of the word,—any interest beyond their own borders,—although Bay Ridge came into unkind prominence in 1873, when one of the supposed abductors of Charley Ross, of Philadelphia, was shot while engaged in an attempt to rob the old Van Brunt mansion which then stood on the site now occupied by the Crescent Athletic Club.

In 1831 the Methodists first organized a church in Bay Ridge, and in 1834 St. John's Episcopal church was organized at Fort Hamilton. It was founded mainly by people connected with the military reservation, and the late Robert E. Lee, the Confederate General,

was one of its vestrymen in 1842, at which time he was a Captain in the United States army. In 1852 another Episcopalian body was founded,—Christ Church, Bay Ridge,—mainly through the efforts of the late J. A. Perry, the first Comptroller of Greenwood Cemetery, who died August 26, 1881. The advent of the street car, the laying of a line of railroad right through its farms to the sea-side, and, more potent than all, the introduction of the trolley, have opened its every nook and corner to the outside world. Streets now cross each other on the map with mathematical nicety, all over its old-time territory, farms have been cut up into city lots and every season new communities are being brought together. The time of the change from urban to suburban conditions was marked by many curious cantrips, none more curious than those of Cornelius Furgueson, who among other

things, had the township nightly lighted up with 3,900 gas lamps at a time when there was neither house nor barn to benefit,—one gas lamp it was said for every three persons in the township, or ten for each house! The company which supplied the gas received \$28 for each one every year and paid a handsome commission on the contract. There were stories afloat of other jobs and it was just such stories, backed up by strong evidence, that hastened the end of New Utrecht's separate existence. Governor Morton signed the bill for its annexation to Brooklyn May 3, 1894, and the measure went into effect on July 1 following. Since then New Utrecht has been reduced to the official position of a city ward, but its progress as such has been much more rapid than it ever experienced as a township, while its future is of the brightest possible description.



CHAPTER XXIX.

BUSHWICK.

WILLIAMSBURG, GREENPOINT—THE ADVENTUROUS LIFE OF NEZIAH BLISS.



UNLIKE the other Dutch towns on Long Island, Bushwick does not seem to have sprung into existence as a town duly backed up by a patent, and must rather be considered as a place which simply grew until it had township honors conferred upon it by the progress which its own people made in numbers and importance. Lying in a fertile belt of land, some 5,000 acres of extent, it seemed from the beginning an agricultural paradise, while it was so adapted by nature that almost any portion of it was easily accessible. Extending, roughly speaking, from the Wallabout to Newtown Creek, it had a splendid stretch of water front on the river facing New Amsterdam, while in its rear Newtown Creek and its tributaries formed another highway by which a farmer might send his produce to market. It seemed a stretch of land designed by nature for farming operations, and so far as we may judge its advantages were very early perceived by the pioneer prospectors of the West India Company. In 1638 most of the territory afterward incorporated into it was bought from the Indian proprietors, and some of it even then is said to have been occupied by enterprising pioneers who saw that the land was good and had pre-empted as much as they could and then waited the advent of law and order to award them titles and make peace with the red man. By 1650 it boasted a mixed population of Swedes, Dutch and Norwegians. As early

as 1641 we learn of one of these settlers, Cornelius (Jacobse) Stille, having sold his farm in Bushwick, so that the territory by that time had so far advanced from its primeval condition that its land had become the object of barter and sale. We do not propose to follow here the story of the early patents to such settlers as Jean Meserole, or Lambert Moll, or Claes Carstensen, or George Baxter, or Jan the Swede, or David Andriese, or Jan Forbus, or Pieter Jans the Norman, and merely present their names to show that Bushwick was primarily settled by as cosmopolitan a population as was New Amsterdam itself.

It was not until 1660 that the settlers began to draw together and the object then was simply that of self-protection. The Indians were at that time ugly and troublesome, and a block-house was erected on a bluff beside the river near the foot of the present South Fourth street, which was given the name of the Keike, or Keikout (look-out), which became the popular designation of a stretch of contiguous territory. That fortification protected the settlers, or at least inspired confidence in their hearts, especially of those near the Wallabout; but the farms seem to have rapidly—rapidly, for the time—spread over a wide stretch of territory. On Feb. 16, 1660, fourteen Frenchmen, recently arrived, along with a Dutch interpreter, waited on Gov. Stuyvesant and asked him to lay aside a section of the territory as a town plot and a few days later the redoubtable Peter,

with his officials, crossed over to Long Island and designated, or more likely approved, a site between Mespat Kill (Newtown Creek) and Norman's Kill (Bushwick Creek), on which he ordered twenty-two house lots to be laid out and building was at once begun, the first house being that of Evert Hedeman. A year later Stuyvesant revisited the place, saw that everything was really prospering, and, in answer to the request of the inhabitants that he should give the village a name, dubbed it Boswijck, the "town in the woods." But he was greeted with another request, a petition signed by twenty-three male inhabitants—all there was undoubtedly,—asking for the usual town privileges, such as being ruled by local magistrates; and Peter the Impetuous, being in a better humor than usual, seems to have at once assented. They submitted six names and from the list he selected three,—Peter (Janse) de Witt, Jan (Cornelise) Zeeaw, and Jan Tilje,—who thereupon became the first magistrates. The Schout, however, was Adriaen Hegeman, who held that office over the other Dutch towns, for Bushwick took its place at once among these in spite of the cosmopolitan complexion of its population. Stuyvesant also advised the surrounding settlers to build their houses so as to be in, or within easy reach of, the new settlement, and so they might help each other in case of danger. This suggestion was so evidently useful and practical that it was carried into effect with such zeal that within a few months the magistrates had to apply to the Governor and Council for an increase in the number of town lots, a request that was at once granted. It does not appear that Stuyvesant, in spite of his evident partiality for the "town in the woods," ever conferred on it a town patent; at least none has been discovered.

The early history of Bushwick is one of steady prosperity. On Dec. 26, 1662, say the Dutch records: "The magistrates of the village of Bosswyck, appeared before the council, representing that they in their village were

in great need of a person who would act as clerk and schoolmaster to instruct the youth; and that as one had been proposed to them, viz, Boudewyn Manout, from Crimpen op de Lecq (a villiage in Holland), they had agreed with him that he should officiate as voorleeser or clerk, and keep school for the instruction of the youth. For his [services] as clerk he was to receive 400 guilders in [wampum] annually; and, as schoolmaster, free house rent and firewood. They therefore solicited that their action in the matter might meet the approval of the Director General and Council in Nieuw Netherland, and that the Council would also contribute something annually to facilitate the payment of said salary." From this beginning we can trace the progress of primary education in Bushwick, the story of which has already been outlined.

Except a record of slow progress after the first exciting start, there is little to relate of the early Dutch history of Bushwick, but with the advent of Gov. Nicolls in 1664 there came quite a ripple of excitement. The town accepted the change of government quietly enough, though perhaps not loyally, and was represented in the Hempstead Convention of Marrh 1, 1665, by Jan Stelman and Guisbert Teunissen. It was in the latter's house that the excitement commenced, for there a minister, a preacher from New Amsterdam, delivered a sermon by order of the Governor. The name of this clergyman is unknown, and only a few of the inhabitants went to listen to him. In the first place he was a minister of the Church of England, a body of which few, if indeed any, of the people knew anything except from hearsay; in the second place, like most Protestants, they did not care to have a minister thrust upon them; and in the third place they had learned that they were to be taxed for the support of the new religious teacher. The amount was first fixed at 175 guilders, but when the extent of the opposition to the move became apparent, Gov. Nicolls reduced the impost 100 guilders. This there

was no evading, grumble as they might, and the amount was paid yearly until Gov. Colve took the reins of government, in 1673. But the people, while forced to pay, could not be compelled to listen, and most of them preferred to stay away from the services thus thrust upon them and adhered in their allegiance to the Dutch Reformed Church, traveling generally to the little tabernacle in Brooklyn. Gov. Nicolls, however, in spite of all this, willingly acceded to the request of the people for a municipal charter, and issued one on Oct. 25, 1667, in which the boundaries of the town are set forth, but in language which would be unintelligible to the general reader. Of course such a charter meant a fee and that was probably the main reason for the prompt response which the request met with. Another patent was issued in 1687 by Gov. Dongan. When the brief rule of Colve came to an end and British supremacy was re-established, no attempt seems to have been made to thrust a minister once more on the people, and it was not until the time of the British occupation, after the Battle of Brooklyn, that the Episcopal Church again asserted itself. Considering themselves under the spiritual guidance of the Collegiate Church, the people, except possibly the French who did not understand the language and very likely degenerated in religious observances, contributed to the support of that body; and there is still in existence a receipt given by Dominie Freeman for the Bushwick contribution to his salary, dated 1709. It was probably a year before, 1708, that the first church was built, the usual octagonal structure with steep roof and open belfry, surmounted by an eagle or a dove, or some other emblematic design in gilt. A part of the first communion service, still extant, bears the date 1708, and there is also a receipt for a church bell dated 1711, so that the former year may be accepted as the date of erection; and as the queer-looking little box, with trifling alterations and improvements, lasted until 1829, when it was demolished, it must have been a good honest piece of construction.

Notwithstanding its magnificent situation, Bushwick did not prosper or increase in population in the same proportion as the other Dutch towns. It remained a farming community mainly, and seemed to live in a measure within itself, attending to its own business, its people settling their troubles by arbitration among themselves, steadily keeping alive their ancestral traditions, jealous of any interference with their local affairs, supporting their own poor without the necessity of any legal edict, paying their quit-rent tax with the usual mild grumbling and finally becoming outspoken in their denunciation of the imposts and the laws of their English rulers. But they could do little more than grumble, for they were a mere handful. Probably in 1776 the whole population did not number over 250.

Bushwick, despite the disparity of its numbers, was more pronouncedly patriotic and outspoken than any of the other King's County towns in the crisis which preceded the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. It was represented in the Provincial Congress at New York in 1775 and 1776 by Theodorus Polhemus. The town seems to have fully complied with the calls of the Congress for militia and Capt. Titus's company is claimed to have done its full share of duty in the Battle of Brooklyn. The result of that battle, however, effectually silenced the Revolutionary spirit in Bushwick, and many of its most ardent Patriots moved away, while not a few entered the military service of the struggling republic. The town seems to have suffered many hardships all during the years of the British occupation, the trees and fences were made to furnish firewood for the camps or taken for use in such defenses as were thrown up, while farm and garden produce was transferred from raiser to consumer by the easy methods of martial law; and to that rude code in fact the civilization and property of the entire township had to give way. The most obnoxious feature of the occupation was perhaps the billeting of the soldiers on the people. A Hessian regiment, for instance, was quartered in Bushwick in the win-

ter of 1776-7. Many of them were sheltered in barracks which they constructed on the farm of Abraham Luqueer, using whatever wood, growing or otherwise, came handiest. A great number, however, were quartered in private residences and defiled and destroyed the property which they occupied with reckless wantonness. So filthy were they in their habits that they received the name of "the Dirty Blues," and one of the results of their stay in Bushwick was a malignant fever which made a vacant chair in many a household. Gangs of toughs and thieves—human scum—later on in the occupation crossed over from New York or marched from Brooklyn and infested the whole territory, while from 1778 until 1783 McPherson's Guides, although nominally under British discipline, proved little better than a squad of thugs and freebooters. No wonder that Bushwick rejoiced when the victory was won and the occupation became a thing of the past. Its citizens joined in an address to Gen. Washington, to which he sent a most dignified reply. On Dec. 2, 1783, they had a grand festival at which they joined in thirteen regular toasts, beginning with "The United States of America" and "His Most Christian Majesty (of France)," and "the States of Holland." Then they pledged New York, Clinton, Washington, the Council and Assembly, and closed with sentiments, the last of which was, "As the roaring of a lion is to animals, so may the frowns of America be to Princes." The chronicles tell us that "the day was spent in greatest good humor, decency and decorum. Every countenance displayed in the most lively manner the joy and gratitude of their hearts upon this most happy and important event."

"Among the patriots of Bushwick," says Stiles, "we may here record the names of John Provost (grandfather of Hon. A. J. Provost), who escaped the pursuit of a detachment of British soldiers on Greenpoint and was obliged to secrete himself for three days in Cripplegate swamp, during which time he sustained life by milking the cows which pastured there; of

John A. Meserole, who was taken and confined in the Provost jail at New York; of John I. Meserole, who was mistaken for John A., while out gunning in a skiff, and arrested as a spy, but subsequently released; and of Abraham Meserole, another member of the same family who was in the American army. Jacob Van Cott and David Miller were also in the service, and taken prisoners. William Conselyea was taken during the war, and hung over a well and threatened in order to make him confess where his money was; Nicholas Wyckoff was engaged in vidette duty with a troop of horse; and Alexander Whaley was one of those decided characters of whom we should be glad to learn more than we have been able to ascertain, in spite of much inquiry and research. He was a blacksmith, residing at the Bushwick Cross Roads, on land forming a part of Abraham Rapalye's forfeited estates, and which he purchased at the commissioners' sale, March 21, 1785. (Liber VI, Convey., Kings Co., 345). The building which Mr. Whaley occupied was erected by himself, on the south side of the present Flushing avenue, his liberty-sign pole rising from a little knoll some twenty feet west of the house. His blacksmith shop was on the site of the present house, east of the old Whaley house. He died at Bushwick, in February, 1833, in the eighty-eighth year of his age. Bold, faithful, and patriotic, and odd withal, he made his mark upon the day and generation in which he lived. His obituary notice (all too brief) says that "he was one of the pioneers of American liberty; being one of those who assisted in throwing the tea overboard in Boston harbor. He was the confidential friend of Washington, and in all the relations of life he always did his duty."

"Several estates were confiscated, among which were those of William Rapalje and others; the owners finding it convenient to go to Nova Scotia.

"Although opposite political opinions were frequently entertained by different members of the same families, it is worthy of remark that

they always acted honestly towards one another. Though a great number of the inhabitants of Bushwick were Whigs, the Royalists even were men of peaceable character and integrity. This fact, as recorded by a venerable eye witness of the Revolution, speaks volumes in favor of the ancestry of Bushwick."

With the close of the Revolutionary struggle Bushwick resumed the quiet tenor of its ways and did not manifest to any extent the progress made by the other Dutch towns. Probably its people were averse to change,—to receiving and fraternizing with new-comers. They tilled the soil season after season, ate the produce of their fields, sold what they could, or what they did not want, and were happy. The centre of their little world was Het Dorp, where was located their church, their town house, their school-house and the little God's-acre where after life's little battle they were gathered to their fathers. This was the spot on which Stuyvesant stood when he named the place Boswijck and probably the visitor who nowadays passes along Humboldt avenue, between North Second and Skillman streets, may tread in the footsteps of the valorous Peter when he viewed the landscape and graciously assented, in the passing fullness of his heart, to all the people asked of him. Now its glory has departed and rows of houses stand on once fruitful fields. Even the old burying-ground has disappeared. It became practically unused and an eyesore, and in 1879 the graves were opened, the remains reverently gathered together in boxes and deposited under the modern Bushwick church. There was quite a settlement around Het Dorp, for it was the rallying place of the inhabitants, and the court-house and church and school caused it to be frequented by strangers at intervals; but even in spite of these things it was a sleepy village, even in its busiest days. There was also a little settlement at the junction of what is now Flushing avenue and Bushwick avenue, which rejoiced in the name of Het Kivis Padt, or The Cross Roads, and another, Het Strand, stood

on the shore of the East River. But they were inconsiderable hamlets and looked to Het Dorp as the centre of their social sphere, their business world.

There was still another section which, although its distinct existence was not recognized until long after, really existed in Bushwick. This was Cherry Point, afterward known as Greenpoint, lying in a neck with Newtown Creek as one boundary, and the East River and Bushwick Creek as others. It was divided at the time of the Revolution between a few Dutch families, the Praas, the Meseroles, the Colyers, the Bennets, and it is known that a troop of Hessians held sway here during part of the occupation and played sad havoc with John A. Meserole's house, in which they were quartered. The family managed to save one cow out of the wreck of their live stock by hiding it away in an out-of-the-way clump of trees. From its peculiar location and the absence of roads the people at Cherry Point were so cut off from the rest of the township as to be hardly considered a part of it. Their main communication with the outer world was by boat, and a boat was as necessary a part of the farm's outfit as was a wagon at Flatbush. The people rowed over to Manhattan with their produce, and even journeys to Brooklyn were made by boat. In 1796 a bridge was built across Newtown Creek, but its facilities were for a long time of little practical use to the dwellers in Cherry Point.

But while Bushwick after the Revolution relapsed into its primitive state of what might be termed in words of a modern statesman "innocuous desuetude," part of the territory was suddenly given over to modern ways, and its population and resources and importance began to expand. But the pressure to expand came from without in the chain of circumstances which led to the foundation of Williamsburg. The story of that erstwhile city is that of a succession of land booms and reads more like a romance than a piece of veritable history. As the early history is so involved as

to be clearly stated only by one who has given the subject close study combined with a personal acquaintance with many of the undercurrents of events, I venture to quote at considerable length from a sketch written by Mr. John M. Stearns, probably the best authority on the history of Brooklyn's once famous "Eastern District."

After the close of the Revolutionary War, the farmers of Bushwick pursued in peace their occupations of raising grain and cultivating garden vegetables for the New York market. But, ere long, upon the shores of the river which formed their western border appeared the nucleus of a village, and even while they rubbed their astonished eyes, it expanded to the fair proportions of a city. Instead of slowly amassing money by plodding labor and close-fisted huckstering, they found fortunes fairly thrust upon them by the enhanced value of their farms, due to the enterprise of others, whom they considered as Yankee intruders. They hesitated at first, dazzled by the prospect and suspicious of the motives of those who offered it. But finesse prevailed and, the first purchase made, the rest was simply a matter of time.

Richard M. Woodhull, a New York merchant, of intelligent and comprehensive views, albeit somewhat speculative in his conclusions, was the pioneer in this movement. He had already established a horse ferry, from Corlaer's Hook (near the foot of the present Grand street, New York) to the foot of the present North Second street, in Brooklyn; and the concentration of trade from Long Island at this apology for a ferry naturally suggested to him its probable occupation, to a limited extent, near the eastern terminus of the ferry, for a village. Had he reasoned from experience as to the growth of cities, he might have been deterred from this venture. New York City, which at the period of the Revolution had but 24,000 inhabitants, possessed at this time (1800) less than 61,000. There was, indeed, a highway from the settled parts of the city to Corlaer's Hook; but Chatham street was then the margin of the built up city, and the scattered farmsteads, shops and hotels along the Bowery were mere suburbs of the town. Had he stopped to consider that from thirty to forty years would be required to crowd three square

miles of vacant lands with houses, and to occupy the De Lancey and Willet farms with population, before his projected city on the opposite Long Island shore could become a practical success, he might have saved himself from infinite trouble and ultimate bankruptcy. True, he had a ferry established. But this could not accommodate the people whose employment was in New York. A horse ferry, with two miles of travel on the New York side, before the business portion of the city could be reached, was to most persons a most formidable objection to locating so far from their employment. But Woodhull was infatuated with his scheme; and, as he could not easily, in the then temper of the old Dutch residents, purchase the much coveted land in his own name, he employed one Samuel Titus, of Newtown, to secure the title from Charles (old "Charlum") Titus of some thirteen acres of his farm, which he afterward repurchased from the said Samuel Titus, at cost. This land, situated in the vicinity of North Second street (then called Bushwick street), was soon laid out by Mr. Woodhull in city lots, and named Williamsburgh, in compliment to his friend, Col. Williams, U. S. engineer, by whom it was surveyed. A shanty ferry house and a tavern near by were erected; one Lewis bought some lots and put up a hay-press and scales near the present North Third and First streets, where it was intended to bale the hay crop of Long Island for shipment and the New York market; and an auction was held, at which a few building lots were disposed of. But the amount realized came far short of restoring to Woodhull the money he had thus prematurely invested. His project was fully a quarter of a century too soon. It required half a million of people in the city of New York before settlers could be induced to remove across the East River, away from the attractions of a commercial city. Woodhull found that notes matured long before he could realize from his property, and barely six years had passed before he was a bankrupt, and the site of his new city became subject to sale by the sheriff. By divers shifts the calamity was deferred until September 11, 1811, when the right, title and interest of Richard M. Woodhull in the original purchase, and in five acres of the Francis J. Titus estate, purchased by him, in 1805, near Fifth street, was sold by the sheriff, on a judgment in favor of one Roosevelt. James H. Maxwell, the son-in-law of Woodhull, became the purchaser of

Williamsburgh; but not having means to continue his title thereto, it again passed under the sheriff's hammer, although a sufficient number of lots had by this time been sold to prevent its reappropriation to farm or garden purposes. Woodhull and Maxwell's experience was that which is common to men who think in advance of their times; but they will ever be mentioned with respect as the "fathers of the town."

Meanwhile another rival was in the field, Thomas Morrell, of Newtown, who had purchased from Folkert Titus the ancient Titus homestead farm of twenty-eight acres; and who, with James Hazard, to whom he sold a moiety, had laid it out in city lots, and had a map made of the same, whereon Grand street was laid down as a dividing line. Morrell then, in 1812, obtained from the city of New York a grant for a ferry from Grand street, Bushwick, to Grand street, New York,—the same point to which Woodhull's ferry also ran. Yorkton was the somewhat pompous name given to the territory along the river between South First and North Second streets, and Loss' map of Yorkton was dignified to the position of a public record. The Morrell ferry gradually superseded Woodhull's in the public estimation, so that both owners became rivals; and disputes ran so high between them that they would not permit each other's teams to pass over their respective lands; all this tended to retard the progress of the village. Grand street became the permanent site of the ferry; and the old Titus homestead (on the northeast side of South First street), long known as "Old Charlum's" Fountain Inn, became the headquarters of village politics, where the destinies of town and county were often discussed, on winter nights, over hot flip and brandy slings.

But while Morrell succeeded as to the ferry Woodhull managed to preserve the name Williamsburgh, which applied at first to the thirty-two acres originally purchased, and had extended itself to adjoining lands, so as to embrace about thirty acres, as seen in Poppleton's map, in 1814, and another in 1815, of property of J. Homer Maxwell. But the first ferry had landed at Williamsburgh, and the turnpike went through Williamsburgh out into the island. Hence, both the country people and the people coming from the city, when coming to the ferry, spoke of coming to Williamsburgh. Thus Yorkton was soon unknown save on Loss' map and in the transactions of certain land jobbers. Similarly, the designa-

tions of old farm locations, being obsolete to the idea of a city or a village, grew into disuse; and the whole territory between the Wallabout Bay and Bushwick Creek became known as Williamsburgh.

At the time the ferries were established there was no open road to the water side except that of the Newtown & Bushwick Bridge Co., which came to the shore at Woodhull's ferry. There was no open shore road connecting the two ferries, nor any from the Wallabout to Williamsburgh; for, blind to their own interests, the owners of the shore land refused to have any road opened over their property along the shore. Consequently the ferries could not prosper, their cost exceeded their income, and both owners died in embarrassed circumstances and with blighted hopes. Subsequently the ferries were consolidated.

While Woodhull (and his successor) and Morrell were at variance about towns and ferries, Gen. Jeremiah Johnson had purchased the farm of Charles Titus second; and, in his goings to and fro between his farm and Williamsburgh, became much annoyed at having to open and shut no less than seventeen barred-gates, within a distance of half a mile along the shore.* His proposition to the owners of these lands to unite with him in securing a legislative act for the opening of a two-rod road, along the front of their property from the Wallabout Bridge to the Newtown and Bushwick Bridge road at Woodhull's ferry, was not only declined but strenuously opposed. Whereupon,

*In this connection we quote from a MS. lecture by Mr. Barnes on the Wallabout, the following description of the "old-time" route from Gen. Johnson's place, corner Kent avenue and Hewes street, to East New York: "Travel up the farm-lane (Hewes street) some distance beyond the present Lee avenue church, thence southeasterly along the farm to the then woods, across the creek to Nostrand's lane, and up this lane (near the site of Husted & Co.'s brick stables) on Flushing avenue, then southeast to land of Henry Boerum, thence southerly to Bedford, then along the old Bedford road, facing to the south of Fort Greene to Baker's Tavern on Long Island Railroad to Fulton street; then a road or lane, to the ferry, six miles away,—a journey of two or three hours. This, however, was short compared with the distance from the late Abm. Remsen's house (adjoining Scholes' farm, and but one beyond Gen. Johnson's). The family had to travel up their farm line to the church at Bushwick, thence along the Bushwick road to the Cross-Roads, along Cripplebrush road to the residence of Jacobus Lott, where Nostrand's land intersects the road, and then along the Cripplebrush road and Bedford road, past Fort Greene to Baker's Tavern on Long Island Railroad, and to Fulton street and so to the ferry,—ten miles, and taking four or five hours.

taking the matter in his own hands, he himself surveyed the proposed road, gave due notice of application, got up a petition, and by personal interest at Albany secured the required authority, and within a month the road was opened by commissioners of the two towns. The effect was magical, for before this there had been no means of vehicular travel with Brooklyn, except by the Newtown road from the Bushwick Cross Roads. Now the business largely increased at the ferry, and public attention began to be drawn more than ever to the many advantages of residence afforded by Williamsburgh. For, situated as it was,—opposite the very heart of New York City, with a bold water-front upon the East River of a mile and a half extent (entirely under the control of its own local authorities), with a sufficient depth for all ordinary commercial purposes, and with the ground rising gradually from the river to the height of about forty-five feet above water level,—it seems as if, on the whole, Nature had designed the territory for the site of a city.

The village grew apace. The M. E. Church (organized 1807) erected, in 1808, the first place of worship; the North American Hotel was built about the same time; and by 1814 the town numbered 759 persons.

About 1819 a distillery was established at the foot of South Second street, by Noah Waterbury, whose enterprise has earned for him the appellation of the "Father of Williamsburgh." A native of Groton, Ct., he came, in 1789, at the age of fifteen, to Brooklyn, where he learned to be a shoemaker. At the age of twenty-one years, together with Henry Stanton, he took Catharine Street ferry, and after carrying it on awhile entered into the lumber trade, and subsequently established a rope walk. He removed to Williamsburgh, in May, 1819, where he purchased from Gen. Jeremiah Johnson the half acre of land on which, with Jordan Coles, he built the distillery above referred to. Subsequently purchasing eight adjoining acres, he laid it out in city lots; gradually got into the real-estate business; frequently loaned money to the village in its financial embarrassments; originated the City Bank, of which he became the first president; as also of the Board of Trustees of 1827; and in many ways promoted the welfare of the village. His life was one of enterprise, public spirit and high integrity.

It was early found that the laws relating to common highways were entirely inadequate

to the opening of streets and other improvements needed by a village or city. If the plan had been adopted of opening all streets by common taxation, improvements might have been effected, and in the end their expense would have been equitably apportioned, that is, when the whole village plot was improved alike and paid for; but in this new community every person wished his particular property improved, and had rather pay the expense than have such improvements deferred till the general public were willing to assume the special burden of such improvements. Mr. David Dunham, a merchant and citizen of New York, became interested in Williamsburgh, by purchase at the Sheriff's sale, when the right, title and interest of James H. Maxwell (Woodhull's son-in-law) were sold out on execution in favor of James J. Roosevelt, who continued to follow the property with his financial accommodations until 1818 brought the final extinction of the original pioneer interest of these two founders of the village. Dunham shared his purchase with Moses Judah and Samuel Osborn, established the first steam ferry from New York to Williamsburgh, and had his name applied to Grand street, as laid down on "Loss' Yorkton Map." But, though the street was soon widened ten feet on the north side, the new name would not stick. Grand street it was, and is to this day. In 1820 David Dunham, above named, donated land near North First street, on which a school-house was erected, known as District School No. 3 of the Town of Bushwick; and the population of the town, including the village, was at this time 934, of which 182 were colored.

In July of this year an advertisement in the *Long Island Star* announces a bear-shooting, at the Fountain Inn, which "the rifle companies of Major Vinton and Captain Burns are particularly invited to attend with their music. Green-turtle soup to be ready on the same day, from 11 A. M. to 10 P. M." In October, following, three persons were indicted at the Kings County General Sessions for bull-baiting at Williamsburgh! which argues well for the moral sentiment of the new community. In 1823 the village sustained a severe loss in the death, by drowning, of Mr. David Dunham, "merchant and citizen of New York," whose efforts had "materially changed the appearance of Williamsburgh and were adding constantly to its improvements. The Williamsburgh Ferry and Turnpike, maintained by him, are

real and lasting benefits to the city and to Long Island." "Never disheartened by disappointment, nor diverted from his object by indolence or opposition," he was justly considered "the friend and founder of the village." His ferry continued to run; manufacturers (especially of whisky or rum and ship cordage) acquired something of a foothold in the place; and there appeared one or more corner groceries and a village tavern, besides "old Charlum" Titus's Fountain Inn. In 1825 Garret and Grover C. Furman, New York merchants, purchased twenty-five acres on South First street, about 150 feet from what is now Grand, near corner of Second street, at \$300 per acre, and had it mapped into city lots. They then offered the Dutch Reformed congregation their choice of a lot 100 feet square upon which to erect a church, which was accepted; then building lots began to be enquired about in that neighborhood. The first two lots were sold to Dr. Cox for \$150, after which they sold so fast that the price was advanced to \$200, and in less than six months to \$250, etc.

It was not long before the necessity of a village organization, with officers possessing the power to compel the opening and improving of streets, the digging of wells and the erection of pumps, and other public conveniences, and to restrain and limit the unneighborly selfishness of particular citizens, was made fully apparent. Moreover, no general survey of a village plot had been made; and the people, in public and private, began to discuss, and gradually to agree upon, the need of a village charter. Finally John Luther and Lemuel Richardson (or rather George W. Pittman), having purchased sites for two rope walks between North Third and North Fourth streets, procured a survey of the adjacent lands into street and lots, and made application to the legislature for an act which should confer upon the place the usual village powers. The desired act of incorporation was passed April 14, 1827, defining the village boundaries as "beginning at the bay, or river, opposite to the Town of Brooklyn, and running thence easterly along the division line between the towns of Bushwick and Brooklyn, to the lands of Abraham A. Remsen; thence northerly by the same to a road or highway at a place called Sweed's Fly, thence by the said highway to the dwelling-house late of John Vandervoort, deceased; thence in a straight line northerly, to a small ditch, or creek, against the meadow

of John Skillman; thence by said creek to Norman's kill; thence by the middle or centre of Norman's kill to the East River; thence by the same to the place of beginning." The charter named five Trustees to serve till the time of the village election, viz.: Noah Waterbury, Abraham Meserole; Lewis Sanford, and Thomas T. Morrell; also, John Miller, who declined serving; which Board were duly sworn in April 26th, and organized April 30th, by choosing Noah Waterbury, President; Abraham Meserole, Secretary; and Lewis Sanford, Treasurer. Their only noteworthy acts were the granting of several tavern licenses (the proceeds, \$10 each, accruing to the poor of Bushwick), and procuring a survey of the village to be made by Daniel Ewen, for which \$300 was raised by special tax. The first village election was held Nov. 5, 1827, and the old trustees were re-elected, by a nearly unanimous vote, except that Peter C. Cornell was elected in place of John Miller. The votes being one to six of the population gives 114 as the population of the village proper.

While the new city fathers speedily evinced a commendable degree of enterprise in their efforts towards the improvement of the place, their wisdom was not altogether commensurate with their zeal. The charter itself lacked precision, in some respects, and its vagueness seems to have been often improved by the early trustees as a warrant for the exercise of extraordinary powers. This embroiled them in legal and political contentions with private owners of property, who, for the first time, became subject to municipal regulations. Thus, the attempt to open First street along the East River front between South First and South Second streets, gave rise to a long and bitter lawsuit between Jordan Coles, as plaintiff, and the village, in which Coles was partly successful; but the open street remained in the hands of the public. Again, the Board, unwittingly, became the cats-paw of certain domestic speculators who rendezvoused at the old Fountain Inn, during the days of its decline, and these hatched schemes to possess themselves, under color of the law, of the parcels of land owned by non-residents and outsiders. By instigating taxation and assessment sales of these lands, with and without law, they were enabled to purchase them "for a song," much to the detriment of the village, as it gave rise to much uncertainty as to land titles. Yet the practice continued until probably 10,000 lots were sold for

non-payment of taxes or assessments, while there was not law enough in these assessments or tax titles under which to acquire or hold the lands. But thus were matters too often managed by those who "had the ear" of the little handful of trustees, who held their sessions in a small, wooden house, with its gable to First street, about seventy-five feet north of Grand; wherein, also, was a tin and stove store, and the office of a Justice of the Peace.

In January, 1829, the village had reached a milestone in its career: it had a debt! In February it had a postoffice, Lewis Sanford, postmaster; in June, a hook and ladder company was formed; and, during the year, North Third and South Second streets were built, and First street between Grand street and the Brooklyn line was opened. In 1829 a school census revealed these facts,—that Williamsburgh had a population of 1,007, including 72 blacks; 148 dwelling houses, including 10 stores and taverns; 5 other stores; 5 rope walks; 1 distillery; 1 turpentine distillery; 1 slaughter-house, and 2 butchers; 3 lumber-yards; 1 M. E. church; 1 Dutch Reformed church; 1 district and 3 private schools, etc., etc. In 1832 a Methodist Protestant church was formed by secession from the M. E. church. In 1835 a census of the town of Bushwick (inclusive of Williamsburgh) gave a population of 3,314; and 2 distilleries, 4 rope walks, and one gristmill, with a total of \$398,950 of raw material consumed, and \$481,272 produced—all of which (except the gristmill) were within the village limits, as were also 3,000 of the population. This was exclusive of many smaller establishments, wood-yards, storehouses, etc., together with 72 village streets, of which 13 were opened, and about 300 houses. This year, also, the Williamsburg Gazette was started.

These facts illustrate the progress the village had made, despite the errors of its trustees, the machinations of land-jobbers, and the depressing failures of its first founders; and, encouraged by these facts, its inhabitants bestirred themselves to procure an enlargement of their charter and a strengthening of their corporate authority. On their application, a legislative act was passed, April 18, 1835, extending the village limits by adding all the present Sixteenth Ward, of Brooklyn, from the Sweed's Fly road to Bushwick avenue, and the present Eighteenth Ward, as well as a portion of the Eighteenth Ward, between Humboldt street and the old Wood Point road. The

new charter created a Board of nine Trustees, to be annually elected, of which Edmund Frost was chosen President, and the energy and enterprise of the new board soon inaugurated a new era in the history of the place. Several large and substantial wharves and docks were built, new avenues of trade opened by the construction of turnpikes, more streets laid out, and (against the strenuous opposition of New York) a new ferry established to Peck Slip, a movement which, more than anything else, perhaps, contributed to the increase of Williamsburgh's population and prosperity,—adding, as it did, an inducement to many New Yorkers to locate their residences on some of the beautiful and eligible sites covering the eastern shore of the East River.

Speculation had now grown to enormous proportions. In 1828, in addition to the "Williamsburgh" and "Yorkton" settlements, the Jacob Berry farm, of twenty-five acres, next to the East River and Brooklyn line, and the Frederick Devoe farm, of ten or twelve acres, extending from the river to Seventh street and along South Fifth and Sixth streets, had been laid out in village lots and mapped. In 1833 one Holmes Van Mater, of New Jersey, having purchased the David Van Cott property, of twenty-four acres, extending from Sixth street to the old Keikout road, near Tenth street, and from South Third to Grand street, and for the space of a block to North First and beyond, between Ninth and Tenth streets, including the "common" near Ninth and North First streets, had it mapped out into lots. John Miller had a map made of eleven acres, the northerly half of the land, inherited from David Miller, his father, being part of the old Keikout farm and of a piece of land extending from Seventh to Tenth streets, bought by David Miller of one Roosevelt. Maria Miller Meserole had the south half of the same land, mapped by the village and then in partition in 1849.

Nearly all of the present Thirteenth and Fourteenth wards of Brooklyn—the original chartered limits of Williamsburgh—was laid out into lots before 1834, when a general map of the village was made by D. Ewen, setting out the entire chartered village into prospective city lots. Prior to this Edmund Frost, Silas Butler, Charles O'Handy and William Sinclair had laid out twenty-five acres, extending from near North Second street to North Tenth, and from Sixth street to Ninth street.

Sharp and Sutphen had also seventeen acres laid out from North Second to North Seventh, and from Third to Sixth street. These parcels were of irregular shape and matched to contiguous lands by irregular lines.

A company purchased several farms and combined them in a map of 939 lots of land in Williamsburgh, the title being vested for convenience of sale and the execution of deeds in one William P. Powers, a handsome, amiable and honest young man, who was a law clerk in the office of John L. Graham, in New York. Powers also held title to one hundred and ninety-seven lots located between Ninth street and Lorimer street, and South Third street and North Second street, and lying on both sides of Union avenue; also, he held title to the Abraham Meserole farm, west of Graham avenue.

The greatest rivals of Powers' associates were one John S. McKibben and Thomas Nicholls, and, associated with them as banker and friend, one George D. Strong. Nearly all the land south of the Meserole farm, held by Powers as above, to the Brooklyn line and the cross-roads, was purchased by McKibben, Nicholls and Strong, and mapped into city lots, both upland and swamp. The only portion of what was made the third district of Williamsburgh, remaining to the original owners, was the part of the Meserole farm lying between Graham avenue and Bushwick avenue, the John Skillman farm, near North Second street, to the northerly village line and to the meadows, and from Union avenue to near Leonard street,—the land formerly of John Conselyea, deceased, afterward owned by Andrew J. Conselyea, as to part, and Mrs. D. W. Townsend and Mrs. Schenck as to other portions, and John Devoe as to land on the southerly side of North Second street, from Lorimer street to Bushwick avenue. But all these several farms and lands were mapped as city property by their old farm-owners and put on the market in competition with the land-jobbers' stock in trade. The village had already assumed jurisdiction, under an act extending its limits, passed in 1835, and laid out the streets as they are now recognized.

Such are the mater-of-fact details of the growth of the paper suburbs of our growing town. Its springs of life were hid away in the speculating haunts of New York City in dingy upper rooms of No. 142 Fulton street and No. 5 Nassau street, where often at mid-

day and at early nightfall gathered those who thought there was something more than Kidd's money hid away in the meadows and uplands of the old town of Bushwick.

At public and private sale large numbers of lots were disposed of, moneys were paid for margins, and mortgages were taken back for part of the purchase money to twice the intrinsic value of the property. All went merrily, the land-jobbers were reputed to have become wealthy, and their customers saw fortunes in their investments; and the pasture lands and fields which then made up nine-tenths of the territory of Williamsburgh were clothed in the hopeful imaginings of the holders of lots with all the incidents of a busy, bustling town.

During the year 1836, a company purchased the Conselyea (formerly Daniel Bordet's) farm, together with an adjoining estate, traversed by the present Grand street, laid it out (part of map of 939 lots), and erected thereon fourteen elegant first-class dwellings, designed to be the pattern houses of a new and model city. The advance in real estate and population was unprecedented—lithographed property-maps set forth in glowing colors the unrivalled opportunities and advantages for profitable investments, which were eagerly caught up by the uninitiated, until by this time (1836) real estate in Williamsburgh actually exceeded its present value.

Finally the bubble burst, and in the crash which followed—known as the "General Commercial Crisis of 1837," Williamsburgh suffered deeply. A perfect business paralysis ensued, which seriously shattered the foundations of real and substantial property. Between cause and effect, intervening circumstances delayed the ultimate catastrophe to collateral investments; so that not until 1839 or '40 did Williamsburgh fully realize that the prestige of her second founders was lost. The fourteen model dwellings were followed by no similar erections; here and there a half finished building, abandoned by its owner, suggested the vanity of all human hopes; the noise of the axe and hammer was stilled throughout the village. From 1840 to 1844 the Court of Chancery was fully busied in clearing away the rubbish of private bankruptcies from investments made in these lots, that they might stand discharged from judgments and liens in the hands of responsible capitalists, and in a condition for improvement.

But healthful legislation and increasing facilities of access gradually restored business to its wonted channels. So rapid was the progress of the village that in less than ten years its population had doubled, and its ultimate position as a city became a fixed fact in the public mind. For, during the period (1835-1844) when political and financial history had been so unhappy, social, religious and educational advantages had rapidly increased and helped to lighten the general gloom. In 1837 the Episcopal Church was organized in the city; in 1838 the Williamsburgh Lyceum was established; in 1839 the Baptist denomination gained a foothold; in 1840 the opening of the Houston Street ferry opened a convenient transit to residents employed in the great manufactories along the eastern water front of New York City; the village press was augmented by the advent of *The Williamsburg Democrat*; and the first omnibus line was established. The village census gave a population of 5,094. In 1841 the Roman Catholic denomination established itself in the Dutch village neighborhood; and the Odd Fellows organized a branch. In 1842 the First Presbyterian, and in 1843 the First Congregational Church, was commenced; while during 1843-'4 the place became a favorite resort of the "Millerite," or Second Advent craze. In 1844 an amended village charter was adopted, under which three trustees and one collector were chosen for each district. From this point up to 1850 the social, educational and literary interests of the village assumed more definite proportions and vigor, while the number of church organizations was rapidly increased in each of the denominations, and the Williamsburgh Bible Society was formed. In 1848-'9 appeared the first village directory, published (as also the year following) by Henry Payson, and continued by Messrs. Samuel and T. V. Reynolds, the increase of population from 1845 to 1850 being 19,448. The year 1851 saw the establishment of the Williamsburgh Savings Bank, the Williamsburgh Dispensary, the Division Avenue Ferry and three new churches.

Williamsburgh now aspired to be a city. Several motives conspired to this result. The village government had often exercised doubtful powers in matters of public improvement. Its several charters, subjected, as they were by the courts, to the strictest construction, were found to allow of too little discretionary

power to be always available in emergencies which were constantly arising. Again, the Village Trustees being mostly men of limited business experience, could not readily work up to a technical and strictly constructed law. It is due, however, to the old Village Trustees, to say that their carelessness, as to the provisions of the charter, oftener arose from an over-ambition to serve the public in its needed improvements of the village than from any corrupt motives of personal profit. And, not infrequently, they found themselves, as a board, involved in litigations initiated by the very persons who had petitioned for improvements, and whose property was benefited thereby, perhaps to even double the assessments charged to it for the expenses. An unwise fostering of the fire department, for the sake of its political influence, also gave undue influence to the rowdy element of the population, which soon showed itself in an increased turbulence of the town meetings, at which alone legal taxes could be ordered. This, with the impossibility of getting, in the town meeting, a fair expression of the real public voice—since the meetings could be so "packed" as to leave nine-tenths of the village voters out on the sidewalk—led to legislation for the establishment of a Board of Finance, which should determine the amounts to be raised for specific objects and provide for their insertion in the tax levy.

Such a Board was created March 1, 1849, by act of Legislature, and consisted of the President and Trustees of the village, with the Town Supervisor and nine other men especially elected for the purpose. But this did not suffice; and finally the required city charter, drawn by Mr. S. M. Meeker, village Counsellor, received the sanction of the Legislature April 7, 1851; the election for city officers was held in November following, and the charter went into effect January 1, 1852.

The names of public streets frequently express fragments of local history. Some are only to be interpreted by traditions. Men who lay the foundations of a city, or map the locations so to be occupied, are apt to respect a Scripture example in calling their cities "by their own names," or by the names of favorites and friends. Bushwick had no very conspicuous men; so, when it became the site of a future town, no local denizen had sufficient sympathy with the matter to wish to couple his name with what seemed so absurd a project.

Thus, in old Williamsburgh no streets preserve the memory of the Titus, the Miller, the Meserole, the Devoe, the Berry families, nor even that of its founders, Morrell or Woodhull. Mr. Dunham sought, indeed, to apply his name to the present Grand street; or, at least, to sixty feet wide of the southern portion of it. But the widened street, as a center line of departure in the designation of all the streets, took the more significant name of Grand street. And Woodhull street, in designating the streets by numbers, was succeeded by "North Second" street. All the regular streets of the village were designated by numbers, except Grand street and the lane known as Water street, a portion of the old road along the East River shore; and a street laid out on the Commissioners' map as "River street," whose site was over the waters of the East River, has been closed.

In the designation of the streets First street ran along the East River, Second street was parallel or nearly parallel to it, and so the streets were numbered as we went east from the East River up to Twelfth street; and north from Grand street the first street having the same general directions was North First street. The old Jamaica turnpike, from the old Ferry out, was North Second, and so on to North Thirteenth street, at or along Bushwick creek; then, south of Grand street and running in the same general direction, though not exactly parallel, South First street to South Eleventh street, at the old Brooklyn line. In the use of numerals there was a certain degree of convenience; but strangers were often confused by confounding First street with North First, or South First, etc.

But it is in the present Fifteenth and Sixteenth Wards that we find the streets designated by historical names. Lorimer commemorates the middle name of John and James Lorimer Graham, two famous land-jobbers there in 1836. Ewen street was named after Daniel Ewen, City Surveyor, residing in New York, who surveyed both the old and new village. Graham avenue still flatters the above named Grahams. Smith street commemorated Morgan L. Smith, and Bushwick avenue was the boundary between Williamsburgh and Bushwick. North Second street was extended on the map of the new village to Bushwick. Powers street, in the present Fifteenth Ward, was named after William P. Powers, a clerk in the office of John L. Graham, who was made

nominal proprietor of 939 lots for the convenience of their sale and conveyance to purchasers; also of several other parcels of land. He appears on the record as the greatest land-jobber of the period. While, however, the profits belonged to others, the responsibilities and losses were sometimes fathered on him. But he has always borne the character of an upright, honest and cultured gentleman. Ainslee street was named after Mr. James Ainslee, who for many years administered local justice in Williamsburgh. Devoe street represented the Devoes, who owned a block or two of land adjoining North Second street on the South side, and whose home was in Bushwick, and not Frederick Devoe, whose farm was on the East River shore. Going north of North Second street, or the old Jamaica turnpike, the first street parallel to it is Conselyea street, whose eastern portion runs through the farm late of Andrew J. Conselyea, and about an acre of land of William J. Conselyea, his brother; hence the name. Skillman street, now Skillman avenue to distinguish it from Skillman street in old Brooklyn, derived its name from John Skillman, Sr., who lived and died on the same farm, at or near the present residence of Charles M. Church, son-in-law to John Skillman. Jackson street was probably named from Daniel Jackson, who, in connection with Graham and Reuben Withers, had some landed interests in Williamsburgh. Withers street was named after Reuben Withers, late proprietor of the Houston Street Ferry. Frost street was named from Edmund Frost, who was associated with Handy, Sinclair and Butler in a tract of land in the Fourteenth Ward. Richardson street was named for Lemuel Richardson, whose worthy name is elsewhere mentioned as one of the pioneers in building up Williamsburgh. Sanford street (changed to Bayard) was in honor of Edward Sanford, a distinguished lawyer associated with John L. Graham in many real-estate transactions. His name had been applied to a street in the Seventh Ward, Brooklyn; hence the change. The substituted name was probably taken from the name of a street in the city of New York.

Going south from Grand street, Remsen street was named after Abraham A. Remsen, who owned land at its junction with Union avenue. There is another Remsen street near the City Hall, old Brooklyn, and the name of the E. D. street was changed to Maujer street

in respect to Mr. Daniel Maujer, who, about the time, represented the Fifteenth Ward as Alderman.

Nicholas Wyckoff, the late worthy President of the First National Bank, has his name perpetuated in Wyckoff street. Stagg street, with its homely name, has doubtless outlived its patron, who is probably known to but few, if any, of the existing citizens. Scholes street represents the family of James Scholes, deceased, late of what is now the Nineteenth Ward. Meserole avenue was named from the Abraham Meserole through whose farm it ran, and not from Abraham Meserole, husband of Maria Miller, of the present Thirteenth Ward. Johnson street, or avenue, commemorates the memory of the late General Jeremiah Johnson. Boerum street was named from old Jacob Boerum, who had a farm of fifty-eight acres within the limits of the present Sixteenth Ward, Brooklyn. This farm was the subject of the great Cleveland lawsuit. McKibben street was named after John S. McKibben, who caused a map of a part of the Jacob Boerum farm, as the land of McKibben and Nicholls, to be made and filed. Sigel street, which (on changing the name of duplicate streets in Williamsburgh by the Common Council of Brooklyn) superseded Marshall street, was in honor of General Sigel, of the Civil war. Moore street was named for the late Thomas C. Moore, a manufacturer of wire sieves and netting, who owned lands in that neighborhood. Varette street was named from Lewis F. Varette, a land speculator, who operated on the sale of village lots there and elsewhere. Cook street was probably named from an old resident near the Cross Roads. Debevoise street (covering a part of the old Brooklyn and Newtown turnpike, by the Cross Roads) was named from Charles Debevoise, who lived on Flushing avenue, near the western terminus of this street.

The custom of perpetuating the names of the oldest inhabitants by those of streets is more marked in the old city of Brooklyn than in Williamsburgh. In the latter place many whose names are thus perpetuated were really residents of the city of New York, and interested in Williamsburgh only as speculators.

From 1817 until 1852 the local government of Williamsburgh was carried on by a President and Board of Trustees. By a law which

passed the Legislature in April, 1851, it was raised, on January 1, 1852, to the dignity of a city, and Dr. Abraham J. Berry was elected the first Mayor, the population being at that time about 45,000. The possession of a city charter at once added influence and strength to the community, and it began to expand with bewildering rapidity. In 1852 the Farmers and Citizens' Bank was incorporated, with a capital of \$200,000, and the Williamsburgh City Bank with a capital of \$320,000. In the following year the Mechanics' (Manufacturers' National) Bank was formed, with a capital of \$250,000, and these financial institutions, with several local fire insurance companies, gave force to the idea of the citizens that Williamsburgh was destined to become the business center of Long Island. New churches were organized in almost all denominations, and twenty-five Sabbath-schools, with 4,600 registered pupils, showed that the active element in the city's growth was not unmindful of the higher interests of the community. Everything was hopeful, and a roseate hue colored every move by the municipality. Expenses were increasing rapidly, much more so than the local revenues warranted, but then the future was bright with promises. Thirty miles of streets had been opened up, paved and flagged, and that itself was boasted about as being a grand item, even though the treasury was empty.

The curse of the new city, as it was in a lesser degree that of the village, was its politics. A class of men forged to the front who lived off the spoils, and these were urging the city fathers to rush into all sorts of rash expenditures,—expenditures far beyond the financial ability of the local treasury to meet, and the municipal indebtedness began to pile up in a way that caused thinking people to desire a halt. But the politicians in office could not halt even if they had desired, which is doubtful, for those not in office had to be provided for, while their dependents,—those who by their votes gave them the power they

enjoyed,—had to be “looked after.” The fire department, for instance, being an excellent vote-getter, was carefully nourished by the local authorities until the city had a system far beyond its needs; but, then, each fire company was a powerful factor in local politics. In 1852 the Williamsburgh Water Company was organized, and proved the beginning of the end, for it was its extravagance and grasping methods that, more than aught else, turned the eyes of the Brooklyn people to the city that was rising into prominence on their border and to the dangers which its exigencies suggested and presented. The water company, soon after it was incorporated, proceeded promptly to buy up some sources of supply on the south side of the island, for which Brooklyn had been cautiously negotiating, and its scope of action promised still further to interfere with the future development of the water department of the City of Churches. The condition of things that presented itself to Brooklyn was not a pleasant one, for it was seen that all the local schemes of improvement were apt to be hindered by the new city, which was rapidly increasing in population, in ambition, in a knowledge of the wiles of local statesmanship, and in debt. Then arose in Brooklyn, quietly at first, a sentiment for annexation. It was felt that two such city governments, under the existing conditions, could not, side by side, maintain amicable relations or possibly work hand in hand for the mutual benefit of their respective cities, and that they would gradually but inevitably drift into more and more pronounced opposition, involving each other, in the end, into countless rash expenditures, perhaps even into a condition of financial bankruptcy. There was no need, for instance, it was agreed, for the cost of two municipal establishments, while under one retrenchment, economy and progress might become practical watchwords. Such were some of the arguments put forth in Brooklyn in favor of annexation. They were indorsed by many in Williamsburgh, but the bulk of the

population there was not ready for any such sweeping change as self-annihilation.

On January 1, 1854, William Wall, the head of a local cordage factory, a man who had risen from the ranks by his own industry and shrewdness, became the second and last Mayor of Williamsburgh. He desired to institute a term of rigid economy, and tried to introduce something like business principles in the management of the affairs of the city; but the Aldermen were decidedly practical politicians, versed in all the arts which that phrase implies, and had no patience with such notions. Mayor Wall would not yield to their ways, or their wiles, or their demands, and the number of his vetoes became such as to win for him the attention of almost the entire community, and especially of all interested in municipal progress. Still the Aldermen persevered in carrying on a campaign of spoils, and Mayor Wall, even by the most rigorous application of the powers vested in him, could not wholly arrest their schemes of plunder and extravagance. So, as the only avenue of practical, early, and complete relief that presented itself, he threw himself with all his energy into the annexation movement. Strengthened by this, the advocates of annexation, or consolidation, as it was sometimes called, caused a bill to be prepared, which passed the Legislature, and on January 1, 1855, the city of Williamsburgh passed officially out of existence and became simply a section of Brooklyn, and of the history of that city the further story of Williamsburgh is a part. In dealing with Brooklyn we will speak further of this consolidation, but here we may say that the new city not only included Brooklyn and Williamsburgh, but also the whole of the township of Bushwick, and including the section, almost distinct in itself, one time called Cherry Point, but which by that time had been known as Greenpoint, and which now became Brooklyn's Seventeenth Ward.

For many years after the Hessians had simply become ugly memories, Cherry Point

pursued the even tenor of its way and floated along the current of life with typical Dutch placidity and evenness. The change to modern conditions and development came about in unexpected fashion and mainly through the tireless energy of one man, and that man not a native—Neziah Bliss. Bliss was born in 1790, at Hebron, Conn., and his life was that of a typical Yankee adventurer. After some business experience in a store in New Haven, he removed in 1810 to New York City, where he made the acquaintance of Robert Fulton, the pioneer steamboat builder, and won the confidence and friendship of that great inventor. A year later Bliss went to Philadelphia, where, with Daniel French, he became connected with a company that proposed constructing a steamboat to ply on the Schuylkill. At the same time he found employment in a book store and in other clerical work, for, although the boat project proved a mechanical success, there was little money in it. In 1817 he removed to Cincinnati, where he organized a company and built the first steamboat ever seen there, the General Pike. It plied between Cincinnati and Louisville, and proved a money-maker. Mr. Bliss sold out his interest in her in 1819 and went to New Orleans. His business career, however, need not here be closely followed; he had the usual alternations of success and ill luck incidental to all pioneers, and a pioneer he essentially was.

In 1827 he returned to New York, and, becoming acquainted with Dr. Eliphalet Nott, he assisted that gentleman in several of his researches in steam navigation. The result of this was the establishment of the Novelty Works in New York, in 1831, which proposed to construct sea-going steamboats, and of that concern Mr. Bliss was the head. In the following year commenced his connection with Greenpoint, by his purchase, along with Dr. Nott, of thirty acres of the farm owned by John A. Meserole. In 1833 he still further identified himself with the place by his marriage to Mary A., daughter of John A. Mes-

erole. He at once saw that the territory offered great chances for development, and, evolving a project looking to that end, he threw himself into it with characteristic energy and promptitude. He extended his holdings by the purchase, in 1833, of the Griffin farm, and during the following year had the entire territory surveyed and laid out in streets. In 1835 he still further increased his acreage by purchase, expecting that the United States Navy Yard would be transferred to Greenpoint from the Wallabout. But that project fell through, and thereby Mr. Bliss suffered severe pecuniary losses.

However, his fortunes were now fully thrown in with Greenpoint, and, undaunted by the slow progress and serious losses, he applied himself zealously to the immediate development of the place. In 1838 he built a foot-bridge across Bushwick Creek, and in the following years opened for traffic part of a turnpike road which was subsequently extended to Williamsburgh. In 1839, too, he had the satisfaction of selling some lots to John Hillyer, a builder, who at once erected a house there, and this example was quickly followed by others, Mr. Bliss getting an average at that time, it is said, of fifty dollars for each of his lots. By 1842 a boom in building in Greenpoint fairly set in, and by that time Mr. Bliss began to reap some benefit from the scheme he had so thoughtfully planned some ten years previously and which for a long time had seemed destined to prove utterly barren of results.

But he did not wish to make Greenpoint alone a city of homes; he desired to make it also the center of the trade which was to support the homes. Its unrivalled water front made it a natural center for the coal trade, and the first of a series of coal yards was opened in 1843, at the foot of F street, on a point stretching into the East River, locally called Green Point, and which gave its name to the whole district. In 1850 a ship yard was established by Eckford Webb, and this proved

the beginning of a great establishment, for many years the greatest of all local industries. In 1850 Mr. Bliss secured from New York a lease of a ferry to ply between Greenpoint and that city, and it was opened for traffic in 1852. It finally became financially the most successful of all the ferries plying to New York. The Greenpoint Gas Works were incorporated in 1853, largely through Mr. Bliss's influence and advice, and as by that time Greenpoint had thousands of homes, with Episcopalian, Methodist, Baptist and Reformed churches,* with a good public school, and several social and literary clubs and societies, it may fairly be said to have progressed toward

full development in a most marked manner, and Mr. Bliss had already begun to enjoy the full fruition of his plans and was also venerated as the first citizen and founder of Greenpoint. But its full development was to come with annexation to Brooklyn. When that event took place it found Mr. Bliss still in the lead in the affairs of the ward, as he had been in those of the village, and he was chosen to represent it in the Board of Aldermen of the consolidated city. So the history of Greenpoint merged, January 1, 1855, into that of the city of Brooklyn, of which it then became a component part.

Thus it will be seen that the early history of Greenpoint is virtually a part of the life story of Nezhiah Bliss. This thoroughly typical American citizen died in 1876.

*The first Roman Catholic congregation was organized in 1855, and a body of Universalists formed a church the same year.



CHAPTER XXX.

GRAVESEND.

THE ENGLISH TOWN OF KINGS COUNTY—LADY MOODY—EARLY SETTLERS AND LAWS—
A RELIGIOUS COMMUNITY WITH A SAD CLOSING RECORD.

AMONG the towns of what is now Kings county, Gravesend for many years, in one respect, stood alone. It was an English settlement, while the others were Dutch; it was not included in the aggregation known as the "Five Dutch Towns;" its interests seemed always on a different footing from theirs, and yet it was intensely loyal to the Dutch regime. As to the origin of the name archæologists have widely differed, and many a learned argument has been set forth in favor of some pet theory or other. Etymologists, more than any other class of students, have been guilty of weaving the most absurd theories,—so much so that a book on etymology ten years old is about as valuable, practically, as an ancient almanac; but they differ from all other classes of theorists by the remarkable good nature and equanimity with which they see their airy creations of words about words quietly thrown down. Considerable time, patience and ingenuity have been spent to demonstrate that the name of this town was derived from 'S Grave-sende (The Count's beach), after a place in Holland, but an equal amount of time, patience and ingenuity have been expended in endeavoring to prove that it was simply a transference of the name of the town of Gravesend in England. Which of the two is right we will not attempt to discuss, for after all the question matters very little,—only we

cannot help remarking that a great amount of argument and antiquarian anxiety would have been spared had some one of the early chroniclers quietly jotted down his views on the subject.

Another and more interesting argument among the local antiquaries has been caused by the effort to show that white men trod the soil of what afterward became Gravesend town long before a white face was seen on Manhattan Island or in Brooklyn, or even Flatlands. Indeed, we are told that Veraz-zano, the Florentine navigator, who came here to explore the coast and "see what he could see" on behalf of King Francis I, of France, in 1527, had anchored in Gravesend Bay; but the evidence on this point is not very clear, and has been the subject of much protracted and learned dispute. Still it is not asserted that he effected a landing. He compared the harbor to a beautiful lake, and describes the boat-loads of red men which darted hither and thither on its surface. He did not investigate further, but seems to have sailed away in a northerly direction. As he passed out he saw natives gathering wampum on Rockaway Beach, and next discovered Block Island, which he called Louise, after the mother of King Francis. In 1542 we read of another visitor, Jean Allefonsee, who reached the harbor after passing through Long Island Sound, and anchored off Coney Island; and we get

glimpses of other navigators who seemed to be thoroughly content with the beauties of New York's bay that they did not try to institute any acquaintance with the land itself.

In September, 1609, however, Hendrik Hudson arrived in New York Bay and landed a boat's crew on Coney Island or thereabout, and there had a tussle with the natives and lost one of his men. So runs local tradition. Across the bay, on the New Jersey shore, the local authorities have laid the scene of the tragedy at Sandy Hook, and built up a pretty strong theoretical argument in support of their claim. There is no doubt that Hudson landed several parties while in this vicinity and that he did not use the natives either courteously or kindly; and it is just as likely that a boat's crew from the "Half Moon" landed on the shores of Gravesend Bay as on any other place. The whole argument amounts to very little either way, and could the Gravesend theory be sustained, which it certainly cannot—neither can the Sandy Hook story, for that matter—its only result would be to give Gravesend in a sense a degree of superiority over her neighborhood as the scene where the white man made the initiatory steps toward taking up his burden of converting that part of America to his own use and profit. It may be well, however, to recall the name of the hero—perhaps he might be so called—who is recorded as having been the first white man to fall a victim to Indian valor, or treachery, in the waters surrounding New York. He was an English sailor, John Colman, and he was killed, so we are told, by an arrow piercing his throat. His body was buried where it fell, the spot being long known as Colman's Point. But such legends are unsatisfactory, at the best, and we must come down to facts.

The earliest patent for land in Gravesend was issued to Anthony Jansen Van Salee, who has already been referred to at sufficient length in our notice of New Utrecht and elsewhere. This patent was dated May 27, 1643. On May 24, 1664, Gysbert Op Dyck, who emi-

grated from Wesel in 1635 and settled in New Amsterdam, where in 1642 he became Commissary of Provisions for the colony, obtained a patent for Coney Island. From Bergen's "Early Settlers of Kings County" we learn that "the present Coney Island was, on the first settlement of this county, composed of three islands, divided from each other by inlets or guts, now closed. The westernmost one was known as Coney Island, the middle one as Pine Island and the eastern one as Gisbert's Island, so named after Gisbert Op Dyck." Here we run up against another etymological puzzle. What is the meaning of the word Coney? Thompson, who, by the way, identifies Pine Island as the scene of the Colman tragedy, tells us that the Dutch called it Conynen Eylandt, "probably from the name of an individual who had once possessed it." Others assure us that Conynen Eylandt is simply Rabbit Island, and they are probably right. Op Dyck never occupied the land covered by his patent, and seems to have held the property simply for a chance to sell it. This afterward led to pretty considerable trouble, involving the consideration and even the direct intervention of their High Mightinesses themselves.

There were doubtless settlers prior to 1643 in parts of what was afterward included in Gravesend township, but if so their names have not come down to us. That year, however, was a memorable one in the annals of Gravesend, for then Lady Moody and her associates first settled there. They were, however, driven by the Indians from off the lands on which they settled by virtue of a patent issued that year, and went to Flatlands, where they remained until the redskins became more peaceable and amenable to reason. When her Ladyship and her friends returned Governor Kieft, on December 19, 1645, issued to them a second patent for the town of Gravesend, the first probably being lost in the turmoil of the times, and the patentees named included the Lady Deborah Moody, Sir Henry Moody, Bart., En-

sign George Baxter and Sergeant James Hubbard. This is the real beginning of the English town of Kings county, and Lady Moody ought to be regarded as its founder. She had a most interesting career, being a wanderer in search of civil and religious liberty at a time when aristocratic women were not much given to asserting themselves on such matters outside their own immediate households.

Deborah Moody was the daughter of Walter Dunch, a member of Parliament in the days of "Good Queen Bess." She married Sir Henry Moody, Bart., of Garsden, Wiltshire, who died in 1632, leaving her with one son, who succeeded to the baronetcy. After Sir Henry's death her troubles began. In 1635, probably to hear the Word preached more in accordance with her own interpretation than she possibly could in Wiltshire, and being a stanch nonconformist in religious matters, as well as a believer in the utmost civil liberty, she went to London and stayed there so long that she violated a statute which directed that no one should reside more than a specified time from his or her home. She was ordered to return to her mansion in the country, and it seems likely did so, for the Star Chamber had already taken action in her case and brooked no trifling with its mandates. Probably she became a marked woman, and the watchful eye of the law was kept on her movements so steadily that, to secure liberty of worship and movement, she decided to emigrate. She arrived with her son at Lynn in 1640, and on April 5, that year, united with the church at Salem. On the 13th of May following she was granted 400 acres of land, and a year later she paid £1,100 for a farm. From all this there is every reason to believe that she intended making her home in Massachusetts. But she soon found out that true religious liberty, as she understood it, was not to be found in Puritan New England. A steadfast enquirer into religious doctrine, she became impressed with the views of Roger Williams soon after settling in Massachusetts,

and his utterances concerning the invalidity of infant baptism appear to have in particular won her adhesion. Being a woman who freely spoke her mind, she made no secret of the views she held, and her sentiments attracted much attention and drew upon her the consideration of the Quarterly Court. As Roger Williams had been thrust out of Massachusetts because of his views and his ideas on religious tolerance, Lady Moody's position could not be overlooked, and so, after being seriously admonished and it was apparent that she persisted in holding to her convictions, she was duly excommunicated. Possibly in her case this might have ended the trouble, for she appears to have won and retained the personal respect of all her neighbors; but, being a high-spirited woman, she seems to have determined to seek still further to find the freedom for which she longed, and, to the surprise of all, removed with her son and a few chosen and fast friends to New Amsterdam. Here she was warmly received by the authorities. She met several Englishmen in the fort, among them being Nicholas Stillwell, who had, in 1639, a tobacco plantation on Manhattan Island, which he was compelled to abandon temporarily on account of the Indian troubles. He was quickly attracted by the idea of helping to found an English settlement where his fellow countrymen could not only mingle in social intercourse, but could unite to defend themselves whenever any need arose. He is said also to have been a believer in religious toleration and to have suffered persecution on that account in England; but the additional statement so often made to the effect that he had been forced to leave New England for the same cause is not borne out by facts. He never saw New England. Lady Moody, who had ample means (she retained her property in Massachusetts intact in spite of her removal), was regarded, singular to say, by Governor Kieft as a welcome addition to his colony, and he gladly gave her and her asso-

ciates a patent for the unoccupied lands she, or some one for her, suggested, on which to form a settlement such as they desired.

At Gravesend Lady Moody was the Grand Dame, the real ruler. She enjoyed the confidence of Kieft and of Peter Stuyvesant to a marked degree, and although the latter was not over-fond of seeking the advice of women in affairs of state, he did not scruple to consult her on more than one occasion. He was entertained along with his wife at her house, and Mrs. Martha Lamb tells us that the Governor's wife was "charmed with the noble English lady." It has been claimed that Lady Moody assumed the principles of the Society of Friends when that body first sought shelter on Long Island, but the evidence tends to show that she simply befriended and sheltered some of the primitive Quakers in accordance with her ideas of perfect religious freedom. She seems to have remained at Gravesend until the end of her life's journey, in 1659, the stories of her visiting Virginia, or Monmouth City, New Jersey, or other places, being without authentication. She found in Gravesend that degree of liberty in search of which she had crossed the sea, and was content to pass her days in its congenial atmosphere. Of her son, Sir Henry, little is known. He left Gravesend in 1661 and went to Virginia, where he died.

Lady Moody's library was famous and it is through her son's departure for Virginia so soon after her death that we are enabled to judge, to a considerable extent, of its contents. To the notarial "Register" of Solomon Lachaire, of New Amsterdam, we are indebted for the following list under date of 1661. As it is not likely that the baronet carried any of the books with him on his travels, it is safe to assume that the list of Lady Moody's literary treasures is here given complete:

Cathologus contining the names of such books as Sir. Henry Moedie had left in security in handts of Daniel Litscho wen hy went for Virginia:

A latyn Bible in folio.

A written book in folio contining privatt matters of State.

A writteneth book in folio contining private matters of the King.

Seventeen several books of devinite matters.

A dictionarius Latin and English.

Sixteen several latin and Italian bookx of divers matters.

A book in folio contining the voage of Ferdinand Mendoz, &c.

A book in folio kalleth Sylva Sylvarum.

A book in quarto calleth bartas' six days work of the lord and translat in English by Josuah Sylvester.

A book in quarto kalleth the Summe and Substans of the Conference which it pleased his Excellent Majsti to have with the lords bishops &c. at Hampton Court contracteth by William Barlow.

A book in quarto kalleth Ecclesiastica Interpretatio, or the Expositions upon the difficult and doubtful passage of the Seven Epistles callet Catholique and the Revalation collecteth by John Mayer.

Elleven several bookx moore of divers substans.

The Verification of his fathers Knights order given by King James.—*Notarial Reg. of Solomon Lachaire N. P. of New Amsterdam, Anno 1661.*

In many respects the patent issued by Governor Kieft to Lady Moody was peculiar. It was the only one extant in which the patentees were headed by a woman, and it contained such full powers for self-government and for the enjoyment of freedom of religion as to be unique among the patents signed by Kieft or his successor, Stuyvesant. For these reasons the patent is here presented in full as printed in the "Documentary History of New York," vol. I, page 629:

Whereas it hath pleased the High & Mighty Lords the Estates Genl of the United Belgick Proves—His Highness Fredrick Hendrick by ye grace of God Prince of Orange, &c. and the Rt Honourable ye Lords Bewint Hebbers of the W. I. Company by theyr several Commissions under theyr hands and seales to give and grant unto me Wm Kieft sufficient power and authorities for the general rule &

gouvernement of this Prouince called the New Netherlands, & likewise for ye settling of townes, collonies, plantations, disposing of ye land within this prouince, as by ye said Commissions more att large doth and maye appeare, Now Know yee whomsoever these Presents may any ways concerne that I, William Kieft, Gouvernor Generall of this Prouince by vertue of ye authoritie abovesaid & with ye aduice & consent of ye Councell of State heere established have given and graunted & by vertue of these presents doe give grant & confirme unto ye Honoured Lady Deborah Moody, Sr Hennry Moody Barronett, Ensign George Baxter & Sergeant James Hubbard theyr associates, heyres, executors, administrators, successours, assignes, or any they shall join in association with them, a certaine, quantitie or p'cel of Land, together with all ye hauens, harbours, rivers, creeks, woodland, marshes, and all other appurtenances thereunto belonging, lyeing & being uppon & about ye Westernmost parte of Longe Island & beginning at the mouth of a Creeke adjacent to Coneyne Island & being bounded one ye westwards parte thereof with ye land appertaining to Anthony Johnson & Robt Penoyer & soe to run as farre as the westernmost part of a certain pond in an ould Indian field on the North side of ye plantation of ye said Robbert Penoyer & from thence to runne direct East as farre as a valley beginning att ye head of a flye or Marshe sometimes belonging to ye land of Hughe Garretson & being bounded one the said side with the Maine Ocean, for them the sd patenttees, theyr associates heyres, executors, adminisrs, successours, assigns, actuallie reallie & perpetuallie to injoye & processe as theyr owne free land of inheritance and to improve and manure according to their owne discretions, with libertie likewise for them the sd patenttees, theyr associates, heyres, and successours and assignes to put what cattle they shall think fitting to feed or graze upon the aforesd Conyne Island, forther giving granting & by vertue of these presents Wee doe give & graunt unto the sd Patenttees theiir associates heysr & successours full power & authoritie.uppon the said land to build a towne or townes with such necessarie fortifications as to them shall seem expedient & to haue and injoye the free libertie of conscience according to the costome and manner of Holland, without molestation or disturbance from any Madgistrate or Madgistrates or any other Ecclesiasticall Minister

that may p'tend jurisdiction over them, with libertie likewise for them, the sd patenttees, theyr associates heyres &c to erect a bodye pollitique and ciuill combination amongst themselves, as free men of this Province & of the Towne of Grauesend & to make such civill ordinances as the Maior part of ye Inhabitants ffree of the Towne shall thinke fitting for theyr quiett & peaceable subsisting & to Nominate elect & choose three of ye Ablest approued honest men & them to present annuallie to ye Gouvernor Generall of this Prouince for the tyme being, for him ye said Gouvernr to establish and confirme to wch sd three men soe chosen & confirmed, wee doe hereby give & graunt full power & authoritie, absolutelie & definitiue to determine (wthout appeal to any superior Court) for debt or trespasse not exceeding fffitie Holland Guilders ffor all such actns as shall happen wthin ye iurisdiction of the above said limitt with power likewise for any one of the said three to examine uppon oath all witnesses in cases depending before them & in case any shall refuse to stand to the award of what the Maior part of the sd three shall agree unto, in such cases wee doe hereby give and graunt full power and authoritie to any two of ye sd three, to attache & cease uppon ye lands goods, cattles and chattles of ye parties condemned by their said sentence & fourteen days after the sd ceizure (if ye partie soe condemned agree not in the interim & submitte himself unto ye sentence of the sd three men) the said three or three appointed men as affords to take or ioyen to themselves two more of theyre neighbours, discreete honest men, and wth the advice of them to apprise the lands, goods, cattles & chattles wthin the above sd jurisdiction & belongs to the partie condemned as aforesd to ye full vallew & then to sell them to any that will paye, that satisfaction & paiement may be made according to the sentence of ye appointed men; Likewise giuing & granting & by virtue hereof wee doe give & graunt unto ye said Patenttees, theyre associates heyres, successours &c full power & authoritie to Elect & nominate a certaine officer amongst themselves to execute the place of a Scoute & him likewise to present annuallie to the Gouvernor Generall of this Province to bee established and conprmed, to wch sd officer soe chosene confirmed, Wee doe hereby give & graunt as large & ample power as is usuallie given to ye Scoutes of any Village in Holland

for the suppression or prevention of any disorders that maye theyr arise, or to arrest and apprehend the body of any Criminall, Malefactor or of anye that shall by worde or act disturbe the publick tranquillitie of this Province or civill peace of the inhabitants wthin the above sd jurisdicth & him, them & her so arrested or apprehended to bring or case to be brought before the Gouvernor Genll of this Province & theyre by way of Processe declare against the P'tie soe offending; farther Wee doe give & graunt unto the P'tentees theyr associates heyres &c free libertie of hawking, hunting, fishing, fowling within the above sd limitts; & to use or exercise all manner of trade & commerce according as the Inhabitants of this Province may or can by Virtue of any Priviledge or graunt made unto them, indueing all and singular ye sd pattees theyr associates, heyres &c with all & singular the immunities & priueledges already graunted to ye Inhabitants of this Provice or hereafter to be graunted, as if they were natives of the United Belgick Provinces, allways provided the sd pattentes yr associates heyres &c shall faithfully acknowledge & reverently respect the above named High Mightie Lords &c for theyr Superiour Lords & patrons & in all loialtie & fidellitie demeane themselves towards them & theyr successours accord'g as the Inhabitants of this prouince in dutye are bound, soe long as they shall [be] within this iurisdicth & att the experatn of ten yeares to beginne from the daye of the date hereof to paye or cause to bee paid to an officer thereunto deputed by the Gouvernr Genl of this Provice for the time being, the tenth parte of the reueneew that shall arise by the ground manured by the plow or howe, in case it bee demanded to bee paid to the sd officer in the ffield before it bee housed, gardens or orchards not exceeding one Hollands acre being excepted, and in case anye of the sd pattentees theyr associats heyres &c shall only improue theyr stocks in grasing or breeding of cattle, then the partie soe doing shall att the end of the ten yeares afforesaid paye or cause to be paid to an officer deputed as aforesd such reasonable satisfactn in butter and cheese as other Inhabbats of other townes shall doe in like cases: Likewise injoyning the said pattentees thyre associates heyres &c in the dating of all public instruments to use the New Style wth the wts & measure of this place. Given under my hand & Seale of this

Prouince this 19th of December in the fort Amsterdam in New Netherland. 1645.

Signed WILHELM KIEFT.

Endorsed,—Ter ordonnantie van de Hr Directr Generael & Raden van Nieuw Nederlandt.

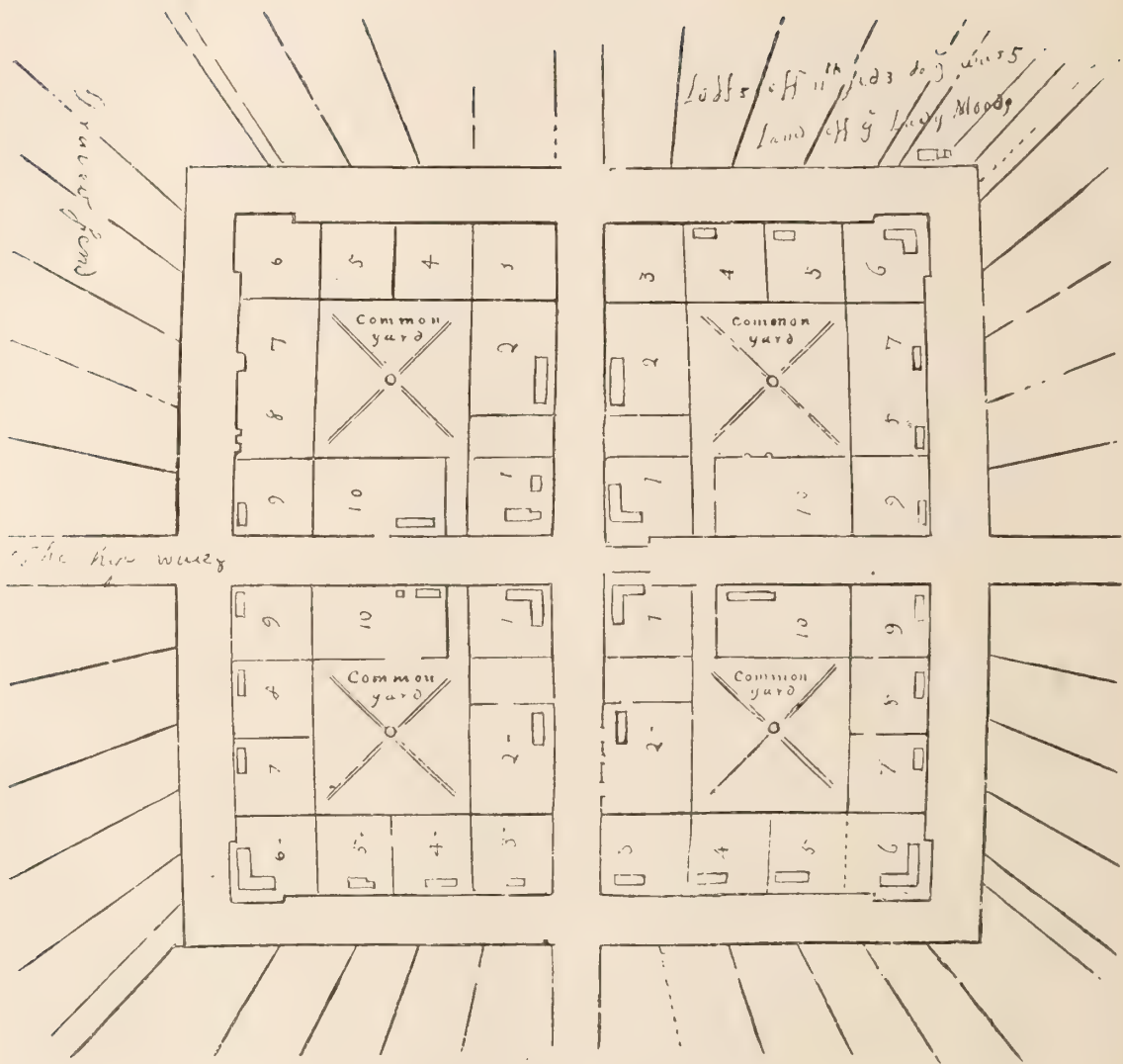
CORNELIS VAN TIENHOVEN,
Secretary.

The only fault to be found with this document was the loose way in which the boundaries were set forth. This was amended to a certain extent in the patent issued in 1670 by Gov. Lovelace, and the limits were still more closely defended in Gov. Dongan's patent, issued in 1686. In the latter document the quit rent to be paid by the town was fixed at "six bushels good winter merchantable wheat," a tax that was felt to be comparatively light, and therefore—as is usual in such circumstances—just and equitable.

On being armed with Kieft's patent Lady Moody and her friends lost no time in proceeding to the land awarded them and beginning operations by laying out a town site. Concerning this the late Rev. A. P. Stockwell wrote:

In view of the natural advantages which the town possessed, they no doubt hoped to make it, at some future day, a large and important commercial center. From its situation at the mouth of "The Narrows," and with a good harbor of its own; with the ocean on the one side, and the then flourishing village of New Amsterdam (New York) on the other, there did indeed seem to be good ground for such an expectation. But unfortunately, as the event proved, Gravesend Bay, though affording secure anchorage for smaller craft, would not permit vessels of large tonnage to enter its quiet waters with perfect safety; and so the idea of building a "city by the sea," which in extent, wealth, and business enterprise, should at least rival New Amsterdam, was reluctantly abandoned.

However, with this end in view, as the work begun would seem to indicate, they commenced the laying out of the village. Selecting a favorable site near the center of the town, they measured off a square containing about sixteen acres of ground, and opened a street around it. This large square they afterwards



Ye ANCIENT PLOT OF Ye TOWNE OF S' GRAVESENDE

1645

(Copied from the Original in the Town-Clerk's Office.)

divided into squares of four acres each, by opening two streets at right angles through the center. The whole was then enclosed by a palisade fence, as a protection, both against the sudden attacks of hostile Indians, and the depredations of wolves and other wild animals which were then common upon the island. Upon one of the oldest maps of the town, on file in the clerk's office, we find a perfect representation of the village-plan as originally laid out. From this we learn that each of the four squares was divided into equal sections, laid off around the outside of each square and facing the outer street. These were numbered from one to ten, in each of the four squares. This gave forty sections in all; and thus one section was allotted to each of the forty patentees. By this arrangement every family could reside within the village, and share alike its palisade defence. In the center of each square was reserved a large public yard, where the cattle of the inhabitants were brought in from the commons, and herded for the night for their better protection. At a later period, if not at this early date, a small portion of each square was devoted to public uses. On one was the church, on another was the school-house, on another the town's hall, and on the fourth the burying ground. The farms, or "planters' lots" as they were then called, were also forty in number, and were laid out in triangular form with the apex resting in the village and the boundary lines diverging therefrom like the radii of a circle * * *. From the fact that the village was divided into forty lots and that forty farms radiated therefrom, we have naturally inferred that there were forty patentees. If this be so, one of them very early in the history of the town must have dropped out of the original number, either by death or removal, or, as tradition has it, forfeiting by his profligate life all his right, title, and interest in the property allotted to him.

It seems, however, from the records that only twenty-six persons up to 1646 had settled with Lady Moody in Gravesend and taken part in laying out the town, and that the full quota of forty according to the plan was filled up by subsequent arrivals.

The first troubles met with came from the Indians, who appear to have held rather obnoxious views as to the settlement from the first.

Every man was ordered to be armed and equipped to meet a possible, even probable, attack at any moment, and was also required to keep a certain part of the palisade surrounding the town in thorough repair. When the palisade was being built in 1646 an attack was made unexpectedly, and the best the settlers could do was to escape to Flatlands. Lady Moody's house, probably because it was the most conspicuous in the settlement, was most frequently marked out for attack, and Nicholas Stillwell, who seems in time of such trouble to have assumed command, had a difficult task in repelling the savage warriors. The townspeople for a time became despondent over the outlook. Stillman himself returned to New Amsterdam and saw no more of Gravesend until 1648, when he bought a town plot, and even Lady Moody had serious thoughts of going back to her property in New England. But a peace was finally patched up between Gov. Kieft and the Indians and Gravesend was allowed to take up the thread of its story without more trouble.

Another Indian incursion, the last on record, took place in 1655, when a fierce attack was made on the town; but although the settlers could not drive the foe away, on account of their numbers, they made a gallant defense behind their palisade and kept the red-skins at bay until relieved by a force of military from New Amsterdam. From the first the settlers, according to their lights, tried to deal honestly with the aboriginal owners of the soil. Even before Kieft's second patent was issued in December, 1645, they had secured by purchase a deed from the Indians; and in 1650 and 1654 they secured other deeds covering the land on Coney Island. In 1684, when all trouble was at an end, they secured another deed from the red men, for all the lands in Gravesend, in exchange for "one blanket, one gun, one kettle." Surely the principle of fair dealing could go no further!

The municipal history of Gravesend began almost with its settlement. In 1646 the first

three "approved honest men" elected as Justices were George Baxter, Edward Brown and William Wilkins; Sergeant James Hubbard was elected Schout, and John Tilton (who had accompanied Lady Moody from New England) was chosen to be Town Clerk. All these elections were approved by the Governor. Town meetings were held monthly, and at one, held Sept. 7, 1646, it was decreed that any holder of a lot who by the following May had not erected a "habitable house" on it should forfeit the lot to the town. Such matters as the repair of the palisade, registry of what are now called vital statistics, the defense of the town, the morals and habits of the citizens, and the humane care of live stock, were the subjects most generally discussed. All the inhabitants were compelled to attend these town meetings when summoned by the beating of a drum or the blowing of a horn. Infractions of the laws were tried before justices and the penalties at first were fines which were for a time put into the poor fund, but after 1652 were placed in the treasury for general purposes. In 1656 the people passed a stringent liquor law which prohibited entirely the sale of "brandie, wine, strong liquor or strong drink" to any Indian, under a fine of fifty guilders for a first offense and double that amount for a second. No more than one pint was to be sold, at one time, even to white people. This law was rigidly enforced in spite of the difficulty of proving its violation. The laws regarding the preservation of the sanctity of the Sabbath, as might be expected, were very rigid. It seems strange to record the fact that at one time in Gravesend a town meeting ordered a bounty of five guilders to be paid for every wolf killed in the township. The town court attended to all petty criminal or civil causes, but the criminal cases were comparatively few, and slander and assault seemed to be the prevailing weakness of the more demonstrative citizens. In 1650, for these decadents, as well as for petty thieves, the stocks were brought into requisition and continued a favorite mode

of punishment until the nineteenth century was well advanced. In 1668 the town received quite a boom by the settlement in it of the Kings County Court of Sessions which had previously met in Flatbush. This body continued to dispense justice in Gravesend until 1685, when it returned to its former home.

It is singular that in an essentially religious community like Gravesend, and a community the earlier records of which are more complete and methodical than those of any other town in Kings county, there should be any dubiety about its first place of worship; but such is the case. An effort has been made to show that a Dutch Reformed Church, or congregation, was established in 1655, and the church now existing of that body claims a history dating from 1693; but both these dates are manifestly wrong. In 1655, and even in 1692, the Dutch was the language used in the service of that body, and we must remember that Gravesend was an English community. In 1657 Dominie Megapolensis, in a report to the Classis of Amsterdam, said that at Gravesend they reject "infant baptism, the Sabbath, the office of preacher and the teachers of God's Word, saying that through these have come all sorts of contention into the world. Whenever they meet together the one or the other reads something to them." These were very probably Lady Moody's own views and show why no early church was founded in the settlement at all. In 1657 Richard Hodgson and several other Quakers reached Gravesend and were kindly received, but there is not the slightest reason for supposing that Lady Moody adopted all of their tenets and became a member of the Society. That would have been a departure from her own First Principles and she was not the sort of woman to make such a change. That the Quakers found a resting place at Gravesend is certain; it was founded for just such a refuge; and in 1672, when George Fox was on his American tour, he also stopped at the town, where he found several of his people and held "three precious meetings." But it

was not a Quaker settlement, nor, like Flatbush, a Dutch Reformed settlement. There is no mention in the records of the church at Flatbush of a congregation at Gravesend until 1714, though it is possible that for many years before some of the citizens attended worship in Trinity Church, New York, and that the authorities there, at intervals, sent over a clergyman to hold services in the town. From 1704 there is evidence that the ministers at Flatbush considered Gravesend part of their bailiwick and receipts were formerly extant showing that Gravesend paid a share of the Dominic's salary from 1706 to 1741. In 1714, after Dutch had ceased to be the sole language used in the Reformed churches, an agreement was entered between the people of Gravesend and the church at New Utrecht for a share in the services of the ministers who visited the last named town. It is probable that when this short-lived arrangement went into effect a church building was erected. It seems certain that one was in existence in 1720, when it was called "the meeting-house" and was apparently ready to house a preacher of any denomination who came along. The Rev. Mr. Stockwell, who patiently investigated this subject, did not believe that any separate congregation of any religious body was organized in Gravesend prior to 1763. That body was the Reformed Church, and as the records were kept in Dutch until about 1823 we may readily understand that the English-speaking citizens had little share in its foundation or in its progress.

In 1763 a new meeting-house was built on the site of the first one, a little oblong building with high pitched roof, surmounted by a belfry. Inside was a plain box-like pulpit with a huge sounding board. Underneath one side of the gallery was the negro quarter, reserved solely for the use of the colored brethren. "This old church," wrote Mr. Stockwell, "within the memory of those now living was without stoves or any other heating appliances. The women carried foot-stoves, which, before service, they were very careful to fill at the

nearest neighbor's, while the men were compelled to sit during the long service with nothing to generate heat but the grand Calvinistic preaching of the Dutch dominie, or the anticipation of a warm dinner after the service was over!" Whitefield preached twice in this little tabernacle, which continued in use until 1833, when it gave way to a more modern structure, which, with many improvements, is still in use.

In 1767 Martinus Schoonmaker became pastor of the little congregations in Harlem and Gravesend, receiving as salary from the last named £35 a year and preaching at frequent intervals. In 1783 he became minister of the Collegiate Church, with his headquarters at Flatbush, and after that held services in Gravesend once in each six weeks, and Gravesend continued to be part of the care of the Flatbush ministers until 1808, when the Collegiate arrangement ceased. It was not until 1832, however, that the Gravesend church acquired a settled pastor, and in that year the Rev. I. P. Labagh was installed. In 1842 he was suspended from the ministry for refusing to recognize the authority of the Classis, and for holding opinions deemed unorthodox, and the Rev. Abram I. Labagh was installed in his place. This pastorate continued for seventeen years, and in 1859 the Rev. M. G. Hanson was called to the pulpit. He resigned in 1871 and a year later the Rev. A. P. Stockwell was called. This gentleman devoted much care to the study of the civil and ecclesiastical history of Gravesend, and to a sketch from his pen the present chapter of this work has been greatly indebted. He continued to minister to this church until 1886 when he retired and devoted himself mainly to literary work until his death, in Brooklyn, in 1901. He was followed in the ministry of Gravesend by the Rev. P. V. Van Buskirk, who still retains the charge, and who has labored most successfully and won the love of his large and steadily growing congregation, as well as of the entire community in which he has ministered so long and so faithfully.

We have seen that in one of the squares in the original plan of Gravesend a place was laid aside as a burying ground, and it was probably used as such when occasion required. The earliest record extant, however, concerning this now venerable God's-acre is contained in the will of John Tilton, dated Jan. 15, 1657, in which he devised land "for all persons in ye Everlasting truthe of ye gospel as occasion serves for ever to have and to hold and to make use of to bury their dead there." It is thought that the land thus deeded adjoined the original burying ground and Tilton's bequest was in reality an addition and at once incorporated within its boundaries. It was probably part of the original lot, which Tilton received when he settled at Gravesend with Lady Moody. The oldest stone extant now bears the date of 1676, and many of the inscriptions discernible are in Dutch. One plain rough stone, hardly readable, was thought by Teunis C. Bergen to mark the grave of Lady Moody; but this was merely an antiquary's fancy. From the formation of Greenwood Cemetery the Gravesend burial ground began to fall into disuse and interments in it have now practically ceased. There is another burying ground in the township,—Washington Cemetery,—laid out in 1850 and inclosing about 100 acres, which is mainly used by Hebrews.

Regarding the dwellings which early existed in Gravesend, the Rev. Mr. Stockwell said:

It may be interesting to know the style of house which afforded shelter and protection to the early settlers. If the following is a fair specimen, it will not strike us as being too elaborate or expensive, even for that early day. Here is the contract for a dwelling, as entered by the town-clerk upon his record:

"Ambrose London bargained and agreed with Michah Jure for his building him a house by the middle of June nexte, and to paye the said Michah 40 guilders for it—at the time he begins a skipple of Indian corne, at the raising of it 10 guilders, and at ye finishing of it ye rest of the said summ. Ye house to be made 22 foote long, 12 foote wide, 8 foote stooede with a petition in ye middle, and a chimney, to

laye booth rooms with joice, to cover ye roof, and make up both gable ends with clabboards, as also to make two windows and a door."

This man, London, was rather a speculator, and soon disposed of this house, and made another contract for a larger and still more commodious one; the contract price for building it being \$44. John Hawes was the builder and his contract was to build "1 house framed upon sills of 26 foote long, and 16 foote broad and 10 foote stooede, with 2 chimneys in ye middle and 2 doors and two windows, and to clabboard only ye roof and dobe the rest parte." The price was 110 guilders, or instead, "one Dutch cow."

But, if their houses were built more with reference to their comfort and actual necessities than for display, the same was true of their household furniture and personal effects, as will be seen from the following inventory of the estate of John Buckman, deceased, dated in the year 1651, and signed by Lady Moody as one of the witnesses. Among a few other articles appear the following: "1 Kettle, 1 Frying Pan, 1 Traye, 1 Jarre, 1 pair breeches, 1 Bonett, 1 Jackett, 1 Paile, 2 Shirts, 1 Tubbe, 1 Pair shoes, 2 pair ould stockings, 9 ould goats, money in chest, 32 guilders."

The first roads to these houses were mere wagon paths, rough and unkempt, although the roads, or streets inside the palisades in the town square, appear to have been well kept, and were regarded as the best to be seen anywhere. The outer roads were made simply by merely clearing away the brush, and their boundaries were kept defined mainly by the traffic. At times, however, the town meeting took a hand in their improvement, as in 1651, when it was agreed that "every inhabitant who is possessed of a lot shall be ready to go by the blowing of ye horn on Thursday next to clear ye common ways." In 1660 a highway was laid out from the town to the beach. By 1696 Gravesend was connected with Flatbush and Flatlands and New Utrecht by rough but serviceable roads, and the King's Highway, still extant among a wilderness of new streets, was laid out about the same time.

Notwithstanding all its advantages of magnificent soil, a settled community, perfect freedom of conscience and proximity to the even then great commercial centre, the progress of Gravesend was slow. It had, it would appear, at one time some pretensions to commercial dignity on its own account, for in 1693 it was declared one of the three ports of entry on Long Island; but even with this distinction it continued to make tardy progress. In 1698 its population was only 210, including 31 men, 32 women, 124 children, 6 apprentices and 17 negroes. By 1738, forty years later, the total number had increased to 368, of which 50 were negroes. In 1790 it boasted 294 whites and 131 negroes. Probably when the Revolutionary War broke out it contained in round numbers a population of 350, white and colored.

That war, as in the case of the other towns in Kings county, may be said to mark the central point of the history of Gravesend. Many of the troops were landed on its ocean front on that memorable morning in August, 1776, when the British movement began. It was supposed that from its English antecedents, Gravesend would be even more pronouncedly Tory in its sentiment than the other towns in its part of Long Island; but the opposite seems to have been the case. In the battle of Aug. 27th the Patriot fighters from Gravesend are said by the local historians to have given a good account of themselves, although their losses were small as their knowledge of the country enabled them to escape from the defeat and return to their homes in safety, while others who escaped in the melee were captured or killed by roving bands of the enemy. The tide of war soon carried the troops away from Gravesend. But during the entire British occupation of the island the town was in a condition of perpetual trouble and excitement. Prisoners and soldiers were billeted upon the people without ceremony, the soldiers robbed with apparent impunity and lawless bands of thieves made frequent descents upon farm-houses and stripped them of their valuables

and provender. It was truly a reign of terror for the peace-loving people while it lasted, and Patriot and Tory seemed to have suffered alike from the horrors of military rule. That the people were peaceably disposed is very evident from the fact that several of the Hessian soldiers remained in Gravesend after peace was declared and assumed all the duties of citizenship, and, it is said, with credit to themselves. On October 20, 1789, General Washington, then President, visited Gravesend and held a sort of levee in the town square. As might be expected he was devotedly welcomed and with his visit we may consider the early history of Gravesend fittingly brought to an end.

Having thus presented the leading facts in the opening annals of Gravesend, the story of a particular section which to a certain extent has always maintained a separate history, and the name of which is known throughout the civilized world, even in places where Long Island's Gravesend was never heard of, may here be fittingly considered. This is the famous Coney Island, the first disposal of which to a white man has already been mentioned in this chapter. Op Dyck tried to realize on his purchase by selling his eighty-eight acres of sand dunes, brush and waterfront to the Gravesend people in 1661, but they declined to purchase, alleging that it was theirs already by right not only of their town patent but of a deed of purchase in 1649 from Cippehacke, Sachem of the Canarsies (in which the island was called Narrioch), and also of another deed, dated May 7, 1654, in which (in exchange for 15 fathoms of seawant, 2 guns, and 2 pounds of powder) they obtained from the Nyack Indians, who claimed to be the real owners, not only a conveyance of Coney Island, but a strip along the shore near the old village of Unionville, which afterward involved the town in much vexatious litigation. Failing thus to dispose of it, Op Dyck sold his claim to Derick De Wolf, the transfer bearing date October 29, 1661. In the following year De Wolf, who had obtained from the West India Company in Amsterdam a monop-

oly for the manufacture of salt in New Netherland, erected his plant on the island and commenced operations. Incidentally he warned the Gravesend folks to cease from pasturing their cattle on Guisbert's Island, or using it for any purpose. This so enraged these usually quiet and peaceable citizens that they marched to the island, overrun the establishment, tore down the palisade and manufactory and made a bonfire of their ruins, and threatened to

clearly set forth. Still there seems somehow to have remained a doubt, and in 1684 a new conveyance was obtained from the Indians and the whole was placed beyond any pretence of future question by the terms of Governor Dongan's patent of 1685, and Coney Island continued to be a part of the territory of Gravesend until the town government itself was wiped out of existence by the Moloch-like march of modern improvement. The



THE STRYKER HOUSE, GRAVESEND.

silence the remonstrances of the man in charge by throwing him on top of the burning pile. This put a stop to the enterprise; and, although De Wolf sent a remonstrance to Amsterdam, and their High Mightinesses ordered Stuyvesant to protect the salt-maker in his rights, the Governor did nothing in the matter. In fact, he openly took the side of the Gravesend people in the dispute, and so the trouble continued until the advent of Governor Nicolls wiped out the monopoly. In Governor Lovelace's charter, or patent, issued in 1671, the right of Gravesend to the island was

island's destinies being then so far settled, it was, in 1677, laid out in thirty-nine lots of some two acres each, and so divided among the people. They agreed to fence it in and plant it only with "Indian corn, tobacco or any summer grain," and when not so used it was to be in common a feeding place for cattle.

The Labadist Fathers, who visited Coney Island in 1679, have left the following record: "It is oblong in shape and is grown over with bushes. Nobody lives upon it, but it is used in winter for keeping cattle, horses, oxen,

hogs and others, which are able to obtain there sufficient to eat the whole winter and to shelter themselves from the cold in the thickets." It continued to be used mainly for feeding cattle either in common or by lease down to about 1840, when its modern history may be said to begin. The people of Gravesend, however, seem to have been careful to retain in their own hands and for their common use many of the privileges of ownership, such as fishing, hunting, the use of timber and common rights of pasturage to unenclosed places.

The history of Gravesend from the time of Washington's visit until about 1870 might be characterized by the term "reposefulness." In fact, its people might be said to have dwelt by themselves and for themselves and to have let the world roll along, unmindful of how it rolled so long as its commotions did not shake them off. Human nature now and again asserted itself around election times, when the citizens shouted their preferences, but when the election was over the men, then as now, wondered what they really had been shouting for, and what difference the result made to them. There was marrying and giving in marriage, children were born, educated at the village school to the best of its ability, and then stepped into their fathers' shoes; or if there were many sons in a household each managed to secure a bit of farm land in the township and settled down to start a new branch of the family, and the little cemetery, even with Tilton's pious addition, was steadily being filled up. So far as we have been able to judge, few Gravesend boys, comparatively, left the township to seek their fortunes in the outer world. Within it there was at least an abundance, and if it had no millionaires it had no paupers, and by paupers I mean men or women who have fallen by the wayside in the struggle of life as a result of their own waywardness or worse. Early in the nineteenth century we read of a new road being occasionally opened, making transit to the beach or to the other townships easy, and

now and again we come across stories of amateur fishermen from the outside world who discovered its shore and spent a few days now and again, to return to their homes with stories of wonderful success, generally justified in their cases by truth. The court records show an intricate bit of litigation now and again over some boundary question, of little or no interest now that boundaries have been swept away; while the church continued a matter of prime interest in the community and the real center of its civil and social as well as its religious life. These brief sentences really sum up the history of Gravesend for the half century or so that passed from the time the last British troopship sailed out of the Narrows until what might be called the modern awakening set in. A glance at the population returns helps to emphasize all this. In 1800 its figures were 517, and ten years later 520, a gain of 3. By 1835 it had increased to 695, and to 951 according to the State census of 1845.

Some might begin the modern story of Gravesend from around the last date on account of the religious activity which then sprang up. The Third Reformed Church edifice was dedicated in January, 1834, a parsonage was built in connection with it in 1844, and a chapel and meeting house was erected in 1854, covering the site of the pioneer church. In 1840 a Methodist Episcopal Church was organized at Sheepshead Bay, under the name of the Methodist Protestant Church, and although that peculiar designation has long been abandoned it still carries on its work. In 1844 another Methodist Episcopal Church was organized at Unionville.

From the church to the school is an easy transition, for in most of our early records the two almost followed each other so closely that their beginnings might be said to be contemporaneous. In Gravesend, however, it is not until 1728 that we find evidence of a school-house, when a deed shows that on April 8 of that year "one house and two gar-

den spots" were sold for £19 by Jacobus Emans to the freeholders for the use of a school "and for no other use or employment whatsoever." This purpose, however, was not carried out to the letter, for the site thus laid apart for educational purposes was that on which, in 1873, the town hall was erected. It is hardly to be imagined, however, that no provision for education existed in Gravesend prior to 1728, and it is likely that as soon as the need appeared a teacher found employment and a place for teaching, even although, as elsewhere on Long Island, he migrated from house to house. The building erected on the Emans "lots" served as school-house until 1788, when a larger structure was erected on the same site. This continued to be the local school-house until 1838, when another site, singular to say, from another representative of the Emans family (Cornelius), was purchased and a commodious building erected which afterward was known as District School No. 1, and so continued until annexation. Gravesend is now as well equipped with educational facilities as any section of Greater New York, while its private schools have won many tributes of praise for their high standing and efficiency.

The modern progress of Gravesend may be traced as clearly by the extension of its roads as by any other basis, for its progress in this regard was slow and gradual and strictly in keeping with absolute necessity. It is only within recent years that the construction of public thoroughfares began to be undertaken before there was developed a crying demand for them. In 1824 what was known as "Coney Island Causeway" was laid out from Gravesend to the ocean front, virtually a continuation of an old road through the village, and although somewhat primitive it continued to be a toll road, paying a dividend to its stockholders until 1876, when it was sold to the Prospect Park & Coney Island Railroad. In 1838 a free road was begun from Gravesend to Flatbush, a continuation inland of the

road to the sea. In 1875 the road was widened to 100 feet and extended to the Brooklyn city line, receiving the name of Gravesend avenue. It proved from the first the main artery of trade and travel. The Coney Island Plank Road, laid out and partly opened for traffic in 1850, which extended from Fifteenth street, Brooklyn, to Coney Island, was long the principal carriage road to the shore. The planks were removed after ten years' service. In 1871 an effort was made to improve this road, but while the story is one of the most disgraceful in local politics, it is hardly worth while to enlarge upon it now. Many other roads were surveyed and several were opened up between 1865 and 1876, but in not a few cases they are still roads only on the map. Ocean avenue, from Prospect Park to the ocean, five miles long and in places 100 feet wide, was opened for traffic in 1876, and was a popular thoroughfare from the beginning. It was an honest piece of work throughout, and showed the citizens how economically an improvement could be effected when undertaken by business men and carried out on business principles.

But all these roads fade into insignificance when compared with that magnificent accomplishment, the Ocean Parkway, which was begun in 1874 and completed in 1880. It is five and one-half miles long, with a width of some 210 feet, and is one of the most perfectly appointed and best equipped roads in the world. Its main purpose is pleasure, and its appearance on a spring or autumn afternoon, crowded with richly appointed vehicles and pleasure carriages of all sorts, bicycles, automobiles, as well as pedestrians, is not to be found surpassed, if equalled in all desirable respects, by the boulevards of Paris. It is one of the many enduring monuments to the late J. S. T. Stranahan, who is generally conceded to be the originator of the idea of constructing such a magnificent parkway.

One feature which added to the material progress of Gravesend was the introduction

of horse-racing, which may be said to have commenced in 1868 with the incorporation of the Prospect Park Fair Grounds Association. This body of "horse-lovers" bought a tract of some sixty acres near Gravesend avenue, built a club house and laid out a track. The association afterward removed to Ocean Parkway. Another track was laid out at Parkville. These were comparatively private affairs and did not prove profitable to those who find profit in horse-racing. In 1880, however, a bold bid for public favor was made by the Coney Island Jockey Club, which secured about one hundred and twenty-five acres of land near Sheepshead Bay, laid out a splendid track, adapted the grounds thoroughly to meet the wants of large gatherings of people, built a commodious grand-stand, stables, out-houses, etc., and the enterprise at once sprang into popular favor. It was not long before the "race days" became events, and attracted crowds of all classes from New York, Brooklyn and even more distant places. Since then the Brooklyn Jockey Club has established a course at Gravesend and the Brighton Beach Racing Association another at Coney Island. These have their ups and downs, it seems to us, in public favor, but all manage to secure more or less patronage and more than meet the demand for the "sport of kings," as it is called, in the section of Long Island in which they are located. All these institutions have helped to build up Gravesend and to aid in its financial prosperity. Whether they have aided in moral progress, whether they have brought within its precincts a class of residents such as the fathers of the settlement would have wished, are questions which others may attempt to solve. A historian only at times becomes a moral philosopher.

The introduction of the horse car and the steam railroad, passing through Gravesend and yearly conveying increasing crowds to the seashore, finally brought the quiet settlement to the notice of the outside world and aroused it from its sleep of over 200 years.

Brooklyn, too, was steadily filling up the gaps in its own domain and was annually extending its suburban lines, and so the land-boomers got an eye on Gravesend and began to menace its rural life. All that was needed to inaugurate a new condition of things was a rapid and cheap mode of transit, and that was furnished in time by the trolley,—the "ubiquitous trolley," as the newspaper reporters used to call it in its early days. The population began to grow with amazing rapidity and new streets were steadily opened in reality or on paper. Old farms were abandoned to the builders, while new settlements, some of them with exceedingly fancy names, sprung into existence that put the older settlements like Unionville for a time far in the background, while Sheepshead Bay, which once might have been called Gravesend's suburb, became in reality the center of its life. The popularity of Coney Island reflected itself on Gravesend. It was the attraction which the land-boomers made most use of to invite settlers, and the closer and more accessible an old farm was to the water front the more quickly was it staked out, its old glory wrecked, and its ancient story wiped out. The new settlers who poured in did not understand the old days, the old methods, and while the shadow of annexation was steadily gathering over the old English town it became the prey of local politicians, some, it is sad to think, claiming, and claiming rightly, descent from original settlers; but most of them of more recent importation, and all of them developing traits of patriotism for "what there is in it." There is no doubt that in its latter days Gravesend, like Flatlands, became the prey of a gang of political spoilsmen, and their acts, as much as anything else, forced the annexation movement to culminate on July 1, 1894, when Gravesend became a thing of the past and its territory quickly took a place as Brooklyn's Thirty-first Ward.

It is a pity that the last scene in the separate history of Gravesend should be one of

riot, bloodshed, contempt for law, and stern retribution. For several years the leading figure in Gravesend was John Y. McKane. The history and character of that man are deserving of critical study. He was purely a product of modern American life, and we question if his type, although plentiful enough here, could be produced anywhere else in the wide world. He was born in county Antrim, Ireland, August 10, 1841, and was brought to this country when a few months old by his mother, his father having preceded them. The family settled at Gravesend, and when sixteen years of age McKane was sent to learn the trade of carpenter. In 1865 he married Fanny, daughter of Captain C. B. Nostrand, of Gravesend, and in 1866 commenced business on his own account as a builder and carpenter at Sheepshead Bay. From his twenty-first year he was active in local politics, quickly gathered around him a number of other local workers whose leadership, by making him master of many votes, not only gave him power and influence, but enabled him to extend his business on all sides so as to make him really independent of political emolument. But he believed in holding office, for that in turn gave him political power, and as Supervisor of the town he had often an opportunity of rewarding politically those who were faithful to his fortunes. His influence was made still greater in 1883, for then he was elected President of the Board of Supervisors for Kings county. At one time he was Gravesend's "Poo Bah," holding the office of Police Commissioner, Chief of Police, President of the Town Board, the Board of Health and the Water Board,—and it is difficult to recall what. His business as a builder continued to flourish, and one could not stand at any point in the old village of Gravesend, at Sheepshead Bay, or along Coney Island without being able, in the new cottages and hotels, to point out his handiwork, and good, honest work he did,—of that there is no doubt. His popularity was unbounded. Everyone spoke well of him, and

although most people knew him as a politician, and one who was as well versed in the ways and wiles of local politicians as any man living, it was believed that his own hands were clean. He would stand by a supporter through thick and thin, he never repudiated a bargain, broke faith with a friend, or forgot a service. A stanch Democrat, he professed to have the welfare of Gravesend at heart more than the fortunes of his local ticket; but that ticket he always worked for with all his heart. His private life was pure and happy. He had a pleasant home, and there he spent his pleasantest hours. For years he was an active member of the local Methodist Church and the superintendent of its Sabbath-school. Up to a certain point in his career never a word was spoken against him. He was the "boss;" he ruled with a rod of iron; he was in all sorts of deals, and it was believed he was thoroughly honest personally and that whatever underhand and shady work he did was done simply in the line of business of the political boss. Most people felt that with all his faults things were safer with him than with any boss who would surely be raised to reign in his stead,—seeing that a boss was necessary. As Gravesend grew in population, as Coney Island year after year added to its visitors by thousands, McKane's position grew in importance, and he had to use all the customary accomplishments of the professional politician to maintain his footing.

The key to his power lay in the ballot-box, and for years it was known that the returns from Gravesend at any election were just as McKane wanted them. There were loud complaints at times of irregularity, but nothing was done, for as usual political excitement and indignation generally subsided after each election. Then, too, as election after election passed over, McKane became more reckless and defiant of all law. Respect for the law governing elections was especially forgotten by him and cut no figure in his calculations. There is no doubt that for years the ballots

cast in Gravesend were manipulated to suit McKane and his coterie. This in time became so glaring that little more was needed to expose the whole sham and bring it to an end than the zealous protest of some men of determination, and that man came to the front in William J. Gaynor. In 1893 he was nominated for Justice of the Supreme Court, and when the campaign was on he determined to pay attention to Gravesend, being well aware that McKane was bitterly opposed to him and would stoop to even the most desperate act to accomplish his defeat. He determined to have at least an honest vote in Gravesend, and to that end obtained an order from the Supreme Court compelling the Registrars of Elections to produce the registry books; but the books could not be found. On election day twelve watchers sent by Gaynor went to Gravesend armed with an injunction from the Supreme Court forbidding McKane or any one else from interfering with them; but McKane, folding his arms behind his back, refused to touch the document, uttering the memorable words, "Injunctions don't go here." Colonel Alexander S. Bacon and the other watchers were arrested, some were maltreated brutally, and all were glad to get back to Brooklyn. Gravesend had 6,000 votes registered, while her population should only have shown some 2,000. The votes cast were 3,500, proving that in spite of all the excitement, fraudulent methods had been at work. American citizens can stand a good deal; they can be plundered, imposed upon and deluded by politicians year out and year in with impunity. Every now and then they arise in their might and "turn the rascals out," but they soon forget their indignation, the rascals return to their plunder, and things go on as before. But there is one thing the people will neither condone nor forget, and that is tampering with the ballot-box, the foundation of all their liberties, and the united voice of a free people. Of the 3,500 votes cast, Gaynor received an insignificant number, but the general returns showed

that he was elected to the bench by a large majority. Public attention as to affairs in Gravesend had been aroused, the flagrant tinkering with the ballot-box and the insults and indignities and maltreatment of those who represented the law created a deep feeling of resentment in the community, and a demand arose for the prosecution of the offenders. A fund was raised to bring the matter to an issue, and McKane and several of his prominent associates were indicted. As a result of his trial McKane was convicted of violating the election law, and on February 19, 1894, sentenced by Justice Bartlett to six years in state prison. After a few delays, trying to evade the sentence by legal quibbles, he began his term in Sing Sing on March 2, following, and was there incarcerated, "a model prisoner," the keepers said, until April 30, 1898, having then finished his term less the deduction allowed to all prisoners who behave themselves as behavior is understood in penal institutions. He emerged from prison a broken-down man in every way, and did not even attempt to regain his old-time grip. His once indomitable spirit was crushed beneath the terrible blow which had transformed him from "a useful citizen" into a convict, and he died, broken-hearted, September 5, 1899.

McKane was not the only one who suffered for the "crime of Gravesend," as the reporters put it. Many of his supporters suffered imprisonment and fine, the most noted being Kenneth F. Sutherland, sent to prison for one year and fined \$500 on one count and sentenced to another year's imprisonment on a fresh charge; R. V. B. Newton, sentenced to nine months' imprisonment and \$750 fine; A. S. Jameson, eighteen months; M. P. Ryan, four months and \$500; F. Bader, five months and \$500; B. Cohen, four months and \$500; and so on down to comparatively petty sentences, for the less conspicuous workers of the gang. Possibly the full extent of the frauds at the ballot-boxes was not realized by the public until the election at Gravesend in April, 1894,

when, under honest auspices, only 1,928 votes were cast.

Thus closed in turmoil and gloom the story of a town founded in righteousness and honesty, and distinguished for its uprightness and the even tenor of its ways. It demonstrated the unscrupulousness of politics and the rottenness which can be introduced into our municipal government by a few men who are zealous for power. No one pitied McKane and his fellows, and their fate has been held to be a significant and much-needed lesson

to others who might be induced to drift into such methods; and drift is the right word. McKane and his associates were not bad men; in private life most of them were above reproach; but they drifted along the current of low political intrigue until, blind to the results, they "shot Niagara," went beyond the safeguards of law and order, defied these in fact, and landed in prison cells. Their story is a blot on American politics, and it is a pity that the records of Gravesend should close with the details of a political crime and its salutary punishment.



CHAPTER XXXI.

CONEY ISLAND.

RISE OF THE FAMOUS RESORT—THE DEMOCRATIC WATERING PLACE OF NEW YORK—
A REVOLUTIONARY REMINISCENCE—PIRACY AND PLUNDER.

FOR many years after the Revolution Coney Island lay practically dormant. The heirs of the thirty-nine persons referred to in the preceding chapter, among whom most of Guisbert's Island was divided in 1677, held their right for many years in that apportionment, but the property was unproductive. By 1734 most of their claims had been bought by Thomas Stillwell, who in that year started the march of modern improvement by digging a ditch which enabled farmers' and gardeners' boats to reach the market on Manhattan Island much more quickly than formerly. All the arable land was practically on the division known as Guisbert's Island. Pine Island and the original bit of sand known as Coney Island, or Narrioch, made up the rest of the territory, all of which is now known under the one popular name. The sea, then as now, played sad havoc with this stretch of sand. Sometimes the three islands were quite distinct, at other times they were, as now, practically one. The whole territory at one time was little more than the backyard of Gravesend, and at intervals that town enjoyed a little income by letting the privileges not covered by the rights of the original thirty-nine. From time to time other divisions were made of the territory, always in thirty-nine lots, as fresh demands were made by the slowly increasing population, and the last of these divisions was that of

1821. By that time the utility of Coney Island as a "resort" was beginning to be understood, and before the end of that decade the place boasted its first hotel,—the Coney Island House. Wyckoff's Hotel followed, and these two establishments divided the patronage of the place. In 1844 a bathing pavilion, with attachments, was erected at what is now known as Norton's Point, and in 1847 another hotel was built on the island,—the Oceanic. It was burned down at the end of its first season, and afterward rebuilt.

This was the beginning. But it is difficult to say exactly when the modern movement which resulted in making Coney Island famous fairly set in. In one sense, no date can be definitely fixed, for, like Topsey in "Uncle Tom's Cabin," it "just grewed." Every year from 1847 witnessed some improvement, some new bathing-houses run up with unplanned lumber and primitive appointments, some roughly constructed hotel or restaurant, cheap saloon, democratic eating-houses where you could bring your own luncheon or eat what was produced on the premises, lager-beer bars, and a show or two, generally of a startling character, such as newly-caught wild Indians, educated pigs, museums, special exhibits of "sole remnants of the ancient Aztec sovereigns of Central America," and the like. Each year more and more of these things seemed to litter the beach, and each year the crowds of visitors

increased. It was a democratic resort, and there was plenty of room for all sorts of tastes. If the visitors wanted to be in a throng, the throng was there; if they desired quiet, a short walk among the dunes gave them all the quietness that Lady Moody could have enjoyed in her "bouverie." Then the crowds became too great and people began to complain that the place was a resort for roughs, and the descendants of the good old settlers of Gravesend held up their hands in horror at the scenes of Sabbath desecration and midsummer riot which had grown up in their midst. The steamboats were carrying thousands of visitors, the railroad had begun its work of transporting people from the outskirts of Brooklyn and from Bay Ridge to the ocean, and even one lumbering horse-car line was established, which was taxed to its capacity during the season. The crowds, however, gave rise to trouble of all sorts; Sundays were seldom passed without exhibiting scenes of riot and debauchery, and by 1875 respectable New Yorkers and Brooklynites began to shun Coney Island and talked of it as having been given over to the mob, the rough element, in their midst, and predicted its early doom to silence and decay. But the mob held on, and recalcitrants were won back to some part of the island at least. By 1876 its fame had spread over the whole country, and in that centennial year it was regarded as one of the sights of New York and one to which all visitors to the commercial metropolis had to be conducted.

In many respects 1875 might be regarded as the opening year of the modern Coney Island. The old divisions of the island by that time had begun to be known by their modern names thus: West End (Norton's Point), West Brighton, Brighton Beach, and Manhattan Beach.

It is almost useless to attempt to describe modern Coney Island in a historical work, for the yearly changes are so many and so kaleidoscopic as to make any outline seem out of date a few months after it has been penned.

It is the great democratic outpouring place of the Greater New York, and although all around the great city new resorts appear to spring up every year, the island seems not only to retain, but to extend its popularity with each recurring season. Somehow it has adapted itself to the wants of the great multitude of visitors. Those who want quiet and exclusiveness can find it in the Oriental Hotel, which is the outpost of the modern Coney Island. At Manhattan Beach, with its theater, music, fireworks and other amusements, there is exclusiveness and pleasure combined. Brighton Beach claims to be a family resort primarily, and to a great extent retains that characteristic. It attracts larger crowds than the places already named, being a center for transit facilities; and, having superb bathing accommodations, it attracts visitors of all classes. It really forms the dividing line between aristocratic and democratic Coney Island. The regular visitors to the Oriental Hotel, or Manhattan Beach, or Brighton Beach, however, would hardly care to admit that they had any connection with Coney Island. That good old name has become somewhat demoralized, too much associated with "the great unwashed," with cheap shows, bawling photographers, Sunday beer and vulgar frankfurters to be congenial to ears polite. So at all three the name of Coney Island is tabooed, and when in these modern days the island is referred to we are supposed to speak of the long stretch of sand lying still further to the westward. Here, however, the island retains all the many peculiarities and types which won for it its first popularity. Its manners are free and easy, its crowds have assembled to have a good time according to their individual ideas, and they have it. One account tells us: "At the West End, or Norton's, the island has been but little improved. Accommodations are provided here for parties with lunch-baskets, and there are numerous unattractive-looking bathing-houses. This part of the island is now being redeemed from neglect by the building of good houses.



BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF MANHATTAN BEACH.

The Atlantic Yacht Club has now established its quarters there. West Brighton was formerly known as Cable's, and is the central part of the island. Travelers arrive at the beach by railroad as a rule, and alight in a spacious depot, facing the finest iron pier on the island. To the stranger the scene is suggestive of a great fair-ground. In the center is a broad plaza with green grass and flowers, traversed by wide wooden pavements, and numerous hotels and places of amusement are clustered around. Bands play every afternoon and evening in pavilions, and the beach is brilliantly illuminated at night by the somewhat ghastly white rays of the electric light. A camera obscura here gives charming views of the beach, sharply outlined, delicately toned, and well worth seeing. An observatory 300 feet high occupies a prominent place, and from the top, reached by large elevators, a fine view of the island, the bay and the adjacent cities may be had. Two piers, each about 1,300 feet long, constructed of tubular iron piles, run out from West Brighton. On them are various buildings, used as saloons, restaurants, concert halls, etc., and hundreds of bath-houses. Steamboats from New York land at the piers hourly. Near the piers is the Sea Beach Hotel (this structure was the United States Government building at the Centennial Exhibition). The Concourse, which leads toward Brighton Beach on the east (or left), is a wide drive and promenade about a third of a mile long. Park wagons are continually traversing its length, and there are two rustic pavilions in which pedestrians may rest themselves. It is maintained by the Park Department, and no buildings are allowed between it and the ocean. It has been seriously damaged by storms in recent winters, and has lost much of its former glory, the eastern end of it, nearest to Brighton Beach, having been entirely destroyed." The winter of 1901-2 proved particularly destructive, not only to this section of Coney Island, but to all the others. Several miles of roadway were destroyed by

a storm early in the season and a large number of buildings unroofed or blown down. Even Manhattan Beach suffered severely and miles of beautiful lawns were ruined. But all that seems to be a regular winter story in spite of mere human ingenuity, and protective arrangements of all sorts.

But by whatever name its sections may be designated for advertising and business purposes, the historical designation can never be wiped out. Coney Island, in fact, is itself, but the end of the great sand bar, broken here and there by inlets, hurled, twisted and changed by every winter's storm, which extends along almost the entire south coast of the island and bears many names. The bar is the great feature of the south shore and gives to it most of its charms of scenery and climate. It has developed on its course many charming resorts; the surface of the sand has been in places so beautified by turf and flower bed, mammoth hotel and charming cottages as fairly to claim a title to being a summer paradise; but no part has been so beneficial to the toilers in New York or Brooklyn as that which still flourishes under the old name of Coney Island,—the name first given to it by the Dutch pioneers

From the earliest times of its European history vague stories of smuggling and piracy have been rife concerning Coney Island. A good proportion of such stories was either entirely fabulous or was founded on such slim foundation of fact that the foundation itself has disappeared. In its early ante-resort days Coney Island must have been a wild and deserted place, its storms even more terrible than now, and the imaginations of the few visitors were quickened by the wind and desolation, the solemn stillness that prevailed except for the low moaning of the sea in times of placidity, or its terrible howling when the Atlantic, roused to fury, seemed to break in all its anger on the sandy bar. Little wonder that popular imagination and innate human superstition associated the dunes and creeks and

bays and points with tales of strange, weird doings, and that such stories gathered in importance and weirdness and tragedy as they sped on from mouth to mouth. Such stories have become too vague to be regarded as history, but it is a pity that some of them had not been preserved. Many of the exploits of Heyler and Marriner, the patriot freebooters, were performed in what may be called Coney Island waters, and one of these was related by General Jeremiah Johnson from the recollections of some of its participants. While here in command of two whaleboats, Captain Heyler saw a British sloop of war lying off the island and determined to secure it. By quietly approaching the vessel in one of the boats Heyler found that no watch was on deck and that the officers were playing cards in their cabin. Signalling for his other boat it quickly came up, and the sloop was at once boarded from each side, and so astonished were those on board at the sudden and unexpected attack that they surrendered without even a show of resistance. The crew were removed as prisoners and the ship set on fire. It was said that \$40,000 in cash and many valuables went up in smoke when the sloop was destroyed; but this we may well doubt. Captain Heyler had a warm heart for plunder as well as for his country.

One well-authenticated story of piracy has come down to us, and we give the narrative in the words of Mr. William H. Stillwell, the patient and painstaking historian of Coney Island, who has devoted many years to unraveling the many vexed questions of its boundaries, its early settlers and their descendants, as well as telling the story of its wonderful modern growth.

Coney Island is connected with a tragedy of the sea, well-nigh forgotten by even the older residents of the vicinity, but which was the cause of intense excitement at the time. On the 9th of November, 1830, the brig "Vineyard" cleared from New Orleans for Philadelphia with a cargo of cotton, sugar and molasses, and \$54,000 in specie (all Mexican dollars), consigned to Stephen Girard, Esq.,

of the latter city. The officers and crew of the brig were William Thornby, captain; Mr. Roberts, mate; Charles Gibbs (alias Thos. D. Jeffers), Aaron Church, James Talbot, John Brownrigg and Henry Atwell, seamen; Robert Dawes (age eighteen or nineteen), cabin-boy; and Wansley, a young Delaware negro, steward and cook. When the brig had been five days out at sea, and was off Cape Hatteras, the negro steward informed some of the others of the money on board; and, with Gibbs, Church, Atwell and Dawes, planned to kill the captain and mate, and possess themselves of the specie. On the night of March 23rd, between 12 and 1 o'clock, as the captain was on the quarter-deck, and the boy Dawes steering, the negro Wansley came up on deck, and, obeying a prearranged call from Dawes to come and trim the binnacle light, as he passed behind the captain felled him with a pump-brake, and killed him by repeated blows. Gibbs then coming up, he and Wansley flung the captain's body overboard. Roberts, the mate, who was below, came up the companion way to ascertain the cause of the commotion, and was attacked by Church and Atwell, who failed, however (through nervousness), to accomplish their design upon him. He retreated to the cabin, where he was followed by Gibbs, who, not being able to find him in the dark, returned to the deck for the binnacle lamp, with which he re-entered the cabin, accompanied by Church, Atwell and the boy Dawes; and Roberts, being speedily overcome by their blows, was dragged upon deck and hurled into the sea—still alive, and able for a while to swim after the ship, begging for mercy. Talbot, who, in his terror at what was going on, had sought refuge in the forecabin, and Brownrigg, who had fled aloft, were now called by the conspirators and offered their lives and equal share in the booty if they kept silent. It is needless to say that they joyfully accepted the terms thus unexpectedly offered them. The conspirators then rifled the vessel, divided the specie; and, under direction of Gibbs, who, from his being the only one understanding navigation, assumed command of the vessel, their course was laid for Long Island. When within fifteen or twenty miles off Southampton light the vessel was scuttled and fired, and they took to their boats; Gibbs, Wansley, Brownrigg and Dawes, with about \$31,000 of the money, in the long boat, and Church, Talbot and Atwell, with about \$23,000, in the

jolly-boat. The wind was blowing a gale, and in attempting to cross Duck (or Rockaway) Bar, the jolly-boat upset, and its occupants, with their share of the booty, were lost. The occupants of the other boat were compelled, by fear of a similar fate, to lighten their boat by throwing overboard all but \$5,000 of their stealings; but finally succeeded in reaching the shore of Pelican Beach, then part of Barren, now Coney Island. Their first care was to dispose temporarily of the specie by burying it in a hole (dug with an oar) in the sand at a considerable distance from the shore, each taking out sufficient for his immediate wants. Food and lodging were their next most pressing wants, and meeting, on Pelican Beach, with Nicholas S. Williamson, of Gravesend, they told him a pitiable tale of shipwreck, and, getting from him the needed directions, they passed on to Dooley's Bay, on the northwest shore of Barren Island. Here resided John Johnson and wife, and his brother William, who kindly received and cared for the shipwrecked mariners, and gave up to them for the night their own room and beds. Brownrigg and the Johnson brothers thus happened to occupy chairs in the living-room; and as soon as the other inmates of the house were asleep Brownrigg revealed the whole matter to the two Johnsons. In the morning, after getting such breakfast as the place afforded, the pirates desired the Johnsons to take them over to the hotel at Sheepshead Bay, whence they might get a conveyance to Fulton Ferry and New York. This the Johnsons did, and returned to Barren Island without unnecessary delay; and, proceeding to the spot described by Brownrigg (and to which they had gone in the early morning with Wansley to get some clothes left there), they dug up the specie, removed it to another hiding place remote from its first location; and, by walking in the water, effaced all traces of the direction they had taken.

Meanwhile Gibbs and his party were bargaining with Samuel Leonard, the hotel-keeper at Sheepshead Bay, when suddenly, in the presence of all, Brownrigg, declaring that he would go no further with them, denounced his companions as pirates and murderers, and unfolded the whole story of the "Vineyard's" fate. Wansley incontinently took to his heels to the woods, and Gibbs and Dawes were seized and bound by the inn-keeper and his people; and Justice John Van Dyke was sum-

moned, who promptly issued warrants for the arrest of the pirates. The one constable of the village found his hands full in guarding Gibbs and Dawes; and so Robert Greenwood, of Sheepshead Bay, volunteered to go into the woods and look up Wansley. After an hour's search he found the negro, and presenting a huge pistol, ordered him to fall on his face and cross his hands behind his back. Wansley submitted, and Greenwood, sitting astride of him, tied his hands securely, ordered him to arise, and marched him back to Leonard's hotel. After the negro had been thoroughly secured his captor showed him the pistol (utterly destitute of either lock or load), with the remark that it "was just as good's any other if you knowed how to use it." Gibbs, Wansley and Dawes were then lodged in the county jail at Flatbush.

The Johnsons had been none too quick in securing the \$5,000; for, scarcely had they regained their home when Squire Van Dyke, with Brownrigg as guide, appeared on the scene, and going right to the spot where the money had been deposited the day before, found it gone! Brownrigg was then sent to join the others at Flatbush; and from thence they were remanded to New York Bridewell. Indictments being found against Gibbs and Wansley, they were tried and convicted on the testimony of Brownrigg and Dawes; and on the 11th of March, 1831, were sentenced to be hung; sentence being carried into effect on the 22d of April following.

John and William Johnson, apprehensive of further search being made for the money, made no haste to get it home. In a day or two they were visited by agents of the insurance companies and an officer, who not only searched for the money on the beach, but thoroughly ransacked the Johnson abode from garret to cellar, without success. Having, finally, as they thought, eluded the vigilance of the law, John Johnson and wife planned to get possession of it without the assistance of William. Accordingly, one night, while the latter was asleep, they stole out and unearthed the treasure, and reinterred it in two parcels, one of \$3,400, the other of about \$1,600. Knowing how closely William would scan the beach when he discovered his loss, they made only the slightest mark to designate the new place of deposit on Pelican Beach, by tying knots on the long sedge-grass, which could be seen only by the closest scrutiny. William's

indignation, when he discovered the loss, was intense; his suspicions fell upon his brother, and going to New York he informed the insurance companies, who entered suit against John for the recovery of the money. The trial, which was held before Judge Dean, in the Apprentices' Library, in Brooklyn, ended in John's acquittal, for want of sufficient evidence. He then removed to Brooklyn, and William to Canarsie. But when John went to look for his deposit, he found only the larger sum. A high tide had swept over the site of the other; the action of the waves had loosened the knots in the sedge-grass, and the \$1,600 was lost to him forever.

In 1842 the Skidmore family, living on "Ruffle Bar," concluded to remove their house, in sections, to a new site on the shore of Dooley's Bay, Barren Island. The house was accordingly taken down piecemeal, and most of it carried across the bay and piled up near its future site. The moving was not quite completed on the day appointed. On the foundation of their old home had been left the wooden ceiling of an upper chamber, in one piece or section. During the night a violent storm drove the tide up to an unprecedented height; and, in the morning, when Jacob Skidmore arose, he was surprised to find that his chamber ceiling had been brought over by the tide from Ruffle Bar to Dooley's Bay, without injury. Anxious to learn whether any other of his property had gone farther west, he pro-


ceeded along the northerly, or inside, shore of Pelican Beach, which then had become separated by a small inlet, shallow enough to be forded at low tide, but at high tide floating skiffs through it from the ocean to Dooley's Bay. The eastern part of Pelican Beach then had a ridge of sand hills, while the western was as flat and level as the whole of it is now. Arrived at these sand hills, from whence to get a view of the surrounding country, he saw none of his lumber; and, acceding to the suggestion of his companion, Mr. Loring, hurried back so as to cross the inlet before the tide got too high. Taking a last look, as they did so, they noticed the shore or ocean side of Pelican Beach much washed away, and also saw his neighbors, Willett Smith and Henry Brewer, approaching. Smith and Brewer came on easterly until they reached the spot where John Johnson and wife had last buried the \$1,600; and here, by the storm over night, the silver dollars had been uncovered, and lay scattered along the beach. The two men lost no time in filling pockets and boots, and carried away all they could; but they could not keep their good luck to themselves, and in a day or two business was almost entirely suspended in Gravesend, and every man who could got to Pelican Beach. The intense excitement only gradually subsided when a succeeding storm placed the location of the "find" so far to sea as to be absolutely beyond further search.



BROOKLYN

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE STORY OF BROOKLYN VILLAGE TO THE BEGINNING OF THE REVOLUTIONARY MOVEMENT.

TANDING at the junction of Fulton street and Flatbush avenue, and looking in the direction of the City Hall, the modern Brooklynite can cast his eye over the site of the first settlement out of which grew the present magnificent metropolitan borough. Standing there, looking at the throngs of all classes of society passing and repassing on the streets, the crowded cars, the loaded teams, and the elevated railroad crashing overhead, one can hardly realize the little village of the middle of the seventeenth century with its few scattered houses nestling as closely together as possible so as to afford mutual protection from bands of predatory or murderous Indians, with fields of growing grain giving a golden tinge to a landscape whose prevailing color was green, the color of luxuriant nature. Even in its early stages the red man found much in Breuckelen to incite his cupidity, and a twentieth century marauder, standing on the spot here indicated, might well exclaim, as Blucher is said to have exclaimed on visiting London, "What a place for loot!"

If we were asked to describe in a word the progress and end of Brooklyn, we would answer, Annexation. That has been its crowning feature all through. The place we now designate as the borough of Brooklyn was no less the result of annexation than was the city of Brooklyn prior to 1855, the date of its first most noted extension, when Williamsburgh

and Bushwick joined their fortunes with it, Old Breuckelen really waxed in strength and dominated the other towns with which it started, and which started under more auspicious conditions than it, by absorption of outlying villages from time to time. The Wallabout, for instance, was one district, Gowanus another, the Ferry another, Bedford another,—all of which, one after the other, fell in with the group of houses which found the central village on the rich agricultural plateau. The first purchase within the old limits of Brooklyn City—the pre-1856 limit—was at Gowanus, where in 1636 William Adriaense Bennet, an Englishman by birth and a cooper by trade, and Jacques Bentyne, another Englishman,—an important man in the colony, for in 1636 he was Schout Fiscal of New Amsterdam, and for several years a member of Governor Kieft's Council,—bought 936 acres from the Indian proprietors. Three years later Bentyne sold out his interest in the property to Bennet, who resided on it until his death, about 1644, when it passed to his widow. This purchase is regarded by Dr. Stiles as "the first step in the settlement of the city of Brooklyn;" but there are indications of earlier settlement.

In 1637 Joris Jansen (Rapalye) obtained a patent for some 334 acres of land at the Wallabout, and so began that historic settlement. About 1640 a ferry was established which plied between the present Fulton street and Peck Slip, and around the Fulton street end

arose a small settlement to which the name of "the Ferry" was given.

By reference to the map on page 97 of this volume, where the context gives an account of this ferry and vicinity, one will notice that at the time the map was drawn the name of the village was spelled Brookland, at least by some parties; that Rapailie was one of the many ways in which that name was spelled, that being before the days of spelling-books and dictionaries, and even before the era when correct orthography was thought a very important matter; and that the road to Jamaica, running southeastwardly, was the main business street or thoroughfare of the village.

The prospects of greater things led the mind's eye of the resident to a vague and distant future, with scarcely any correct idea of what the place would be at the end of a hundred or two hundred years, and life was comparatively monotonous. The initial improvements or any new country are necessarily very slow, as the first settlers are not wealthy and are obliged to work laboriously up from small beginnings, with many losses by experimentation, accident, etc. For the time being there does not seem to be any definite promise of great things soon to come. The capitalists arrive after a long time, the small capitalists first and gradually the larger ones afterward, and improvements are correspondingly more and more rapidly effected.

The essential features of those pioneer times have in many important respects been duplicated in all the Western States. Not until recently have capitalists felt like pushing railroads out into unsettled districts in order to develop their resources and invite settlement; and this movement has indeed been a great blessing to the public, notwithstanding the general dissatisfaction with railroad grants of lands. Of course, both in the enterprise of extending railroads into unsettled portions of the country and in the legislative grants of lands in aid of railroad construction, there would be, in keeping with the characteristic

weaknesses of human nature, many mistakes, —in excessive grants by one party and excessive railroad building by the other.

Bit by bit, as recorded in another chapter, the shore front was occupied by farms right down to Red Hook, where in 1643 Wouter Van Twiller assumed proprietorship by virtue of a patent afterward forfeited. At Gowanus and Wallabout as well as at the Ferry small settlements quickly sprang up. Between Gowanus and the Wallabout lay a level stretch of territory which the aborigines, as it was exceedingly fertile and easy of cultivation, used for growing their maize. To this tract they gave the name of Mareckawieck. Through it lay the road or trail that led from the Ferry to Flatlands, and it was on this trail, and on this fertile tract right between the present Court House and Flatbush avenue, that the village of Breuckelen had its beginning.

To the early settlers reference has already been made, and we may here take up the story by saying that the pioneer white dwellers on the trail located their homes in proximity to each other, quickly availed themselves of the policy outlined by the West India Company that the settlers should "establish themselves on some of the most suitable places, with a certain number of inhabitants, in the manner of towns, villages and hamlets," and held a meeting at which it was determined to form a town. Governor Kieft was at once notified that they had organized a municipality at their own expense, to which they had given the name of Breuckelen, after the village of that name on the Vecht, in the home province of Utrecht. The proceedings which led up to this seem to have been promptly indorsed by Kieft and publicly ratified in the following proclamation, issued in June, 1646:

We, William Kieft, Director General, and the Council residing in New Netherland, on behalf of the High and Mighty Lords States-General of the United Netherlands, His Highness of Orange, and the Honorable Directors of the General Incorporated West India Com-

pany, To all those who shall see these presents or hear them read, Greeting:

Whereas, Jan Evertsen Bout and Huyck Aertsen from Rossum were on the 21st May last unanimously chosen by those interested of Breuckelen, situate on Long Island, as Schepens, to decide all questions which may arise, as they shall deem proper, according to the exemptions of New Netherland granted to particular Colonies, which election is subscribed by them, with express stipulation that if any one refuse to submit in the premises aforesaid to the above-mentioned Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen, he shall forfeit the right he claims to land in the allotment of Breuckelen, and in order that everything may be done with more authority, We, the Director and Council aforesaid, have therefore authorized and appointed, and do hereby authorize the said Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen to be schepens of Breuckelen; and in case Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen do hereafter find the labor too onerous, they shall be at liberty to select two more from among the inhabitants of Breuckelen to adjoin them to themselves. We charge and command every inhabitant of Breuckelen to acknowledge and respect the above-mentioned Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen as their schepens, and if any one shall be found to exhibit contumaciousness towards them, he shall forfeit his share as above stated.

This done in Council in Fort Amsterdam in New Netherland.

It may not be inappropriate here to refer to the ancient town after which the new settlement was named, and to this end we quote from the able monograph on "Origin of Breuckelen," by Mr. Harrington Putnam:

Amersfoort, Breuckelen, and Utrecht have many historic associations. To the politician and reader of Motley, they are forever linked with the career and tragic end of Barneveld. In 1619, he fell a martyr to the cause of state rights and local self-government. Such an event, comparatively recent in 1646, and still appealing to the sense of individual liberty, may have been recalled by the settlers in America. While the liberties of Utrecht had been the cherished objects of Barneveld's solicitude, he proudly proclaimed his birth in Amersfoort. In moments of arduous public labor he looked hopefully forward to an hon-

orable and calm retirement from the tumults of party strife to his beautiful estate at Guntersteijn in the village of Breuckelen. Breuckelen, however, was an ancient village three centuries before the settlement in New Netherlands. Located between Utrecht and Amsterdam, it was early noted for its healthfulness, which soon made it a desirable residence region. The surrounding fields and foliage are strikingly green and luxuriant, even for Holland. Castles grew up about it along the banks of the beautiful Vecht, which all the successive tides of war have not quite destroyed.

In the Dutch records, Breuckelen had various spellings, as Broklede, Broicklede, Brackola, Brocklandia, and Broeckland. Hence some say that the name came from its brooks and marshes—van de drassige en broeckactige veenlanden—meaning a brook or marsh land. It is mentioned as an important place in the year 1317. There were two parishes on opposite sides of the Vecht. These are Breuckelen-Nijenrode, from the castle of Nijenrode, and Breuckelen-St. Pieters. The small river Vecht dividing these towns may be considered an outlet of the Rhine, which parts in two channels at Utrecht. The Vecht turns to the north and empties into the Zuider Zee. It is navigable for small vessels, and at Breuckelen is a little over two hundred feet wide.

The old country-seats along the Vecht, once set in the prim, geometric gardens of the last century, are now represented by modern villas, half hidden by trees, which to-day form bits of unmatched rural scenery. Eminent landscape painters of the modern Dutch school have loved to make studies amid these gentle windings, and the celebrity of the Vecht in art bids fair to surpass the forgotten fame of the neighboring castles. Old drawbridges of wood cross the sluggish river. Trees come close to the tow-path, bordered by quaint gardens. Along the garden edges, looking out upon the stream, are Koepels or tea houses and over all this abundant foliage rises a church spire.

Jan Evertsen Bout is generally regarded by local historians as the founder of Brooklyn, and as such deserves somewhat more than merely passing notice. According to the record in Bergen's "Early Settlers in Kings County," he was born in the Province of Gelderland in 1603 and entered the service of the West Indian Company. In 1634 he emigrated to New

Netherland and we find him, four years later, settled as a farmer at Pavonia (Jersey City, N. J.). In 1643 he was chosen one of the eight men then selected to represent the people in the days of Gov. Kieft's extremity and became a member of the Council by Kieft's appointment in 1645. That same year he secured a patent for fifty-six acres of land on Gowanus Kill, and when the town of Breuckelen was organized he was chosen as the first of its Schepens. In 1660 he was enrolled as a member of the Reformed Dutch Church in Breuckelen. He was twice married, first to Tryntje Symons de Wit, and secondly to Annetje Pieters. No children blessed either union, and after his death, in 1670, Annetje married Andries Janse Jurianse and appears to have brought him, as a dower, Jan's Brooklyn property.

The year 1646, in view of Kieft's proclamation, already given, may therefore be accepted as the beginning of Brooklyn's municipal history. The measure of local self-government then awarded to the community was as limited as was possible. The magistrates were in office and clothed with honor and authority, but they had no one to carry out their orders; so they at once petitioned Kieft, and the nature of their petition can easily be inferred from that dignitary's answer, which was as follows:

Having seen the petition of the schepens of Breuckelen, that it is impossible for them to attend to all cases occurring there, especially criminal assaults, impounding of cattle, and other incidents which frequently attend agriculture; and in order to prevent all disorders, it would be necessary to appoint a schout there, for which office they propose the person of Jan Teunissen. Therefore we grant their request therein, and authorize, as we do hereby authorize, Jan Teunissen to act as schout, to imprison delinquents by advice of the schepens, to establish the pound, to impound cattle, to collect fines, and to perform all things that a trusty schout is bound to perform. Whereupon he hath taken his oath at the hands of us and the Fiscal, on whom he shall especially depend, as in Holland substitutes are bound to be dependent on the Upper Schout, Schouts on the Bailiff or Marshal. We command and charge all who

are included under the jurisdiction of Breuckelen to acknowledge him, Jan Teunissen, for schout. Thus done in our council in Fort Amsterdam in New Netherland, the first December, Anno 1646.

With the appointment of this terror to evil-doers the municipal government of Brooklyn may be said to have been made complete as far as it could be under the circumstances. It does not seem likely that the Schout was much exercised over the degenerates from within the village, and that his income from Breuckelen was mainly derived from what might be called legal fees, such as drawing up writs, petitions, certificates and the like. During the remainder of the Dutch regime the story of the young town passed on so placidly that really there is little for the general historian to tell, and what little there is gathered around the fantastic figure of Peter Stuyvesant. Soon after that potentate "of uncertain reputation, impetuous, high tempered, energetic and persistent," as Henry Cabot Lodge has described him, succeeded Kieft in 1647, the whole of New Netherland felt the benefit of the change. But his paternal notions were at times carried too far, and in the protests against his assumptions of power the people of Breuckelen were ever active and were represented in all the conventions which so often aroused the wrath of the paternal "Silver Legs," as the Indians called Stuyvesant, on account of the silver bands which strengthened and adorned his wooden limb.

In 1660 a palisade was erected around the settlement of homes, and in that year also Henricus Selyns began preaching in Brooklyn, thus marking the beginning of the great factor in the city's subsequent fame. The palisade proved a source of comfort during the Indian outbreak of 1663. But in spite of the general success of the colony as a whole under Stuyvesant, the progress of Breuckelen in the matter of population continued very slow, as may be understood from the fact that when the Director and Council decided that the village

should contribute eight or twelve men to the common defense of the Dutch towns, a meeting of the inhabitants voted to the effect that such a proposition was outrageous, that it really called for more men than the place should or could provide. But then Breuckelen was constantly giving the Director trouble by not complying with his wishes and tamely submitting to his notions. On his arrival he ordered an election of nominees for membership in his Council, retaining the final selection from those elected in his own hands. New Amsterdam, Breuckelen, Amersfoort and Midwout were among the

is no doubt the convention indirectly led to an increase of municipal privileges all round. In Breuckelen the number of Schepens was increased from two to four and it got a Schout all to itself in the person of David Provoost. The latter official was one of the early settlers in New Amsterdam, arriving there in 1639, and he afterward held several official positions. He received his appointment as Schout in 1654 and in 1656 was succeeded by Pieter Tonneman. It is difficult to understand why Provoost resigned so soon, for he appears to have been an inveterate office-seeker, and it was not



BROOKLYN IN 1653

places thus honored by a taste of popular government. Out of the eighteen thus chosen by public vote the Governor selected nine as his advisers, and his choice from Breuckelen fell upon Jan Evertsen Bout. In 1653, at the unauthorized convention of representatives of New Netherland towns held in New Amsterdam, Breuckelen was represented by Frederic Lubbertsen, Paulen Van der Beeck and William Beeckman. Probably Bout did not attend because of his official position. The meeting apparently accomplished nothing. Stuyvesant was bitterly opposed to such things and he emphatically told the delegates to go home and not to assemble again on such business; but there

until 1665 that we find him in another position, that of Clerk of the local courts. Probably the fees attached to the Breuckelen appointment were too small to suit his views or his ambition. Tonneman held on until 1660, when he was appointed Schout of New Amsterdam and then Adrian Hegeman became Breuckelen's Schout, with a fixed salary in addition to what seems to have been for the time quite generous fees.

Shortly after the unauthorized meeting of representatives of the people which Stuyvesant so ruthlessly put down, Bout again comes under our notice. In 1654 he declined to serve any longer as one of the Schepens, declaring he

Richard Nicolls Esq.



Governour Generall, under his Royall Highnesse, James Duke of
Yorke and Albany &c. of all his Territories in America To
all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth Greeting, Whereas
there is a certaine Towne within this Government, Situate,
lying and being, in the west Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long
Island, Commonly called and known by the name of Breucke-
len; Which said Towne, is now in the Tenure or occupation,
of severall Freeholders and Inhabitants, who having heretofore
been Seated there by Authority, have been at very considerable
Charge, in manuring and Planting a considerable part, of the Lands
belonging there unto, and settled a competent Number of Families
there upon: Now for a Confirmation unto the said Freeholders
and Inhabitants in their Possession and Enjoyment of the
premises, Know yee, That by vertue of the Commission
and Authority unto mee given by his Royall Highnesse, I have
given Ratified, Confirmed and granted, And by these
presents, do give, Ratify, Confirm and grant, unto Jan Everts
Jan Damen, Albert Cornelissen, Paulus Verbeeck, Michiell Eneyl,
Thomas Lamberts, Jernis Gysberts Bogart, and Joris Jacobsen, &
as Patentes, for and on the behalfe of themselves and their
Associates, the Freeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne,
their Heires, Successors and Assignes, All that Tract together
with the severall Parcels of Land, which already have or hereafter
shall be Purchased or procured, for and on the behalfe of the said
Towne, whether from the Native Indyan Proprietors, or others,
within the Bounds and Limits hereafter sett forth and exprest,
(vizt) That is to say The said Towne is Bounded westward
on the farther side of the Land of M^r Paulus Verbeeck, from

whence stretching South East, they go over the Hills, and so
Eastward along by the said Hills, to a South East Point, which
takes in all the Lots behind the Swamp, from which said Lots
they run Northwest to the River, and extend to the Harne on
the other side of the Hill, heretofore belonging to Hans Hanser, over
against the Kecke or Look out, Including within the said
Bounds and Limits, all the Lots and Plantations, lying and
being at the Gouvanes, Bedford, Walkebocht and the ferry.
All which said Parcels and Tract of Land, and premises, be
in the Bounds and Limits aforesaid mentioned described, and
also or any Plantation or Plantations there upon, from hence
forth are to be, appertain and belong, to the said Town of
Breucklen, Together with all Haven, Harbo. Creekes, Quarries
woodland, Meadow Ground, Reed Land or valley of all sorts
Pastures, Marshes, Run, Rivers, Lakes, Fishing, Hawking,
Hunting and fowling, And all other profits, Commodities,
Emoluments and hereditaments, to the said Lands and pre=
=mises, within the Bounds and Limits sett forth, belonging
or in any wise appertaining, And with all, to have freedom
of Commonage, for Range and feed of Cattle and Horses, into
the woods, as well without as within their Bounds and Limits,
with the rest of their Neighbo.; As also, one third part of a cer=
=tain Neck of Meadow Ground or valley, called Sellers Neck
lying and being within the Limits, of the Town of Jamaica,
Purchased by the said Town of Jamaica, from the Indians,
and sold by them, unto the Inhabitants of Breucklen aforesaid
as it hath been lately laid out, and divided by their mutuall
consent, and my order, where unto, and from which, they are
likewise to have free Egress and Regress, as their occasions






shall require **To have and to hold**, all and singular the said Tract and Parcells of Land, Meadow Ground or pasty, Con-
 monage, Hereditaments and premises, with their and every
 of their Appurtenances, and of every part and Parcell thereof,
 to the said Patentees and their Associates, their Heirs, Suc-
 cessors and Assignes, to the proper use and behoofe of the said
 Patentees and their Associates, their Heirs, Successors and
 Assignes forever. Moreover, I do hereby, give, Ratify,
 Confirm and grant to unto the said Patentees and their
 Associates, their Heirs, Successors and Assignes, all Right
 and Privileges, belonging to a Towne within this Government,
 and that the place of their present Habitation, shall continue &
 retain the name of Breuckelen, by which name and stile
 it shall be distinguished and knowne, in all Bargains said
 Patentees shall make for and on behalf of themselves
 and their Associates, their Heirs, Successors and Assignes,
 Rendering and Paying, such Duties and Acknowledgements,
 as now are, or hereafter shall be, Constituted and Establish'd,
 by the Lawes of this Government, under the Acedence of his
 Royal Highnesse, his Heirs and Successors. Given under
 my hand and Seale at fort James in New Yorke, on the
 Island of Manhattan the 10th day of October, in the nineteenth
 yeare of the Reigne of our Sovereigne Lord, Charles the second,
 by the Grace of God, of England, Scotland France and Ireland
 King, Defender of the Faith &c, Annoq Domini 1667.

Richard Nicolls

Recorded by Order of the Govern.
 the day and yeare above written

Nicholas Nicolls, Secr.



John ^{mark}  Solent
 Symonien van Egte
 Gerrit Verghet
 Daniel Polman
 Estigma ^{mark}  Solent
 Jacob Bontje
 Jan van Noordt
 Af Jijl ruse
 Gertje Juyker
 Damsen Juyker
 Cornet Cornet
 Gijlham Cornet
 Beurre ^{mark}  Solent
 Elise ^{mark}  Solent
 Tom Kiepmann
 Gert Juyker
 Schenker van Dijk
 L. vande Heuven
 van Kavalje
 Hout van Hout
 Gysbert Boogat
^{mark} AB ^{mark} Hout
 Johannes Ropal
 Hans Luyck
 Daniel Ropal
 Joseph Jeyman
 Jant ^{mark}  Hout
 Gert Rappaly
 Maria Bennet
 Jan van Lant
 Johannes Kiepmann

would rather return to Holland than venture on another term. However, says Harrington Putnam, "no excuses regarding his private business were accepted [by Stuyvesant]. Though the Schepen-elect had served for previous terms, and filled other colonial offices, he was not now allowed to retire. The Sheriff was formally ordered to notify him of these summary commands of Gov. Stuyvesant: 'If you will not accept to serve as Schepen for the welfare of the village of Breuckelen with others, your fellow-residents, then you must prepare yourself to sail in the ship King Solomon for Holland, agreeably to your utterance.' This appeal to the civic conscience of one who had been prominent as a reformer, coupled with the grim threat of deportation, was irresistible. No further declinations in Breuckelen offices seem to have troubled the Council." Bout did not go to Holland, but continued in public life until at least 1665, for he was then one of the representatives of Breuckelen at the Hempstead convention; after that he passes from our view.

In spite of his paternal methods and domineering tactics, there is no doubt that under Stuyvesant's rule the Dutch towns steadily advanced in self-government. He was virtually as one man standing like a barrier between two forces of progress, for the home authorities in New Amsterdam always showed themselves, when appealed to, to be in favor of the fullest measure of local self-government and the liberty of the subject, while the Dutch pertinacity never permitted an aim to be lost sight of once it was believed to be a right. There were frequent quarrels between the Dutch towns and Stuyvesant, and these there is no doubt drove him to seek the support of the English settlers at Gravesend and elsewhere much more than possibly he cared to admit. But his arbitrary will kept alive a certain measure of discontent which even he had to reckon with, and it is a singular fact that it was under Stuyvesant that the acceptance of the theory that the people

were the source of power and the arbiters of law found its earliest acknowledgment in what is now the State of New York. The first principles of union were also instilled into the minds of people and ruler when, in 1664, the Director felt impelled to call a meeting of representatives chosen in each community to consider various matters of common interest and indirectly to repair the damage done by his own misgovernment. At that meeting Breuckelen was represented by William Bredenbent and Albert Cornelysen Wantanaer, two of its Schepens. It is of little moment what that meeting did: its importance lies in the fact that it was called at all and that it had been called at the direct behest of such a ruler as Stuyvesant. It met in April in the fort at New Amsterdam, and five months later the English flag waved over that stronghold, an English Governor held sway and the indomitable Pieter troubled the lieges no more.

So far as Gov. Nicolls was concerned, the chief feature of his administration, the chief feature that is of interest in the history of Breuckelen, was the granting to it of a charter which has been reproduced in fac-simile, while of the events of the six years' administration under his successor, Gov. Lovelace, only the beginning of the village of Bedford need be recorded. The second Dutch regime was barren of incident, so far as concerns the history of Breuckelen, and when, in 1674, the English Government was resumed the village seems to have accepted the charge again with placid equanimity. Governor Dongan in 1686 gave it a new patent, which served the purpose of helping his administration with a fee and fixing some disputed boundary questions.

But amid all these changes in rulers Breuckelen continued to make definite progress, and by 1676 it had assumed its place at the head of the five Dutch towns. Its taxable rate was adjusted on a valuation of £5,067, while that of Middlewout was £4,872, Boswyck £22,960, New Utrecht £3,024, and Amersfort £3,966. Gov. Dongan fixed the town's quit

rent at twenty bushels of wheat. In 1698 the population of Breuckelen (it had then become Brookland) was given at 444, not including 65 slaves, while its nearest neighbor, Flatbush, rejoiced in 405 whites and 71 slaves.

Much of the early history of Breuckelen that has come down to us is in regard to boundary disputes, for it does not seem that in the political troubles of the commonwealth, such as the Leisler excitement, or even in the charges of the ruling powers, its people took any very profound interest. The matter of their boundaries, however, seems to have been a vital question and was the cause of much trouble between them and the good folks of Flatbush and Bushwick, while the rights in connection with the ferry were also a source of standing and perpetual worry with New York. In these troubles and complications and claims, however, the Brooklyn people seemed to want no more than might be considered their just right, and an instance of their conscientious regard for this may be found in the following excerpt, showing in the way in which they adjusted their own internal boundaries at a public meeting of the citizens:

At a Town meeting held the 25th day of February, 1692-3, att Breucklyn, in Kings County. Then Resolved to divide their common land and woods into three parts, in manner following to wit:

"1. All the lands and woods after Bedford and Cripplebush, over the hills to the path of New lotts shall belong to the inhabitants and freeholders of the Gowanis, beginning from Jacob Brewer and soe to the uttermost bounds of the limits of New-Utrecht.

"2. And all the lands and woods that lyes betwixt the abovesaid path and the highway from the ferry toward Flatbush, shall belong to the freeholders and the inhabitants of Bedford and Cripplebush.

"3. And all the lands that lyes in common after the Gowanis, betwixt the limits and bounds of Flatbush and New Utrecht shall belong to the freeholders and inhabitants of Brooklyn, fred. neck [Frederick Lubbertsen's Neck], the ferry and the Wallabout."

In 1702 Fulton Street was laid out and except near the water front provided a fairly good thoroughfare out to Bedford Corners, and in a measure to Flatbush. This road was so highly regarded that it received the name of the King's Highway, and jealous eyes were kept upon it to guard against encroachments upon its width and usefulness. However, at that time Brooklyn and its then suburbs—Gowanus, Wallabout, Bedford, Red Hook and Cripplebush and the Ferry—were tolerably well supplied with roads, at least with roads which made communication between them comparatively easy. Still the whole territory grew slowly in point of population, much more slowly than might be expected considering the opportunities for settlers and the wide extent of fruitful land that lay fallow awaiting the cultivator. Even in 1738 the population of Brooklyn and what we have called its suburbs did not exceed 725, yet even these limited figures placed it far in advance of the other Dutch towns.

Of the internal history of the people little is known until almost the beginning of the century, for the records of the town prior to the close of the Revolutionary War have mainly been lost or destroyed. A few incidents might be chronicled, such as the meeting of the Colonial Legislature in a house on Fulton street in 1752, owing to the fear of small-pox, which then raged in New York; but as a rule such details as we have are hardly worthy of being incorporated in a general history, however useful some of them may be for assisting the historian to arrive at conclusions on matters of purely local interest. In fact Brooklyn was a municipality in name but only a community in reality until after the nineteenth century had begun, and although by that time its population had increased to nearly 1,700 it was almost unknown outside of Long Island and Manhattan. Tytler's Gazetteer, published at Edinburgh in 1781, in its account of Long Island did not think Brooklyn worthy of even being named, while Moore's American Gazet-

teer, issued in 1798, briefly describes it as having "some elegant houses, which lie chiefly on one street."

Whatever history the district had, centred at the Ferry. Some means of transit between Manhattan and Long Island was necessary from the time the first house was erected on the latter, and the ferry therefore may be regarded as the first of the local institutions. When it originated, however, we know not; but for two or three years the little traffic there was, was done by private boats owned on the Long Island side by the farmers and on the Manhat-

came into being from the trade between the two points. Certain it is that the first ferry was between the points above named. Ten years later, after it had passed from Cornelis's hands, the ferry trade had become so important that the New Amsterdam authorities considered it should be made to return them some revenue; but Gov. Stuyvesant refused to entertain the idea, although afterward he admitted the public character of the service by permitting it to be placed under certain regulations. These included a fairly regular service, some requirements for the



VIEW OF BROOKLYN IN 1798 AS SEEN FROM THE NORTH.

tan side by the usual boatmen who plied along the waterfront. The journey was a long and tedious one, for the currents were strong and were also treacherous enough to infuse a sense of danger into the ideas of whoever meditated the voyage.

Transit across the river was not long, however, to remain a matter of chance, for in 1642 we find Cornelis Dircksen (Hoogland) acknowledged as ferry man. Probably there was no formal appointment. Cornelis kept a tavern in connection with his little farm at what afterward became Peck Slip, and he owned a piece of land and a house near the present site of Fulton ferry on Long Island. Very likely he set up a tavern there, too, and so the ferry

comfort of passengers and a scale of charges, and in return for observing these rules, or rather for accepting them, the Ferryman enjoyed a monopoly of the traffic. The arrangement was certainly a very liberal one all round for the boatman, but then there seems, it is mortifying to say, some reason to believe that he had quietly to hand over a proportion of his earnings to Stuyvesant. This new arrangement, in spite of the Governor's "rake-off," proved so profitable that competition for the privilege became excited, and in 1655 Egbert Van Borsum, who came here as skipper of the ship Prince William, leased the ferry from the Governor, agreeing to pay him 300 guilders per annum. He also got a patent

for two lots on the Long Island waterfront, and there erected a structure which long served for both ferry house and tavern. Under him the place seems to have become quite a resort for the "roving blades" of the period. Egbert died about 1670, and for several years the tavern was run by his widow, while his son Hermanus attended to the ferry business. The house erected by the elder Van Boersum continued to serve its varied purposes until 1700, when a new building was erected of stone. This structure was destroyed by fire in 1748, and was succeeded by the historic ferry-house which was in existence during the British occupation in 1776. The ferry itself became a part of the municipal property of New York City under the Dongan charter of 1686. The legality of this charter was subsequently disputed, and led to interminable lawsuits, but the charter was confirmed by royal warrant in 1692. It was run, with varying success and on short leases (generally seven years) by private individuals, farmers and tavern-keepers mostly, as a separate holding; but the rent paid advanced steadily so that by 1710 it brought to the corporation of New York an annual rental of £180,—the largest single source of income over which the local treasury rejoiced. But the fact that it was a New York institution was rather galling to the Brooklyn settlers and a cause of complaint from a very early period. Their complaints evoked no change, however, and the New York corporation in 1694 actually bought sufficient ground at the Brooklyn end and built the ferry-house.

In 1707 Cornelius Sabring, the owner of a farm in what is now known as South Brooklyn and member of Assembly for Kings county from 1695 to 1726, and therefore a man naturally possessing much local influence, tried to get permission from Gov. Cornbury to establish a new ferry, and his request was backed up by quite a number of influential indorsers; but the New York corporation stubbornly contested what they regarded as a movement both "unreasonable and unjust," and their opposi-

tion prevailed. This claim at ownership of the Ferry was one that became the more bitterly contested by Brooklyn as time went on and more stubbornly upheld by New York as the income increased. Even in 1745 they denied the rights of residents of Brooklyn to cross the river in their own boats and so transporting friends, or produce, and when one of these boatmen, Hendrick Remsen, appealed to a jury to establish his claim to such an apparently inalienable privilege, the New York authorities contested the case bitterly. The jury before whom the action was tried found in Remsen's favor, and after a long interval the Supreme Court finally awarded him £118 14s 10½d for damages and costs. The New York corporation appealed the case to the King and Council, and somehow the matter there rested, for a final decision had not been rendered when the Revolutionary War broke out. It was alleged, however, that Remsen was quietly pacified with a gift of a house and parcel of land near Coenties Slip, in New York City. It is a matter of little interest now to go into all the details of the struggle against what used to be called the usurpation, by New York, of rights to the Long Island shore: it has no more interest to the reader of history at the present day than the disputes as to boundaries waged by some of the five Dutch towns so fiercely against each other; indeed, in a sense it was in reality simply another form of boundary dispute and as such has had its meaning, virtue, and force removed forever by the inexorable march of modern progress and the soothing influence of consolidation. The income from the ferry steadily advanced, and while we read of one or two of the lessees losing money it proved a steady source of revenue to the New York corporation. In 1750 it brought £455, and in 1753 £650.

"In May, 1766," writes Dr. Stiles ("History of Brooklyn" vol. III, page 527), "it passed into the hands of Samuel Waldron for five years at a yearly rent of £660, and in May, 1771, was renewed to him for another three

years, at £550 per annum. At the expiration of his lease in 1774 it was determined by the corporation that three ferries, viz., one from Coenties Slip to the landing place of Messrs. Livingston & Remsen [foot of present Joralemon street: this ferry's buildings were burned during the Revolutionary War and it was then abandoned]; the second from Peck's Slip to land at Jacob Brewerton's wharf, or landing place, at Brooklyn ferry; and the third from the Fly Market (foot of Fulton street, New York) to the same landing place at the Brooklyn Ferry. Accordingly, on the 12th of April, 1774, three several leases were duly executed for the term of two years, viz., to Elisha De Grushe, for the first-named ferry, and to Samuel Balding for the second-named ferry, at an annual rent of £120, and to Adolph Waldron for the third at an annual rent of £430. * * * In May, 1776, the whole ferry came under the control of Adolph Waldron, for two years, at £450 per annum. Waldron, being a Whig, left New York with the American army in 1776 and did not return until the close of the war. During the British occupation of New York and Long Island the ferry was let by Mayor Matthew and Gov. Tryon to two of their Tory

friends, Van Winkle and Buckett, probably for their joint benefit. Van Winkle is described as a very important-feeling man, who was accustomed to walk about in a silk morning gown. They raised the fare to 6d, not so high a charge when we remember that wheat was then selling in New York at the ordinary rate of one guinea per bushel. After the evacuation Capt. Adolph Waldron, by a lease executed June 23. 1784, resumed the ferry for five years at the yearly rent of £500. During the severe winter of 1783-4 it is said that he and his sons made considerable money by purchasing wood in Brooklyn and selling it in New York, where it was quite scarce."

In 1789 Waldron tried to have his lease renewed, but the corporation thought more money could be made by leasing the ferry building and licensing a number of boats to carry passengers and freight across the river. In 1795 a ferry was established by the corporation between Main street, Brooklyn, to Catharine street, New York (long known as the New Ferry), and leased by William Furman and Theodosius Hunt, and with the mention of that transaction we may fittingly close this chapter.



CHAPTER XXXIII.

BROOKLYN.

FROM THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION TO THE INCORPORATION OF THE VILLAGE
—PRE EMINENCE OF THE FERRY—THE BEGINNING
OF THE NAVY YARD.

IN the chapters of this work dealing with the Battle of Brooklyn and the events antecedent and subsequent to that landmark in American history, the story of Brooklyn from the beginning of the Revolutionary movement until the British flag passed out of New York Harbor as an emblem of possession is fully told.

On March 7, 1788, Brooklyn was duly recognized by the State Government as a town, a proceeding which was virtually a confirmation of the old royalist charter by the new republican order of things. There is no doubt that the changes caused by the Revolution and British occupation and evacuation had caused much havoc in the town, had brought all its real business interests to a standstill and laid waste much of the property of its residents. Hence some time, after peace was restored, was occupied in putting matters in order, in counting up losses and calculating future chances. The fact that in 1785 a fire department was organized shows that the beginning, at least, of the up-building movement was not long delayed. That it had fairly recovered itself by 1800-1 was evident from the fact that the history of land-booming in Brooklyn was about that time inaugurated by the Sands brothers placing their once famous Olympia on the market,—a scheme which has already been fully detailed in this work. Quite a large accession to the

population was received from the tide of Irish immigration, which had even then set in to this country.

A still more significant evidence was the establishment, in June 26, 1799, of the first newspaper ever printed in Brooklyn, "The Courier and New York and Long Island Advertiser," by Thomas Kirk, a bookseller and printer. It was not much of an effort, either in its literary or news aspects, its publication being prompted probably more to advertise its owner's business than anything else; but it was a beginning. It lasted some four years, issuing weekly from its office at the corner of Fulton and Front streets. Kirk was also the printer of the first book issued in Brooklyn, a pamphlet containing General Lee's oration on Washington, in 1800. In 1806 (May 26) the condition of the journalistic field in Brooklyn was tested by a new venture—"The Long Island Weekly Intelligencer," issued by Robinson & Little. On June 1, 1809, Kirk tried a fresh adventure,—"the Long Island Star;" but in 1811 he sold it to Alden F. Spooner, who may be regarded, if not as the real father of journalism in Brooklyn, as at least its first successful exponent.

It is not a little singular that the first great industry to feel the benefit of the new national progress in Brooklyn was that of shipping and shipbuilding. In 1788 the Sarah, belonging to

the Sands brothers, opened the eyes of the local merchants to the advantages of Brooklyn as a port, and thereafter many larger vessels, mainly in the West India trade, began to lie up at her wharves, while the connection with the coastwise trade steadily increased. From the Ferry to the Wallabout many wharves were built well out into the stream so as to permit large vessels to dock. Warehouses were erected close to the water-front, and other commerce sprung up in the same section. In 1798 a large trading ship was built on its water-front and in 1799 the frigate John Adams, thirty-two guns, was launched at the Wallabout, right in the territory now included in the United States Navy Yard.

In a directory for 1796 we find in addition to the usual array of grocers and what may be called domestic vendors and tavern-keepers, livery-stable men, loading houses and carpenters, shoemakers and other tradesmen and storekeepers, such industries represented as rope-making, chair-making, gunsmithing, also a land-broker, a master builder, a copperplate printer, a lumber merchant, a brewer and a dyer, showing that by that time Brooklyn was prepared to meet any requirement of the existing requirements of civilization. Later a floor-cloth factory and a cotton-goods mill were established. Other evidences of this civilization's requirement may be gleaned by the thoughtful from these facts: In 1806 the cage or watch-house was the object of consideration at a town meeting at which a regular night watch was organized, and in 1808 \$1,500 was voted for the erection of a new poorhouse. In 1809 a visitation of yellow fever led to Brooklyn's being quarantined for a couple of months by New York, and in 1812 it was nearly wiped out by a fire which started on Main street, near the ferry.

The extent to which the yellow fever epidemic spread led to considerable feeling among the local physicians. With these professional healers the city was well supplied, and among them Drs. Ball, Wendell, Lowe and Osborne

were probably as well equipped as any of their brethren in New York. Dr. Lowe, who was a brother of the Rev. Dr. Lowe of the Dutch Reformed Church, possibly had the largest private practice in the town for many years. In 1815, when there was an epidemic of small-pox, Drs. Ball and Wendell announced their willingness to vaccinate all who so desired free of any charge, that is, we take it, all who were too poor to pay a fee, thus forestalling one of the most beneficent provisions of our modern Boards of Health.

In 1811 the circle of practitioners of the healing art in Brooklyn received quite an addition in the person of the "Rain Water Doctor," although he was never recognized as belonging to the circle. This curious charlatan, for charlatan he undoubtedly was, although he seemed to understand some matters of vital importance in combating disease better than his legitimate brethren, believed, or professed to believe, in the copious use of rain water as a remedial agent, and used a wide range of herbs in his treatment of diseases, believing them to be the natural correctives of all human ills. He seemed to have no faith whatever in what were commonly called drugs and was credited, according to popular rumor, at all events, with effecting some remarkable cures. These stories quickly spread and attracted large throngs of patients to Brooklyn, not only from various parts of Long Island but from New York and New Jersey, and his headquarters at the Black Horse Tavern, where is now the junction of Fulton and De Kalb avenues, became thronged with patients. All reports agree that his charges were exceedingly moderate, and it was said he even returned large fees handed him by grateful patients who regarded themselves as cured of their ailments by his treatment. Nay, more, he even, it is said, placed a marble monument over the grave of one patient who had come to him too late for any earthly remedial methods to be effective. A wonderful physician, truly! But we fear that in the stories we have

concerning him a good deal of current rumor is dished up as solemn fact. He continued in Brooklyn for about a year (1811-12) and then, probably because his methods were becoming stale and trade was falling off, removed to Providence, R. I., where he died in 1815.

During the time covered in this section, too, a great change was taking place in Brooklyn,—the first of a series of similar changes which had often puzzled land speculators and set real-estate prices in a kaleidoscopic whirl. The centre of trade was shifting from the plateau on which old Breuckelen itself stood down toward the Ferry. Around that spot there had long clustered a collection of taverns, but now houses of entertainment and business establishments of all kinds struggled to get as near to the foot of Fulton street as they possibly could. It was in the Ferry district that the new comers who were steadily increasing the population settled, and the overflow, instead of stretching back in the direction of the present City Hall, pressed along the water-front until it reached Catharine Ferry. It has been estimated that in 1815 three-fifths of the total population of Brooklyn lay between these two points. There were congregated the stores, and the professional men, while the rest of the town maintained its rural character. Old Breuckelen became, for a time, a suburb of the Ferry, just as were Bedford and Gowanus and Cripplebush and Red Hook. Even the most aristocratic dry-goods store was kept at the corner of Fulton and Front streets, and there Abraham Remsen discoursed of the latest fashions in gowns and bonnets, ribbons and laces, until the neighborhood itself began to become unfashionable. Remsen's establishment was the pioneer of the retail dry-goods business in Brooklyn, a business which now in point of magnitude is said to exceed that of Manhattan borough itself.

But while the Ferry district was thus predominant an event occurred during the time covered by this chapter which was destined not only to preserve the name of the Walla-

bout section but to keep it distinct and prosperous no matter what other changes might come. On the water-front of the bay was the shipbuilding establishment of John Jackson, surrounded by about a dozen houses where his workmen resided. He did a large, although somewhat intermittent business. In 1801 the United States Government bought Jackson's establishment and thirty acres of land, and thereon proceeded to lay out a navy yard. It is said that the price Uncle Sam paid for the property was \$40,000. It was not until June 1, 1806, however, that the Government fairly commenced work on the land, for then Lieutenant Jonathan Thorn was appointed Commandant and began putting the place in order for its new mission. He was retained there only for a year, being succeeded July 13, 1807, by Capt. Isaac Chauncey, who continued in control until May, 1813, when he was ordered to the Great Lakes and there entered upon that series of naval manoeuvres which made his flag ship, "The Pike," one of the best known boats in the American navy. Chauncey was followed at the Navy Yard by Capt. Samuel Evans, who held the office of Commandant until 1824. These three men were brilliant officers and have left enviable records in the Navy Department, and the annals of the country and their appointments show that from the first the government fully appreciated the importance of its Brooklyn property. Lieut. Thorn was killed on the Oregon coast many years after he left Brooklyn while in command of one of John Jacob Astor's trading ships.

The war of 1812 found Brooklyn not only determined to resist any recurrence of British occupation but united in the desire to uphold the position of the country without regard to the poor politics which had rendered a recourse to arms necessary. The story of Brooklyn's share in that conflict (bloodless so far as she was concerned) has already been told and can here be dismissed with this passing reference. But we may here be permitted to

say that, worthless and needless as that war was in many respects, it was important in that it really united the country into one grand and actual Federation. Before it the States were little other than a union on paper; they formed a nation, it is true, but it was a nation only in name; but the events which followed the declaration of war in 1812 made them a nation in reality. Thereafter the Government at Washington was recognized as pre-eminent and the necessity for its solidity, strength and effectiveness was recognized even by the most virulent upholder of the theory of State sovereignty. Some of the lessons of the war were speedily forgotten, notably that of the necessity of a strong navy; but the imperative need of the central Government being powerful enough to meet every emergency and to direct the country amid the policies and jealousies of the nations of the world was never afterward lost sight of or ignored.

It was not until the middle of February, 1815, that the news that peace had been proclaimed reached Brooklyn, and as soon as the excusable paean of joy over that event was ended the town resumed its forward march, and the march seemed more blithesome than ever before. It was not all work and no play any longer; life was not taken so seriously as formerly; tea houses were opened in every direction; "gardens" where people could regale themselves with music, wine or beer in the open air were set out in all the main thoroughfares, the wharves took on new life and the market at the Ferry, beside the great liberty pole, the grand emblem of what had been won, was a daily scene of business excitement. Every occupation appeared to "boom;" an "era of prosperity" had arrived, and looked as if it had settled down for a long stay; all the local horoscopes seemed to promise that the town had a bright future before it, and all that

could be dreamed of as wanting was a form of local government which would work harmoniously and bring about quickly the best results. No time was lost, for in December, 1815, a meeting called to consider the advisability of seeking a charter of incorporation as a village. The sentiment at this meeting was so completely in favor of this step that a general meeting of the citizens was called, and at that gathering, Jan. 6, 1816, the matter was heartily indorsed and a committee was appointed to draft a bill for incorporation and present it to the Legislature. This committee comprised Thomas Everitt, Alden F. Spooner, Joshua Sands, John Doughty and the Rev. John Ireland. The bill was laid before the Legislature within a few weeks, on March 13 it passed the Senate and on April 12 the Assembly assented. The territory thus incorporated under a village government was described as "beginning at the Public Landing south of Pierrepont's Distillery, formerly the property of Philip Livingston deceased, on the East River; thence running along the Public Road leading from said Landing, to its intersection with Red Hook Lane; thence along said Red Hook Lane to where it intersects the Jamaica Turnpike Road; thence a northeast course to the head of the Wallaboght Mill-pond; thence through the centre of the Mill-pond to the East River; and thence down the East River to the place of beginning." The village was to be governed by a board of five trustees, who with three assessors were to be elected by popular vote each year. The board, when elected, was to select its own officials. To facilitate matters the first trustees were named in the act,—Andrew Mercein, John Garrison, John Doughty, John Seaman and John Deën, and these held their first official meeting on May 4, 1816. That meeting may be said to mark the beginning of the modern history of Brooklyn.



THE BROOKLYN SHORE IN 1820.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN.

IT will have been noticed that what was incorporated as the Village of Brooklyn formed in reality only a portion of what had been grouped together as the town, and comprised little more than what formerly used to be spoken of as "the Ferry." It even left outside in the cold the old Breuckelen itself; and the Wallabout and Bedford and the rest of the suburbs of the old Dutch town were permitted to get along as best they might. The trade was concentrated round the Ferry district, the population concentrated there, and from there the expansion was destined to flow that was to bring all the scattered sections under one rule again, that was once more to link all their fortunes together. But while the Village of Brooklyn was thus only a part of the whole, it was the part in which local history was made for the eighteen years during which the village charter remained in force.

Yet to all of what afterward became the extended city of Brooklyn the forces then at work in the village were big with import, for on the progress there made depended ulti-

mately the welfare of all the other sections. It was as if the sturdiest brother of a family assumed the care and responsibility of the interests of all the rest, and started out to win enough capital which, if wisely garnered, would in time benefit him and equally all the others. During these eighteen years, therefore, while we speak of Brooklyn, we have to forget the other members of the family and think only of the old section close to the East River, which had come to the front and was making such a bid for position and wealth.

How the new departure aided in the prosperity of the place may be understood from the fact that while in 1816 the population of Brooklyn was 4,402, by 1820 it had increased to 7,475, and most of this increase was counted within the limits of the incorporated village, for outside of it there was very little to attract new-comers. By 1825 the figures had increased to 10,791, and by 1830 to 15,295; but by that date the ferry district had really overflowed its old limits and was making its own prosperity felt all over the old town.

In 1818 the incorporated village was sur-

veyed and sign-posts were erected on the various street corners. Sands street, which was then a fashionable thoroughfare, was paved in 1822, and Fulton street was provided with a sidewalk, both of these being regarded as wonderful improvements. The year 1824, however, witnessed the outbreak of a desire for public improvements, somewhat astonishing in its scope and intensity. Streets were graded and improved in all directions, a new market was built, the fire department was nearly doubled and new buildings began to rise all over the village, generally of a more pretentious style, architecturally speaking, than those which had hitherto contented the citizens. The streets, too, were kept clean by dint of a series of local ordinances, and the night watch was strengthened and made more effective than ever. It is said that no fewer than 164 new buildings were erected within the village during that year. A Board of Health was also then organized. In 1825 a stone walk had been laid from the Ferry to Water street, and the comfort of this caused a general desire for the introduction of such sidewalks on all the principal streets. The people had really begun to take a pride in their city and also had acquired wealth enough to pay for the improvements they desired without inciting any more than the average amount of grumbling which is the inherent right of every taxpayer.

Certainly trade was most prosperous during these years of the village regime. Every season seemed to find a new industry added, and all the while the old ones were strengthened. The shipping industry made particularly rapid strides and an evidence of this is found in the fact that in 1823 the United States customs authorities erected on the water-front near the foot of Cranberry street a three-story warehouse,—an immense structure for those days. On July 1, 1824, there were moored to the village wharves, by the count of a local statistician, eight full-rigged ships, 16 brigs, 20 schooners and 12 sloops,

altogether representing a great amount of trade and commerce. In 1828 Dr. Stiles tells us the village contained "seven churches, eight rope-walks, seven distilleries, two chain-cable manufactories, two tanneries, two extensive white-lead manufactories, one glass factory, one floor-cloth ditto, one card ditto, one pocket-book ditto, one comb ditto, one seal-skin ditto, seven tide and two wind-mills, an extensive establishment for the preparation of drugs, and articles required for dyeing and manufacturing, conducted by Dr. Noyes, late professor of Hamilton College, seventy grocery and dry-goods stores, two printing establishments, lumber and wood-yards, master masons and carpenters. The rope-walks manufactured 1,130 tons of cordage, annually at an expenditure of \$260,000, and employed 200 persons. The distilleries consumed, on an average, 780 bushels of grain per day, at an expense of \$368,200 per annum. The seal-skin factory employed 60 men; pocket-book factory, 40 persons; comb factory, 20; the card factory, 300 persons; and other branches in all 400 to 500 persons. Immense quantities of naval stores, hemp, cotton, India goods, hides, provisions and lumber, were stored at Brooklyn."

The reason for so much naval stores being in Brooklyn lay in the fact that the Government was beginning to make full use of its property at the Wallabout. In 1817 work was commenced on the line ship Ohio, and it was launched May 30, 1820. In 1820 the then Secretary of the Navy (Samuel L. Southard of New Jersey) recommended that a navy yard of the first class should be established on the Wallabout property, and as the recommendation was adopted the work was begun of putting the place in serviceable condition. Capt. Isaac Chauncey was again placed in charge and so continued until 1833. Under him the property was enclosed and an earnest of its future importance was given in the order for the construction of the sloop of war Vincennes, which was launched April 25, 1826,

followed by the building of three other sloops,—the Lexington, the Fairfield and the Peacock, an armed schooner—the Enterprise—and the revenue cutter Morris. All these were constructed during the continuance of Brooklyn's village charter, and incidentally helped considerably also in the upward movement of the municipality. It should be mentioned that another vessel, the Fulton, the first steam warship, was built at the Wallabout by the Government in 1815 from plans prepared by Robert Fulton himself; but she never proved of any value and exploded while lying at anchor, in 1829, causing a loss of forty-eight lives. The Wallabout never returned to the jurisdiction of Brooklyn, and so when the time of reorganization came a certain amount of territory, a town within itself in fact, was lost to the city; but the benefit of the establishment of the navy yard to Brooklyn has been more than can easily be estimated.

The year 1824, besides being memorable for its internal improvements, is deserving of being prominently remembered in local annals for many other reasons, and the most notable of these was, perhaps, the establishment of the first bank,—The Long Island Bank, with Leffert Lefferts, Jehiel Jagger, John C. Freecke, John Vanderveer, Jordan Coles, Silas Butler, Fanning C. Tucker, Jacob Hicks, Henry Waring, Nehemiah Denton, Elkanah Doolittle, Thomas Everitt, Jr., and George Little as its first directors. An insurance company, "The Brooklyn Fire," was also established in 1824. Before the city charter was issued several other banks were organized and the increase of such institutions amply demonstrates the steady rise of the local and general business interests.

But wealth does not obliterate misery and we are reminded that even in those prosperous times the poor in Brooklyn asserted themselves. On March 30, 1824, there were in the almshouse 11 men, 16 women, 5 girls and 8 boys—a total of 40; and during the winter of that year ninety-three loads of wood were

distributed from the institution among the poor throughout the village. The need for enlarged facilities for poorhouse purposes were then so apparent that some nineteen acres of land near Fort Greene were purchased from Leffert Lefferts, for \$3,750, on which to erect a new shelter for those who fell by the wayside, by poverty, disaster or disease, in the struggle for existence. This property was outside the village limits, but it was proposed to erect on it a building sufficient to meet the needs of the whole of the old town. The establishment of a poor farm in 1830 at Flatbush helped to lessen the extent of the village expenditure for the poor, as it removed from its care what might be called county cases, cases which should hardly have been thrown upon the people of the village at all.

While spending money lavishly for the development and improvement of the village, it is amusing to read in how simple and unpretentious a fashion the Trustees, the City Fathers of the day, conducted its business. They held their meetings in a room over a grocery store within a few yards of the entrance to "the Ferry," and while the meetings were on public business the Trustees declined to allow a newspaper reporter to be present or even to permit the minutes of their meetings to be copied for publication. What was done, however, was readily learned, the refusal of the minutes being due more to a sense of official dignity than anything else. They seem to have been a jolly lot of mortals, these early trustees, and conducted their proceedings on a conversational rather than an oratorical basis, and so got through with the consideration of any knotty point more quickly than though formal speeches had been the rule. Probably, not being lost in rhetorical fogs, they appreciated each detail clearly. They also understood each other better, and to help this understanding it was their custom, as soon as the meeting was called to order, to send for a supply of bread or biscuits and cheese and a bottle or two of brandy or gin,

and then proceed to business. At the end of their official term they enjoyed an oyster supper and pledged each other heartily. All this, it should be noticed, was done at their own expense, the modern official junketer had not been evolved.

Under such auspices the village flourished and even acquired a measure of fame. It was not forgetful in the higher things that make for the good of a community and give it character. In 1823 what was known as the Ap-



LAFAYETTE IN 1825.

prentices' Library was organized with the view of supplying reading matter for apprentice mechanics and in fact working people of all classes. Within a year this library had a collection of some 1,200 volumes, all presented by citizens, and 100 regular readers. It proved such a success that in 1825 a new building was erected for it in Cranberry street, and there in 1826 the Board of Village Trustees removed their meetings, although whether the conveniences for crackers and cheese and drinkables were as accessible as at "the Ferry," history is silent. The cornerstone of the library was laid on July 4, 1825, by the Marquis de

Lafayette, then on his memorable tour through the country for which he had fought in the days when it was struggling for existence. Up to Lafayette's visit, Brooklyn had not been much disturbed by the sojourn of great men in its midst. It had seen Washington in war and welcomed him in peace. President Monroe crossed to Brooklyn in June, 1817, and two years or so later Andrew Jackson paid it a flying visit, although on what particular business the Hero of New Orleans crossed the East River we have no means of accurately knowing. Talleyrand lived in Brooklyn for some time, and so did Tom Paine, the agnostic. These were all the great men—the men of National fame—who had walked through Brooklyn since its famous battle until the appearance of Lafayette, and that the illustrious veteran received an ovation goes without saying.

An admirable picture of how Brooklyn looked in 1820 has been preserved for us on the canvas painted in 1820 and representing a part of the city in its winter dress. The picture is now in the Brooklyn Institute. The painter, Francis Guy, was a native of England, who came here in 1796. After many vicissitudes he settled in Brooklyn in 1817 and devoted himself to landscape painting. As might readily be understood, he did not prosper exceedingly, the taste of Brooklyn not having by that time reached such a stage as to care for art for art's sake. Guy was reckless in money matters and had other failings, which prevented his gathering and keeping much of this world's goods, and he died in poverty in August, 1820. His widow sold sixty-two of his landscape paintings at public auction in New York and realized thereby \$1,295.50. The bit of Brooklyn represented in the "snow scene" lay just before the windows of his house, 11 Front street, and the figures introduced were all drawn from life from among the artist's neighbors. The canvas was exhibited in Brooklyn as soon as it was completed, and for the correctness of its

drawing and its characteristic portraits was pronounced a masterpiece by the local connoisseurs, who must be regarded as the best judges of the value of such a work as a reproduction of a scene with which they were

familiar. The picture has been often engraved, but gives so clear an idea of the place represented at the time that it is here reproduced, along with a keyplate, which was printed in Dr. Stiles' "History of Brooklyn."



GUY'S SNOW SCENE, 1820.



KEY PLATE TO GUY'S SNOW SCENE.

- | | | |
|--|--|--|
| 1. Dwelling and store of Thos. W. Birdsall. | 12. Robert Cunningham's. | 24. Jacob Patchen. |
| 2. House of Abiel Titus. | 13. Jacob Hicks' wood-yard, corner Main St. | 26. Mrs. Burnett. |
| 3. Edward Coope's blacksmith-shop. | 14. Joshua Sands' residence. | 27. Benjamin Meeker, talking with |
| 4. Geo. Fricke's carriage-shop. | 15. Augustus Graham's residence, cor. Dock st. | 28. Judge John Garrison. |
| 5. Diana Rapelje's house. | 16. Burdet Stryker's house and butcher-shop. | 29. Thos. W. Birdsall. |
| 6. Mrs. Middagh's house. | 17. Selah Smith's Tavern. | 30. Jacob Hicks. |
| 7. St. Ann's Church, corner of Sands and Washington streets. | 18. Morrison's on the Heights. | 31. Abiel Titus. |
| 8. Residence of Edward Coope. | 19. Dr. Ball's house, opposite Morrison's. | 32. Mrs. Gilbert Titus. |
| 9. Abiel Titus' barn and slaughter-house. | 20. Augustus Graham, conversing with | 33. Abiel Titus' negro-servant "Jeff." |
| 10. Benjamin Meeker's house and shop. | 21. Joshua Sands. | 34. James son of Abiel Titus, on horse-back. |
| 11. Mrs. Chester's "Coffee Room." | 22. Mrs. Harmer and daughters. | 35. Samuel Foster 'negro'. |
| | 23. Mrs. Guy the artist's wife. | |

The church influence in Brooklyn was steadily extending itself during the period now under review and so far as educational facilities went there was no lack of opportunities for the young American to grow up with all the advantages of a liberal training. There were, even before the village was organized, private schools in abundance, and in 1813 a number of ladies organized what they called the Louisian Seminary, where, free of cost, poor children were to be instructed in reading, writing and arithmetic, and in addition the girl pupils were to be taught such practical accomplishments as knitting and sewing. This establishment was really the beginning of the free educational system of Brooklyn. The Louisian school was a success much more emphatic than its projectors had anticipated and the claims upon its facilities soon threatened to swamp, by their very extent, the well thought out scheme of the ladies. In 1816, as a result of this experience, a public meeting was held with the view of bringing about a free public school. This was agreed to and the Louisian school was taken over under the new movement and the ladies were released from their embarrassing position with regard to it. A frame building was erected for the use of this free school on the corner of Concord and Adams streets, and the cost was defrayed by a tax. Pupils whose parents or guardians could pay for their tuition were expected to contribute to the support of the institution, but to others its advantages were free. In 1829 a Collegiate Institute for young ladies was opened on Hicks street; but it did not prove a success. It was a step in the right direction, but the stride was too long for the time. In 1816 a Sunday-school was opened in Brooklyn. It was mainly for negroes and seems to have been secular as well as religious in its aim; but bit by bit the secular features were eliminated and the movement grew so rapidly that when, in 1829, the Kings County Sabbath-school Union was formed, it had jurisdiction over no fewer than twenty-three schools.

Another movement for social betterment was inaugurated in 1829, when a temperance society was established. The old hard and deep drinking habits had by that time lost their hold upon the community, excessive indulgence was no longer fashionable, and drunkenness was not even regarded as excusable. Yet in that year, with a population of some 12,000, Brooklyn had 160 places where intoxicating liquor was sold at retail. Little wonder that a temperance wave set in and an effort made at improvement, of which the Temperance Society was one of the weapons. The movement had markedly a successful result, for by 1835, when the population had increased to 24,310, the number of retail liquor establishments had decreased to fifty.

While so much progress was going on it is disappointing to be obliged to chronicle the fact that Brooklyn lost a chance of one magnificent improvement in 1826, which, had it been carried out, would to-day have placed her in possession of a most valuable piece of property, almost unique for its beauty and usefulness. This was the rejection of the suggestion of H. B. Pierrepont and others that the lands on the heights overlooking the bay should be bought by the city and converted into a public park. The lands were then used for agricultural purposes, when they were used at all, and as it was not thought possible that they could ever be utilized for building purposes they might have been secured at a comparatively trifling cost. But the opportunity was lost. The public took, apparently, no interest in the matter. The value of public parks was not then clearly understood, and even many who favored such a park thought that the land indicated was too difficult of access ever to become of much use to the people.

Another matter to be deplored is the apparent ease with which, in spite of the excellence of the local physicians, the watchfulness of the Board of Health and the evident effort at local cleanliness, imported diseases played sad havoc in the village. In 1822, as in 1803

and 1800, there was an outbreak of yellow fever, when nineteen cases were reported, of which ten proved fatal. The disease, however, was confined to the neighborhood of Furman street, where it was first noticed. In 1832 cholera made its appearance and from June 20 until July 25, when it was reported as stamped out, there were ninety-five cases, thirty-five of which terminated fatally. The cholera, however, at that time was on one of its apparently periodic rounds and New York and other cities suffered terribly. In these circumstances it was thought unlikely that Brooklyn should escape. Indeed, but for the excellence of its medical service the mortality list would have shown sadder figures.

When the prosperity of the village seemed assured and everything bespoke a glowing future, it was inevitable that a great rise should take place in the value of its lands and that the inevitable speculator should take advantage of this to boom sales and create on the solid substratum of actual success and need a fictitious value and speculative demand. In our favorite year of 1824 the real estate within the bounds of the village was assessed at \$2,111,390; and building lots contiguous to the old Ferry, when they came into the market, brought fancy prices. In 1826 Dr. Evans successfully turned one of the heights, Mount Prospect, into a private residence reserve. Within it he erected several cottages and laid out the grounds around them with such taste that the place became one of the most attractive in Brooklyn. Although almost three miles from the ferry, lots around this improvement so quickly advanced in price as to be significant of the impending change. In 1833 a land mania, or something akin to it, set in and values advanced almost daily. The rise was by no means confined to the village: all parts of the old town felt the change. A piece of land used as a pleasure resort (The Parmentier Garden) at the junction of the Jamaica and Flatbush roads was purchased for \$57,000 and at once surveyed, cut up into lots and sold

at auction for some \$70,000. A farm at Gowanus of twenty-six acres brought \$25,000 at auction, and ten acres at Red Hook realized \$47,000. A couple of speculators from New York bought a farm and laid out on it a wide avenue, intending to restrict it to private residences of the best class. The lots were large (80x100 feet) and the venture seemed a dangerous one, but its complete success was assured when, in 1835, Trinity Church (now St. Luke's) was erected upon it. Now, as Clinton avenue, it ranks as one of the most beautiful and fashionable of the residential sections of Brooklyn. Even some of the remote, outlying sections of the old town had begun to feel the prosperity of the village and to share it. A new settlement sprung up on the old Cripplebush road, and along what is now Flushing avenue many houses were being erected, generally in small colonies convenient to ropewalks or other works, while the employes of the navy yard, at times, needed more house accommodation than could readily be found. On the other side of the Ferry improvements even began to assert themselves on the heights, —the territory deemed absolutely useless but a few years before,—while further away lay another settlement, for which in 1833 a new water route to New York was opened almost at the foot of the slope, and to this was given the name of South Ferry. In fact it was seen that the village had burst through its legal boundaries and was pressing out into the old township in every direction, and the conditions which resulted from all this expansion slowly but surely became the reverse of satisfactory in various important respects. It had early been seen in the history of the village that it was laboring under some of these disadvantages; it was apparent even then that its boundaries were too circumscribed and its municipal powers too limited, and in 1825 a public meeting was called to consider the advisability of applying to the legislature at Albany for a city charter. But matters were not then ready for that, and the meeting voted

against such an innovation, much to the chagrin of the promoters, who thereupon duly adjourned the meeting, and with it, as they thought, the project, for twenty-one years.

In the following year the legislature passed several acts amendatory of the government of villages and under the provisions of one of these Brooklyn elected ten trustees instead of five, without, however, any further real or supposed benefit to the community than the exaltation of five more citizens into places of honor; but even this did not silence the movement which was making steadily for a change. In 1833 the movement for increased local powers had increased so far that a bill was introduced in the Legislature for the incorporation of the City of Brooklyn, and though it passed the Assembly it was killed in the upper house. There seems to be no doubt that the influence of New York City was inflexibly directed against any attempt to create a strong municipality on the opposite shore of the East River from Manhattan Island. It is difficult to understand nowadays why such should have been the case, but unfortunately the sentiment of opposition existed. There is no room for doubt on that point. Possibly the idea that a city should have something more to say with regard to ferry rights and perquisites than was possible for a village, had much to do with it. But there were other and more valid reasons. The ease with which Brooklyn could be reached from the then heart of New York's business and manufacturing districts aroused the fear of the real-estate manipulators on Manhattan Island, and it was inevitable even to the sodden brains of the New York Aldermen of the period, that if Brooklyn should become the city of homes—homes of New Yorkers—another big drop in tax receipts would be the inevitable result. New York could only grow in one direction—northward—and the journey thither was slow and uncertain, even in the best of weather, while a pleasant trip by ferry landed the dwellers in Brooklyn, within a short ride of pleasant,

semi-rural streets, where comfortable homes could await them. Then in all such matters as shore and river jurisdiction a city government might speak with greater emphasis than could the trustees of a village or the representatives of half a dozen sleepy and forgotten little communities, mainly agricultural. So bitter was the opposition, so pressing became the need for a change, that, despairing of bringing about the improvement in any other way, at one time a proposition was actually broached that instead of seeking a separate charter Brooklyn should ask for annexation to New York! That notion did not find much favor, however. It was not only humiliating to the local feeling of civic pride that had sprung up, but it was felt that the river itself furnished a barrier that could not be crossed even by an act of Legislature; that nature's boundary line could not be obliterated.

So the agitation for a new charter was kept up with unflagging interest, and, at last, by an act which passed all the usual legislative perils, the struggle was won and Brooklyn became a city on April 10, 1834. The charter was a most comprehensive document and brought together again under one government the scattered sections of the old town of Brooklyn. It divided the city into nine wards. The first included the famous Ferry district, which had created the modern Brooklyn and had been the legal village for some eighteen years; the second embraced what had been Olympia and to it was also given the New (Catharine) Ferry; the third was the old Breukelen; the fourth was another part of the village territory; the fifth lay around the Wallabout; the sixth extended to Red Hook; the seventh contained Cripplebush and Bedford; the eighth reached to Gowanus; while the ninth carried the line of the city out to the territory which belonged to Flatbush. It was a comprehensive scheme, compact and well thought out. So far as could be seen it fully met all passing needs and promised plenty of scope for the future, and in its pos-

session Brooklyn rejoiced except for the grip which New York still managed to retain on her ferry system and its feudal hold upon the river which washed with equal impartiality the shores of Long Island and of Manhattan.

The ferry interests had yearly been assuming greater proportions. When we last referred to their history they formed quite a respectable item in the resources of the old city of New York and they had been steadily growing. For some years the Old Ferry and the New had shared the business, but the yellow fever epidemic of 1809 having its seat near the Brooklyn termini of these two water routes, a change was made and a ferry established between Joralemon street, Brooklyn, to Whitehall street, New York. This inconvenient arrangement was abandoned as soon as public confidence was restored and we hear of no more ferry changes until 1817, when a boat was run between Little street, Brooklyn, and Walnut (now Jackson) street, New York. This was never a popular route and was abandoned about 1850.

Prior to 1814 the means of transit across the river were sail or row boats, the journey was long and the wind and tide and ice and snow played sad havoc very frequently with the time and tempers of the travelers. Then even in the best of times, the trip was too often uncomfortable, for the passengers were mixed up with cattle, sheep, garden and farm produce and all and sundry sorts of baggage. The ferrymen generally tried to wait for a full load before starting and that meant time wasted at the ferry house, which, however profitable it might be to the tavern near by, was not conducive to the equanimity of the wayfarer. Then when the weather was rough or "thick" it was impossible to say when or where the voyage might end. Perhaps the current would force the boat up to Hellgate and run it ashore on Astoria, or it might be forced into a contrary direction and give one a close look at Governor's Island or effect a landing finally at Red Hook instead of Man-

hattan Island. Upsets were of frequent occurrence. Sometimes a horse took it into his head to suddenly change his position and so caused the loaded boat to keel over; sometimes a number of sheep played the game of "follow your leader" into the river and the effort to stop them brought about disaster. Drunken boatmen were often the cause of serious accidents, and if we can credit the newspaper reports and current gossip a boatman who was not rude and unmannerly was unknown. We are, however, inclined to disbelieve in another piece of current gossip, which had it that whenever a Long Island man made the voyage to New York (apart from dwellers at the Ferry) he invariably made his will, adjusted all his earthly affairs, and set out amid the tears and prayers of his household and friends!

In 1813, after having successfully operated two steam-ferry services between the New York and New Jersey shores, Robert Fulton made the corporation of New York the offer of a similar service between that city and Brooklyn, and on January 24, 1814, the negotiations were settled and a lease signed giving control of the ferry between "Old Ferry, Brooklyn," and Beekman's slip, New York (the previous landing place had been at the Fly Market), for twenty-five years to Robert Fulton and William Cutting. They were to pay an annual rental of \$4,000 for the first eighteen years of the term, and \$4,500 for the remainder, and on or before the 24th of May following, they were to place a steamboat on the route to run daily every half hour from sunrise until sunset and in addition were to run the full complement of barges as then was in the service. It was provided that a second steamboat was to be placed on the route by May, 1819. Under the lease the rates of ferriage were to be increased, and when this part of the arrangement became known there was a furious outcry in Brooklyn. A town meeting was held to protest against the increase, and New York City was roundly de-

nounced. A remonstrance to the corporation of the latter produced no effect, an offer on behalf of Brooklyn to lease the ferry on the same terms and run it at the old rates was promptly rejected, and finally an appeal was drawn up and forwarded to the Legislature. Somehow the document mysteriously failed to reach that august body. In the midst of all the din, Messrs. Fulton and Cutting pushed ahead with their plans, organized "The New York and Brooklyn Steamboat Ferry Association," and on May 10, 1814, the first steam ferry-boat on the East River, the Nassau, commenced operations, making some forty trips during the day. The innovation was regarded on all sides as a complete triumph. Fulton did not long enjoy the success of this experiment, for he was laid to rest in the Livingston vault in Trinity churchyard in 1815, and his partner, Cutting, died in 1821.

It was but a short time before the service proved inadequate and a demand for increased carrying capacity arose. Instead of the additional steamboat a horse-boat (the machinery propelled by horse power instead of steam) was provided in 1818, when the fare was fixed at four cents a trip for either steam or horse boat, with certain commuting privileges. A horse boat had also been established at the New (Catharine) Ferry, but there, as soon afterward at the Old Ferry, it was found to prove an expensive arrangement, and the introduction of steam all round became merely a question of time. Even when the long-looked-for second steamboat was added it did not meet all the requirements, and the establish-

ment, in 1836, of a new service at the South Ferry did little to relieve the business at the foot of Fulton street. Improvements were slow, feeble and paltry, and although it had long been urged, it was not until September 28, 1827, that an all-night service was introduced. The great trouble was that the stockholders were not united under any directing head or animated with any real view of accommodating the public interests, especially the interests of Brooklyn, which were those most concerned in the development of the ferry service. To remedy this, if possible, most of the stock was purchased in 1835 by a committee of Brooklyn capitalists, who intended to run the Fulton and South ferries until the expiration of the current leases on both in 1839, so as to promote the interests of their own city. The committee did their best and accomplished much in the way of improvement, but lost money by their public spirit. When the time came for the leases to be renewed it was felt that the only way out of the difficulty, and the only way which the interests of Brooklyn would be conserved, was by the formation of a new company of citizens, who should run both ferries on a business basis and at the same time with an eye to the wants and requirements of their own city. The company was formed and a lease signed on May 3, 1839, giving the New York & Brooklyn Ferry Company a lease of the water routes for five years, at an annual rental of \$12,000, and under other financial restrictions and stipulations, which were soon found to be very oppressive.



CHAPTER XXXV.

THE FIRST CITY.

MAYORS HALL, TROTTER, JOHNSON, SMITH, MURPHY, AND OTHERS—DISASTROUS FIRES—BUSINESS EXTENSION—THE GRAND CITY HALL—
LITERATURE AND THE PRESS.



THE act constituting the City of Brooklyn went into effect April 10, 1834, and the elevation of the old town occasioned at first much rejoicing all over its territory, and some of it found expression on April 25 in a grand procession, which wended its way through a number of the principal streets, and the inevitable oration, which was delivered in the First Presbyterian Church, in Orange street (on the present site of Plymouth Church), by William Rockwell. There was every reason for pride in the new municipality. It covered an extent of territory nearly twelve miles square, with thirty-five miles of streets, had a population of 27,854, twenty churches, three business and one savings banks, two markets, efficient fire and police departments and all the accessories of a well governed and progressive city, a clearly defined future, a host of public-spirited citizens and an ambition to press onward. Its people loved the city, honored its past and revered its memories. It was of course but as a village yet compared with New York, but then it possessed, what its big neighbor did not possess until many years afterward, a sense of civic pride. Still there were a few pessimistic people, mainly those living in the outlying parts of the old town, and who had escaped the modernizing influences at work all around them. The village of Brook-

lyn, among the other modern improvements, brought as one of its contributions to the new city what seemed to many of the simple country farmers like an unsurmountable load of debt, \$22,000, and a lawsuit involving about as much more. The rest of the component parts of the new city had not only steered clear of such an appendage, but had brought to the new partnership some valuable real estate. The city, of course, had to assume the village indebtedness and it was felt by those pessimistically inclined that this was a theme for mourning. The simple-minded Dutch farmers had not become civilized enough to "regard a public debt as a blessing," nor did they appreciate any system of financiering that was not based on hard cash. But they soon had their eyes opened; their education was not long delayed.

The first election for aldermen was held on May 5, and so far as we can see it was conducted strictly on local issues and with an eye to facilitating the business of the new community rather, as is so common nowadays, than with any ulterior views as to the relation of the candidate to state or national politics. The result was the return of the following:

1st ward—Gabriel Furman, Conklin Brush.
2d ward—George D. Cunningham, John M. Hicks.
3d ward—James Walters, Joseph Moser.

4th ward—Jonathan Trotter, Adrian Hegeman.

5th ward—William M. Udall, Benjamin R. Prince.

6th ward—Samuel Smith, William Powers.

7th ward—Clarence D. Sackett, Stephen Haynes.

8th ward—Theodorus Polhemus, John S. Bergen.

9th ward—Robert Wilson, Moses Smith.

It is questionable if Brooklyn in all her history from then until now, ever rejoiced in a really abler or more thoroughly representative body of City Fathers. They were all men of standing in their respective communities, most of them were men of substantial means and wide business interests and all had considerable influence in local affairs. They were animated by a single desire to promote the welfare of the new municipality, and they set about doing it at once and to the best of their ability. We cannot agree with all that this first Board of Aldermen did, but that its members were devoted with rare honesty of purpose and strict fidelity to the prosperity of the young city and of their constituents, is beyond question.

The first and most emphatic evidence of this occurred on their opening meeting, where they elected George Hall as first Mayor of Brooklyn. No man in Kings county had a more intimate acquaintance with local affairs or more practical experience in their administration. He had served as a trustee of the old village and was its last President, holding that office when the law which brought the city into being went into effect. Born in New York, September 21, 1795, of Irish parents, he grew up an American among Americans, and in time became one of the local leaders of the old Know-Nothing party, a party whose merits have been forgotten in the modern unscrupulous rush for "votes." Whatever opinions he held he never concealed, and he followed the line of policy he deemed the best with the utmost zeal, regardless of personal consequences. A thoroughly brave man, as his

work during the cholera epidemic showed, he had the courage of his convictions in all his public doings. He was a staunch advocate of teetotalism and was especially proud of having been the first man in Brooklyn to sign a temperance pledge. So determined was his aversion to intoxicating liquor that he refused to swallow a little on his dying bed, even when it was prescribed by his physician. That was a characteristic trait of the man. No one could be more determined than he upon any point after he believed it to be right. Nor was any man more generous. In business life he acquired more than a fair measure of success, yet his charities kept him poor. He was always giving, and giving in such a way that no one, not even himself, knew the extent of his bounty. In all local institutions for helping the poor, the distressed, or encouraging youth, or promoting the welfare of the people, he was for years a foremost figure. His administration of the first mayoral term of Brooklyn was a successful one in every way, and he was a candidate for the office in 1844 and again in 1845, but went down each time with his ticket. In 1854, when Brooklyn, Williamsburgh and Bushwick were consolidated, he was the successful candidate for the votes of the united territory, and so became the first Mayor again in another chapter of Brooklyn's history. In 1861 he was the Republican candidate for the office of Registrar, but was defeated, and after that took no active part in politics and spent his days quietly at the home which many years before had been presented to him by his fellow citizens, at 37 Livingston Place. There he died April 16, 1868, regretted by the entire community, and the funeral oration was delivered by Henry Ward Beecher, who well knew and thoroughly appreciated the many sterling qualities of him who had served Brooklyn so faithfully and so long. Mr. Beecher on this occasion made one of his most eloquent public utterances, one of those addresses which won for him praise as a citizen, apart from his eminence in the pulpit.

The other Mayors elected during this section of our history were:

Jonathan Trotter.....	1835-1836
Jeremiah Johnson.....	1837-1838
Cyrus P. Smith.....	1839-1841
Henry C. Murphy.....	1842
Joseph Sprague.....	1843-1844
Thomas G. Talmadge.....	1845
Francis B. Stryker.....	1846-1848
Edward Copeland.....	1849
Samuel Smith.....	1850
Conklin Brush.....	1851-1852
Edward A. Lambert.....	1853-1854

The Mayors were chosen by the Aldermen until 1840, when a new act of the Legislature gave the people the privilege of electing their local chief executive, and so Mayor Cyrus P. Smith entered upon his second term under really popular auspices. Most of these men were of more than ordinary ability and fully deserved the pre-eminence they received at the hands of their fellow citizens. Only three of them—Johnson, Murphy and Stryker—were natives of Brooklyn. Samuel Smith was a native Long Islander. Trotter was born in England, and the others hailed from various parts of the Union. Trotter was a leather dresser and acquired considerable means, but was "caught" in the financial panic of 1837 and compelled to retire from politics to build up anew his business connections, and so continued until his death, in 1865. Of the long and varied career of Mayor Johnson full details have already been given. Mayor C. P. Smith was essentially a self-made man, and was graduated from Dartmouth College in 1824, after paying his way through its classes with his own earnings. He then studied law and settled in Brooklyn, in 1837, where he quickly built up a splendid practice. From 1835 until he was chosen as Mayor he was the city's Corporation Counsel. The chief feature of his whole career was, however, his devotion to the cause of popular education, and he was connected with the Board of Education for

thirty years, during twenty-one of which he presided over its deliberations.

Joseph Sprague, who was elected Mayor in 1843, was a native of Leicester, Massachusetts, and he led a rather adventuresome and disappointing business life until, in 1811, he married a member of the Debevoise family and settled at Bedford, Brooklyn. He made considerable money during the war of 1812. From that time he became prominently identified with Brooklyn and was President of the village from 1827 to 1832. He was one of those who secured a charter for the Long Island Bank and was one of the founders of the Long Island Insurance Company. In 1834 he was chosen President of the Long Island Insurance Company and carried that institution safely through the panic of 1837. As Mayor he worked incessantly and honestly for the welfare of Brooklyn, and although at first he encountered strong opposition from those hostile to him in politics his sterling honesty and high administrative qualities slowly but surely overcame all factious opposition, while his action in causing the arrest of several members of the Board of Aldermen for misdemeanor, based on their neglect of public business, demonstrated to all concerned that though a man of placid, Christian character, he was not to be trifled with. He was, almost from the beginning of his connection with Brooklyn, a worker on behalf of its religious interests, and was one of those who, in 1822, founded the First Presbyterian Church. He was also prominent in Masonic circles and in 1826 was elected Master of Hohenlinden Lodge, No. 56. He was re-elected Mayor in 1844 and may be said to have continued in public life until his death, December 12, 1854.

T. G. Talmadge, who was elected Mayor in 1845, was a native of New Jersey who settled in Brooklyn in 1840 and at once, seemingly, became prominent in its public life. Although successful as a business man, he was a politician clear through, a Democrat "dyed-in-the-wool," as they used to say, and he car-

ried his political ideas—his party dogmas and cries—into everything he said or did. He took a most active interest in the development of the Gowanus district, in which he held considerable property and developed an enlightened public policy as President of the Broadway Railroad Company. He acquired much influence in the national councils of his party, being at one time chairman of its General Committee, but he was not called upon to hold any elective position outside of Brooklyn, and he died there May 4, 1863. At the election for Mayor, in 1846, Talmadge was again a candidate, but was defeated by his Whig opponent, Francis Burdett Stryker.

Stryker was a worthy, but at the same time a curious, product of American political life. When he received the mayoralty nomination he was working as a journeyman carpenter, but had previously held the elective office of Sheriff, showing that he had built up a strong following among the people. He was re-elected Mayor in 1847, and again in 1848, each time in face of strong opposition; and although his administration of the office could not be called brilliant it was eminently safe, while his practical knowledge of the wants of the people and his devotion to them in many trying times won him hosts of supporters, independent of party. Yet he was a strict party man at all times, and every office he held came to him as a reward for his political zeal and as a result of his political influence.

His successor in the Mayoralty, in 1849, was also a zealous Whig, Edward Copeland. He was a graduate of Columbia College, a scholar, a good business man, and a safe administrative official. For many years he was a member of the Board of Education and it was probably in connection with that body his best work was done. He was succeeded as Mayor by a Democrat, Samuel Smith, who, however, only served from April, 1850, to the close of that year, an amendment to the city charter making subsequent official terms begin with the calendar year. His opponent for the

civic prize was J. S. T. Stranahan, whom he defeated only by some 300 votes. Stranahan was at that time comparatively a stranger in Brooklyn. Smith belonged to an old Long Island family, and had carried a musket during the War of 1812 as a member of the Washington Fusiliers. Originally a cooper by trade, Smith had managed to acquire some real estate near what is now Fulton street, afterward added to it by extensive purchases around the present Schermerhorn and Smith streets, and went into farming to hold his property together, and earn his living and pay his taxes while waiting for the rise in value, which he saw was inevitable. When it came he found himself wealthy, and all through his life he continued to be a shrewd but honest dealer in Brooklyn real estate. He was elected Mayor with the view of introducing economy in local affairs, and this he certainly succeeded in accomplishing, as far as his limited term of service gave him opportunity.

The whirligig of politics at the following election gave him a Whig successor, in Conklin Brush, who held the Mayor's office for two years, and also gave the city a good business administration. To his exertions and business instinct Brooklyn was largely indebted for the successful establishment of the Atlantic Docks, of which he was elected a Director at the formation of the company, in 1840; and as President of the Mechanics' Bank, of Brooklyn, he judiciously used the resources of that institution in furthering the commercial interests of the city at large.

At the election of 1853 politics see-sawed again and a Democrat was chosen to the executive office. Edward A. Lambert, the last of the Mayors of the first City of Brooklyn, as it is commonly called, was a native of New York City, but removed across the East River at an early age. As Mayor he strove to reduce the expenses of the municipality and certainly succeeded in introducing several reforms in the way of economy, while at the same time, with the financial blindness of the period, he

gladly granted charters to such organizations as street railroad companies practically for nominal considerations. Of course at that era in municipal history the value of such franchises were decidedly unknown quantities, and as by their bestowal the general public was supposed to be primarily benefited, such franchises were generally freely given away, not alone in Brooklyn, but in all other cities. Yet a little of the shrewdness shown by private citizens in buying and holding real estate might have been applied to estimating the future value of these gifts and made them of considerable practical value to the treasury of the municipality. Certainly in the case of the street car lines, and their multiplicity in the main arteries of Brooklyn, nothing contributed more to the upbuilding of the city outside of the ferry system, and in that way the community was benefited; but had such public franchises been awarded from the first on a business basis, it would have saved many hard feelings and harsh words in the future. Mayor Lambert's term was distinguished by the inauguration of several public improvements, to which reference will be made in the course of this chapter; and it was also marked by plague and riot, the latter the result of the bitterness of political feeling mainly between the citizens of Irish birth and the local Know-Nothings, both of which parties, or factions, or classes at the time proved irreconcilable as the famed Kilkenny cats. When the rioting broke out Mayor Lambert was enjoying a trip across the ocean for the benefit of his health; but on his return he quietly put down the open turbulence and his firm hand guided local affairs into their usually calm current. He continued active in public life after his retirement from the City Hall, and during the Civil War was prominent in local measures undertaken on behalf of that great conflict and especially in the memorable Sanitary Fair of 1864.

In recalling those citizens who presided over the destinies of Brooklyn in what was beyond a doubt the most critical period in her

history—the period of her development—the name of the fourth Mayor, Henry Cruse Murphy, has been reserved to the last for more special mention, as he was not only the most richly endowed, intellectually, of all his predecessors and successors in that office, but because he became a figure of national importance, and much of the higher intellectual development that distinguishes Brooklyn at the present day is due to his initiative and example. A gifted man in every respect, a public-spirited citizen, an able and accomplished lawyer, a man of sterling honesty and purity of purpose, inflexible in his pursuit of the right, yet warm-hearted, generous and sometimes impulsive, he was the very type of man most Americans desire to see lifted up into high public station, but who seldom are ambitious for such honors, or care to be associated with active politics.

His grandfather, Timothy Murphy, emigrated from Ireland in 1766 and settled in Monmouth county, New Jersey. Timothy prospered in his new abode and saw active service on the Patriotic side during the Revolution. He grew rich as his years advanced, married into a good family, and left four sons and four daughters. The second of these sons, John G. Murphy, settled in Brooklyn in 1808, engaged in business as a millwright, held several public offices, was the patentee and co-inventor of the "horse" ferryboat system, and acquired a comfortable competence. He died in 1853, leaving four daughters and two sons. The eldest of the latter, Henry C. Murphy, was born in Brooklyn, July 5, 1810, was educated for the legal profession and after he was graduated at Columbia College entered the office of Peter W. Radcliffe, in New York. In 1833 he was called to the bar and at once entered upon practice in Brooklyn. Success came to him quickly. He was even then well known in literary circles, and the local Democratic leaders had found him a brilliant speaker, a quick debater and a zealous partisan, whose loyalty was beyond question; one who possessed, in fact, all the qualities that promised

future leadership. In 1834, within a year after he had "hung out his shingle," he was appointed Assistant Corporation Council, and at the Democratic State Convention that year, to which he was a delegate, he received the honor of the Chairmanship of the Committee on Resolutions. In 1835 Mr. Murphy formed a professional partnership with John A. Lott, and not long afterward Judge Vanderbilt was added to the alliance, which as Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt was for many years afterward not only the leading legal firm in Brooklyn but the heart of its political life, the local headquarters of the Democratic party, the abiding place of "the machine," as we would call it nowadays. Mr. Murphy devoted himself mainly to the legal business of the firm, retaining his activity in politics, however, and seeking relaxation in literary work. In those days he was recognized as one of the busiest men in Brooklyn, and the calls upon his time were many and incessant, for his personal popularity was unbounded.

In 1842 he was selected by his party as its candidate for the Mayoralty of Brooklyn and was elected. His platform was the old and well-worn one of "retrenchment and reform," and he started to make good his promises of an economical administration by reducing his own salary and by instituting many judicious changes which led to other economies. His administration was of rare value to the city, and was conducted on lines which advanced its present and future interests, for he had an abiding faith in the future of Brooklyn. As Mayor he added greatly to his personal popularity and this caused him to receive, in 1843, the Democratic nomination for congress from the Second District. He was elected and served one term, but was defeated when he presented himself for re-election, owing to dissensions in his party's ranks. In 1846, however, he was again returned, and on the expiration of that term he declined to be a candidate for re-election. His legal business then demanded his entire attention and he devoted himself to it,

leaving politics for the time to take care of himself. In 1852, however, he came to the front again, in the public eye, for at the Democratic National Convention, held in Baltimore that year, he found himself a prominent candidate for the Presidential nomination. That honor fell, however, to Franklin Pierce and in the contest which ended in the latter's election Mr. Murphy took a prominent part and then returned to his law practice. In 1857 President Buchanan appointed him Minister to The



HENRY C. MURPHY.

Hague. One of his biographers, Mr. L. B. Proctor, writes:

As he had long been identified in the work of rescuing from oblivion the early history of our State, particularly that part which relates to our first colonization by Holland, there was something in the opportunity which this appointment offered eminently congenial to his historic and literary taste, and this was the paramount reason for his accepting the position. Before leaving for this new sphere of action, a farewell banquet was given him at the Mansion House, Brooklyn. It took place August 5, 1857. A large number of his fellow citizens of

all parties were present to testify to their high respect for him. The occasion will long be remembered as one of the happiest social events that ever took place in Brooklyn. In response to a sentiment he made a brief, touching, farewell address, in the course of which he used the following prophetic language, which recent events have proved singularly true: "It requires," he said, "no spirit of prophecy to foretell the union of the two cities, of New York and Brooklyn, at no distant day; the river which divides them will soon cease to be a line of separation, and, bestrode by the Colossus of Commerce, will form a link which will bind them together."

During his absence of three years at The Hague, he found time to communicate a series of thirty-five most interesting letters upon Holland and other parts of Europe, to The Brooklyn Eagle, many of which were extensively copied in other papers. As happens in most cases of eminent jurists and statesmen occupying places of commanding influence, Mr. Murphy became a subject of invidious comment, by which dull or prejudiced men seek to disparage those gifts, and that influence, which is beyond their own reach; and there were those who sought to injure Mr. Murphy, in attaching blame to certain acts of his while at The Hague, and even launching the arrows of detraction at him while at home. But these were of short life, and his fair fame emerged from them, and he continued to exercise great influence, much of which was exerted in behalf of his native city.

Recalled from The Hague by President Lincoln in accordance with political usage, Mr. Murphy strained every effort to aid in the preservation of the Union he loved and the Constitution he revered. He was zealous in promoting enlistments, used his purse freely in sending men to the front and was mainly instrumental in equipping two regiments. During the conflict between the States he was a member of the State Senate and every war measure in the Legislature found him an unwavering and liberal supporter. In 1866, and again in 1868, he was prominently mentioned as a candidate for Governor, and in 1875 he entered the lists for a seat in the United States Senate, but after a long and somewhat acri-

monious contest he was defeated by Francis Kernan.

While, in a certain sense, Mr. Murphy failed of success in his aspirations for a place in National politics, there is no question of the eminent success of his position as one of the upbuilders of Brooklyn. As Mayor he carefully watched over the entire interests of the city, safeguarded its treasury, and fostered improvements. Such schemes as the improvements of the water-front, the Atlantic Docks, and the opening of great thoroughfares, like Myrtle avenue, were zealously promoted, and in later life he procured the appropriation which built the dry docks at the Navy Yard. He interested himself particularly in the development of Coney Island as a popular summer resort, believing that Brooklyn itself would be benefited thereby, and he rendered practical assistance to this end as President of the Brooklyn, Flatbush & Coney Island Railroad. In the advancement of the ferry system he was also an ardent worker, and the union of the cities of New York and Brooklyn by means of a bridge capable of carrying all sorts of traffic was one of the dreams of his early manhood which he lived to see fully realized. When the plans for such a scheme were first submitted he threw himself into the project with all the enthusiasm of his nature, and whether as President of the company which first launched the plans for spanning the East River, or afterward as one of the Trustees representing the City of Brooklyn in the work, he never wearied in rendering watchful assistance or practical direction and advice while the work progressed in the face of countless and unforeseen obstacles.

To a certain extent it may be said that Modern Brooklyn is Senator Murphy's greatest and most enduring monument. But time brings about a strange forgetfulness of municipal achievement and there is no gainsaying the fact that his name will longer be recalled for his literary work than for anything else. A man of scholarly attainments, he was all through his

life a diligent student, and history, especially local history, had a deep, unwearied fascination for him. He gathered together in early life a valuable library of books relating to early American exploration and story of which in later years he was justly proud, and he was hardly settled in practice before he began an investigation of the early history of Brooklyn, which finally placed him at the head of all local historians. He delighted also to study the records of the early Dutch settlements, and for this study he found ample scope during his official residence at The Hague. His work as a student of history, however, found its richest fruits in the aid he rendered in the organization of the Long Island Historical Society, and in the circular which first called that institution into life his name appeared as the leader. To its library and collection he proved a liberal contributor, and in all its work—publications, lectures, discussions, as well as building and collecting—he was from its institution in 1864 until his death an unwearied worker. All through his career he was a diligent contributor to the local newspaper press and for a brief period was editor of *The Brooklyn Advocate*, the precursor of the *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*. Of the latter paper he was at one time proprietor, and many of his most charming essays and interesting historical letters and monographs appeared in its columns from the day it was first issued almost until he laid aside his pen forever.

A full list of the works printed by Mr. Murphy follows:

"A Catalogue of an American Library, Chronologically Arranged" (589 titles). (Privately printed).

"The First Minister of the Dutch Reformed Church in the United States." (Privately printed.) The Hague, 1857.

"Henry Hudson in Holland, an Enquiry into the Origin and Objects of the Voyage which led to the Discovery of the Hudson River." The Hague, 1859.

"Anthology of the New Netherlands, or Translations from the Early Dutch Poets of

New York." (Bradford Club.) New York, 1865.

"Poetry of Nieuw Neder-Landt; Comprising Translations of Early Dutch Poems Relating to New York, etc." 1866.

"The Voyage of Verrazano." (Privately printed.) Albany, 1875.

"Journal of a Voyage to New York and a Tour in Several of the American Colonies in 1679-80, by Jaspas Dankers and Peter Sluyter." L. I. Historical Society, 1867.

Many of Mr. Murphy's most valuable papers, such as translations from the Dutch of early voyages to America, etc., are entombed and forgotten in the printed "Transactions" of the New York Historical Society, of which he was long a most active member. He died in 1882, leaving behind him a memory for a life of good deeds and noble aspirations which ought ever to keep his name at the very head of the long roll of distinguished citizens of which Brooklyn is so justly proud.

Having thus, as in duty bound, paid our respects to the Mayors, we may now consider the progress of the city under their respective reigns. As has been said, they all filled, and most of them filled well, their appointed places in the community; and, this much premised, we may proceed to speak of the community without much reference to the nominal leaders. The time has gone by when the history of a nation is considered as told in a series of biographies of its rulers; and Mayors, like even greater potentates, must be relegated to the background when we speak of The People.

With the inauguration of the new city, as was to be expected, an active era of public improvement set in. A movement to purchase some waste land at the Wallabout for a public park was instituted by the corporation and a survey of the entire territory under the charter was ordered and begun; but it was not until 1839 that the Commissioners completed their labors and were able to submit a report. Then a scheme for a permanent water line, from Jay street round to Red Hook, was prepared by General J. G. Swift, and adopted, although

its suggestions were not fully put into effect for quite a number of years, and in fact were not carried out at any time in full details as the desire to encroach upon the river as much as possible by filling in the shore line necessitated constant change in the adopted plans.

But the glory of the new city, the outward and patent sign of the new order of things, was to be the projected City Hall, which before a stone was laid was regarded as certain to prove an architectural wonder, the Taj Mahal of America. Building on the foundation work was begun in the fall of 1835 and on April 28, 1836, Mayor Trotter laid the corner-stone, with the usual ceremonies and amid much speech-making and rejoicing. An idea of the intended magnificence of the edifice may be gathered from the following contemporary description, which is quoted from Prime's "History of Long Island:"

"Brooklyn City Hall, now erecting, is situated at the intersection of Fulton, Court, and Joralemon streets, occupying an entire block, forming a scalene triangle of 269 feet on Fulton street, 250 on Court street and 222 on Joralemon street. The exterior of the building is to be constructed of marble, and to have porticoes on the three fronts, with columns thirty-six feet 6 inches high, ornamented with capitals of the Grecian order from the design of the Tower of the Winds, resting on a pedestal base seventeen feet high, which when completed will be sixty-two feet from the ground to the top of the cornice. The angles are to be surrounded by domes, and rising from the centre of the building will be a tower of one hundred and twenty-five feet in height, which will be enriched with a cornice and entablature supported with caryatides standing on pedestals. The whole will have a most splendid and imposing appearance when finished. The interior will be finished in the most chaste and durable style of architecture, calculated to accommodate the different public offices, courts, etc."

For a time all seemed well; but the work

had not progressed very far when the Brooklyn folks began to understand that they had not fully reckoned with the question of cost, and after beginning operations, as usual, "with a rush," the bills began to pour in upon the city with equal celerity. Contractors had to be paid almost as soon as the foundation work had been completed, and then almost every fresh course of stone called for a payment to the builder. The public treasury was by no means very plethoric, so before the walls were on a level with the street payments began to be intermittent, the work began to flag, the initiatory rush was over, interest in the possession of an architectural wonder weakened, and finally the financial panic of 1837 forced a cessation of all work. Little was said regarding a City Hall for several years, but during these years of reflection the Brooklyn authorities had a chance to abandon the hankering after architectural glory. While the building lay thus unfinished and neglected, Historian Prime endeavored to make the melancholy situation useful by pointing a moral. He said: "This stupendous undertaking, although arrested in its commencement by uncontrollable circumstances, not only constitutes an important item in the early history of the city, but is fraught with instruction to individuals and communities. And as corporations as well as individuals often learn wisdom by dear-bought experience, should these massive walls never rise higher the expenditures may not be wholly in vain. They will stand as a friendly beacon to warn the future guardians of the city of the mistakes and errors of by-gone days."

But useful as the moral might have been, such a memorial of municipal miscalculation could hardly be permitted to endure indefinitely, no matter how many important lessons it might present. In 1845 the plans were revised and modified, all the Grecian porticos but one were cut out, the caryatides were left severely alone, the extent of the structure was abbreviated and simplicity everywhere took the place

of ornament. After these changes work was resumed and by 1849 the City Hall was completed as we have it to-day. Although shorn of its intended gorgeousness it is a beautiful structure, and its elegant proportions always delight the eye. Although, architecturally, it cannot compare with the beautiful edifice which is the headquarters of New York's Civic Government, there is much about it to admire,—perhaps more than if the original designs had been carried out in their entirety, for it seems to us these designs attempted to accomplish too much, and their completed results would have given us an architectural atrocity which would have been laughed at instead of eliciting the anticipated praise.

The financial panic which finally sealed the fate of the original designs for the City Hall was felt all over the country. Into its general causes we have no need here to enter: its origin and its story of disaster belong to the general history of the United States. So far as Brooklyn was concerned its results were mainly felt in a more rigorous safeguarding of financial resources than in any great excess of local business failures. Certainly the consequent dullness of trade was felt, and felt keenly, in Brooklyn; the prices of the necessities of life rose sharply and as usual in such crises the poor suffered severely, but the local stringency and depression were but the reflex of what the country was experiencing. On May 10 the banks in New York City suspended specie payments, and on the following day, as the result of the advice of a hurriedly called public meeting of citizens, the Brooklyn banks adopted a similar course. It took exactly a year for matters to right themselves, and during the continuance of the commercial disturbances the people were taught two very valuable lessons: First, that the administration in Washington was at the head of the financial interests of the nation, and that paper stamped or printed and circulated as money was not money.

But the disaster of 1837, having no local

foundation, soon lost its effect in Brooklyn and the march of improvement and development was again taken up. The most notable feature in this was the inauguration of the Atlantic Docks enterprise already referred to. In 1840 Daniel Richards organized a company with a capital of \$1,000,000 and bought some forty acres of what was practically waste land along Buttermilk Channel from Red Hook northward—a tract of marsh, inlet, low, idle, washed flats and mud banks—with the view of turning the property into a gigantic basin with a series of warehouses, so that the largest merchant vessels might there discharge or receive their cargoes. The project was pushed forward vigorously and many of the brightest business men of Brooklyn became connected with it. Work began on June 1, 1841; cribs of piles were built, ponds were deepened and a stone bulkhead outlined the water's front. The soil removed to make the main basin was used to fill in shallows and inlets behind the bulkhead and on the solid ground thus formed the first of the warehouses was commenced in May, 1844. Four years later the splendid line of warehouses half a mile long presented a magnificent unbroken front to the bay except in the centre, where a passage some 200 feet wide permitted vessels to enter the basin. All this work drew renewed attention to the section in which it was situated and so the prosperity of South Brooklyn, as it came to be called, had its real beginning. In 1848 Mr. Richards petitioned the Common Council for permission to open thirty-five new streets in the vicinity. Other improvements followed and the commercial success of the enterprise made most of these improvements permanent. The Atlantic Docks have proved a great factor in Brooklyn's business life. The main basin has an area of forty acres and a depth of twenty-five feet, and can be entered at any state of the tide. The total wharfage is about two miles, and the pier head facing Buttermilk Channel is 3,000 feet long. The warehouses are substantial two to five-story struc-

tures of brick and granite, and now cover an area of twenty acres, while beside them are nine steam grain elevators, one of which can raise 3,000 bushels an hour. Such facilities have caused the Atlantic Docks to become famous in shipping circles the world over and have made Brooklyn one of the leading grain depots of the world.

Another improvement, one of even more direct public utility, was the development of the system of public transit throughout the city. In 1840 a line of omnibuses was run between Fulton Ferry and East Brooklyn, and in 1845 a similar service was established between Fulton and South Ferries. In 1854 the Brooklyn City Railroad Company was incorporated and by July of the following year several of its routes were opened, notably those of Fulton street, and Myrtle avenue and Flushing avenue, with the Ferry as their starting points. It was not long thereafter before omnibuses became a thing of the past; even Montgomery Queen's stage line between the Ferry and Wallabout, splendid service though it rendered in its day, had to give way to the street car.

Several efforts to provide an adequate water supply for the city were made during the time covered by this section, but without avail. In 1853 several streams and ponds necessary to a supply of water were purchased by the authorities, at a cost of \$44,000; but when the question of taking steps to bring about an ample and complete supply was submitted to the taxpayers as the law demanded, the matter was invariably voted down. There is no doubt that in this as in some other things Brooklyn was decidedly slow, and slow in defiance of her own best interests. For instance, it was not until 1848 that gas was introduced into the city, over twenty years after it had been successfully introduced across the river, where its success as an illuminator could readily have been seen. Still gas was a luxury, and its introduction into the dwellings of the people was apt to be attended with so much

"muss" and discomfort that it is not to be wondered at that the citizens, unaccustomed to its comfort and convenience, were apathetic concerning it. But we cannot conceive why they were so strangely indifferent to the absolute necessity of a full and unfailing water supply, even were it for no more than the protection of their own lives and property from fire. That scourge had several times asserted itself a sufficient number of times to have served as a significant assurance that additional protection was absolutely needed.

The most memorable of these illustrations was that given on the night of September 7, 1848, when flames were seen to burst out of a frame building on Fulton street, near Sands street. The wind was high and with incredible swiftness the flames spread until the whole block back to Henry street was a seething, hissing mass. Then the flames leaped across Middagh and Fulton streets. Sands street to Washington street was quickly doomed, and so was the territory between High street and Concord street on one side, and Middagh and Orange across Fulton street, as well as both sides of Fulton street from Poplar street to Pineapple. In fact between Henry and Washington streets and Sands and Pineapple and Concord streets but little was left standing. Brooklyn's fire force could do nothing to stop the progress of the flames and twenty-five engines which went to the scene from New York were powerless to render much aid, if any, on account of the scarcity of water, and it was only by the seamen and marines from the Navy Yard blowing up the houses in the line of the fire that its progress was finally checked. The loss was estimated at \$1,500,000, and among the buildings destroyed were three churches,—Sands street Methodist, the Baptist, and First Universalist,—as well as the Post Office and the offices of "The Star" and "The Freeman" newspapers. The details of this disaster should have proved a salutary lesson as to the immediate need of an abundant water supply, but it failed in this regard, al-

though the widening of Fulton street along the line of destruction was one beneficial result that came from the calamity. Two years later another serious warning came, when several warehouses in Furman street went up in smoke and involved a loss of some \$400,000. Then it began to be apparent, even to the most close-fisted taxpayer, that a water supply was a prime necessity, as it had long been evident to the thinking part of the population, and serious efforts were made to hit upon a scheme that could meet with popular favor. But when the question of cost presented itself, the desire again died out, and plan after plan was suggested without the slightest success. Even the spectacular effect of the destruction of Colonnade Row, on the Heights, on Dec. 20, 1853, did not arouse the people anew to a sense of their danger, for when on June 1, the following year, a plan was submitted for a full water system with a reservoir at Cypress Hills, it was rejected by 6,402 votes out of a total of 9,015 cast. Still it was only too evident that some complete system was bound to come, and those who most keenly realized the danger did not lose sight of the project until, as we will see in a subsequent chapter, it was successfully accomplished. One result of the conflagrations named, and many less conspicuous or disastrous ones, however, was the organization of the various hose companies into a Fire Department, in 1855, under a central board. Up to that time and indeed for some years afterward a fire company was more of a political machine than anything else.

There was another direction in which the pressing need of a plentiful water supply was indicated, although at that time the need was not so well understood as it is in our more enlightened days. That was its great helpfulness in fighting zymotic diseases. Of visitation from such diseases Brooklyn had its full share in the past, and even under the enlarged powers of city government the visits continued. In May, 1849, it was announced that cholera had broken out, a case being reported

from a house in Court street; but as the disease had been raging in New York for some time its appearance in Brooklyn did not occasion much surprise. It continued its ravages until near the close of September, causing 642 deaths. Most of these fatal cases were from overcrowded neighborhoods, where filth, poverty and drunkenness abounded, or from houses on low ground where stagnant water filled the cellars or lay in deep pools in front on the highways, or in the rear yards. Many fatal cases came from dwellings on the river front; and could the story of the visitation have been rightly interpreted it would have been perceived that a plentiful supply of water and a proper regard for sanitary conditions would have lessened the death rate by a half or even more. Another visit of the same dread scourge in the summer of 1854 swelled the ordinary death figure for the year by 656.

Such outbreaks undoubtedly represented either a lack of knowledge on the subject, or popular disregard, or both, as to the means by which they might be prevented or their consequence mitigated; and such remarks might also be made of another episode in the history of the time now under consideration, which was not creditable to the city government or to the mass of its citizens.

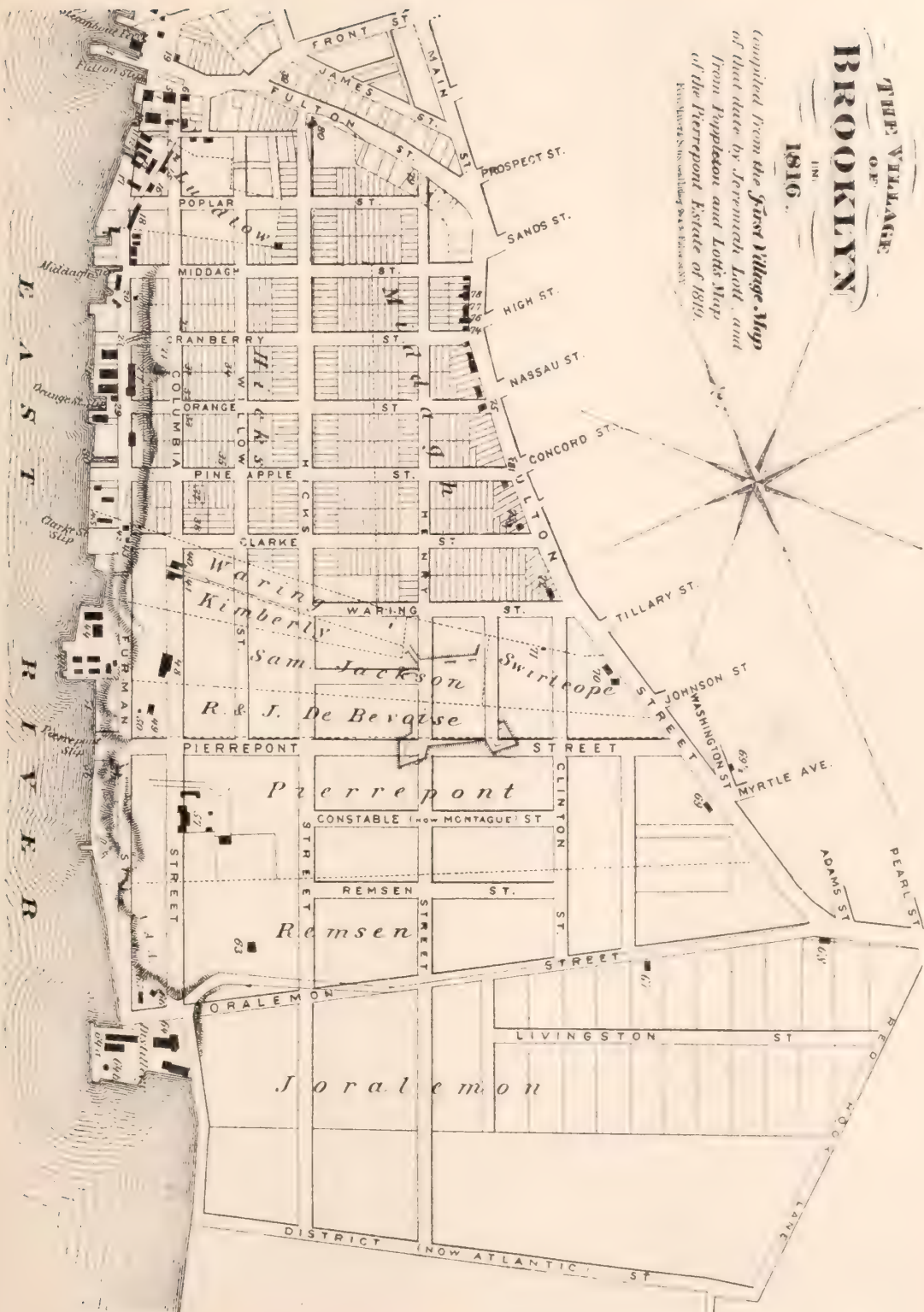
This was the riot of April 4, 1844, between native American citizens and citizens or residents of Irish birth in the vicinity of Dean and Wyckoff streets, and which was only ended by calling out the militia. It was a part, in fact, of a long series of irrepressible conflicts caused by the bitterness engendered by the Know-Nothing movement and which then raged all over almost all States. But the presence in Brooklyn of a large Irish contingent and of such a big majority of native-born citizens ought to have kept the authorities on the alert to prevent any outbreak such as that which did occur. So excited was popular feeling in this instance that the militia had to remain under arms all night patrolling the district.

THE VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN

IN
1816.

*Compiled from the first Village Map
of that date by Jeremiah Lot, and
from Poppleton and Lott's Map
of the Pierrepont Estate of 1819.*

From the New York City Library, New York City



There were many companies of militia then in Brooklyn,—the Light Guards, City Guard, Continental Guard and others. In fact there had been no lack of martial spirit since the days of the War of 1812, but in most cases we fear it was the uniform that attracted the recruits rather than any burning desire to aid in the maintenance of harmony or the preservation of the State. Each company was a separate organization, each had its own uniform, and considerable rivalry was shown as to which would secure the most gorgeous. Discipline in all of them was lax, drill was confined mainly to marching so as to be ready for a parade, and rifle shooting was rather regarded as a pastime than a serious business. It was seen that all these conditions should be improved, and that the city ought to have a military arm which should at once be worthy of it and prove of practical use should the occasion arise. The riot of 1846 and the various lesser conflicts between the civil authority and the citizens showed how useful an efficient military force could be. In 1844 several of the separate companies were organized into a regiment—the Fourteenth—but as each company wore its own uniform and made and interpreted, to a great extent, its own laws, the regimental institution was mainly a paper one. In 1856 the Thirteenth Regiment was similarly formed out of separate companies, the first of which had an existence since 1827. It was not until the outbreak of the Civil war that Brooklyn really had a trained military force among her resources.

The police force was a semi-political machine, and, while it is not to be inferred from that that it did not do its full duty to the best of its ability, still its political complexion prevented it from acquiring a full measure of efficiency. Then it should be remembered that the force was small and the extent of territory under its care was wide and the population somewhat scattered. When the city came into existence J. S. Folk was at the head of the force, which consisted of 247 men, some of the

outlying districts retaining small forces of their own. In 1850 a fully equipped police department for the entire city was formed and this continued to preserve the peace until as the result of a villainous act of political chicanery, Brooklyn in 1857 was merged into the Metropolitan Police District, and the police control virtually fell into the hands of New York City politicians. It got rid of that iniquitous political scheme in 1870, passed again under local control and continued as a separate institution until the final stage of consolidation—when Brooklyn as a city ceased to exist.

But enough has been said of fires and cholera and the police, and attention may now be turned to the directions in which the city was making real progress to metropolitan greatness. In 1844 the Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor was organized, mainly through the efforts of Senator Murphy. In 1848 the City Hospital, by a gift of \$25,000 from Mr. Augustus Graham, was put in possession of an endowment fund, while a few years later Mr. John B. Graham provided the city with an Old Ladies' Home. The Brooklyn Athenaeum was started in 1852 and the Packer Collegiate Institute for Girls, organized in 1854, carried on the work of the Brooklyn Female Academy. The value of real estate steadily advanced year after year and the city continued to spread out in all directions. In 1835 its population was 24,310; in 1840 it had increased to 36,233; in 1845 the figures were 59,574, and in 1853 they had swelled to almost 120,000. Brooklyn then had all the elements of trade to insure its continued prosperity. Its docks were, in 1853, the wonder of America, and some of its industries, notably that of white lead, in which the philanthropic brokers, Augustus & J. B. Graham, were leading factors, far exceeded in the value of their annual output that of any other place in the world. In 1853 taxable property amounted to \$12,000,000, it had fifteen public schools, and libraries in abundance. Nine carriers, however, sufficed to deliver the mail

from the postoffice at 337 Fulton street,—a small number indeed; but it must be remembered that people wrote less frequently then than now, that the age of the advertising circular had not arrived and that people were more in the habit of calling for their mail than in these later days.

That Brooklyn was extending and growing there was no question. Hardly a month passed that some farm did not find itself transformed from bearing crops into city property bearing houses, and it was then that Brooklyn first applied to itself the title of City of Homes, the right to which it disputed with Philadelphia until it assumed the more dignified epithet of the "City of Churches." In connection with the steady increase in the population it was even then admitted that the cause of this was the steady migration of men doing business in New York to homes in Brooklyn. Even Mr. Prime noticed this fact and expressed some fear lest such citizens should neglect the duties which they owed as citizens to their place of residence. But the very opposite proved to be the case. A man's heart is generally in his home, and while for a time such new-comers might regard themselves as New Yorkers they soon came to look upon themselves as Brooklynites pure and simple and to become among the most devoted of its citizens. The old gibe that Brooklyn was New York's bedroom was never used by a resident of Brooklyn but by some disappointed inhabitant of Gotham who was unable to change his environment from circumstances which very likely in his heart of hearts he regretted. In Brooklyn a man could own a home, could live amid all the influences of wholesome surroundings and pleasant society and at the same time be within as easy reach of his office, or store or factory as though he had no ferry to cross. At that time, 1853, Brooklyn's means of transit, poor as they were in comparison with those now existing, were far superior to those in its twin city.

No better test of the progress of a city can

be found than in its newspaper press, and it is fitting that some reference should here be made to that of Brooklyn. Mention has already been made of Printer Kirk's journalistic ventures and the connection of Alden Spooner with the "Long Island Star" beginning with 1811. "The Long Island Patriot," issued in 1821 by George L. Birch, an Irishman, was carried on under that title until 1833, when it was changed to "The Brooklyn Advocate" and published by James A. Bennett. Under his regime Senator Murphy was its principal editorial writer, finding in the opportunity thus afforded (there was no money in it) an excellent sphere of practice for his pen. In 1835 its title was again changed and it became "The Brooklyn Advocate and Nassau Gazette," which lengthy cognomen it retained until its suspension in 1839. In 1834 a new candidate for public favor appeared in the "Brooklyn Daily Advertiser." It became an evening paper within a few months, then sought support as a morning issue and finally resumed its position as an evening paper, and as the "Native American Citizen and Brooklyn Evening Advertiser" became the organ of the Know-Nothings. It fell into the newspaper morgue with the decline of that political sentiment. "The Brooklyn Daily News" was commenced in 1840 and after a brief career was merged with the "Long Island Daily Times," but the combination failed to win popular support and the effort ceased in 1843. "The Brooklyn Evening Star" was issued by Col. Spooner in 1841 (after two previous unsuccessful efforts, in 1827 and 1834) and continued to figure in Brooklyn journalism until 1862, when it was compelled to suspend, the following year, 1863, witnessing the suspension of Spooner's once popular sheet, the "Long Island Star." Long before that happened, however, Alden Spooner had ceased from his labors, having passed away Nov. 24, 1848. The other journalistic ventures in Brooklyn of this period are hardly worthy of being even mentioned; they were merely "poor

sons of a day" and retain an interest only for the local antiquary, and but a passing degree of interest even for the most enthusiastic of these. The literary merit of those fleeting sheets was most conspicuous by its absence.

To all this, however, an exception must be made in favor of what is now, and has been almost since its first issue, the most successful and influential paper published on Long Island,—the Brooklyn Daily Eagle. Lately indeed it has boldly wandered forth from its insular domain and demanded a place among the great metropolitan dailies, and its demand in that respect has been very generally allowed. Indeed it is difficult to see how it could be denied. A perfect and complete epitome of the news of the world, its matter well edited, its news stories clear and logical, and its editorial page bristling with clear cut comment on events of the day,—comments which carry a vast amount of weight into the political and social life, not alone of Long Island but of Greater New York and the nation; a newspaper that is at once literary, scientific, religious and social, every issue of which is a reflex of all that is going on at home or abroad, of all that interests a farmer, a preacher, a professional man, a merchant, a mechanic, which appeals with equal force and renders equal service to the teacher in his sanctum and the man about town,—it renders a faultless service and fully deserves the honorable position it has won and holds. Its origin was very humble. The first number was issued October 26, 1841, with the primal purpose of serving as a campaign sheet for the local Democracy, and, secondly, with the view of testing public opinion and sentiment as to the prospects for a daily newspaper devoted to that party. Senator Henry C. Murphy was its real proprietor and editor, although in the latter capacity he shared the work with the once celebrated author of the "Moon Hoax," Richard A. Locke. Its success was immediate, and this, coupled with the triumph at the polls of

the policy it had espoused, seemed to warrant its continuance as a daily institution.

Throwing off its campaign features, it commenced its career as a daily newspaper Dec. 27, 1842, under the editorial care of William B. Marsh, who won for it an enduring measure of success prior to his death, in 1846. Before that, the paper had been purchased by Isaac Van Anden, who continued to publish it until 1870, when he sold the property to an association of leading Brooklyn citizens, who turned its proprietorship into a joint stock company, and so it remains. Under such editorship as that of Henry McCloskey, Walt Whitman, Thomas Kinsella, William Wood and its present head, St. Clair McKelway, its course has been one of uniform success; and its policy, while honestly and purely Democratic, has ever been maintained free from party dictation or the influence of any political machine, National, State or Municipal. For many years its office on lower Fulton street near the old ferry was one of the landmarks of Brooklyn, but the changes caused by the opening of the bridge rendered that location undesirable, and since 1892 it has occupied a magnificent building erected for its own use on a site which for half a century prior to 1868 was that of the St. John's Episcopal Church, and in 1871 was occupied by the ill-fated Brooklyn Theatre, which was destroyed by fire, Dec. 5, 1876, under most appalling circumstances.

Although, as we have seen, bountifully supplied during the period covered by this section of its history, with newspapers, Brooklyn could not be described as having much literary distinction. Most of her best work in that department belongs to a later period, and such literary souls as she did produce had to search elsewhere for their bread and butter, which things are as essential to literature as to mechanics. Oliver Bell Bunce, once known as a novelist whose most popular book was a little work entitled "Don't," pointing out mistakes

in the use of the English language, is sometimes regarded as belonging to Brooklyn; but on what ground, beyond that of temporary residence in it, seems difficult to point out. So, too, with John G. Saxe, the poet, who certainly resided in Brooklyn for a time and wrote much of his verse there, but never somehow became identified with it. For a time it might be said he was in Brooklyn, but not of it.

It seems hard to have to put a native Long Islander and a poet of world-wide renown in the same category, but it seems to be that which fits Walt Whitman the most truly. Born in West Hills, Suffolk county, May 31, 1819, he was educated mainly in Brooklyn. After a time of wandering, during which he learned the trade of printer, he returned to that city where he for a time was editor of the "Eagle," and engaged in business as a printer. It can hardly be said that he was a success either as an editor or as a business man, or that he identified himself much with Brooklyn. He speaks of its "beautiful hills," but its central point of attraction for him was the ferry, and his heart was more in the Manhattan than on the Long Island shore. Still there seems no doubt that it was in Brooklyn he wrote the twelve poems which in 1855, in a small quarto of ninety-five pages, made up the first edition of "Leaves of Grass;" and it was in Brooklyn also that much of the additional verses under that head that were contained in the second edition, which appeared in the following year. Both editions were published in New York, and soon after their publication Whitman ranked only as a visitor to the island of his birth,—"*Paumanok*," as he liked to call it.

Gabriel Furnam, to whom every writer on Brooklyn's history is under a deep debt of gratitude, might have attained a considerable position in the world of literature had he so applied himself. He was a man who natur-


ally possessed vast industry, wonderful capacity for research, a keen and critical judgment, and no one can read the manuscripts he has left without admitting that he was a most zealous worker. His literary style was clear, nervous, and sometimes exceedingly graphic, and as a public speaker and lecturer he never failed to charm his audiences. On the history and the antiquities of Brooklyn and Long Island he was a perfect encyclopædia, and his vast stores of what might be called "local learning" were at anyone's service. He was born in Brooklyn in 1800 and died in that city in 1853. In early life he studied law and in 1827 was appointed a Justice in the Municipal Court, serving for three years. In 1837 he was chosen to the State Senate and remained a member of that body until 1842, when he ran for the office of Lieutenant Governor on the Whig ticket and was defeated. Then he retired from public life and devoted himself to his books. He had, however, in some way, acquired the opium habit, and indulgence in that cursed weakness crushed out whatever ambition he originally had and gradually left him physically and financially a wreck, and that result was only too evident at the very time when he ought to have been in the zenith of his powers. It deadened his brain, exhausted his power of initiative and capacity for work, even for thought; and his death, in the Brooklyn City Hospital, was a sad end to a career that was for a time so useful, and seemed so full of promise. In 1824 Furman issued his only book,—"*Notes, Geographical and Historical, Relative to the Town of Brooklyn.*" It was reprinted in 1875, along with the contents of a manuscript volume, "*Long Island Antiquities and Early History*," which was picked up in a bookstore by Frank Moore, a well-known historical student, who edited the volume and gave it to the world.



CHAPTER XXXVI.

CHURCH DEVELOPMENT.

BISHOP LOUGHLIN, DR. BETHUNE, ST. ANN'S HOLY TRINITY—DR. STORRS, HENRY
WARD BEECHER—LAND OPERATIONS—GREENWOOD AND OTHER CEME-
TERIES—THE FERRIES—WORK AT THE NAVY YARD.

AKING it all in all, the purely literary life of Brooklyn in this epoch is hardly worth recalling. But its intellectual development then centred in the church and in its hands nothing was neglected of those very influences which have led to lasting results in literature, in art, in science, and in all the amenities which call out the higher and richer phases of intellect and character and which makes society nobler and purer and life better worth living. The era covered by this section was one of rapid development and growth among the churches of all creeds or denominations. It saw the Roman Catholic body so increased as in 1853 to entitle Long Island to be constituted into a diocese with the late Bishop Loughlin at its head, antedating by several years the advent of a Protestant Episcopal bishop; for it was not until 1869 that that body attained that dignity.

As might be expected, the old Dutch Reformed Church was the strongest religious organization in Brooklyn, and it maintained its hold even in the midst of what men then called "Liberal discussion" and "modern thought." To the old First Church, which in 1835 was settled in its third building, on Joralemon street, there was added in 1837 the Second, or "Reformed Dutch Church on the Heights." Two years later that congregation

built a church on Henry street, near Clark street; but in 1850 a more imposing structure was erected on Pierrepont street and over that society, from 1847 until 1859, the Rev. George W. Bethune presided as pastor, and by his eloquence in the pulpit, his activity in passing affairs, his eminence as a scholar and his originality as a thinker, writer and poet, made it become the first of Brooklyn's churches to acquire a measure of national fame. Dr. Bethune, more than any man in that era, could have invested Brooklyn with a literary reputation, or raised up within it a literary cult; but such of his writings as were given to the public while one of Brooklyn's pastors, he published elsewhere, sought as it were a different public for the fruits of his pen, while the work of the church itself engrossed his daily life in the city in which for so many years his lot was cast and which yet holds his memory in reverence. His later years were clouded by ill health, and he died at Florence, in 1862. His remains, however, were brought across the Atlantic and laid in Greenwood beside those of his father, Divie Bethune, the first of New York's merchant philanthropists, and his famous grandmother, the sainted Isabella Graham.

The Dutch Reformed Church steadily reached out all over the city limits during the period now under notice, engaged as it were,

in active missionary work, in marked distinction to its old centralizing and conservative spirit. In rapid succession it had more or less flourishing congregations at Gowanus, the Wallabout, East New York, as well as in other points where the population was growing.

But in missionary work the Episcopal Church showed equal strength and energy with the pioneer Dutch body. When this period now being reviewed opened in reality Protestant Episcopalians regarded Brooklyn as but one parish, with two churches, St. Ann's and St. John's. By the time the period closed it had organized and housed—generally in splendid temples—no fewer than fifteen new congregations, including the palatial Trinity. Into the story of these congregations we cannot here enter into detail; but three may be selected for brief mention, mainly because they illustrate, in more or less degree, the progress of all the others. The early history of St. Ann's Church has already been referred to. In 1835 it was under the rectorship of the Rev. Benjamin Clarke Cutler, and gradually gathering around it all the usual agencies for active church work, a Sunday-school, library, orphan asylum, etc. Dr. Cutler's pastorate continued until his death, in 1863. The Rev. Lawrence H. Mills was chosen as his successor and under him the church left its old house of worship on Washington street (the terminus of the Brooklyn bridge now runs across the site) and worshipped in its chapel at Clinton and Livingston streets. The Rev. Dr. Noah H. Schenck succeeded Mr. Mills in 1867, and in 1869 the present magnificent building used by the congregation was completed. The old burial ground of the church on Fulton street, near Clinton street, after being unused for many years, was abandoned altogether in 1860, the human remains in it were disinterred and a suite of business premises—St. Ann's Buildings—was erected on the site. Dr. Schenck died in 1886, and the present rector, the Rev. B. F. Alsop, was called. As a condition of a gift of \$70,000, made in 1878 by Mr. R. Fulton

Cutting, the seats in St. Ann's are free. This gift removed all the indebtedness of the church and enabled it to begin a new era of active zealous Christian work. Its revenues are large, its field of activities broad, its methods liberal and its work has been singularly blessed.

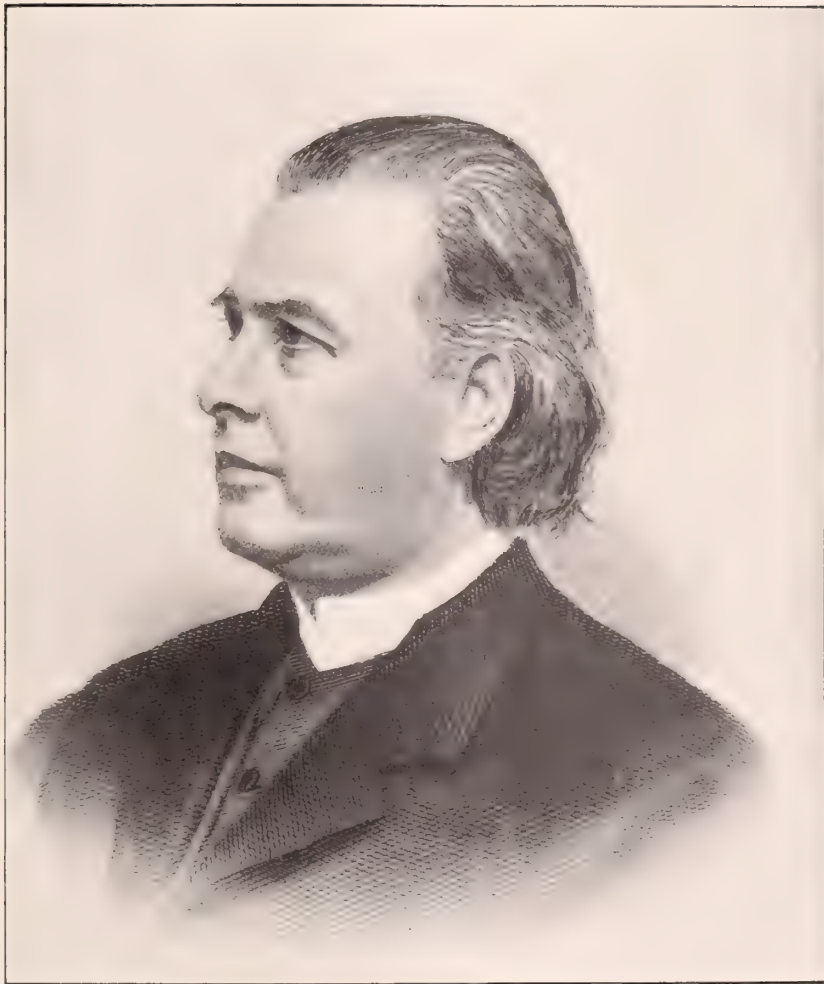
The Church of the Holy Trinity might in a sense be regarded as one among the many daughters of St. Ann's, as its founders, Edgar J. Bartow and his wife (Harriet C. Pierrepont), were long associated with the latter, the husband as an officer of and worker in the Sabbath-school, and the wife as an active instrument in the charitable field which has ever been a feature of St. Ann's. Mr. Bartow was descended from an old Westchester family and took up his residence in Brooklyn in 1830. In business life he was a paper manufacturer, but not a little of his once immense wealth came from his shrewdness in taking advantage of the rising tide of Brooklyn real-estate values. Blessed with riches and animated by a sincere desire to add to the spiritual blessings of Brooklyn, Mr. Bartow and his wife in 1844 selected a site for a new church at Montague and Clinton streets, engaged the services of Minard Lefever, the most noted ecclesiastical architect of his day, and erected a building which for beauty of design and general adaptability far surpassed any structure at that time in the city. Its cost when completed was estimated at \$175,000, but no one ever knew the exact figure, for every dollar was met by Mr. Bartow. The church was opened for Divine service April 25, 1847, and the Rev. Dr. W. H. Lewis became the first rector. The entire property unfortunately continued in Mr. Bartow's hands, as it had been his intention to complete it according to the original designs. But in 1856 the embarrassed condition of his affairs forced him to realize on all his available estate, and to his deep regret it became necessary to dispose of the church property, along with the rest. It was offered to the congregation for \$100,000 and the offer was accepted. Starting out anew, as it were, under a heavy load of

debt, Dr. Lewis continued his pastorate with much success until 1860, when he resigned and was succeeded by the Rev. Dr. A. H. Littlejohn, afterward first Protestant Episcopal Bishop of Brooklyn. For a long time the financial condition of the church was one of the wonders of Brooklyn. It seemed so burdened that relief appeared an impossibility and rumors were frequently heard that the congregation would be compelled to abandon its princely edifice and seek a humbler shelter. But wise counsels prevailed, the people held on, able heads managed the finances, and slowly but surely the debt gradually disappeared, the building was completed according to its original designs, with its beautiful spire; the rectory, abandoned in the time of despair, was repurchased, and its financial ability for aggressive church work was placed on an equal footing with any in the city. In 1869, when Bishop Littlejohn was consecrated, he was succeeded as rector of Holy Trinity by the Rev. Charles H. Hall, whose ministry was one of the most practically successful of any in the fruitful story of Brooklyn's churches. He remained in charge of the parish until his death, Sept. 12, 1895. The present pastor is the Rev. S. D. McConnell. The membership is now over 1,100, and the church property is valued at \$400,000, while not a penny of debt rests upon it.

The third church selected tells us another story of advancement and illustrates a different method of Christian work and church up-building, and it brings before us a zealous laborer in the vineyard, one whose name and works are not, it is to be feared, as widely remembered in Brooklyn as they ought to be. Until the day of his death, in 1865, no personality was better known or more kindly regarded in the city than that of the Rev. Evan Johnson. He was born at Newport, R. I., June 6, 1792, and was there ordained in 1813. After a brief service as curate in Grace Church, New York City, he became rector of the Episcopal Church at Newtown, Long Island, in 1814.

The same year he married Maria, daughter of John B. Johnson. Through her he acquired some property, and for a number of years he not only attended faithfully to the duties of his church but managed successfully the affairs of a large farm which he owned. After his wife's death, in 1825, he determined to remove from Newtown, and, selling his farm for \$4,000, he settled, in the following year, 1826, in Brooklyn, where at his own expense he bought land and erected St. John's Church. To the congregation he gathered there he ministered for twenty years, seeing it steadily growing in membership and usefulness, but all the time declining to accept a cent for his services. Indeed it was his boast in his latter days that he had preached and filled all the duties of a pastorate for forty years without any monetary remuneration! In 1847, finding that St. John's was self-supporting, he sold the building and ground to the congregation and with the money thus received proceeded to put in operation a project he had long cherished,—the erection of another church in a section of the city where poverty abounded and religion did not. Hiring a room in Jackson street, he commenced holding Divine services in that small apartment, in September, 1847. This was the beginning of St. Michael's. The congregation grew so rapidly that in a few months he was able to lease the old Eastern Market building, on High street. There the church and parish were duly incorporated and in time a self-supporting and vigorous congregation was added to the list of the successful Episcopal Churches in Brooklyn. It now occupies an elegant building erected for its use on High street, and this, with the adjoining rectory, is estimated as worth \$100,000. The church has 480 members, no indebtedness, and raises annually about \$16,000 for church work.

During the period covered by this chapter the Reformed Church added seven churches to its number, the Lutherans four, the Methodist Episcopal twelve, the Baptists twelve, the Congregational nine, the Presbyterians



A. W. Littlejohn

eight, while the Roman Catholic Church added sixteen. These figures indicate a vast amount of activity, and practically every section of the city found itself more or less fully covered by church influence. The field was large, the workers were many,—so many in fact that it is beyond the scope of this work even to attempt to recall their names. Almost any selection that could be made would be unjust to those omitted, but it may be said that there was not a better body, a more self-denying body, a more energetic body of earnest, devoted Christian workers to be found anywhere than might be found in the list of Brooklyn's preachers during this division of its story. We read of little troubles bothering a few of the congregations, we read of efforts made in the course of reaching out being unfortunate on account of an error in judgment as to location or an error in calculation of resources on the part of enthusiastic workers, and now and again we read of a pastor being compelled to stand aside on account of his health breaking down under the unceasing strain of his work. Such errors, such drawbacks, such sorrows, however, were unavoidable, and had but little effect on the general result; and so, as we read the story of Brooklyn church life during the years between 1834 and 1854, we see a strong body, a nervous force, steadily reaching out in all directions and leavening the whole into a Christian community, a lighted lamp set as it were upon a hill and shedding its rays over all the land. For it was in this period that Brooklyn in reality became generally known as the "City of Churches," and its churches acquired a measure of national fame.

Three men were conspicuous in bringing all this about; and as they have all three passed beyond the veil and the value of their services was so pre-eminent as to be beyond cavil, we may close our study of the church life of the first City of Brooklyn by recalling some of the prominent features of their careers.

John Loughlin, the first Roman Catholic Bishop of Long Island, was born in county

Down, Ireland, in 1816. Early in life he came to America, settling for a time in Albany, N. Y., and was educated for the priesthood at Mount St. Mary's College, Emmitsburg, Md. In 1842 he was ordained priest and became attached to St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York, of which, in 1844, he became Rector. He was subsequently appointed Vicar General of the New York diocese, and was consecrated as Bishop of Brooklyn October 3, 1853, by the Papal Nuncio, the Most Rev. Cajetan Bedini, Archbishop of Thebes. Bishop Loughlin named St. James's as his cathedral church and thenceforth his life was bound up in the history of his diocese. Under him the Church steadily extended, new parishes were opened up in rapid succession, and schools and charities quickly followed. The Bishop was a consistent believer in active religious work, in work outside the pulpit, in the homes and the social circles of his people. To aid in such endeavor he introduced into his diocese, in 1855, the Sisters of St. Joseph and the Sisters of Mercy, and he crowned, as he believed, his church building work in 1868 when he had the corner-stone of a cathedral and diocesan establishment laid by Archbishop McClosky, on a splendid site at the junction of Carlton and Vanderbilt avenues. It was designed to be the finest group of ecclesiastical buildings on Long Island,—to rival in fact anything of the kind in America. But he did not live to see the work completed. The buildings remain uncompleted even to this day, although a part of the cathedral has been opened for service and a palace for the Bishop's residence has been completed, a beautiful structure in keeping with the importance and dignity of the office. Bishop Loughlin continued sedulously to advance and protect the vast interests committed to his care, quietly and unostentatiously, but none the less effectively, until his death, Dec. 29, 1891. It may truly be said that on assuming the Bishopric he gave himself up wholly to his work, and that the full story of his life in Brooklyn would be but the story of the marvelous prog-

ress of his Church from 1853 until 1892. On May 2, 1892, the Rev. Charles E. McDonnell was installed as his successor. In writing of the personal career of such a man as Bishop Loughlin, the biographer is necessarily limited as to its details. A true leader in such circumstances is essentially the head of a force, and while his life is spent as the representative of that force, and the leading director of its movements, he more or less completely sinks his personality in its direction. Such self-abnegation, in fact, has been one of the causes of the modern success of the Roman Catholic Church.

But in dealing with the career of such a man as the late Rev. Dr. Storrs, his individuality not only stands out in bold relief all through his career but that individuality reflects its own characteristics upon the church with which it is associated and gives it not merely local but national importance, an importance which generally passes away with its creator although the church to which he ministered may remain intact. To illustrate perhaps a little more plainly, it may be said that the Church of the Pilgrims was better known as Dr. Storrs's Church during that gifted man's life-time than by its official designation.

Richard Salter Storrs was descended from a long and illustrious line of New England clergymen. His father, Richard S. Storrs, was for sixty-two years pastor of the First Congregational Church of Braintree, Mass.; his grandfather, who also bore the name of Richard Salter Storrs, was pastor of a Congregational Church at Long Meadow, Mass., for thirty-three years, and his great-grandfather was a Chaplain in the Patriot army during the American Revolution.

Richard S. Storrs was born at Braintree, Mass., Aug. 21, 1821. He was graduated at Amherst College in 1839, and for a short time was engaged as a teacher in Monson Academy. It was apparently his idea at first to prepare himself for the bar, for he entered the office of Rufus Choate as a student. He abandoned law for theology, however, and entered Andover

Seminary, where he was graduated in 1845. He became pastor of a Congregational church at Brookline, Mass., in that year, and in the following year was called to the Church of the Pilgrims, and was installed as pastor on Nov. 19, 1846. It had been organized only two years before, and Dr. Storrs was its first minister.

The corner-stone of the present edifice of the Church of the Pilgrims, at Henry and Remsen streets, was laid in 1844, and the building was dedicated in 1846, several months before Dr. Storrs was installed as pastor. Many changes and improvements have since been made in the building.

Dr. Storrs was a Commissioner of Parks of the City of Brooklyn from 1871 to 1879. He was elected President of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions in 1887 and continued in that office for ten years, and was one of the leaders of the old Manhattan Congregational Association, which seceded from the main Congregational Association after the Beecher-Tilton trial. In 1881, on the occasion of the thirty-fifth anniversary of his pastorate, Dr. Storrs was the recipient of a purse of \$35,000 from parishioners and friends.

From 1848 to 1861 Dr. Storrs was associate editor of *The Independent*. Much of his attention was given to the Brooklyn Mission Society, and for a quarter of a century he was President of the Long Island Historical Society. He also served as First Vice President of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences, and as a member of the Amherst College Board of Trustees.

Dr. Storrs was married in October, 1845, to Miss Mary Elwell Jenks, granddaughter of John Phillips, the first Mayor of Boston, and a niece of Wendell Phillips. Mrs. Storrs' father was a clergyman. She died in 1898, leaving two daughters, Mrs. L. R. Packard and Mrs. E. B. Coe, wife of the Rev. E. B. Coe of the Dutch Reformed Church, New York.

The Rev. Dr. Richard S. Storrs was a his-



Richard L. Horn

toric figure in the ecclesiastical world of America. "His death," says a writer of one of the many biographies issued after his death, "removes from the American ministry one of its most scholarly lights, and by it Brooklyn loses a citizen honored and beloved for more than half a century. The last of an extraordinary group of Brooklyn ministers, he was not alone a local force spiritually and secularly, but a man of recognized importance in the entire Christian world. He was a scholar, orator, man of affairs, and a historian of authority, as well as pastor.

"Dr. Storrs represented in Brooklyn for fifty-three years the tradition of the conservatism and the rhetorical elegance of the Puritan pulpit of New England. During much of that period, in a neighboring church—Plymouth—Henry Ward Beecher stood for the opposites of these pulpit ideals, the radical thought, the reforming impulse, and the genius for impassioned oratory.

"In all his preachings Dr. Storrs kept in touch with the Scriptures, and their teachings were the foundation of his utterances. New England born and bred, he lived according to the precepts of the Pilgrims, and he preached as he lived. His greatness lay in broad and humane scholarship. Possessed of an alert and vigorous mind, he treated his themes with a delightful thoroughness and clothed his thoughts in beautiful and fitting speech."

Dr. Storrs's fiftieth anniversary as pastor of the Church of the Pilgrims—his golden anniversary—was celebrated in 1896 by a week of general public rejoicing, in which many prominent men took part.

Dr. Storrs delivered what is regarded as his greatest oration on June 1, 1865, on the impressive theme of the death of Lincoln. He was a most prolific worker and the large number of his works which have been published give some idea of the energy and industry of his life. The titles of some of his published lectures and addresses are as follows: "Congregationalism; Its Principles and Influ-

ences;" "Obligation of Man to Obey the Civil Law;" "Christianity: Its Destined Supremacy on the Earth;" "The Relations of Commerce to Literature;" "Colleges, a Power in Civilization, to be Used for Christ;" "Constitution of the Human Soul;" "Character in the Preacher;" "The Puritan Scheme of National Growth;" "The Bible, a Book for Mankind;" "Declaration of Independence, and the Effects of It;" "John Wyckliffe and the First English Bible."

Feeling the approach of his end, and suffering greatly from enfeebled health, Dr. Storrs formally resigned his pastoral charge Nov. 19, 1899, but retained his connection with the church as pastor emeritus. His last appearance in the pulpit was in April 22 following, when he conducted the services in company with the Rev. H. P. Dewey, of Concord, N. H., whom the congregation, at his suggestion, had decided upon as his successor. His health continued to fail in spite of his relief from his pastoral duties and he gradually grew more infirm until the end came, June 5, 1900, at his home, No. 80 Pierrepont street. Three days later his remains were interred in Greenwood Cemetery. The news of his death caused many regrets in Brooklyn; it was truly felt that the last of a race of Princes in Israel had truly fallen, and several movements for some tangible memorial of his life and public services were proposed and discussed. But these seemed to awaken little practical response, and the memory of this good man is likely to be enshrined only in his own works.

A still more famous, more popularly famous, preacher came to Brooklyn in this era, the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher. It is difficult to compress the story of the life work of this gifted man into the few paragraphs which the compass of this work necessitates, and yet a history of Brooklyn without mention of Beecher's work would necessarily be incomplete. He was one of the sons of the Rev. Lyman Beecher, who in the course of a busy life of eighty-eight years spent some fifty years in the active

work of the ministry and became one of the intellectual leaders of the country. Lyman Beecher, "stood unequalled," writes one, "among living divines for dialectic keenness, pungent appeals, lambent wit, vigor of thought and concentrated power of expression." This sentence might also have been applied to Henry Ward, the most gifted of his sons, at whose home in Brooklyn he died in 1863. All of Lyman Beecher's children became famous for their genius or noted for their usefulness. Most of them were in some way connected with Long Island, where, at Easthampton, Lyman Beecher preached for several years.

Henry Ward Beecher was born at Litchfield, Conn., June 24, 1813. After being prepared for the ministry under the direction and instruction of his father, he was settled as minister of a Presbyterian Church at Laurenceburg, Ind. While there, living mainly on his hopes, he married Eunice White, who survived him after the close of his life's journey. In 1839 he removed to Indianapolis, where he labored until 1847, when he received the call to become pastor of the newly formed Plymouth Congregational Church, Brooklyn. He accepted, entered upon that memorable pastorate October 10, 1847, and continued to be identified with Brooklyn—its world famous citizen—until the end of his career. In his opening sermon he announced that he would preach of Jesus "not as an absolute system of doctrines, nor as a by-gone historical personage, but as the ever living Lord and God," and added that he included anti-slavery and temperance as parts of Christ's teachings. That brief system of theology continued ever after to rule in Plymouth. When, many years later, June 30, 1883, he received the congratulations of his fellow citizens in Brooklyn's Academy of Music, on the occasion of the celebration of his seventieth birthday, he enlarged upon it as follows:

"The inspiration which has made the force of my whole life I found in a vision of the love of God in Jesus Christ. It has grown larger

and larger with the sympathy which is natural to my constitution, compassion of God, manifestations of God in Jesus Christ, that side of God which is great, holy, beautiful, showing Him to have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way. I have tried to have compassion like Christ. The less worthy the object, the more it was needed. I went right upon the side of the dumb and needy, without consideration. I think it most heroic for a man with standing and influence and ability to give himself to them. I thank God I had a desire to work for His glory, when to do it was to earn scoffings and abuse and threats. When Kossuth brought Hungary to us, my soul burned. The wrongs of Greece made my heart kindle. Nearly all the nations of the world, all under the sword of the soldier or the ban of harsh governments, have aroused my sympathy and effort. I did not go into these because they were humanities or specious philosophies, but because it was Christian: that's all. I did it for humanity because I loved Christ. In my preaching it has been the same. I have attacked governments, institutions, anything; never a denomination or a body of ministers. I have preached against the principles involved in all, and in my own denomination as much as in others. I have preached for the deliverance of souls, for clearer light, for a plainer path, that the stumbling blocks might be removed. These things I have changed in only to grow more intense and emphatic: first, the universal sinfulness of mankind, so that it is necessary everywhere for men to be born again by the Spirit, necessary for a life to be given to human nature above its animal nature, and this only by the Spirit of God; second, I believe in conversion and the effectual influence of the Spirit of God; third, I believe with ever-growing strength in the love of God in Jesus Christ. I know that Christ loves me, and that I shall go where He is. By grace am I saved, say I. The feeling has grown in my later years, and when under great pressure and sorrow that raised a strong



Amos Ward Beecher

sea, my strength and courage all came from this view—Christ loves me. He will hide me in His pavilion till the storm is passed. The sweetness of life is as much dependent on the love of Christ as the landscape is on the sun to bring out its lights and shadows. I never believed so much in the Gospel as to-day. My faith in it has never been shaken, except in the ideals. I was never so sure as now of its truth."

From the first, Beecher's ministry in Plymouth was a triumphant success. As the late Benjamin J. Lossing said: "It has no parallel in the history of pulpit oratory and pastoral labors. Thousands were brought into the church during his ministry. Its audience room, always full, would accommodate 3,000 persons. At times more than that number have been packed within its walls. The membership of the church averaged about 2,500. Its contributions to benevolent and charitable purposes have been munificent." Beecher was not what many would have called an orthodox preacher. He believed that smiles should follow a sermon as well as tears; he thought happiness as appropriate a theme for contemplation as sorrow; he believed in describing the joys of heaven rather than in painting the horrors of hell; in fact he did not believe in the doctrine of eternal punishment, and openly declared himself on that point in a discourse preached in 1878. His manner was dramatic, his illustrations were drawn from actual life, mainly from his own reading and observation, and he treated every theme from the standpoint of common sense, attempted in short to interpret the life to come by the life that now is. Creeds and dogmas, especially as the years grew upon him, he had little use for, and, starting out in life as a disciple of Calvinism, he so developed, as he said himself, that in 1882 he and his congregation threw off even the loose and pliant bonds of Congregationalism and withdrew from association with that body. In his church Beecher was singularly beloved and well understood, and his word was law. He made it

famous, and from its pulpit he not only spoke to three thousand or more auditors at every service, but to an outer audience of many, many thousands more, for his sermons, carefully reported, were printed weekly in a publication called "Plymouth Pulpit," and so were circulated and read all over the civilized world.

Most popular preachers have, singularly, to meet a crisis during their careers; and Beecher's personal crisis came in 1874, when he was openly charged with immorality, the lady in the case being Mrs. Tilton, wife of Theodore Tilton, a brilliant figure in the literary world of that day but now forgotten excepting for the history of this charge, which developed into one of the *causes celebres* of American jurisprudence. The case first came up in Plymouth Church, and there, after investigation, the charges were dismissed as without foundation. A civil suit followed, Tilton figuring up his heart losses at \$100,000. The trial of the action, which continued for some six months, was watched with intense interest and at the close much regret was expressed when it was learned that the jury could not agree, nine of the members being in favor of a verdict for Beecher and the remaining three disagreeing with their view. But Beecher was acquitted at the bar of public opinion. The worst that could be said of him was that his own innocence of wrong-doing or wrong intent had sometimes placed him in positions from which rumor and slander might easily raise up flimsy tissues of falsehood, while his liberality of thought and disregard of conventionalities had brought him into contact with a class of people, some of them fanatics, some of them literary and social curiosities, and some of them people who, to put it mildly, had wits and lived by them. New York at that time was full of curious people, and Beecher, generous, open-hearted, always zealous in his search for truth, was sometimes too apt to listen openly and seriously to their vagaries. After the excitement of the trial had spent itself his influence in Plymouth Church became greater than ever, while

he himself emerged from that dark cloud with his thoughts broadened and mellowed, and more intensely than ever before preached of the infinite love of Christ.

Apart from his pulpit the life of Henry Ward Beecher might be divided into two parts,—his work as a citizen and as a man of letters, over both of which, however, it should be remembered to his credit, his pulpit work predominated, or rather both contributed to its requirements. When in the height of his fame as a public lecturer, commanding \$500 a night, he had to decline many engagements when they seemed likely to interrupt his pastoral duties. He kept a close watch over the passing events of the day and spoke of them freely and unreservedly from his pulpit. On the slavery question his abolitionist views were as a part of his Bible, and in that cause he was one of the most tireless workers. When the Civil War broke out he threw himself heart and soul into the task of defending and strengthening the position of the Northern States. Plymouth some one has said, virtually became a recruiting station for the Northern Army and raised a regiment of its own which went to the front, one of its officers being the pastor's son.

In 1863 Beecher went to England to recuperate his health, but the condition of public opinion which he found existing there compelled him to try and correct an erroneous impression as to the origin and meaning of the war, which caused a great deal of sympathy to be thrown away, both in England and Scotland, on behalf of the States then fighting for secession and slavery. The story of the triumphant progress of his self-imposed mission forms one of the most interesting chapters in his biography.

As a platform orator Beecher was unapproached even in that day of great orators, and his oration on "Robert Burns" has been conceded to be the most brilliant which the world-wide celebration of that poet's centenary called forth. In the field of letters Mr. Beecher was a diligent worker, and we can only wonder at

the industry which produced so much in the midst of occupations that constantly called him from his library and his desk. Shortly after settling in Brooklyn he began writing for "The Independent," and he edited that still influential organ, from 1861 to 1863. Afterward, from 1870 to 1880, he edited the "Christian Union." His separate writings are too numerous to enumerate here and it may briefly be said that they run from sermons to politics, lectures and essays, and take up all sorts of themes, from a "Life of Christ" to "Norwood," a novel of New England life.

Mr. Beecher's later years from 1874 were truly years of peace and were fruitful of good works and profitable to all. He died suddenly March 8, 1887, when Dr. Lyman Abbott, who succeeded him as editor of the "Christian Union," was called to fill the pulpit of Plymouth. This he did, keeping the great congregation intact until, feeling the weight of years, he resigned, in 1899, and was succeeded by the present pastor, the Rev. Newell Dwight Hillis, who preached his first sermon in that capacity March 19, 1900. A magnificent bronze statue of Mr. Beecher has been erected in front of the Brooklyn City Hall, as a result of a popular subscription. One wall of Plymouth Church is graced with a memorial tablet, and his body rests beneath a massive monument of Quincy granite in Greenwood, where, too, lie the remains of his noble-hearted wife who on March 8, 1898, joined him beyond the veil.

Churches and church-yards used to be associated in the olden times, and although in our modern system they are widely separated in our cities this seems a fitting place to write of what an after-dinner speaker in New York with grim humor once called "Brooklyn's noted industry, its cemeteries." The first of these great "Cities of the Dead" in point of formation as well as foremost for its costly memorials and beauty of situation, was due, probably more than that of any other individual, to the initiative of Mr. Henry E. Pierre-



ST. ANN'S CHURCH.



CHURCH OF THE PILGRIMS.



PLYMOUTH CHURCH, 1867.

point. The gradual increase of population in New York and Brooklyn had not only caused many of the old God's-acres to be abandoned, but, in numerous cases, had necessitated what many thought the desecration of the graves by opening them up, removing the bones and bodies, and turning the land into practical use for business purposes. Mr. Pierrepont proposed the selection of a large tract of ground

thoroughly ventilated and discussed, and met with a ready response, but it was not until 1838, some years after it was first talked about, that a company was formed and about 200 acres of land purchased, the property extending from what is now Twenty-first to Thirty-fourth street and from Fifth avenue to the old city line. It required a good deal of manipulation to secure all of this land, although



GREENWOOD CEMETERY. STATUE OF DE WILL CLINTON.

From photograph by Mr. Alexander Scurr.

which would serve as a place of burial, for New York as well as for Brooklyn, a veritable necropolis, a garden set aside forever as a resting place for the dead. His observations while on several visits to Europe had confirmed his sense of the practical utility of some such scheme, and his intimate knowledge of Brooklyn had prompted him to turn to the historic hills of Gowanus, the heart of the site of the Battle of Brooklyn, as presenting an ideal place for such a shrine. The matter was

most of the owners agreed to receive in payment stock in the proposed cemetery, and to obtain the necessary state and local sanctions for its future preservation and amenity and the unalterable restrictions to its sole use for burial purposes. These preliminaries of land and regulations duly arranged, the subscription books to the stock of the company were opened November 3, 1838. All through that winter work on the grounds was vigorously pushed and much progress was reported. In

1839 an amendment was secured to the deed of incorporation which practically made the institution become a public trust, for by the amendment none of the gain or profits from the operation of the cemetery goes into the pockets of any one, but all money realized over and above necessary working expenses is devoted to the preservation and beautifying of the grounds. It is this feature which has made Greenwood rank first among our local "Cities of the Dead." The plan proved a popular one from the first, and the work of adaptation proceeded so rapidly that lots were advertised for sale in 1840, and the first burial was on September 5, that year, when John Hanna was laid in a grave at the base of Ocean Hill to await the coming, one by one, of a vast host of silent neighbors.

For several years, in spite of the success of the enterprise, the corporation had to stagger along under a load of financial troubles. That it emerged unscathed from these, carried on unceasingly its expensive scheme of improvements, and met all its obligations, was due to the zeal, energy and financial ability of the late Joseph A. Perry, who was one of its original incorporators and became its comptroller and manager in 1842, devoting thereafter his entire life to its service. Under him the usefulness of the entire scheme soon became more and more adequately appreciated, and the daily increasing beauties of the enclosure were made thoroughly known among the people. Greenwood's walks and hills and dales quickly became so popular that there was danger of the cemetery becoming a "resort" rather than a place of seclusion and mourning and where the bitter memories of bereavement might be soothed by solitude and by the appealing beauties of nature, supplemented by the artifices that humanity and love and thoughtfulness could suggest or provide. But stringent rules were enforced to prevent this tendency from spreading, and all fear of it has long since passed away. The success of the undertaking and the popularity of Greenwood

were so assured that even in 1845 Dr. Prime could write of it as follows in his history: "It was purchased by a company incorporated April 18, 1838, with a capital of \$300,000, in shares of \$100 each, for a public burial ground. The surface is admirably diversified by hill and dale, while every now and then a beautiful little lake is spread out in the valley. The greater part of the area is deeply shaded with dense forest trees, without underbrush, which give to the whole scene the sombre aspect of the habitation of the dead. The grounds are not cut up into squares and parallelograms. No such figure is seen throughout the whole extent. But spacious avenues, neatly graveled, wind through every valley, encompassing numerous hillocks and intersecting each other at every turn. The main avenue, called 'the tour,' in numerous windings forms a circuit of three miles. You might travel for hours within this hallowed enclosure with a fleet horse and yet at every turn enter a new road. The work of appropriation seems to have just commenced. Though the grounds have been in the market more than seven years and many have availed themselves of the opportunity of providing a narrow house for themselves and their families, and many have already been deposited here, yet they are so extensive and diversified that it is only here and there you meet with a solitary vault in the side of a hill or an occasional monument on its summit. But here is an assembly that will never diminish and is sure to increase, which it will probably do until bone and ashes mingle with ashes in kindred dust."

The original purchase was soon found to be too limited for the future growth of the place, and steps were taken to acquire as much contiguous property as was desirable and could be secured, two notable additions being sixty-five acres on the southwesterly side and eighty-five acres on the eastern side, which made the property extend into the old town of Flatbush. It now encloses 474 acres, and in that respect has reached its full possible growth with the

exception of a few small parcels which it is expected time will make available and which will cut off a trifling irregularity in its boundary line. Up to October 1, 1900, the number of interments was 309,000.

From the beginning the story of Greenwood has been one of constant, almost daily, improvement, and for beauty of location, artificial adornments, scrupulous care in maintenance, magnificence of many of its tombs and monuments, it is far ahead of any public necropolis in the world. Space is not available to follow here in detail the story of its development further than to say that its most striking improvement, the main entrance, with its sculptured gateway on Fifth avenue, was completed in 1861. The time is coming when the disposal of single graves will be a thing of the past and when even the sale of lots will be at an end, and many changes and improvements will then be effected which will still further add to the beauty of the enclosure. To provide for this a reserve fund has been slowly maturing which now amounts to \$2,500,000, so that when the time comes that no further income is obtainable from the sale of the lots the welfare of the cemetery will be amply guarded.

The success of Greenwood inspired several movements in a similar direction. The first of these, Cypress Hills Cemetery, was laid out by a company incorporated in 1847, and which purchased 125 acres of land, which have been added to until the cemetery now encloses 400 acres. The first interment was made in 1848, and its silent population was quickly built up by its receiving bodies from the old churchyards of New York and Brooklyn, the sites of which were being turned over to the uses of the living. Its location is beautiful, but up to within a recent period it was so difficult of access that its success, from a financial point of view, was much retarded; but now, with increased facilities in that respect, it is yearly yielding better returns to its stockholders. It is steadily being improved and many of its monu-

ments rank as splendid specimens of such art. One feature of Cypress Hills Cemetery is the number of special plots it contains. The most notable of these is that known as "the Soldiers' Plot," which contains in its center an imposing monument, and the whole enclosure is under a distinct management from that of the rest of the cemetery. The Actors' Fund has also a fine plot, and so has the Press Club, while such organizations as the St. Andrew's Society, the St. David's Society and the St. George's Society have here plots where they bury such of their country people who may die friendless or poor, or both. A small plot contains the graves of soldiers of the war of 1812, but unfortunately these graves are not marked by any stones. The cemetery is a fitting resting place for such heroes, for it was itself once placed in order for battle, and on its slopes General Woodhull, prior to the Battle of Brooklyn in 1776, prepared to meet an attack, while several cannon balls fired from British cannons have been dug up in the course of making improvements.

In 1849 the Cemetery of the Evergreens was incorporated and 112 acres were acquired by its stockholders, since extended to 375 acres. It also occupies ground which may be classed as historic, for over it many of the soldiers in General Howe's army marched in August, 1776, when executing that strategic movement which brought such havoc to the patriot forces. Its Chinese section, situated on a bleak hillside, separated from the cemetery proper, is the scene at times of many strange ceremonies.

While on this subject brief mention may be made of other cemeteries which lie within the Long Island division of the Greater New York, and which caused some sections, such as Newtown, to be spoken of as one vast burying ground. There is little to be gained by detailing their history or describing their memorial or scenic beauties, but most of them are as trimly kept and made as attractive as a liberal expenditure of time, thought and

money can achieve. Such cemeteries as Calvary, with over 700,000 bodies lying in its graves and vaults, and Lutheran, with 300,000, are vast cities of the dead and contain the ashes of many men and women once famous in local annals, while Mount Olivet, Mount Nebo, Most Holy Trinity, St. Michael's, Salem Fields, Mount Zion, Holy Cross, Cedar Grove and Methodist are the best known among the smaller ones. At Fresh Pond, in Queens Borough, is the public crematory, where those who prefer that form of disposing of their dead to burial can have their preference put into quick effect. It is generally held that cremation in the time to come will be the general mode of getting rid of the body after its spirit has passed, and that cemeteries will then be turned into public gardens or opened up for building purposes; but if so the idea of cremation does not seem to be attaining its destined popularity very quickly. Fresh Pond crematory has now been in operation since 1884, and up to October, 1900, only 3,795 incinerations had taken place in its furnace. But the number seems to be growing slowly each year. In 1899 there were 540, and in 1900, 610.

During the years covered by this chapter the ferry system of Brooklyn made considerable progress, and was extended as fast as the growing demands of the various sections seemed to warrant. In fact, so far as Brooklyn is concerned, she has always been alive to the necessity of perfection in her ferry services, and but for the handicap imposed by the claims of Manhattan that service would have advanced with more rapid strides than it did. In 1836 what is known as South Ferry was opened, in 1846 the Hamilton Ferry was established, and the Wall Street Ferry in 1853. These, as well as the older ferries, were run by different companies, and except at Fulton Ferry the service was poor, for the cost of maintaining each was considerable and the financial returns to the owners were meager, —when there were any returns at all.

The first really upward step looking to general improvement was taken in 1844, when the Brooklyn Union Ferry Company was formed. The president was N. B. Morse, and Henry E. Pierrepont was vice-president, as well as a trustee, along with Jacob R. Leroy. These gentlemen formed the directorate, along with George Wood, Joseph A. Perry, John Dikeman, Joseph Ketchum, John B. La Sala, Seth Low, C. J. Taylor, L. Van Nostrand, Walter N. De Grauw, H. R. Worthington, C. N. Kiersted, C. P. Smith, John Dimon, A. G. Benson, Charles Kelsey, James E. Underhill, Ezra Lewis, S. E. Johnson, E. J. Bartow and George Hurlbut. There were some features attending the formation of the company which were regarded with surprise at the time, it being even alleged that one or two of these directors bought their stock and obtained their seats with the view of selling out the lease of the Fulton and South Ferries, control of which the corporation had secured, to outside parties. But if any such purpose was entertained it was balked by the public spirit of Messrs. Leroy and Pierrepont, in whose names the leases of the two ferries had been made out and whose sole aim in the matter was to promote the interests of Brooklyn. Practically the lease they held was accompanied by no reservations, and so whatever scheme may have been concocted to defeat the public-spirited purposes of the incorporation was easily defeated before it had time to mature. The corporation at once proceeded to manage its property so as to add to its financial prosperity by effecting improvements in its service. The landing stages and ferry houses were rehabilitated, new and larger boats were placed on each route, the running schedule was quickened and the utmost regularity introduced, while the fare was gradually reduced until, from four cents on Fulton Ferry and three cents on South Ferry in 1836, a uniform rate on both of one cent was established in 1850. The corporation, despite these changes, made money, and the business at the

other ferries dwindled rapidly, so much so that there were rumors that some of them would be abandoned.

In 1850 a new lease of the Fulton and South Ferries was secured for ten years by Messrs. Leroy and Pierrepont, and their company, in addition, secured the Hamilton Ferry, which at once began to feel the beneficial effects of the change. The business, especially at Fulton Ferry, which the street railroads made their terminus because it was the most popular, steadily assumed larger proportions,—so much so as to give rise to ideas of danger in the mere handling of such crowds as passed over it morning and evening. The movement, too, of the street railways tended to increase the traffic at the one point and helped to demoralize the service at the ferries which the corporation did not control. A change of some sort became imminent: either the outside ferries should be purchased by the company, or two at least would have to be abandoned. The latter contingency was to be regretted, it was felt all round, as Brooklyn needed all the outlets possible. The results of a long series of private conferences was that the owners of Roosevelt, Gouverneur, Catharine, and Wall Street Ferries agreed to sell out to a new company which should be incorporated and to take their purchase money in stock. When all the negotiations were completed what we would now call a trust was called into existence. A new company was formed, virtually the old one under the slightly altered name of the Union Ferry Company of Brooklyn, and complete possession of the entire system was entered upon. Being now thoroughly protected against private interference, Messrs. Leroy and Pierrepont at once surrendered their leases of the Fulton, South and Hamilton Ferries to the new corporation, which henceforth controlled these routes, as well as the Roosevelt, Gouverneur, Catharine and Wall Street Ferries; and although the financial results of the deal were at first disappointing the clouds soon cleared away and the entire

system was placed on a footing satisfactory both to the public and the stockholders.

The Navy Yard during this period was steadily extending its size and importance. Through the exertions of H. C. Murphy, then a member of Congress, a splendid dry dock was constructed at the yard. It was commenced in 1841, and was completed some years later, at a cost of over \$2,000,000. Business, however, was at no time rushing at the yard, and the records only show the construction of the following Government ships:

Brig Dolphin, commenced in 1836, launched June 17, 1836; schooner Pilot, commenced in 1836 (for the Surveying and Exploring Expedition), launched September, 1836; steamer Fulton (second), commenced in 1835, launched May 18, 1837; sloop of war Levant (second class), commenced in 1837, launched December 28, 1837; sloop of war Decatur (third class), commenced in 1838, launched April 9, 1839; steamer Missouri, commenced in 1840, launched January 7, 1841; brig Somers, commenced in January, 1842, launched April 16, 1842; sloop of war San Jacinto, commenced 1837, launched April 16, 1850; sloop of war Albany (first class), commenced in 1843, launched January 27, 1846; steamer Fulton (third), rebuilt, commenced in 1850, launched August 30, 1851.

It was seriously discussed about this time whether the Navy Yard really was of any practical benefit to Brooklyn and whether the city would not be much better off were the Government to take its outfit somewhere else and leave the Wallabout to aid in the development of the commerce of the city. It was felt, however, that the location of the Navy Yard where it had so long been not only added to the importance of Brooklyn, but that it promised to be one of the city's best means of defense should a foreign invasion ever be threatened. Mr. Murphy's dry-dock scheme, when inaugurated, put a stop to whatever idea the Government may have held of re-

linquishing its hold in Brooklyn's historic bay, and the notion was abandoned on all sides. The Navy Yard, it was felt, was a fixture and its location was an ideal one for every conceivable purpose. Indeed, the question of change has long since been relegated to a place among the many dead issues we meet with in the history of Kings county which are only worth, from a historical point, a reference of a line or two simply to show that they really existed, but are no longer worthy of consideration or discussion.

It was, however, this national occupation of the Wallabout and the consequent failure of Brooklyn to extend in its direction that proved one of the leading arguments against the utility of the consolidation of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh when that subject came up for serious consideration. It was easily seen by reference to any plan or map, or even to the eye of the observer on the East River, that the two cities were quite distinct and separate from each other, and that the Navy Yard had prevented a complete line of dwellings and warehouses and workshops being erected along the water front, which would of a certainty have been formed and made a chain connecting the two municipalities had the way been clear. But there the Navy Yard lay, completely blocking, as it were, municipal progress, and back of it rolled a stretch of wild and mostly unoccupied territory which the most optimistic fancy could not see, even if parceled out into streets and squares and avenues by the surveyors and map-makers, filled up with residential or business establishments. But the fiat had gone forth, the politicians and official spoilsmen had practically wrecked Williamsburgh; and although many thought that while the union must inevitably come, it should be deferred in the interest of both municipalities for a quarter of a century or thereabout, those in favor of it craved immediate action. The bill ordering the consolidation became a law in April, 1854, and with the passing of the 31st of December following

Williamsburgh and Bushwick lost their identity and became part and parcel of the city of Brooklyn, which then entered upon another phase of its own history. The first Mayor of the first city of Brooklyn was George Hall, singularly enough chosen to be the first Mayor of the new city, and on assuming the office January 1, 1855, he delivered a most interesting reminiscent address, and this chapter cannot be more appropriately closed than by an extract from it:

It is now twenty-one years since I was called by the common council to preside over the affairs of the late city of Brooklyn, then first ushered into existence. The population of the city, at that time, consisted of about 20,000 persons, residing for the most part within the distance of about three-quarters of a mile from Fulton Ferry. Beyond this limit no streets of any consequence were laid out, and the ground was chiefly occupied for agricultural purposes. The shores, throughout nearly their whole extent, were in their natural condition, washed by the East River and the bay. There were two ferries, by which communication was had with the city of New York, ceasing at twelve o'clock at night. There were, within the city, two banks, two insurance companies, one savings bank, fifteen churches, three public schools and two weekly newspapers. Of commerce and manufactures it can scarcely be said to have had any, its business consisting chiefly of that which was requisite for supplying the wants of its inhabitants. Sixteen of its streets were lighted with public lamps, of which number thirteen had been supplied within the then previous year. The assessed value of the taxable property was \$7,829,684, of which \$6,457,084 consisted of real estate and \$1,372,600 of personal property.

Williamsburgh was incorporated as a village in 1827. Its growth was comparatively slow until after the year 1840. At the taking of the census in that year it was found to contain 5,094 inhabitants, and since that time it has advanced with almost unparalleled rapidity, having attained a population of 30,780 in 1850. It was chartered as a city in 1851. Within the comparatively short period of twenty-one years Bushwick, from a thinly settled township, has advanced with rapid strides,

and yesterday contained within its limits two large villages, together numbering a population of about 7,000 persons. Williamsburgh, from a hamlet, became a city of about 50,000 inhabitants. Brooklyn, judging from its past increase, yesterday contained a population of about 145,000 persons, and on this day the three places consolidated into one municipal corporation, takes its stand as the third city in the Empire State, with an aggregate population of about 200,000 inhabitants.

The superficial extent of area included within the city limits is about 16,000 acres (or twenty-five square miles). The extent in length of the city along the water front is eight and one-half miles, along the inland bounds thirteen and one-half miles, and between the two most distant points in a straight line seven and three-fourths miles, and its greatest width five miles. Within these limits 516 streets have been opened for public use.

* * * Thirty miles of railroad tracks, exclusive of those of the Long Island railroad companies, have been laid and are in use upon the streets of the city; besides twelve lines of stages or omnibuses. The city, to a great extent, is lighted by gas, supplied by the Brooklyn and Williamsburgh Gas Light Company, using ninety-five miles of pipes along the streets. The streets are lighted with public lamps, numbering in the aggregate 3,766, of which 2,609 are gas lamps. Thirteen sewers have been constructed, extending in length five miles. There are 157 public cisterns and 547 wells and pumps. There are two public parks, one of which will rival in magnificence, as respects its natural position and commanding prospect, that of any other city in the Union.

Reference was then made to the formation of Greenwood and Evergreens Cemeteries; to

113 churches within the city; to 27 public schools, containing 317 teachers and about 30,500 scholars; to the Packer Collegiate Institute, the numerous private schools, the Brooklyn City Hospital, the Orphan Asylums, the Old Ladies' Home, industrial schools, dispensaries, etc.; also to nine banks, four savings institutions, eight insurance companies, five daily and two weekly papers, etc. The assessed value of taxable property during the previous year was estimated: In Brooklyn—of real estate, \$64,665,117; of personal property, \$8,184,881; Williamsburgh—of real estate, \$11,242,664; of personal property, \$11,614,559; Bushwick—of real estate, \$3,106,864; of personal property, \$109,000; making the aggregate in the whole city, \$88,923,085.

Thirteen ferries, keeping up a constant communication with the city of New York, and the almost continuous line of wharves between Greenpoint and Red Hook, as well as the commercial facilities furnished by the Atlantic Docks, and the expensive ship building at Greenpoint, were also alluded to. The police of the new city, under Chief John S. Folk, comprised seven districts, with an aggregate of 274 men; the Eighth, Ninth and Eighteenth Wards not being included, they having a special police at their own expense. The fire department was also on a good footing, the western district having twenty engines, seven hose-carts and four hook and ladder companies; the eastern having ten engines, four hose-carts, three hook and ladder, and one bucket companies.



CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE ERA OF THE CIVIL WAR, 1865-1870.

A SUCCESSION OF CAPABLE EXECUTIVES—THE METROPOLITAN POLICE—J. S. T. STRANAHAN, PROSPECT PARK, STREET RAILWAYS, LIBRARIES—
RAPID EXTENSION OF THE CITY—CHOLERA.

IN THIS division it is proposed to treat of the history of Brooklyn—the Consolidated City—as it was generally called from the date of that consolidation (January 1, 1855) until the beginning of 1870. That period may rightfully be called the era of the Civil War, for although that terrible conflict lasted only during four years out of the fifteen years thus included, yet the time of preparation and recuperation ought to be included. While it cannot be said that the preparatory events leading to that war had much more than a passing influence on the progress of Brooklyn, it must be admitted that, in keeping with all loyal, slavery-hating communities in the North she saw the dark clouds settle out of which was to issue that bolt which was to strike Fort Sumter, and felt the need of ample preparation to meet the storm. She had to grope in the darkening atmosphere for a while, not knowing exactly what might be required of her, where the storm would break, or how far it might spread. She kept on as calmly as could be in the even tenor of her way, extending her boundaries, effecting improvements in her internal economy, and then, when the time did come, taking her full share with the Northern cities in the grand work of preserving the Union of the States.

During this period Brooklyn had five oc-

cupants of its civic chair, all men of marked individuality and in every way worthy of the honors heaped upon them by their fellow citizens. Of Mayor Hall mention has already been made and there is no need to dwell upon his career during the new term 1855-6 further than to say that he was elected upon a temperance and religious platform and zealously kept every plank in place. Possibly one of the proudest moments of his life was when, July 31, 1855, he broke ground for the reservoir of the Nassau Water Company on Reservoir Hill, Flatbush. That company had been chartered earlier in the same year and in June the Brooklyn Common Council had subscribed for \$1,300,000 of its stock, thus giving the city a controlling interest in its management. Mayor Hall zealously put in operation all the laws he could find on the statute books which aimed at preserving the amenity of the Sabbath, and in the poorer quarters of the city he aroused a strong feeling against himself by the determined manner in which he enforced the regulations requiring the closing of all sorts of stores on the day of rest, while his determined refusal in spite of many urgent and influential appeals to permit the street cars to run on Sundays added to his unpopularity with the masses, although most of the old residents thoroughly approved his policy, so far as these public vehicles were concerned.

But long before his term was up he found himself decidedly a most unpopular personage among all classes,—particularly among the very classes who were most zealous in their use of the ballot-box. His rectitude and loftiness of purpose were unquestioned, but it was felt that his many peculiar views on public morals were not in keeping with the spirit of the times,—were too paternal and Puritanic for the nineteenth century.

cars to be run on Sundays and winked at Sunday store trading so long as it was kept within bounds and was not only necessary to the comfort of the poor, but was demanded by public opinion. As a result his popularity steadily increased, and he was triumphantly re-elected when his first term expired. Afterward, in 1871, he was again called to the Mayor's office and served a third term, and he was chosen Comptroller in 1874, a Park Com-



VIEW FROM BATTERY HILL, GOWANUS HEIGHTS IN 1850.

From drawing by James S. Smith.

His successor, who entered upon office with the advent of 1857, was Samuel S. Powell, a native of New York City. Mr. Powell had resided in Brooklyn since 1838, and for many years was engaged in business as a clothier. In 1845 he was elected for a term to the Common Council, but declined reelection and held no other public office until he was elected to the Mayoralty. He was a religious man, but not so strict in his notions as his predecessor, so he permitted the street

missioner in 1877, and County Treasurer in 1878, holding the latter office at the time of his death, February 6, 1879.

Mayor Powell was what would nowadays be called an independent Democrat, and had received the Mayoralty nomination in spite of "the machine" of the party, which then had its headquarters in the law office of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt. His successor, Martin Kalbfleisch, however, was elected in 1861 by more "regular" Democratic management, and

as the War Mayor of Brooklyn deserves to be held in loyal and kindly remembrance. Mayor Powell, it should be said, had proved himself devoted to the national cause, and aided the Government to the best of his ability and the extent of his influence, but it was Mayor Kalbfleisch's fortune to be in office shortly after the storm broke, and he continued to direct Brooklyn's loyal aspirations during what may be called the darkest period of the awful struggle. In him, a native of the Netherlands and a naturalized citizen, the Union had no more stanch advocate or the National Government a more single-hearted adherent. He could not understand for a long time, it was said, exactly what the contest was about, but he enjoyed the advantage of his citizenship, had found wealth and friends and home in the land of his adoption, and looked upon the schism—any schism—as a crime. He had settled at Greenpoint in 1842, and there built up a splendid business as a manufacturer of colors. He at once took a deep interest in local affairs, organized a school so that his own children and those of his neighbors might have the advantages of a good education, and paid the teacher's salary out of his own pocket for a considerable time. In politics he became quite an active figure, and he was soon recognized in the local Democratic party as an indefatigable worker, being, as a noted Brooklyn politician said, "One of those Dutchmen who never let go until they have carried their point, and don't know when they are beaten." In 1851 he was elected Supervisor of the old town of Bushwick and held that office until Bushwick was "consolidated," of which project he was a stanch advocate. In 1855 he was chosen Alderman of Brooklyn's new Eighteenth Ward, and held his seat in the Common Council until he became Mayor. While he held that office it may be said that war measures occupied his whole time, and he proved indefatigable in his efforts to strengthen the hands of the Government and at the same time fulfill all the active

duties incumbent upon him as the head of a municipality which, in spite of the civil commotion, was extending itself in all directions and almost daily entering upon improvements and new enterprises all of which were adding to its reasons for civic pride. After a term in Congress he was again elected Mayor, in 1867, and held that office until 1871, two years before his death.

Mayor Kalbfleisch's successor to that title, in 1864, was one of the local heroes made conspicuous by the war,—Colonel Alfred M. Wood. This man of many brilliant parts was a native of Hempstead, and what might be called a politician by profession. He was engaged in business in Brooklyn for a short time early in life, but was unsuccessful, and in 1853 was elected Collector of Taxes, and re-elected in 1856. In 1861 he was elected to the Board of Aldermen and was chosen as its president. When the war broke out he was the senior officer of the Fourteenth Regiment of militia, and, resigning his civic office, he devoted his entire time to filling up the ranks of the regiment and led it to the front. At the first battle of Bull Run he was conspicuous for his bravery, and was severely wounded just as the panic among the Northern troops began. While being removed from the field in an ambulance, Colonel Wood found himself forsaken, for the driver had cut the traces from the horse which had been hauling the vehicle and ridden away. With the help of some of his own men, whom he happened to fall in with, Colonel Wood contrived to reach a bit of woods, where they lay concealed for four days, when the little party was captured by some Southern soldiers. On partially recovering from his wound, Colonel Wood was sent to Richmond and there ordered to be executed; but the sentence was not carried out, and after a time he was exchanged. Returning to Brooklyn, he was received with all the acclaim due to a hero, and on October 20, 1863, received the nomination for Mayor and was elected by a rousing majority, his leading

opponent being Mayor Kalbfleisch, who certainly deserved better treatment at the hands of the voters. But it was a time when war heroes were the idols of the public and could get anything they sought from an admiring populace. Although he did not go to the front, Kalbfleisch probably accomplished a thousand times the service that his rival could have claimed credit for, but then "the consecration of battle," as the orators used to call it, did not figure in his record. Wood made a good Mayor, devoted himself to the best interests of the city, and after his term was over filled several minor offices in the gift of the National Government, and then went abroad.

Samuel Booth, in 1866, succeeded Colonel Wood as Mayor. Mr. Booth was born in England in 1818, but was brought here while yet an infant, and had resided in Brooklyn from the tenth year of his age. He learned the trade of carpenter, and in 1843 started in business on his own account, steadily pressing upward until he was at the head of a flourishing establishment. After a long and honorable record in various public offices, and winning much personal popularity as chairman of the local Bounty Committee, which disbursed some \$3,800,000 to the soldiers and their relatives, he found himself, on entering upon the office of Mayor, in 1866, in the awkward position of having the Board of Aldermen mainly made up of political opponents, and presumably, for party purposes, ready to defeat any policy upon which he might enter. This position of things lasted during his entire term, but his own sterling honesty safely carried him through and he retired with the good will of the citizens generally. Afterward he became Postmaster of Brooklyn, and when he quitted that office, in 1874, enjoyed many honors as a private citizen,—honors which came to him willingly from all classes of his townspeople.

The succession to the Mayoralty again brought Martin Kalbfleisch to the front, and

that sturdy Hollander held the reins of power when the period allotted to this chapter came to a close. He proved as safe and successful an administrator of the city's affairs in time of peace as he had during the eventful years of his previous administration when the issues of the war dictated everything, and in 1868 he had the satisfaction of seeing Brooklyn advance with greater strides than ever before to queenly rank among the cities of the country.

One of the most significant movements of this period was that tending to consolidation with New York, although consolidation itself was hardly more than broached in public. Much of this arose from the fact that Manhattan Island was so overwhelmingly Democratic that those opposed to that party could see no way of thwarting its influence other than by legislative enactment. In 1855 Fernando Wood was elected Mayor of New York City and held that office until 1858, when he was defeated by a fusion candidate, Mr. D. N. Tiemann. On the conclusion of the latter's term Wood again became a candidate and was elected, serving until the close of 1862, and afterward entering Congress. He was a man of strong personality, a natural leader of men, and brim-full of ideas, progressive in his own way, determined to achieve his own purposes and overcome opposition, and without any of those nice scruples which sentiments of honor and honesty inspire in lofty or even well-trained minds. Like so many other "local statesmen," Wood began political life as a reformer and ended as a partisan with all the qualities which that designation implies in American politics. He had no broad views on any subject, he was not a statesman; nothing but a politician, and that, too, of a purely local type. He saw nothing beyond New York, and took no interest in the Nation, except as events in it affected his bailiwick. With a firm and united Democratic majority behind him in New York, he cared little for outside affairs, and it was this sentiment more than

any real approval of the threatened Southern secession that led him, when the crisis became acute, to publicly suggest that New York City should secede from the Union and become an independent State, dragging with her into her loneliness Brooklyn and Staten Island. Afterward public opinion, the only thing he feared in this world, showed him he had gone too far, and he slid down from his top-lofty position with all the skill he could command. It was this steady and crafty manipulation on the part of Wood and his followers to increase and solidify the Democratic strength of Manhattan Island that led the opposition party to concoct measures calculated to offset his schemes, and one of the first of these was to take the control of the local police out of his hand, for it was only too clearly self-evident that that force was being used by him as one of the most effective agents in perpetuating and strengthening his local party, and, as has been said, a strong local party was all that he cared about at that time. Accordingly, in 1857, a bill passed by the Legislature became law, under the signature of Governor J. A. King, which united the police of New York, Kings, Westchester and Richmond counties and the towns in Queens county into what was called the Metropolitan District, and which was to be governed by a board on which the Mayor of New York had only an ex-officio seat, as well as had the Mayor of Brooklyn, while the real power over the entire force was vested in the appointed commissioners, the most notable of whom was the late J. S. T. Stranahan. For a long time Mayor Wood tried to defy the Legislature and endeavored to retain intact the old municipal force in his immediate jurisdiction, thereby giving to the world the spectacle of two sets of Dogberrys doing exactly the same work and often coming into actual collision in doing it. In the long run Wood was forced to bow to the superior authority of the State and yielded ungraciously, but Brooklyn from the first loyally accepted the mandate. It was this union that was gen-

erally regarded as the first actual step toward consolidation, and it was his experience as a Commissioner that led Mr. Stranahan to become impressed with the view which governed his later years that the destinies of Brooklyn and New York were one and the same, were inseparable, in fact, whatever they might be in name, and that neither could reach the full fruition of metropolitan greatness until they were united into one compact municipality. It must be said that under the Metropolitan Police law, bad as it was, Brooklyn was much better protected than under her former independent force; but the enforcement of the measure led to another unexpected and unbearable evil. Like New York, Brooklyn was a Democratic stronghold, although its type of Democracy was purer and less identified with municipal scandal than had been prevailing for some time on Manhattan Island. But the police law demonstrated the ease with which local affairs could, when occasion required or party exigencies demanded, be directed from the headquarters of the State Government, and as a result of the devious ways of politics Brooklyn for a long time,—virtually during the period covered by this chapter,—was deprived, on many and important occasions, of the privilege and right of home rule which had hitherto been her boast. But the system of meddling in purely local affairs on the part of the State was discovered, after a few years of practical test, to be a bad one for both parties, equally dangerous to both, and Republicans as well as Democrats proclaimed against it with gratifying results when the Tweed gang obtained a foot-hold in State politics and ran things to suit themselves in a manner that finally aroused the people to action irrespective of party.

That the Metropolitan Police act proved a benefit to Brooklyn was due more than all else to the energetic and public-spirited labors of Commissioner Stranahan, who then began to acquire that degree of public confidence and personal popularity which later won for him



the unquestioned title of "First Citizen of Brooklyn." Mr. Stranahan was born at Peterboro, New York, in 1808. In 1832 he became associated with Gerrit Smith in business in Oneida, and in 1838 was a member of the State Legislature. In 1840 he took up his residence in Newark, New Jersey, where he remained four years, engaged in railroad promotion and the actual building of railroads. In 1844 he settled in Brooklyn, which continued to be his home until the time of his death.

Mr. Stranahan at once took an active part in local affairs, ran for Mayor and was badly defeated, and from 1854 to 1857 was a Representative in Congress; but his first real work for the city was accomplished on the Police Commission, of which he was a member. Thenceforth until laid aside by the weight of years his life story was really a part of the history of Brooklyn. It was in 1860 that he began his association with the public improvement with which his name is yet closest connected and which accomplished the most lasting good,—the inauguration of the movement which gave to the city its famous Prospect Park.

That beautiful enclosure now contains some 516 acres, and is not only a park for health and recreation, but a memorial of the famous battle of Brooklyn, for that sanguinary episode of the War of the Revolution was fought mainly within its boundaries and those of the adjacent Greenwood. At Prospect Hill, or Lookout Hill, a stately shaft was erected by the Sons of the American Revolution in 1895, in memory of the 400 Maryland soldiers who fell in that battle while defending the retreat of the American army to the Brooklyn fortifications, when it was seen that the day was to end in the defeat of the Patriot cause. This memorial helps to remind the visitor that he is treading historic ground. The first Board of Commissioners appointed by the act to "lay out a public park and parade ground for the city of Brooklyn" comprised J. S. T. Stranahan, T. H. Rodman, E. W. Fiske, R.

H. Thompson, Thomas G. Talmadge, Stephen Haynes and Cornelius J. Sprague; but it is no disparagement to the services of the others to say that the leading spirit among them all, the most persistent and indefatigable worker, the one who was least disheartened at delays and annoyances, was Mr. Stranahan.

As soon as the commission was organized Egbert L. Viele, who had prepared the plans for the laying out of New York's Central Park and saw them carried through their initiatory stages, was appointed chief engineer of Prospect Park and drew up the original plans on which work was commenced, the park territory being then bounded by Ninth avenue, Douglass street, Washington avenue and the Coney Island road. The outbreak of the Civil War summarily arrested this great public improvement, Viele resigned his office and hurried to the front, and until the conflict was over little could be done with the scheme but to watch and plan and wait. With the return of peace came renewed effort, and in 1865 a revised plan for the enclosure was prepared by Olmsted & Vaux, the most famous firm of landscape architects then in the United States. This plan suggested the addition of new lands and the abandonment of some parts of the original scheme, and by successive legislative enactments the suggestions were all given practical endorsement and accomplishment by 1868, and in 1871 most of the general improvements were completed and the grand people's garden and playground was dedicated to public use. Mr. Stranahan continued to act as president of the Board of Commissioners until 1882, when a new board was appointed by the Mayor, of which Mr. William B. Kendall became chairman, and that body continued to direct its fortunes until it was placed in charge of the Commissioner of Parks, when the entire system of Brooklyn's breathing places was ruled as a department of the municipal government.

Since 1865 the story of Prospect Park is one of continuous improvement, beauty added

to beauty, and the work is still going on, every year developing some fresh charm, seeing the completion of some design, and the whole being carried on with a liberal expenditure which speaks volumes for the tastes of the city; for the history of the park belongs to the city, the now existing borough merely carrying on and maintaining the work. The principal entrance, the Plaza, is on Flatbush avenue, where stands the magnificent arch

surroundings of the park at the Plaza are most artistic and a constant source of delight to the eye. Beside the entrance stands a bronze statue of Mr. Stranahan, erected during the lifetime of that most estimable gentleman as an evidence that Brooklyn was not ungrateful for the many years of toil and thought he had given to her best interests. The park contains several other memorials, notably the bronze statue of Abraham Lincoln,



MUNICIPAL ARCH, ON THE PLAZA, BROOKLYN.

erected by Brooklyn in memory of those of her sons who fought in the Civil War. This pile is now surmounted by a bronze quadriga by Macmonnies, the Brooklyn sculptor whose home has been in Paris for many years, and the whole structure is one of those artistic achievements which give distinction wherever they are seen. Beside this memorial is one of the modern wonders,—an electric fountain,—and across the Plaza is a splendid bronze statue of General G. K. Warren. The whole

erected on the Plaza in 1869 by a popular subscription, but afterward removed to its present site beside the lake, busts of Beethoven, Mozart, Washington Irving, Thomas Moore and John Howard Payne, and a pair of bronze panthers which guard the entrance at Third street. There are within the enclosure some eight miles of drives, fourteen miles of pedestrian roadways and a lake covering about sixty-one acres, while from the top of Lookout Hill is one of the most interesting

panoramic views to be seen in or around the Greater New York. Flocks of sheep nibble the grass on the meadows, swans and other water fowl make their homes on or beside the lake, a deer paddock and a bear garden add to the interest or amusement of visitors, while on the top of a low hill is preserved sacredly an old Hebrew burying ground placed there long before the park was thought of. As it stands to-day Prospect Park is eminently a people's popular resort. It is used for games, rambles and rest, and in summer music is provided twice a week to lighten the hearts of the multitude. In the park all tastes are gratified. One can mingle with the passing throng or find solitude as deep and as quiet as though a thousand miles away from a busy, bustling, prosperous city, with its accompanying noises and distractions.

Thanks to the forethought and public spirit shown in the acquisition and development of Prospect Park, Brooklyn possesses a magnificent variety of such resorts, some of which are even yet only in course of preparation for the public needs. Forest Park, for instance, some 550 acres, mainly of woodland, on the heights between Ridgewood Park and Richmond Hill, will be a source of delight to all lovers of the artistic and beautiful when the plans now in process of unfolding are completed or nearly so, and Dyker Beach Park, 144 acres, at Fort Hamilton, will be prized as a beach resort. Bedford Park is now contained in four acres of the Spanish Adams estate and boasts an old colonial mansion, and Tompkins, City, Winthrop, Ridgewood, Canarsie Beach, Cooper, and a dozen others all scattered through the borough, as well as open spaces innumerable, show that the builders of Brooklyn have been thoroughly mindful of a city's necessities in the way of breathing and recreation places.

To describe these in minute detail would be going beyond the province of this work, but a few lines may be devoted to Fort Greene Park (sometimes called Washington Park).

We have already mentioned the acquisition of a Fort Greene Park, a portion merely of the present enclosure. In 1847 the people petitioned the Legislature for the necessary authority to purchase all the land generally spoken of as Fort Greene, so that it might be reserved as a park, and as soon as this authority was obtained the land was secured and laid aside for public uses. It contains thirty acres and has cost the city, for land, improvements and maintenance, something like \$2,000,000;



OLD JERSEY PRISON SHIP

but even this great expenditure has proved a splendid investment, for with the exception of Prospect Park Fort Greene has become the most frequented and generally used of the city's pleasure grounds. It is at once a memorial, a tomb and a playground. It was one of the central points in the line of defense at the battle of Brooklyn. It was before that crisis thickly wooded, but when the issue came the wood on its crest was hurriedly cleared and a fortification was constructed on which five guns were mounted. It then received the

name of Fort Putnam. During part of the battle of August 27, 1776, General Washington stood there and watched the progress of the conflict with an agonized heart as he realized only too surely, as soon as he learned that the line of defenses had been turned, that victory was not to rest with his forces. In the War of 1812 it again formed a link in the chain of defenses, and was then christened Fort Greene. In one of its slopes is the tomb in which lie the bones of the Patriots who died in the prison ships in the Wallabout during the Revolution and were originally buried with scant ceremony, or rather with brutal lack of ceremony, in the sandy soil of its shore. The park is now handsomely laid out in walks, lawns, terraces, and is completely enclosed by a stone wall. From its highest point a splendid view may be obtained, while for nine or ten months in each year it affords a pleasant place of quiet relaxation for all classes of promenaders.

Brooklyn's entire system of public parks, now under a single head—a Park Commissioner—has a combined area of 1,649 acres. In addition many of the driveways, such as Ocean Parkway, Eastern Parkway, Fort Hamilton avenue, Bay Ridge Shore Drive, Eastern Parkway, Bay Parkway and others are virtually to a great extent public parks and are used as such. These driveways are in the care of the Park Commissioner, and form an aggregate of roads and drives, including all varieties of scenery, of some forty miles.

As the city extended the street railways continued to multiply and push out in all directions, sometimes indeed anticipating the line of progress by pushing their rails into what seemed a wilderness. In 1862 the Coney Island Railroad from Fulton Ferry to the beach was completed, covering a distance of eleven miles and forming the longest car line in the city. In one particularly important detail the Brooklyn street cars were far superior to those of New York at that time, the former being heated by small but sufficient stoves

which maintained a comfortable degree of heat even in the bleakest weather. But in most other respects, in frequency, regularity and what might be called ubiquity, Brooklyn's system of transit was then far superior to that prevailing on Manhattan Island.

Brooklyn, however, had need of all such facilities, for her business was extending in all directions and homes were springing up in all sorts of suburbs, in spite of the war-cloud which hovered over the land all through the years covered by this chapter. In fact while private enterprise may have to some extent hesitated, and undoubtedly did so, the city itself seemed to press forward with conceivable improvements. On December 4, 1858, a water supply from Ridgewood was first used, although it was four months later, April 27 and 28, 1859, before the people found time and opportunity to appropriately celebrate the improvement, which they did by a monster parade, listening to orators and illuminating the city. Before the close of the next year a site was secured on Montague street, at a cost of \$41,000, and the erection of the Academy of Music was begun by a corporation with a capital of \$150,000. The building was opened in January, 1861, and has since been the scene of many a brilliant and historic gathering.

The intellectual interests of the city were not forgotten. In 1857 the Mercantile Library Association was formed; and the Young Men's Christian Association, organized in 1853, was soon noted for the success of its work. In 1855 the number of churches was computed at 113, with several in course of construction, and indeed it would be a curious year in the story of Brooklyn that could pass without several such edifices being erected. The steadily increasing rise in the value of land on Manhattan Island and the difficulty of access to its remoter parts, which then practically meant all of it north of Thirty-fourth street, made many of her manufacturers take advantage of the cheap land in Brooklyn or its immediate vicinity, where there was also excellent transit

facilities much more moderate than in Manhattan. Land could be bought in the neighborhood of Brooklyn, in extent enough whereon to erect a factory and surround it with a group of workers' houses, for less than such a block could be rented on Manhattan within an hour's team travel of the City Hall. So in and around the city, notably in Greenpoint and Williamsburgh, factories of all sorts began to spring up, steel works, shipbuilding works, sugar works, printing offices, breweries, chemical works, color works, oil refineries,—it is difficult to enumerate them all,—and each of course had an influence not only in attracting new residents but in developing the city in their respective sections. As fast as population increased the system of street transit kept pace. Even the Wallabout district, swampy, unkempt, and ill favored in many ways, felt the influence of the tide of manufactures and enjoyed a share, and the result was that as a manufacturing city Brooklyn, even before the war cloud had been dissipated, felt impelled to claim no mean rank among the beehives of the Union. The policy of the city was to attract such additions to its midst and to make the most liberal arrangements possible to retain them. It also realized the immense advantage it possessed in its water-front and was slowly but surely utilizing it so as to attract as much commerce as possible. The Atlantic Basin had already proved a financial success and had of itself opened up for use a section of the city which had previously been known only to the lone fisherman, the farmer, and the market gardener.

Shortly after the beginning of the period we are treating in this chapter the Erie Basin on Gowanus Bay was begun and in spite of the perilous times and several unavoidable delays was pushed through and completed, and opened for business October 13, 1866. It is a magnificent shelter, covering now 100 acres and protected by a semi-circular breakwater measuring about a mile. It includes ten piers of various sizes, grain stores with a capacity

of 3,000,000 bushels, and stores for saltpetre, chloride of potash and other chemicals as well as general merchandise. Several floating grain elevators are always found in it and each winter about 700 canal boats are laid up in its shelter and many of our yachting devotees keep their crack boats there when the racing season is over. It was of course built by private enterprise but the enterprise was primarily brought about by a desire to aid in the development of the city, a desire which seems to have inspired, to more or less degree, the life of every one who has resided in Brooklyn long enough to rank as one of its citizens. The Erie Basin was a commercial success from the beginning and so continues, although it has shared in the evil fortunes of the Brooklyn Wharf & Warehouse Company, to which its ownership was transferred when that unwieldy and badly managed trust was formed in 1895. On Jan. 9, 1901, a disastrous fire occurred at the Erie Basin, destroying one of its piers and two vessels, besides a great quantity of stores, involving a financial loss, it was estimated, of about \$500,000.

Another notable improvement in the same direction was accomplished by the Gowanus Canal Improvement Commission, which was called into existence by act of the Legislature in 1866. Under it the historic creek, widened and deepened, became a genuine water highway, a mile long in its main line with several branches, carrying what might be called the sea-power right into the city. Along this canal brick, lumber, coal and other yards were soon located, the moderate cost of the land as well as the ample loading and docking facilities commending the whole line of the improvement to those dealers in bulk who could handle their goods either in the way of receiving or shipping by a water route. A boat could leave a brickwork on the Hudson, for instance, and carry its load right to Baltic street, Brooklyn, whence it could easily be transported to any part of the city, saving time and money in transporting and handling. In 1867 a similar

improvement was effected in the Wallabout district, and it may be said that Brooklyn is as well supplied with internal waterways as any city on this side of the Atlantic.

From 1866 to 1870 was a time of marked development in the history of Brooklyn. The war was over, it was a time of upbuilding, rebuilding everywhere, sometimes a little feverish and uncertain, it is true, but in the main healthy and in the direction of repairing the damage and the waste and the delay brought about by four years of disunion, war, hate, and waste of blood, brain, and treasure. In 1867 3,539 new buildings were erected, and in 1868 3,307, a lesser number certainly than that of the previous year but many of the structures of a much more costly character. In 1867 sixteen miles of water pipes were laid and fourteen miles of sewers, giving the city 210 miles of water pipes and 134 miles of sewers. In 1869 there were 150 miles of sewer pipes and 224 miles of water pipes. In 1864 the assessed valuation of the real estate in the city was \$103,593,072; in 1865, \$106,470,308; in 1866, \$113,941,366; in 1867, \$122,748,954; in 1868, \$131,271,141; in 1869, \$179,064,130; and in 1870, \$183,822,789. It must be remembered that the assessed valuation was about one-half of the real market value. These figures are more eloquently illustrative of the material progress of the city than any words could possibly be.

But the city had its drawbacks. On the map it had about 500 miles of streets, but on only about half of these were there any houses, and on little more than a quarter was there sewage provisions. Around the ferry the population was congested,—far too much so for health, and on the less crowded streets the sanitary arrangements so necessary for the public welfare were absent. A house might be found standing on a street, the only dwelling on a block, and beside it would be a swamp, while the water for domestic purposes was procured from a well, without the slightest

thought as to where the water came from or what it passed through. Even in the heart of the city sanitation in the poorer dwellings was almost unknown, or at best deemed only a luxury for the rich. It has already been seen how easily from this cause Brooklyn had received several dread visits of cholera, and in 1860 it found itself in the grasp of an epidemic of yellow fever, which, it was claimed, was brought to the port by some ship or ships from the South. How it did originate, however, is not very clear; but there is no doubt of the stern fact that forty-six cases of the disease were reported and of these thirty-four were found on Congress street. In 1866, however, there came an even more dreaded visitor, cholera, of which there were reported 816 cases. Of these 573 ended fatally, and there were also reported 142 fatal cases of what was described as cholera morbus. The greatest number of cases and of deaths occurred in the Twelfth ward, between the Atlantic Basin and Gowanus Bay, where there was a total absence of sanitary provisions, of abundance of wells and a scarcity of water mains. That the disease did not spread over a wider territory and with even more terrible results was due to the heroic exertions of the medical profession, whose labors during the anxious months of July, August and September were beyond all praise. Through the demands of the physicians a hospital for the treatment of cholera patients was opened at the corner of Van Brunt street and Hamilton avenue, and later a second one, in the City Park. Brooklyn had already become conspicuous for the excellence of its medical service, and during this period it came to the front with remarkable brilliancy. In 1856 the Central Dispensary was established, and in 1858 the Long Island College Hospital and Dispensary was organized, the St. Peter's Hospital Dispensary in 1864, St. Mary's Hospital in 1868, and several other institutions having for their primal object the care of the sick were started on their mission of practical charity and love during the period.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

INTELLECTUAL AND SPIRITUAL LIFE.

LITERATURE—BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY—REV. DR. CUYLER—REV. DR. TALMAGE
—FATHER MALONE.

IN literature the city made little progress as a producer, although as a reading centre its importance was everywhere recognized. Such of its sons and daughters as displayed literary ability found the best and readiest market for their wares in other places, and those of its residents who were practically active in literary work belonged in reality to Manhattan Island or were simply birds of passage temporarily in Brooklyn. This was the case with John G. Saxe, one of the most popular American poets of his day but whose memory, since his death, at Albany, in 1887, seems to have been gradually receding into the dark mist of time, where so many bright and fragrant memories become forgotten. It cannot be said that Brooklyn showed any sign of the possession of a literary cult then any more than it does now. It has been held that Oliver Bunce Bell wrote his "Romance of the American Revolution" and his "Bachelor's Story" in Brooklyn; but both of these are now hardly regarded as literature as time has robbed them of the popularity they once enjoyed. Still Bell could hardly be claimed as having done anything to confer literary eminence on Brooklyn. His interests centred in New York. Frederick Saunders, too, wrote most of his "Salad for the Social" and his earlier "Salad for the Solitary," as well as several of his other books, in his home in Brooklyn, but he carried the manuscript to

New York, where his days were spent and where his real work was done. Brooklyn contained only his "bedroom." Much of Alden J. Spooner's best work was done during this period, and he and Senator Murphy and Gabriel Furman and Gabriel Harrison and a few others might, had they so desired, have won some measure of literary fame for the city they loved so well, but either they did not so desire or the fates were unpropitious, or they wanted a leader and those who might have been leaders like Beecher, or Murphy, or Storrs, were too busy with other matters to attempt to found a literary forum.

In a literary sense the greatest of all these names, the one who might have formed and attained leadership in a literary guild and so given Brooklyn some degree of individuality in the world of letters, was the last named,—Gabriel Harrison,—a man of many and brilliant parts but whose every effort seemed destined to lead to financial failure. Born in Philadelphia, in 1825, he settled in New York in 1831 with his father and early conceived a passion for becoming an actor, inspired in that direction by seeing a performance by Edwin Forrest at the Park Theatre in 1832, it is said, although children of seven years of age are not generally bothering much about a vocation to carry them through life. However this may be, he made his first appearance as an actor in Washington in 1838, taking the part of Othello

in Shakespeare's famous tragedy. For some time he was interested in photography by the Daguerre process and did work which won the praise of the inventor himself; but there was no money in it. In 1845 he became a member of the Park Theatre Company in New York and in that position lent effective support to Charles Kean. Mr. Furman's active connection, publicly, with Brooklyn dated from 1848 when he first appeared at the Garden Theatre in a round of characters, and so endeared himself to many of its best people that he was persuaded to make it his home. In 1851 he organized the Brooklyn Dramatic Association, and, with the exception of a year or so when he managed the Adelphi Theatre in Troy, Brooklyn henceforth continued to be his home and the constant scene of his labors. In 1863 he opened the Park Theatre, when he produced most of the popular operas and high-class dramas of the day with a conscientious regard for the correctness and completeness of every detail, as well as the ability of every actor, in a manner that was far ahead of the usual run of such things in America. This endeavor, while praised on every hand, involved a degree of expense which the returns did not warrant, and he was compelled to retire from the management under a cloud of indebtedness. Thereafter he acted as manager of the Brooklyn Academy of Music and in that capacity contrived to struggle along for a time.

From his early years Harrison had excelled as an artist and his interest in art had led to his appointment as secretary of the Brooklyn Academy of Design, for which institution he raised enough money to free it from a load of indebtedness and to put its art schools on a satisfactory footing. His own artistic work was then winning recognition and he was enabled to dispose of as much of it as he cared to finish and put on the market, but his conscientious scruples of only sending forth the very best of which he was capable or which seemed to him to come nearest to his high ideals, kept him from realizing all that his

brush might have brought him. As an artist his best known work is a portrait of Edwin Forrest as Coriolanus, although some of his landscapes are worthy of a generous meed of praise. But his main business from the time he left the Academy of Music was that of a man of letters. In 1872 he organized the Forrest Club of Brooklyn, with the idea of its becoming a literary and dramatic society of some influence, but it passed away after an existence of a few years sans accomplishment. In the same year he published "The Life and Writings of John Howard Payne" (Albany, 1872), and it is to his efforts that Brooklyn is indebted for the bust of that author which now adorns Prospect Park. He adapted Hawthorne's "Scarlet Letter" for the theatre and wrote "Melanthia," a tragedy, as well as a number of dramas, most of which were produced on the stage but failed to obtain any hold on the public and are now forgotten. After doing a good deal of literary work of one kind or another his health failed and he was laid aside for several years by nervous prostration, during which he accomplished little except a graphic chapter on the drama in Brooklyn for Dr. Stiles's work, the "History of Kings County." In 1887 he became a teacher of elocution in Brooklyn and so continues.

The story of the newspaper press during the period was about as barren of incident as the general literary field was barren of living results. The Eagle had obtained a standing as the leading local newspaper in point of circulation and influence and zealously and worthily strove not only to increase its grip but to strengthen it. In this it succeeded to a greater extent than even its owners probably anticipated. There was a constant issue of new literary street and family papers which fluttered for a brief time and then disappeared, filling during their existence no felt want and passing away without leaving any sign. There were, too, several attempts made to establish new daily or weekly newspapers without capital or connection or public purpose, and meet-

ing with the usual fate. "The Signal," in 1855, ran a brief course of six weeks as an evening paper and then ceased; and the same year saw the beginning and end of "The Brooklyn Independent," a weekly organ which was to proclaim the views of men who were bereft of a party and wanted to find shelter somewhere again. "The City News," begun in 1859, for a time was looked upon as a successful competitor of "The Eagle," but whatever measure of success it had was of but brief duration, and in 1863 it was consolidated with "The Union." That paper was first issued Sept. 14, 1863, as a Republican organ and had a marked measure of success while the war lasted. After that it began to decline and in 1870 its original owners disposed of it to Henry C. Bowen, and Stewart L. Woodford (afterward Minister to Spain) became its editor. In 1872 the proprietorship again changed hands and Theodore Tilton became editor. In 1866 "The Brooklyn Argus" appeared, as a weekly, becoming a daily in 1873, and it continued to be published until 1877, when it was merged in the "Union," which then became the "Union-Argus."

One literary development of moment in Brooklyn was the increase in the number of public libraries. The Mercantile Library Association, organized in 1857, got together a large collection of books and its classes and lectures were for years features of the higher social life of the city. In 1867 the Brooklyn Library was housed in its commodious building in Montague street, where it now has a collection of 150,000 volumes, including a special collection of 3,000 reference works. The Library of the Long Island Historical Society dates from 1863 and now numbers 62,340 volumes. Brooklyn of the present day, while it contains no single institution which can take rank as a great library, is abundantly provided with institutions of a thoroughly practical sort, so that the citizens so inclined can really command the world's current literature free of any cost. The free library of the Packer Institute

has 67,906 volumes, and there are quite a number of smaller institutions the uses of which are free or available by payment of a small sum.

In Brooklyn, too, is one of the latest and most effective developments in the way of a really useful public library which, while it is still in the experimental stage, seems certain of success in application and rich success in results. The Brooklyn Public Library has for its object the development of a municipally controlled institution on the lines of the largest possible free circulation of books, and under the new regime has progressed rapidly. Its municipal control gives to Brooklyn the honor of proclaiming as her own the only municipal library in Greater New York. The Long Island City Library, while being conducted upon the same lines, is much less extensive, and the New York Free Library is still to some extent under corporative control. The definition of a free library, as given by the State Board of Regents, voiced by Mr. Melvil Dewey, is "one owned and controlled by the city."

In February, 1899, the library came under municipal authority, and Mr. Arthur E. Bostwick, who was formerly chief librarian of the New York Free Circulating Library, was placed at its head. Mr. Bostwick is a graduate of Yale College and has taken the degree of Ph. D. He is well known in library circles, being extensively affiliated with library interests. He has twice occupied the Presidency of the New York Library Club, and is now President of the Long Island Library Club.

The library is the product of the Brooklyn Public Library Association, the association in turn being the outcome of the interests in free library extension, as upheld and proclaimed by the Woman's Library Association, of which Mrs. Mary E. Craigie was chief pioneer.

At the time of the city's assumption of the library it consisted of the main branch, at 26 Brevoort Place, and the Bedford Park branch. Since that time there have been added five

branches: Williamsburgh, 380 Bedford avenue; East, 29 Pennsylvania avenue; South Brooklyn, 1147 Fourth avenue; and Flatbush, 5 Caton avenue, opened as Flatbush Free Library, and transferred to Brooklyn Public Library in January, 1899. The latest branch established is Prospect Branch, at Litchfield Mansion, Prospect Park, used at first as a station for the traveling library department: it later became of the same character as the other branches. The situation of this branch, which is an important one, is but temporary, the site chosen for its permanent quarters being at Sixth avenue and Third street.

Originally the library contained some 20,000 volumes; to-day there are 50,000 volumes. The library's worth is best judged by the city's recent appropriation of \$80,000 for its next year. This is twice the amount appropriated in 1899. To this \$20,000, conditionally available, may be added, to be used for maintenance of established free circulating libraries, when they shall be acquired as branches of the Brooklyn Public Library. The libraries alluded to are New Utrecht, Fort Hamilton, Bay Ridge, and Union for Christian Work.

Throughout the library the open-shelf system prevails, and is considered by the librarian to be the most desirable method, particularly where the borrower's interest is concerned. The loss, in his estimation, which is a natural outcome of such a plan, is in every way compensated for by the actual good accomplished.

At the main branch, which is also the building of administration, there is a most successful children's department, situated on the ground floor. The building is modern in its appointment and most attractive. Each branch, in so far as possible, is conducted, especial requirements of localities being considered, upon the model of the main branch, the children's department included, even when it is only possible to reserve a corner of a room for them.

The Traveling Library Department, which is at the main branch, is under the direction of Mrs. Mary E. Craigie, Assistant Librarian.

The privileges of this department for schools, literary clubs, etc., are just beginning to be realized, and will be more used by them as the advantages become known.

It is the directors' object to co-operate more and more, not alone with schools, but with all institutions of learning and progress. It is a matter of great encouragement that the reception of the library branches has been most enthusiastic, the borrowers being all the time on the increase; and whereas ordinarily in the establishment of a free institution gifts of money, etc., are a proof of progress, the greatest possible evidence for the future success of the library lies in the ability of the people to appreciate their own needs; the consequent demand being best supplied and strengthened by one who, having already been helped by the institution, in turn becomes interested. An actual gift of money from one not appreciative of the library's privileges does not voice to the same extent the people's progress in culture. Mr. Bostwick is an advocate of complete organization in the administration of the library.

The apprentice class in connection with the library, while it is under the control of the librarian, is more directly under the supervision of Miss Theresa Hitchler, the library's chief cataloguer. It is an institution of merit. Six months' free service to the library entitles the applicant, after passing civil service, to take competitive examination for entrance on the force of the Brooklyn Public Library.

Beginning with the main branch, each library will eventually contain an art and a music department. Unity of purpose and determination in pursuit of the highest interest of the institution committed to their charge is upheld to the entire force of the Brooklyn Public Library by its chief librarian.

The aims and scope of the Brooklyn Public Library have been treated at some length here because they are so perfect and far-reaching as to make the institution a model one and worthy of careful consideration by all engaged in such work or planning a similar



Thos. L. Gayler

design of municipal usefulness. Just as this volume is about to go to press, however, the munificent gift of \$5,000,000 by Andrew Carnegie to establish a group of popular libraries throughout the Greater New York has been announced and the problems occasioned by the princely donation are being thought over by the local leaders in library work. So far, as seems likely the main policy to be adopted will be a unification of all existing public libraries under the management of one central body and the erection of what may be termed "Carnegie library" buildings throughout the municipality. Brooklyn, of course, getting her share. Manhattan's great libraries—the Astor and the Lenox—are already united, and with the money left by Samuel J. Tilden as a perpetual endowment, will have their headquarters in the New York Public Library Building now in course of erection by the city (and at the cost of the city) on Fifth Avenue and Forty-second street. This will likely be the heart of the entire library system of the Greater City, and when these details are perfected the work of the Brooklyn Public Library may be changed somewhat, but meantime it carries on its beneficent mission to the best of its ability and present resources, regardless of what the future may have in store, or rather confident that the future will only bring progress and improvement.

It is impossible within the limits of this work to attempt to follow with any degree of detail the progress of its churches during the time covered in this section. It was a time of great spiritual activity in all directions and the churches were represented in every movement. Pastors and people were drawn together in all walks of life and in all pursuits, and the clergy were no longer a class who dwelt apart, but men who boldly grappled with all the questions of the day, questions concerning local and National government, the war, the claims of peace, and the regeneration of the Republic after its baptism of fire. In

this Henry Ward Beecher led the way and set the fashion, and it was his intense, throbbing sympathy with men around him and in measures of even passing moment that made the platform of Plymouth Church become a forum of the people as the pulpit had not been since the days when John Knox thundered from that in St. Giles' Church in old Edinburgh and denounced and defied his sovereign Queen—the unfortunate Mary Stuart. The activity of the clergy in all that pertained to the war was most marked, and especially so in all the measures tending to brighten the lot of the boys at the front or to alleviate the sorrow and hardship of those they left at home. To rehearse even that story, to chronicle even those deeds of active interest and loving charity, would alone require the space of a large and portly volume. In these circumstances we must be content with selecting three representative names as illustrative of the rich array of preachers who in this era made the words spoken in Brooklyn pulpits literally ring throughout the world.

In 1860 the Rev. Theodore Ledyard Cuyler was called to the pastorate of the Park Presbyterian Church, then but recently organized. He was born at Aurora, N. Y., in 1822, was educated at Princeton and was minister of the Market Street Dutch Church in New York when he accepted the call to Brooklyn. There his success was immediate and the congregation had to erect a new structure on Lafayette avenue to carry on the work, and even that had to be enlarged. Dr. Cuyler's success was remarkable in that, while not unmindful of the stirring events of his time, he never forgot that he was first of all a minister and that his first duty was to win souls to Christ. His services were purely evangelistic, and all the work of the church, and a royal working church it was, was directed to that prime duty. But he used the religious press to show his standpoint on passing events and especially upon such matters as temperance, charity and missions. He was a graceful and ready writer,

one who could plead with his pen as effectually as with his tongue, and denounce shams and hypocrisies and evils with a degree of force which he would not have been thought proper in the pulpit. He wrote many books, mainly religious, all of which enjoyed a large sale and made his name known throughout the land, throughout the religious world in fact. In 1890 he retired from the active pastorate, but

The second representative selected was a man of different stamp but whose name was even more popularly known—in time—than that of Dr. Cuyler. Indeed for many years his name was popularly bracketed with that of Beecher as a leader in the local church world. In 1834 a Presbyterian church was organized on Schermerhorn street—the Central. It dragged on, doing good work in a quiet way,



TALMAGE'S LAST TABERNACLE, BROOKLYN, L. I.

has continued to reside in Brooklyn and maintained his literary work so that he is still an active power for good. He preaches occasionally in various churches in whose midst he may be sojourning, but his life is spent mainly in his study where he keeps a close watch on the passing events of each day and never fails when the occasion demands it to issue a note of warning or of approval or point a fitting moral to any story which strikes his fancy.

until 1869, when it issued a call to the Rev. Thomas DeWitt Talmage, who accepted, and with his advent the church became a power. He was born at Bound Brook, N. J., in 1832, and his first charge was the pastorate of the Reformed Dutch Church at Belleville in his native state. From 1862 he was pastor of a church in Philadelphia, but while his ministry there was a successful one it was not startlingly so. Some one has said that Talmage

needed the environment of Brooklyn to bring out the qualities which won for him his pre-eminent position. However that may be, there is no question of his immediate success in Brooklyn. Within a year the Central Church became too small to hold the throng of worshippers, and in 1870 the congregation built a new edifice, with a seating capacity of 3,400. Even this proved too small and so it was enlarged to accommodate 500 more. This edifice was burned Dec. 22, 1872, and a new structure rose from its ashes, a magnificent Gothic building with a seating capacity of 5,000, the largest Presbyterian church in the country. It, too, was destroyed by fire, on Oct. 27, 1889. Another new "tabernacle" was erected for Dr. Talmage, but it in turn was consumed by fire, May 13, 1894, and with it ended his pastoral labors in Brooklyn. The regular congregation seemed unwilling to enter upon the burden of erecting a fourth "tabernacle," and the story of the negotiations showed that not one of these buildings for the congregation had ever been a paying investment; that Dr. Talmage had for years received no salary; that there was a heavy load of indebtedness. The regular members were comparatively few, and while each service was crowded with worshippers the collection baskets were poorly filled, and, as one puts it, "the church could not get along with a weekly income of a penny a seat." So the church was abandoned. Dr. Talmage subsequently accepted a call to Washington and that city has since been his home. His popularity as a preacher is undiminished, while as a literary worker the demands made upon him and successfully responded to, indicate that his inordinate capacity for such labor does not weaken with the advance of years.

A typical Brooklyn citizen, an Irishman, a Roman Catholic priest, a Republican in politics, and a loyal American clear through, may be spoken of about here as our third representative Brooklyn clergyman. The Rev. Sylvester Malone was born in Trim, county Meath, May

18, 1821, and came to America in 1839 and at once entered on a course of study to qualify himself for the priesthood, and was ordained August 15, 1844. He was then assigned to the pastoral charge of the little congregation at Williamsburgh. His ministry was a success from its very beginning. Within two years he had filled the benches in the little church building with worshippers, paid off a heavy burden of debt which lay upon it and had started a movement to erect a new and more fitting place of worship. He was a most active man in those early days, his parish was the most extensive, in point of territory, of any near New York, he attended closely to all its parochial needs, and he lectured, visited and planned for the good of his people continually. He early became known as a man of liberal spirit, a sturdy adherent of his own church, but at the same time an admirer of all churches which had for their purpose the salvation of souls. A doubting, an agnostic, "a modern thought" community he had no patience with, then or thereafter. His first principle next to faith was sincerity, and when he found a man sincere he had no trouble in honoring and respecting him, no matter how far their views as to church questions might diverge. These sentiments early won him the love of all classes in the community and that love deepened into reverence as time went on.

In his own congregation he was decidedly popular long before the people of Williamsburgh understood him, and this popularity found tangible evidence in the rapidity with which his plans for erecting a new church was carried out. The corner-stone of the new edifice was laid May 30, 1847, and on May 7 in the following year the building was opened for worship. To it was given the name of the Church of Sts. Peter and Paul, and it at once became a centre of religious and educational activity. It had a congregation numbering 5,000, a parochial school with capacity for 1,000 scholars, a religious library and various church societies, all engaging with enthusiasm

in various details of religious and missionary work.

Thereafter his life was bound up with his church, and his devotion, his eloquence, his sterling Americanism, made it one of the most talked of congregations in a city that has had more famous churches than any other in America. Perhaps the most significant honor paid him was in 1894, when he was selected as one of the Regents of the New York State University. He was equally the friend of Beecher and Storrs, of Mayors Low and Schieren, of Theodore A. Havemeyer and Silas B. Dutcher, of Rabbi Gottheil and Dr. Charles Cuthbert Hull. He retained his popularity to the end of his life's journey and much genuine grief was expressed throughout Brooklyn when it became known, on Friday, Dec. 29, 1899, that Father Malone had passed to his rest at an early hour that morning.

The cause of Father Malone's popularity may best be understood by citing a few extracts from some of his public utterances. Speaking of the New England Pilgrims at a public celebration of Forefathers' Day in 1877, Father Malone said:

The Puritans were the representatives of the principle which forms the nucleus of our present civilization. I remember paying a visit to Plymouth, in company with two Catholic priests. We had not long to stay and it was raining when we arrived at that spot. In spite of that fact we went to the rock and I remember, in all the wet, we knelt down and reverently kissed that blarney stone, thinking that it would do us good to pay that tribute to the memory of the founders of this country. The spirit of liberty which imbued the Pilgrim Fathers has built up the country to what it now is. That same spirit was manifested when we asserted the independence of the nation at large, shaking off the fetters of oppression. It was that same spirit which called us to preserve our liberty during secession. But for the New England element during the late Civil War, we would never have preserved the Union. But for the New England element the Pacific coast would have gone in with the secessionists. It is my honest con-

viction that it was the Puritan spirit which carried the struggle to a successful ending. Of course, all other nationalities aided us, but their struggles would not have amounted to anything had it not been for the energy of the Yankee. As a lover of that liberty which imbued these patriarchs and imbues our present Government, I am delighted to be present with you to-night. I thank you for the warm reception you have given me and I thank you that I have had the opportunity of expressing my sentiments.

An ardent lover of his native land, he had no tolerance for some of the forms which love of Ireland assumed in this country. Speaking with reference to St. Patrick's Day parades, he once said: "What insanity is it that brings St. Patrick from his niche in God's temple to the streets to be made the subject of laughter and derision? Silver-tongued orators fire your enthusiasm; but, harken ye, you are no better nor worse than the people of any other nation. It is true that the Irish have as their characteristic a love even to death of their faith. It seems, in God's good providence, that they are the instruments He uses to counteract the effects of the work of the Reformation in England; for go the world over, where the English tongue is spoken, and there you will find Irishmen. Does this apply to the Irish Catholic politicians, who for their own preferment bring their religion and their race into politics? If you are politicians be American politicians. Your religion and its saints and the apostles of the land dear to you and your ancestry do not need street pageants. Flock to your church, for there alone is the place to give honor to St. Patrick, and there alone you will gain the strength to walk through this world with honor to yourself, your religion and Ireland."

In his "jubilee" meeting, October 16, 1894, surrounded by a host of the brightest men in Brooklyn, men of all shades of religious faith, political complexion and social class, he turned aside in the course of his address from an acknowledgment of the many tributes paid

him to eulogize the American volunteer soldier: "It was the American soldiers who won for us the proud pre-eminence of being the safest and most trustworthy civil organization as a free nation that the world has ever

ful services for fatherland in times of war as in times of peace. The American citizen being the shield in war and the industrious, peaceful member in a great and prosperous nation in times of peace, we can always trust this



REV. DR. SYLVESTER M. MCNAMEE

known. Let, then, the American citizen soldier be forever honored who has done his work so well, and, in doing so, has left to posterity an example of self-devotion and patriotism which will ring joyous notes down the ages, so that American patriotic citizens may always be relied on to do good and faith-

ful services for fatherland in times of war as in times of peace. The American citizen being the shield in war and the industrious, peaceful member in a great and prosperous nation in times of peace, we can always trust this citizen soldier who takes to war because it is in the line of duty, and is at home in peaceful pursuits just for a similar reason. Duty in both spheres of activity gives the citizen a place in the warm affections of the family, in the confidence of the community and in the admiration of the country for which he feels

and bleeds. There may be degrees in my charity, but I am not ashamed to say it, that, all peaceful as is my natural disposition, and is also the nature of my calling, my soul awakens to the highest regard for the soldier of the Union who laid down his weapons of war when peace was proclaimed and went back to the plow and his counting house and the other pursuits which were in his line of duty before he answered the summons to shoulder his musket and be drilled for the terrible conflict."

Perhaps no man ever more truly painted his own character than Father Malone delineated his own in the words with which he closed the address from which the above quotation was made, and with these few words from his own lips this all too brief record of a lovely life may fittingly close. He said:

"I give you an inside view of the workings of my soul for the last fifty years. It labored for God and revealed religion; and in doing so the children of God were never for a moment forgotten and the children of God with me would include even Ingersoll. No one can be beyond my most earnest sympathy. I love to do the most good where it is most needed. Such has been my life in the past—the same it shall be in the future. And while a merciful Father will bless me with health and understanding, I will ever be with Him, always showing mercy, blessing the weak and strong alike, the Jew and the Gentile, the Protestant and the Catholic, the Democrat and the Republican. And you, dear friends, and all who have taken an active part in this celebration, will be remembered by me in time and in eternity."



CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE CIVIL WAR.

THE TROOPS IN THE FIELD—THE ENTHUSIASM IN BROOKLYN—BROOKLYN'S CONTRIBUTIONS TO THE NAVY.

IN THE beginning of 1860 the military resources of Brooklyn included a little over 1,150 officers and men, with vague notions of discipline and rather picturesque ideas of drill and duty. They were good men, most of them, in a fighting sense, but for many years all ideas of fighting had been abandoned, real war was something that might only be encountered in picture books, and the principal aim of the soldier was to wear an original sort of uniform: the more original and outre the more gallant a soldier was he. The Thirteenth Regiment had 250 men on its roll, the Fourteenth had 150, the Twenty-eighth had 400, and the Seventieth 350.

The Thirteenth was in point of years a historic command, for, although only organized in 1847, it was a gathering together of several military companies, some of which could trace a descent, more or less direct, to commands which were ready to do battle on the earthworks in 1814. They included the Brooklyn City Guard, the Pearson Light Guard, the Washington Horse Guard, Oregon Guard, Jefferson Guard, Williamsburgh Light Artillery, and the Brooklyn Light Guard. All wore different uniforms: some had white coats, some had red, and one was rigged up in fac-simile of the old Continentals when the latter were on dress parade. In 1858, when a gray uniform was ordered by the State to

supersede the various fantasticalities, it nearly disorganized the command and the strength of the regiment was greatly reduced. The Fourteenth Regiment came into existence in 1846, and was also made up of a number of separate companies each wearing its own uniform. It was originally known as the Brooklyn Chasseurs, probably for no other reason than that the name sounded much more heroic and dignified than light infantry would have done. In 1861 it adopted the zouave dress, which it wore during the war. This garb won for its wearers the title of "Red-legged Devils," a compliment to the fighting qualities they constantly and gloriously exhibited. The Twenty-eighth Regiment was organized in 1860, when it seemed certain that war was about to be the outcome of the trouble between the States, and when war was inevitable and the North began to put its military force in order it was deemed advisable to disband the Seventieth Regiment. It was a nondescript body, half artillery and half cavalry, and in that form not easily handled. But the men were not lost to the State. The artillery portion organized what was known as the First Battalion of Light Artillery, and rendered good service in manning the forts in the harbor, while the cavalry formed the nucleus of a regiment of horse.

The news from Fort Sumter and President Lincoln's call for troops aroused the utmost

excitement and enthusiastic patriotism throughout Kings county. The existing regiments at once began recruiting, and found no difficulty in swelling their ranks. Money began to be poured out from every quarter to help those who proposed to do the fighting. The city government appropriated \$75,000 to assist the families of those who volunteered. Plymouth Church gave \$1,000, Pierpont Street Baptist Church \$1,077, and others in lesser degree. The Stars and Stripes were floated from every pinnacle, one Roman Catholic priest, Father Rafina, raising the emblem of union and liberty with his own hands on the top of his church, and military companies were being daily formed and nightly drilled. On April 20,—five days after receipt of the President's proclamation,—General Duryea was ordered to send two Brooklyn regiments to the front and selected the Thirteenth and the Twenty-eighth, and three days later (April 23, 1861) the former marched from its armory under Colonel Abel Smith 600 strong, leaving 200 men behind awaiting equipment. The regiment went to Annapolis, and afterward was stationed in Baltimore. The Twenty-eighth, under Colonel Bennett, went to Washington, and was on active duty until the end of the term of three months for which the enlistment of both regiments in the national service had been made. Both commands returned to Brooklyn when that time expired, although it was then beginning to be understood that the war had barely begun.

Writing of the history of the Thirteenth Regiment during the war, General Horatio C. King said: "Many of its officers and men there (on the return to Brooklyn after the three-months term) entered the volunteer service, and it is said that the Thirteenth furnished a larger number of officers from its ranks than any militia organization except the Seventh (New York City). One entire company of the Fifty-first New York Volunteers (Colonel Ferrero) was recruited by Captain Samuel H. Sims, formerly Lieutenant in Com-

pany B. Colonel Abel Smith raised the Eighty-seventh New York, and was killed by accident while superintending the organization. Captain Joseph Morgan, of Company C, afterward became Colonel of the Ninetieth New York Volunteers, in which Captain John Sullivan, of Company A, was a Captain. Captain Morgan also raised and commanded the One Hundred and Forty-eighth New York Volunteers. John Manly was made Captain in the One Hundred and Fifty-ninth New York Volunteers, and was killed at Irish Bend, Louisiana. The Third New York Volunteers, Colonel Abel Smith, Jr.; Fifty-first New York, One Hundred and Thirty-ninth New York, Seventy-ninth New York (Highlanders), Forty-seventh New York, Fifth New York Artillery, and Thirty-seventh New York were indebted to the Thirteenth for many excellent officers. Major John H. Walker, of Rankin Post, No. 10, G. A. R., was taken from the ranks of Company D by General Scott, and made an officer in the regular army. But it is impossible to follow the names in detail. At least 600 of those who were connected with the Thirteenth entered the army and navy and served their country with zeal and fidelity.

"Upon the retirement of Colonel Smith, Lieutenant-Colonel R. B. Clark was elected Colonel, with John B. Woodward as Lieutenant-Colonel, and S. K. Boyd as Major. May 2, 1862, the regiment again responded to the call of the Federal Government, and proceeded to Baltimore, where, after a march of four miles, it encamped just outside of Fort McHenry. The camp was christened 'Camp Crescent.' June 6th four companies of the regiment embarked for Fortress Monroe, thence to Norfolk. The remaining four companies, which left Baltimore June 7th, went direct to Portsmouth, Virginia, and the entire regiment a few days later arrived at Suffolk, Virginia. Here it was brigaded with the Second, Fourth and Twenty-fifth New York and the First Delaware, General Max Webber commanding, relieving veteran regiments.

which were sent at once to the Peninsula. The country around was held by the Confederates, and the duty was both arduous and fraught with danger. The camp at Suffolk was called 'Camp Croke,' after the commander of the Fifth (New York) Brigade, General Philip S. Croke, recently deceased. It formed a part of the extreme left wing of McClellan's army, and rendered very effective and valuable service. At a review by General Dix, commanding the corps, accompanied by General Mansfield, the division, and General Webber, the brigade commander, General Dix complimented the organization as a 'superior regiment.' Picket duty and the usual accessories of war, except actual collision with the enemy, occupied the time until the expiration of the term of service, when, on August 31st, the men turned their faces homeward, and again received a most cordial welcome.

"Again, in June, 1863, and for the third time, the regiment was called into active service, and, with other New York militia, was hurried to the front. Colonel John B. Woodward was in command, with W. A. McKee as Lieutenant-Colonel. The presence of the militia organizations in Pennsylvania enabled veteran regiments to go to the immediate front, and, although no one of them was under fire, their service was of incalculable benefit to the Union cause. They had many weary marches, and suffered privations hard for unseasoned troops to bear. The overwhelming defeat of the Confederates at Gettysburg, and their final retirement across the Potomac, rendered the services of the militia no longer indispensable, and, in consequence of the draft riots in New York, in July, 1863, the Thirteenth was ordered home, and during August did guard duty in the city while the draft proceeded, preventing further outbreak."

Many of the members of the Twenty-eighth Regiment also volunteered at once upon their return for active duty at the front, but the regiment as such did not leave Brooklyn again until 1863, when it was ordered to Har-

risburg, Pennsylvania. It was home again in July to aid in the suppression of the draft riots.

But gallant as these two regiments proved themselves, and ready for any sort of service as the officers and men undoubtedly were, there is no doubt that the fighting glory of Brooklyn was more fully maintained by the Fourteenth,—“the red-legged devils,” which won a record that for endurance and accomplishment is second to no other during the trying years of the great conflict. It was mustered into the service of the United States at first for the term of three months, and afterward for three years. Its story is in brief that of the Civil War, from the time it marched away under Colonel Alfred M. Wood until it was mustered out June 1, 1864. Those who then had not completed their term of enlistment were at once transferred to the Fifth New York Volunteers, and gave abundant evidence that the fighting tradition of the Fourteenth had not suffered by the change of number.

On leaving Brooklyn May 16, 1861, the regiment, under Colonel Wood, went to Washington, and on the 23d of the same month it was mustered into the service of the United States. Then, with its strength increased to 960 men by recruits from Brooklyn, it entered Virginia and suffered much loss in the first battle of Bull Run. There Colonel Wood was wounded and taken prisoner, and Lieutenant-Colonel E. B. Fowler assumed command. Then its war record commenced in stern reality, and it took part in the battles of Manassas Plains, Chantilly, South Mountain, Antietam, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Laurel Hill, Spottsylvania Court House and a host of others, great and small. It was always on the move, always ordered to the front wherever was the danger line, and it could always be depended on to perform whatever task was assigned to it. Under such circumstances its glory was great, but its losses were heavy. At South Mountain it

lost thirty per cent. of its fighting force; at Gettysburg it lost half its available strength, and so on the story of destruction went through the entire service. Needless to say that when, in 1864, the bulk of the regiment was honorably discharged and returned to Brooklyn, the survivors of a hundred fights met with a reception at the hands of their townspeople that certainly repaid the veterans for many a weary march and three years of hardship and peril. When the war was over the regiment was reorganized under Colonel Fowler, who continued as its commandant until 1873, when he was succeeded by James McLeer, now Brigadier-General in command of the Second Brigade, New York National Guard.

On the outbreak of the war, as has been already said, the military fever in Brooklyn rose to a high pitch and separate companies were voluntarily formed in nearly every section of the city, the Brooklyn Grays, the Carroll Hill Guards, Guard Lafayette, Relief Guard, City Guard and the like. When the war was fairly on a number of these organizations determined to unite in the formation of a regiment, and so in 1862 was started the Twenty-third. That command had a brief but honorable experience at the front. The Forty-seventh Regiment was organized the same year and after pretty much the same manner, but was recruited mainly from the military companies in the Eastern District. In May, 1862, under Colonel J. V. Meserole, it was ordered to assist in the defense of Washington, and remained in the service of the Nation until, with the Twenty-third and other regiments, it was ordered back to assist in stopping the draft riots. The Forty-seventh afterward performed another tour of duty at the front in 1863. In 1864 it was housed in its own armory, the first structure of the kind in Brooklyn.

The other regiments in which Brooklyn's sons took their share of fighting at the front included the 15th, 31st, 48th ("The Conti-

mental Guard," recruited by Colonel Perry), 50th, 51st, 56th, 67th (First Long Island, "Beecher's Pets"), 73d, 87th, 90th (organized at East New York), 132d, 139th, 158th, 159th, 164th, 165th, 173d, 176th, 5th Artillery, and the 15th Engineers. Besides these there were many companies of Brooklyn men to be found all through the service, as in the First Engineers, Duryea's Zouaves, Fourth and Fifth Cavalry and several others.

Having thus discussed as largely as need be here the force which Brooklyn directly sent into the field to defend the Union, it is proper to turn to the consideration of what was done at home to help the fighting arm. Besides the call for troops, one of the earliest things that brought the war right home to Brooklyn was an alarm (in the early part of 1861) from the Navy Yard over a rumor (rumors were rife in those days) that an attempt was to be made to destroy it by fire. In some way news of the rumored attack reached Captain Foote, then in charge of the yard, and he at once laid the matter before Mayor Powell, stating that he only had a force of seventy-five or eighty men,—too few to defend the Navy Yard,—and requested assistance so that the property of the Government might be protected. According to the news received by Captain Foote, the plans of the conspirators had been fully made, and made with so much thoroughness that the utmost exertions were necessary,—immediately necessary,—to avert what promised to be a terrible catastrophe. Many at the time doubted the existence of a plot at all,—dubbed the incident "The Navy Yard Scare," and ridiculed the story generally; but afterward it was fully confirmed that a plot to destroy the Navy Yard had really been concocted, although the exact details, so far as known, are not so ample as were those furnished by rumor. However, Captain Foote was thoroughly convinced that a plot was in existence, and fortunately so impressed Mayor Powell with a sense of the seriousness of the situation that the latter at

once placed the Thirteenth Regiment and Colonel Graham's artillery under arms ready to appear at a moment's notice, while an extra force of police (1,000, it is said) thoroughly patrolled the boundaries of the yard, on the river as well as on the land side, watched the ferries for suspicious gangs, or followed any loiterers near the scene of the proposed outrage. The rest of the militia in the city was ordered to be in readiness to take up arms in quick order. Nothing unusual occurred, however, the extraordinary precautions warning the conspirators against making any attempt, and the scare passed over as quickly as it had arisen.

There is no doubt of Brooklyn's entire loyalty to the Government during the crisis of 1861. Doubtless some of the traitorous element which seemed to infect New York had an influence on a few in Brooklyn belonging to the lawless and discontented class, a class seemingly inseparable from all large communities, in the poorer districts, but even of these the number who had any sympathy with the objects of the rebellion was very few. Brooklyn was a loyal city, and it gave many unmistakable evidences of it. Money was liberally subscribed, the Common Council doing its full share, and even the banks agreeing to make loans on terms which at other times would have been rejected, churches and societies voted money, private subscriptions were abundant, recruiting for the army was easy, and more than one corporation followed the example of the Union Ferry Company, which promised to pay the salaries of such of its employes as volunteered to those dependent upon them and to hold their positions in its service open until their return from the front. The members of the Kings County Medical Society promised to render to the families of the volunteers free of cost such medical services as might be needed.

The public interest was also manifested in many and unmistakable ways. On April 22, 1861, a mass meeting of citizens was held at

Fort Greene, at which it was estimated that 50,000 persons were present, and every Union sentiment was wildly cheered. A Union salute of thirty-four guns was fired, and the gathering demonstrated that clergy, politicians, business men and men of all ranks and shades of opinion had thrown down all the barriers which marked out their folds and come right out into the open with the single idea of supporting the national administration at Washington. As Father Malone said, it was no time to talk about mistakes having been made, of this one to blame or that one to blame, to denounce politicians or even to anathematize those who had brought about the crisis. The crisis had come, the flag of the United States had been ruthlessly pulled down, and all should be forgotten until restoration had been accomplished, and the only way to accomplish that was to support loyally and without reservation or question the Federal Government. It was a grand meeting in every way, and resulted in a generous outpouring of money as well as a marked impetus in the enrollment of volunteers for duty at the front. It has been estimated that from April, 1861, until July, 1862, 10,000 Brooklyn men went into the military service of the Government. It should be remembered that no one anticipated the magnitude of the struggle on which the country had entered, and all had underrated the tenacity of purpose with which the Southern States would cling to their Confederacy.

The enlistments for active service in Brooklyn, as in most other places where the loyal spirit predominated, were rapid at first; but when it began to be realized that three months were really to cut no figure in the settlement of the disturbance and that the end promised to be a matter of years, volunteering began to fall off at a most alarming rate. This is not to be wondered at. This is a nation of business men and business is too complex a concern to be easily laid aside for three or four or an uncertain number of years and then taken up again, while even those holding situ-

ations could hardly expect them to be kept open indefinitely awaiting their return. Under these circumstances there was little cause for surprise that the active war spirit should fag a little. The country was in the position of a traveler who finds himself at the bottom of a very steep bit of road. To get over it quickly he gathers up his strength, discovers it to be steeper than he imagined and that he had used up all his energy in the first rush; so he has to wait a little until he recovers a little of what he has wasted, and then, wiser than before as a result of his first experience, he carefully and stolidly plods upward until he reaches the top and finds himself on level ground once more.

But while the enlistments fell off in Brooklyn there were no suggestions heard anywhere in the city that the war should cease except as a result of submission on the part of the seceded States, and every effort was made to encourage the military arm. It was felt that the work entered upon had to be completed. All sorts of inducements were offered to stimulate recruiting. Money continued to pour in to various committees organized to help the families of those who were in the tented field, and subscriptions to provide equipment for new regiments or companies starting for the front were liberally responded to. The Common Council, the Board of Supervisors and corporations of all kinds generally regarded as soulless, gave liberally and promptly. There is no need of going into details or to quote examples. The patriotic liberality of Brooklyn at this juncture was beyond all praise, and the credit belongs to the city at large rather than to the individual givers.

Brooklyn aided in the defense of the Union very effectively also in another way. It was in one of her shipbuilding yards,—that of A. J. Rowland at Greenpoint,—that Ericsson's famous Monitor was constructed. It was launched January 30, 1862, just 100 days after the keel had been laid, a marvel of rapidity, and the strange vessel, almost every line of

which evolved a new idea, was completed with equal haste, but without any sacrifice of essential qualities, so that she was put in commission on February 25th. On March 9th she had concluded her virgin voyage to Hampton Roads, and at once engaged the Confederate ironclad, "Merrimac," which was playing havoc with the wooden ships belonging to the United States Government. The success of the "Monitor" was so immediate and complete that the Government ordered quite a fleet of similar vessels, no fewer than seven additional ones being constructed at Rowland's establishment. Long before the war closed a large number of war vessels of various grades had been constructed in different yards at Greenpoint.

Greenpoint, during the whole of the war period, was an exceptionally busy place, thanks to its shipbuilding industry. The "Brooklyn Union," of March 17, 1864, in referring to this, gave the following summary, after speaking of the succession of monitors built in Rowland's yard:

Though Brooklyn has had to bear its full share of the responsibilities and burdens of the war, its natural advantages and the enterprise of its people have proved equal to any exigency; and the course of our city has been as prosperous and as progressive as in more auspicious times. A satisfactory attestation of this fact may be had by a walk through the outskirts of the city, where costly structures rear their lofty heads, and the busy hum of industry may constantly be heard. The large manufacturing interests of our city,—which exist to an extent that but few of our citizens have any conception of,—are all highly prosperous, and are employed to their fullest capacity.

But it is in that portion of our city known as Greenpoint where the greatest evidences of progress and prosperity are to be seen. Within the past year a dozen or more streets in the Seventeenth Ward, which promise to become the most frequented and important thoroughfares, have been opened, graded and paved, thus enormously enhancing the value of the property in that district. In the same ward

there has been erected within the past eight months not less than 100 first-class dwelling houses and stores, and yet the demand is greatly in advance of the supply. Besides these buildings, there have been erected in the same locality docks, ferry houses and factories, which have largely increased the traffic and importance of the neighborhood.

But, perhaps, the most encouraging feature of Brooklyn enterprise is to be found in the unabated prosperity of the shipbuilding interest. The estimated value of the vessels now building at Greenpoint, including those for the Government, is upwards of ten million dollars, and the number of persons employed thereon is between two and three thousand. * * *

A. J. Rowland has two iron monitors under way. One, the "Puritan," a sea-going vessel (length, 340 feet; breadth of beam, 50 feet; depth, 23 feet), is the largest of the monitors yet built, and is justly regarded as a perfect marvel of naval architecture and strength. She is so nearly finished that she will be ready for launching early in May. The other iron vessel under way at this yard is the "Cohoes," a light draft monitor for coast service. She is 300 feet long, 42 feet wide, 28 feet depth of hold, and 2,800 tons burden. The number of hands employed at this yard will average about 500.

The Dry Dock Iron Works is a young rival of Mr. Rowland's establishment, and was opened last fall by Mr. J. S. Underhill. At this establishment is being constructed a light draft monitor, to be called the "Modoc," and in all respects similar to the "Cohoes," building in Mr. Rowland's yard.

Mr. Henry Steers, at his yard, is building for the Government the sloop "Idaho," a vessel of 3,000 tons, 300 feet long, 44 feet wide, and 27 feet depth of hold. The "Idaho" will be launched within a month from this time. She is built with an express view to speed, will be furnished with two propellers, and contain engines of 3,000-horse power, and will prove a splendid addition to the United States Navy.

A large number of ocean and sound steamers (both side-wheel and propellers), ferry boats and wooden vessels were also being constructed in the various yards.

The Navy Yard was, as might be expected, continually busy during those days of conflict. Besides repairing many existing vessels, the following were constructed at this great establishment between 1861 and 1864:

Sloop "Oneida," launched November 20, 1861.

Steamer "Octorora" (paddle-wheel, double ender), launched December 7, 1861.

Screw steamer sloop "Adirondack," launched February 22, 1862.

Screw sloop "Lackawanna," launched August 19, 1862.

Screw sloop "Ticonderoga," launched October 16, 1862.

Steamer "Shamrock," launched March 17, 1863.

Steamer "Mackinaw," launched April 22, 1863.

Steamer "Peoria," launched October 9, 1863.

Steamer "Tullahoma," launched November 28, 1863.

Steamer "Algonquin," launched December 31, 1863.

"Miantonomah," ironclad, double turret, launched August 15, 1863.

Screw sloop "Maumee," launched July 2, 1863.

Screw sloop "Nyack," launched October 6, 1863.

Screw sloop "Madawaska," launched July 8, 1865. (Engines, boilers, etc., built by John Ericsson).

Screw sloop "Wampanoag," launched December 15, 1864.



CHAPTER XL.

THE DEATH GRAPPLE OF THE STRUGGLE.

BROOKLYN'S MEETINGS AND CONTRIBUTIONS—THE SANITARY FAIR—THE WAR FUND COMMITTEE—REPAIRING THE LOSSES—THE GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.

BEFORE the middle of 1862 had passed President Lincoln and his cabinet felt that a fresh crisis had to be faced, and in view of the falling off in the enlistment a call was issued August 4th for a draft of 300,000 troops to serve for nine months. The quota assigned to Kings county under this call was 4,294. By that time the first glamor of the war was over, the ideas of a short and glorious campaign had been dissipated and the certainty of a long and bitterly waged contest had taken possession of the people. In other words, the conflict was no longer a fad, but a life-and-death struggle, and the sadness of the outlook induced an apathy that seemed inconsistent to thoughtless minds when considered in the light of the previous enthusiasm. It was, however, merely the natural relaxation which comes to nations as to men in times of over-excitement, and that may be regarded as the real solution of the apathy which Brooklyn, and so many other centers of genuine patriotism, showed to this third call of the Government for troops. The response certainly was disappointing. But a public meeting held at Fort Greene on August 15th to consider the situation changed all that, so far as Brooklyn was concerned, and again aroused the same enthusiasm which had marked the opening story of the war. On the day following the Board of Supervisors of-

ferred a bounty of \$50 for volunteers, and this in many cases was supplemented by private bounties. Recruiting stations began to present again a lively appearance, tents were pitched in the public parks, recruits were seen in all directions, the funds for the relief of those at the front were liberally replenished, and it was not long before Kings county's quota was secured and equipped, without any need at that time of the dreaded draft. More men, in fact, had volunteered than were asked for, and recruits were sworn in faster than they could be equipped. From then on Brooklyn had no dubiety about answering every demand from Washington. The financial end of all this enthusiasm was fully met in the long run, although the bounty paid by the authorities before the end of the war rose to as much as \$300 for substitutes for those drafted who had families entirely dependent on their daily earnings. The spirit of patriotism, the bounty, the aliment allowed in certain cases to family, the generous work of the relief boards,—all contributed to make men willing to lay down their peaceful avocations and go to the front. At times, indeed, the city looked more like a military rendezvous than a place of peaceful trade and barter, and from the outlying camps, such as at Union Course, parties of armed men were, for a time, constantly marching through the streets on their

way to the ferry en route for the front. In June, 1863, came another call for troops, and six Brooklyn regiments responded, the Thirteenth, Twenty-third, Twenty-eighth, Forty-seventh, Fifty-second and Fifty-sixth, and before the close of the month every command in the city excepting one,—the Seventieth,—had gone to the front.

In July the extreme peril of the Nation was felt at Brooklyn's own doors, for on the 13th of that month the famous, or infamous, "draft riots" commenced in New York. There was little trouble expected in Brooklyn from its own residents, but the stores at the Navy Yard offered a tempting prize to the disaffected on Manhattan Island and much private property along the water front was practically unprotected against any attack by rioters in quest of plunder. As usual in such moments, there were hundreds of wild rumors circulated which tended needlessly to magnify the extent of the danger. The force at the Navy Yard was strengthened and the armories and all other points where danger was anticipated were zealously guarded. The Seventieth did good service and special volunteers rallied to meet the crisis. A part of Brooklyn's defensive force was sent over to New York to assist the authorities in the protection of public property, and the police remained on duty day and night ready to answer any call. The Mayor showed himself the right man for such an emergency and was constantly at his post, advising, directing and planning, as long as the danger seemed acute. That danger did exist in Brooklyn,—that the forces of disorder were waiting an opportunity to accomplish something,—was realized on the night of the 15th, when two grain elevators in the Atlantic Basin were put on fire by a mob, causing a loss of over \$100,000. The mob even charged the firemen when the latter were engaged in their duty, but were routed by the police. This was practically the only outbreak in Brooklyn of the spirit of disorder which was then widespread in the neighboring city. As soon as

possible, however, troops were sent to Brooklyn in sufficient number to quell any further trouble which might arise, and the citizens resumed their ways without the haunting spectre of red riot confronting them day and night,—a spectre that for a time seemed plainly visible to the dwellers on Manhattan. But it was a sharp and significant lesson as to what might be the result should the force of ignorance and discontent and poverty, which makes for riot and disorder, gain a foothold, even for a brief period.

From that time private generosity fully vied with that of the municipality in equipping troops, increasing bounties and the like, and money was raised in all sorts of ways and with a most generous hand. Perhaps the most notable, certainly the best remembered, outcome of this spirit was the Sanitary Fair of Brooklyn, which was opened February 22, 1864, and by which \$402,943.74 was raised. It was one of a series of similar schemes for raising money undertaken in several of the larger cities, but with the exception of New York, whose fair yielded about \$1,000,000, Brooklyn was far ahead of her sister cities, for Chicago only raised \$60,000 and Boston \$140,000, to give a couple of instances. These fairs were undertaken at the request of the United States Sanitary Commission to aid in its remarkable work among the soldiers in the field, and were only suggested when it was thought impossible to secure more money as a result of further appeals to churches, societies or committees. A great fair was naturally looked forward to as a certainty in New York, and it was first intended that Brooklyn should unite its energies with the good folks of Manhattan in the matter; but after a time, when the movement began to gather a little enthusiasm, the ladies of Brooklyn considered their city big enough and wealthy enough to support a fair of its own, and so the matter was left in the hands of the War Fund Committee of Brooklyn and Kings county and the Woman's Relief Association of the city of Brooklyn. Both of these

organizations had already performed grand service in the charitable work made necessary by the war, the Woman's Association in one year alone turning in to the Sanitary Commission clothing and supplies to the value of \$50,000.

The plan of having an independent fair, rather than devoting their time and energy to what would be simply an annex to that in New York, was starting at a meeting of the Women's Association, over which Mrs. J. S. T. Stranahan presided, and to that lady is due the credit for much of the success which was ultimately achieved. The project at once commended itself to the ladies and was almost at once adopted. The executive committee of their association was thereupon enlarged, the aid of the War Fund Committee was solicited and that body at once heartily endorsed the plan and appointed a committee of sixty to co-operate with the women. This committee at once met and organized by electing Mr. A. A. Low as president. Many meetings were held; Henry Ward Beecher and many of the ministers and political and social leaders of the city entered heartily into the plan, and a splendid spirit of enthusiasm was quickly developed. It was determined that the fair should be, for the honor and the good name of Brooklyn, a grand success; but when one enthusiast, Dr. Spear, mentioned \$150,000 as the sum to be aimed at, he was regarded as a visionary. On December 18th the Women's Association sent out notices all over Long Island asking contributions for the fair. On the following evening the War Fund Committee held a meeting, and after a careful study of the situation and hearing reports on the plan, scope and success of the fair then open in Boston, addresses were delivered by Dr. Cuyler and several others, including Mr. John D. McKenzie, who spoke most effectively from a practical standpoint, and closed by tabling a subscription of \$1,000. Thus incited to immediate effort, a subscription paper was drawn up and passed around, with the following results:

A. A. Low.....	\$2,500
S. B. Chittenden.....	1,000
George S. Stephenson.....	1,000
Peter C. Cornell.....	1,000
H. E. Pierrepont.....	1,000
Henry Sheldon.....	1,000
Josiah O. Low.....	1,000
George B. Archer.....	1,000
Joseph Ripley.....	500
S. B. Caldwell.....	500
A. W. Benson.....	500
R. W. Ropes.....	500
John Frothingham.....	500
J. S. T. Stranahan.....	500
Richard P. Buck.....	500
Henry Sanger.....	500
Henry K. Sheldon.....	500
Ambrose Snow.....	500
S. M. Beard.....	500
Sidney Green.....	500
R. H. Manning.....	500
James P. Wallace.....	500
Cornelius J. Bergen.....	500
Cornelius Adams.....	500
Amos Robbins.....	500
Seymour L. Husted.....	1,000
J. B. Wellington.....	500
John Bullard.....	500
James C. Wilson.....	500
Charles Storrs.....	500
E. B. Place.....	250
H. G. Reeve.....	250
Thomas T. Buckley.....	250
H. K. Worden.....	250
S. E. Howard.....	500
W. H. Lyon.....	250
C. R. Marvin.....	250
James Humphrey.....	500
E. T. H. Gibson.....	1,000

A total of \$26,000. Then the enthusiasm over the plan rose to fever heat and was maintained at that point until the fair was over. Mr. Chittenden offered, besides his subscription, a pair of Devon steers, which he promised to fatten on Yankee corn, and there were promises of other donations.

By the end of December the subscriptions exceeded \$50,000, and the committee began to be burdened with the extent and variety of the contributions in goods. It was intended that the fair should open on February 22, the day fixed for the opening of that in New York; but the management in the latter city found

it necessary to postpone their opening until March 28th. When this was announced Brooklyn determined to adhere to the original date, so that any lingering connection even in name between the two movements was clearly severed. The more emphatic this distinction became the more loyally did Brooklyn's citizens rise to the occasion, and the local enthusiasm spread all over the island. Meetings were held in Flatbush and almost every town in Queens and Suffolk, and the scheme rapidly developed into one in which all Long Island had an equal interest. The Academy of Music was secured for the main display, and arrangements were made for the use of other buildings should they be found necessary, while the Board of Aldermen gave the requisite permission for the erection of whatever temporary structures might be desired. A public meeting in the Academy of Music on June 2, 1864, gave the citizens for the first time an adequate idea of what had been accomplished and of what was expected, and seemed to crown the efforts of all concerned with the assurance of success. Then followed a busy time receiving and arranging contributions of every conceivable sort, devising this and that surprise, discussing one novel feature after another, putting plans in operation and getting everything in readiness. It was an anxious season, too, for the committee, for there was so much to do, so much to prepare and arrange for, that the days and nights all seemed to become too short. In fact, even before it was opened the fair had far exceeded the early anticipations of the workers. The Academy was found to be too small, and a temporary structure was erected on its west side on a vacant lot, the use of which was given by Mr. A. A. Low, while a similar structure was raised on a lot across the street belonging to Mrs. Pierrepont, who gladly gave the fair the use of it. On the Low site the building was named Knickerbocker Hall. It was beautifully fitted up and the whole of the material and decorations used in it were presented to the fair and sold by auc-

tion for its benefit after all was over. On the ground owned by Mrs. Pierrepont was the New England Kitchen, which proved to be one of the most attractive features of the affair. The Taylor Mansion, No. 119 Montague street, had to be called into service and was turned into a museum of arts, with war relics and other attractive features; and even with all this additional accommodation the contributions so poured in upon the committee that it was difficult to classify and exhibit them properly.

Only two troubles seemed at the close of the season of preparation and just before the opening to cause any discord, and these were in connection with the sale of liquor at the refreshment stands, and the raffling off of any of the articles contributed. Many of the contributors were opposed to liquors, especially the ladies, and quite a number looked upon the usual style of raffling in vogue even at church fairs as being a mild form of gambling. These objections led to quite a discussion, but in the end it was decided that as the fair was to be held for a holy and patriotic purpose it were best that it should be conducted on lines that should be free from reproach even by the most fastidious and straight-laced, and so it was decided that neither should liquor be sold nor raffling be permitted.

The fair opened on February 22, at 7 o'clock in the evening, and from then until its close the huge enterprise was managed without a hitch, everything proceeding smoothly, so far as the management was concerned, and the public evidently becoming daily more and more enthusiastic over it. But even the ease with which the business of the fair proceeded bespoke incessant and vigilant care and supervision on the part of the committee, and it may be fitting here to recall the names of those who were most active in it,—most of whom have now passed away. Indeed, it was thought that the care and responsibility thrown upon her by this great local undertaking of love and patriotism hastened the death of

Mrs. J. S. T. Stranahan, who died August 30, 1866.

Of the fair the two presidents were Mrs. Stranahan and Mrs. A. A. Low. The executive committee included, on the part of the gentlemen, Dwight Johnson, Chairman; Frederick A. Farley, D. D., Corresponding Secretary; Walter S. Griffith, Recording Secretary; James H. Frothingham, Treasurer; Hon. James S. T. Stranahan, Hon. Alfred M. Wood, Hon. John A. Lott, Samuel B. Caldwell, Ambrose Snow, Thomas T. Buckley, A. A. Low, Henry Sheldon, Charles A. Meigs, William H. Jenkins, Joseph Wilde, H. B. Claflin, Elias Lewis, Jr., Hon. Edward A. Lambert, Ethelbert S. Mills, James D. Sparkman, Hon. John A. King, Arthur W. Benson, S. B. Chittenden, Henry E. Pierrepont, John D. McKenzie, Hon. James Humphrey, George S. Stephenson, Archibald Baxter, Joseph Ripley, Edward J. Lowber, Luther B. Wyman, W. W. Armfield, Peter Rice, Willard M. Newell, William Burdon and S. Emerson Howard. On the part of the ladies, Mrs. J. S. T. Stranahan, Chairman; Mrs. H. L. Packer, Corresponding Secretary; Miss Kate E. Waterbury, Recording Secretary; Mrs. G. B. Archer, Treasurer; Mrs. G. B. Archer, E. Anthony, H. W. Beecher, A. W. Benson, C. J. Bergen, R. C. Brainard, J. C. Brevoort, T. T. Buckley, W. I. Budington, N. Burchard, A. Bradshaw, S. B. Caldwell, S. B. Chittenden, W. J. Cogswell, J. P. Duffin, J. W. Harper, A. Crittenden, Alfred M. Wood, L. Harrington, G. H. Huntsman, T. F. King, E. S. Mills, Morrell, W. W. Pell, H. E. Pierrepont, E. Shapter, H. Sheldon, J. C. Smith, J. D. Sparkman, G. S. Stephenson, J. S. Swan, A. Trask, J. Vanderbilt and H. Waters.

The committee on finance and donations comprised John D. McKenzie, Chairman; S. B. Chittenden, A. A. Low, Abraham B. Bavis, Peter C. Cornell, E. T. H. Gibson, Richard P. Buck, Charles E. Bill, Reuben W. Ropes, Rufus R. Graves, George B. Archer, James D. Sparkman, Charles A. Meigs, Theo. Polhemus, Jr., Josiah O. Low, R. W. DeLamater, E. W. Corlies, Charles W. Blossom, Joseph Ripley and Thomas Messenger.

The other committees were as follows:

Business Committee: Mrs. E. Shapter, Chairman; G. B. Archer, N. Burchard, W. I. Budington, A. W. Benson, C. J. Bergen, S. B. Chittenden, J. P. Duffin, T. F. King, E. S. Mills, A. M. Wood, G. S. Stephenson, A.

Trask, H. Waters, N. Knight, H. Marchant and A. Crittenden.

Committee on Buildings and Decorations: Gentlemen—Arthur W. Benson, Chairman; J. W. Degraw, John Bullard, Charles J. Lowrey, William Burrell, James How, Cornelius J. Bergen, E. L. Roberts, George F. Thomae, Thomas Messenger, William Hunter, Jr., Thomas Brooks, Joseph L. Heath, George A. Bell, William S. Herriman, Thomas Sullivan, Edwin Beers and J. A. Perry; Ladies—Mrs. T. F. King, chairman; A. W. Benson, H. Webster, J. Humphrey, H. B. Duryea, J. Bullard, H. B. Starr, Coe Adams, N. B. Kittell, W. S. Griffith, J. W. Gilbert, H. Laing, E. B. Litchfield, Miss Charlotte Coles, H. Hunter, Sarah Boynton, H. L. Waterbury and Phoebe Hagner.

Committee on Internal Arrangement and Reception of Goods: Gentlemen—George S. Stephenson, Chairman; Alexander M. White, I. H. Frothingham, L. S. Burnham, R. H. Manning, George W. Hennings, J. O. Morse, James Myers, Edward Anthony, George T. Hope, Samuel McLean, E. H. Stephenson, George C. Ripley, John L. Worden, Captain Radford, Theodore Hinsdale, William H. Swan, Charles B. Loomis, Hon. James H. Tuthill, Alexander McCue, George W. Dow, William Nicoll, Hobart Ford, Elias J. Beach and Hon. James Rider; Ladies—Mrs. G. B. Archer, chairman; G. S. Stephenson, A. M. White, S. H. Low, J. P. Van Bergen, M. F. Odell, Miss C. Thurston, Mrs. S. McLean, J. Maxwell, D. Fairbanks, J. Eells, J. W. Emery, J. C. Atwater, C. B. Loomis, J. C. Smith, E. Shapter, J. D. Sparkman, N. Burchard, A. Bradshaw, J. S. Morrell, T. F. King, W. I. Budington, J. Vanderbilt, Huntsman, W. Cogswell and Miss Wyckoff.

Committee on Refreshments: Gentlemen—Edward J. Lowber, Chairman; Rufus Crook, John Crook, D. H. Gould, A. Dorlan, Amos Robbins, William A. Husted, Isaac B. Wellington, Seymour L. Husted, Alfred Thompson, William S. Dunham, John B. Wright, A. E. Sumner, Robert G. Anderson and James A. Carman; Ladies—Mrs. E. S. Mills, Chairman; H. Waters, T. T. Buckley, H. Marchant, R. P. Buck, A. W. Leggett, J. C. Hurlbut, W. C. Bowers, F. H. Trowbridge, W. J. McClunev, C. Dinsmore, S. B. Gregory, H. Blanchard, George Thrall, A. Burrows, W. Marston, C. H. Sands, E. Fish, S. C. Blake, L. M. Adams, I. Badeau, H. W. Law, W. C.

Goddard, W. Lumby, L. Boyes, William H. Jenkins, N. Putnam, N. E. Smith, John Greenwood, J. D. Cocks, Eli Merrill, F. E. Taylor, H. P. Messenger, Edward Young, J. B. Hutchinson, J. W. Sanford and J. Hall.

Committee on Art Relics and Curiosities: Gentlemen—E. S. Mills, Chairman; Regis Gignoux, Charles Congdon, Gordon L. Ford, John Williamson, R. W. Hubbard, Charles Parsons, M. F. H. DeHaas, Samuel Coleman, Seymour J. Guy, Thomas Le Clear, W. H. Beard, S. P. Avery, P. P. Ryder, I. M. Falconer, I. A. Parker, Jr., J. Remsen Bennett, H. Carmiencke, N. B. Kittell, Charles Burt, James B. Blossom, F. A. Chapman; John W. Frothingham, R. S. Storrs, Jr., D. D., H. W. Beecher, J. Carson Brevoort, T. L. Lutkins, Alonzo Chappell, J. B. Whittaker, H. W. Herrick, A. W. Warren, William McEwan, E. W. Hall and C. L. Elliott; Ladies—Mrs. S. B. Chittenden, Chairman; R. S. Storrs, Jr., H. E. Pierrepont, Regis Gignoux, J. C. Brevoort, E. H. Gibson, John T. Howard, G. L. Ford, A. N. Littlejohn, J. O. Low, John Raymond, Charles Congdon, A. W. Henshaw, R. Vanderbilt, C. Rosire, J. H. Frothingham, Alex. McCullum, Helen Conant, W. H. Dudley, Francis Vinton, G. S. Stephenson, Thomas Messenger, Miss K. Van Nostrand, Rose Thomae, Alice B. Cary, Kate Ripley, Kate Treadway, Kate Taylor, Fay, M. H. Chittenden, Fannie Gray, M. Stranahan, Cornelia King, S. Luqueer, C. M. Olcott and F. Bridges.

Committee on Music: Gentlemen—L. B. Wyman, chairman; A. Cooke Hull, R. R. Raymond, A. V. Blake, C. A. Townsend, Willard M. Newell, George William Warren, William Poole, Edward Lambert, J. F. Talmage, P. K. Weizel, Ph. Mayer, Captain R. W. Meade, Pickering Clark, H. D. Polhemus and T. F. Meynen; Ladies—Mrs. J. S. Swan, Chairman; W. W. Goodrich, R. W. Potter, S. J. Peet, L. W. Serrell, W. B. Acklev, M. A. Bicknell, M. Moore, A. F. Stewart, Ralph Cook, C. E. Adriance, Miss M. L. Rich, Sarah Watson, Mary Shepard, Mrs. R. H. Manning and J. J. Couch.

Committee on Oration and Lectures: H. E. Pierrepont, Chairman; James Humphrey, Benjamin D. Silliman, Judge Greenwood, R. W. Ropes, Edward Whitehouse and Rev. Francis Vinton, D. D.

Committee on Postoffice and Newspapers: Mrs. J. P. Duffin, Chairman; I. R. St. John, T. J. Conant, J. Humphrey, T. Hinsdale, J.

M. Dimond, William Brooks, S. W. Putnam, Miss H. Gladwin, Brigham, Harrison, M. E. Thalheimer, A. L. Jones, Flushing; Kate Hillard, C. Van Cott, M. Stranahan, Mrs. George B. Lincoln, William E. Robinson and George A. Jarvis.

Committee on Benefits, Entertainments and Exhibitions: Gentlemen—Edward A. Lambert, Chairman; Edward Anthony, Charles R. Marvin, Isaac Henderson, John D. Cocks, J. E. Southworth, Professor Plimpton, Moses S. Beach, J. S. Burr, James Hall, Henry A. Kent, Benson Van Vliet, Livingston K. Miller, Theodore Tilton, Elias Howe, Jr., John W. Hunter, James P. Dike and E. D. Plimpton; Ladies—Mrs. E. Anthony, Chairman; H. Farnham, Miss Alice B. Cary, Mrs. J. F. Herriman, N. P. Waring, Hosea Webster, S. E. Howard, Miss L. Oliver, Mrs. D. Fairbanks, Miss S. O. Anthony, A. E. Anthony, S. Farrington, Madame Napolien, Mdle. Millon, Miss S. Blunt, Mrs. McLean, Miss A. Cotton, Marsh, Mrs. E. A. Lambert, Miss C. Coles, Mrs. E. J. Lyons, Hoyt, Miss M. Dunning, A. Hoppin, L. Tupper, M. Luquerr, Mrs. W. M. St. John, A. S. Barnes, Miss Anna Totten and E. Norton.

Committee on Books, Publications and Printing: Gentlemen—Samuel B. Caldwell, Chairman; A. S. Barnes, J. H. Raymond, LL. D., George B. Lincoln, Adrian Van Sinderen, J. M. Van Cott, Birdseye Blakeman, John C. Beale, W. H. Arthur, John N. Taylor, George W. Parsons, W. T. Hatch, Charles Nordhoff, T. H. Messenger, D. Lansing Lambert, F. J. Hosford, J. B. Merwin and John F. Harper; Ladies—Mrs. W. I. Budington, Chairman; J. W. Harper, A. S. Barnes, C. Nordoff, S. E. Warner, S. N. Cutter, W. W. Rose, Isaac Henderson, Miss Laura Marsh, Mrs. Daniel Fairweather, S. B. Caldwell, William Moses, E. A. Lambert, Miss Gascoigne, Mrs. Dwight Johnson, William Swayne, J. H. Richards and S. W. Sarles.

Committee on Seminaries and Schools: Mrs. H. L. Packer, Chairman; C. J. Bergen, A. Crittenden, G. F. Dunning, M. E. Dunkley, William Brooks, Professor Eaton, H. C. Osborn, J. D. McKenzie, L. Miller, D. M. Stone, C. E. West, J. H. Raymond, S. G. Taylor, Miss H. Garahan, Mrs. J. C. Whitcombe.

Dry-Goods Merchants' Committee: Thomas T. Buckley, Chairman; H. B. Claflin, Nehemiah Knight, J. B. Hutchinson, W. C. Sheldon, R. J. Hunter, Samuel McLean, James S.

Noyes, Henry Collins, Thomas Achelis, S. Hutchinson, W. B. Kendall, D. H. Conkling, James Haslehurst, J. C. Atwater, T. W. Prentice, Alex. D. Napier, W. B. Leonard, Charles S. Baylis, H. P. Journeay, George Mygatt, J. L. B. Willard, H. P. Morgan, T. K. Horton, Samuel B. Stewart, Walter Lockwood and Elijah Lewis.

Committee on Fancy Goods: Gentlemen—S. E. Howard, Chairman; J. W. Greene, Henry Sanger, D. C. Robins, J. S. Shapter, Charles Storrs, D. S. Arnold, W. H. Lyon, Abel Dennison, Alexander McCullum, J. Charles Bernard, W. F. Trafton, James R. Taylor, G. H. Taylor, H. H. Dickinson, F. Hinchman, T. M. Spelman, A. P. Hayden, Enos Richardson, George S. Moulton, Carlos Bardwell, Benjamin Carter, Alex. P. Purves and Hy. Elliott; Ladies—Mrs. H. Sheldon, Chairman; R. C. Brainard, S. Gracie, Bryan B. Smith, Hugh Allen, Miss Mary S. Griffith, Agnes Russell, Mrs. D. S. Mills, Henry Sanger, S. M. Beard, H. E. Hunter, J. S. Rockwell, Miss Marv C. Jarvis, Mrs. W. C. Sheldon, I. Badeau, Hermann Garlich, B. P. Lunt, Miss E. L. Howe, Mrs. W. C. Perry, Alex. P. Purvis, T. Achelis, Miss Bertschinger, Mrs. E. Unkart, Miss Susan Nelson, F. C. West, J. Buckmaster, Marv Miller, S. Johnson, Misses H. & S. Duckwitz, Miss C. Fellows, Madame St. Amant, Miss Maria Messenger, Mrs. W. Goddard, H. W. Beecher, W. H. Beare, Horace Warren, S. W. Truslow, William Raymond, Miss Harriet Tucker, Addie Wright, Mrs. Robinson, Miss F. Creagh, C. Bush, A. J. Berry, C. Richardson, Helen Usher, Amelia Beard and Minnie Stanton.

Committee on Boots, Shoes, Leather, Hats, Caps and Clothing: W. M. Newell, Chairman; Aaron Claffin, John T. Martin, Isaac Hyde, Jr., George Dickens, James H. Prentice, Roswell S. Benedict, John Bullard, Edward A. Nichols, A. C. Baldwin, Nathan Southwick, John F. McCov, C. B. Caldwell, Alexander Studwell, Jonathan Ogden, Alanson Trask, Aaron Healy, C. B. Camp, W. B. Button, John O. Whitehouse, J. C. Southwick, Granville Whittlesey, William Higbie, James M. Burt, M. S. Kerregan, James M. Griggs, A. D. Wheelock, John W. Lewis, F. H. Biglow, John B. Woodward and William Evans.

Committee on Grocers and Hardware Merchants: Henry Sheldon, Chairman; John J. Van Nostrand, H. H. Warden, Frederick Lacey, George A. Jarvis, Theodore Victor, S. M.

Beard, Francis Hathaway, Charles E. Hill, Henry K. Sheldon, Solon F. Goodridge, James L. Morgan, Robert S. Bussing, J. S. Rockwell, Alexander M. Earle, G. L. Hueser, E. B. Place, James C. Wilson, William C. Fowler, Eugene O'Sullivan, Edward B. Mead, A. S. Perry, Henry W. Banks, Henry Starr, Edwin Atkins and Franklin H. Lummus.

Committee on Manufactures and Mechanic Arts, Western District: William Burdon, Chairman; B. F. Delano, Richard Poillion, Ship Builders; William Arthur, Henry Esler, Steam Engine Builders; Abram Inslee, D. D. Badger, Founders; Jacob Outwater, David S. Quimby, Railing, Grates and Fender Manufacturers; J. S. Bunce, Norman Hubbard, Boiler Makers; Charles Morris, John Firth, Piano Forte Makers; Robert Graves, C. Van Dusen, Wall Paper Manufacturers; H. Jackson, Albert Bruen, Manufacturing Chemists; Elias Howe, Jr., James Wilcox, Sewing Machine Manufacturers; Thomas Brooks, Bryant Stevens, Furniture Manufacturers; J. W. McNamee, George S. Puffer, Distillers; Samuel Vernon, William C. Duntun, Paper Manufacturers; A. H. Barnes, Birdsey Blakeman, Publishers; William Wise, James H. Hart, Jewelers; Henry Waldron, John S. Masury, Paints and Color Manufacturers; James How, Fisher Howe, White Lead Manufacturers; W. M. Thomas, James Seville, Glassware Manufacturers; John French, Samuel Booth, Builders; John Butler, J. Morrison, Lamp and Chandelier Manufacturers; S. E. Carll, Jonathan Stewart, Upholsterers; G. M. Woodward, James O. Morse, Iron Pipe Manufacturers; James K. Wheatley, T. A. Have-meyer, Sugar Refiners; T. E. Jewell, A. Greenleaf, Jr., Millers; J. S. Willard, Thomas T. Knight, Looking Glass and Frame Manufacturers; James L. Moore, Robert R. Storv, Saddle and Harness Manufacturers; J. Johnston, J. A. Fuller, Brewers; Samuel Ingalls, George Chappel, Camphene Distillers; Thomas Rowe, A. Thayer, Linseed Oil Manufacturers; James Sharkey, John Shustet, Marble Workers; D. S. Warring, George S. Harding, Coffee and Spice Grinders; R. T. Anderson, Joseph H. Mumby, Confectioners; A. M. Vail, Silvanus White, Skate Manufacturers; Patrick Cassidy, Iron Dealer; William Hager, Type Founder; Charles E. Smith, Umbrella Manufacturer; R. H. Hand, Trunk Manufacturer; Wright Ramsden, Plumber; G. J. Vining, Stove Manufacturer; W. M. Brasher, Oil

Cloth Manufacturer; George W. Robbins, Tin Ware Manufacturer; Charles B. Tatham, Lead Pipe Manufacturer; H. B. Whitty, Carriage Manufacturer; R. L. Allen, Agricultural Implement Manufacturer; Hiram F. St. John, Axe Manufacturer; F. S. Otis, Hoop Skirt Manufacturer; W. B. Higgins, Soap and Candle Manufacturer; Thomas Carrell, Tobacco-nist; David Fithian, Sash and Blind Manufacturer; John S. Loomis, Moulding Manufacturer; A. G. Hicks, Pencil Manufacturer; G. W. Hubert, Enamel Ware Manufacturer; J. H. McWilliams, Lock Manufacturer; John Phillips, Charles H. Baxter, Whiting Manufacturers; Richard R. Flanders, Oil Manufacturer; and Julius Ives, Jr., Clothes Wringers. Eastern District: William H. Jenkins, Chairman; Samuel W. Truslow, Cordage; Thomas Rowland, Ship Builder; C. E. Bertrand, Sugar; William W. Armfield, Coal and Wood; James A. Taylor, Iron; Charles W. Fellows, Gas Fixtures; Henry C. Richardson, Hardware; Joseph L. Heath, Builder; Eckford Webb, Ship Builder; A. Leininger, Glass Ware; William Tuttle, Brass; J. B. Wickersham, Iron Rails; Watson Sanford, Stoves; James Hall, Iron; J. A. Heath, Cooper; Joseph Wilde, Coffee; George Wiley, Machinist; C. Dorflinger, Glass Manufacturer; W. Cabbie, Wireworks; George C. Bennett, G. W. Plympton, Hiram M. Warren, Joseph Reaves, William Coles and Christian Neidig.

Committee on Manufactures: Ladies—Mrs. A. Trask, Chairman; Luke Hassington, Theo. Polhemus, Jr., John H. Prentice, Thomas Messenger, David Wesson, A. B. Baylis, Coe Adams, Jos. Ripley, W. J. Miller, J. F. Whitney, A. F. Hazen, J. Curtis, J. P. Wickham, C. Baylis, A. Cruikshanks, Nathan Beers, E. E. Estes, W. Spelman, D. Caven, E. A. Biden, Smith Fancher, A. Jewett, E. L. Bushnell, Peter Rice, L. B. Shaw, William Libby, C. H. Mills, Theodore Ovington, Miss Mary Cosnell, Mrs. F. H. Biglow, N. Curtis, E. J. Houlett, L. Burnham, Miss L. P. Henchman, Mrs. Charles Marvin, L. Thomae, P. Wyckoff, R. H. Manning, and Boyer.

Committee on Produce: Arch. Baxter, Chairman; James P. Wallace, Sam A. Sawyer, Smith J. Eastman, J. H. Holcomb, Curtis Noble, Seymour Burrell, George B. Douglas, Frederick Sherwood, Sidney Sanderson, Harvey E. Hicks, Alex. E. Orr, Smith Fancher, W. D. Mangam, James G. Weld, Hugh Al-

len, Stephen W. Cary, George Tucker, Coe Adams, and Franklin Woodruff.

Committee on Kings County Town Contributions: Gentlemen—John Lefferts, Chairman; John D. Prince, Tunis I. Bergen, Dr. J. L. Zabriskie, Dr. H. L. Bartlett, Robert R. Fox, William Matthews, E. H. Kimball, John L. Ryder, Robert Magan, William Couenhoven, Benjamin I. Hitchings, Bernardus I. Ryder, Charles R. Miller, Philip H. Reid, Rev. Mr. Van Buren, A. H. W. Van Sicklen, J. Ormiston Currie, Col. W. I. Cropsey and Stedman Wright; Ladies—Flatbush—Mrs. J. Vanderbilt, Chairman; J. A. Lott, J. V. B. Martense, J. D. Prince, J. Lefferts, T. J. Bergen, Dr. Robinson, William Wall, J. M. Hood, W. Murphy, M. S. Scuyler. Windsor Terrace—Mrs. Hudson. Flatlands—Mrs. A. Hubbard, E. K. Kimball, P. Couenhoven, Doolittle, Annie Lott. Gravesend—Mrs. M. G. Hanson, S. Garretson, E. Lake, J. Cropsy. Fort Hamilton—Miss Brown. Greenfield—Mrs. G. M. Close. Bay Ridge—Mrs. J. O. Perry, U. Tracy, J. Van Brunt, Fletcher, M. Musgrave, W. Sherman. East New York—Mrs. C. R. Miller, P. H. Reed, A. H. W. Van Sicklen. New Utrecht—Mrs. J. Crane and J. Van Brunt, Jr.

Committee on Long Island Contributions: Elias Lewis, Jr., Chairman; C. H. Vietor, Newtown; William Nicoll, Huntington; D. Bogart, Jr., Roslyn; Hon. Elias J. Beach, Glen Cove; Isaac H. Cocks, Westbury; S. B. Mesereau, Hempstead; James Rider, Jamaica; C. S. Powell, Farmingdale; W. W. & J. Robbins, Babylon; Havens & Prince, Shelter Island; C. N. Brown, Sag Harbor; J. Madison Hunting, East Hampton; H. G. Reeve, Matituck, etc.; Goldsmith & Tuttle, Cutchegen; Hon. James H. Tuthill.

There is little need now to enter into any details of the fair: all that were interesting at the time have by the passage of the years lost their significance, and except in importance of results it differed little from similar fairs which had preceded and have followed it. Perhaps we might recall such labors as that of Dr. Storrs and Mr. Francis Williams in editing "The Drumbeat," the daily newspaper which recorded the story of the enterprise and added largely to its funds, or describe the New England Kitchen, where an old-time interior was

disclosed with ladies in attendance who were dressed up in the style of their grandmothers, where the spinning-wheel was seen in operation, where the huge open fire, fed by logs, not only diffused warmth and thawed the most careworn face but cooked great pots of chowder and of mush and lent its heat to side ranges where were prepared huge dishes of pork and beans, brown bread, puddings and pies all "such as mother used to bake." But these are glimpses: to tell the story of the fair it would be necessary to use a volume, and it is only in the nature of things to confess that the telling would not repay in interest the reader, who would be wearied and certainly not much edified.

But we have to deal with the results. The fair closed on March 11th; and, when the returns were footed up and it was learned that \$402,943.74 had been realized, it is safe to say that there was not a man or woman in Brooklyn who did not feel proud of their city. Of the money thus realized \$300,000 was at once paid over to the Sanitary Commission, and in acknowledging it the president of that body, Dr. Bellows, wrote: "As this is by far the largest amount ever put into our treasury at one time by any community, I feel that it deserves the most marked expression of our gratitude and wonder. * * * Brooklyn, by the only thoroughly approvable kind of secession, has henceforth declared her independence of New York. She has indicated her right and power to lead, and we shall no longer hear her spoken of as an appendix to the metropolis. She is, at least, entitled to be the second volume of that great work, the Commercial Capital, of which New York is the first." Certain it is that Brooklyn was no longer considered by the county at large as merely an annex to the city on Manhattan Island.

The idea of cutting away from New York City found another expression a few days after the fair closed. Up to that time the Brooklyn contributions to the United States Christian Commission were paid through the

New York branch of that organization, an organization that was doing a grand work among the soldiers and sailors in the front as well as in hospitals, forts and camps throughout the country. On March 10 a meeting was held for the organization of a branch of this body for Brooklyn, and in this movement the following were active: Revs. James Eels, D. D.; R. S. Storrs, Jr., D. D.; John H. Raymond, D. D.; W. I. Budington, D. D.; J. B. Waterbury, D. D.; J. E. Rockwell, D. D.; Elbert S. Porter, D. D.; E. H. Canfield, D. D.; Samuel T. Spear, D. D.; Charles S. Robertson; L. H. Mills; C. D. Foss; R. M. Hatfield; Theodore L. Cuyler; Wilbur F. Watkins; William S. Karr; E. Mills; Robert Lowery; Samuel B. Caldwell; Thomas H. Messenger; Livingston K. Miller; S. B. Chittenden; Reuben W. Rogers; Henry Sheldon; Edward Cary; William J. Coffin, Edward A. Lambert; William A. Armfield; James C. Southworth; John D. McKenzie; David Wesson; Lewis Morris; A. D. Matthews; R. L. Wyckoff; John G. Fay; Richard H. Cornwell; Benson Van Vleet; Dwight Johnson; Walter S. Griffith. Before the close of the month these men had fully organized the branch, and chosen Walter S. Griffith, president; Rev. Dr. Eels, vice president; Rev. Dr. Waterbury and William J. Coffin, secretaries, and Samuel B. Caldwell, treasurer. It is difficult to estimate the amount of good accomplished by this organization, which was held to be representative, not alone of Brooklyn but of all of Long Island. It was liberally sustained by gifts of money, books, newspapers, the work of sewing circles and by suitable gifts of all sorts; it supplied ten chapel tents, at a cost of \$5,000, each with a library, and it forwarded large collections of books to many of the hospitals; it sent Christian workers to the front and on the battleships, and carried the reputation of Brooklyn as a Christian community right into the very fields where her sons had made the name honored for their gallantry, and it continued its magnificent work with unflagging zeal until the

central body deemed the time had come that its labors should end.

Then there were many charitable agencies at work, showing how profoundly the local spirit of generosity was touched and how, as the war progressed, and men—under the impulse of patriotism, large bounties, liberal “hand” money and public as well as private payments to substitutes, and rewards even to those bringing in recruits to the recruiting stations—were being hurried to the front to meet the demand for drafts, the apparently insatiable demand of the Government for “more,” the public benevolence seemed to become month after month stronger and more generous and impulsive. The Woman’s Relief Association continued its beneficent work with undiminished zeal, The Female Employment Society performed a rare service among the widows and orphans of deceased soldiers or among families made destitute by the removal of the bread-winner to the front, the Soldiers’ Home Association also carried on a work of mercy and love, and in most of the churches were organizations—sometimes more than one—to aid the fighting man in some way to relieve the distressed, and to comfort those who mourned.

But it is no disparagement to the work of all such organizations, to the splendid achievements of the Women’s Relief Association, to say that the greatest and most inspiring power in all the charitable work of the time was the War Fund Committee. It was organized on Sept. 11, 1862, and continued for three years or so after the war was over. The first members of this committee were J. S. T. Stranahan (president), A. A. Low, Hon. John A. Lott, H. E. Pierrepont, Isaac H. Frothingham, Cyrus P. Smith, William Marshall, J. D. Sparkman, Nathaniel Briggs, Martin Kalbfleisch, John A. Cross, Walter S. Griffith, Conklin Brush, Seymour L. Husted, Abram B. Baylis, S. B. Chittenden, John H. Prentice and Alexander McCue. This body was afterward somewhat changed by the passage of time, but

as a whole those who were active in it at the beginning remained so to the end. Its aims were most comprehensive; its results were most effective. It raised regiments, aided distress, fanned the flame of local patriotism, collected pensions, bounties and soldiers’ pay and handed the money to the proper parties, forwarded letters to the soldiers and sent them nurses; it aided widows and orphans, the sick and needy; it was practically an association formed to second the efforts of the Government, to assist the soldier and to help those dependent on him, and it nobly accomplished all that work. The committee may be said to have fittingly closed its mission by the erection, on the plaza in front of Prospect Park, of the statue of Abraham Lincoln, which now adorns a fine site elsewhere in that beautiful pleasure ground.

The news of the assassination of Lincoln, on April 14, 1864, coming so soon after the intelligence of the surrender of Gen. Lee’s army at Appomattox on April 9 and the virtual closing of the war had roused a jubilant spirit in Brooklyn, plunged the community into the deepest gloom. It was fully realized that another and most unexpected crisis had arisen, and all classes, all shades of political belief, joined hands in a common sorrow. Flags were everywhere lowered, public offices, courts and theatres were closed and mourning emblems were displayed on every side. On April 15 a mass meeting of citizens was held in the Academy of Music under the auspices of the War Fund Committee, when the public sorrow and horror and indignation were fittingly voiced, and on the 26th a vast procession of citizens honored in spirit the obsequies of the nation’s martyr.

But the keen edge of the sorrow passed, and soon the country was busy repairing in the new era of peace the ruin and havoc, the loss and sorrow, which the war had brought. In this grand work Brooklyn was as conspicuous as in the crisis she had been conspicuous in sending men and treasure without stint into

the arena. Soon the war became nothing but a hateful memory, except to those from whom it had taken near and dear ones and with whom the bitterness of the fateful years between Sumter and Appomatox remained until the end of life's weary journey. But the story of the war was to furnish in Brooklyn one more ceremony, in this case a gratifying one, and with it we may close this glorious, if tragic, section of our history.

On October 25, 1866, the city presented to each of its surviving heroes of the army and navy a simple silver medal, a trifling but significant emblem, which is now treasured as an heirloom in many a home all over the land. The presentation ceremonies were made the occasion of a grand military parade; and the entire proceedings, conducted by Mayor Booth on the historic slopes of Fort Greene, called forth all the enthusiasm of a people who in time of conflict and peril, of gloom and foreboding, did at least what they could to aid in maintaining the honor of the Stars and Stripes and preserving the work of the fathers of the Republic. On the occasion of the presentation of these medals, three thousand veterans were "decorated" in the sense that French soldiers are decorated when they receive the ribbon of the Legion of Honor,—an idea neatly conveyed by Mayor Booth when he said: "The medal we present bears with it that which money cannot purchase. It represents the heart and voice of 300,000 people. The small ribbon worn by the French soldier as a mark of heroic deeds is prized as highly as life itself. It bears evidence that the wearer has done something for the glory of France. The testimonial we present you to-day bears evidence that you have done very much for the cause of liberty and good government throughout the world." It was a day of triumph for the old soldier when he was thus honored by his fellow citizens through their Chief Executive and in the presence of the Governor of the State (R. E. Fenton), Admiral Farragut and a host of men famous in national and local story. Dr.

Storrs delivered the inevitable oration, but it was a masterpiece of oratory, and ex-Mayor Wood, himself one of the veterans, made a fitting response on behalf of his comrades in acknowledgment of the praises which had been heaped upon them.

Gradually the war took its place in history and its public memories were confined to the ceremonies of Decoration Day, when in the various cemeteries the graves of the veterans who had passed away were decorated with flowers and the events of the days which followed the fall of Fort Sumter were recalled by orations in public places or less labored speeches beside many a little mound marked by a flag, beneath each of which rested one who had joined the mighty army above. On one of these occasions, in Greenwood, Mayor Seth Low suggested that Brooklyn should erect a memorial which should at once honor the dead soldiers of the Civil War and be a permanent reminder of Brooklyn's gratitude for the men who left her streets in the course of the conflict to fight for the Union. The suggestion was heartily taken up; but after several plans were talked over the matter seemed to be dropped. Finally the idea of a monumental arch struck the popular fancy and designs for such a structure were prepared by Mr. John D. Duncan, and approved. The money was readily raised, the corner-stone was laid in the Park Plaza in 1890, and the completed structure was dedicated to the memory of the dead in 1892. That is to say, the arch proper was then completed, for since then it has been adorned by sculpture, notably figures by MacMonnies, until it now stands as one of the most beautiful memorials of its kind in the world. The Plaza, too, has been adapted to add to its effectiveness, and the scene of which it forms the most striking feature is not equalled in artistic beauty in any city in the old world, not even in Paris itself,—a city which prides itself on its wealth in stone and line and its architectural triumphs. Brooklyn truly has not proved ungrateful to or forgetful of those

who represented her in the tented field or on the battleship when the fate of the Nation was at stake.

Many years have come and gone since the wage of battle between the States, but, although slowly dwindling, the number of survivors of the terrible struggle who are still with us is considerable, and as members of the Grand Army of the Republic wield a great influence not only on the well-being of those themselves to whom have come age and poverty, or on the well-being of the widows of those who have passed away, but upon the community in general.

The Grand Army of the Republic was founded at Indianapolis, in 1866, in the spirit of fraternity, charity, and loyalty. These continue yet to be its watchword. The first Post in New York State was organized at Rochester, in December, 1866, and the fourth, Wadsworth Post, at Brooklyn, a few days later. In Brooklyn the Army has had a most beneficent influence over the fortunes of the old soldiers, procuring them employment, voting them into office, and standing by them in seasons of trouble; and, although at times the cry has been raised that the organization was lending itself to politics, it has never betrayed its watchwords to a comrade, no matter what his politics might be; and while it has certainly sought to influence legislation the influence has

been exerted simply on matters pertaining to itself or its members. On two occasions it has come prominently before the public. The first was in the movement which culminated in the founding of the Soldiers' Home at Bath, which was started when Corporal James Tanner pledged his word that Brooklyn would raise towards such a home \$10,000, and Brooklyn made good the pledge, with some \$4,000 to spare. The second was in connection with the funeral of Gen. U. S. Grant, when Post 327 of Brooklyn received his name and was part of the guard of honor beside his bier at Mount McGregor and held the most honorable place around the casket containing the hero's remains as they were escorted through New York to the temporary tomb in Riverside Park. There are now thirty-three posts of the Grand Army in Brooklyn Borough, six in Queens county, three in Nassau county, and nine in Suffolk, making fifty-one in all on Long Island. The charitable works of these organizations are well supplemented by those of the Woman's Relief Corps, of which there are sixteen on Long Island, and which render material aid to the aged and poverty-stricken wives, mothers or widows of those New York men who fought in the Union armies, and to the army nurses who rendered the Boys in Blue grand and never fully requited services in the hospitals and camps.



CHAPTER XLI.

THE SPLENDID CLOSING RECORD.

MAYORS LOW, WHITNEY, CHAPIN, BOODY, SCHIEREN AND WURSTER—THE BRIDGE
—SOME INTERESTING STATISTICS.

THE story of Brooklyn from 1882 until it assumed its place as one of the boroughs of the Greater New York is one that should be discussed in a volume rather than summarized in a chapter. It presents us with many details which are deserving of thoughtful and extended study. To students of municipal government it shows the steps by which the principle of direct responsibility was carried to its highest and clearest practical demonstration, and the progress of the struggle between that principle and the efforts, unseen but unceasing, of the political machines to undo it. It shows a constant growth of a community in wealth, in culture, in art, in science, in education, in trade and commerce, a vast aggregation of people—the population increasing annually at a rate that seemed certain to make it in time exceed that of the “neighboring city” of New York—and yet without any of the excrescences in the shape of open vice and looseness of morals which is generally such a blot on all great centres. A great commercial city without a stock exchange; a splendid water-front—large enough to serve a world’s commerce and yet neglected except in sections. A vast storehouse of Government property without any military or naval aristocracy, a city of churches, of shops, and of homes, a city of splendid distances, splendid buildings, honest aspirations, and yet preserving much of the characteristics of the

old village life; a city which was full of politicians, but whose local affairs as a general rule were honestly managed; a city whose marvelous extension was immediately followed by a generous outlay, irrespective of immediate returns, so as to bring the extensions as soon as possible under city conditions, a city which could boast of all the concomitants of the higher civilization,—all these things present themselves for consideration along with a hundred others as we survey the closing twenty-five years of Brooklyn’s civic history.

And yet over all as we read the record now, there pointed the inexorable finger of fate pointing to consolidation with the Island of Manhattan and so welding into one grand corporate body the two cities which had grown up side by side and which, even in spite of old-time bickerings and jealousies had been helpful and necessary the one to the other. By consolidation the city of Brooklyn disappeared and assumed the lower status of a borough, so did the city on Manhattan Island and the Greater City—the boroughs of Manhattan, Brooklyn, Bronx, Queens and Richmond formed a united community—a city destined to become the greatest in the whole world. Henceforth the story of Brooklyn is merged in that of the Greater New York, but its people believe that in the destinies of that grand city it will be the leading factor, the greatest of the boroughs in population and influence.



Paul Lons

So we resume our study of the old city, taking up the story with the advent to power of the victor in the mayoralty campaign of 1881.

Seth Low stepped into the Mayor's office Jan. 1, 1882, after one of the most strenuously contested elections of which even the political history of Brooklyn has record. He was born in Brooklyn, Jan. 18, 1850, and belongs to a family which for over a century had held a leading place among the merchants of New York and the public-spirited citizens of Brooklyn. He received a thorough education, commencing with his entry into the Juvenile High School on Washington street and closing with his graduation at Columbia College in 1870. Then he entered the firm of A. A. Low & Brothers, of which his father was then senior member, and in 1875 was assumed as a partner. Like so many of his family, he became deeply interested in the working out of municipal problems as they presented themselves in the local affairs of the city, and his naturally kindly heart led him first of all to try to effect some improvement of the work of charitable administration which was not only corrupt but inefficient and had for its real sufferers the poorest of the poor—the very class least able to help themselves. By his work and influence the Bureau of Charities was established in 1878 which strove, as it still strives, to systematize the work of charity all over the city, to prevent deception, to aid the really deserving among the poor, to provide temporary employment, to send visitors and nurses among the indigent, to investigate reports of cases of distress and to promote a spirit of co-operation in charitable work among the various churches and benevolent organizations of the city. Its beneficent work is being extended year after year, it has its own lodging houses, day nurseries, wood-yards, laundries, and other accessories and in 1900 it attended to 9,544 cases and expended on its work \$21,858. It was while engaged in establishing this great experiment in charitable work that the name of Seth Low

first became prominent in Brooklyn; and the straightforward way in which he conducted all the proceedings, the clear and logical manner in which he presented all the details and the business-like way in which the entire subject was handled commended him to the favor of all good citizens of all shades of politics, for it was seen that one of the main issues of his plan was to separate charity from politics altogether. In other walks of life Mr. Low had given marked evidences of his business ability and tact, notably in committees of the New York Chamber of Commerce, and so when a desire arose in Brooklyn to take the affairs of the city out of politics and to run the municipality as a business institution and on a business basis it was felt that he of all men should be chosen to lead the movement to carry such ideas into effect. He accepted a nomination as Mayor on the distinct understanding that if elected he was to administer the office without regard to politics, and simply as a business man would run any trust committed to his care. The circumstances of the time were favorable for such a change and the canvas proceeded with much enthusiasm, its peculiar conditions making the calculations as to its result merely wild guesses on both sides until the ballots had been cast and counted. Mr. Low certainly fulfilled all his pledges and gave the people not only a purely business administration but showed how the application of that principle meant honesty and economy all through the administrative bureaus even to the work of the humblest clerk. He was responsible to the city for his appointees and they in turn were directly responsible to him for the manner in which they conducted their offices, and that sense of personal and direct responsibility governed his entire administration with splendid results. Of course his plain policy was criticized, criticized somewhat bitterly at times, especially by the "war-horses" in both parties, but he held on in his own course and when, in November, 1885, he presented himself as a candidate for re-election,

asked the people by their votes to pass judgment on his official course, he was again returned and during his second term still further illustrated the benefits of his non-partisan ideals. The high level he set in municipal administration still remains a beacon to those who are striving to perpetuate his methods in Brooklyn and introduce them elsewhere. To a great extent it was his four years' experience in Brooklyn that guided the framers of the Greater New York charter in much of their work; but they overlooked the fact that instead of a man being appointed Mayor that honor might fall to a mere hub in a machine wheel, and that the hub would have to go just as the machine was directed by the more or less invisible hand at the lever.

Mr. Low was re-elected Mayor at the close of his first term, again by a narrow majority—1,842—receiving 49,934 votes as against 48,092 for Joseph C. Hendrix. When he retired at the close of 1885 he went to Europe and then took charge of the business of A. & A. Low, which he desired to close up. This he accomplished with success and tact. His marked success in public life and his rare executive ability had however marked him out for high office, but he steadfastly refused to enter into the vortex of politics and so never proved an available man in the eyes of the party managers. He was a Republican in politics in national issues, but in local affairs he believed in being guided by business considerations. However, in 1890 he was elected president of Columbia College, and after much hesitation he accepted the office and threw himself at once into it with its varied and responsible duties with characteristic zeal. The work of the various institutions which made up Columbia was grouped under a single council, and it soon took a place among the great universities of the country. The management of the negotiations which resulted in the purchase of the splendid site on Morningside Heights and the removal there of the university was another task which he managed

with consummate skill, and he further showed his deep interest in the institution by presenting it with \$1,000,000 from his private fortune for the purpose of erecting a library building on the new site, now the most conspicuous of the many buildings on the university grounds. His work in this connection was stopped in the fall of 1897, when he became the candidate for Mayor of the Greater New York on an independent ticket. After his defeat he resumed his labors in connection with the university, but he has held many public appointments, such as membership in the peace conference which met at The Hague in 1899.

It may be noted here, although beyond the limit of time laid down for the scope of this work, that in the fall of 1901 Mr. Low again received the nomination for the Mayoralty of Greater New York, this time from all parties except the regular Democratic forces. On accepting the nomination he resigned the presidency of Columbia and entered on a vigorous civic canvass, which resulted in his election, together with that of his entire ticket. He entered upon the duties of the office of Mayor of Greater New York on January 1, 1902.

As Mayor of Brooklyn Mr. Low held himself completely free from party control and became the foremost exponent of the "business man in politics." His progress was watched with curious eyes by the managers and by the people. While it can not be said that the latter endorsed him much more strongly than the machine was able to find votes opposed to him, it should be remembered that every interest was arrayed against his success that had been accustomed to regard municipal government as a matter of dicker and deal, a scheme for spoils, soft jobs and various rewards for faithful party service. As Mayor he was in supreme control of the city's affairs, but he gathered around him as heads of departments a group of men in whom the public had confidence, and who, while responsible to him as the executive head of the municipality, were



Daniel D. Whitney.

also directly responsible to the people for the departments committed to their care. The late John Fiske, the famous historian, whose death on July 4, 1901, was a terrible blow to American letters, said in his work on "Civil Government in the United States:" "This Brooklyn system has great merits. It assures unity of administration, it encourages promptness and economy, it locates and defines responsibility, and it is so simple that everybody can understand it. The people, having but few officers to elect, are more likely to know something about them. Especially since everybody understands that the success of the government depends upon the character of the Mayor, extraordinary pains are taken to secure good Mayors, and the increased interest in city politics is shown by the fact that in Brooklyn more people vote for Mayor than for Governor or President. * * * The Brooklyn system seems to be a step toward lifting city government out of the mire of party politics."

But it can not be said that the Brooklyn idea in practice continued after Mr. Low retired from the office of Mayor. Toward the close of his second term the candidates put forward for the office were zealous and pronounced party men, General Isaac S. Catlin being at that time a Republican and Daniel D. Whitney a staunch Democrat, the "independent" in politics being ignored, although Mr. Whitney, who had had a most successful career as a merchant, was a good example of the "business man in politics." The contest, however, was conducted on strictly party lines, but Catlin's party seemed to have a splendid advantage in Mr. Low's splendid Mayoral record. The result, however, was the election of Whitney by 49,002 votes to 36,905 given to Catlin, a majority of 12,097. Mr. Whitney was born at Oyster Bay in 1820. When he was ten years of age his parents settled in Brooklyn, and when ready to go to work he found employment in a grocery store; afterward he went into the wholesale grocery trade on his own account. Previous to taking his

seat as Mayor he had served as an Alderman and for a time was President of the Board. He gave the city a clean administration, but the old charm of the Low administration was gone. Mr. Whitney was, after all, the nominee of one of the local machines, and that machine was on its good behavior. But with the election of Alfred C. Chapin as Whitney's successor the machine began to feel it could do as it liked. His opponent, Colonel Andrew D. Baird, the nominee of the Republican party, with a splendid record as a business man, a large employer of labor and a veteran of the Civil War, made a splendid run against him, and was defeated by 882 votes, the figures being Chapin, 52,753; Baird, 51,871; but even this narrow majority gave satisfaction to the victor and his friends. However, it made the latter feel cautious for a while. Mr. Chapin had been prominent in Brooklyn's politics since settling there in 1873, the year after he had been admitted a member of the New York bar. He became president of the Brooklyn Young Men's Democratic Club, and through the influence thus acquired was elected a member of the Assembly in 1881, and re-elected the following year. Possessed of a large fortune, he paid little attention to the practice of his profession and devoted himself solely to politics, having set before him as the goal of his ambition the Governorship of the State. His election and re-election as State Controller he regarded as steps in that direction, and his election to the Mayoralty of Brooklyn over such a candidate as Colonel Baird he regarded as a stride. During his first term he gave the people a good administration, and strengthened the police system, increased the park area and in many ways proved that he fully appreciated the opportunities for improving civic conditions and effecting improvements. The people endorsed his work, too, in a most flattering manner, for they re-elected him by a majority of 9,012 over Colonel Baird, who was once more his opponent. Some one said that Chapin's first term was for the people,

his second was for the Governorship. He became simply a tool of the local politicians, with his mind set on the Governor's chair. Somehow stories of scandals and deals began to crop out, but nothing substantial was proved against him or his associates until he and his Board of Aldermen had entered into an agreement to buy out the Long Island Water Supply Company, a New Lots concern, for \$1,250,000. There was loud grumbling all around at this manifest misuse of public money, and William Zeigler and his counsel, William J. Gaynor, came to the front in a torrent of denunciation. The deal was in fact one of the most barefaced in the history of municipal government since the time of Tweed. The water company was a half moribund concern even in its best days, its plant was practically worthless and its franchises of small value to the community. Its stock had been a drug in the market at \$25 a share, and found few purchasers at that. It was shown afterward that before the city had closed its deal they were eagerly bought up, even \$70 being paid willingly. When it was learned that the city was to pay \$300 a share the reason of the demand for the stock among the politicians was not difficult to discover. The whole concern was worth, at the outside, it was claimed, not more than \$62,500, and yet the city had agreed to pay a million and a quarter for it. Zeigler and Gaynor stopped the deal by an injunction. As a result of continued litigation the deal did not get through and was ultimately abandoned. Its story, however, aroused a widespread feeling of disgust and by it Mr. Chapin's political story came to an untimely end. He even asked for a renomination to the Mayoralty, but that was refused, for the simple reason that it was felt his defeat was a certainty. So when the time came Mr. David H. Boody, a well-known New York stock broker and member of Congress from the 20th (Brooklyn) district, was put forward in the fall of 1891 and was elected, securing 73,366 votes to 67,895 cast for Henry A. Meyer, the

Republican candidate. Soon after Mr. Chapin received a sop in the shape of an election to Congress from the district vacated by Mr. Boody, but his hold on the machine was loosened, his political end was at hand and he has long since ceased even to reside in Brooklyn.

Mr. Boody was born at Jackson, Maine, in 1837, and was educated for the law. After being admitted to the bar he settled in New York and entered the banking house of Boody & McClellan as clerk, the head of the firm being his uncle. There he made rapid progress, was made a partner and the stock exchange member of the firm, and acquired a fortune. Before becoming Mayor he had served in Congress, and had been active in Brooklyn's Democratic circles, and in the Thomas Jefferson Association, the Brooklyn Institute, the Montauk Club and several other organizations, literary and financial. Mr. Boody made a good Mayor; his administration was clean, but when he presented himself as a candidate for re-election the people rejected him and chose Charles A. Schieren, the Republican candidate, by about 30,000 majority. Mr. Schieren was born in Dusseldorf, Prussia, in 1842. He was educated in his native land and came to this country with his parents in 1860. In 1863 he became employed in a leather manufactory in New York's famous Swamp, and five years later started in business on his own account, and in the leather trade, with a capital of about \$1,000,—his own savings. Soon he established a trade that extended all over the country and controlled several extensive tanneries. Mr. Schieren has resided in Brooklyn since his arrival in this country, and has taken an active interest in its religious, charitable and political affairs. He is, and has been for years, prominently connected with the Y. M. C. A., the Union for Christian Work, the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the Young Women's Christian Association. He lent effective aid in the raising of funds for the erection of the statues of Henry Ward Beecher and J. S. T. Stranahan. He



CHARLES A. SCHIEREN.

was one of the chief organizers and has always been vice-president of the Hide and Leather National Bank of New York. He is also a member of the Chamber of Commerce, and trustee of the Germania Bank of Brooklyn. Of the career of Mr. Schieren or of his successor, Frederick W. Wurster, the last Mayor of the city of Brooklyn, this is not, however, the place to speak in detail. Both proved acceptable executives, but both are still prominent workers in the local Republican ranks, and in neither of their cases is the record of party activity closed. It is sufficient to say here of Mayor Wurster that he was born in North Carolina in 1850, but has resided in Brooklyn since he was seven years of age. Under Mayor Schieren he held the office of Fire Commissioner, and he has long been prominent in Brooklyn's financial circles, including the Nassau Trust Company, of which he was one of the organizers.

During the opening years of the period now under notice the great subject of interest was the bridge. As has already been told, it was finally opened amid great eclat on May 24, 1883, and public curiosity drove thousands to become acquainted with its wonders. The excitement was not over by May 30, the first holiday following the opening, and the structure was thronged. In the afternoon a woman fell on the steps near the New York end, carrying with her several persons near, and a cry was raised that the whole concern was tumbling into the river. Then ensued a wild panic, which, before it subsided, caused the death of about twelve persons, while about fifty were more or less badly hurt. It did not take long for order to be restored, but the incident showed how easily, even in an enlightened community, a senseless yet death-dealing panic could spring up.

But although the bridge was open and free to any one who chose to invest a cent, one had to walk over or indulge in the luxury of a ride in a private carriage, unless, indeed, one was able to negotiate a ride in a democratic

and friendly truck. But even in these few opening months of primitive locomotion the bridge proved most popular, and thousands made the journey across twice a day, while at night, lighted up brilliantly with electric lamps, it formed a most agreeable promenade. On September 24, in the opening year, the cable railroad across was opened to the public, and then it seemed as if the power of the structure was being worked to its fullest extent. The returns for the first year seemed to fully justify a hope for the financial success of the enterprise. Up to November 31, when the books were closed, 4,250,000 passengers had used the promenade and 1,082,500 had been carried on the trains, and the bridge had earned \$138,773. Five years later, in 1887, the figures were 2,664,415 promenade passengers, 27,940,313 on trains, and the earnings had increased to \$850,724. After a while the promenade on the bridge was declared free, the railroad fare was cut to five cents for a couple of rides, and even less if one is capitalist enough to invest twenty-five cents for ten passage tickets.

When this went into effect it was again felt that the bridge was being used to its fullest capacity, but the surface and elevated railroad managers thought differently. Their ambition was to cross the bridge, but every effort in that direction had been balked by the trustees. After consolidation, however, when the structure became a part of the political equipment, the use of the bridge was extended to the trolley lines and to the elevated roads, and became in effect a part of their system. The result of this great addition to traffic,—in the face of warnings uttered by Colonel Roebling and others,—was evident in ugly rumors of the stability of the structure. Several times it was reported by passengers that something was wrong, but what it was no one who had experienced the something had engineering knowledge sufficient to explain what it was, and the officials spoke glibly about "simple cases of buckling." But on July 24,

1901, traffic on the bridge was peremptorily stopped by the police when it was discovered that twelve of the cable bands on the north side had parted and that there was other damage, the extent of which was not known. For a day or two traffic was continued solely on the north roadway.

The success of the Brooklyn Bridge led to others being projected, and at the date of this writing a second bridge is approaching completion, crossing the river from a point between South Fifth and South Sixth streets, Brooklyn, to the foot of Delancey street, Manhattan. The towers are completed, the approaches are being prepared and a beginning has been made with the work on the cables. A beginning has also been made with a bridge which is to cross the river at Washington street, Brooklyn, to Peck Slip, Manhattan, and is to be much longer than the others, for the structure with its approaches will cover a distance of two miles, and the cost will be a "little" over \$15,000,000. Yet another bridge will in time cross the river with a central tower resting on Blackwell's Island, so that ere long, between bridges and tunnels, communication between New York and Brooklyn will be easy from almost any point.

The success of the big bridge and the conveyance to it of almost the entire system of travel have reduced the old Union Ferry system to a subordinate place in the economy of the city, and it may be said that since the opening of the bridge all efforts to improve the service have been abandoned. Even on the ferries least affected by the bridge the service and conditions have remained in *statu quo*, and the expectation is that bridge or tunnel traffic will make their patronage so fall off that their stockholders will abandon them, or most of them. Indeed, there is even a suggestion in the press that if their continuance is to be assured they will require to be taken over by the city and become a corporation asset, or a means of showing a corporation deficit.

In 1885 the Brooklyn Elevated Railroad

commenced running, and in 1888 the Kings County Elevated Road began operations. Bit by bit pillars were run up in all directions until by one or other of the existing five divisions one can ride from Park Row, Manhattan, to Coney Island, or to Jamaica, or Ridgewood without once leaving the road. The elevated railroad system in Brooklyn has not proved a financial success. The great cost of construction, the determined opposition of the property owners in many of the streets pre-empted, the vexatious variety of lawsuits and a number of details which will easily occur to those acquainted with the inner workings of joint stock companies in their earlier stages, watered stock, etc., prevented the golden returns which the promoters so confidently predicted. Of course it was held, as usual in such cases, that time was on their side, that the city was extending steadily, that the roads were built so as to benefit by the extension, that the population was increasing, and everything was satisfactory so far as the outlook was concerned. But many averred that if the roads could only be conducted on a basis of honesty the present would be as comfortable as the future was rosy. But the future in reality only deepened the gloom and made matters worse. In 1892 the trolley system of street-car propulsion was introduced. The permission to erect poles and string wires had been granted on January 23; the Brooklyn City Railroad Company doubled its capital, to \$12,000,000, in order to buy the necessary outfit to change all its cars from horse to electric power, and on November 7 the new motor vehicles were placed in service on Third avenue. The innovation was a success from the start, and within two years horse cars in Brooklyn had virtually disappeared, while new routes were constantly being opened up. This success, of course, militated against the elevated roads and seemed to threaten the continued existence of at least some of the lines and the virtual bankruptcy of them all. Most of the surface roads were flourishing,

such as the Brooklyn City Railroad, "Deacon" William Richardson's Atlantic Avenue road, but others, from one cause or another,—in only a few cases failed from lack of public patronage. When, however, the power of the trolley and the great potentialities of the system began to be seen, a series of financial "arrangements" began to operate in Brooklyn's passenger transit circles, which slowly, by due process of evolution, effected a great change in the aspect of affairs. In 1893 a corporation called the Long Island Traction Company bought out the Brooklyn Heights Company and in the following year the Brooklyn, Queens County and Suburban. In 1896 the Traction Company was merged in the Brooklyn Rapid Transit System. In 1893 the Nassau Electric Company was formed, which took over the Atlantic Avenue road, the Coney Island, Fort Hamilton & Brooklyn and the Coney Island & Gravesend. As a part of the financial juggling the elevated roads were united into two companies. In 1898 a grand coup was effected by which the Brooklyn Rapid Transit Company controlled the Brooklyn Heights Railroad, Brooklyn City Railroad, Brooklyn, Queens County & Suburban Railroad, Nassau Electric, Prospect Park, Coney Island Gravesend Railroad, Brooklyn Union Elevated Rail-

road Company and the Kings County Elevated Railroad Company.

This is virtually all the roads which pass out of the old city of Brooklyn, with the exception of the Long Island Railroad and what is known as the Coney Island & Brooklyn Railroad Company. The latter is really also an aggregation and includes the De Kalb Avenue, the Smith Street, the Van Brunt and Erie Basin and several other less important lines. Truly Brooklyn is abundantly provided with cheap and rapid transit.

In 1880 Brooklyn had a population of 566,663, and of these 389,000 were natives of the United States; by 1890 it had been increased to 806,343; in 1895 it was reported at 1,055,378, but by that time it had added to its fold Flatbush, with 14,905; New Utrecht, with 10,778; Gravesend, with 9,939; and Flatlands was practically in with 5,000, so that the entire city then had an estimated population of 1,096,000 and an area of 765¾ miles. In 1896, when consolidation was effected, its population was estimated at 1,180,000.

The following table shows the number of new buildings erected each year, with their cost, character, etc., which forms one of the most magnificent illustrations of the wealth and progress of the city:

YEAR.	Total Buildings.	Estimated Cost.	Brick or Iron and Stone.	Frame.	Private Dwellings.	Dwellings for two or more Families.	Churches and Churches.	School Houses.	Factories.	Workshops.
1882.....	1,934	\$ 8,596,503	1,010	924	881	605	3	5	52	93
1883.....	2,896	13,100,624	1,414	1,392	1,268	1,044	10	7	68	100
1884.....	2,739	12,672,334	1,135	1,304	1,143	1,180	8	5	50	88
1885.....	2,638	11,465,795	1,377	1,261	1,070	1,037	4	8	39	81
1886.....	3,990	20,318,485	2,216	1,774	1,644	1,342	13	9	55	97
1887.....	3,875	18,008,325	1,752	2,123	1,372	1,749	19	12	57	143
1888.....	3,661	17,937,270	1,738	1,923	1,205	1,787	8	9	49	139
1889.....	4,080	19,174,980	1,848	2,232	1,305	2,105	10	5	46	158
1890.....	4,355	22,026,612	1,951	2,404	1,385	2,259	20	7	51	143
1891.....	4,140	21,123,544	1,871	2,269	1,357	2,080	2	8	46	167
1892.....	3,692	18,509,819	1,384	2,308	917	2,038	10	10	46	171
1893.....	3,687	18,335,590	1,553	2,134	897	2,056	13	8	45	164
1894.....	2,482	11,532,170	841	1,640	458	1,310	11	1	32	73
1895.....	3,035	11,930,075	1,169	1,866	798	1,367	13	6	27	90
1896.....	2,861	11,203,657	1,271	1,590	695	1,209	11	4	26	67

Another evidence of the continued progress will be found in the following table of assessed valuations of real and personal property:

	REAL.	PERSONAL.	TOTAL.
1882..	\$264,404,017	\$19,334,300	\$283,738,317
1883..	280,800,597	18,135,909	298,936,506
1884..	297,126,144	20,727,406	317,853,850
1885..	311,308,060	19,375,702	330,683,762
1886..	339,922,812	22,086,390	362,009,202
1887..	361,166,083	21,685,591	383,851,674
1888..	384,856,788	22,597,240	407,454,028
1889..	407,153,135	21,330,546	428,483,681
1890..	430,911,794	21,846,807	452,758,601
1891..	448,802,470	18,111,779	466,914,249
1892..	467,112,182	16,625,947	483,738,129
1893..	486,531,506	19,523,170	506,054,676
1894..	527,008,427	22,460,985	549,469,412
1895..	540,359,686	23,627,446	563,987,132
1896..	555,310,997	27,536,636	582,847,633

It should be remembered that the assessed valuation is, as a general rule, only about half the actual worth of the property. Another factor which should not be forgotten is that \$166,759,427 in real estate was not included in the above, being exempt from taxation under the law. The list follows:

Baptist Churches.....	\$ 1,472,400
Congregational Churches.....	1,284,900
Jewish Synagogues.....	166,800
Lutheran Churches.....	749,100

Methodist Episcopal Churches....	\$ 1,873,900
Presbyterian Churches.....	1,132,500
Protestant Episcopal Churches....	2,501,650
Reformed Dutch Churches.....	1,087,000
Unitarian Churches.....	160,000
Universalist Churches.....	139,000
Catholic Churches.....	4,680,300
Miscellaneous Churches.....	680,600
Parochial Schools.....	2,767,900
Charitable institutions.....	4,960,900
Public Schools.....	7,153,640
Fire Department.....	777,900
Police Department.....	979,000
Department of Parks.....	51,882,500
Armories	3,073,000
Public buildings and U. S. prop- erty	56,247,700
Miscellaneous	2,901,930
N. Y. and Brooklyn Bridge....	7,051,819
New East River Bridge.....	666,714
Wallabout Market lands.....	2,469,000
Parsonages	296,600
Ministerial exemptions.....	145,500
Pratt Institute.....	967,900
Pension exemptions.....	163,774
Property held by the city under the arrears act.....	590,000
Cemeteries	7,734,500

The financial institutions of any city are probably the safest indexes to its real property, and the following returns of the various banks and trust companies, compiled a few months before consolidation, will give a clear idea of the tremendous volume of business transacted:

NATIONAL BANKS, BOROUGH OF BROOKLYN.

INSTITU- TIONS.	PRESIDENT.	Loans and Discounts.	Specie, Legal Tender and Cash Items.	U. S. Bonds to Secure Circula- tion, etc.	Other Resources.	Capital.	Net Profits.	Due Banks and Depos- itors.	Other Liabil- ities.	Total Resources and Liabilities.
First.....	J. G. Jenkins	\$3,170,324	\$1,065,592	\$ 75,000	\$3,139,051	\$300,000	\$ 51,151	\$6,024,203	\$1,068,311	\$7,449,971
Manuf'rs' ..	J. Loughran.	1,980,771	441,123	250,000	1,512,123	252,000	28,569	3,273,082	630,367	4,184,021
Nat'l City ..	C. S. Young.	2,137,791	442,318	100,000	1,131,740	300,000	74,430	3,086,250	651,169	4,111,852
Nassau....	T. T. Barr..	1,004,872	154,532	267,000	1,138,848	300,000	581,625	4,719,117	261,511	5,865,255
Sprague....	N. T. Sprague	760,632	101,142	150,000	575,084	200,000	20,461	1,031,071	335,330	1,586,862

[illegible]

TABLE 1. Table shows the Composition of the Food in Diets of Prison and Detention for September to 1901

	LOCATION.	OWNER.	1870.	1880.	1890.	1900.	1910.	1920.	1930.	1940.	1950.	1960.	1970.	1980.	1990.	2000.	2010.	2020.	2030.	2040.	2050.	2060.	2070.	2080.	2090.	2100.	2110.	2120.	2130.	2140.	2150.	2160.	2170.	2180.	2190.	2200.	2210.	2220.	2230.	2240.	2250.	2260.	2270.	2280.	2290.	2300.	2310.	2320.	2330.	2340.	2350.	2360.	2370.	2380.	2390.	2400.	2410.	2420.	2430.	2440.	2450.	2460.	2470.	2480.	2490.	2500.	2510.	2520.	2530.	2540.	2550.	2560.	2570.	2580.	2590.	2600.	2610.	2620.	2630.	2640.	2650.	2660.	2670.	2680.	2690.	2700.	2710.	2720.	2730.	2740.	2750.	2760.	2770.	2780.	2790.	2800.	2810.	2820.	2830.	2840.	2850.	2860.	2870.	2880.	2890.	2900.	2910.	2920.	2930.	2940.	2950.	2960.	2970.	2980.	2990.	3000.	3010.	3020.	3030.	3040.	3050.	3060.	3070.	3080.	3090.	3100.	3110.	3120.	3130.	3140.	3150.	3160.	3170.	3180.	3190.	3200.	3210.	3220.	3230.	3240.	3250.	3260.	3270.	3280.	3290.	3300.	3310.	3320.	3330.	3340.	3350.	3360.	3370.	3380.	3390.	3400.	3410.	3420.	3430.	3440.	3450.	3460.	3470.	3480.	3490.	3500.	3510.	3520.	3530.	3540.	3550.	3560.	3570.	3580.	3590.	3600.	3610.	3620.	3630.	3640.	3650.	3660.	3670.	3680.	3690.	3700.	3710.	3720.	3730.	3740.	3750.	3760.	3770.	3780.	3790.	3800.	3810.	3820.	3830.	3840.	3850.	3860.	3870.	3880.	3890.	3900.	3910.	3920.	3930.	3940.	3950.	3960.	3970.	3980.	3990.	4000.	4010.	4020.	4030.	4040.	4050.	4060.	4070.	4080.	4090.	4100.	4110.	4120.	4130.	4140.	4150.	4160.	4170.	4180.	4190.	4200.	4210.	4220.	4230.	4240.	4250.	4260.	4270.	4280.	4290.	4300.	4310.	4320.	4330.	4340.	4350.	4360.	4370.	4380.	4390.	4400.	4410.	4420.	4430.	4440.	4450.	4460.	4470.	4480.	4490.	4500.	4510.	4520.	4530.	4540.	4550.	4560.	4570.	4580.	4590.	4600.	4610.	4620.	4630.	4640.	4650.	4660.	4670.	4680.	4690.	4700.	4710.	4720.	4730.	4740.	4750.	4760.	4770.	4780.	4790.	4800.	4810.	4820.	4830.	4840.	4850.	4860.	4870.	4880.	4890.	4900.	4910.	4920.	4930.	4940.	4950.	4960.	4970.	4980.	4990.	5000.	5010.	5020.	5030.	5040.	5050.	5060.	5070.	5080.	5090.	5100.	5110.	5120.	5130.	5140.	5150.	5160.	5170.	5180.	5190.	5200.	5210.	5220.	5230.	5240.	5250.	5260.	5270.	5280.	5290.	5300.	5310.	5320.	5330.	5340.	5350.	5360.	5370.	5380.	5390.	5400.	5410.	5420.	5430.	5440.	5450.	5460.	5470.	5480.	5490.	5500.	5510.	5520.	5530.	5540.	5550.	5560.	5570.	5580.	5590.	5600.	5610.	5620.	5630.	5640.	5650.	5660.	5670.	5680.	5690.	5700.	5710.	5720.	5730.	5740.	5750.	5760.	5770.	5780.	5790.	5800.	5810.	5820.	5830.	5840.	5850.	5860.	5870.	5880.	5890.	5900.	5910.	5920.	5930.	5940.	5950.	5960.	5970.	5980.	5990.	6000.	6010.	6020.	6030.	6040.	6050.	6060.	6070.	6080.	6090.	6100.	6110.	6120.	6130.	6140.	6150.	6160.	6170.	6180.	6190.	6200.	6210.	6220.	6230.	6240.	6250.	6260.	6270.	6280.	6290.	6300.	6310.	6320.	6330.	6340.	6350.	6360.	6370.	6380.	6390.	6400.	6410.	6420.	6430.	6440.	6450.	6460.	6470.	6480.	6490.	6500.	6510.	6520.	6530.	6540.	6550.	6560.	6570.	6580.	6590.	6600.	6610.	6620.	6630.	6640.	6650.	6660.	6670.	6680.	6690.	6700.	6710.	6720.	6730.	6740.	6750.	6760.	6770.	6780.	6790.	6800.	6810.	6820.	6830.	6840.	6850.	6860.	6870.	6880.	6890.	6900.	6910.	6920.	6930.	6940.	6950.	6960.	6970.	6980.	6990.	7000.	7010.	7020.	7030.	7040.	7050.	7060.	7070.	7080.	7090.	7100.	7110.	7120.	7130.	7140.	7150.	7160.	7170.	7180.	7190.	7200.	7210.	7220.	7230.	7240.	7250.	7260.	7270.	7280.	7290.	7300.	7310.	7320.	7330.	7340.	7350.	7360.	7370.	7380.	7390.	7400.	7410.	7420.	7430.	7440.	7450.	7460.	7470.	7480.	7490.	7500.	7510.	7520.	7530.	7540.	7550.	7560.	7570.	7580.	7590.	7600.	7610.	7620.	7630.	7640.	7650.	7660.	7670.	7680.	7690.	7700.	7710.	7720.	7730.	7740.	7750.	7760.	7770.	7780.	7790.	7800.	7810.	7820.	7830.	7840.	7850.	7860.	7870.	7880.	7890.	7900.	7910.	7920.	7930.	7940.	7950.	7960.	7970.	7980.	7990.	8000.	8010.	8020.	8030.	8040.	8050.	8060.	8070.	8080.	8090.	8100.	8110.	8120.	8130.	8140.	8150.	8160.	8170.	8180.	8190.	8200.	8210.	8220.	8230.	8240.	8250.	8260.	8270.	8280.	8290.	8300.	8310.	8320.	8330.	8340.	8350.	8360.	8370.	8380.	8390.	8400.	8410.	8420.	8430.	8440.	8450.	8460.	8470.	8480.	8490.	8500.	8510.	8520.	8530.	8540.	8550.	8560.	8570.	8580.	8590.	8600.	8610.	8620.	8630.	8640.	8650.	8660.	8670.	8680.	8690.	8700.	8710.	8720.	8730.	8740.	8750.	8760.	8770.	8780.	8790.	8800.	8810.	8820.	8830.	8840.	8850.	8860.	8870.	8880.	8890.	8900.	8910.	8920.	8930.	8940.	8950.	8960.	8970.	8980.	8990.	9000.	9010.	9020.	9030.	9040.	9050.	9060.	9070.	9080.	9090.	9100.	9110.	9120.	9130.	9140.	9150.	9160.	9170.	9180.	9190.	9200.	9210.	9220.	9230.	9240.	9250.	9260.	9270.	9280.	9290.	9300.	9310.	9320.	9330.	9340.	9350.	9360.	9370.	9380.	9390.	9400.	9410.	9420.	9430.	9440.	9450.	9460.	9470.	9480.	9490.	9500.	9510.	9520.	9530.	9540.	9550.	9560.	9570.	9580.	9590.	9600.	9610.	9620.	9630.	9640.	9650.	9660.	9670.	9680.	9690.	9700.	9710.	9720.	9730.	9740.	9750.	9760.	9770.	9780.	9790.	9800.	9810.	9820.	9830.	9840.	9850.	9860.	9870.	9880.	9890.	9900.	9910.	9920.	9930.	9940.	9950.	9960.	9970.	9980.	9990.	10000.
--	-----------	--------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	-------	--------

TRIST COMPANIES, BROOKLYN OF BROOKLYN.

Assets	Liabilities	Capital	Income	Expenses	Profit	Loss	Assets	Liabilities	Capital	Income	Expenses	Profit	Loss
Brooklyn 177	Montague st. C. T. (Christenson) . . . 8,670,044	\$1,000,000	\$10,685,655	\$1,520,536	\$96,241		Brooklyn 177	Montague st. C. T. (Christenson) . . . 8,670,044	\$1,000,000	\$10,685,655	\$1,520,536	\$96,241	
Hamden 161	Montague st. George H. Southard . . . 2,120,655	1,000,000	5,404,490	992,676	40,120		Hamden 161	Montague st. George H. Southard . . . 2,120,655	1,000,000	5,404,490	992,676	40,120	
Hamden 191	Montague st. Silas B. Dutcher 2,505,659	500,000	4,261,365	572,694	41,665		Hamden 191	Montague st. Silas B. Dutcher 2,505,659	500,000	4,261,365	572,694	41,665	
King's County . . . 242	Fulton st. Julian D. Fairchild . . . 3,954,555	500,000	5,602,851	713,693	115,693		King's County . . . 242	Fulton st. Julian D. Fairchild . . . 3,954,555	500,000	5,602,851	713,693	115,693	
Manh. 265	Montague st. Edward Morrill 1,567,440	500,000	3,150,486	412,295	55,804		Manh. 265	Montague st. Edward Morrill 1,567,440	500,000	3,150,486	412,295	55,804	
Manh. 198	Montague st. William J. Coombs 1,506,406	500,000	3,188,921	565,909	50,447		Manh. 198	Montague st. William J. Coombs 1,506,406	500,000	3,188,921	565,909	50,447	
Nassau 101	Broadway Andrew T. Sullivan . . . 1,247,831	500,000	2,241,255	971,580	60,139		Nassau 101	Broadway Andrew T. Sullivan . . . 1,247,831	500,000	2,241,255	971,580	60,139	
People's 172	Montague st. Felix Campbell 2,842,244	1,000,000	6,091,962	1,118,924	102,669		People's 172	Montague st. Felix Campbell 2,842,244	1,000,000	6,091,962	1,118,924	102,669	

In another division of public business the following table of the co-operative building and loan associations proves the prosperity of the working classes:

NAME.	In- corporated	Assets.	Real Estate.
Afro-American.....	1892	\$ 8,000	.....
Atlantic.....	1892	118,000	.....
Bedford.....	1888	135,000	\$10,000
Brooklyn and N. Y. Arcanum	1885	100,000	.....
Brooklyn City.....	1887	445,000	38,201
Brooklyn Mutual.....	1883	110,000	5,500
Bushwick.....	1888	485,000	30,000
Columbia.....	1889	25,000	.....
Eagle.....	1897	165,000	.....
East Brooklyn.....	1885	725,000	55,000
East New York.....	1892	35,000	11,000
Equitable.....	1888	700,000	20,000
Excelsior.....	1894	5,000	.....
Fifth Avenue.....	1890	70,000	2,500
Flatbush.....	1889	175,000	5,987
Fort Greene.....	1891	85,000	1,446
Foruna.....	1896	3,000	.....
Fulton.....	1888	100,000	7,500
German.....	1886	50,000	.....
Germania.....	1888	10,000	.....
Hamilton.....	1889	75,000	12,060
Homestead.....	1889	120,000	7,638
Jno. H. Shults'.....	1888	140,000	9,402
Kings Co.....	1888	600,000	21,119
Long Island.....	1888	450,000	16,118
Madison.....	1888	85,000	1,200
Model.....	1889	35,000	4,000
Nassau.....	1889	225,000	7,500
Ninth Street.....	1891	25,000	.....
People's.....	1895	20,000	.....
Prospect Home.....	1890	100,000	4,050
South Brooklyn.....	1886	650,000	34,783
Suburban.....	1897	5,000	.....
Town of New Utrecht.....	1887	150,000	1,208
Twenty-Ninth Ward.....	1895	3,500	.....
Union.....	1890	150,000	9,473
West End.....	1896	2,500	.....
Total.....		\$6,385,000	\$315,680

Add to the assets in the above table the deposits in the savings banks on July 1, 1897, the last statement before consolidation, and the prosperity of the working classes will be further demonstrated. See table on page 493:

In 1889 contracts were awarded by which an additional 25,000,000 gallons of water were secured to the city and five additional ponds were added to the sources of the city's water supply. These were: Massapequa, 22,500,000

gallons; Ridgewood, 20,000,000; Newbridge, 16,500,000; East Meadow, 23,500,000; Millburn, 19,500,000; and Millburn storage reservoir, 414,000,000 gallons; total storage capacity, 516,000,000 gallons. This increased the area of the watershed from which the city's supply is drawn to 161 square miles. The main reservoir at Ridgewood has a capacity of 320,000 gallons, and the Hempstead reservoir of 120,000,000. Mount Prospect pumping station, the tall and handsome structure which overlooks the Prospect Park Plaza and fits in so delightfully with its surrounding landscape, is about 200 feet above tidewater and carries water to the most elevated buildings within its territory. To most Brooklyn people the tower is the only visible evidence of the water system that presents itself. In 1895 the average daily consumption of water in Brooklyn was 80,100,000 gallons.

Richard Brinsley Sheridan used to say that a man's prosperity is best known by his debts, and of the truth of that assertion Brooklyn is a splendid example. From the formation of the village government it has always been face to face with problems of extension and improvement, and after the recovery from the Civil War trouble these two problems had assumed steadily great proportions and the proportions seemingly increased each year. Money had to be raised for these requirements; they were mainly for the future and, as it were, the future had to be mortgaged. Bonds had been freely issued for all sorts of improvements, but the steady increase in taxable values and in taxable area, and the multitude of private improvements had combined with excellent financial management to meet all the charges of interest, to repay each indebtedness on maturity. The great system of sewers had alone cost a fabulous amount, and schools, parks, municipal buildings, in which may be included police and fire department structures, the bridge, the water system, and the cost of annexation,—that is, of taking over all of Kings county,—had involved a series of financial

schemes and manipulations which needed the most delicate attention at all times. However, when the record was closed Brooklyn's total indebtedness was placed as follows:

County of Kings.....	\$14,851,892.83
City of Brooklyn.....	66,669,478.10
Town of New Lots.....	519,820.00
Town of Flatbush.....	929,000.00
Town of Gravesend.....	1,404,296.00
Town of Flatlands.....	62,169.60
Town of New Utrecht.....	734,939.00

Gross debt of Borough of Brooklyn	6,734,055.69
Less sinking fund city of Brooklyn	6,734,055.69

Net debt.....\$78,437,539.84

The bulk of the indebtedness ascribed in the above to Kings county really belonged to the city of Brooklyn, as the following analysis of the figures shows:

Refunding loan.....	\$ 2,367,500.00
State Tax Registered.....	119,000.00
Meeker Avenue Bridge.....	10,000.00
Indexing and reindexing.....	211,392.83
Hall of Records.....	155,000.00
County Farm.....	3,339,000.00
Thirteenth Regiment Armory..	490,000.00

Fourteenth Regiment Armory site	\$ 50,000.00
Fourteenth Regiment Armory..	360,000.00
Public Park.....	2,410,000.00
Public Building Improvement..	250,000.00
Paid:	
Driveway and Parkway.....	3,600,000.00
Street Improvement.....	1,550,000.00
Total	\$14,851,892.83

While we are thus groping among figures we may here reproduce the report on Brooklyn's manufactories, prepared by Mr. Robert P. Porter, Commissioner of the Census of 1900,—the last document of the kind in which Brooklyn could be considered as a distinct city. It would be interesting to compare the returns from the census of 1900 with those here presented, but that computation has not yet been completed. However, the document here presented covers the section of Brooklyn's history which is here being treated:

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR,
Census Office,

WASHINGTON, D. C., October 10, 1892.

Herewith is presented a preliminary report on the mechanical and manufacturing industries of the city of Brooklyn for the year-ended May 31, 1890, prepared under the direc-

SAVINGS BANKS, JULY 1, 1897.

SAVINGS BANKS.	PRESIDENT.	Total Resources.	Due Depositors.	Surplus.	Open Accounts.	Deposits For Year.
Brevoort.....	Felix Campbell.....	\$ 536,877	\$ 536,386	\$ 491	3,183	\$ 325,330
Brooklyn.....	Bryan H. Smith.....	36,534,796	31,754,373	4,780,423	56,925	8,018,548
Bushwick.....	Joseph Liebmann....	1,214,533	1,171,940	42,578	4,305	581,304
City Savings.....	Remsen Rushmore....	640,876	623,366	17,510	3,268	321,281
Dime Savings.....	Benj. H. Huntington..	23,208,834	21,404,470	1,804,364	55,780	5,586,774
Dime Sav. of Wmsb'g'h	Vacant.....	2,834,643	2,615,014	219,628	1,933	1,037,333
East Brooklyn.....	Darwin R. James.....	2,675,033	2,466,433	228,600	9,265	869,604
Eastern District	L. E. Meeker.....	93,781	93,084	696	1,220	117,165
East New York.....	Frederick Middendorf	967,731	863,793	96,187	3,802	334,468
Germania.....	Frederick A. Schroeder	3,294,011	3,046,190	247,820	9,131	1,064,406
German.....	Charles Naehner.....	1,192,906	3,846,828	313,765	15,221	1,625,426
Greater New York....	J. C. Obermayer.....	6,129	6,107	13	113	6,464
Greenpoint.....	Timothy Perry.....	3,131,358	2,739,759	391,606	9,149	975,467
Kings County.....	James S. Bearns.....	6,184,526	5,626,204	558,322	11,074	1,649,792
South Brooklyn.....	Alexander E. Orr.....	15,737,347	13,737,175	1,999,877	28,705	3,496,597
Williamsburgh.....	John Mollenhauer....	36,261,902	29,452,375	6,809,527	74,697	7,457,419
• Total.....		\$137,515,283	\$119,963,797	\$17,511,497	293,771	\$33,364,438

tion of Mr. Frank R. Williams, special agent in charge of statistics of manufactures. The statements contained in this bulletin are preliminary and subject to modification for final report, therefore fair criticisms and suggestions are invited, with a view to such revision and correction as may appear necessary.

It is proposed to promptly publish bulletins for all principal cities in a form similar to this, to be followed by final reports containing data in detail respecting all industries for each city at the earliest date practicable. The totals presented in the complete reports will not, however, be less, and may, in a number of cases, be considerably increased. A comparative statement is presented for 1880 and 1890 in Table 1, showing the totals under such general heads of the inquiry as are common to both census periods. Table 2 exhibits for important industries, under the general heads of "Capital employed," "Miscellaneous expenses," "Wages paid," "Materials used," and "Goods manufactured," all essential details of the inquiry for 1890, excepting wage statistics for the various classes of labor employed in the respective industries.

In comparing results of the current inquiry with the returns of 1880 it will be observed that the item of "Miscellaneous expenses" is given for 1890 only. No previous census inquiry has embraced the cost incurred in manufacturing operations other than wages paid and materials used. Differences in method of inquiry, as explained in this report, and the inclusion in the Eleventh Census of certain industries omitted in the Tenth Census account in part for the increases shown.

The following classes of industry were omitted in the census reports of 1880: China and pottery, decorating; druggists' preparations, not including prescriptions; millinery, custom work; women's dressmaking, custom work.

The totals stated for 1890, in Table 1, are increased as follows by the inclusion of the industries referred to:

TOTALS FOR INDUSTRIES OMITTED IN 1880, BUT INCLUDED IN 1890.

Number of establishments reported	1,088
Capital invested.....	\$1,074,910
Number of hands employed.....	3,704
Wages paid.....	\$1,505,515
Cost of materials used.....	2,310,375

Miscellaneous expenses.....	\$ 208,063
Value of product at works.....	4,102,761

To ascertain the amounts for comparison with the totals of 1880, the foregoing figures should be subtracted from the totals stated in Table 1 for 1890, and the percentage of increase would then appear as follows:

PERCENTAGES OF INCREASE.

Number of establishments reported...	82.14
Capital invested.....	102.40
Number of hands employed.....	110.10
Wages paid.....	168.91
Cost of materials used.....	4.59
Value of product at works.....	38.04
Population of city.....	42.30
Assessed valuation of city.....	91.06
Decrease of municipal debt less sink-fund	8.94

A striking feature of these returns is the satisfactory increase in the number of establishments reported. Still more gratifying is the increase during the decade in the number of hands employed and the amount of wages paid; the wages have increased not only actually, but relatively, the average wages per hand increasing from \$473 in 1880 to \$605 in 1890, or 27.91 per cent.

Part of this increase is undoubtedly due to the fact that in many industries relatively more men were employed in 1890 and less children; and also to the fact that in ten years many branches of industry have improved the grades of their products, and for this reason require more skilled and higher paid employes. After making all possible allowance for these changes, for the more thorough enumeration of 1890, and for the advance in quantity of manufactured product, we have a decided relative increase in the amount paid in wages between 1880 and 1890.

The comparatively small increase in the total value of materials used is principally due to the decreased volume of manufactures reported for the refining of sugar and molasses, an industry in which the cost of materials far exceeds all other elements in the cost of production.

In 1880 the value of product reported for this industry by all establishments was \$59,711,168, the value of materials used being \$56,423,868, or 94.49 per cent. of the value of product. The value of product reported

by 8 establishments in 1890 is \$16,629,982, and of materials used \$13,317,789, or 80.08 per cent. of the value of product.

Attention is called to the presentation of labor and wage statistics. The "average wages" paid to all classes employed has always proved a stumbling block in census reports. It is believed the Eleventh Census, in obtaining data to show the classification of labor employed, the average term of employment, the various rates of wages per week, and the average number of men, women and children, respectively employed at each rate in the various classes, has taken a step in advance, which will be shown in detail in final reports, and appreciated by students of these data.

ROBERT P. PORTER,
Superintendent of Census.

The act of Congress approved March 1, 1889, providing for the Eleventh Census, directs the Superintendent of Census to investigate and ascertain the statistics of the manufacturing industries of the country. By virtue of the authority conferred by section 18 of the said act, the collection of statistics of all establishments of productive industry located in certain cities and towns was withdrawn from enumerators and assigned to special agents, who were appointed and entered upon their duties as soon after the completion of the work assigned the general enumerators as was practicable.

The instructions issued by this office to enumerators and special agents relating to the

collection of statistics of manufactures were as follows:

It shall be their duty personally to visit every establishment of productive industry in their respective districts (except as noted) and to obtain the required information in the case of each manufacturing establishment.

The term "establishment of productive industry" must be understood in its broadest sense to embrace not only mills and factories, but also the operation of all small establishments and the mechanical trades.

Restaurants, saloons, barber shops, the compounding of individual prescriptions by druggists and apothecaries, the operations of mercantile establishments, transportation corporations and lines, and professional services (except mechanical dentistry) are not considered as coming within the meaning of the law in this connection.

Great care must be taken by special agents and enumerators to guard against the omission from their returns of any establishment that comes properly within the scope of this investigation. * * * They should have their eyes open to every indication of the presence of productive industry and should supplement personal observation by frequent and persistent inquiry.

The tabulated statements presented herewith include only establishments which reported a product of \$500 or more in value during the census year, and, so far as practicable, only those establishments operating works located within the corporate limits of the city.

TABLE 1.—COMPARATIVE STATEMENT OF TOTALS UNDER GENERAL HEADS OF INQUIRY: 1880 AND 1890.

INDUSTRIES		Number industries reported.	Number establish- ments reporting.	Capital. (a)	Hands employed.	Wages paid.	Cost of materials used
All Industries	1880	180	5,201	\$ 61,646,749	47,587	\$22,487,457	\$129,085,091
	1890	229	10,561	125,849,052	103,683	61,975,702	137,325,749

INDUSTRIES.		Miscellaneous expenses	Value of product.	MUNICIPAL DATA.		
				Population.	Assessed valuation.	Municipal debt.
All industries.....	1880		\$177,223,142	566,663	\$232,925,699	\$38,040,000
	1890	\$14,824,466	248,750,184	806,343	445,038,201	31,639,512

a The value of hired property is not included for 1890, because it was not reported in 1880.

b No inquiry in 1880 relating to "Miscellaneous expenses."

c The amount stated represents the "net debt" or the total amount of municipal debt less sinking fund.

For the purpose of ready comparison Table I presents the statistics of 1880 and 1890 in the form of publication used in the reports for 1880. In comparing industrial statistics for 1880 and 1890 it should be borne in mind, as stated by the Superintendent of Census, that radical changes have been made in 1890 as well in the form and scope of inquiry as in the method of presentation.

The form of question respecting capital used at the census of 1880 was as follows: "Capital (real and personal) invested in the business." It became evident from the results then obtained that this question was neither sufficiently comprehensive nor properly understood, and therefore the full amount of capital employed in productive industry was not reported, thus forming an erroneous basis for deductions.

The present census inquiry respecting capital is intended to comprehend all the property or assets strictly pertaining to a manufacturing business, whether such property is owned, borrowed or hired. The value of hired property is not included in the amount stated for 1890 in Table I, because it was not reported in 1880, and its inclusion would therefore render the comparison misleading. It will, however, be specifically stated for each industry in final reports.

TABULAR STATEMENTS FOR 1890.

The various subheads into which the inquiry of 1890 is divided, excepting wage statistics by classes, will be found in Table 2 for important industries. The statements for each industry are intended to present the true amount of capital employed, the amount paid in wages, and the number of hands employed in the respective industries, the cost of materials used, miscellaneous expenses, and the value at the works of goods manufactured, as compiled from individual reports of manufacturers.

LABOR EMPLOYED AND WAGES PAID.

In the form of inquiry used in the Eleventh Census respecting labor and wages the classified occupation and wage system was adopted. Officers or firm members engaged in productive labor or supervision of the business constitute one class, for which the wages reported are those which would be paid to employes performing similar service. Clerical labor is embraced by distinct classification, also piecework.

Wage workers proper are divided into two classes, as follows:

First. Operatives, engineers, and other skilled workmen, overseers and foremen or superintendents (not general superintendents or managers).

Second. Watchmen, laborers, teamsters, and other unskilled workmen.

It should be noted that the first class includes all operatives, that is, those directly engaged in productive labor as well as skilled mechanics, while the second class includes all unskilled workmen other than operatives. The questions required a statement of the average number of men, women and children, respectively, employed during the year in each class, also the actual amount of wages paid to each number.

A statement was requested showing the various rates of wages per week, the average number of men, women and children, respectively, employed at each rate, exclusive of those reported as employed on piecework, and the actual term of operation for the establishment reporting. The wage statistics compiled from the reports obtained will be stated in detail for each class in the final reports to be published for each city. In this bulletin only the aggregate wages paid is given.

MATERIALS USED AND GOODS MANUFACTURED.

Against the caption "Materials used" is presented the reported cost at the place of consumption of all materials used, and against "Goods manufactured" is the reported market value at the factory of the total product, not including any allowance for commissions or expenses of selling.

In this connection it must be considered that the difference between apparent cost and value of manufactured product as presented cannot be taken as a correct indication of manufacturers' net profits, because many other items of expense enter into the mercantile portion of the business not within the scope of the census inquiry.

Expenses of selling are excluded, because the reported value of product is its selling value "at the shop or factory." The cost of depreciation of plant in excess of the expense for ordinary repairs is not included, because the information obtained by the inquiry is not sufficient to form a basis for accurate computation for the respective industries.

THE SPLENDID CLOSING RECORD.

197

TABLE 2. DETAILED STATEMENT FOR 1890 BY IMPORTANT INDUSTRIES

	Food and clothing for household consumption	Household furnishings	Other and miscellaneous merchandise	Textile manufactures	Leather and other products	Iron and steel products	Chemical products	Other products	Food and other products	Other products
Capital employed—aggregate.....	\$1,227,119	\$8,183,825	\$2,963,392	\$2,923,509	\$2,236,400	\$157,235,718	\$1,507,827	\$1,790,121	\$2,120,822	\$2,999,510
Hired property—total.....	366,230	275,000	396,306	1,017,500	.....	1,173,750	377,650	366,182	780,500	275,622
Plant—total.....	385,931	1,888,250	5,666,636	1,028,053	1,851,500	6,046,228	127,420	101,916	918,100	1,821,640
Land.....	56,700	1,196,800	198,400	251,085	366,000	1,617,500	110,100	21,500	317,550	799,000
Buildings.....	113,400	1,552,821	191,350	511,225	701,000	1,362,670	112,550	121,581	316,752	727,500
Machinery, tools and implements.....	215,851	2,138,629	155,910	165,713	850,500	3,066,658	1,717,710	218,862	251,098	821,862
Live materials.....	571,955	3,220,585	2,110,296	847,456	102,100	6,205,510	702,782	1,081,665	821,862	1,922,888
Raw materials.....	137,612	1,365,555	721,678	297,660	155,600	1,182,039	312,428	61,890	111,505	186,211
Stock in process and finished product, cash bills and accounts receivable, and all securities not elsewhere reported.....	154,802	878,468	950,671	269,011	60,500	1,525,805	112,902	186,951	197,430	225,016
Wages paid—aggregate.....	282,541	1,076,582	458,017	371,255	166,000	3,197,634	215,415	855,829	509,465	1,101,658
Wages paid—aggregate.....	\$1,052,547	\$1,140,177	\$170,056	\$1,096,252	\$650,256	\$5,611,132	\$1,205,461	\$145,510	\$522,120	\$230,558
Average number of hands employed during the year.....	2,050	1,848	794	2,257	1,612	5,553	2,218	572	623	506
Males above 16 years.....	810	1,295	177	1,387	1,012	6,868	868	660	607	583
Females above 15 years.....	726	289	10	562	600	12	485	116	3	2
Children.....	24	31	307	22	.....	2	10	20	15	11
Pieceworkers.....	800	223	323	276	.....	811	855	36	15	11
Materials used—aggregate cost.....	\$1,132,334	\$7,329,134	\$11,044,538	\$1,853,791	\$1,552,658	\$5,125,183	\$1,113,218	\$1,067,697	\$11,769,711	\$1,816,112
Principal materials.....	1,381,752	7,050,313	10,711,617	1,738,998	1,396,128	4,626,189	1,289,325	1,042,362	11,637,557	11,412,015
Fuel.....	3,888	195,545	1,652	25,621	105,000	210,767	27,863	18,045	22,256	100,312
Mill supplies.....	.....	20,656	3,853	3,853	6,000	10,308	10,308	290	.....	15,986
All other materials.....	17,201	71,070	300,183	65,297	35,500	210,511	15,692	7,000	99,748	287,529
Miscellaneous expenses—aggregate.....	\$23,219	\$612,809	\$81,234	\$194,965	\$63,180	\$799,912	\$84,811	\$300,754	\$130,096	\$227,760
Amount paid for contract work.....	1,450	.....	.....	.....	.....	13,000	.....	.....	.....	.....
Rent.....	25,636	22,110	21,415	73,230	.....	117,888	26,411	22,000	31,252	20,450
Power and heat.....	3,720	900	3,800	130	.....	11,661	600	.....	.....	900
Taxes.....	4,491	18,950	11,139	9,981	10,110	60,297	4,429	15,863	13,092	21,877
Insurance.....	4,430	29,190	11,382	5,050	7,510	36,223	10,575	7,313	9,490	21,305
Repairs, ordinary, of buildings and machinery.....	5,842	119,644	6,657	5,730	25,000	36,223	10,575	7,313	9,490	21,305
Interest on cash used in the business.....	1,549	318,364	29,635	13,462	20,500	22,009	1,865	1,823	3,491	65,419
All sundries not elsewhere reported.....	26,138	.....	.....	.....	.....	462,296	31,551	192,015	60,357	68,516
Goods manufactured—aggregate value.....	\$2,813,209	\$10,467,109	\$12,247,162	\$3,731,202	\$3,625,792	\$15,566,776	\$2,315,691	\$2,143,023	\$13,517,789	\$16,629,982
Principal product.....	2,770,639	10,125,949	12,044,967	3,721,071	3,622,912	14,222,030	3,298,991	2,143,023	13,118,331	16,623,131
All other products, including receipts from custom work and repairing.....	42,530	41,160	202,195	10,131	2,880	1,124,686	46,697	.....	199,408	6,818

CHAPTER XLII.

"THE END OF AN AULD SANG."

LITERATURE AND THE DRAMA—HIGHER EDUCATION—NATIONAL GUARD—THE NAVY
YARD—ARCHITECTURAL PROGRESS—WALLABOUT—PUBLIC STATUES
—THE PASSING OF BROOKLYN CITY.

BUT we must turn away from statistics. Though necessary, they are by no means interesting and are apt to become tiresome. But those we have presented form a splendid and significant synopsis of the great progress which Brooklyn made during its last quarter of a century. It was a metropolitan city in fact if not in name, and while growing in wealth was almost daily adding to its possessions in all that an educated, progressive and hospitable city holds most dear.

In literature the first place as representative of the city was still held by the newspaper press. "The Eagle" still sustained its supremacy, and in 1892 vacated its old premises which so long had been a landmark at the bottom of Fulton street and moved to a palatial structure at the corner of Washington and Johnson streets, the site of the ill-fated Brooklyn Theater. The "Standard" was first published in 1884, but after some three years it consolidated, and "The Standard-Union" as such commenced in 1887, and was in reality a survival of several papers, including "The Argus." In 1886 the "Brooklyn Citizen" commenced its issue, and under the editorship of Andrew McLean soon became noted for its literary ability and won a recognized place as a family newspaper. During the time here treated the publication of weekly papers con-

tinued to be a part of the privilege of every man who had a cause to advocate or money to waste; sometimes, it must be told, the amusement of men who had neither. Hardly a month passed without a new weekly being "established," but as a rule the careers of these organs were brief. When the city became a borough, however, there were twenty-nine of these weekly publications in Brooklyn, as follows: Baker's Journal and Deutsche Amerikanische Baecker Zeitung, Bedford Home News, Blade, Life, Courier, East New York Advertiser, Flatbush Press and Kings County Gazette, Greenpoint Independent, Greenpoint Weekly Star, Kings County Journal, Ledger, Nordiske Blade, Nordisk Tiende, Oesterns Haerold, Post, Record, Reform, Reporter, Review, Revue, Saturday Journal, Siirtolainan Supervisor, Svenska Amerikanska Pressen, Transcript, Uptown Weekly, Weekly, and Williamsburgh Democrat.

In 1893 an effort was made to establish a new daily,—the "Chronicle,"—but the effort ended in failure in three months,—a few days more. It was organized apparently to "boom" the consolidation scheme, but the people did not need any special organ to enlighten them on that point and so "The Chronicle" came to an untimely end. Since then no real effort has been made to establish a new daily in the City of Churches, and the Eagle, Times, Standard-

Union, Citizen and Freie Presse (German) have the field to themselves and meet every requirement ably and well.

But in the higher walks of literature, Brooklyn continued to be as little of a centre to the end of her separate history as she was when her position in the world was only that of New York's bedroom. Her story had been written by Dr. Henry R. Stiles and written with a degree of thoroughness that made the work a model in the way of local histories and every line seemed penned with a degree of patient care and loving industry which has made it the text book of all who have since studied the subject, and Thomas W. Field had written an account of the battle of Long Island, while Spooner, Onderdonck, Murphy, Bergen and others had treated of the past with the unwearied carefulness of typical antiquaries and sometimes with the infinite grace of the man of letters, but these things, useful and valuable and inspiring as they are, are not literature; rather are they the foundations for literature. Shakespeare wrote his "Macbeth" with a story in Holinshed's "Chronicles" as a basis. "Macbeth" is part of our literature. Holinshed's "Chronicles" is not, but we could ill afford to lose it. So far as reading, study and the literary gift were concerned Brooklyn might be regarded as a literary producer; but the trouble was that as soon as a man began to acquire eminence in letters he found it necessary as a result of his calling to move across the river or to some other place where the maker of books could weave his thoughts or arrange his fancies or ideas, or formulate his theories or his dogmas with all the processes and agencies at hand for reaching the public. A case in point is that of Prof. John Bach McMaster, whose "History of the People of the United States" promises to rank as an American classic. That work is printed in Brooklyn, but is published in New York, and people speak of him as "the eminent Pennsylvania writer," although he is a native of Brooklyn and in Brooklyn received the educational training which fitted him for

the honored position he now holds among the country's historians. Rossiter W. Raymond was long regarded as among the most industrious of Brooklyn's professional litterateurs, and in Brooklyn much of his life work was done, but the world generally regarded him as a Manhattan worker. Will Carleton, the poet, whose "Betsy and I Are Out" has perhaps been as widely popular as any production of its size that has appeared in recent years, is never spoken of as a Brooklyn poet although his home has been in it for many years; and the same might be said of Wallace Bruce, a man with an international reputation as a lecturer and poet, who set up his home in Brooklyn when he returned to America after representing the United States as Consul at Edinburgh for four years. Henry George, the publicist whose "Progress and Poverty" has proved a new gospel to a large group of earnest, thoughtful men and women who are trying to improve life by removing poverty and laying bare its cause, is never regarded as having had any connection with Brooklyn, although his home was at Fort Hamilton for many years before his death in 1897 during the contest for the mayoralty of New York in which he was one of the candidates. Dr. John D. Ross, who has made a special study of the life and works of Burns, his great poet and countryman, does his literary work in his Brooklyn home, but Brooklyn is never heard in connection with it. It seems a pity that the literature that really ought to be rightly credited to the city, be regarded as a part of its work for the world, should find its sponsors elsewhere.

Possibly one exception might be made to this in the case of the Ford brothers, whose literary work somehow, no matter where printed, has always been associated with the city of Brooklyn. Their father, Gordon Leicester Ford, was a resident of Brooklyn for over 40 years, and as a collector of internal revenue, as business manager of the "New York Tribune," as well as in various other import-

ant capacities, was one of its most widely known citizens. A man of many grand qualities, an active and conscientious citizen, a fearless supporter of whatever he deemed to be right, a sturdy partisan yet tolerant of the views of others, he carried with him in his "daily walk and conversation" the hearty good wishes of an ever increasing circle of personal friends. In all the literary and higher social life of Brooklyn he was particularly prominent; and in the affairs of the Historical Society, the Brooklyn Library and similar institutions he was particularly active and helpful. His own collection of books, manuscripts and autographs was in itself a wonder, and long before his death, in 1891, it was regarded as the largest private collection in Brooklyn. It was especially rich in Americana, and for over half a century he had been patiently collecting books, pamphlets, manuscripts, portraits—anything in fact that threw even a slender side light on the story of the land. At his death he bequeathed his literary and artistic treasures to his two sons and they have largely added to them and turned them to practical value in their literary work.

The eldest, Worthington C. Ford, who was born in Brooklyn in 1858, edited "The Writings of George Washington" in ten volumes, and several other works treating of the "Father of his Country," while his younger brother, Paul Leicester Ford, born at Brooklyn in 1865, has issued the Writings of Thomas Jefferson, also in ten volumes, and quite a host of books from such pamphlets as one on "Who was the Mother of Franklin's Son," to solid contributions to historical study and works of fiction which have been sold by the thousands on both sides of the Atlantic.

Brooklyn has been, and is rich in book collectors and in some of its homes are to be found the largest and choicest collections of rare books to be found anywhere in America. To mention the contents of such collections as that of Mr. Daniel M. Tredwell, author of "A Plea for Bibliomania," "Literature of the Civil War," and a number of other interesting

monographs, or that of Norton Q. Pope, or that of Prof. Charles E. West, or that of William Augustus White, or that of C. H. Moser, would be to enumerate a succession of gems enough to fill a goodly sized volume.

But we may here recall one noted collector who certainly turned his treasures to practical use before his death on Feb. 2, 1900. This was James A. H. Bell, who in June, 1899, presented several thousand of his rarest volumes to the Brooklyn Library. He was born in New Orleans on June 4, 1817, and when three years old his parents died of yellow fever. The boy was discovered between the bodies of his father and mother, and was taken to a hospital, but he never contracted the disease. He was subsequently sent by the Mayor of New Orleans to Brooklyn, where his uncle, Augustus Graham, resided. Mr. Graham was the founder of the Graham Institute, which became the Brooklyn Institute, and is now the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences. Mr. Graham cared for his nephew for some years and eventually he was adopted by his housekeeper, a Mrs. Taylor.

Mr. Bell was for some years engaged in the brewery business in Manhattan. When only 14 years of age he began to take a great interest in books and this interest never lagged. During the last forty years he had been a devoted collector. When his collection had grown too large for him to care for, owing to his advanced age, Mr. Bell presented the most valuable books in it to the Brooklyn Library. This collection is kept in a separate room and is distinct from the regular library. One of the interesting parts of the collection is the index which comprises thirty-six volumes. The index is in detail and is all in Mr. Bell's handwriting.

After he made this present to the Brooklyn Library Mr. Bell found that he had too much time to himself and he began to make another collection. At the time of his death he had succeeded in getting about 2,000 volumes for his new library.

Mr. Bell's home at 45 Sands street had

been occupied by him and his family for over a half century. When he first took possession of it the house was one of the handsomest in Brooklyn.

Possibly the nearest approach to a literary cult in Brooklyn was due to the establishment

lution, and one of interest to the students of the personal life of George Washington. But with the publication of the last named, in 1889, that branch of the society's usefulness has apparently come to an end. It is housed in a handsome building at Clinton and Pierrepont



LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY BUILDING.

of the Long Island Historical Society, but with the passing away of its founders that institution seemed to lose much of its earlier inspiration. For a time its publication fund promised to enrich local literature and did enrich it with four volumes, three of which are of great importance as contributions to the story of Brooklyn and of the American Revo-

lution, which it had erected for its own use in 1880, it has a library of 43,000 volumes which is steadily being added to and its museum is a marvelous storehouse of curiosities,—birds, stones, Indian relics, manuscripts, deeds, pictures,—relating mainly to Long Island. Its literary and other treasures are freely placed at the service of all who are interested. The

other Brooklyn libraries have already been referred to and it is needless to enlarge upon any of them at this writing as the entire system in the Greater New York is steadily undergoing radical changes.

The literary tendency of the people has shown itself in the great number of literary clubs which have flourished in the city. The Writers' Club, organized in 1895, is mainly composed of professional people: the Brooklyn Catholic Historical Society, founded in 1891, explains its purpose clearly in its name, which is more than can be said of most of the others. But many and varied as are these coteries they are far outstripped in numbers and extent of membership by the musical organizations. The Oratorio Society of Brooklyn, founded in 1893, has a membership of 250; the Arion Singing Society, 600 members; the Harmony Glee Club, 250 members; the United German Singers, 1,400 members; Amateur Musical Club, 200 members, and so on through a list of about 100 organizations. The most prominent composer associated with Brooklyn is Dudley Buck, for many years organist in Holy Trinity Church and who resigned in 1902. In 1871 he became organist in the Music Hall, Boston, and attracted the attention of Theodore Thomas, and he was associated with that famous musician and leader for several years. Many of Buck's best compositions were first produced at Mr. Thomas' concerts, notably the music for Sidney Lanier's centennial cantata, which was given at the opening of the Philadelphia Exposition in 1876. In 1878 Buck became choirmaster and organist of Holy Trinity and resided in Brooklyn until the end. His religious compositions have been much admired and are to be found in all modern books of praise. As a teacher of music he stands at the very head of Brooklyn's instructors.

From music to art is an easy step; but a large volume might easily be written on Brooklyn's artists and art collections. It has long been the home of J. M. Hart, the famous land-

scape and cattle painter, of Wedworth Wadsworth, whose illustrations to Shakespeare, Cooper, Tennyson and others, as well as his water-color sketches have been highly praised; of Carleton Wiggins, and of E. H. Blashfield who studied under Gerome, won a medal at the Salon in Paris and was one of the decorators of the Chicago Exhibition. The famous "Gibson Girl" might also claim to be a Brooklyn lass, for her designer, W. Hamilton Gibson, has been a resident of Brooklyn more or less steadily since he was a child and was educated at the Polytechnic.

But the painter who has done most to depict Brooklyn and Long Island on canvas is Charles Henry Miller. In reviewing an exhibition of his works given in 1901 a well known New York critic wrote as follows:

Mr. Miller has followed the adage that beauty lies about one, and need not be sought afar. As Whistler painted and etched the Thames before his Chelsea house, so Miller found his pictures on Newtown Creek and at Hell Gate, at Creedmoor, and Roslyn. The mill belonging to the famous local bard, Bloodgood Cutter, appears in two of his compositions. Sometimes he went as far as the Hudson and penetrated the Highlands even into Peekskill; and again he would make a tour of his beloved and always grateful Long Island and paint the "graveyard of ships" at Port Washington, or visit the marshy solitudes of the Great South Bay, linger near the Shinnecock Hills, and reach the remote hamlet of East Hampton—when East Hampton was not only remote but a hamlet. There is evidence that he has trod the soil of New Jersey; for here is a grove of tall trees at Weehawken with a glimpse of New York in the deep distance.

But for the most part his own little corner is his world, where he paints with evident gusto such townscapes and landscapes as "The Queen's Church," "Springfield Road at Queens," "A Gray Day on Long Island," "Landscape at Queens Park," "Queens Barnyard at Sunset," "Queenlawn Homestead," "Sunset at Queens," "The Queens School," "Queens Corners," "Oaks at Creedmoor, Queens." Like the old Dutchman, like Constable, and some of the French landscapists

of 1830-1860, he is a philosopher on the question of novelties, preferring to give all his strength to an endeavor to paint what is at his doors, instead of roaming abroad for the stimulus that new scenery might bring.

At the same time he has not lacked foreign travel. He has studied at Munich and visited other countries besides Holland and Germany. He has been an Academician since 1875, and won medals at expositions in Philadelphia, Boston, and New Orleans. In the course of time his paintings has changed very considerably. Where it was muddy and without sunshine it has become alive. If he has not reached great skill in rendering the delicate differences in atmosphere, some of his later works show the effect of modern struggles with the problem of sunlight and air. Take as an instance No. 56, "A Frosty Day on Long Island." The remains of a cold fog are indicated well by the trees and by the cattle coming into sight in the hazy air, down the level road, toward the observer. This is a very different style compared with his earlier work like "Manhattan from Long Island," where the painting is dull and turbid. "A Cloudy Day in Spring," which was part of the American exhibit at Paris last summer, has a quiet truth to nature that is often lacking in older work. "New York from Newtown Creek," painted in 1876, and "High Bridge from Harlem Lane," are pieces for a historical society rather than for a museum of art; for the value lies in the subject rather than their artistic force.

About a score of paintings here, about one in four, hold one through the beauty of their coloring and the sturdy value of their composition. Easily first stands the big canvas, "Autumn Oaks at Creedmoor," a serious and even grand landscape, large in composition, simple and impressive as to mass, and fine in coloring. A number of landscapes in this style, but not quite so impressive, indicate the strongest vein of the painter.

In 1882 Brooklyn possessed an educational department that was justly regarded as a model. Its resources were ample, its teaching staff was able and enthusiastic and its school rooms were even better appointed than those on Manhattan Island. Its school board comprises 45 members and its system of primary, grammar, evening and industrial schools was

complete. In 1882 William H. Maxwell was appointed Associate Superintendent, and Superintendent in 1887, and from then onward until the close of 1897 he was the real administrator of the affairs of Brooklyn's public school system and administered them well. The city in 1896 voted \$2,564,263 for the maintenance of the schools. Possibly no department of the city government was regarded with more pride than this, but somehow since consolidation that feeling is not so generally apparent.

As has already been remarked Brooklyn has never managed to have a recognized university in its midst, but the opportunities for what is called the higher education have been liberally provided even since the days when it was thought that education should consist of something more than a knowledge of the three r's. The Polytechnic, however, is in reality a college and in 1890 received from the Regents of the State University a charter which conferred on it "all the rights, powers and dignities given by law and the ordinances of the Regents to the college." The Polytechnic, however, had an existence since 1854 and as early as 1869 its work was of such a high standard that the Regents gave it the authority to confer the degrees of Bachelor of Science and Bachelor of Arts. Its present building was completed in 1890 and not only has commodious class rooms, studies, laboratories and gymnasiums but ample accommodations for the splendid Spicer library, a collection for reference works collected by Capt. Elihu Spicer at a cost of \$35,000 and presented to the Polytechnic as a memorial of his son who was one of the pupils. It is a technical and commercial school and has about 700 students each year and 50 instructors.

The Packer Institute is the successor of the old Brooklyn Female Academy which was destroyed by fire in 1853. Mrs. William F. Packer then offered to establish with a gift of \$65,000, a new school for girls, as a memorial to her husband, and the property of the old

school was transferred to the corporation which established the Polytechnic. So in 1854 the building of the Packer Collegiate Institute was opened to receive pupils and quickly became known as the most perfect establishment for the education of young women in the country. The original building has been added to and the curriculum has been changed and improved and strengthened to meet the needs of the time, and every change found in Mrs. Packer a liberal and zealous supporter until her death in 1892. It has a corps of 53 instructors and an average roll of 650 students. Under Dr. Truman T. Backus it has kept pace with the highest class of women's colleges and its equipment and curriculum are maintained with a zealous regard to preserve its traditions and its rich record of accomplishment.

The Adelphi Academy, founded in 1869, entered upon its new building in 1886 mainly through a gift of \$160,000 by Charles Pratt, president of its Board of Trustees. It is a complete institution, preparatory, academic and collegiate, and takes a pupil into its kindergarten at the earliest age and fits him for the university or for a business or technical career. Its art department is possibly the most perfect and complete in the country. In 1889 the splendid buildings it occupies were seriously damaged by fire but the damage was soon repaired. It has generally between 1,100 and 1,200 pupils on its rolls.

Mr. Charles Pratt, who made a yet more princely provision for Brooklyn education in the establishment which bears his name—the Pratt Institute—was one of the partners in the Standard Oil Company. The land for this institution was bought in 1883 and work on the building was at once begun. It was designed by its projector to be "for the promotion of art, science, literature, industry and thrift," and he had been planning its features for twenty-five years or more, basing its curriculum on some of the English technical schools with the aim of so supplementing the usual educational training as to fit, by its evening

classes, young men and women to apply themselves to the trade they had selected with the best technical and applied knowledge. Before it was fairly opened its donor passed away, May 4, 1891.

One of the early announcements of the institution gave an idea of the comprehensiveness of the plan thought out by Mr. Pratt with the provisions for the day and evening classes in the following condensed "calendar:"

High School—A four-years course for both sexes, combining drawing and manual work with the usual studies of a high school or academy.

Department of Fine Arts—Classes in free-hand and architectural drawing, clay modeling, wood-carving, design, art needle-work; regular art course; normal course for training of teachers; lecture course.

Department of Domestic Art—Normal domestic art course; courses in sewing, dress-making, millinery, physical culture, combined course in domestic art and domestic science; lecture course.

Department of Domestic Science—Normal domestic science course, household science, hygiene and home nursing, public hygiene, cookery, laundry, food economics; lecture course.

Department of Science and Technology—Normal manual training, drawing, and machine designs; algebra, geometry, physics, chemistry, electrical construction, steam and the steam engine, strength of materials, machine design; mechanical drawing; carpentry, machine work, plumbing, house, sign and fresco painting; lecture course.

Department of Kindergartens—Training class for teachers, mothers' class, nurses' class, special classes; lecture course.

Department of Libraries—Free Library, Reading and Reference Room. Classes in library training, literature and cataloguing.

Department of Museums—Collections of inorganic substances, ceramics, glass, building and decorative stones, reproductive processes, organic compounds, textile fabrics.

The Thrift—Deposit, savings, and loan branches, the privileges of which are open to the public.

The Brooklyn Eagle Almanac for 1896, after the institution had been in operation for

several sessions, gave the following account of its work, an account evidently supplied "on authority:"

"The late Charles Pratt gave to the youth of Brooklyn an institution that is unique among the educational establishments of the country. While there are technological schools in other cities, there are none that were founded by a single individual that have anything like the range and influence that is exerted by the Pratt Institute. The buildings of this school are on Ryerson street, between Wiloughby and DeKalb avenues, extending back for a block to Grand avenue. The main structure is 100 feet wide by 60 feet in depth, and six stories in height. The building devoted to science and technology behind this structure is 240 by 95 feet, while directly south of the main building is that of the High School, 50 by 80 feet, and three stories high. The latter was completed January 1, 1892. A new building has been erected on the west side of Ryerson street, that will contain the library. [This was completed and opened in May, 1896, and contains about 80,000 volumes and the collection is at the service of any resident of Brooklyn.]

"The object of the Institute is to promote manual and industrial education, as well as cultivation in literature, science and art; to inculcate habits of industry and thrift, and to foster all that makes for right living and good citizenship. Its aim is also to educate young men and women in handicrafts by which they will be made self-supporting; it encourages them, moreover, to practice those arts in a thorough and honest manner. The classes are open to everyone, but there is no room for shirkers and dawdlers. Nominal charges for tuition are made, but the Institute is in no way a money-making concern. The library of 52,000 in the new building is free to all citizens, children included. There is a reading room, with a reference department of nearly 2,000 volumes. On the second floor is an assembly hall, where lectures are given on the more general aspects of studies in the curriculum.

"The floor above is mostly devoted to domestic art—dressmaking, etc.; and on the second floor is a commercial department. The cooking schools are on the upper floor. The whole fourth floor is devoted to art—painting, drawing, designing, carving, modeling in clay—while the technical museum on the fifth floor and other parts of the main building contain

works of art in textiles, etchings, photography, ceramics and metal. There is a fine collection of minerals. The large annex contains the engines, anvils, shops, foundries and other branches of the Department of Science and Technology.

"The High School is the Academic Department of the Institute. Its course of study covers three years and embraces manual training for both boys and girls. Pupils who have graduated successfully from a public grammar school are prepared to enter the High School, which fits its graduates for the highest scientific schools and colleges.

"In the basement of the main building is the library school for the training of library assistants, and the luncheon room.

"The Institute is under the control of a board of trustees. The average number of students is 3,000; instructors, 120."

Since then the work of the Institute has so increased that the last returns give the number of instructors at 134. The department called The Thrift is practically a building loan bureau and by it thousands of working people have been enabled to own their own homes.

But useful as the Pratt Institute is, the educational pride of Brooklyn is the "Institute of Arts and Sciences." It has done a great work in the past, it is doing a great work in the present, but its future promises wonderful developments. It is the outgrowth of the old Apprentices' Library of 1824. In 1843 the name was changed to the Brooklyn Institute and for many years its annual lecture course was famous in the days when the lecture platform was a power in the land. Its main benefactor was Augustus Graham. He presented to its trustees the building on Washington street in which it was housed, and at his death in 1851 it was found that he had bequeathed to it \$27,000 as an endowment. Of this the income from \$10,000 was to be spent in scientific lectures and the purchase of scientific apparatus, the income from \$12,000 was to provide Sunday evening lectures on religious topics, while the interest on the remaining \$5,000 was to support a school of art. But somehow the interest in the institution began to fall off,

the building was remodeled at a cost of \$30,000 without improving its popularity, and as this amount was met by a mortgage the interest on Graham's endowment had to be devoted to its payment.

In 1887 a number of public-spirited citizens, foreseeing the evident end of the Institute, determined to revive it in accordance with modern ideas and on a scale that would be in keeping with the growth and importance of the city, with a grand museum as its central feature. A public meeting was held and much general interest was aroused and it was not long before the Institute building became a scene of daily activity. In two years the membership rose from 350 to 1,200, the library was reorganized and augmented at the rate of 50,000 books a year, most of the scientific societies in Brooklyn joined the Institute and became departments of its work. In 1890 the building was partly destroyed by fire but the work went on, the various schools offering quarters for the use of the departments and in 1891 it had a total membership of 1,810. That year the Institute formally passed out of existence and its property was deeded to the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences,—the old society under a new name and with greatly enlarged powers. In 1892 the old building was acquired for bridge purposes and demolished and the departments continued to find refuge in the various schools and institutions until the new permanent home should be ready.

That home was the museum, so long talked about and anticipated. The city of Brooklyn was authorized to erect a section of the Museum building at a cost not to exceed \$300,000. A tract of land facing the Eastern Parkway on the north, Washington avenue on the east, a line 100 feet south on the southern boundary of old President street on the south, and land reserved for the Prospect Hill Reservoir on the west, containing eleven and nine-tenths acres and valued at \$900,000, was leased by the city of Brooklyn to the Institute for a term of one hundred years.

On this site has been erected the first section of a Museum building, in classic style, and the entire structure, when completed, will cover an area of 560 feet square, with four interior courts, to provide light for the central portions of the building. The plan provides for collections illustrating the general history of Art and Architecture on the first floor, rooms for the illustration of the practical Arts and Sciences on the second floor, and galleries for the illustration of the history of Painting, Engraving, Etching and Decorative Art on the third floor. The central portion of the building is carried one story higher than the rest, and in this the Schools of Fine Arts and of Architecture will be located.

The first section of the building was completed in January, 1897, and was furnished and ready for occupancy as a Museum in May. It was opened to the public for the first time on June 2, 1897, and has remained open daily since. A second building in Bedford Park, on Brooklyn avenue, is used as an auxiliary to the main Museum.

The Board of Estimate and Apportionment in 1899 authorized the erection of a second section of the Museum Building and an appropriation to meet the cost of the same of \$300,000. The second section is now in process of erection.

The departments now covered by the Institute's work include anthropology, archaeology, architecture, astronomy, botany, chemistry, domestic science, electricity, engineering, entomology, fine arts, geography, geology, law, mathematics, microscopy, mineralogy, music, painting, pedagogy, philately, philology, philosophy, photography, physics, political science, psychology, sculpture and zoology. It has a membership of 6,132 and its yearly work consists of courses of lectures on the arts and sciences, monthly meetings of each of the departments, concerts and dramatic readings. Its collections in anthropology, archaeology, architecture, chemistry, botany, entomology, ethnology, geography, geology, microscopy, min-

erology, photography and zoology, apparatus in physics, chemistry, electricity and engineering, and collections of paintings, sculpture and statuary are large and varied. The officers are A. Augustus Healy, Pres.; Chas. A. Schieren and Carll H. De Silver, Vice-Prests.; George C. Brackett, Sec.; Wm. B. Davenport, Treas.; Associate Members: Rev. Albert J. Lyman, Pres.; James Cruikshank, Sec.; John A. Taylor, Treas.; Prof. Franklin W. Hooper, General Director of the Institute.

The early story of the drama in Brooklyn has already been told and its later history may here be rapidly sketched. The Brooklyn Theatre, destroyed by the awful calamity of December 5, 1876, was rebuilt in 1879 under a new name—Haverly's—but was not a success either financially or artistically and was torn down in 1890 to afford a site for "The Eagle" newspaper.

But somehow the drama has never acquired much of a foothold in Brooklyn and while stars and combination companies fill up a week's engagement very comfortably the taste of the people seems to run toward "variety" rather than to the "legitimate." Mr. Hamilton Ormsbee in 1898 summarized the closing days of the Brooklyn theatrical story as follows:

An attraction was Hooley's Opera House, which occupied the upper floor of a building at Court and Remsen streets, where the Dime Savings Bank now stands, from 1862 to 1883. It was called an opera house, but was a place for minstrel show and is chiefly notable for the appearance of popular black-face performers and for the fact that that brilliant comedian, Nat C. Goodwin, used to do the imitations of eminent actors, for which he was once noted upon its stage at a very early time in his career. Another disused theatre is the Lee Avenue Academy in the Eastern District, which for many years after it was opened, in 1872, occupied the same position in the eastern end of the city as the Park did in the western. There was also once a theatre where is now Liebmann's Arcade, on Fulton street. R. M. Hoo-

ley and Thomas Donnelly opened it in 1869 as the Olympic. Hyde & Behman and John W. Holmes afterward conducted it and it disappeared about 1890. Music Hall, at the junction of Fulton street and Flatbush avenue, was used for a time about 1872 for negro minstrel exhibitions. The oldest theatre in the Eastern District is the American, on Driggs avenue, which was built as the Odeon in 1852, used in 1868 by R. M. Hooley as a variety house and has been both a variety theatre and a skating rink.

The conversion of an unused market on Adams street, near Myrtle avenue, into a variety theater in 1877 is notable, because it was the introduction to Brooklyn of the firm of Hyde & Behman, among the most extensive and prosperous managers in the theatrical business. Their Adams street house is one of the leading variety houses in the country, and they are the owners of six other theaters in Brooklyn, besides one in Newark. Their Brooklyn houses are the Grand Opera House, Amphion, Park and Gayety, used for drama, and Hyde & Behman's, the Star and Empire, for variety and burlesque. The Grand Opera House, in Elm Place, was built on the site of a church, and opened to the public in 1881. It was long managed by Knowles & Morris. The Amphion, on Bedford avenue, was built by the Amphion Musical Society, with the idea that it would occupy the same position in the Eastern District that the Academy of Music did in the Western. It was opened as a first-class theater, with C. M. Wiske as manager. This venture was unprofitable, and in January, 1888, Knowles & Morris took possession, conducting the house as a combination theatre. The control of Manager Edwin Knowles over this house lasted until the end of last season, and in that time he presented at that theatre the chief American and foreign actors of the day, with the exception of Henry Irving. Mr. Knowles was also the first manager of the Columbia, built for him, Daniel Frohman and Al Hayman, and opened

March 7, 1892, with "Alabama." The Bijou Theatre was opened November 13, 1893, by H. C. Kennedy & Co., with Mr. Kennedy as the resident manager. The play was "Adonis," with Henry E. Dixey. In 1895 Colonel William E. Sinn, who had leased the Park Theatre since 1875, opened the Montauk Theatre, which was regarded as the most perfectly adapted house of its kind when completed. The Star Theatre was built about the time the Brooklyn Theatre was torn down, was used for a time as a combination house, and has since been occupied for variety and burlesque.

The leading event in the history of the Brooklyn little theatrical world in the closing days, however, was not its transformations or changes of management, but the final appearance of a world-renowned actor, who had, it would seem, lingered on the stage too long. This was Edwin Booth, possibly the greatest tragedian America has produced, who on April 4, 1891, made his last public effort on any stage at the Academy of Music. The play selected was "Hamlet," and as the Prince Booth had in the years of his prime won his highest meed of praise. But his performance that night, as indeed on every night of his engagement, was a shock to all his admirers. It was mercilessly condemned by the newspaper critics, who did not see that the performance itself was a tragedy,—the ending in gloom of a career that had done more than aught else to lift the American stage above the level of "Uncle Tom's Cabin" and "The Dumb Man of Manchester." But it was the old story summarized in Johnson's famous line.

"Superfluous lags the veteran on the stage."

The National Guard after the war became a well-disciplined force. The Brooklyn contingent formed the second of the four brigades into which the State military forces were divided and was under the command of Brigadier-General James McLeer, one of the vet-

erans of the Civil War and who for eight years had held the office of Postmaster of Brooklyn. The strength of the commands under him in 1897 was as follows:

Organization.	No. of Members.
Brigade Headquarters.....	11
Thirteenth Regiment.....	635
Fourteenth Regiment.....	616
Twenty-third Regiment.....	759
Forty-seventh Regiment.....	593
Seventeenth Separate Company....	94
Third Battery.....	81
Second Signal Company.....	48
Troop C.....	100
Total	2,937

From the time of the close of hostilities between the States the Guard had been mainly engaged in holiday making, varied by shooting excursions to Creedmoor, but even amid the holiday making discipline and tactics were strenuously maintained, so that one of the officers used to remark that the Brooklyn National Guard was ready at any moment to go on any military duty. But the time came when the value of the militia was to be again tested. On January 14, 1895, 5,500 employes of the trolley companies went on strike. The merits of the dispute have no interest for us here and need not be discussed. Almost the entire system of street-car travel was brought to a standstill, and the apparent perfection of the strikers' plans seemed to give promise of a speedy termination of the trouble. But the employers were obstinate, and on the following day the strikers commenced to get ugly. Slowly the cars "began again to move," as new hands flocked in from all parts of the country, and on the 16th and 17th the police was able to handle whatever disturbances arose. On the 18th, however, the trouble got beyond their capability, a car was fired upon, a riot of considerable proportions raged for a time on Fifth avenue, and "fresh" conductors and motormen as well as passengers suffered, and on the following day the entire militia force, under General McLeer, was ordered out.

The military remained in possession of the streets until February 1st, when the struggle was given up by the strikers. During these eventful days the troops had hard work. Several of the rioters were shot, and it is hard to say how many were hurt in the daily charges of the cavalry. The streets were constantly patrolled by armed men, and here and there loaded cannons were placed on open streets ready to sweep an entire thoroughfare if necessary. Brooklyn breathed freely when it was all over and mourned the loss involved in human life as well as in money; but it was felt that the National Guard had saved the city from an era of mob violence and riot which would have brought about scenes at the very thought of which the boldest could not help shuddering.

In 1896 the Navy Yard was adorned with a rather ornate new main entrance at Sands and Navy streets, and its entire 112½ acres were by that time fully enclosed on the land side. The following description of the yard in 1897 is from "The Eagle:" "The Lyceum is a three-story structure. On the ground floor are the offices of the captain of the yard, and on the second floor offices of the commandant and his aides, and on the third floor the quarters of his clerks. Here the records are preserved, including such as pertain to ships, lists of officers and rosters of all clerks and the employes. In Trophy Park, a triangular green adjoining the Lyceum—not in the Museum—is a marble column, commemorating twelve American seamen who fell at the capture of the Barrier forts, on Canton River, China, in 1856. It was erected by their shipmates on the "San Jacinto," "Portsmouth" and "Levant." About the monument are guns captured from the British frigate "Macedonian," and the iron prow of the Confederate ram "Mississippi." In 1890 the Naval Museum, containing priceless relics and trophies, was sent to the Naval Academy at Annapolis. A small octagonal building west of Trophy Park is the office of the naval surgeon, and beyond

that there is a building for provisions and clothing. Here is cut out by machinery all the clothing used in the Navy, except that worn by officers, though the garments are sent away to be finished. Here, also, all the coffee used in the Navy is roasted, ground, put up in tins, and all canned goods, hard tack and condensed food for the Navy are stored.

"On the other side of Main street the cruiser "Cincinnati" was built.

"The workshops, machine shops and foundries are on Chauncey, Warrington and Morris avenues. On Chauncey avenue, which extends from Main street to Flushing avenue, are the cooper shop, mold shop, ordnance building, tank shed, now used for sand, coal and lumber; a building for anchor chains and rigging loft, coppersmith's, plumbing shop and boiler shops. Building No. 7, on Warrington avenue, contains various departments, the court-martial room, civil engineer's room and flag loft, where all flags and bunting used by our Navy as well as flags of other nations are made by women. Other buildings on this avenue are the blacksmith's shop, paint shop, yard and docks, construction department and steam engineering department. The avenue ends in a park. On Morris avenue are a joiner's shop, offices, boat house and iron plating shops. Most of the senior officers are pleasantly quartered on Flushing avenue, while some of them live in private houses in the city. The spacious marine barracks and drill yard are entered from the gate on Flushing avenue, and the only department outside the enclosure is the Naval Hospital on Flushing avenue, separated from the yard by Wallabout market. In the hospital enclosure is the naval cemetery. The water front of the yard extends for 6,600 feet from Little street on the west to Division avenue on the east, and opposite the center is the Cob dock. This is an island nineteen acres in extent, and to resist the action of the tide a concrete and granite wall is built around it. It has a water front of 5,000 feet. Whitney Basin

in this island has a frontage of 3,300 feet. The ordnance dock is also here. Communication is had by means of a steam rope ferry, and a causeway across Wallabout Channel, connecting the Cob dock with the main shore at the northeast boundary line, is now practically completed. This causeway is to be 522 feet long, with an extreme width of forty-one feet. Two forty-ton cranes, traveling on an eighteen-foot railway around the dry docks, are designed for lifting armor plates weighing from twenty to forty tons; stepping steel masts, hoisting machinery and boilers and lowering them into place."

Among the most notable vessels constructed at the yard were the "Terror," launched in 1883, the "Puritan," launched in 1882, the "Cincinnati," launched in 1892, and the "Maine," launched in 1890. The subsequent destruction of this last-named vessel in Havana Harbor was the first incident in the war with Spain of 1898, in which the United States acquired so much glory and territory.

About 1880 began the real transformation of the city in respect to its architectural attractions. Heretofore, as a rule, the architects were limited to churches mainly, with here and there an opportunity in an armory or mansion to show their skill and taste. But by 1880 the public sentiment, the public taste and the public wealth began to call for a higher order of things, and the response was most gratifying. With the City Hall and the Municipal Building,—of which latter one of the Brooklyn civic boasts used to be that it cost \$20 less than the appropriation,—as a center, new structures of much beauty and commanding appearance began steadily to oust the old plain brick or marble front edifices so commonplace yet so comfortable. By 1890 a still further change was inaugurated. By that time the principle of skeleton construction had been introduced and the elevator system had been perfected, so that the height to which a building might be run up was a matter of money and calculation rather than of

the thickness of the walls. So Brooklyn began to get sky-scrapers, and its office buildings vie with those across the river for their size and the perfection of their details. The Jefferson building rises to a height of 98 feet, the Mechanics' Bank to 140 feet, the Franklin Trust to 156 feet, and the Telephone building to 128 feet. It is not customary to mention the Havemeyer & Elders vast sugar mills, erected in 1883, as architectural beauties, but if beauty in architecture be, as some contend, the adaptation of building ideas to a means and an end, they must be accepted. Such structures as the Alhambra and the Fougere are equal in point of architectural perfection and elaboration of detail to any apartment houses in the world, and such structures as the City Railroad building, the new structures which have transformed parts of Montague, Court, Remsen, Fulton and many other streets within a radius of the center of Brooklyn's political life, afford much gratification to the visitor of taste as well as a theme for pardonable pride on the part of the citizens. The Hall of Records building, completed in 1886, is a handsome structure in the Renaissance style, three stories high, and cost \$270,000. The Fire Department building, on Jay street near Willoughby, is a bold yet exceedingly graceful development of the Romanesque order. Its massive tower, rising some forty feet above the rest of the structure, gives it an individuality that at once attracts the eye. The Federal building, completed in 1892, at a cost of \$1,886,115, is a wonderful change from the little store at the corner of Fulton and Front streets, where up to 1819 Brooklyn's first Postmaster, Joel Bunce, was wont to transact business. In what is known as the shopping district,—Fulton street from the bridge to Flatbush avenue,—the dry goods merchants have erected huge structures, eclipsing in their size and adaptability most of those in New York, and it is also said far surpassing those across the river in the aggregate annual amount of business.

Mention of the dry goods stores recalls the

importance of these establishments in the daily history of Brooklyn, and might prompt a few lines further concerning them; but there are so many of them and of such varying degrees of importance that a selection might be invidious and would certainly be disappointing. But we may say a few words about the career of one of the greatest of these merchants, whose death early in 1900 is still mourned in many circles. This was Azel D. Matthews, who from a small beginning built up one of the largest trades in the city. His life story was, in fact, part and parcel of the modern history of Brooklyn. He settled in the place when it was a mere town of about 25,000 inhabitants. He began business in a small way, and as Brooklyn grew the Matthews establishment grew with it, until from a small shop in Main street the present large department store of A. D. Matthews & Sons in Fulton street evolved.

Mr. Matthews came of an old Cape Cod family. His father moved to Hinsdale, Massachusetts, where, on April 29, 1809, Azel D. Matthews was born. He began his mercantile career in Brooklyn in a small store at 93 Main street, which was then the business center of the town. He later established himself on Myrtle avenue, near Bridge street. Mr. Matthews was the pioneer among the dry goods merchants in the upper Fulton street movement. Recognizing the fact that Brooklyn was bound to grow, and that the march of trade would be up town, he rented a store at the corner of Fulton street and Gallatin place. That was thirty-five years ago. The Matthews store is now in the very center of the shopping district. From time to time additions have been made to the store, until it now covers the greater part of the block on Fulton street between Gallatin place and Smith street, extending back to Livingston street.

Mr. Matthews took a keen interest in the Church and Sunday-school life of Brooklyn. He early became identified with the Brooklyn Sunday-school Union, and continued his

association with that organization almost up to the time of his death.

During this period the city itself was constantly effecting improvements. One of the most important of these, apart from roadways and the like, was the acquisition of the marsh lands of the Wallabout and their transformation into a public market. The ground in question had long been an eyesore, and besides was a constant source of danger to the public health. It was long thought that a public market or a public park might be erected there, as it was not deemed possible that the ground could ever be adapted for building purposes or that it would ever be needed for the Navy Yard, of whose territory it was a part. On September 12, 1883, the Grocers' Retail Protective Association urged the authorities, at a conference, to secure the land in question and turn it into a market, offering all the aid in their power. Acting on this, the city government entered into negotiations with the Navy Department and as a result obtained a lease of the property, with a view of practically testing the success or otherwise of the project. Part of it was at once drained and graded, divided up into streets and lots, a lot of two-story frame structures were quickly run up by market men,—cheap structures of the most flimsy description, for the whole affair was an experiment and the United States could cancel the lease at any moment by giving thirty days' notice, when the whole concern might be wiped out. The strength of the market lay in the open lots to which farmers' and other wagons brought produce direct from farm or garden, and there remained for half a day or a day until their load was disposed of. The scheme worked so well, in spite of the many adverse conditions, that the city in 1891 purchased about eighteen acres of the marsh land for \$700,000 and the market became a fixed feature. In 1894 an additional twenty-seven acres was secured, for which Uncle Sam was paid \$1,208,666. This tract, between Clinton and Wash-

ington avenues and from Flushing avenue to the East River, has been developed, says the "Eagle" Almanac, "largely into a shipping basin and pier system for vessels in the food supply traffic, and embracing facilities for loaded railroad cars to be transferred to the market without breaking freight bulk. The bulkhead wall along the south and west sides of the basin is 1,680 feet in length, and that along the easterly side of the basin, some 1,080 feet. These walls, together with four of the five piers constructed, add a mooring frontage of over a mile in length to the city's wharfage room. The fifth pier, No. 2, has been leased to the Pennsylvania Railroad Company at the annual rental of \$12,000. The preparation of this pier for service involved the outlay of \$100,000 by the railroad company. The market is deriving great benefit from the operation of this terminal, and that of the Delaware, Lackawanna & Western Railroad, on the north side of Wallabout Canal, completed during last year. Cold storage, of which there was great need from the time the market was founded, has been provided in the opening to business last year of the establishment of the Kings County Refrigerating Company, with the preserving capacity of 700,000 square feet.

"In May, 1894, the city authorities and market people, acting conjointly, effected from the New York State Legislature the enactment of a law, chapter 569, which authorized the city authorities to issue upon lots rented five-year leases, with privilege of two renewals of similar duration at rates adjustable at the commencement of each term. The leases issued under this law required the erection of substantial buildings of brick, stone and iron, uniform in external design, at the outlay of the lessees; the buildings at the termination of the leases to revert to the city upon payment of their appraised values. During the years 1895-6 the buildings were constructed."

By the close of 1897 it was estimated that the annual business of the market amounted to

\$25,000,000, and often in the summer of that year something like 550 wagons of produce would be disposed of every Saturday, while the financial return to the city for the year was \$42,046 in the shape of rents, and \$3,531 from the fees paid by farmers for wagon room.

This was a practical work. But the city was not forgetful of the adornments which came from the sculptor's studio, and which, besides adding to the beauty and interest of a street or park, serve to show that republics are neither oblivious to aesthetic requirements nor ungrateful to their great men. Several of these have already been mentioned. The statue of General Grant, unveiled in 1896, was a gift to the city from the Union League Club, and in the same year the statue of General Warren on the Park Plaza was unveiled. A statue of General Fowler, who commanded Brooklyn's "red-legged devils" in the Civil War, will shortly be placed beside it, and an equestrian statue of General Slocum, another war hero, is promised soon. A simple monument, but a most significant one, was placed on Battle Hill, Prospect Park, August 27, 1895, in memory of the four hundred Maryland soldiers who fell near the spot thus again consecrated in the fateful battle of Brooklyn, August 27, 1776. It is a plain but extremely elegant shaft of white marble, and its cost was borne by the Maryland Society of Sons of the American Revolution. It is at once a memorial to brave men who gave up their lives in the cause of patriotism, and it marks the center of a widespread battle-field on which it almost seemed as if that liberty for which they had died had been forever crushed out.

A peculiarity in the way of statues,—one erected by citizens to mark their sense of the labors of a citizen then still living,—was that which was unveiled at the main entrance to Prospect Park, on June 6, 1891. The man so honored was J. S. T. Stranahan. The idea of erecting a statue of this esteemed citizen in

the people's playground which he had done so much to create was originated at a private gathering, and it was at once heartily endorsed, and in a short time the following committee was constituted to put the idea into shape: John Gibb, Chairman; John B. Woodward, Treasurer; Elijah R. Kennedy, Secretary; Richard S. Storrs, S. V. White, Darwin R. James, William B. Kendall, Charles Pratt, Henry B. Maxwell, George V. Brower, Samuel B. Duryea, C. N. Hoagland, E. F. Linton, William Carey Sanger, William Berri, Andrew D. Baird, Frederick A. Schroeder, Joseph F. Knapp, Bernard Peters, Thomas E. Stillman, Franklin Woodruff, David A. Boody, William A. Read, Abbott L. Dow, E. H. R. Lyman, A. C. Barnes, Charles E. Schieren, Alexander E. Orr, Benjamin D. Silliman and Gustave A. Jahn. In answer to a request for funds, money soon began to flow in, and the commission to execute the statue was placed with Frederick MacMonnies. His work was most satisfactorily completed, and the statue was unveiled amid much ceremony, at which Mr. Stranahan was privileged to be present and to listen to many kindly words about himself, notably those in the masterly address of Dr. Storrs.

Besides its progress in material wealth, in architectural beauty and commercial importance, the feature of Brooklyn's story during its last twenty years was annexation. The consolidation of Williamsburgh, Greenpoint and Bushwick in 1855 and the success of that experiment in the harmonious blending of the various elements had inspired a desire for "more." Besides, it was felt that Brooklyn was daily overflowing its old boundaries, and that the outlying districts were getting many of the benefits of the city government and privileges without being of any assistance in the matter of paying taxes, that what was spoken about as the "outside towns" were in reality prospering at the expense of Brooklyn. A beginning was made in 1886, when on May 13 a bill which had passed the Legislature

annexing New Lots became a law without the Governor's signature, thus taking from the town of Flatbush a vast proportion of its territory and adding a new ward, the Twenty-sixth, to Brooklyn.

The early story of New Lots has already been told, but the following interesting sketch by Mr. N. F. Palmer is interesting, as showing its modern development:

New Lots was originally settled by the well-to-do farmers of old Flatbush, and became an active farming district for market gardening, and all these New Lots farmers became prosperous and their influence was felt in the politics of Kings county. This influence prevented any innovation in the way of real estate development, and not until 1835 was there in the New Lots section a single parcel of land cut up into building lots. In that year Abraham H. Van Wyck and Peter Neefus purchased a parcel of land from the Johannus Eldert family, who owned a large farm extending from the Jamaica plank road to the old New Lots road next to the boundary line of the town of Jamaica. This locality had become famous by the horse race tracks at Union Course and Centerville, and a demand took place for building lots. Van Wyck mapped the lands into the first building lots, 25x100, in 1836, and lot No. 1 was near the corner of what is now Jamaica avenue and Eldert lane, in what is now known as the Cypress Hills section of the ward.

A few years after this, July, 1837, the farms of Major Daniel Rapelje and others were purchased by John R. Pitkin and a map made known as "Map No. 1, East New York lands, or the First Manufacturing District, lying on the Great Eastern Railroad, five and one-half miles from the city of New York." This was the first use of the words East New York, and represented a neighborhood near the old Howard House. The Postoffice Department adopted the name, and it has stuck to it ever since. There never was any village corporation nor other form of government, except the town of Flatbush, until 1852, when the town of New Lots was set off and created out of the eastern part of the town of Flatbush. Between Van Wyck and Pitken maps of 1836 and 1843 little was accomplished to create a boom in building on this tract. On

the contrary, Pitkin was obliged to work hard to hold his own through the hard times of '36, and released from contract a vast area contemplated in this manufacturing district. On the 1st and 7th of July, 1841, and the 2d and 15th of July, 1842, the titles (streets and avenues) were "made perfect through two great chancery sales," and a map was printed which gave notice: "East New York (center property), Union, monthly auction sale map. Notice: Several of the present proprietors of this valuable property have concluded to unite in establishing a system of monthly auction sales to persons wishing to make locations, or improvements. Persons can go out to see said property by the railroad cars from the South Ferry, Brooklyn side, at 9½ A. M., 4 and 6½ o'clock P. M. Tickets ½ each. Returning from East New York the cars leave at about 8¼, 1¼ and 5½ o'clock. This is a good opportunity to secure very valuable property at low prices. It will soon be on the line of the great thoroughfare to Boston, the quick ten hour route per Long Island Railroad now nearly complete, and only about 22 minutes' time per railroad from the city, Brooklyn side. How can Newark and Lynn be so much better than E. N. Y.? They are not so well situated."

So wrote John R. Pitkin in 1843, more than half a century ago, and, strange to contemplate, he then could ride from the South Ferry to East New York in twenty-two minutes. He used the argument about time to get there with great foresight, for he realized that as an inducement to boom his venture nothing else could better be engraved on his map.

This map shows that there were only thirty-eight buildings in East New York at this time. The railroad was in the center of Atlantic avenue, and had a branch track down what was then, and is now, Pennsylvania avenue, into a building in "Block 14," south of South Carolina avenue, which we now call Liberty avenue, into the building of the New Jersey Mills, now owned by the Davis family, and still in operation. The Howards' Halfway House, on the Brooklyn and Jamaica turnpike at the end of Flatbush road at the head of Alabama avenue, is where the stage coaches made a stop. Opposite was the house of J. L. Williams, standing about opposite to the middle of the block, on the north side of Flatbush road. There were no streets

represented on this map west of Alabama avenue, except the Flatbush road, nor any east of Wyckoff's lane, nor south of old Broadway. The following names appear as owners of lots: E. M. Strong, Isaac Bemis, Jacob H. Sackman, W. J. Furman, J. L. Williams, Vanderhof, W. van Voorhees, Frederick Lang and John Taphan along the south side of the turnpike. Along Virginia avenue (Fulton street) are the names: Johnson, Charles Gough, Wolcott March, Ransome Smith, and Turner. Along Alabama avenue, on the east side, were: Henry Grobe, Abram Van Siclen, Leonard Bond, Francis Keitz, Jacob H. Sackman, Isaac Bemis, John W. Warth, Charles Heitkamp. On Georgia avenue: Ransome Smith, Potter J. Thomas, Charles Vinton, Charles Georig, William K. Teasdale, William Simonson, Rul Smith, Wentworth, Isaac M. Steevnorf (Stoothoofs). On Sheffield avenue were Wolcot Marsh, Jacob H. Sackman, J. L. Williams, Thomas I. Gerrald, Lewis Kendig, S. Frisbey, John Van Siclen. Pennsylvania avenue on the west side was all a courtyard, with no names on it. On the east side were names: Vanderhoef, Ransome Smith, Samuel Judson, Sherman Institute Branch Depository Work and School, with Manson House corner of Atlantic avenue. H. F. Thrall on south side of Atlantic avenue, and south side of North Carolina avenue (Liberty avenue) the factory building, now Davis' New Jersey Mills; on New Jersey avenue were Dutch Reformed Church, Turner, S. Shepherd, George Butcher, C. Goebel. Corner of South Carolina avenue (now Glenmore), M. F. Misenere, J. F. Bridges; on Vermont avenue were, corner Virginia avenue, Ransome Smith, Jacob H. Sackman; corner Atlantic avenue, Ransome Smith, John Lohmans, Morganthaler, Assalle Seldinger, Charles Beumaer, R. S. Winslow; on Wyckoff lane were, on west side, John Sopham, John Lohman, J. H. Sackman, C. Heitkamp, Charles Beumer, F. Lang, John W. Worth, and at Broadway, Philip Obergirck. Not all of these occupied buildings, but they were the first investors in real estate in this locality.

In 1838 John R. Pitkin came out with a second map of the Second Manufacturing District in the easterly part of the town, laying out a large territory from the turnpike to the New Lots road. This was premature and the same territory was subsequently mapped by Rapalye, Walter Nichols, Lewis Curtis

and others; only a few blocks of this old map remain. In 1849 Williams, Pellington & Furman laid out the land at the north side of the B. and J. plank road between old Howard place and old Pellington place. This was followed in 1851 by the Jacob H. Sackman map and in 1853 by Sackman, Barby & Delmonico. Horace A. Miller came out in 1853 with the map of eighteen blocks of land on the east side of Pitkin's East New York lands, between the plank road and old Broadway. Up to 1859 these were the principal lands of East New York. About this period C. W. Heitkamp was energetic and took a leading part in the affairs of the town. He published a map made "from different surveys and maps made and drawn by M. G. Johman, Esq." At this period the Broadway horse railroad had continued to circumnavigate around two blocks near the Howard House, but the Fulton street horse cars had got only to the Mattowak House, where the plank road company of the late Aaron A. De Graw stood on guard. At this period John R. Pitkin was general agent and signed a "map of East New York, Kings County, Long Island, N. Y., drawn by C. W. Heitkamp, lithographed and published by Gustav Kraetzer, May 1, 1859." The map said: "Great sale at auction of East New York (center) building lots, by James Cole & Son, at the Merchants' Exchange, New York, of 100 very valuable (reserved) center lots, belonging to George D. Pitkin, Israel W. Vanderveer and others. * * * This is all most desirable property within $4\frac{1}{2}$ miles of New York City. By Broadway cars (fare 5 cents). About five miles by Fulton avenue cars from Fulton Ferry (fare 5 cents) and $5\frac{1}{2}$ miles from South Ferry." No mention is made of the Long Island R. R. or how one could get from South Ferry.

The principal buildings at East New York in 1859 were: Howard House, by P. H. Reid; Mattowak House, by W. Simonson; Railroad Hotel, by M. Bennett, on Atlantic avenue; Military Hall, by John Lohman, Liberty avenue; residence of C. R. Miller, of Bernhard McWilliams, Broadway and Hull street; Nicolson brick cottage, J. C. Middendorf, residence and grocery, corner of Sheffield avenue and Fulton street, with the old pump in front of it; William Alexander, residence on Flatbush road (East New York avenue); James L. Williams, residence, since moved, and is now standing on the north side of East New York

avenue, opposite Williams avenue; C. Heitkamp, store and residence, on old plank road, where many a man has fallen up the three steps to get before the justice of the peace; C. A. Beckert, M. D., at Sheffield avenue, and G. Kraetzer, residence, Sheffield avenue.

East New York at this period had also the target companies shooting galleries of L. Altenbrand, of M. Bennett and of H. Luhrs, behind which now stands Breitkopf's Hotel, on the corner of Bushwick and Jamaica avenue, at the head of Pennsylvania avenue. At about this period, or in 1861, the city of Brooklyn had opened up the streets to the old patent line, along the ridge of hills, and the James L. Williams map had opened the intervening land from the Howard House to the old city line. The old parade ground west of Alabama avenue and south of Atlantic avenue did not come out as lots until the Whitehead Howard map was filed in 1869, although the survey and map was made in 1857. The individuals whose names are mentioned, so far, were the pioneers of East New York, and the period to which they belonged was one peculiar to itself, and long to be remembered as East New York.

The return of the steam locomotive on Atlantic avenue and the opening of the elevated railroads just before annexation to Brooklyn in 1886 marks a middle period and one which was historical in its results, because at one bound this locality attracted capital, and a flood of it came, until hardly a farm was left to be purchased for the making of building lots, and East New York vanished and Brooklyn came to our doors and welcomed us as the Twenty-sixth Ward. Previous to that, and not since 1869, when Williamsburgh and old Bushwick were annexed to Brooklyn, had one square foot of territory been added to old Brooklyn. The sudden development of the Twenty-sixth Ward, after the opening of the elevated railroads, as the actual end of the Brooklyn Bridge, led up to conditions which eventually terminated in the annexation of all the county towns of Kings county and ended in consolidation with the city of New York. Surely East New York pioneers started a great project of suburban development. They came up to East New York out of the crowded tenements of the old city for fresh air and prosperity, and they got both; peace to their ashes and respect for their courage.

Previous to the annexation of the town of

New Lots to the city of Brooklyn an economical political government had made taxes small with very few public improvements. The first expensive improvement was the grading, curbing and paving in part of Atlantic avenue, which was done in 1870 by a special commission under an act passed April 16, 1869. This cost about \$100,000. Thereafter a few principal streets in the old East New York section were improved by grading, curbing and flagging, which aggregated about \$90,000 more expended under a New Lots improvement commission. When the agitation of the annexation question commenced, it was deemed wise to bond the town for \$500,000 for public improvements, which was done.

There was a balance in this fund of accrued interest amounting to about \$20,000, which was expended in part on certain other street improvements, or still remains to the credit of the ward.

Since annexation to Brooklyn the sewers have been laid and are being paid for by assessments on the property benefited.

The Park Department has improved Glenmore avenue, through the ward, and has also improved the eastern parkway extension and Pennsylvania avenue. These improvements were not assessed directly upon the property benefited, by an anomaly in political diplomacy.

The Twenty-sixth Ward, known up to 1886 as the town of New Lots, may deserve the credit of being the pioneer in annexation and consolidation to the city, because the annexation of that locality to Brooklyn caused a phenomenal boom to suburban property in the old town of New Lots that became a strong argument among real estate men and influenced the subsequent annexation to Brooklyn of all the other county towns of Kings county. The town of New Lots was ripe for annexation when it came, for it had secured perfect railroad transit via both steam and elevated railroads, as well as being the terminus of the trunk horse car lines to the Brooklyn ferries, which for five cents carried one to the ferry, day or night. Besides these railroad advantages water was secured at a small cost to the individual and without a dollar of town indebtedness. No wonder that the population of this ward increased from 10,000 in 1872 to nearly 80,000 in 1900.

Since annexation to Brooklyn the sewers have been laid and provided with the only

perfect outlet in Kings county, and, as these sewers were prosecuted on long term bonds and as these bonds are about one-half paid off, it will be discovered ere long that the Twenty-sixth Ward has indeed secured great advantages in laying the foundation for a great and solid future to the real estate investor. This locality has passed through all the experimental schemes of suburban development, and whatever advantages it has had physically, they have all been a factor in its rapid growth. This ward may be said to be the gateway to Long Island, for all the bridges and railroads, elevated, surface or depressed, go through this gate to the island with their stream of travel. This ward will be the first to develop a water front on Jamaica Bay, and the wonder is that, with navigable water within two miles of a population of nearly 80,000 people, not a public dock for coal, lumber and all material necessary to cheapen the building and sustaining trade of such a community has been built.

There the annexation movement rested until, after much negotiation and delay, Flatbush became Brooklyn's Twenty-ninth Ward April 25, 1894, Gravesend became the Thirty-first Ward on May 8, and New Utrecht the Thirtieth Ward on July 1. This brought all of Kings county within the city of Brooklyn excepting the town of Flatlands, and that wheeled into line in 1896 and took rank with her old Dutch sister communities as the Thirty-second Ward. There was naturally great jubilation in Brooklyn over this consummation, and as by the time Flatlands had surrendered the trolley was opening up new routes daily and the land boomers were organizing fresh tracts of land into home sites, it was felt that a splendid future had opened up for the enlarged city,—Greater Brooklyn, they called it, and the orators were wont to enlarge upon the extent and importance of a city that extended from the East River to the sea, that practically had space enough for a century's growth, that had a magnificent water front, a well-supplied treasury, a population of over a million and all varieties of landscape from the crowded streets around the City Hall to the festal scenes



CITY HALL, BROOKLYN

of Coney Island and the beautiful isolation of Flatlands and New Utrecht.

But even in the midst of this expansion and jubilation the evidences were not wanting that a much greater transformation was at hand; that once the comedy of annexation was over the drama of consolidation,—some regarded it as a tragedy,—would begin. The movement toward the consolidation of Brooklyn and New York had long been agitated. Mr. Stranahan had ventilated it for years, and with the completion of the bridge many thoughtful persons saw in that event but the first tangible evidence of the complete civic union that was bound to come. While the scheme was but a dream, Brooklyn regarded the matter somewhat jocularly, but in 1894, when the question became serious and agitation on the subject became acute, it was seen that the voting population was pretty evenly divided, for and against. In 1890 the advocates of union had so far matured their plans as to have a commission appointed by the Legislature to consider the expediency of consolidating the cities. The Long Island members were J. S. T. Stranahan, E. F. Linton and W. D. Veeder, of Brooklyn, and John H. Brinckerhoff, of Queens. Under the engineering of this commission a test vote as an expression was taken at the November election in 1894, with the following result:

	FOR.	AGAINST.
Kings county.....	64,744	64,467
Queens county.....	7,712	4,741
New York.....	96,938	59,959

With the rest of the vote we are not here concerned. On the Long Island side the only district to give a majority against consolidation was Flushing (1,407 against, 1,144 for, union); but the most curious fact brought out was that Brooklyn's exploits in the way of annexation had really sounded the knell of its own separate history. The majority in Kings county for consolidation was only 277, and this was brought about by the vote of the annexed towns, for in Brooklyn city proper

the vote showed a majority of 1,034 against. The vote had hardly been counted before definite action was taken by the opponents of the question which had now become a live and most important issue. The League of Loyal Citizens was formed and began a vigorous campaign, using the press, enlisting orators, issuing leaflets and even a newspaper which was called "The Greater Brooklyn," and introduced into the Legislature a bill supported by a petition signed by over 70,000 voters of Brooklyn, calling for a resubmission of the question to a vote of the people. On January 13, 1896, the league organized a mass meeting in the Academy of Music, where Dr. Storrs presided and declared that while resubmission was the topic to be considered, "there is now a strong sentiment against consolidation with or without resubmission." "Let Brooklyn's future remain in the hands of Brooklyn's people," was the watchword of the meeting, and its entire proceedings showed the keen antipathy which had been aroused to any attempt at union. In March, 1896, however, a bill favoring consolidation was passed in the Senate by a vote of 38 to 8 and in the Assembly by 91 to 56. When submitted as required by law to the executives of the municipalities affected, Mayor Strong, of New York, and Mayor Wurster, of Brooklyn, vetoed the bill, and Mayor Gleason, of Long Island City, approved it. When the bill was returned to Albany it was promptly repassed and became a law. A mass meeting in New York, in which A. A. Low and the Rev. Dr. Cuyler took a prominent part, asked Governor Morton to veto the bill, but it was signed on May 11, 1896, and so the first stage of the struggle was over.

By the terms of the act consolidation was to go into effect on January 1, 1898, and in the meantime a commission was to frame a charter for the proposed great municipality and setting out the basis of the union. This commission consisted of Seth Low, Benjamin F. Tracy, John F. Dillon, Comptroller Stew-

art L. Woodford, Thomas F. Gilroy, Silas B. Dutcher, William C. De Witt, George M. Pinney, Jr., and Harrison S. Moore. That body accomplished its task, and the charter it prepared, after being amended to please the whims of some of the legislators, was duly passed and became a law by the signature of the Governor on May 2, 1897. In November of that year the Mayor of the consolidated municipality and all the other elective officials provided by the charter were chosen after a heated campaign, and then the consolidation movement had only to wait a few weeks before coming to its full fruition.

It was truly a mournful gathering that assembled in the Council Chamber of Brooklyn's City Hall on the closing hours of December 31, 1897, to observe the passing into history of the City of Churches. There was no lack of expressions of hope for the future; it was even felt by many that Brooklyn was about to enter upon the highest phase of her history; that she was to preserve her individuality in the cluster of boroughs which the next day were to unite into the Greater New York; but even the most optimistic in the gathering could not but feel that they were face to face with "the end of an auld sang," as the Chancellor of Scotland remarked with the passing of the last vote which united that

country to England. The meeting,—“the wake,” some one irreverently called it,—was arranged mainly by the Society of Old Brooklynites and the city officials, and the following formed the committee in charge: Joseph C. Hendrix, William Berri, Herbert F. Gunnison, John S. McKeon, Richard Young, James L. Watson, D. T. Leverich, John Hess, E. D. White, Stephen M. Griswold, Mayor Wurster, Comptroller Palmer, Auditor Sutton, Aldermen J. R. Clark and David S. Stewart. The City Hall was bedecked with flowers and seemed gay even in the waning hours of its pre-eminence. Over the exercises Mayor Wurster presided, and in a graceful manner performed his last public official duty. The inevitable “oration” without which no American gathering would be complete was delivered by St. Clair McKelway, whose theme was “From Great to Greater.” Will Carleton, the poet, read an original ode, “The Passing of Brooklyn,” and Rev. J. M. Farrar, D. D., delivered an address on “Commerce and Church.” An informal address was made at the close of the exercises by ex-Mayor Seth Low.

The proceedings were kept up until the tolling of the bell in the tower announced at once the dawn of 1898 and the end of the long and honorable story of the City of Brooklyn.



QUEENS



CHAPTER XLIII.

QUEENS.

DEVELOPMENT FROM RURAL TO URBAN LIFE—THE FUTURE OF THE BOROUGH—
HORSE RACING—AN INTERESTING STORY OF THE
CONSOLIDATION.

WITH the advent of the Greater New York the old county of Queens became little more than an expression. Shorn of its ancient boundaries it retained its county organization, its County Clerk, District Attorney, Surrogate, Sheriff and other legal officials, but for administrative purposes it became one of the boroughs of the Greater New York with its representatives in the Council and on the Board of Aldermen of the great city, its own local Borough President, Board of Public Improvement, its school board and the like. It is as much a distinct borough as Manhattan or Brooklyn, with the same official staff as has any of the other component sections of the greater city.

But that fact does not make it any the less true that many of the old residents of the Queens County as it was, believe that in its present status as a borough much of its old glory has departed, that its birthright has been sold for a mess of pottage and that even that reward or price is still in the future. At the election of Nov. 6, 1894, at which the question

of consolidation was decided by the people Queens county voted in favor of the change by 7,712 votes to 4,741, the large majority being rolled up mainly through the votes of Long Island City. Flushing township voted 1,407 against consolidation and 1,144 in favor of it.

The boundaries of the old County of Queens were as follows: On the east by Suffolk County, on the west by Kings County, on the north by Long Island Sound and on the south by the Atlantic, and included 410 square miles. In its territory was the North and South Brother, Riker (Hallet's) and several smaller islands. The whole was divided into the six townships of Newtown, Flushing, Jamaica, North Hempstead, Hempstead and Oyster Bay. For a long time its population increased slowly—slowly, that is, considering its contiguity to Manhattan Island. In 1731 the figure was 7,895; in 1786, 13,084; in 1800, 16,983; in 1830, 22,460; in 1880, 90,574; and in 1890, the last official census in which the county figured, 128,415. The details of the two latest censuses follow:

	1890.	1880.
Flushing town.....	19,803	15,906
Including College Point vil-		
lage	6,127	4,192
Flushing village.....	8,463	6,683
Whitestone village.....	2,808	2,520
Hempstead town.....	23,756	18,164
Including Far Rockaway vil-		
lage	2,288	.....
Hempstead village.....	4,831	2,521
Inwood village.....	1,277	.....
Lawrence village.....	626	.....
Rockaway Beach village.	1,502	.....
Seaford village.....	503	.....
Jamaica town.....	14,441	10,088
Including Jamaica village....	5,361	3,922
Ozone Park village.....	539	.....
Richmond Hill village....	626	.....
Long Island City.....	30,506	17,129
Ward 1.....	8,359	
Ward 2.....	3,303	
Ward 3.....	4,813	
Ward 4.....	9,263	
Ward 5.....	4,768	
Newtown town.....	17,549	9,804
Including Corona village....	2,362	750
Middle village.....	504	.....
Winfield village.....	819	.....
Woodside village.....	710	500
North Hempstead town.....	8,134	7,560
Including Roslyn village.....	1,251	1,101
Oyster Bay town, including		
Sea Cliff village (organized		
in 1880).....	13,870	11,923
Totals.....	128,059	90,574

Since the change which incorporated it into New York, what remains of the old county as the Borough of Queens still continues to show an increase, and that in a more marked degree than formerly. Long Island City has now an estimated population of over 50,000 and the other sections are increasing in great although not equal proportions. Of late years the land boomer has been energetically at work and devoting to Queens some at least of that energy which helped so materially to build up the old outlying sections of Brooklyn, and as a result many new settlements are opened up each year. But the increased facilities of travel with the various sections of the Greater City

in the way of bridges over the East River and tunnels under it and the splendid programme of the Long Island Railroad as to its immediate extension and the adoption of improvements which will make it a trunk line are the surest reliances for the wonderful growth which will come to Queens within the next decade. Its population of 152,999 in 1900 will, it is confidently expected, be doubled.

For a long time in the last century the population of Queens increased very slowly so far as immigration was concerned. Little effort was made to entice settlement and it was so inconveniently situated that even intercourse between it and Brooklyn was difficult. Long after Brooklyn and its associate towns and even the villages of Westchester were more or less marked by the influx of settlers from abroad, Queens county went on the even tenor of its way, contented with its isolation, proud of its old families, and careful of the ancient customs which had been handed down, generation after generation. But such a state of things could not endure for ever and the introduction of the railroad in Queens as well as elsewhere brought a change. Long Island City, for instance, may be regarded as a product of the railway, and it has had for years, as it has now, a larger proportion of foreign born citizens in its population than any other part of the borough. Jamaica, too, has felt the change, although it was not until the introduction of the trolley and its cheap and speedy method of transit that it began to really feel the full effect of the modern impulse.

But gratifying as this increase of population is in one sense—in every practical sense—it has not been witnessed without a sentiment of regret by some of the representatives of the old families. The late Gov. R. C. McCormick, who for fifty years had his home in Jamaica, remarked a few weeks before his death (1901) to the writer with considerable pathos: "I remember when I used to walk along these streets of Jamaica and everybody knew me and spoke to me. I knew all the children, and

could send kindly messages of enquiry with them to their homes. I had something to say to every man or woman I met, I knew much of their history, their hopes, their disappointments, their anxieties and sorrows. They all knew me, knew of my interests, my politics, my purposes, my standing in the community. Now I can walk from my home here to the postoffice and back again and not exchange a word with any one. It is very sad; it is not as it used to be; we have lost the old friendliness and neighborliness, we are growing in strength, new streets are being opened up each year, we have no fault to find with the newcomers, they are here to found homes—the very best class of settlers who can come to any place, but somehow the old charm of personal acquaintance has been lost.”

In one respect the statistics of Queens County are peculiar, as they show, until almost a recent date, a very small proportion of pauperism. In 1835, for instance, with a population of 25,130, there were only 71 persons receiving public relief. This slim proportion continued all through the history of the county until the introduction of the railway, and the figures before us tell the story so familiar to students of sociology that as the county advanced in wealth so did the number of its paupers increase. In a purely agricultural community, and especially in a community where the ground is tilled by its owners, pauperism does not flourish, and such a community was Queens County until it began to fall under the influence of the spirit of “modern improvements.”

But the future of Queens borough is not to lie in agriculture; that much seems certain from a survey of existing conditions or conditions promised. It will be by the growth of its manufactures, the development of its seaside resorts and its advantages as a place for home building. Long Island City is already a manufacturing centre, so is Jamaica, and scattered through the country are places like Steinway

devoted solely to one branch of trade. All that is really needed to upbuild local manufacturing prosperity is cheap and adequate communication with the rest of the continent, and that is promised in the fullest measure in the near future. Land is cheap in every section of the borough and water privileges are plentiful. In the way of summer resorts contiguous to New York, it has splendid advantages. On the Atlantic coast the Rockaways, Arverne, Woodsburgh, Lawrence and Edgemere are already famous and popular; on the other side North Beach now attracts thousands each year, and Flushing Bay is ready to provide a dozen resorts, while College Point, Whitestone and the shores of Little Neck Bay already boast populous summer colonies.

For home building with the trolley system daily becoming more ubiquitous, and the promised development of the Long Island Railroad, and the tunnels and bridges now in course of construction, all insuring rapid and convenient travel, there is no section better for practical purposes on Long Island. Real estate in Brooklyn—throughout old Kings County, in fact—has long lost its old time quality of cheapness—a quality that still presents itself abundantly in Queens. Then according to the schemes now being put through, Jamaica will really be nearer the centre of business on Manhattan Island than are Flatbush or Gravesend.

A ridge of high hills runs east and west through the borough along its northern part, throwing out spurs to the Sound and breaking the shore into indentations of bays and headlands. On this ridge, facing the water, are some of the most finished home settlements in the city, while the broad interior plain stretching southward to the Atlantic is covered with agricultural villages, railroad towns and thriving suburbs. Throughout both the Sound and plains settlements city improvements, such as water, gas and electricity, are universal, and larger places, like Flushing and Jamaica, have sewerage systems.

Writing on the certain progress of Queens Borough, a recent writer, who evidently had the facts at his finger's end, wrote:

This tremendous prospective growth of population must of necessity follow the lines of least resistance, which, in the presence of adequate transportation, are determined by the cost of land. On this basis Queens should receive a disproportionate share of whatever investment takes place, for land in Queens is selling at hundreds of dollars as against thousands in the case of land in Manhattan and The Bronx at an equal distance from the Manhattan City Hall. The Long Island Railroad's passenger service will come into direct contact with the Manhattan Rapid Transit system at the Brooklyn terminal of the tunnel from the Battery and in Manhattan itself through the tunnel from Long Island City. Through these tunnels the principal settlements in Queens will be tapped without change of cars, except to board those of the Manhattan Rapid Transit road, and these new outlets to Manhattan will be supplemented by three others dispensing with water passage—the East River Bridge, the Blackwell's Island Bridge and the bridge at Peck Slip, all of which are under way. The combined effect of two tunnels and three new bridges on the passenger service from Queens will be tremendous, revolutionizing travel not only over the Long Island Railroad, but over the elevated and trolley lines as well.

How susceptible the growth of the borough is to betterments of transportation appears from the progress made in the past three or four years. Consolidation with New York induced the construction of a network of trolley lines throughout the borough by the New York and Queens County Railway Company and the New York and North Shore Railway Company, which are identical as to management. The former system starts at the Long Island Railroad ferry in Long Island City and the latter at the terminus of the Kings County Elevated road at the Brooklyn borough limit. The two systems, which also connect with the Long Island Railroad and the Brooklyn Rapid Transit lines at numerous points in the interior, served the needs of local travel, besides bringing formerly inaccessible places into contact with the highways of travel to Manhattan. The formation of the New York and Queens Electric Light and Power Company not only

supplied the illuminant that is now essential in public lighting but made economical power for manufacturing available throughout the borough, except the Rockaway district.

These notable improvements, together with the admission to Brooklyn Bridge of the trolley and elevated lines of the Brooklyn Rapid Transit Company, which sends one branch of its system to Jamaica and another to Flushing, started a building movement which spread far beyond the customary limit of housing improvements. However, the bulk of the travel from the farther parts of the borough must continue to be over the Long Island Railroad. Hence the supreme importance of the tunnels which will connect that road with the Manhattan Rapid Transit system, implying a saving of at least fifteen minutes in distance which now consume an hour in travel, besides dispensing with ferry transfers. But although the improvements in transportation that have been obtained since consolidation with New York appear slight by comparison with those now in sight, they were sufficient to initiate a far-reaching movement in real estate, until in 1900 the number of conveyances practically equalled those of The Bronx with its direct approach to downtown Manhattan and its years of start in municipal progress.

Outside of farming, only one of the old industries of Queens remains, that of horse racing, although it must be confessed that the sorry and sometimes silly exhibitions at Aqueduct are but a poor succession to the old glories of Hempstead or Union Course. Horse racing really was the first industry of Queens county and its meets were long the most famous in the country. In 1665 Gov. Nicolls ordered a race course to be set aside on Hempstead "for encouraging the bettering of the breed of horses which, through great neglect, has been impaired." His successor, Gov. Lovelace, also lent his aid to making the sport a success and it seems to have been a popular feature from the first. Daniel Denton in his "Brief Description" (London, 1701) says: "Toward the middle of Long Island lyeth a plain 16 miles long and 4 broad, where you will find neither stick nor stone to hinder the horses' heels, or endanger them in their races, and

once a year the best horses in the island are brought hither to try their swiftness, and the swiftest rewarded with a silver cup, two being annually procured for that purpose." The course itself was changed at least once, but the racing centre continued to be on Hempstead plains until 1821, when it was moved to Union Course. The stakes at New Market, as the Hempstead Course was called, were as a general rule £50 for each event, although on two or three occasions £100 was the figure. It was on Union Course that horse racing reached its highest development in the eyes of the sporting fraternity, the gentlemen who make money on the turf. Gambling in fact was as much the feature of each meeting at Union Course as was horse racing itself; in reality, as in our modern days, the racing was but an excuse for the gambling. It was estimated that in the race in 1823 between "Eclipse" and "Sir Henry" for a stake of \$20,000 a side \$200,000 changed hands when Eclipse was declared the winner. The amount lost was even greater in 1842 when "Boston" defeated "Fashion" in two heats. It was estimated that 70,000 persons witnessed this race. It was probably the widely reported excesses of that race and its attendant circumstances that induced Dr. Prime to write:

"Here [Union Course] are regularly enacted twice a year, scenes which no imagination, however fertile, can depict without the aid of ocular demonstration. It has been stated, and the statement stands uncontradicted, that at a single course of races 50,000 persons attended and \$700,000 were lost and won; and that during the five days that the "sports" continued the toll of the Fulton Ferry Company averaged \$1,000 a day; and it is supposed that the other avenues of the city realized an equal sum. But the gambling, expense, and loss of time attending these scenes of dissipation form only a part of the evils with which they are connected. The drinking, the swearing, the licentiousness, the contentions and other nameless crimes, which are here periodically

committed, with the countenance of law, are enough to sicken the soul of every man that fears God and is disposed to reverence His commands and must induce him to wish most devoutly for the time to come, and that speedily, when this crying abomination, with all its accompaniments, shall be banished from this once sacred soil of Puritans and Huguenots."

Queens County had other tracks which while not so famous as that at Hempstead and Union Course still proved attractive enough to bring crowds to their "events" and to swell the notoriety which the county enjoyed—enjoyed even in England—as the headquarters of horse-racing in America. As early as 1757 there was a track in Jamaica, and one at Newtown in 1758. The "Fashion Association for Improving the Breed of Horses" had a course at Newtown in 1854, which continued with varying success until 1865, when it had to give way to the progress of the railroad. At Centreville, near Union Course, a trotting track was laid out in 1825 where, in 1847, the "Albany Girl" was tried to run 100 miles in 10 consecutive hours in harness. She actually accomplished 97½ miles in 9½ hours and then broke down. Surely such sport shows degeneracy somewhere.

With the decadence of the Union Course racing in Queens County ceased to be profitable, and it was abandoned altogether when Kings County took the sport up in earnest, until the establishment of the track at Aqueduct, where racing seems to be in reality another name for gambling. When horses are started to race in mud or by electric light the nature of the sport can easily be appreciated.

In the general chapters of this history reference has already been made to the position of Queens County in the War of the Revolution, so that it is needless to dwell upon that theme here. It had its Tories and its Patriots in probably equal numbers, it has been even asserted that the former were the most numerous, but however that may be, there can be no

doubt that all sections were fully aroused to the evils of the system of government to which they had become subject and that the people of Jamaica have the right to claim their old suburb of Brushville as being the birthplace of the Revolution on Long Island.

It is not known what duties the County's militia performed at the battle of Brooklyn other than throwing up fortifications and standing guard at the outposts and ferries. Capt. Jacob Wright of Jamaica and Capt. Van Nuyse of Kings County formed two companies in Col. Lasher's 1st New York battalion in Scott's brigade. The Kings and Queens County Militia guarded alternate days at the Flatbush pass. On the day of battle Capt. Wright's men were in Cobble Hill fort. The Queens County Militia often spoke of lying behind the lines when the British shot whistled over their heads. Putnam rode along the line and every now and again, checking his horse, would say: "Gentlemen, by your dress I conclude you are countrymen, and, if so, good marksmen. Now, don't fire till you see the whites of their eyes."

Next to the Revolutionary story the most interesting study in connection with the history of Queens County is that of the incidents in connection with the transformation of the greater portion of it into a borough of the modern New York City. The story is well worthy of study and that it might be clearly and intelligently put before the reader by one who has made a thorough study we present the following written at the request of the publishers by Mr. Duncan MacInnes, one of the expert accountants in the office of the Comptroller of New York, through whose hands all the papers in the case were passed and considered:

At midnight on the 31st day of December, 1897, there were forty-eight separate municipalities, merged into the Greater New York, under the general name or title, Borough of Queens. These former municipalities consisted of Long Island City, the old towns of New-

town (from which Long Island City was originally created in 1871), Jamaica (in its earliest form the town of "Crawford"), Flushing and that part of the town of Hempstead extending westward from the eastern limits of the incorporated village of Far Rockaway to the Rockaway Beach inlet. Eight incorporated villages were among the said municipalities, viz.: Flushing, College Point, Whitestone, Jamaica, Richmond Hill, Far Rockaway, Arverne, and Rockaway Beach; also fourteen school districts in the township of Newtown, eleven school districts in Jamaica, seven in Flushing, and three in Hempstead. These forty-eight separate municipalities were all within the corporate limits of that part (over two-thirds) of Queens County merged into the city of New York by the act of consolidation; and, together with the funded debt of the county, brought a legacy of bonded indebtedness alone to the greater city of \$13,337,465. The total real-estate assessed valuation within said former municipalities was \$83,260,593 on Dec. 31, 1897, and this was a great increase over what the same property was assessed at twelve months before, and an extraordinary increase over the assessment of 1895 and 1894, as the following comparative figures will show:

Date.	Real Estate,	
	Assessed Valuation.	Bonded Debt.
Dec. 31, 1894.....	\$40,405,036	\$ 4,813,300
Dec. 31, 1895.....	42,186,900	5,627,650
Dec. 31, 1896.....	69,267,710	6,089,125
Dec. 31 1897.....	83,260,593	13,337,465

On January 1, 1895, when the ten per cent constitutional limitation as to the debt of a city or county went into effect, Long Island City real estate, assessed valuation, was \$16,667,332, and her bonded debt alone \$3,033,500, or nearly twice the statutory limitation. Something had to be done, and the powers that then were proceeded to increase the assessed valuation of property, so as to scale down the ratio of the bonded debt, and the work was done effectually by increasing Long Island City real

estate values in 1896 from \$10,007,332 to \$42,377,481, or more than the combined assessed valuation of 1895 of all real estate in Long Island City, the towns of Newtown, Flushing, Jamaica and that part of Hempstead which ultimately was merged into the Greater New York. These 1896 and 1897 values have since been reduced by the courts by upwards of six millions of dollars, which has the disadvantage of decreasing the proceeds to the City of New York from Long Island City tax arrears.

It will be noted from the table that the bonded debt of these Queens municipalities was more than doubled in the year 1897 as compared with a normal increase of several hundred thousand dollars in each of the years preceding; and the extraordinary increase during 1897 was practically all after the passage of the Greater New York charter in April of said year. As Comptroller Coler has said, "The worst mistake of the charter, it seems to me, was that it put a premium on the notion of the various communities (to be) consolidated going into debt."

The latter part of the year 1897 witnessed an orgie in Queens of lavish expenditure and debt-incurring obligations. Every town, village and school district was issuing bonds *ad libitum*, and generally on the most liberal terms to purchasers thereof. The county was


also doing its share. The funded debt of the county park was increased in 1897 from \$1,083,500 to \$4,837,811, and everywhere was a feverish anxiety and haste to take in on the one hand and disburse from the other every cent that could be realized previous to Dec. 31, 1897, after which the authority to contract further liability or disburse a dollar was vested in the officials of the City of New York. It was a wild orgie while it lasted, and officials who in former years had never handled more than a few thousand dollars found themselves in possession and absolute disposal of hundreds of thousands of dollars, which was expended with the reckless lavishness of a Monte Cristo. Chapters might be written of the cow-paths that were paved by granite blocks, of the turnip and potato patches that were lighted by electric lamps, of the by-lanes that were lit by gas and naphtha lamps, etc., etc., and of the variety and questionable character of contract on contract made on the very eve of actual consolidation; and of the hundreds of thousands of dollars of floating debt that has since come to light and been foisted on the greater city, and the end is not yet! Consolidation has cost the Manhattan taxpayer, or rather Manhattan property, several millions of dollars for the honor of being the second largest city (numerically) in the world.



CHAPTER XLIV.

FLUSHING.

THE PATENTEES OF 1645—FREEHOLDERS IN 1683—THE LAWRENCES—THE CHURCHES
—MODERN CHANGES AND DEVELOPMENTS.

HE earliest year of any settlement within the old township of Flushing, —Vlissingen, as it was called,—is 1643. Two years later Governor Kieft issued a town charter to the inhabitants, and this charter was afterward renewed by Governor Dongan in 1685. The town's early records and patents were destroyed by fire in 1789, but in 1792 a copy of Dongan's patent was furnished from the records in Albany under the seal of Governor Clinton, of the State of New York. There is a theory that the name given to the place was derived from that of a town in Holland, but the evidence as to this is a little hazy, and while the matter is practically of no moment, it seems fair to say that the honor of name giving to the Dutch town should not be abandoned. The first settler was William Thorne (the name long survived in Thorne's Neck), who appears to have held views on religious matters which did not find sympathy among the Puritans, so he is said to have come to this neighborhood from New England in search of a place where he might enjoy liberty of conscience. What his views were is not exactly known, but they were of such a nature that he afterward found it congenial to throw in his lot with the Society of Friends. Soon he was joined by several others, and thus Flushing was another religious community, which, like Gravesend, was a standing reproach to the reputed religious toleration of Massachusetts.

The names in Kieft's patent of the settlers to whom it was issued were Thomas Farington, John Townsend, Thomas Stiles, Thomas Saull, John Marston, Robert Field, Thomas Applegate, Thomas Beddard, Laurence Dutch, John Lawrence, William Lawrence, William Thorne, Henry Sautell, William Pigeon, Michael Milliard, Robert Firman, John Hicks, Edward Hart. They were empowered to elect a Schout, to build fortifications, "to have and enjoy the liberty of conscience according to the custom and manner of Holland without molestation or disturbance from any Magistrate of Magistrates or any other Ecclesiastical Minister." In return for all this and other privileges they agreed to "reverently respect the High and Mighty Lords for their Superior Lords and Patrons," and pay a really moderate tax "in case it be demanded." All of those mentioned in the deed were not from New England, or exiles for religion. John Lawrence, who was one of the incorporators of Hempstead in 1644, was quite an enterprising gentleman, and was several times Mayor of New Amsterdam, and at the time of his death, 1699, was a Judge of the Supreme Court. William Lawrence was also prominent as an office-holder, and had the knack of "holding on" no matter what flag—Dutch or English—waved over the fort at New Amsterdam.

In Dongan's patent the names of the freeholders were Thomas Willett, John Lawrence Seimior, Elias Doughty, Richard Cornell.

Moriss Smith, Charles Morgan, Mary Fleake, Wouter Gisbertson, John Masten, John Cornelis, John Harrison, Denius Holdron, John Hinchman, William Yeates, Joseph Thorne, John Lawrence Junior, Matthias Harveye, Harmanus King, John Farrington, Thomas Williams, Elisabeth Osborn, Joseph Havyland, John Washborne, Aaron Cornelis, John Bowne, William Noble, Samuel Hoyt, Madeline Frances Barto, John Hoper, Thomas Ford, John Jennings, John Embree, Jonathan Wright, Nicholas Parcell, William Lawrence, Richard Townly, Edward Griffin Junior, John Lawrence at the Whitestone, Henry Taylor, Jasper Smith, Richard Wilday, Thomas Townsend, John Thorne, Anthony Field, John Adams, Richard Stockton, James Whittaker, Hugh Copperthwaite, Richard Chew, James Clement, Margaret Stiles, Samuel Thorne, Thomas Hedges, William Haviland, Thomas Hicks, John Terry, David Patrick, James Feake, Thomas Kimacry, Phillip Udall, Thomas Davis, Edward Farrington, Thomas Farrington, Matthew Farrington, John Field, Joseph Hedger, John Talman, William Gael, William White, Elisabeth Smith, Thomas Partridge, William Hedger and Benjamin Field. Outside of the Lawrence, Farrington, and Thorne families few representatives of the original patentees appear in this list. But so far as can be learned they were of pretty much the same stamp as most of the pioneers—men and women whose law lay wholly in the sacred Scriptures.

Most of these people were farmers; most of them were from New England. Probably many had left the mainland to get rid of the religious notions prevailing there and enjoy freedom of worship in their own way. But they brought with them their Bib'les and their own peculiar views, and were prepared to set up as much of a theocracy as circumstances would permit,—some even were determined to carry out their spiritual ideas no matter what circumstances presented themselves.

So it was as a religious colony that Flushing was to thrive. In 1647, by order of Gov-

ernor Stuyvesant, the Rev. Francis Doughty settled in it as its minister. Stuyvesant was curious in his friendships, his likes and dislikes, and what there was in Mr. Doughty's composition that won him the personal interest of the Governor it is difficult to imagine. Doughty was an English clergyman, who had crossed the Atlantic that he might speak the truth, but his views on baptism did not suit the Puritans, and he was arrested, tried and ordered to leave Massachusetts. He promptly went to Rhode Island for a brief period, but in 1642 he went to Long Island, having with several associates secured a grant of 13,332 acres of land at Newtown. An Indian outbreak soon scattered this settlement, and Doughty took refuge in New Amsterdam for two years. In 1645 Doughty and most of the patentees returned to Newtown, but trouble and quarrels broke out, and as a result Doughty threatened to refer the matter to Holland, and thereupon he was arrested and fined twenty-five guilders. In this case Stuyvesant acted in haste and without warrant, and when he recognized this he was anxious to "do something" for Doughty. A request from Flushing for a minister reached Stuyvesant about this time, and he at once named Doughty. The good folks of Flushing, however, did not want the Newtown dominie, but Stuyvesant reasoned with them one by one. As a result Doughty was accepted and his salary fixed at 600 guilders. It was probably Flushing's complaisance in this matter that impelled Stuyvesant in 1648 to permit it to elect three Schepens and a clerk in addition to the primitive Schout. Doughty does not seem to have become popular in Flushing. His religious views were not pleasing to many, and that singular compound, Captain John Underhill, when elected Schout in 1648, at once ordered the meeting-house closed, as the preacher "spoke against his betters." Doughty wandered forth again, but returned. He had made his home in Flushing, and there his sons developed into splendid citizens, while his daughter Mary married Adrian Van Der Donck, a Hudson River patroon, who

included what is now the city of Yonkers in his holding.

As a settled minister Doughty was a failure, and probably the citizens did not care to ask for another in his place. In 1656 one of the pioneers of the Society of Friends, William Wickendam, a shoemaker, settled in Flushing from Rhode Island, and the people seem to have accepted his views. They listened to his preaching and what he said appears to have united them under his spiritual leadership, and many were baptized by him. Even Doughty accepted the workingman's theological views and threw in his lot with the Quakers. Such a condition of things aroused attention in New Amsterdam and led to Stuyvesant's persecution of the Friends, which has been detailed at length in an earlier chapter of this work. But this persecution failed, like most persecutions of similar nature, to stamp out the object of its enmity, and Flushing became more and more deeply a religious,—a Quaker community. In 1660 quite a number of Huguenots settled in the township, and their presence and pronounced views on matters of faith made Flushing more than ever before a center of religious thought.

In June, 1672, George Fox, the founder of the Society of Friends, made his memorable visit to Long Island, and, as might be expected, Flushing was one of his stopping places. He stayed in the home of John Bowne, Stuyvesant's victim and victor, and the couch on which he was wont to rest and other articles of furniture used by him or in use during his sojourn are still preserved. Fox in his diary mentions holding one large meeting in Flushing, "many hundreds of people being there."

Although, however, Flushing was thus in a sense a center of Quakerism, it was not until 1690 that a meeting-house was erected. After Stuyvesant's experience in the case of John Bowne the Friends seem to have been permitted the utmost freedom of worship, so far as the civil government was concerned. Under the English rule, indeed, they were more or

less in trouble, because in accordance with their principles they refused to train in the militia service, a service which by law was made compulsory on all able-bodied men. This refusal was punished by the imposition of a fine, and as it was not in keeping with their ideas of religion and right to pay this fine, their goods were seized and sold in satisfaction. This procedure the Quakers regarded as an infringement of liberty and conscience, as a religious persecution; but it was not so in reality, as the law made no provision for creeds, the militia was for the defense of the people and the Quakers enjoyed the security of that defense and should contribute their share in it.

A much more dangerous disturber of the peace of the Quakers, and indeed of the community, was the attempt made in the reign of James II to establish the Church of England throughout the province. We say attempt, because, although it is the fashion for some writers to argue as though that church was established in New York, just as it was in England, it never really succeeded, Royal instructions and Gubernatorial edicts notwithstanding. The King's orders to Governor Dongan, in fact, avoided the question of "establishment," although that result was implied. "You shall take especial care that God Almighty be devoutly and duly served throughout your government; the Book of Common Prayer as it is now established read each Sunday and holiday, and the Blessed Sacrament administered according to the rites of the Church of England." He was also ordered not to present a clergyman to any benefice within his gift "without a certificate from the Most Reverend the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury of his being conformable to the doctrine and discipline of the Church of England." Still he was to "permit all persons, of what religion soever, quietly to inhabit within your government without giving them any disquiet or disturbance whatever for or by reason of their differing opinions in matters of religion." So far as Flushing was concerned,

these instructions had little interest, and it was not until 1702, under Governor Cornbury,—one of the most disreputable of men and blindest of churchmen,—that any effort was made to foist an Episcopalian minister on the town. Then the turbulent George Keith came upon the scene, but as the story of his experiences and of his persecutions of Quakers inspired by him have already been told in an earlier chapter, the story need not be repeated here.

Ecclesiastically in the Episcopalian fold, Jamaica, Newtown and Flushing were united for a time under one rector. The first, Patrick Gordon, died a few days after his arrival, and then Cornbury sent the Rev. James Honeyman among the people to preach to them until he could determine upon a rector. This rector, the Rev. William Urquhart, was put in possession of the charge in June, 1704, and continued to minister to such of the people as adhered to him until his death, in 1709. Flushing did not take kindly to him, nor did he to Flushing. "Most of the inhabitants thereof are Quakers," he wrote, "who rove through the county from one village to another, talk blasphemy, corrupt the youth, and do much mischief." He held services once a month in the Guard House, which was amply sufficient for his auditory. Mr. Urquhart's headquarters were in Jamaica, and there, too, as we shall see, his path was not one strewn with roses. His successor was the Rev. Thomas Poyer, a Welshman. Flushing still continued obdurate, and matters were not much brighter in Jamaica, which still continued to be the rectorial headquarters, but Mr. Poyer "wras'led" on amid a host of discouragements, as we will read in the story of Jamaica, until his death, in 1731. Two years later the Rev. Thomas Colgan was given the charge, and under him, in 1746, the first Episcopalian Church in Flushing was erected. Mr. Colgan seems to have got on better with the Quakers than any of his predecessors, and one of them, it is said, actually aided the new congregation by a gift of money. As was customary, the Society for

the Propagation of the Gospel (in London) sent to the new church a Bible and Prayer Book, and that gift is now among the treasures of St. George's Church. On the death of Mr. Colgan, in 1755, the Presbyterians and others endeavored to seize control of the ecclesiastical affairs in the three towns and elected a Presbyterian minister. Sir Charles Hardy, then Governor, would have none of this, and presented the Rev. Samuel Seabury to the charge. Mr. Seabury had not a very high opinion of Flushing, which he said was "in the last generation the ground seat of Quakerism, is in this the seat of infidelity," but under him the church was finished and in 1761 it received a charter from King George III under the title of St. George's, which it still retains. His leading lay helper in Flushing was Mr. John Aspinwall, whom he described in one of his letters as "a man of low birth and strong passions, and violent in his resentments, who, having acquired a great fortune in privateering, removed thither from New York, and has really done very considerably toward finishing the church and giving it a good bell." Not much of an angelic character, certainly, but this reformed pirate was a benefactor to the Flushing church in many ways, even to the extent of "bringing over many Quakers and Calvinists, so that I myself," wrote Mr. Seabury, "have been a joyful witness of a numerous congregation in a church wherein, within three or four years, seldom assembled above ten or twelve persons." It is sad to think that the friendship of Mr. Aspinwall and Rector Seabury should have ended in a violent rupture caused by an effort on Aspinwall's part to make Flushing a separate charge under a new rector, but so it was. The effort did not succeed, and Seabury remained until 1765, when he removed to Westchester. Afterward he was the first Episcopalian bishop in America. His successor in the three towns was the Rev. Joshua Bloomer. The tripartite rectorial arrangement continued until 1802, when Flushing and Newtown

united in calling a rector, leaving Jamaica to its own course, and in 1809 Flushing and Newtown separated, and the Rev. Brazélla Buckley became first sole rector of Flushing.

From then until now St. George's has held a long list of earnest, devoted rectors, but the name that stands out in boldest relief is that of the Rev. William A. Muhlenberg, who presided over it from 1826 to 1829. This famous preacher and practical philanthropist founded the once famous Flushing Institute for the education of boys, and out of its success grew St. Paul's College, of which he continued to act as principal until 1844, when he accepted a call to New York.

Until 1811 St. George's Church and the meeting-house of the Society of Friends contained the only two organized religious bodies in Flushing. In 1811 a congregation of colored Methodists was organized, although it did not possess a church edifice until 1837. The white Methodist brethren built a church in 1822, the Roman Catholic Church had its beginning with twelve adherents in 1826, when the Rev. Father Farnham celebrated mass for the first time in Flushing, and in 1835 the first place of worship was fitted up. In 1854 a second Episcopalian Church, St. Michael's, was erected, and St. George's Church was rebuilt for the third time, the second building having been erected in 1812. The Baptists also erected their first Flushing church in 1854.

The most prominent of the early industries of Flushing, next to agriculture—farming—was that of fruit and tree growing. The Huguenot settlers introduced many of the fruits of their native land, and their product won quite a measure of fame and brought them considerable profit. In the early years of the eighteenth century a number of English gardeners settled in Flushing, attracted by stories of the varied nature of its soil and its adaptability to fruit raising, and established market gardens. Its fame, however, in horticultural circles was really won by a native, William

Prince, who was born in Flushing in 1766, and died there in 1842. His father, William Prince, in 1750 laid out a tract of land in Flushing for the propagation of trees, such as apple, plum, peach, cherry, nectarine and pear. This venture proved quite a success, and the area of ground was steadily enlarged and the varieties grown extended to almost every variety possible in the climate, almond and fig trees, flowering trees and shrubs, berry bushes. So famous did the place become that General Howe, when manoeuvring in Flushing on August 29, 1776, ordered it to be guarded so as to prevent any depredations on the part of his soldiery. The nursery, however, did suffer considerably during the British occupation, and for the time its business was paralyzed. In 1789 the place was visited by General Washington, who had long heard of its beauties, but what he saw did not answer his "expectations," for at that time the business was just beginning to recover. By 1792 Mr. Prince had twenty-four acres under his operations. His son brought the nursery up to the fullest measure of its usefulness. In 1793 he entered into business relations with his father and extended the area under cultivation until it exceeded sixty acres. He sent far and near for trees, fruits and plants for experimental purposes, successfully acclimatized several hundred, systematized the nomenclature of the best known fruits, such as the Bartlett pear and the Isabella grape, and wrote a "Treatise on Horticulture," the first work of the kind issued in the United States. The London Horticultural Society named the William Prince apple in his honor, and he enjoyed the personal friendship of all the celebrated botanists and naturalists of his time. The *Morus multicaulis*, long so well known in the manufacture of silk, was first grown here in 1826 by Mr. Prince from trees imported from France a year after they had been received there from the Philippine Islands. Perhaps this should entitle him to be regarded as the pioneer in the great American Philippine trade

which is so certain to come as the result of more recent events!

Flushing had many other famous nurseries, such as that of Samuel Parsons, a man noted for his benevolence, his enterprise, his public spirit and his steadfast adherence to the Society of Friends, before which body he frequently preached. His love of trees led him to plant many along the streets of Flushing at his own cost, and he went into the business of tree raising simply for the good he might accomplish rather than as a commercial speculation.

With the upward progress which attended so many of the Long Island towns after the Revolutionary War Flushing had but little share. Its business had been sadly shattered by that armed conflict, and its geographical position was such that it was by no means easy of access. In the closing years of the eighteenth century communication with New York was had twice a week—Tuesdays and Fridays—by passenger boats, and that service sufficed until the advent of the nineteenth century. In 1801 a daily coach service was established, running from Flushing through Newtown to Brooklyn, and such coach service, with slight changes as to route, continued until 1854, when the opening of the Flushing & North Shore Railroad forced its cessation. But long after the railroad was an assured fact the carrying trade in merchandise continued to be done by packets. The first steamboat from Flushing to New York was run in 1822. It was a small concern, but proved so successful that in the following year "The Linnaeus," a much more substantial and roomy vessel, was put on the route.

In 1837 Flushing began to feel that she really was becoming prosperous, and in that year it applied for and received its charter as a village. The population was then about 2,000, the number of real-estate owners was 103, and the assessed valuation \$465,360. Robert B. Van Zandt was elected the first President under the charter.

The Rev. H. D. Waller, to whose interesting "History of Flushing" this sketch has been much indebted, says: "The village boundary line began at the creek just beyond the bridge on the College Point causeway and ran east, crossing Whitestone avenue about 300 feet beyond Bayside avenue, just including the Osgood property. At a point near the junction of Bayside avenue and Parsons avenue the line turned south and ran to the corner of Sanford avenue and Long lane (now South Parsons avenue). From this corner, which marked the furthest limits of the village in that direction, the line ran west to the creek, forming an acute angle with Sanford avenue and crossing Jamaica avenue just south of the Jagger homestead (now Captain Hinman's). Sanford avenue was not open below Jamaica avenue. Bowne avenue was the street furthest east. Long lane began at the village limits and ran south. Jagger avenue was a private lane leading from Main street to the Jagger house; Lincoln street was then called Liberty street; Amity street was not then opened; neither was Locust street east of Main. A tide mill, kept by William Hamilton, stood at the bridge on the College Point causeway. There were no houses northeast of the park except a few which stood in large country places. * * * The lower part of Main street was more thickly settled, but even there the houses stood apart from each other with gardens between. The Pavilion, once a famous hotel, stood at the corner of Bridge street and Lawrence avenue, where the old electric power house now stands. The Town Hall stood where the fountain now stands, facing on Main street, the school-house being on the lot now occupied by the Empire Hose Company's building in Lincoln street."

From the time of her incorporation as a village until the closing scene in her history, when she became part and parcel of the Greater New York, the story of Flushing was one of great progress. It was regarded as a residential quarter, sufficiently retired to be the

scene of several county fairs, where abundant educational facilities were provided, and church, social and professional circles were all of the most desirable qualities. The Board of Education commenced work in 1848 in accordance with an act of the Legislature passed that year, and under its direction the educational system of the village was steadily extended; in 1874 the Douglass Pond water supply was introduced and made the occasion of a grand demonstration and parade, with the usual oratorical accompaniments. In 1883 the old area of the village was considerably extended by a new act of the Legislature, and in the following year the Flushing Hospital and Dispensary was incorporated, a building being rented for its purpose until 1887, when the hospital was erected on ground presented for the purpose by the late John Henderson. "The village of Flushing," writes Mr. Waller, "has always been a place of residence. Those institutions have been fostered that would render the village attractive to persons seeking homes; manufacture has not been encouraged. The village streets are macadamized, well shaded with fine trees of many varieties, lighted by gas and electricity and swept and sprinkled at public expense. The sidewalks are paved with stone flagging. A complete system of sewers extends throughout the village. The steam and electric cars make frequent trips between Flushing and the city. These conveniences and improvements have made Flushing an attractive home for business and professional men of New York. Here they find pleasant homes and rural surroundings within easy reach of their places of business."

Such are the salient points in the history of Flushing township in general, and especially of Flushing village, the center of its life. There are several settlements or villages throughout the township which are deserving of some mention, however brief.

College Point (formerly Lawrence's Neck) on Flushing Bay was first settled by immigrants from Germany. It was the scene of

the operations of Dr. Muhlenberg's St. Paul College and from that got its modern name. It has some manufactories and a population of some 6,000. Within recent years it has become quite a suburban residential village, boasting all modern improvements in the way of gas, electricity, etc., and many remarkably fine residences have been added to its attractions during the past year or two. It is confidently expected that it will continue to grow in favor.

Whitestone is regarded as being, next to Flushing village, the oldest settlement in the township. It derived its name from a large white piece of rock in front of it in the East River, and although several efforts have been made to change the name the efforts have failed. Even De Witt Clinton's popularity, which inspired a meeting of citizens to give it the name of Clintonville, failed to make the change any more than a passing whim. Another name once given to it "Cookie Hill," did not find many admirers at any time, so Whitestone has clung to it throughout its modern history. That history really amounts to very little. In 1800 it had less than twelve houses. It was not until 1853, when J. D. Locke & Company established a tin and copper ware factory, that it began to attract settlers, and a year later it had advanced sufficiently to induce Uncle Sam to establish a postoffice within the village. Some of its clay soil has been found eminently suited for making tobacco pipes, flower pots, flower vases and the like, and in connection therewith several establishments have arisen, and the village now boasts a population of about 3,400. Whitestone is the terminus of the North Shore branch of the Long Island Railroad. It is one of the stations of the New York Yacht Club, and already before consolidation contained a considerable colony of New York business and professional men. The village has a new athletic club, and a school-house costing \$200,000 has recently been completed. A tract of land fronting nearly a mile on the

water is held jointly by the Realty Trust and the Cedar Cliff Park Association, part of which is under development by Edwin P. Roe.

Francis Lewis, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, whose seat in Whitestone was one of the centers of Revolutionary activity, was born at Llandaff, Wales, in March, 1713, and was educated at Westminster School, London. In that city he also obtained his mercantile training. He sold all his property in England in 1735, and came to this country, where he at once engaged in business as a merchant, establishing houses in New York and Philadelphia. He met with remarkable success, and probably was the leading shipper in New York at that time. His enterprise was unbounded, and he paid frequent visits to Europe on business ventures, going as far as Russia, and was twice shipwrecked. As a supply agent for the British army he was taken prisoner at Fort Oswego when it was surprised by Montcalm, was carried to Montreal, and from there to France. After his liberation he returned to New York to find the conflict between the Colonies and the mother country already practically commenced; and, joining heartily in Revolutionary movements, he was in 1775 unanimously elected a delegate to the Continental Congress, where his business experience, executive talent and knowledge of commerce made him a valuable member. At the next session he with his fellow patriots signed the paper to the maintenance of which they pledged "their lives, their fortunes and their sacred honor." Having some time previous purchased a country seat at Whitestone, he removed his family to it in 1776, and then entered actively upon the performance of duties of importance with which he had been entrusted by Congress, one detail of which was the importation of military stores, in which he expended the bulk of his large fortune, and for which he was never repaid. Hardly had his family been settled at their home in Whitestone before they were visited, in the fall of 1776, by a body of

British light horse, who plundered his house, wantonly destroyed his extensive and valuable library, and, taking Mrs. Lewis a prisoner, retained her several months, without a change of clothing or a bed to rest on! Through the influence of Washington she was released, but with her health so broken by the abuses she had suffered that she drooped and died—another victim to English chivalry in the eighteenth century. Mr. Lewis resided here until 1796, when he disposed of his property and retired to New York, where he died December 30, 1803, in his ninetieth year.

The second son of this patriot, Morgan Lewis, afterward Governor of New York, also lived at Whitestone for many years. He served in the War of the Revolution as a captain, and afterward as major, retiring with the rank of colonel, to resume his legal studies and qualify for the bar. He soon acquired distinction in that profession, and in 1792 became Chief Justice of New York's Supreme Court. In 1804 he was elected Governor. In the War of 1812 he became a major general and served on the Niagara frontier. But the details of his career are too interesting to be condensed and we must refer the reader to the sketch of India Delafield, containing a sketch of his life and that of his father. Governor Lewis died in 1844. A portrait of him is given on page 277 of this volume.

Bayside, on Little Neck Bay, although in many respects a modern settlement, has really a history of almost equal antiquity with Flushing village, but its story is uninteresting, although it contained a building which, like so many hundreds of others, bore the designation of Washington's Headquarters. It was really simply a scattered group of rural residences until within a comparatively few years, and its progress has been slow. It has a population of 700, but is steadily rising into favor as a residential village, as it presents many advantages in the refined society already to be found there and the many beautiful villas which adorn its streets.

As much might be said of Little Neck, a similar community on the other side of Little Neck Bay and close to the Nassau county boundary line. The property was in the hands of the Hicks family from the time Thomas Hicks drove the Indian owners off the lands by force until a recent date; indeed, some of that redoubtable land grabber's descendants are still to be found in and near the village. Douglass Point, however, as it is now called, one of the most beautiful "bits" of landscape on the sound, passed from their hands early in the last century. Little Neck is slowly but surely rising in popular favor, and its population of 600 are doing all that is possible to add to its attractiveness. Willets Point, Douglaston and several small settlements are also gradually finding their way into public favor and are certain to increase as the years roll on.

In fact, there seems little doubt that the whole of the old township of Flushing is destined to be the "home land," as it were, of a great population of home owners,—the best possible class of citizens. A recent article in one of our daily papers, speaking on this point evidently with the knowledge of an expert, says: "Flushing, with a population of 9,700, on the ridge overlooking Flushing Bay, is a village of Dutch Colonial antiquity, of historic associations and substantial growth. Originally an agricultural community, its chief characteristics have come to be those of a suburban home settlement. It has good roads, schools and churches, libraries, banks, stores, shops and a complete system of public works. Fine old mansions, set in spacious grounds, break the uniformity of development present in more distinctly modern places, and the water affords variety to the enjoyment of nature and outdoor life. In the outskirts of the village are important suburban additions, developed by private enterprise, as Ingleside and Bowne Park. Both are located on high ground, abutting on fine residential streets, which are continued through them.

At Ingleside the Realty Trust has sold some hundred detached frame dwellings at \$3,500 to \$6,750, besides a number running as high as \$10,000. Building sites are sold to investors at \$260 to \$1,000 a lot. At Bowne Park, where John Dayton & Company have built extensively, similar conditions as to prices of houses and lots prevail, this place, like the former, having maintained a high grade of suburban construction. Among smaller groups of houses in the market are eight dwellings at the Broadway station that are quoted at \$3,000 and upward. These are offered by John N. Falkenburg, who is also improving a tract at Bayside, a station just east of Flushing, with houses selling at \$3,500 to \$6,000. Land in the various additions under development at Flushing has been carefully restricted against uses objectionable in a residential community, the aim having been to keep in harmony with the social and natural features which have made the village attractive to quite a colony of artistic and professional men.

"Córóna, with a population of 2,700, is another center of suburban development in the section overlooking the Sound. Until recently houses were for the most part built by intending occupants with assistance from co-operative building and loan associations. Construction work is now largely carried forward on extensive tracts, as Luona Park and Hamilton's Homes. At Luona Park, laid out by the Realty Trust, several hundred houses have been built. The prices prevailing have been between \$2,400 and \$3,500. At Hamilton's Homes, developed by William J. Hamilton, quotations range from \$2,000 to \$3,000.

"Elmhurst, near by, with a population of 3,000, is composed of two principal elements, an old village of Dutch origin and a modern suburban settlement. The newer Elmhurst comprises a tract of 1,800 lots controlled by Cord Meyer & Company. Houses are sold to intending occupants at \$3,500 to \$10,000.

About two hundred and fifty families have been drawn to the neighborhood since the tract was opened in 1896. Provisions are contained in all the deeds reserving the land for private residences, and property is thus guarded against construction which might tend to depreciate values. The management refuses to sell lots unless assurance is given that no house

is to be erected without the plans having been approved by the company. This makes speculative building impossible. On the other hand, the village elsewhere offers attractive opportunities for building operations, and a group of new houses by Warren & Combes were for the most part readily disposed of last season at \$3,800 to \$4,300."



CHAPTER XLV.

NEWTOWN.

THE STEP-CHILD OF THE METROPOLITAN AREA—MESPATH AND MR. DOUGHTY—
MIDDLEBURG—DEWITT CLINTON—MIDDLE VILLAGE AND
OTHER SETTLEMENTS.

IN the old Gazetteers the township of Newtown was described as bounded on the north by the East River (including in its limits Riker's, the two Brother and Berrian Islands), on the south by Jamaica, Flatbush and Bushwick, and west by Bushwick and the East River. It was held to contain 10,683 acres. These rather vague boundaries are now of little use, except in an antiquarian sense, for the town is described very differently nowadays, when it is apportioned between the First and Second Wards of the borough of Queens and has its boundaries indicated by named streets or avenues.

For a long time Newtown was the step-child of the metropolitan area, its backyard, so to speak. Whatever was too offensive for the rest of the area found lodgment there, and the odors from some of its works often aroused indignant protests even from dwellers on Manhattan, while Newtown Creek, once one of the sweetest bits of water stretching into Long Island from the river, became a synonym for all that is vile. Much of its territory was used as a dumping ground, its manufactories were those which could not be carried on close to any large city, the making of glue, the rendering of fat, the distillation of oil and the like, and the establishment of each of these made the surrounding territory only the more barren and bleak. Back from the coast line

the land was flat and the landscape uninteresting, and as agriculture decayed the old farms, many of them, began to be cut up into market gardens, while discolored and deserted barns became mute evidences of the glories of the past. In the entire district pools lay stagnant, helping by their exhalations to make the territory uninviting even to the land boomers, who found "Newtown lots" invariably the hardest sort of proposition to tackle when the lots were away from within sight of the river. The place had gradually lost caste and settlers were few. Astoria had flourished, the beauties of Ravenswood had invited a colony of home builders of the better class, Hunter's Point was boomed for many years as a suitable site for the homes of Manhattan workingmen, but the lots failed to command anything like attractive prices outside of Astoria, and Ravenswood was somewhat exclusive. Within the last ten or twelve years a change for the better has taken place and many thriving communities have sprung up, thanks to the increase in the metropolitan population, the facilities of transportation and the more responsible efforts of the land speculators, and such places as Winfield, Elmhurst, Woodside, Louona Park, Corona, are not only beautiful and attractive settlements, but are an illustration of the effect of business principles, capital and thoughtful, well-planned enterprise being ap-

plied to the once wild and irresponsible business of land booming. But even in spite of the number of these settlements, and their surrounding evidences of prosperity, there are not more dreary and uninteresting trolley rides in the area of the Greater New York than those across old Newtown township, say from Greenpoint Ferry to North Beach.

It used to be a standing joke,—a somewhat grim one,—to say that Newtown's greatest industry was that of funerals, that it was the great burying ground of New York and Brooklyn. Certainly it is plentifully dotted over with cemeteries, the cheapness of the land and its apparent unpopularity with the living having induced churches and corporations to buy up large lots or "parcels" and developing them for burial purposes. Except such as the extensive holdings of the Roman Catholic Church and some smaller places owned by other religious bodies, these cemeteries are all ruled by corporations, pay dividends or are expected to pay dividends on the money invested in them, and are managed on business principles and with a view to the profits just the same as any other piece of property would be. The largest of these cemeteries is Calvary, now inclosing some 300 acres, and the smallest the little Quaker resting place in Middle Village, which is hardly one acre in extent, while the Methodist cemetery, near the latter, only encloses two acres, but it has a history of its own which antedates the Revolution, for it was laid aside for its present purpose in 1770. The Lutheran cemetery and St. John's, also at Middle Village, Machpelah, St. Michael's, Mount Olivet, Mount Nebo, Union Field and parts of Evergreens and Cypress Hills are among the best known of the other silent cities which so long were Newtown's most potent attractions for throngs of visitors from the neighboring centers of population.

In another way the township of Newtown is peculiar among the old Long Island communities: In Jamaica, Flushing, Hempstead, Oyster Bay and other places the first settle-

ment, the first place which gave the name to the township, has retained its original importance and maintained its place as the center of its population,—the local capital, as it might be called. Not so Newtown. In 1870 its most densely populated corner, including Astoria, Ravenswood, Hunter's Point, was concentrated into one municipality and elevated into the dignity of a city, with the result that Long Island City now has a population of 52,240, while Newtown still struggles on as a village with a population of about 2,500. Still the old village is growing, has added about 1,000 to its population in a decade, and in spite of the prominence of the city it is to the village we must turn when we write of the history of the township until at least within the last three or four decades.

Antiquarians have decided that the first settlement in the township was made at what was afterward known as Fisher's Point and which is known at the present day as North Beach. The pioneer Hendrick Harmansen received a grant of land there from Governor Kieft in 1638, and appears to have at once settled. Not long after Richard Brutnell received a grant of land near the modern Dutch Kills, while amidst a slowly gathering procession we find a blacksmith named Jorissen, who was the first white man to become possessor of the beautiful tract later known as Ravenswood. That he was killed by a party of Indians is simply to say that he was the victim of a contingency which he and all other pioneers, and even dwellers in towns, in those picturesque but happily remote days had to face.

The first general name applied to the territory was Mespat, so named after a small tribe of Indians who hunted around Newtown Creek. The Rev. Mr. Doughty's settlers twisted it to Maspeth, a name which still lingers in one of the villages of the township. After the Doughty forces were shattered by the terrible Indian rising of 1643, the whole of Newtown's territory was, in fact, pretty

well cleared of settlers by the avenging hosts of the red man. When peace was restored and a truce had been made with the aborigines, the pioneers, who slowly returned, found they had a new grievance,—the pretensions of Mr. Doughty. That gentleman seemed to have caught the land fever pretty severely and tried to set up as a patroon, but the other original patentees stood up for their rights and won their case when they appealed to the Governor and his Council. So in his wrath Mr. Doughty gathered up his skirts and forsook Maspeth forever.

Immigration helped the territory but slowly, a spot here and there only being cleared, for although lying temptingly near to New York, the swift and treacherous currents in the river were not much to the liking of the longing eyes on Manhattan. In 1652, however, a little colony came from Connecticut, mainly English people, and after prospecting around settled on a spot which answered all their requirements in the way of meadowland, abundant and pure water and the like. As was necessary, application was made to Governor Stuyvesant for a town warrant or charter, which he at once granted, giving the name of Middleburg to the place and conferring on the colonists all the privileges which had been awarded to the other towns on Long Island which had asked that favor from him. This was the beginning of Newtown.

The first Magistrates were Robert Coe, Richard Gildersleeve and Thomas Hazard. The usual system of town meetings seems to have governed as far as possible all the local arrangements, but it is unfortunate that nearly all the early records have been lost. But enough has been left to show that Middleburg was a peaceable and law-abiding community, that it admitted newcomers to the privileges of settlement only after being satisfied as to character and after a vote had been taken, and when a citizen did not walk according to the local ideas of right and wrong he was unceremoniously ordered to betake himself else-

where. Serious crimes were apparently unknown among them; they had no lock-up for offenders, and imposed liberal fines upon all who violated any of the local ordinances. Some offenses were too heinous to be condoned by a fine, no matter how severe, and in 1660 we read of the just and merited penalty inflicted on a "ne'er-do-weel" who stole some corn from Magistrate Coe's barn. This reprobate had to walk through the village with two rods under each arm and drums beating in front of him, and having suffered this humiliation he was to make "amends" to the party he had robbed. Besides all this he was ordered



NEWTOWN'S FIRST HOUSE OF WORSHIP.

to keep to his house at nights and so give no cause for suspicion as to his movements. Why he was not summarily ordered out of the community is not disclosed. Very likely there were sufficient reasons for not imposing this last dread penalty. The citizens united in paying premiums for the slaughter of wild beasts, especially wolves, and in mutual protection against the Indians, but the latter continued troublesome, and in 1653, so great was the apprehension of a general rising of the red men, that the whole colony passed over to Connecticut for safety. They soon returned, however, and resumed the usual tenor of their ways, but in 1655 the Indians did make a raid which caused much bloodshed and destruction.

The people from the first seem to have been dissatisfied with the Dutch government in New Amsterdam, although they fulfilled all their obligations to it honestly and paid their tithes with commendable regularity. In 1662 Connecticut, under its charter, laid claim to jurisdiction over Long Island and the English towns excepting Gravesend seem to have accepted this claim joyfully. Those which were near New Amsterdam, however, had to be cautious in their preference, because the redoubtable Peter, the doughty Silver Leg, had his eye upon them. So Middleburg had to await events while cherishing her hope of getting away from Dutch rule. In 1663, however, her citizens openly professed allegiance to Connecticut, threw away their Dutch name and adopted that of Hastings. Then they were landed in a slough of despond by news that Connecticut had deserted them as the result of a treaty with Stuyvesant, and hailed the arrival of Captain John Scott as the direct representative of English authority, elected him their President, but he did not rule very long. Peter Stuyvesant had too much on hand to think of the contumacy of Middleburg or Hastings, and in 1664 Captain Nicolls wrested the entire province from his rule, and Middleburg or Hastings had an English government at last, an English government *de facto*, which of course had never been realized under the Connecticut claims. With that change, too, the old names were abandoned and "the New Towne" took their place.

In the convention of 1665, which accepted "the Duke's laws," the limits of the different townships were discussed and to a certain extent determined, for the original charters were, as has been noticed frequently. So, too, was the determination of the convention. However, in the following year the freeholders secured by purchase all the remaining lands in the possession of the Indians, or lands claimed by them, and on March 6, 1667, Governor Nicolls issued a brand new charter in

which he gave the people all the privileges of a town government, ordered that the town should continue to be known as New Town and vaguely set out its boundaries as "east by Flushing Creek, north by the Sound, south by the Jamaica line which runs on the south side of the hill and west by Mespat Creek or Kills." The boundaries as thus set forth continued practically to be those of the township although the courts had afterward to be appealed to very frequently. A tract of meadow land which was in dispute between Bushwick and New Town was awarded to the former after quite cantankerous legal proceedings in 1669. In 1684 Newtown, Brooklyn and Bushwick had a three-cornered fight over their boundaries, and a year later Flatbush secured a patent for some land which Newtown claimed. A long and wearisome contest ensued, all the other towns apparently joining issue, most of them against Newtown, asserting that she claimed tracts of territory which had been patented to the others. Sometimes the trouble was before the law courts, sometimes before the Governor, sometimes before the Legislature. There is no practical purpose to be gained by following its details and it may be dismissed by saying that after dragging along for some 80 years it was finally adjusted by an act of the Legislature in 1768. The sudden overthrow of the English government and the appearance of Anthony Colve in 1673 as the representative of the Dutch authorities, appear to have been received by the Newtown people with equanimity. The Duke's laws and the Duke's methods had been tried and found decidedly wanting by a people who valued the privileges of freedom. However, when Colve's representative visited Newtown to administer the oath of allegiance he found only 23 out of the 99 male adults which his papers showed the place contained. New Town was united with "Rustdorp, Heemstede, Vlissingen and Oyster Bay in the election in the usual roundabout way of a sheriff and clerk who were to execute the laws in those five towns. Toward

the close of 1674 the Dutch rule gave way to the English, the Duke's laws were again operative, and the Dutch officials were removed. But the people were far from satisfied, and when the news came that King James had fled from his ancestral kingdom and been succeeded by the Dutch prince, William of Orange, there was great rejoicing among the freeholders generally, Dutch as well as English. They were represented in every convention and in their excess of zeal actually voted to provide two soldiers for the defense of the fort at New Amsterdam and to fully provide for the maintenance of that brace of heroes!

Newtown, throughout its early history, by which may generally be understood its pre-revolutionary history, was essentially an agricultural community, and it is said that it became so famous for its crops of wheat, rye, hemp, tobacco and potatoes, that in 1732 all of the land within its boundaries had been taken up mainly for farming, grazing or fruit growing purposes. Horses, cattle and sheep were reared in great numbers and much attention was given to breeding, importations being made from New England and Holland. The fruit raised was particularly good and the Newtown pippins became famous at an early date. In such a community few trades were in demand, for the people were content with their own product and the wealthier had slaves who were generally handy men on the farm or did the rough work in the domestic establishments. Then, too, money was scarce and business transactions were conducted on the basis of barter. Thus in 1661 a house was sold for "six hundredweight of tobacco, a thousand clapboards, and half a fat [vat] of strong beer." Still the community supported several such tradesmen as butchers, weavers, tailors, carpenters, coopers and blacksmiths. In some instances the trades were represented by a single representative, but there were half a dozen weavers although every household had its spinning wheel, and sometimes its own loom. Milling in such a community was a re-

munerative as well as a most necessary business and as early as 1657 John Coe had set up a flouring mill. The first trace of manufacturing pursuits occurred in 1691 when Thomas and Edward Stevenson were given permission and the necessary ground to set up a fulling mill. In 1721 a bark mill and tannery were put in operation by William Vallance. Then followed a starch factory, a brewery and a grist mill. Most of these were in operation when the Revolutionary War broke out and managed to struggle through it, although while the struggle lasted all business was depressed except agriculture and where that was permitted without molestation it was no longer profitable.

When the war broke out Newtown was found like every other town on the Island, especially on the island west of Oyster Bay, to be hopelessly divided. The Newtown farmers saw their stock carried off by order of Congress to prevent it being used by the British and the news of the result of the battle of Brooklyn made it only too apparent that their property would never be returned. Some of their citizens, too, who formed part of General Woodhull's little force were captured along with that hero and sent to the prison ships. The British troops were visible in Newtown village on August 28 and the Whigs knew then that their doom was sealed. Those who could fled before the arrival of the redcoats, most of those who remained were seized and imprisoned or taken out of the town and their property confiscated. Feeling in the crisis rose high and a Tory thought it no disgrace to turn informer against his Whig neighbor, a proceeding which the latter repaid with full interest when his turn came in course of time. Newtown on the surface, at least, became intensely loyal and joined heartily in a petition which prayed that the whole of Queens County might be restored to royal favor. It was restored and Newtown raised a couple of troops of horse to guard its borders against the depredations of the despised Whigs. But the wages of loyalty was soon found terribly

exacting, exasperating, and beggaring. Martial law prevailed during the seven years of the "occupation" which followed the battle of Brooklyn, and the civil courts were suspended. Many troops were quartered at Newtown from time to time—the 17th dragoons, the Maryland Loyalists, the 42d Highlanders, the 33d regiment and a battery of artillery. The soldiers were mainly billeted in the houses of the Whigs, but the farmers, Whig or Tory, had to supply the army with their produce at a price named by the army officials, or see their oats, wheat, straw and provisions confiscated and themselves harshly maltreated by the soldiery or imprisoned, perhaps both. Robbery was a matter of daily occurrence and toward the end of the seven years life, liberty and property were held by the slenderest of tenures. Little wonder that Newtown, Whig or Tory, hailed the return of peace with many manifestations of delight.

While we do not think of Newtown as a religious settlement such as was Gravesend, or even as a theocracy like Hempstead or Jamaica, there is little doubt that the pioneer settlers were earnest God-fearing people, fully imbued with the devout spirit of New England. Still their purpose in leaving the land of the Puritan was to secure a stretch of fertile soil and earn a livelihood rather than to obtain any further religious freedom than the law or public sentiment there tolerated. Mr. Doughty, of course, might be cited to prove an exception to this, but while he had to leave New England mainly on account of his views on baptism, there is no evidence to show that he intended setting up a religious community when he settled in "Mesopotamia." Indeed he appears more anxious to attain the dignity of patroonship rather than the barren honor of spiritual leadership. But his connection with Newtown was too brief to give full scope to his ambition, temporal or spiritual, while certainly the course of events showed that whatever his views may have been as to the founding of a little theocracy, they were not shared

by those who were his fellow-patentees in 1652. It has been asserted, however, that the first settlers were organized in a congregation prior to setting up their homes in Mesopotamia and that accompanying them was their pastor, the Rev. John Moore. That this minister was among the pioneers seems undoubted, and it is very likely, nay it is certain, that he would preach to his neighbors and perform his holy offices among them; but there is nothing to show that he was accepted as their leader, that his voice and influence were all-important in their councils as was so often the case in other settlements. We are told that he preached in the "town house," which served him also as a dwelling, and which had been erected soon after the settlement was effected, but all that relates to him is so disjointed and meagre that his personality adds little to our history. He died in 1657, so that at best he was not permitted to enjoy for many years the associations of the community he had helped to found. It was not until 1671 that the first church building was erected in Newtown. The Rev. William Leverich was at that time the pastor and he is generally regarded as the first settled minister in the town. Mr. Leverich had quite a history before settling in Newtown, where his life work was destined to end, about 1694. It seems, however, that several years before that he had retired from the active duties of the ministry. He was a native of England, and after being educated for the ministry at Cambridge crossed the Atlantic in 1633 to become pastor of the church at Dover, N. H. He remained there two years or so and then, after holding several brief charges, became, in 1640, minister at Sandwich, Cape Cod, where, it seems, he took a particular interest in the work of spreading a knowledge of the Gospel among the Indians. He removed to Oyster Bay in 1653, where he had acquired some land, and was chosen as minister by the people at an annual salary of £15. He remained there for some two years as pastor and then became minister at Huntington, where he remained

until 1670, when he settled in Newtown. He seems to have been a man of singular ability, about as learned in the law as in the Gospel, and seems to have engaged in many enterprises outside of his sacred calling, and his lawsuit or lawsuits with his predecessor as religious teacher in Huntington still form an interesting story in the early annals of that town. Mr. Leverich certainly prospered in his worldly affairs and seems to have been much beloved in Newtown. His descendants are still among the most prominent citizens of Long Island.

The successors of Mr. Leverich at Newtown were amiable men, and the church prospered so that about 1697 or thereabout a house and lot were set apart for the use of the ministry. In 1703 the church was taken possession of by the Rev. Mr. Urquhart of the combined charge of Jamaica, Newtown and Flushing, under the orders of Lord Cornbury, just as in the case of the Jamaica church, and an effort was made to suppress Presbyterianism. The Rev. John Hampton was openly arrested in Newtown and imprisoned for attempting to preach without first obtaining a permit from the precious scamp who then represented the majesty of Britain—Lord Cornbury. In spite of this the Presbyterian flock was able to keep together and in 1708 the Rev. Samuel Pumroy accepted a call to the pastorate and entered upon his duties on September 18th, that year, although he was not ordained for some fourteen months later. Under him the church waxed strong and in 1715 it was received into the Presbytery of Philadelphia and built a new and much larger tabernacle, which seems to have been used for religious services from that date, although it was not fully completed until 1741. By that time, however, the labors of Mr. Pumroy were nearing an end, for he died in 1744. The most noted of his successors was the Rev. Simeon Horton, who held the charge for some 26 years. Then he retired and waited for the end, which came to him May 8, 1786. He had the mortification of seeing the church in which he had labored so long without a pastor (for

his successor, Andrew Bay, was not a success in any way and only lasted a couple of years), used by the British troops as a hospital, a guard house, and finally demolished. It says wonders for the steadfastness of the people that in 1787, four years after the last British troops sailed through the Narrows homeward bound, they commenced the erection of a new house of worship.

For many years after the zealous Mr. Urquhart captured the Presbyterian meeting



OLD FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH
NEWTOWN, L. I.

house at Newtown, the story of the Episcopal Church in Newtown is bound up with the story of its progress in Jamaica and Flushing and has already been told in the sections devoted to these towns. It does not seem that at first the old meeting house was much used or that Newtown was regarded as much more than a preaching station. But in 1735 a building was erected for the use of the church and services were commenced in it although it was not completed until 1740. Newtown continued

part of the tripartite charge until 1797, when the Episcopalians attained the long sought privilege of having a minister of their own and the Rev. Henry Van Dyke entered upon the sole charge. Five years later he retired. Newtown then united with Flushing and the Rev. Abraham Clarke became joint rector. This arrangement lasted until 1809, when it was dissolved and Mr. Clarke was rector of Newtown until his death in 1810. The Rev. Evan Malbone Johnson became rector in 1814 and continued until his removal to Brooklyn in 1827, when he was succeeded by the Rev. George A. Shelton, who was rector for the long period of 33 years, from 1830 to 1863.

The first Dutch Reformed Church was erected in Newtown in 1732, but the congregation for several years thereafter was dependent upon the service of such ministers as might be sent them from New York or Kings County. In 1739 the people united with the other Reformed churches in Queens County and this arrangement continued until 1802, when the Rev. Jacob Schoonmaker became minister of Jamaica and Newtown jointly. He labored in Newtown until 1849 and the church thrived under him greatly and built in 1833 a new house of worship. But years began to limit even his great capacity for work, so he confined himself for the remainder of his days to Jamaica, and Newtown went forth alone and prospered under the care of the Rev. Thomas C. Strong, who was installed December 12, 1849.

As early as 1661 a school was held in the town or meeting house under the direction of Richard Mills and thereafter under a succession of high attainments. The children in the county were never without means of learning as much at least as the three R's, which was all that the American common school system aimed at until within comparatively recent years. As the population increased schools were established at different points and by 1740 there were no fewer than five in the town, and in

1762 an advanced school, where writing, arithmetic, the "Italian method of book-keeping by double entry," Latin and Greek were taught, was opened at Hallet's Cove.

After the Revolutionary struggle had been fought and won Newtown relapsed into its old quiet ways as an agricultural community and slumbered on. It had a population when the rule of Uncle Sam commenced of about 2,000: forty years later (in 1830) it had only increased by some 500. Communication with the outside world was difficult and dangerous on the one side and expensive and tedious on the other. The currents on the East River were treacherous and a knowledge of their peculiarities had never been thoroughly mastered even by those living on its banks, so that a voyage from Newtown Creek to the opposite shore might last an hour or take up the best part of a day, and the landing place depended not on the will of the passenger but on circumstances. All was well provided fair weather was vouchsafed; if not the simple trip might furnish terrors enough to enthrall a farm fireside for a generation to come. If the journey was made by land up to 1798 the means of accomplishment were few and far between, unless one had the command of horses and wagons. In that year, however, a "light, airy coachee, hung on springs," was put on the route between Newtown and Brooklyn, running through Maspeth, across Penny Bridge to Bushwick, Cripplebush and Bedford, and the cost for the trip was 3 shillings. The "coachee" carried seven passengers and left Newtown three days in each week. In 1805 the extension of the Cripplebush road brought Newtown more easily in touch with Brooklyn and in 1816 it was placed in direct communication with the Williamsburg ferry and so in easy reach, comparatively, of Manhattan Island. It was not, however, until 1854, with the opening of the North Side Railroad, that Newtown was brought into touch not only with Brooklyn and New York but with the outlying sections of its own territory

and began to make ready for the great advance which was in time to come with the trolley, railroad, rapid transit and annexation.

So far as the township was concerned the modern advance in population commenced in 1830, but little of that advance was felt in Newtown village. In fact it steadily began, almost with the opening of the last century,

is seldom used as very few of that denomination are to be found in this vicinity. It is supposed to be about 100 years old, but there is some reason to believe that it is even more ancient." But whatever its age it has long since disappeared altogether and so have most of the country homes of the merchants and others of New York which in the early part of the nineteenth century made it the best known



CLINTON HOMESTEAD.

to lose its primal place in the story of the township and to become quite a subordinate village.

Even Maspeth in time surpassed it. That early English settlement, almost as early as Newtown village itself, has had a most curious history. For years it was a stronghold of the Quakers, but that body abandoned it long ago. Writing in 1845 Dr. Prime said: "The only public edifice is an ancient Friends' meeting house which is now very much in decay, and

village in the township. Here De Witt Clinton had his country seat to which he was glad to retire at frequent intervals to think out his many schemes for the upbuilding of New York and to escape from the worry and wiles of the politicians, and one is almost inclined to think that the local statesmen were more numerous, more irrepressible, more zealous in their plans for emptying the public treasury either by way of salaries or appropriations than now. The old house is still standing,

seemingly in as good condition as when it was inhabited by Walter Franklin, Clinton's father-in-law, whose New York house was Washington's residence when he became President of the United States and whose name is still kept alive in Franklin Square, on which the Presidential dwelling stood. Many modern villas and cottages, even little settlements, have arisen in Maspeth since De Witt Clinton's day, but it still retains much of its rural aspect except in the spots where manufacturing has sprung up.

To-day it would really be termed a manufacturing village, and has been such since 1842 when John Murch began the manufacture of cord and twine, and that business is now carried on in several establishments, the industry giving employment to several hundred hands. In 1852 Cord Meyer started a factory for producing animal carbon. Oil cloth making was another industry, established in 1863, and since then a number of other establishments of various kinds have given employment to a population estimated to-day at 2,500. During the past few years the building up process going on so unceasingly in New York and Brooklyn has added what may be called a new industry to Maspeth in the opening up of picnic grounds and athletic grounds which attract at intervals large crowds of visitors each summer. It is well supplied with churches and can now be so easily reached that there is no doubt its popularity as a site for homes and factories will steadily increase.

Middle Village is another old settlement, but it is mainly given over in these later days to cemetery purposes, although it supports a living population of some 1,300. It received


its name from its geographical situation, being midway on the old turnpike between Williamsburg and Jamaica. In it was built in 1785 the first Methodist church on Long Island, but that structure has long since disappeared. The late Joseph Wesley Harper, of the famous New York publishing house, had his home in Middle Village from the time he reached manhood until his death in 1871, and did much to improve the amenity of the village as a place of residence. The Harper family originally hailed from Newtown, where the father of the founders "J. & J. Harper" was long a farmer. Corona has lately come into prominence as a manufacturing village and home site, having been much favored by the land boomers, and as much may be said of Laurel Hill, full of memories of the old Alsop and Rapalye families and which began to be laid out for "improvement" in 1853. About the same time Woodside became known as a desirable place for residential purposes and several elegant villas were erected. It dates from 1850, when the late J. A. F. Kelly came north from South Carolina and sought retirement from active life amid its beautiful surroundings. It still continues to be a village of homes and its business interests are mainly confined to floriculture and market gardening. East Williamsburgh, Charlotteville, Glendale, New Suffolk and several other settlements are among those likely to become soon prominent through the impetus which rapid transit and consolidation have even already brought about. What may be called the old part of Newtown township has an interesting history in the past, but its future promises to surpass it in incident, in importance and in real achievement.



CHAPTER XLVI.

JAMAICA.

THE LITTLE REPUBLIC OF RUSDORP—MINISTERIAL TROUBLES—MR. POYER'S TRIALS—
THE REVOLUTION—EDUCATIONAL AND BUSINESS PROGRESS.

O Governor Stuyvesant must be awarded the credit of bringing this town into existence, the old village of which is destined to become in the near future one of the great railroad centres with the usual accompaniments of trade, business and industries of all sorts, of this part of the continent. Stuyvesant issued his first warrant for settlement March 21, 1656, and a more ample and more imposing document in 1660. When Gov. Nicolls sent Stuyvesant to enjoy the comforts of his Bouwerie, he confirmed all the rights and privileges which had been granted Jamaica by a deed dated Feb. 15, 1666, and Governor Dongan twenty years later gave it another charter mainly for the sake of the fee involved. On March 7, 1788, it was reorganized as a town by the state government and so it remained until it was swallowed up in the Greater New York.

Such in brief is what might be called the municipal history of Jamaica from beginning to end. There is much doubt about the origin of its name, but it is generally accepted as being a modernized rendering of the old Indian name Jameco—the name of a small tribe located on Jamaica Bay. How or when this name was first applied is not clear. The Dutch authorities called it Rusdorp—town in the country; and this was long its official designation. Some of the settlers called it Canorasset, others Crawford, but Jamaica, by whoever in-

troduced, kept to the front and remained. Very likely it was called Jameco before the white man came along. But there have been all sorts of surmises and speculations over the name and the etymologists as usual have given their fancy free reins over it with wonderful results: even so staid a personage as the late Dr. O'Callaghan, the famous local historian, formulated a theory that the word was derived from the Indian name for beaver as translated by the French "Amique."

Where the first settlers came from is a point that has not been exactly determined, but there is little doubt that they came over from Connecticut with the view of establishing a religious colony, or rather a colony where religious tolerance might be enjoyed. Those who signed the request to Stuyvesant, therein described themselves as "inhabitants of the town of Hempstead and subjects of this province," so it is very likely that some of them had been for a time residing in Hempstead and spying the land. They told the Governor that they wanted "a place to improve our labors upon; for some of us are destitute of either habitation or possession, others, though inhabited, find that in the place they are they cannot comfortably subsist by their labours and exertions." So they asked for the Governor's consent to settle on a tract of land "called Conorasset and lyes from a river which divideth it from Conarie see to the bounds of heemstead,

and may contain about twenty families." This tract they had already "bought" from the Indians for "two guns, a coat and a certain quantity of powder and lead." Stuyvesant had to be petitioned three times before he consented, but when he did confirm the request he did it in a most handsome manner, giving them permission to elect magistrates and conduct their affairs on the same lines as Brooklyn, Midwout and other Dutch towns. The names of the petitioners were Robert Jackson, Nicholas Tanner, Nathaniel Denton, Richard Everit, Rodger Linas, Daniel Denton, John Eazar, Abraham Smith, Thomas Ireland, Thomas Carle, Edward Spray, John Rhoades, Andrew Messenger and Samuel Matthews. These fourteen may therefore be regarded as the first citizens of Jamaica. By 1660, when Stuyvesant gave the town a regular charter and the name of Rusdorp, there were some forty additional freeholders in the town. It was a little republic in itself; its town meeting regularly settled all its affairs and even regulated who should and who should not be admitted to citizenship. One Benjamin Hubbard, for instance, in 1649 had bought a house lot without having first obtained the sanction of the town meeting, so it required him to give assurance of his good behavior. Of course with such additions to the population more land had to be secured from the local Indians from time to time, and we find several records of purchases made in exchange for such articles as soldiers' coats, kettles, "bottles of licker," powder, lead, guns, blankets and the like. The value of the Dongan patent of 1686 was that it clearly defined the limits of the township and showed that several of the original patentees were still prominent in the town. The names given in this patent were, Nicolas Everit, Nathaniel Denton, Nehemiah Smith, Daniel Denton, John Oldfields, William Creed, Bryant Newton, Benjamin Coe, Jonas Wood, William Foster, John Everit, Edward Higbie, Daniel Whitehead, John Carpenter, John Furman, Samuel Smith, Richard Rhodes, Thomas Lamberson, Joseph Smith, George Woolsey, John

Baylis, Thomas Smith, Wait Smith and Samuel Mills. The town government seems to have gone at once into operation on receiving Stuyvesant's first permit (it should hardly be called a charter, although in effect it was one). The town meeting, as has been said, determined everything, subject, of course, to the Governor's veto, but Stuyvesant seems to have given the English settlements much more liberty than he did the Dutch, and so practically the town meeting of Jamaica was supreme within its bounds. Attendance at these meetings was compulsory and absence without cause was the subject of a fine. A keeper was hired in 1661 to look after the cows and calves of the lieges, thus saving a lot of individual time and worry, and they gathered in their crops in squadrons under appointed officers for mutual protection against any overt effort on the part of Indians. It must be said, however, that the settlers did all they could, according to their light, to deal justly with the red man, and held frequent conferences with his representatives while the conclusions seem to have been mutually satisfactory. In 1662 they hired Abraham Smith, one of the original patentees, to beat the drum on Sundays and on the days of public meetings. They laid aside a lot ten rods square as a burying place and this, in 1668, they had reverently enclosed with a wooden fence.

The glimpses we get of the community show it to have been prosperous from the first and steadily advancing in material wealth, reminding us in many respects of the English settlements on the eastern half of the island. The population steadily increased, although as early as 1664 the adventurous, roving spirit of some of the early settlers asserted itself and Daniel Denton, John Baylis and Luke Watson headed a new migration which passed over into New Jersey and there commenced the settlement of Elizabethtown. Denton, however, seems to have returned within a few years to Jamaica and resumed his original holding there. It is worthy of notice that in the petition to Gov. Nicolls for a tract of land on

which to settle in New Jersey, Denton and his associates dated the document "from Jamaica, commonly so called." From this paper, in which they speak of the "deceas of the Dutch interest" in the Province, we see how thoroughly English at heart were the pioneer settlers at Jamaica. They had fled from New England intolerance and from nothing else and built up right under the official dictatorial regime of Stuyvesant as complete a little republic as was any of the communities in Massachusetts which sent representatives to the General Court. In all essential matters they were masters of their own municipal destinies—and so continued for many years.

While not a professedly religious community like Gravesend, or enrolled under clerical leadership like Southold, there is no doubt that from its inception Jamaica was a theocratic society—one in which the affairs of the little commonwealth were regulated by the teachings of the Scriptures rather than the statutes of their High Mightinesses. The life of the community revolved around its church and the recognized fathers of the church were the natural leaders of the people, so that for a long time after the settlement was begun the story of its religious development is really the entire story there is to tell. Stuyvesant's permission for settlement was dated March 21, 1656, and it was not until 1662 that a town meeting decided to erect a house of worship, a meeting house, and united in a call to the Rev. Zachariah Walker to join with them and become the first minister of Jamaica, which he accepted. It is not to be imagined, however, that during the four or five years which elapsed before this preacher that the community was without any regular religious services. Undoubtedly one or more of their number was quite capable of conducting public worship and fulfilling all the duties which could be performed by a lay preacher. Services would be held in any convenient barn or in the winter time in any hospitable kitchen. With the erection of the meeting house, however, the people had a place where they could worship God or

discuss affairs of state or assemble for any purpose, religious or secular, as they saw fit. The little frame edifice (20 feet square) was at once the church and the Town Hall. About the same time a house was built for the prospective minister and a lot laid aside for his use. It would seem that an effort was made to try the experiment of listening to one of Stuyvesant's ministers before finally calling one from New England and accordingly in answer to a petition Stuyvesant sent there the Rev. Samuel Drisius, who was able to preach in English and who, on Jan. 8, 1661, delivered two sermons and baptized eight children and two women. Probably all this was done to please the irascible Governor and to pave the way to the peaceable settlement of the minister of their choice. Mr. Walker seems to have won the affections of his people, although one would think from the records that he was as much a farmer as a clergyman. He received, however, much "encouragement" in the way of having his stipend increased and the like, but he decided on trying another sphere of operations and in 1668 removed to Connecticut. The Rev. John Prudden, a Harvard graduate, then became Jamaica's minister at a salary of £40 and the use of the minister's house and land. He was a Congregationalist and the majority of the citizens were Presbyterians and they seem to have been unable to agree, although what the real difference was between the two, considering the time and circumstances, it is difficult to realize. It is not so stated, but probably the people did not want any connection with the Congregational churches in Connecticut, while Mr. Prudden at that time regarded New England as the hub of the entire religious system. The Jamaica citizens seemed to have appreciated his services and were desirous of retaining him, but he retired in 1674. His successor, the Rev. William Woodruff, whose salary was fixed at £60, did not seem to please the people. Mr. Prudden, on full reflection, thought he might go further and fare worse, so in 1676 Mr. Woodruff seems to have been released and Mr. Prudden

once more presided over the table in the meeting house. It was an amicable arrangement on both sides. Mr. Prudden became a Presbyterian and his salary was to be £40 a year. Besides, he had the use of forty acres of meadow land and 19 of the brethren agreed each to bring him a load of firewood each year. Then he was housed in the minister's home and to encourage him it was agreed that if he remained as minister for ten years the house and lot which had been set apart for the use of the minister should become his own property. Under him the congregation prospered. In 1690 a new and more commodious meeting house was erected—60 feet long and 30 feet wide, and a year later the minister's salary was raised to £60 with all firewood and other privileges. In the following year, however, he accepted a call to Newark, N. J. His ministry had extended six years beyond the ten which made the minister's house and lot his personal property, but before leaving he transferred the holding to the congregation, receiving in return land elsewhere. Jamaica seems to have been invariably liberal in its treatment of its ministers and to Mr. Prudden's immediate successor, the Rev. George Phillips, the promise was made that if he should remain in charge until the close of his life his annual salary of £60 would be continued to his widow. The minister's salary being paid mainly in produce, or as a result of sales of produce, sometimes a little difficulty arose in connection with the collection, owing to the dilatoriness of human nature, but such details were to be expected.

In 1699 a stone meeting-house was built partly by subscription among the people, and when that source failed by a rate passed by the trustees. By that time, it should be noted, several of the ratepayers were opposed to the Presbyterian form of worship and refused to pay the rate, but payment was finally made compulsory. It was a small square structure, forty feet square, surmounted with a belfry. Its interior was plainly fitted up with high-backed, uncomfortable pews, and a high pul-

pit, high enough to bring the preacher on a level with the gallery, on the south side, had the usual huge sounding board, an arrangement which good Dr. Prime used to think was an arrangement of the devil. Much of the history of Jamaica centered around the church until it was demolished in 1813.

Its historic interest began immediately on its completion. The Rev. John Hubbard, who had been ministering to the people for some time, was formally called to the charge in January, 1702, and was duly installed and given possession of the minister's house and lot. He had hardly more than got accustomed to his new dignity when he was dispossessed of both church and manse in the summary procedures already recorded in a previous chapter of this work.

By that time, it should be remembered, the Presbyterians were no longer the sole dictators of Jamaica. The growth of population had long overstepped the old necessity of submitting a certificate of character on the part of prospective settlers to the town meeting, and people had become citizens to whom Calvinism was a thing abhorred.

As early as 1657 we find Robert Hodgson, a preacher of the Quaker persuasion, visited Jamaica and was lodged in the house of Henry Townsend (one of the first petitioners to Stuyvesant for settlement privileges), who for his hospitality was promptly fined eight Flemish pounds. A few months later Townsend, who seems to have adopted the views of the Society of Friends, repeated his offense by housing another preacher, and was again fined, this time at a higher figure. But Townsend never failed in his hospitality, and welcomed each wanderer and gathered a congregation to listen to the preaching of the new doctrine until Stuyvesant, tired of hearing such contumacy, sent down to Jamaica a squad of soldiers to see that his edicts were respected, and then Townsend and several others removed to Oyster Bay and so placed themselves beyond Stuyvesant's jurisdiction. But in spite of soldiers and local opposition the number

of Friends grew. They stubbornly held their views in spite of opposition, declined to pay the rate imposed for the support of the "priest of Jamaica," and had their goods distrained as a result, but held their ground. As a result their services were more numerously attended year after year, and Jamaica was declared in 1686 a place for holding quarterly meetings, although it was not until 1706 that they erected a meeting-house.

About 1702 a Dutch Reformed congregation seems to have been organized, meeting in the stone church, which, as has already been pointed out, was never intended, even by the Presbyterians themselves, for their sole use. It was not until 1716, that the Reformed Dutch people erected a little tabernacle of their own.

The year 1702 also marks the formal introduction of the Episcopalian body, when, according to the authorities of that denomination, Jamaica, Newtown and Flushing were spiritually united under one rector. After the forcible ejection of Mr. Hubbard the Rev. William Urquhart continued, in spite of strong opposition on the part of those he styled "nonconformists" and sometimes amid much and sometimes bitter controversy, to hold the church and the minister's house until his death, in 1709. Mr. Hubbard died in 1705, and was succeeded by the Rev. Francis Goodhue. We do not find whether he was elected to the pastorate by the people or was simply set down among them by the rascal who then represented Queen Anne. But he must have been a rather weak-kneed brother or he would never have accepted such a document as the following prior to entering on his duties:

By his Excellency Edward Viscount Cornbury Captn Genl & Govr in Chiefe of ye Provinces of N York, New Jersey & of all The Territories & Tracts of Land Depending thereon in America & Vice Admiral of the same &c.

To Mr FRANCIS GOODHUE, Greeting.

I do hereby Licence & Tollerate you to be Ministr of the Presbyterian Congregation at

Jamaica in Queens county on the island Nassaw in the sd Province of New Yorke & to have & Exercise the ffree Liberty & use of yor Religion pursuant to Her Matys pleasure therein signified to me In her Royal Instructions & during so Long Time as to me shall seem meet & all Ministrs & others are hereby Required to Take notice hereof Given undr my hand & seale at ffort Anne in New York this day of this Instant January in the ffourth year of Her Matys Reign Annoq: Dni 1705.6.

CORNEBURY.

By His Excys Command

WILLIAM ANDERSON D secy

Goodhue only lasted about a year and then went home to New England to die. With his departure the Presbyterian flock had no shepherd until in 1710 the Rev. George McNish entered upon the work of the ministry among them. In July of the same year the Rev. Thomas Poyer was appointed Rector of Jamaica, Newtown and Flushing under the Episcopalian banner. Then the battle royal between the two forces was on. Both of these men were of marked ability and of earnest devotion to their work. Perhaps McNish was the brainiest of the two, the most brilliant of the two, but Poyer was one of those diligent, plodding individuals whose dogged perseverance makes up, in the way of actual accomplishment, for genius. It is not certain whether Mr. McNish was born in Scotland or in the north of Ireland, but his name demonstrates clearly that he was of the Scottish race. Mr. Poyer was a Welshman and came direct from the Mother Country to at once enter upon his duties here. Mr. McNish came to America in 1705, in company with the sainted Mackemsie, and with him assisted in the formation of the Presbytery of Philadelphia—the first in North America, and to him is generally awarded the credit of bringing about the first Presbytery on Long Island, in 1717. However, he remained a member of the Presbytery of Philadelphia until his death, in 1722.

McNish seems to have been a natural lead-

er, and if Poyer lacked that essential quality to success in public or professional life, he had at least the backing and support of the representatives of the Royal Government, the authorities of the church and the powerful society in London which was then engaged in sending out men like him as missionaries to "propagate" the Gospel in foreign parts. Such were the two men who were destined to oppose each other in support of their respective standards in Jamaica for several years. The echoes of the battle rolled over Newtown and Flushing, over all of Queens County, in fact, but Jamaica was the battle ground; there the leaders resided and there was the centre of attack, the prize for the victor, the little stone church.

Certainly Mr. Poyer had officially the most exacting position of the two. Mr. McNish had his energies concentrated in Jamaica, and although he made his influence felt throughout Long Island, and seems to have travelled all over it doing missionary work, his parochial labors must have been light. But in Mr. Poyer's case there was steady parochial work all the time and a host of other troubles—pecuniary mainly—while the opposition confronted him at every step. From some of his letters we get a capital idea not only of his own little troubles, but of the condition of the places over which he was set to hold spiritual supervision.

The first position in the struggle was won by McNish. Settling in Jamaica before the arrival of Poyer, he took possession of the church and for some reason or another, Mrs. Urquhart, the widow of Poyer's predecessor, vacated the minister's house and turned it over to McNish. Gov. Hunter saw to it that the church was turned over to Poyer, but McNish, "an independent North Britain preacher who has had the assurance in the face of the contrary to aver that the Bishop of London as no power here," held on to the dwelling and the people, the ratepayers, not only refused to pay Mr. Poyer his stipend,

but actually handed over part of it to Mr. McNish. To oust McNish from the dwelling a suit at law was necessary and Gov. Hunter seemed unwilling at first to spend his money in that manner: besides the Judge before whom the matter would likely come was a Dissenter. Afterward he seemed willing to aid in bringing the case into a court of law, but by that time Poyer hesitated about following such a procedure and aroused the ire of the Chief Executive. It seemed a paltry case throughout, one in which Poyer had the worst of it—his salary unpaid or only partly paid, his dwelling withheld, his appeals disregarded at headquarters, his congregation growing slowly, and personal indignities being heaped upon him on frequent occasions. But for gifts of money from the home society it is difficult to see how he could have maintained the struggle. His brother clergy, however, stuck to him all through and really forced the authorities to take some action—getting some special instructions in his case from the Queen in Council; but even all that had paltry practical results. Even a suit at law which he instituted for the recovery of his salary dragged along so slowly as almost to banish all hope of legal relief. Here are two of his letters to the Secretary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, whose missionary he was, which are pathetic in their presentation of his case:

Jamaica L. I. Novr. 2d 1714.

HONORED SIR—It will be five years the last day of next month since my most honored patrons the Venerable Society were pleased to order me to embark to proceed on my Mission which I obeyed and embarked that same day but there were more hindrance than one that detained the Fleet 'till the 10th of April and in the interim I was tossed about from one expensive harbour to another with my family having my Wife visited on board with two fits of sickness and obliged each fit to bring her ashore for the help of a Doctor which was not a little trouble & charge to me and besides all this the £20 I was forced to pay for our passage & the twice laying in

of sea Stores put me to very great straits the 10th of April we left the Lands end of England and had a very tedious and uneasy passage of 13 weeks lacking two or three days. In this passage I had great experience of the goodness of God and often had occasion to reflect on the Royal Psalmist's expressions in Psalm 107. 23 &c where he has these words—They that go down to the Sea in ships and occupy their business in great waters these men see the works of the Lord and his wonders in the deep &c. I saw indeed & wondered and often expected in the great tempests we had to have been swallowed up of the merciless waves, but when we were in our trouble and almost brought to our wit's end We cried unto the Lord and he was graciously pleased to hear us and bring us thro' not into the haven where we would have been yet unto a Christian shore yea unto the Island where my Mission was to terminate about 100 miles from my Parish Here the ship and part of her Lading was lost on the 7th July but not the life of one person.

The week following I did set out for this place where to this time I have not ceased (according to the ability that God hath given me) to instruct the Flock committed to my charge I have laboured faithfully in my Lord's Vineyard and in my private advice from House to House as well as public discourses I have exhorted them to faith in Christ and amendment of life and to live in Love I have likewise endeavoured to possess them with as due a sense of the fundamentals of our religion as I could and the Great God has vouchsafed to give such a blessing to my poor yet well meaning endeavours the number of the communicants of the Church of England here before my time never exceeded 30 I have had above 60—of the Independents who are the most numerous in my parish I have gained some and of the Quakers more some that were very rigid Independents since I came and that have reflected very much on our Church and constitution are now very frequently my hearers; and among the Quakers where my predecessor, Mr. Urquhart thought it not worth his while to go I seldom have so few as fifty and often more than one hundred hearers.

And notwithstanding I have all along discharged the duties of a Parish Minister yet have I never received one penny of the Salary due to me by the laws of the Colony how to come by it I can't tell; and without it or an

augmentation of my Salary from my Right Honble & Right Revd Patrons I cannot live in this dear place. I live very near much below the character of a Missionary and yet am running myself in debt. I am spending my strength & yet cannot get a competency wherefore I humbly beg the Venerable Society will be pleased to consider my condition, it is very necessitous indeed.

But I will trouble you with no more at this time but refer you to the Revd Mr Vesey who I understand is safely arrived in London how I have led my life here and in how mean circumstances I am he can if you'll be pleased to enquire of him very well inform you.

I have no more to add but my most sincere & hearty prayers to the Lord to bless prosper & keep my most honored Patrons and when the time of their departure hence shall come may God who is the rewarder of those who make it their study and delight to enlarge Christ's Kingdom here take 'em to the eternally happy enjoyment of himself in Heaven is the prayer of

Honored Sir &c &c

THOS. POYER.

Jamaica 15th Jany 1716-17

HONORED SIR—My suit at Law for the recovery of my Salary here is as backward as my last gave you an account, so that I have nothing new to add on this head but that one of my lawyers is dead which put a stop to it last Term & what progress will be made in it the next I cannot tell, you shall be acquainted of the proceeding by every opportunity.

The continuance of my troubles (which alas have no prospect of an end) and the tediousness of this lawsuit have almost wearied me out, I find a daily decay in myself thro' the continual fatigue I undergo in this large parish which consists (as I have formerly observed) of Three towns which I serve alternately & how I have discharged my duty to the Souls I am entrusted with is well known to my good God and Great Judge & will I hope be testified by some of my people.

I humbly beg the favour of you to give my most humble duty to my most Honble Patrons & acquaint them that their poor Missionary is labouring under many difficulties & reduced to the want of a great many necessities; two Gowns and Cassocks I have already worn in their service a 3d is worn very

bare and my family wants are so many and pressing that I know not how I shall procure another.

But pray give me leave to assure you that I am not reduced to this necessitous Condition thro' any extravagance in my way of living, 'tis well known to many here Dissenters from us as well as friends to the Church that I am contented to want many necessities the better to be enabled to be hospitable, which is expected from the established Ministers here and which with my being conversant with them hath (I praise God for it) removed the prejudices of some and effectually brought others to us.

But under all my troubles this bears me up and is great comfort that God is so good to me as to continue his Blessing on my endeavours I have lost none but have gained many the number of my hearers consisting of about 400 & Communicants above 3 Score, I have this last week gained two families from the Anabaptists & Quakers and baptized them. Many are often coming over to us and I am assured more would, were there according to their desire a Minister of the Church of England to preach to them in this Town every Lord's day.

But this I leave to the consideration of the Honble Society and hope they will be pleased to consider my necessities and administer a little comfort to me in my troubles.

I pray God to bless guide preserve and keep my most honored Patrons may they be enabled to send out many faithful Labourers into Christ's Vineyard & amply rewarded for all their pious and good deeds. This is what offers at present from

Your most humble Servt
THOS POYER.

Mr. Poyer's appeals to the home authorities for help were backed up by his own people in the following statement which was forwarded to London:

February 6th 1716

We humbly pray leave to lay before our Honble Patrons a true state of the case of the Church here and that as briefly as the nature of the thing will bear.

The Independents here being the most numerous do annually choose the Church Wardens & Vestry out of those of their own persuasion who are the most inveterate against

the Church, every freeholder having a vote by Virtue of an Act of Assembly for settling the Ministry made in the year 1693 in which act there is a clause empowering them to call a Minister, the act also provides that such a Minister shall be inducted & established to entitle him to the Salary of £60 per annum given by the same Act.

Now this Dissenting Vestry & Church Wardens have (as no other could be expected of them) after the death of the Revd Mr Urquhart (who enjoyed the Glebe & Salary undisturbed for about six years) called one Mr Geo: McNish who because of that call has seized upon the Parsonage House & Glebe pretends to all and has actually received some part of said Salary. This call is the only argument on which they insist & on pretence whereof they defraud the rightful minister both of the Glebe and Salary contrary to the known laws and continued practice of all the other places in this Province that stand upon the same foundation. To confute therefore their absurd notion the case may be stated thus. In Feb 1702 the Vestry & Church Wardens (being as always Dissenters) called one Mr Hubbard a Dissenting Minister (one whom some of us have heard declare it a sin to say the Lord's Prayer). In the year 1704 Mr Urquhart was sent here by the Venerable Society & Bishop of London and was immediately inducted and established by the then Governor of this Province the said call given to Mr Hubbard (who never did officiate as Minister of the Parish) being deemed to be invalid because the person called was not qualified to accept & this proceeding of that Governor was declared to be right by another Act of Assembly in 1705 for the better explaining the former Act—Thus in like manner after Mr Urquharts death as is said before they called the said Mr McNish who being a Dissenter like the other not qualified to accept thereof, our present Governor for the reasons aforesaid on the arrival of Mr Poyer immediately caused him to be inducted and established by the Chaplain Mr Sharpe on the 18th day of July 1710 which we think (with submission) makes the matter very clear that the Salary & Glebe can belong to none but him; for the Cure must not lie vacant for want of a call or presentation & not to call at all or to call a person in himself incapable of accepting is all one. And it can never be supposed that the Law intended any other than an Orthodox Minister for if otherwise nothing

but confusion must ensue about the disposal even amongst the Dissenters themselves all having an equal right.

To this false argument of the Church Wardens & Vestry (as well as their principles) may be attributed the many affronts by them at sundry times given to our Minister even to the excluding him from sitting in the Vestry contrary to the Governors express Injunctions from the Crown signified to them.

Yet notwithstanding the imperious behaviour of these our Enemies who stick not to call themselves the Established Church & us Dissenters we can with Joy say the Church hath increased very considerably both in its number of hearers & Communicants by the singular care pain and industry of our present Labourious Minister Mr Poyer who notwithstanding the many difficulties he has struggled with has never been in the least wanting in the due execution of his Ministerial Function but rather on the contrary has strained himself in travelling thro' the Parish even beyond his strength & not seldom to the prejudice of his health which is notorious to all the Inhabitants for almost 7 years last past in all which time he has not received one farthing of his Salary allowed him by the laws of this Province nor any private contributions that by the nicest search we can find out except about £18 (this Country money) which was presented to him by some of his people at his first arrival here purely on the account of the tediousness of his voyage from England & his having with his family been shipwrecked on this island about 100 miles from his parish and at divers times since Gifts on the whole not amounting to Fifty pounds.

A year later Mr. Poyer reported a little progress in spiritual matters, but the situation unchanged in other respects. Writing to London, under date of October 24, 1717, he said:

Jamaica, October 24th, 1717.

The State of the Church in this Parish is much the same as my last gave you an account of saying that I had two new members added to it since, & baptized besides several Infants & some adult persons.

And here I must desire you to pardon me while I acquaint you that I have undergone more trouble in the discharge of my Ministry here than I am able to tell you—for besides

the frequent abuses and affronts I receive from some of the Enemies of our Constitution besides that they make it their constant endeavor to tire me with their ill usage and to starve me as some of the most inveterate among them do sometimes express themselves; the service of the three towns which this Parish consists of bears hard upon me, and affords me as much business as I am able to go through with. I serve them by turns every other Sunday besides frequent Lectures on week days. Now to do this and to visit my people which I am often obliged to who live distant from me many of them about 12 miles, I am necessitated to keep two horses which is very expensive & troublesome to me & consumes me more Clothes in one year than would serve another that is not obliged to ride for 3 or 4. In Newtown & Flushing for want of the convenience of private houses I am forced to make use of Public ones which is a very great charge to me for I bring some of my family generally with me, If I did not they would be the half of the year without opportunities of public Worship.

Mr. McNish held the fort—the house and glebe—until his death, in 1723, but the passing of that doughty antagonist made no difference in Mr. Poyer's worldly prospects. In fact they were worse, for the Presbyterians were actually at law with him for the recovery of the church building, and in this they were finally successful. Tired of it all, Mr. Poyer became anxious to give up the struggle, and wrote a touching letter to London asking to be relieved. The letter was dated June 16, 1731:

By this opportunity I beg leave humbly to represent to my Honble Patrons the Venerable Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts that I have been their Missionary here 21 years & may without incurring the imputation of boasting say that my diligence in the discharge of my functions has been little inferior to any I pray God to give a blessing to the seed sown but so it is that besides the great and almost continual contentions that I have struggled withal amongst the Independents in this parish having had several law suits with them before I could have the Salary which the Country has settled upon the Minister of the Church of England several

other law suits for some Glebe lands which we have lost and at last even the Church itself of which we had the possession 25 years is taken from us by a trial at law (with what justice I can't pretend to say) tho' I say I have endeavored as patiently as I could to bear up under all these trials besides the loss of two Wives & Several children yet the infirmities of old age bear very hard upon me insomuch that I find myself almost unable to officiate at the three towns of Jamaica, Newtown and Flushing as I have hitherto done and which is absolutely necessary for the Minister of the Parish to do.

The intent of these are therefore to beg that my distressed state and condition may be laid before the Venerble Society and that they will be pleased to permit me to quit my Mission and to return to Great Britain as being for the reasons aforegiven not capable of bearing such fatigues and discharging my duty as I have done for so many years in this place. I humbly beg of my most honored patrons to consider my case & circumstances & I remain &c

THOS POYER

His resignation was accepted, but before the arrangements were completed he was called higher and passed away January 15, 1732.

We must now return to the Presbyterian camp. Mr. McNish, broken in health, seems to have either retired from the active work of the ministry a short time before his death or to have obtained leave of absence, for he passed away at Newtown, New Jersey, March 10, 1722. It was under his successor, the Rev. Robert Cross, "an Irish gentleman," Thompson called him, that the crowning victory of the restoration of the old church was won. The dissenters—Presbyterians and Quakers—could not, however, avoid the payment of the salary for the maintenance of the Episcopalian minister, and this salary was paid out of the rates with grumbling and sometimes only after a legal process had been indulged in. The Quakers invariably paid under protest, when they paid at all. The result of the Revolutionary War put a end to all this.

In 1738 the Rev. Walter Wilmot, one of the best beloved of Jamaica's ministers, entered upon his work in the little stone church.

His ministry was spiritually a success, and the historic tabernacle had all it could do to hold the worshippers. Under him the local Presbyterians lost much of the harshness which had come to them as a result of more than a generation of fighting with Friends on the one hand and Episcopalians on the other. They had won the victory and Mr. Wilmot was essentially a man of peace, a man who had taken no part in the warfare and so was better able to heal up the wounds among the laymen, the result of years of friction. He was a native of Southampton and had married a daughter of the Townsend family, a family which had been locally famous for its devotion to the doctrines of the Society of Friends, even before that society was fully organized. She was a devoted Christian and on her marriage openly embraced the Presbyterian views held by her husband. His ministry was destined to be a brief one. Mrs. Wilmot died February 24, 1744, in the twenty-third year of her age, and her husband joined her on the 6th of August following, when in his thirty-fifth year.

Under a succession of ministers and itinerant preachers or students designated as "stated supply," the cause of Presbyterianism barely held its own in Jamaica for a long term of years after Mr. Wilmot passed away. At times the membership fell off greatly, and in 1761 we read that it had but twelve communicants. There were several causes for this. The preachers were, as a rule, able men, but there was continual difficulty in the payment of the stipend, and there were the usual divisions in the congregation itself, so common in the history of Presbyterian societies, which led to schisms of more or less importance. During the Revolution the minister was Matthias Burnet, who was installed in 1775, when in the twenty-sixth year of his age. He seems to have been an amiable but rather a weak brother, had married a lady belonging to an Episcopalian family and was opposed to the Revolutionary movement. It was to his pro-British sentiments, however,

that the little stone church was saved, during the occupation after the Battle of Brooklyn, from the desecration which befel most of the other places of worship on Long Island. When the struggle was ended the feeling against him on the part of the people generally was so intense that he was compelled to resign. He removed after a time to Norwalk, Connecticut, where he accepted fully the views of the Episcopalian body and became rector of one of its churches. We are told, however, that he paid an annual visit to Jamaica, and in 1790 preached to a large congregation in the stone church. That fact is significant as showing how early the first bitterness engendered by the great struggle had passed over—so far as Jamaica was concerned.

The stone church served until 1813, when it was pulled down and a more commodious structure was erected in its place and opened for worship in January, 1814. At that time the Rev. Henry Wood was the pastor.

The English Church, even after it had lost the stone building and turned forever from all thoughts of possessing it again together with the glebe, seemed to wax in strength, slowly, but none the less surely. Its official position was of itself a tower of strength, and the payment of the stipend was about as well assured as anything worldly could be. The Rev. Thomas Colgan, who was the successor to the unfortunate and long-suffering Poyer, and who entered on his duties January 31, 1733, was a much more diplomatic and congenial gentleman. He aimed to make friends all around and to antagonize no one and appears to have succeeded. He seems to have accepted the situation as he found it and began holding services in the building which then served as a court house. The old animosity seemed to die out rapidly, the law-suits ceased, his stipend was paid as the law directed and he slowly built up a congregation. Six weeks after he began his work he was able to report that 200 persons attended his services in Jamaica. The court house soon proved too small for the work, and with quite

an effort, aided by help from New York and elsewhere, the people secured a lot and erected a building for their own use. Under the name of Grace Church it was opened for service April 5, 1734. Governor Cosby and his family attended in state, the military lined the front of the building and the throng was so great that many persons had to be turned away. It was a memorable occasion—one which would have cheered the heart of poor Mr. Poyer beyond measure and set Mr. McNish to measuring out unstintedly the vials of destruction. Many gifts were made to the church, notably a Bible, Prayer Book, surplice and pulpit and communion table cloths by the wife of the Governor. After such an auspicious opening Grace Church flourished. Here are some extracts from Mr. Colgan's letters to the London society which used to get such dolorous reports from Jamaica:

Jamaica Novr 22d 1740

We have yearly for these seven years last past increased in Church Members, so these buildings are generally well filled in time of Divine Service, & the worship of God is duly performed with decency and good order, the several sects which are around us do look upon the Church with a more respectful eye than formerly, there being not wanting either in myself or people any Christian like or prudential means necessary to form a reconciliation & union amongst us, some itinerant enthusiastical teachers, have of late been preaching upon this Island the notorious Mr Whitfield being at the head of them & among other pernicious tenets, have broched such false & erroneous opinions concerning the doctrine of Regeneration as tend to the destruction of true religion & of a holy and virtuous life and therefore I take this opportunity to beg that the Society would be pleased to bestow upon the people of this parish a few of Dr Waterland's pieces on that subject, & of his Lordship the Bishop of London's Pastoral letters upon lukewarmness and enthusiasm.

Jamaica Decemr 15th 1741

However in the mean time be pleased to accept this general account of the State of my Mission there being three Churches belonging to my Cure, that of Jamaica Newtown and

Flushing, I must with a great deal of truth say that not only they are in a growing condition & the members thereof generally of an exemplary life and conversation but that the Church of England here was never in so much credit and reputation among the Dissenters of all sorts as at this day, their opinion concerning her doctrine as well as discipline being vastly more favourable than ever. Enthusiasm has of late been very predominant amongst us but is now in a declining state several of the teachers in that way as well as their hearers being found guilty of the foulest immoral practices and other of them have wrought themselves into the highest degree of madness—these occurrences together with those good books lately sent over by the Society have taught people what the true spirit of Christianity is and what it is not & that it is to be found in a more sober rational Scheme than that delivered to mankind by Mr Whitfield that Arch Enthusiast and his adherents, having nothing more to add but the promise of all due diligence & fidelity in the discharge of all the Offices belonging to my Mission.

Jamaica March 23d. 1743

Our Church here is in a flourishing condition her being depressed of late by those clouds of error & enthusiasm which hung so heavily about her, has in effect tended to her greater illustration & glory.

If the Society would be pleased to order me some small tracts, such as The trial of Mr Whitfield's spirit; An Englishman directed in the choice of his Religion, Bishop Stillingfleet's Unreasonableness of separation &c. I'm your most obt &c.

THOS COLGAN.

Jamaica Sept 29th 1743.

Our Church here was never in so thriving a way as at this time—for it has increased both in number & esteem with those who are without her pale, these eight or ten years last past more than it did for 30 years before being one of the oldest Missions from the Society—This must be an argument with them, that under the benign influence of Heaven and their pious Care & bounty, my faithful endeavours have not been wanting to promote and answer the end & design of my Mission to this place I would further acquaint the Venerable Society that since my last accounts I have baptized 17 persons belonging to 3 fam-

ilies in this parish, consisting of Men Women & children who before were tainted with the corruptions of Anabaptism & Quakerism & have now before me a fair prospect of doing the like good office for others in a little time.

Jamaica Sept 29 1744.

The several Churches belonging to my Cure (as those of Jamaica, Newtown & Flushing) are in a very peaceable & growing state, whilst other separate Assemblies in this Parish are in the utmost confusion & this I can write with a great deal of truth that Independency which has been triumphant in this town for the 40 years last past is now by the providence of God in a very faint & declining condition which gives us hopes that better Principles than such as issue out thence will generally prevail amongst us & that we shall be better united than heretofore.

Jamaica Sept 29th 1746

These are to acquaint the Venerable Society that my endeavours in the work of my Mission are by the blessing of God attended with success a late & remarkable instance whereof we have in the conformity of a Family of good repute in ye Town from Independency to the Doctrine discipline and Government of our Church which considering all circumstances may be thought worthy of notice.

In my letter of the 26 March last I gave information to the Society of our being in a very likely way of having a Church erected in the town of Flushing a place generally inhabited by Quakers & by some who are of no religion at all which indeed has all along from the first settlement of the town been a great obstruction and discouragement to an undertaking of this kind but now by the kind providence of God (who has raised up Friends & money for the purpose) the work is actually begun so that I have hopes of performing divine Service in this new Church in about 3 months time and also that the Society will bestow upon it a Bible & Common Prayer Book according to their usual bounty for certainly there can be no set of People within this Province who are greater objects of the Society's pity & charity than those belonging to the town of Flushing of which I have been so-truly sensible that it has brought me (if I may be permitted thus to express it) to

double my diligence in that place where error & impiety greatly abound nor have I been wanting (thro' the Divine assistance) in the other parts & duties of my Mission for the space of almost one and twenty years to approve myself a faithful Labourer & my trust in God is that I shall continue to approve myself such whilst

Jamaica March 28th, 1749.

I have great hopes that our Church at Flushing will in a little time gain ground among the Quakers who are very numerous there, and it is somewhat remarkable and may be thought worthy of notice, that a man who had for many years strictly adhered to the principles of Quakerism, when that new Church was opened & a collection made he gave money for the use of that Church, but thinking he had not put enough in the Plate, went immediately after service and gave more to the Collector.

Mr. Colgan died in 1755 and then the "dissenters" tried their coup—long famous locally—of at once installing one of their own ministers, Simon Horton, into the vacancy, but Governor Hardy made short work of that and Samuel Seabury, Jr., was inducted to the charge of the three towns. He was not a success by any means, and by 1760 he complained that the communicants in Grace Church were less than 20. Under these circumstances the full amount of his stipend was not forthcoming and the constant attention necessary to keep the church in repair was relaxed with the usual result. With the view of improving matters, Seabury got up the idea of having Grace Church incorporated, and the following document, which explains itself, was drawn up, signed and presented to Cadwallader Colden:

To the Honourable Cadwallader Colden Esq President of his Majestys Council and Commander in Chief of the Province of New York and the Territories depending thereon in America &c

The Petition of the Minister of the Parish of Jamaica & Sundry of the Inhabitants of The Town of Jamaica on Nassau Island Communicants & professors of

the Church of England as by Law Established

MOST HUMBLY SHEWETH

That the Inhabitants of the town of Jamaica: Members & professors of the Church of England as by Law Established: did some years ago by Voluntary contributions Erect & finish a decent & Convenient Church in the Town of Jamaica: for the Celebration of Divine Service according to the use of the Church Of England, but that through the Want of some proper Persons to Superintend the Affairs of the Same: With Legal Authority, the Building is now Considerably out of Repair, and There is Danger Least moneys contributed for the Repair of the Same may be Improperly Applyd to the Detriment of your Petitioners: & Thro' the want of Such Persons it also comes to pass yt Pious & Well Disposed People are Discouraged, in their Designs of Establishing & Erecting proper Funds for the Support Of the Church & its Ministry Your Petitioners Therefore Humbly beg that yr Honour Takeing these things into Consideration Would be Pleasd to Grant us a Charter (Incorporateing such Persons as upon Mature Deliberation shall be found Worthy) with such Privileges & Immunities as in Your Wisdom you shall think Proper And Your Petitioners as in Duty bound Will Ever Pray April the 8th 1761.

SAMUEL SEABURY Jur Minister

Robert Howell

Benjamin Carpenter

John huchiens

John Smith

Jacob Ogden

Joseph Olfield

Joseph Olfield Junr

Jhno Troup

John Comes

Gilbert Comes

Thomas Truxton

Thos Braine

Benj. Whitehead

Samill Smith

William Sherlock

John Innes

Richard Betts.

Isaac Vanhook

Thos Hinchman

Adm Lawrence

The charter was granted, the church was repaired as the result of a subscription which

netted 403 18d. but the people did not flock to Mr. Seabury's ministrations in any greater numbers than before. So he gladly went his way when an opening occurred for him at Westchester, and the Rev. Joshua Bloomer was installed in his stead. Mr. Bloomer commenced his ministry May 23, 1769, and soon was able to announce that his services were well attended—"crowded assemblies who behave with decorum." But the times were sadly out of joint and it was not long before he had some trouble in getting payment of his salary as it fell due. When the crisis came Mr. Bloomer found it necessary to close his church for a few weeks; some of his members were sadly persecuted by order of Congress, several even sent to prison or to Connecticut, but with the victory of August 27, 1776, all went well and the good, loyal minister was again permitted to pray for King George and the royal family without hindrance. In 1778, as a result of a lottery, \$780 was realized for the purchase of a glebe, and with the money a farm of seventy acres was bought about a mile west of Jamaica village. It was not the first time a lottery had come to the aid of Grace Church. By one, in 1747, the bell in its steeple had been bought. The glebe does not seem to have proven a profitable adjunct to the church, and it was offered for sale in 1786. With the cessation of hostilities, Mr. Bloomer seems to have passed over the crisis of the sentiment against everything British undisturbed, and ministered in his three charges until 1790, when he passed to his reward, and his remains were laid in the chancel of Grace Church.

After Mr. Bloomer's death, however, the congregation began to dwindle, although most of the rectors were men of more than ordinary ability. In 1808 the money received at a communion season was only \$234. There is no doubt that the influence and generosity of the King family was the most potent agency in carrying the church through its darkest days, which may be said to have lasted from

1796 until 1815, and the first substantial token of that interest was a gift from Rufus King of real estate in New York sufficient to yield the rector \$500 a year. The same generous hand in 1820 started the movement for the erection of a new church, and as a result the second Grace Church was built and opened for service July 15, 1822. This building served the congregation until January 1, 1861, when it was burned to the ground and to the building which took its place, a beautiful gothic structure of stone, and which was consecrated by Bishop Horatio Potter January 8, 1863, the King family were princely subscribers, while their subsequent gifts were numerous and munificent.

The Dutch Church seemed to have had its beginning in Jamaica in 1702, and for a time its services were held in the little stone building erected by the Presbyterians. For some years the congregation was ecclesiastically attached to the Kings County Consistory, but in 1715 they managed to build one of the little octagon edifices such as the early Dutch congregations delighted in, and tried to get a minister of their own, but they failed to offer enough in the way of inducement and that project slept. Afterward when there were small congregations formed at Newtown, Success and Wolver Hollow further attempts were made to get a clergyman to devote himself to the four, but it was not until 1741 that they succeeded, and the Rev. Johannes Henricus Goetschius settled among them. He and his successors were able men, but they did not attract large congregations somehow and the people did not seem to act as a harmonious unit with regard to them. During the Revolution the church was unceremoniously used by the British as a storehouse, the people were without any stated pastor, but Dominies Rubell and Schoonmaker, of Kings county, visited them at intervals and held services in Grace Church. After the war was over the Rev. Rynier Van Nest became the pastor of the four churches. It was decided, in 1794, to have

half of the services in English, as it was thought that the younger people might wander away, seeing that the tongue of the motherland was thoroughly understood by only a few. But the old Dutch service continued to be a feature and old Dr. Schoonmaker, who was minister of the church when the old building was abandoned, June 23, 1833, delivered the farewell sermon in Dutch, although not over half a dozen could follow his words clearly. The new church, a frame structure, was consecrated July 4, 1833, by which time the octagonal edifice had been demolished. With this change the congregation (it had parted company with the other Reformed Churches in the county) seems steadily to have waxed in strength. The building was burned to the ground on November 19, 1857, but on October 6, 1859, the present tabernacle was opened for worship. It cost over \$20,000.

The Methodist Episcopal body had a congregation in Jamaica in 1784, but it was not until 1810 that they erected a church. The first Roman Catholic Church, St. Monica's, was erected in 1839 and the first Baptist Church in 1869. In 1873 the German Reformed Church was erected.

From the consecration of churches we pass easily as a corollary to the God's acre, where the fathers of the village sleep. There are several of these in Jamaica township, notably that at Springfield and the quaint Hebrew cemetery at Woodhaven, but the oldest of them all is that in Jamaica village. It was first set aside—to the extent at least of ten rods square—in 1668 and with considerable additions has been used since then, although the oldest existing stones bear such comparatively recent dates as 1732 and 1737. It has been much beautified in recent years and the chapel at its gateway, the Chapel of the Sisters, built by Nicholas Ludlam, of New York, in 1857, in memory of his daughters, is an attractive piece of architecture. In Jamaica village also the Roman Catholic, Methodist and Protestant Episcopal Churches each have their

grounds "sacred for the resting place of their dead." In the ground of the last named is the grave of Rufus King and of many of the other members of that famous family.

At first, as might be expected, agriculture and hunting were the two industries of Jamaica most generally followed, the two industries in which the early settlers found their employment and their amusement. It was not long, however, before the area of industry was widened. In 1663 John Ouldfield, at a town meeting, was voted a home lot and twenty acres of meadow land on which to settle and pursue his occupation—that of a tanner. He was admonished to stick strictly and constantly to his trade and to take care only to produce good leather. How he behaved himself after "getting in" we are not told, but as the eyes of the leaders of the community were upon him it is very likely that he fully met their views. In 1669 the settlers offered James Hubbard, of Gravesend, ground on which to erect a mill, but he preferred to remain in Lady Moody's bailiwick. Benjamin Coe, however, fell in with the offer in the following year and the people agreed to build a dam for the mill which he agreed to erect and work. It was part of the agreement that in return for the lot and the other bounties conferred upon him, he should grind the corn of the townspeople in preference to that of strangers on days to be mutually agreed. Mr. Coe carried out his part of the agreement so well that they added ground for a grist mill. The milling business after a time fell into the hands of Joseph Carpenter and Caleb Carman on the same terms as Coe had received and which did not pan out very well with him, but whether owing to his incompetency or neglect history sayeth not. The new firm, however, were also allowed to erect a saw mill and were to be permitted to feed it from the common lands of the township under a few restrictions pertaining to growing trees. Their work according to the peculiar ideas of the time was to be done cheaper for the townspeople than

for others, but even toward outsiders they were not permitted to make extravagant charges. This arrangement seems to have proved eminently satisfactory all around. Milling privileges were awarded in 1685 to Benjamin Coe and John Hansen, but there is no record as to how Coe profited in this venture by his first experience. There is also a record of half an acre of land being voted to a cooper on condition that he work at his trade, build a home "and supply the town with such cooper's work as they shall stand in need of." In 1704 permission was given to Jonathan Whitehead and Benjamin Thurston to establish a fulling mill to "full [shrink] all kinds of cloth, press the same for three pence the yard, and to full for the townspeople before other townspeople." For a long time the milling industry in Jamaica was a most important one, but little has been heard of it in recent years.

In 1676 the first record of a local school appears in the record, for in that year Richard Jones was given the use of the little stone church "for to teach scoule in for ye yere ensuing, provided he keep ye windowes from breaking and keep it deasent and cleane on Saturday nights against ye Lord's Day and seats to be placed in order." How Brother Jones fared and how long he kept "scoule" is not stated. Nine years later mention is made of a girls' school kept by "Goody" Davis. In 1705 Henry Lindley was licensed by Governor Cornbury to teach school in Jamaica and a similar authority was conferred in the same year on Thomas Huddleston. The ministers of the Church of England generally were in receipt of small grants from the London Society for the Propagation of the Gospel to provide teaching facilities, but the amount was never, in the case of Queens county, sufficient to secure more than temporary service. Thus the Rev. Mr. Poyer complains, in 1724, that while there were schools in Jamaica, Newtown and Flushing, they were taught by Quakers or Presbyterians. A public meeting was called in 1726 to consider the possibility of estab-

lishing a free school, but nothing came of it, probably owing to theological differences. Still the educational facilities of Jamaica seem to have been ample at all times, and several of the teachers, such as James Lockhart, Thomas Temple and John Moore, all pre-Revolutionary schoolmasters, were men of more than ordinary education. In 1777 Andrew Wilson opened a grammar school, and in 1784 the Rev. Matthias Burnet, the Presbyterian minister, opened a private school, in which he proposed to teach Latin and Greek, and for which he had engaged "a person" to teach the common branches, writing, book-keeping, vulgar arithmetic and the like. The opening, in 1791, of Union Hall Academy led the way to other schemes of higher education. The history of that institution has already been referred to. In 1812 the common-school system of the state superseded all private enterprises to a great extent and put all the primary schools in the commonwealth within a short time on a standard basis. Still even under that system, as it progressed, much was due to the work and intelligence of local teachers and superintendents, and in this regard we must recall the work of Henry Onderdonk, Jr., who was the first superintendent of common schools under the law passed in 1844.

Jamaica has never figured much in the outside world. The General Assembly of the Province of New York met in the village in 1702 and again in 1753, and in 1790 it received a visit from George Washington, who seemed to have been fully satisfied with his reception and his entertainment. The village received a charter in 1814 and an additional patent of the same class in 1855. The town meetings were held at first in the meeting house, which has been generally spoken of as the stone church, but afterward when that place became the Episcopalian sanctuary they were held in the court house. That building was torn down by the British troops in 1777 for military reasons, and from that time until 1858 they were convened at various inns and public houses.

In 1858 a town hall was erected on Herriman street, near Fulton street—a wooden two-story structure, inconvenient and dangerous. It served its purpose, however, until 1870, when the present town hall was completed and was then converted into dwellings.

In 1827, so far as the records show, the first made road in Jamaica was laid out, and it was followed by several others, but it is not likely that any of these early highways are still used and their original boundaries are not now exactly determinable. In 1786 the people in town meeting decreed that no hogs should be permitted to roam about the streets, and we see plenty of other evidences of a desire to improve the amenity of the town much earlier than was the case in many other Long Island villages. It was not until 1830, however, that the township was divided into ten road districts, and a systematic effort made at their improvement and maintenance.

While Jamaica was in all moral respects quite a clean community, yet the people seemed to be at all times in a condition to punish such evil doers as might turn up among them. The early town meetings were liberal in their scale of fines for contraventions of local laws and a significant appointment was that of whipper, to which office Joseph Prue was appointed in 1772. His work, it is true, lay principally among negroes, but still he stood ready to suitably admonish any one the law thought deserving of such treatment. In those early days theft was a capital offense, and as late as 1782 we read of two unfortunates—William Guthrie and Joseph Alexander—being hanged at Jamaica for stealing from a farmer at Cow Neck. But hanging was too expensive a luxury to be indulged in by a country town like Jamaica. Such corrective agencies as the lock-up or cage, or even the stocks, were much more in vogue. In fact as late as 1808 new stocks were ordered to be erected.

When the Revolution was over, the red-coats gone and peace had been proclaimed, Ja-

maica celebrated the result with huzzas and ovations and feasting, and then quietly settled down to the even tenor of its days. Of course, it felt remotely the trend of the outside world, it had a revèrent funeral procession when the news reached it that George Washington was no more, and it felt a revival of the old patriotic thrill when the news came in 1812 that war with Britain was again on; it was stirred to its depths around each election time, but such flurries soon passed over and left little trace. Its splendid fishing in Jamaica Bay seems to have attracted few adventurous spirits and the islands which dot that inland sea, and which were included in the boundaries of the township, were untenanted and unknown. It had its newspapers—the Long Island Farmer was started by Henry C. Sleight in 1819, and the Long Island Democrat first saw light at Jamaica in 1835,—and these in a measure supplied the news of their day and more or less sage comment and communication was kept up with the outside world by means of lumbering stages, which run on the schedule time which was formulated each trip by the caprice and in accordance with the temper of the driver.

A revival, the great modern revival, set in in 1837, when the Brooklyn & Jamaica Railroad was opened. With that came, slowly at first but surely, wondrous changes. The once famous plank road of 1854 has already been spoken of, and other road improvements were soon in vogue. By and by the horse car supplemented the service of the railroad, but the advent of the trolley and the introduction of something like rapid transit by the railroad brought the old village nearer and nearer, as it were, to Brooklyn.

As the means of transit increased the land boomers began to turn their attention in the direction of Jamaica, especially after it began to be understood that the elevated railroad system of Brooklyn was certain, sooner or later, to be extended there. Under their manipulation such places as Dunlin, Richmond Hill,

Woodlawn, Clarenceville, Morris Park, Woodhull Park and half a dozen settlements were opened up and the lots disposed of with remarkable celerity. Even the old pre-Revolutionary village of Springfield—a place in fact not many years the junior of Jamaica village itself—felt the impulse of the change, and Woodhaven, founded in 1836 by John R. Pitkin, talked confidently of extending its manufactories. In 1863 Messrs. Lalance & Grosjean entered upon the manufacture of agate ware in an old factory building and extended the business so rapidly that in 1870 it was necessary to organize a joint stock company to operate and control it. The capital stock was fixed at \$500,000 and the operations grew steadily year by year. In 1876 its buildings were destroyed by fire, but the calamity in the long run really helped the corporation, for the old structures were at once replaced with modern buildings, in which the most advanced appliances were introduced. The goods made by this establishment are now to be found all over the country.

Queens, another of Jamaica's suburbs, has also felt the impulse of the modern movement, and has gradually been opened up to settlement. It still, however, retains much of its primitive agricultural aspects, although in the recent railroad changes which have been discussed it seems likely that Queens will, more than all the outlying portions of the old township, receive its share of the material prosperity so confidently anticipated.

Just as these lines were being penned a telegram brought the news of the death of one of the most devoted citizens of Jamaica—ex-Governor Richard C. McCormick—at his home, 88 Herriman avenue, in that village. In this work he took a deep interest, made many valuable suggestions and promised to aid it from his rich stores of Long Island historical data. He was a most enthusiastic student of county history and had gathered together a valuable library containing published volumes of local history from all over the country, for,

as he said, in such works the real story of the nation and its people is to be found. In conversation with the writer a few weeks before his death he told the story of the now forgotten movement to erect at Jamaica a statue of General Nathaniel Woodhull and regretted that that grand hero was apparently forgotten in the region where he was best known and where he gave up his life for his country.

Both the political and the business career of Governor McCormick were anything but commonplace. In recent years he had been engaged in mining operations, with offices at 1 Broadway, New York, but in earlier life he was active as a Republican, and had the confidence of such men as General Grant, Zachariah Chandler, and William H. Seward. This was considered somewhat remarkable, as he married a daughter of one of the most distinguished Democratic statesmen of the day, Allen G. Thurman, of Ohio.

Mr. McCormick was born in New York City on May 23, 1832, and was descended from several old Long Island families. He was elected Trustee of Public Schools for the Eleventh Ward in 1858, and two years later was a member of the Republican State Committee, taking an active part in the campaign of that year in support of Lincoln, as he had in the canvass four years previously, when General Fremont was his party's candidate. He was made Chief Clerk of the United States Department of Agriculture in 1862, and a year later became Secretary of the Territory of Arizona. So well did he attend to the duties of this office that in 1866 he was appointed Governor of the Territory by President Johnson, and at once set about placing the people in a better condition for defending themselves against the hostile Apaches. It was on his advice that General Crook was sent to this section.

Governor McCormick served three terms as a delegate in Congress from Arizona, and declined a fourth nomination in order to accept the appointment of Commissioner to the

Centennial Exposition. He was appointed Assistant Secretary of the United States Treasury in 1877, and Commissioner General to the Paris Exposition in 1878. Returning to New York and settling in Jamaica, he devoted himself to promoting the large mining enterprises with which he had become identified. He was President and Director of the Boreel Mining Company and the Small Hopes Consolidated Mining Company, a Director of the Leadville Consolidated Mining Company, and a Trustee of the Citizens' Savings Bank. He served a term in Congress from the First

New York District, taking his seat on March 4, 1895.

During Governor McCormick's stay in Arizona he kept Secretary Seward informed as to Maximilian's movements in Mexico. He was one of the founders of the Long Island Historical Society and the author of "Arizona: Its Resources," and of several other works, and was a member of the Union League Club, the American Geographical Society, and of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion. He was also a Commander of the Legion of Honor of France.



CHAPTER XLVII.

LONG ISLAND CITY.

A LOOSE AGGREGATION—ANNEKE TANS—CAPTAIN PRAA—LONG ISLAND RAILROAD'S
TERMINUS—ASTORIA AND ITS NAMESAKE—GRANT THORBURN—
HELL GATE—A PICTURESQUE MAYOR.

IN May 27, 1870, Governor Hoffman signed the bill which took away part of Newtown from that ancient township, including some of its most thriving villages, and incorporated it into a distinct municipality under the title of Long Island City. Such a union had been agitated for several years, mainly since the terminus of the Long Island Railroad had been established for good at Hunter's Point, and the concentration there of a large population seemed inevitable in the not very distant future. But it is difficult now to see what was to be gained by taking a section of territory with several villages widely separated from each other and having little in common and dubbing it a city. It was hardly a political measure; it seemed rather a move on the part of the people, headed by Father Crimmin, of St. Mary's, Hunter's Point; the wealthy residents were opposed to it and with reason, for there was not even a city treasury in sight and the imposition of city taxes on a sparsely settled community meant a startling increase. That increase it was urged would keep manufactures from coming to the section and would result in an increase of assessments on real estate without any increase in the actual market value of the property. From a financial standpoint there was nothing to be said in favor of the change, and the events which

followed from the signing of the bill of incorporation until the later bill was signed which wiped the city out of existence amply justified all the arguments against it. It became in its consolidated state a prey to the machinations of the local politicians, its treasury was ever empty, its police force was never adequate, its educational system was deficient; the taxation was increased without adequate return, the several sections incorporated by law did not incorporate in reality, except in the Hunter's Point section, the expected tremendous increase in population did not materialize, transit throughout the section was slow and uncertain until 1890, when the trolley began its work; and when consolidation took effect Long Island City was the weakest point in the aggregation which made up the Greater New York. Its most noteworthy feature was a bonded indebtedness of \$3,849,000, on some of which interest was paid at the rate of seven per cent. The Long Island Railroad had done its work well in spite of local political opposition. It had built up a vast terminal depot, brought the place into close and frequent communication with Manhattan Island and made it a place of entry in reality for the business of Long Island; but the city itself failed to take advantage of its opportunity and became more noted for the antics of its politicians, its local "statesmen," than for aught else.

The localities incorporated into Long Island City were Astoria, Hunter's Point, Ravenswood, Dutch Kills, Blissville and Middletown and several small settlements, while the two Brother and Berrian Islands were thrown in for variety. The city had a splendid stretch of water front from Newtown Creek to Bowery Bay, but although settlement was early effected within its borders it never had any history worth writing about except that which comes from the stories and traditions of the old families who built it up and the more or less straggling communities of which it was composed. These communities may now be considered in detail.

Governor Kieft seems to have given patents to many settlers for lands along the water front from a farm at Hell Gate to an Englishman named William Hallet to another at a point overlapping Newtown Creek at the other end of the territory now under consideration which was given to Everardus Bogardus, the first minister or dominie of New Amsterdam, and from that fact the point was named Dominie's Hook. The property stood in the name of the dominie when he went down into the waters off the Welsh coast in 1647, along with Governor Kieft himself, in the wreck of the "Princess." His widow, the still famous Aneke Jans, secured a fresh patent for the point from Governor Stuyvesant, and it was purchased from her heirs in 1697 by Captain Peter Praa, whose descendants, along with those of Aneke, have enjoyed many a most exciting hunt after mythical real estate, to the enjoyment of the public and the enrichment of the lawyers. Peter Praa (or Pratt) was a Huguenot, and came here from Dieppe, France, in 1659. He appears to have been a man of means, for soon after his arrival he bought a bouwery at Gowanus. He died in 1663. His son, Captain Peter Praa, the purchaser of the Dominie's Hook, was born at Leyden in 1655, and therefore was but a child when he came here. He developed into one of the largest land owners in the vicinity,

owning vast tracts in Bushwick and elsewhere as well as extending his original purchase of the Dominie's Hook by much additional territory on the water front as well as inland. He died in 1740. One of his daughters, Annetie, had married William Bennet, and died some years before him, leaving a young family, and to these children Captain Praa bequeathed the Dominie's Hook property. Thus in course of time its popular name became Bennet's Hook. One of the family, Jacob Bennet, bought up the entire interest in the estate of the other heirs and at his death bequeathed it to his daughter Anne, wife of Captain George Hunter. She died in 1833, leaving the property, which by that time had again changed its name to Hunter's Point, to her children. The last of these to reside on the family homestead was Jacob Hunter, who died in New York City in 1875.

It is noticeable that some of the deeds in the early part of the last century conveying lots at Hunter's Point call it Long Island City. It continued to be a straggly, dreary, poverty-stricken place, with few settlers and these of the poorest class, until the Long Island Road, because it could not make the necessary arrangements in Brooklyn, selected it as the main terminus of the road. Since then it has steadily increased in population, and as the First Ward of Long Island City it rapidly assumed the lead in the destinies of that now happily departed shade. Railway and manufacturing interests have steadily built up its population and added to its material resources, most of which, however, were mercilessly squandered by political intriguers.

The Second Ward of Long Island City, Blissville, was founded by Nezhiah Bliss, the patriarch of Greenpoint; but it really calls for little mention, not having yet fulfilled the ambitious hopes once held as to its future. At all events, it has not yet felt the upward movement which the advent of the Greater City has brought to so many other outlying places. Its history has yet to be written. It formed

part of the old Dutch Kills section, and was a corner of the old dominic's farm.

With Ravenswood, which became the Third Ward of the city, we find better material for historical study. This is certainly one of the prettiest "bits" in the whole of Greater New York, and as a residential neighborhood it has been a favorite from the beginning of the nineteenth century. In the first edition of his "History of Long Island," issued in 1838, Thompson says: "The site is sufficiently elevated to afford the most charming view of the adjacent country and possesses charms which almost equal some descriptions in eastern romance. The situation will hardly suffer by comparison with the beautiful scenery of the Thames at Windsor. Already several houses have been completed and others are in course of erection. In the vicinity are the valuable farms of the corporation of New York, upon which buildings have been constructed for the accommodation of more than 500 orphan children who are maintained at its expense." Grant Thorburn, the noted Scotch florist of Astoria, whose seed store in New York was long one of the landmarks of the city, describes his sensations when, once passing this institution, he saw 600 children enjoying themselves. But the enterprise, or benevolence, or whatever it may be called, did not continue for many years. Its ultimate fate created quite a riot. In French's Gazetteer of New York we read: "About 1834-5 the corporation of New York City erected extensive buildings about one and one-half miles south from Astoria for a pauper establishment, which were sold at public auction April 15, 1847, upon the removal of these institutions to the islands in the river. Three large buildings, called the 'Boys' Nursery,' 'School-house' and 'Infants' Nursery,' the property of William W. Miles, were leased May 25, 1847, to the Commissioners of Emigration for a ship fever hospital and other purposes. A public meeting was held immediately thereafter at Astoria to express indignation at the

appropriation of the property to these uses and to remonstrate against it. The people failing to obtain their object, the premises were assailed and destroyed on the night of May 26-27 by a mob in disguise. An attempt was made to fasten the expense of these losses upon the town, and after repeated efforts the owner recovered \$3,000 from the State by act of March 15, 1855." With this threatened discord out of the way, Ravenswood resumed its quiet and dignified serenity, and many fine villas were erected within its neighborhood from time to time. It still retains its old description as a residential quarter, although business and manufacturing requirements are beginning to make inroads upon its domain. It was long, however, the aristocratic section of Long Island City. In 1849 St. Thomas's Episcopal Church was organized, and since then most of the social life of Ravenswood has revolved around that little tabernacle.

Steinway, the principal settlement in the Fifth Ward, was laid out in 1872 by the famous firm of New York piano-makers. There they erected a splendid suite of buildings for their own uses and around these buildings the little village of Steinway was soon built up. It has now an estimated population of 1,500, and several other enterprises are carried on in it, while its beautiful situation on Long Island Sound has made it attractive to hundreds of home-seekers. It is a thriving place in every way and will likely undergo many important developments before many years pass by.

Astoria, which became the Fourth Ward of the city, was long the most populous and most popular village within it. It was incorporated as a village in 1836, and at that time its name was changed from Hallett's Cove. The name originally proposed was the old Indian one of Sunswick, still kept alive in the name of a creek, but one of the men prominent in the matter of the incorporation, Mr. Stephen A. Halsey, suggested that if it were named in honor of John Jacob Astor he might pay for the foundation of a female seminary

which was to be one of the features of the new village. Mr. Halsey spoke as one having authority. He had been engaged in the fur trade for many years, was intimately acquainted with Mr. Astor, and it was supposed possessed much influence with him. But Mr. Astor was not exactly the man to be caught with such chaff, and when approached on the subject rather threw cold water on the matter by saying there was already a city named Astoria and one was enough. However, Mr. Halsey persevered, Astoria became the name, and Mr. Astor contributed \$100 to the institution which it was expected he would erect and maintain. Mr. Astor was a liberal enough giver according to his lights, but the race of modern benefactors had not then arisen.

Hallet's Cove received its name from William Hallet, an Englishman, who got a patent for a tract of land of 160 acres at Hell Gate from Governor Kieft. In 1655 his home was destroyed by Indians, and he was glad to escape to Flushing, of which place Stuyvesant appointed him sheriff. However, he did not hold that office long when the Governor deposed him for entertaining a traveling preacher from Rhode Island. When the trouble had blown over he returned to his property at Hell Gate, and afterward added more acres by purchase from the Indians until he owned pretty much all of the coastline from Sunswick Creek round to about where Steinway now is. Anneke Jans also managed to get a slice of real estate near by. She seemed to know how to manage to secure choice parcels of land better than any of her contemporaries, and she certainly managed to hold on to what she got. Bit by bit several farmers settled in the district, and in 1753 Captain Jacob Blackwell and Joseph Hallock built and operated a mill at the mouth of Sunswick Creek, on its right bank. Around the mill a small colony gradually sprung up. Possibly there was not when the Revolution broke out over half a dozen houses altogether, but behind lay a thriving colony of prosperous farmers. One evidence of this

is found in the fact that in 1762 an English and classical school was established at Hallet's Cove, while thirteen of the near-by farmers were willing to board one or more of the scholars at a yearly rate of \$45. But the institution did not last long, and Hallet's Cove resumed its sleep.

With the War of 1812 the sleep was broken. Large parties of experts visited the cove with the view of surveying its importance as a defensive position, covering as it could the approach from the Sound through Hell Gate to New York. One of the results of this survey was the erection of Fort Stevens. But the flurry was soon over, although its effects were of incalculable benefit to Hallet's Cove. The many fine, even romantic, sites suitable for residential purposes which surrounded it had become known, and many New York merchants secured choice plots in the neighborhood. But the most noted of the new arrivals was General Ebenezer Stevens, for whom Fort Stevens had been named. A member of the famous Boston Tea Party, a hero of two wars and a popular man in social life, his advent would have caused a stir in any community and would have been the occasion of a warm welcome. Such he found in Hallet's Cove. He built a splendid home on an eminence just opposite the northern extremity of Blackwell's Island, and gave the name of Mount Bonaparte to his property.

Mr. Henry Whittemore, the well-known Long Island historian and genealogist, gives the following interesting record of the family of this hero and his achievements in "The Heroes of the Revolution," a work of great value and research:

John Austin Stevens, the founder and first President of the Society, comes of a line of distinguished New England ancestors, who have been prominent in Church and State affairs for two hundred years.

Erasmus Stevens, the first of the family mentioned in this line, appears in 1714 as one of the founders of the New North Church in Boston. He had a son, Ebenezer (1).

Ebenezer Stevens (1), son of Erasmus Stevens, was probably born in Boston. He lived in Roxbury, where he married Elizabeth Wild. They had a son, Ebenezer (2).

Major-General Ebenezer Stevens, of the War of the Revolution, son of Ebenezer and Elizabeth (Wild) Stevens, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, August 22, 1751. He was an ardent patriot, and led the famous "Tea Party," 1773, in disposing of the obnoxious cargo by "committing it to the deep." He made little effort at disguise, being recognized by the officers of one of the ships. He soon afterward removed to Rhode Island, where he raised two companies of artillery and one of artificers, and was commissioned Lieutenant, May 8, 1775, and took part in the expedition against Quebec. He joined Henry Knox's regiment of artillery, was made a Captain on January 11, 1776, and on November 9, following, was brevetted Major. He commanded the artillery at Ticonderoga and Stillwater. As senior officer of this arm of defense in the northern department, he directed the artillery operations in the encounters which led to the defeat and surrender of Burgoyne, and soon after received a brevet commission as Lieutenant-Colonel, with a special resolution of thanks from the Continental Congress, for merit as Commandant of the Artillery of the Northern Department in the campaigns of 1776-7. He was at this time in the Massachusetts line. On April 30, 1778, he was commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel and transferred to Colonel John Lamb's regiment of the New York line, in which he served to the end of the war. He was entrusted with the defenses of the Hudson River, and had chains and other obstructions placed across the river to prevent the ships of the enemy from ascending. In 1781 he prepared a train of artillery for the southern service and was selected by General Lafayette to accompany him on his expedition to Virginia.

Owing to impaired health he returned home for a time, but after a brief respite he was commissioned by General Knox to prepare the artillery force which was to operate against Cornwallis. This was collected and transported from West Point, Philadelphia and Baltimore, and played an important part in the final siege which led to the surrender of Cornwallis. This completed his active service, though he continued his command till the army was finally disbanded. It is believed

that no officer of his grade in the army rendered more arduous, various and important services than Colonel Stevens, and his characteristic energy, courage and perseverance gave assurance that, had the opportunity occurred, he would have signalized himself in a manner worthy of his patriotism and his ambition.

After the Revolution he started in business in New York, and without any previous experience, but relying on his own prudence and foresight, he met with extraordinary success and became one of the leading merchants of New York City. As agent of the War Department he constructed the fortifications upon Governor's Island in 1800. In 1812 he was commissioned Major-General of the State Militia, and with Morgan Lewis mustered for active service against the British, in September, 1814, at the time of an anticipated attack upon the city. He resigned his command in 1815 and withdrew from all public employment. He married, first, in 1775, Rebecca Hodgson, of Boston. In 1784 he married Lucretia, widow of Richardson Sands, a daughter of John Ledyard and sister of Colonel William Ledyard, the hero of Fort Groton. By his first wife, Rebecca Hodgson, he had issue three children, viz.: Horatio Gates, George, Rebecca (married John P. Schermerhorn). By his second wife he had Byam, William, Henry K., Samuel, Dr. Alexander H., John Austin, and Mary, wife of Frederick W. Rhineland, Esq.

John Austin Stevens, Sr., was born in New York City January 22, 1795, died October 19, 1874. He was graduated at Yale in 1843; entered mercantile life and became a partner in his father's business in 1818. He was for many years Secretary of the New York Chamber of Commerce, and was one of the organizers and the first President of the Merchants' Exchange. From its first establishment, in 1839, till 1860, he was President of the Bank of Commerce. He was chairman of the Committee of Bankers of New York, Boston and Philadelphia, which first met in August, 1861, and decided to take \$50,000,000 of the Government 7-30 loan. They subsequently advanced \$100,000,000 more, and the terms of the transaction were arranged chiefly by Mr. Stevens, as the head of the treasury note committee. His advice was frequently sought by the officers of the Treasury Department during the Civil War.

John Austin Stevens, Jr., the first President

and one of the incorporators of the Society Sons of the American Revolution, son of John Austin Stevens, Sr., was born in New York City January 23, 1827; was graduated at Harvard in 1846, engaged in mercantile business in New York, and in 1862 was elected Secretary of the New York Chamber of Commerce, continuing in office six years. He was librarian of the New York Historical Society, and devoted himself to the investigation of topics of American History. He founded and for many years edited the Magazine of American History. He was the author of numerous works, among which were "The Valley of the Rio Grande; its Topography and Resources" (New York, 1864); "Memorial of the New York Chamber of Commerce on Steam Navigation" (1864); "Colonial Records of the New York Chamber of Commerce" (1867), containing illustrations and biographical and historical sketches; "The Progress of New York in a Century" (1876); "The Expedition of Lafayette Against Arnold," published by the Maryland Historical Society (Baltimore, 1878), and other works.

General Stevens' eldest son married the daughter of Albert Gallatin, Secretary of the Treasury under Jefferson and Madison, and that venerable statesman died in the home on Mount Bonaparte in 1849. By the middle of the century quite a number of manufactories had located around Hallet's Cove, which had become quite a village. In 1828 St. George's Episcopalian Church was founded, and in 1834 a meeting-house was erected for the use of the Presbyterian and Dutch Reformed congregations. In 1837 the once famous female institute was founded. The Rev. Alexander H. Bishop was installed in 1840 as minister of the Dutch Church, and the Presbyterians, having given up their interest in the building, erected jointly, it was given over to the sole use of the new pastor. The Presbyterians worshipped in the district school-house until 1846, when they entered a new church they had built, and chose the Rev. F. G. Clark as their pastor.

About the middle of the last century Astoria became noted for its nurseries and gar-

dens, the leader in that business being Grant Thorburn, whose grounds were once the most extensive of any devoted to the raising of garden seeds to be found in the country. Thorburn's gardens were near the river,—the Sohmer piano factory now stands on part of the property, and he himself was postmaster of Hallet's Cove for some time, and assisted in the organization of the Reformed Dutch Church in 1839. A useful man, the founder of a local industry and one who made a considerable mark in the world of letters, it is worth while to recall the salient features of Thorburn's career before he became connected with Astoria.

In the "Statistical Account of Scotland," vol. I, page 495, is the following brief notice:

"Mr. Grant Thorburn, seedsman, New York, the original 'Lawrie Tod,' though a native of Newbattle parish, where he was born on the 18th of February, 1773, lived in Dalkeith from his childhood until he sailed for New York on the 13th of April, 1794. He is a man of great piety and worth, though of a remarkably lively and eccentric character. He visited Dalkeith in 1834, when he published his "Autobiography," which he dedicated with characteristic singularity and elegance to Her Grace the Duchess of Buccleuch."

It did not suit the purpose for Mr. Peter Steele, the gifted schoolmaster who in 1844 wrote these words, to give any indication of Thorburn's career in Scotland. Political feeling then ran very high and political resentment was very bitter, and the teacher could not, had he so inclined, say a word commendatory of Thorburn's early life without bringing upon his own head the ill will of the Buccleuch family and its adherents. So like a canny Scot he acted the part of the Highlandman's parrot, which "thocht a guid deal and said naething ava." Thorburn learned from his father the trade of a nail-maker, and became quite an expert at it long before his apprenticeship was past. Like most of the Scottish workmen of the time,—a time when the old order of things

was fast changing and the governing powers tried to quell the popular advance and the popular aspirations with trials for treason, sedition and the like,—Thorburn became deeply interested in politics, and in Dalkeith was prominent among those who advocated Parliamentary reform and a generous concession to the claims of the people to a voice in the conduct of affairs. The result was that when opportunity offered he was arrested for treason, and after a short time in prison was released on bail. This arrest made him a marked man and blocked any prospect of his making his way in the world, so, believing that the star of freedom blinked bonnily across the sea in the new republic which had thrown off the yoke of the same Parliament he had protested against, Thorburn left Scotland, and, settling in New York, tried to earn his living at his trade of nail-making. It, however, did not promise much for the future, and in 1801 he started in business as a grocer at 20 Nassau street. "He was there," writes Walter Barrett, "some ten or twelve years, and then he moved to No. 22, and about the time of his removal, in 1810, he changed his business and kept garden seeds and was a florist. He established a seed-raising garden at Newark, but it proved unsuccessful, and thereafter he confined his attention to his business in New York and acquired considerable means." In 1825 he secured land and opened his garden in Astoria, where he built a home for himself.

From the beginning of his American career almost Thorburn became known for his kindly heart, and he did much practical good in a quiet way, not only among his countrymen, but among all deserving people whose needs touched his sympathy or aroused his compassion. For many years his store in Liberty street was not only a lounging place for the merchants who bought flowers, but for the practical gardeners who grew them, and his place became a sort of clearing house for the horticulturists in the city, and every Scotch gardener who arrived in New York from the

old country made Thorburn's place his headquarters until he found employment, and hundreds used to say that the advice and information they received from him at that critical stage in their careers were of the most incalculable value to them through life. In 1854 Mr. Thorburn in a sense retired from business and returned to Astoria. From there he moved to Winsted, Connecticut, and finally to New Haven, Connecticut, where he died in 1863.

Mr. Thorburn possessed considerable literary tastes, and under the *nom de plume* of "Lawrie Tod" wrote in his later years at frequent intervals for the "Knickerbocker Magazine" and other periodicals. He gave to John Galt much of the information which that genius incorporated in his story of "Lawrie Tod; or, Settlers in the New World," and his published books of reminiscences, notably his "Forty Years' Residence in America" and "Fifty Years' Reminiscences of New York," still form interesting reading. So, too, does a now scarce volume published in 1848, under the title of "Lawrie Tod's Notes on Virginia, with a Chapter on Puritans, Witches and Friends." This book is one of those contributions to American social history which will become of more value as time speeds on, although its importance will be more appreciated by the student than by the general reader.

Until the incorporation of Astoria as a village it progressed on somewhat slow yet eminently satisfactory lines. In fact, it was regarded as prosperous. After incorporation it progressed more rapidly. The "horse" ferry gave way to a steamer in 1839, and in 1853 a gas company was organized and many other improvements were introduced. Its advantages as a residential village were kept well before the people and every inducement was offered to people likely to become good citizens to settle. It was a quiet, orderly community, a home community, a law-abiding, peaceful community; and even after the formation of Long Island City, of which it became a ward, when other parts of the township

were offering protection to blacklegs and swindlers, when the liquor dealers united openly to defy the law, when it was loudly boasted that in Long Island City a man might even defy the law and escape justice, Astoria held aloof from the maelstrom of license and crime and pursued the even tenor of her way, conscious that if other members of the family had thrown open their doors to crime she at least had preserved her name unsullied. But it cannot be said that her incorporation with Long Island City proved for Astoria's benefit; how she will fare in the Greater New York still remains to be seen.

An event which for a time attracted the attention of the entire country, and indeed of the scientific world, to Long Island City was the blowing up of Hell Gate so as to provide a clear channel for navigation. This event belongs to the annals of Astoria because the main obstructions destined to be removed lay off her shore line and the operations were directed from headquarters established in her territory. The wonderful story of that great engineering enterprise has been so often fully told that there is little need of plunging into the details in these pages. Suffice it to say that the work was begun in 1870 by the United States Government and placed under the direction of General Newton. For six years the work progressed, and after some minor obstructions had been removed every effort was directed to the destruction of Hallet's Reef, the most dangerous in the whole passage. A shaft had been sunk and passageways cut out in the interior of the rock until its whole extent was opened up. Into holes drilled into these passageways 52,206½ pounds of dynamite and other explosives were inserted, a network of electric wires connected the whole with a series of batteries on shore, and these again were controlled by a single wire operated by a button. The work was pronounced complete, and on Saturday, September 23, 1876, water was let into all the passageways and on the following day the little

daughter of General Newton touched the button and in two seconds Hallet's Reef was a mass of broken rock. The whole scheme had worked to perfection, almost exactly according to the schedule of the engineers. Flood Rock was afterward destroyed in the same way and several smaller obstructions were successfully removed. Hell Gate with its dangers is now a thing of the past, and this was amply demonstrated in the early summer of 1901, when a United States war vessel of the first class successfully passed through a channel which formerly was deemed too dangerous to be attempted in time of peace except by



HELL GATE.

river craft manned by river pilots, and was always dangerous. Readers of Fenimore Cooper's interesting novel, "The Water Witch," will recall a most thrilling description of the passage through Hell Gate as it was in the days before Uncle Sam undertook to remove its dangers.

To the student of American municipal matters the history of Long Island City as a distinct community during its existence of some twenty-eight years is an interesting study, if a somewhat nauseous one. It is not intended to follow its details here, for, excepting for the purposes of such study, the story is really purposeless; so a few details will suffice. As

the new city became the legal center of Queens county it became the seat of the law courts and so attracted quite a new order of business to the whilom Hunter's Point, a class of business which it still holds. To accommodate this legal business it was deemed necessary to build a court house. One was authorized in 1872 and in 1875 it was completed and opened. The original cost was fixed at \$150,000, but the actual cost was \$278,000, and the local politicians thought it escaped them too easily at that! The first election under the charter was held on July 5, 1870, when Abram D. Dittmars was elected Mayor, but the charter proved unworkable and full of faults, so that within a year a second charter had to be given the city. Each of the five wards were represented by three Aldermen, but in 1879 the number was reduced by limiting the wards to one city father each, while two were chosen by the city at large. Henry S. Bebevoise was elected the second Mayor in 1873, and in 1876 Mr. Dittmars was re-elected, but soon resigned. The most famous of all the Mayors,—famous for his vulgarity, his defiance of law and his aptitude for holding votes,—was Patrick Jerome Gleason, the last of the city's own rulers, and who, after a curious career, became a political nonentity, a bankrupt, and died poor and heartbroken early in 1901. One of the newspaper accounts of his career said:

"Patrick Jerome Gleason, who in late years was never mentioned without his emblem, the battle-axe, being spoken of in the same breath, was a unique figure in American politics. For years he practically carried Long Island City in his vest pocket and was the autocrat of the place. He was its Mayor for three terms, runing over eight years, and from the time of his appearance there until his death his name was constantly before the public in one form or another.

"Gleason was fond of notoriety and liked to talk about himself and his deeds. He declared that the laborer and school children had in him a champion, and in the fight for more

school-houses he continually led the van. One of his latest feats was to write an autobiography, which it was his intention to publish in book form. He could not keep it long enough, however; he said it was too good for that,—so he gave it to the newspapers a chapter at a time.

"It was in the parish of Drum and Inch, County Tipperary, the birthplace of Senator John Morrissey, that Patrick J. Gleason was born. He said in his book that he had a twin brother and six other brothers and one sister. Patrick was the pigmy of the family, and he stood six feet one inch when he had attained his growth.

"In May, 1862, when the Civil War was raging, Gleason came to this country. He used to tell that he had not been here two days when he was assaulted by two volunteer firemen, and he added, 'we had to be separated by a policeman.'

"Mr. Gleason's twin brother became a member of Mosby's guerrillas, but Patrick elected to stand by the Stars and Stripes, although the Ninety-ninth Regiment, in which he was a lieutenant, never got to the front. The next step in his career was as a distiller in Flushing, but the plant was confiscated by the Government and Gleason found himself bankrupt. He became a bidder for a street railroad through Williamsburgh into Long Island City, and got a franchise. Then came his first plunge into politics at the time of the Greeley campaign, when he was defeated for the Assembly.

"With a capital of fifty cents, Gleason thought of California as a haven, and he said he went to a friend to borrow \$150, telling him he need never expect to see it again. The friend gave him \$300 and he went to the Golden Gate. He had brothers in San Francisco, and finally sold his distillery secret for \$5,000, dabbling in stocks and increasing his capital to \$32,000. He heard that some one was trying to get his franchise in Williamsburgh, so he came East, built his road, acted

as conductor, driver, president and general superintendent, and began to increase his rolling stock.

"It was as Mayor of Long Island City that Gleason came into the greatest prominence. He was a strong supporter of consolidation, and when the Greater New York was finally an accomplished fact Mr. Gleason announced himself as a candidate for Mayor of the greater city. The battle-axe was his emblem on the ballot, but his candidacy was looked upon as a joke."

With the story of this interesting personage, whose name for fifteen years or so was the most familiar one in Long Island City, we might fittingly close this chapter, for in one sense he was its most representative citizen, in that he could for many years rally a

majority of its votes to his assistance to support his schemes. But before closing it may be proper to recall one locality which practically has passed out of existence. Dutch Kills still has a quasi-existence in local talk, although it has legally been wiped out, but Middletown, on the eastern boundary line of the city, seems to have been entirely passed into the forgotten. In the Revolutionary era it came into prominence from the movement of the British troops, Sir Henry Clinton and General Robertson having their headquarters there for brief periods, just as Lord Cornwallis seems to have had a brief station at Dutch Kills. But historic tradition alone is not enough to give vitality to a place, and so Middletown gradually fell from its one-time prominence and is now practically a memory.





YACHTS.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

SUMMER RESORTS.

A COSMOPOLITAN PLEASURE RESORT—HEALTH, EXCITEMENT, SOCIETY AND SOLITUDE
—MODERN BARONIAL ESTATES—PATCHOGUE—PECONIC BAY—THE
LAND BOOMER AND THE RAILWAY.

LONG ISLAND, throughout its whole extent, might most fittingly be styled the garden of New York, or Greater New York, the amusement and recreation ground of America's greatest city. It gratifies every taste. The lover of quiet can find it in abundance, can settle down in places apparently so far removed from the din of commerce, the roar and bustle and struggle of humanity, that he might easily imagine himself a thousand miles away from any habitation excepting his own and hear no sound save the hum of the bee, the twitter of the bird, or the musical duet of the katydid when night falls and darkness closes in on the little world to which he has resigned himself. If he wants society and fun and frolic and excitement, he can find it in abundance at many a popular caravansary, where he can be associated with people from all parts of the world, get the newest hints as to social life and study the most recent fad in the fashionable world. If a sportsman, he can find full use for rod and gun; and if he desires to fish in the deep blue sea, the waters of the Atlantic or of Long Island Sound are ready at his command. The fishermen can find no place where a day of more genuine fun can be had than in Jamaica Bay, or he can have a day worthy of being remembered by engaging in snipe shooting at Westhampton; if he wants excite-

men with his sport, let him spend a day or two in an open boat off the Great South Bay; if he be of the quiet, contemplative, philosophical kind, Izaak Walton description of a sport, a gentle "angler," why, such places as Sayville are ready to receive and welcome him. If a golfer, the finest courses in the world are at Babylon, Quogue, Flushing, Port Washington, the Shinnecock Hills and a dozen other places. If a polo expert, he will find many noted players in the Meadow Brook Club, one of the most famous sporting organizations in the land, whose kennels are a sight to see and whose annual hunting record is the best and most exciting in the country. If a bicyclist, he has only to secure a little tag and go meandering over some of the finest cycle paths to be met anywhere in this vale of tears and of spent tires and smashed wheels. He may even enjoy scorching now and again, and, most wonderful of all, will never once in his journey on the island be denounced as a nuisance. Sea-bathing, rolling and tumbling in the breakers or floating lazily in still waters is everywhere at command or within easy reach; and some of the most magnificent stretches of sandy beach to be found anywhere are of frequent occurrence along the whole extent of the South Shore. The harbor facilities for yachting purposes are unexcelled, and the sport, one of the grandest ever

invented by human agency, is enjoyed to the full by the dwellers on the island. No prettier sight can anywhere be found than the snug harbors of Port Jefferson or Shelter Island during the height of the season. If one is of a poetic mind, loves to realize how small an atom he is in the cosmopolis, he can sit on the rocks at Montauk Point and mourn the glories of a vanished race, a royal race, and realize the mutability of earthly greatness and comprehend his own insignificance as he watches the wide expanse of horizon and sees the wide limitless expanse of water kissing the rocky coast when in placid mood, or hurling against it with resistless fury when the angry fit is on.

A rare place indeed is Long Island for all sorts and conditions of men, and the beauty of it all is that every section of it is within easy reach of America's metropolitan city, Greater New York, part of which, indeed, is now on the island itself. Even to the sojourner, with only an hour or two to spare, the attractions of the island are open. Coney Island is less than an hour's distance by water, or even by the trolley, and a ride on some of these vehicles really carry the visitor through a stretch of ground more crammed with historical interest than can be found in an hour's ride even in history-burdened Continental Europe. We traverse the scene of the Battle of Brooklyn and through old villages, now, however, so sadly modernized and annexed that only glimpses here and there of the relics of other days present themselves. But we, in spite of changes, do pass through Flatbush and Flatlands and Gravesend, and each of these names recalls to the student of modern history a flood of treasured memories. Coney Island itself is a picture, a unique "city of the sea," with its bands, its noise, its touts, its shows, its merry-go-rounds and its cafes and saloons. A little bit vulgar, some people call it; possibly they are right; but there are many tastes in this world to be gratified, and every taste that is right and

proper and in keeping with morals and ethics has to be catered to. Coney Island has but one mission, and that is to please the public; and as it is visited every year by about a million persons it can hardly be said not to fulfill that mission. But people who think it vulgar, who find it not to their taste, can pass it by and go on to Manhattan Beach and the Oriental, where they can listen to classical music, hear now and again an opera or burlesque, associate with the salt of the earth, be waited upon by Austrian dukes and Italian counts rigged up in swallow-tailed coats, eat the culinary masterpieces of French chefs, and see a grand display of fireworks before ascending to their bedrooms to be lulled to sleep with the gentle moan of the deep blue sea. In the season "the sport of kings," as horse racing is called, can be enjoyed at Sheepshead Bay or at Gravesend. Another resort near at hand is Rockaway, a long stretch of sand lying between Jamaica Bay and the ocean; while east of it, on the same stretch of sand, is Arverne, with its huge hotel and cottages, a center of social pleasure for three months every year.

The trolley system of Brooklyn is one of the most comprehensive to be found anywhere, and by it one may journey over very considerable distances of interesting country for a cost that is almost nominal. From Brooklyn Bridge to Jamaica is perhaps the acme of cheap and pleasant traveling, and so in the trip from the Broadway Ferry to Flushing or North Beach. Jamaica is the railroad center of the island, Flushing one of its old historic towns, and North Beach a summer show place; and to get to each of these places the cars pass through a wide extent of varied country, sometimes more or less thickly populated, sometimes so thinly peopled that the car bowls along with increased speed, irresponsive to the beauty of the surroundings or the story of the wayside, so as to make up the time lost in threading its way through the city's streets. Traveling by trolley is a delightful

pleasure on a warm day, for the car itself "makes a breeze," as the conductor tells us, and there is a certain degree of excitement or exhilaration always obtainable when one is bowling along through an open country, now passing a village, now a church, now a green field, and ever and anon dashing through some little collection of pretty villas, the beginning of some future popular summer resort.

But the trolley has its drawbacks; and as we look at the motorman we realize what a wide difference there is between that mechanical development and the old-fashioned stage-driver of our younger days. The motorman is a part of the machinery, and nothing more. The stage-driver was a gentleman, and, in his way and so far as his observation went, a scholar and a philosopher. He could tell you the story, the romance, of every field as he passed it by, name the owners of each house, tell you how much the head of each family was worth, relate all sorts of village scandal and gossip, and point out the scene of every remarkable occurrence within his view for a hundred years back! Your motorman is a different personage. He attends strictly to business, and his business is to get his car to the end of his route and nothing more. We question if there is a motorman in Brooklyn who could point out to you a bit of the ground fought over in the Battle of Brooklyn in 1776, or who ever heard that such a battle had ever been fought. His mind is fixed on other things.

The resorts on Long Island are very numerous, and all of them seem to grow in popularity year after year. We can not recall one that has gone back to its primitive condition of solitary wildness: although most of them have their ups and downs, their good years and their bad ones, the story is one of steady progress all along the line. Some seasons the "gilded youth" of both sexes prefer one place to another, and forsake, say Shelter Island for Glen Cove; but new arrivals take the place of the departed ones, and the story

of success goes steadily on. There is more reason for this than appears on the surface. The people who really make these resorts are the dwellers in the large cities, and as these increase in population year after year so does the cry for summer homes, and summer breathing places increase. Then Long Island fills the bill. It is so easily reached and yet affords such a welcome change! But, more than all that, its schedule of prices are moderate, and a man can spend a season at one of its best hotels as cheaply as he can in such establishments anywhere. Land is cheap, and a site for a dwelling is not costly, nor is labor extravagant in its demands. A man can choose a site overlooking the seashore or in some picturesque nook in the center of the island, all for a moderate cost, while he can have his provisions from New York or from some of the towns on the Connecticut shore as cheaply and promptly as though he were still a dweller in the busy haunts of men. He can enjoy city privileges and rural felicity without drawing more heavily on his purse than though he never stirred away from the noise and clamor of a city. Long Island is every year becoming an island of homes in the sense that Brooklyn used to be called a "city of homes." It is drawing to itself all classes of the community,—the millionaire and the clerk, and the mansion and the cottage, both find congenial surroundings.

In recent years a new development has taken place on Long Island, in the holding by individuals of vast extent of its territory, such as the property at Oakdale of William K. Vanderbilt and the estates of F. G. Bourne, of W. H. Whitney and others. These demesnes are veritable baronial holdings and rival in beauty and elegance many an English show place. But they are much more home-like, and the residences erected on them are a thousand times more comfortable than most of the storied old-world castles we read so much about. The old owners of manors on Long Island would have gazed with wonder at these estates, the modern

successors of their vast holdings. The modern manors are not so large as the old ones, and their title deeds do not convey any questionable "rights,"—rights which sometimes sadly interfered with "life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness;" but they are better worth living on and give to their owners more genuine pleasure and comfort than any of the old patriarchs could derive from their broad but bleak and sterile acres.

Of late years a feature of summer-home life on Long Island has been the organizations which club together, buy a piece of property, erect a club house and cottages and restrict the rights of property-owning on their domain to their own members. By this means many a pleasant colony has been formed of people who are acquainted with each other and whose company is congenial. Some of these places are most attractive, their co-operation permitting many expenses which the members could not indulge in single-handed, and they afford as a result of the benefits of co-operation all the pleasure of rural outdoor life at a very moderate cost.

But the multitude of people who go to Long Island flock to the resorts and the number of them is legion. Take Patchogue, for instance. It is in itself an old and settled community, lying in the shelter of the Great South Bay, in a little bay which bears its own name, with a railroad station in its midst, and one of the best roads in the island reaching from its centre right across to Long Island Sound, to Port Jefferson. It has an industry pre-eminently its own, its oyster trade, as well as several manufacturing establishments. Little need for it one would think, to spread bait to catch summer visitors; yet season after season they flock to it by the thousand. Its wide streets charm every one; and its churches, villas as well as its general air of comfort and cleanliness are satisfying somehow to the dweller in cities. Of course it caters to this annual trade and has all the attractions which an up-to-date seaside resort should have, and,

unlike many of the smaller towns in Suffolk county, it spends money on improvements with no niggard hand. As a sea-bathing resort it has all the adjuncts which fashion demands, and a fleet of oar-boats or sailing vessels or naphtha launches are daily riding in its harbor, waiting the beck and call of any who want to enjoy a sail on the Great South Bay. If one is tired of the seacoast he can easily turn his steps inland; he can enjoy a glimpse of the country, or, by hiring a gig, can drive for many hours through rich and varied scenes and never once catch a glimpse of the coast until he returns to his hotel or boarding-house, and boarding-houses are as plentiful in Patchogue as dollar bills in a bank.

For those who desire seaside with very little, comparatively, of country, a tract of Long Island has been coming slowly into vogue in recent years, and that is at its eastern end along the shores of Great and Little Peconic Bay. A recent writer speaks of this section in the following enthusiastic fashion,—a fashion which, however, is truthful, in spite of its enthusiasm:

"Along Peconic Bay are a number of towns and villages whose fine climate, good roads and general attractions are making them prime favorites with summer visitors. The bay itself is a beautiful body of salt water, on whose placid bosom all manner of pleasure craft can be seen during the warm months, bearing happy groups of care-free folk. They sail or row over the blue waters in land-locked security from the rollers of the open sea. If they wish to take a dip in the surf, good beaches offer the alluring opportunity.

"On the north side of the bay, after leaving Riverhead, one soon comes to the town of Aquebogue, a name admirably descriptive, for water and bog make up the bay-front side. The Saxon half of the name and the sedgy flats about the town suggest the marshes of Runnymede, where the barons wrested the Magna Charta from King John.

"The land rises as one reaches Jamesport,

and here are hills crowned with old churches and pleasant homes. This town has become so popular for a summer holiday that the difficulty frequently met with is getting accommodations, a fact that has served as a stimulus in the erection of many cottages.

"Franklinville is a pretty village, 'at peace with all the world.' Contentment exhales from it as a fragrance, and it always has a colony of summer residents.

"A little way on down the narrow Italy-shaped peninsula into which the north side of Long Island is here tapering is the modest village of Mattituck. Both to the north end and to the south it has fine water views. Having comfortable inns and hospitable farmhouses for the entertainment of visitors, it has won deserved repute as a place of summer outing. One of the diversions of those sojourning here is found in a little creek flowing toward the Sound and abounding in crabs. In both sea and bay fish are plentiful.

"'Just sneeze and you pronounce it:' that is a remark the writer overheard as descriptive of the name Cutchogue. But this description is suggestive in other ways than phonetically. A sneeze is apt to result from too much oxygen, and in the air that blows fresh from the water over sightly Cutchogue oxygen is abundant. This pretty town has other advantages than good air and a fine view. It is on one of the best roads in America, the long, straight highway leading from Riverhead to Orient. But good roads on Long Island, it should be said, are the rule rather than the exception. Every natural advantage in surface and soil helps their construction and maintenance. The drainage is good, the grades seldom steep, save near the ocean, and there is plenty of land to give the roads needed width. As a result these highways between verdant stretches of farm land, in the shade of noble trees, by the shores of shining lakes, and in sight often of the mighty sea, offer a perpetual invitation to walking, cycling and driving.

"One's first impression of Peconic, formed

from a glance down its broad, shaded street, is favorable, and closer acquaintance with the old town confirms this impression. Jutting out from the shore is a headland called Nassau Point. Southold, a few miles east, lays claim to antiquity in its name, and points to the fact proudly that its first settlers secured a concession from the Indians and from a church as early as 1640. There is a contention between Southold and Southampton, across the bay, as to which is the older. In August, 1890, Southold celebrated, with much ceremony, the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its founding. The town has a center where the stores, schools, and churches are grouped, and about it the houses are scattered widely. Whichever way the wind may blow the old place is fanned by a sea breeze. In this fact some antiquarians profess to have found a reason for the great age of some of the inhabitants, a few of whom, it is gravely claimed, antedate the founding of the place.

"Journeying to the very end of the main line of the Long Island Railroad one reaches the progressive and interesting town of Greenport. It has over 3,000 inhabitants, and is both a resort and an important business centre. Besides the trade that comes to it from being the terminus of the railroad, it has a considerable commerce through its boat connections with Shelter Island, New London, and Sag Harbor. Within the safe haven of its harbor a mighty fleet could find anchorage. The town's large summer population is drawn from a wide territory—New England and the West being represented as well as New York and Brooklyn. These sojourners have pleasant stopping places in well-appointed hotels and comfort-giving cottages. They find every means of outdoor diversion. Boating, sailing, fishing, and shooting are excellent, and many pleasant trips can be made awheel, afloat, or afoot. The view one gets from a bluff north of the town is expansive and exhilarating. Dancing in the sunlight are the waters of the Sound stretching away to the green shores of

Connecticut; to the south lies Peconic Bay, a glittering sapphire set between the green heights of Shelter Island and the trees of Greenport, with spire and roof peering through them; to east and west the eye travels over water to the far horizons. This north prong

the history not only of Long Island but of the country at large ought to commend it to many classes. To a certain extent and up to a certain time it was a "resort," but since it became a railroad centre it is so no longer; yet for one who wants to explore Long Island



CATHEDRAL AT GARDEN CITY, L. I.

of Long Island pushes on from Greenport, beyond the pretty town of Orient, with its one thousand people, to its end at Orient Point. Here the land, which has been gradually becoming narrower, dips into the sea, and what, in some of the geological epochs of the past, was a greater Long Island here becomes the bed of the Atlantic."

To many, the central portion of Long Island will always be its most attractive feature. Jamaica itself might be a resort, deserves to be a resort in fact, for its antiquity, its natural beauty; and the important part it has played in

no place is better adapted as headquarters unless one is prowling around Montauk Point, or meandering solemnly in the outskirts of Wading River. It is surrounded by a cluster of pretty home-like towns,—Hollis, in the one direction and Woodhaven in the other, each worth a visit to get a good understanding of the comforts and discomforts, the joys and drawbacks of the individual the comic papers like to run foul of as the suburbanite.

It is not very far by rail from Jamaica to Garden City, a place which has acquired so much prominence from the beautiful cathedral

and schools founded by the late A. T. Stewart and his widow. Stewart was a strange individual. The most successful merchant of his time, every speculation he entered into in connection with his legitimate dry-goods business turned to gold: everything else he touched turned to dross. One of his pet schemes was to found a city on Long Island, and with that end in view he purchased a large tract of land in the township of Hempstead. He knew that a town must have some reason for its existence, and he furnished the reason—the cathedral. He also built houses for the people to live in; but none was to be sold, all to be rented, and the rentals in turn was to help support the cathedral and its work. It was a failure. Americans do not like to live in an atmosphere of restriction, and that was what life at Garden City meant. The cathedral is a thing of beauty, the architectural beauty of Long Island, and the schools associated with it are the best of their kind; but it was not until Stewart was dead and the silly restrictions were removed that Garden City began to attract people. Its growth has been slow: the word “city” as its title has proved a misnomer. It will in course of time be peopled: that is inevitable; but it will never be in itself a city, for the next time that the Greater New York stretches itself it will be swallowed up as have so many more popular places.

For sylvan beauty no section of Long Island can more commend itself than that around Lake Ronkonkoma. Says the writer we have already quoted:

“The sheen of its limpid surface sparkles like the eyes of an Indian maiden. Fed by springs at the bottom, its waters are as pure as they are clear. The lake is about three miles around, and its shores form the shape of a pear. In places it is over sixty feet deep. As a shady fringe around it are many trees, and clustered about are a number of cottages. Along the beach of white sand a road runs, and the view from it over the crystal face of the lake is beautiful. This is the largest body

of fresh water on Long Island. It is fifty-five feet above sea level. Through some mystery of nature it has periods of ebb and flood, but these are not coincident with the tides or by any possibility connected with them. On the sloping banks daisies nod to their relatives the lily-pads in the water. In the darkling depths, bass, catfish, and perch disport themselves. Floating now and again over its bosom, as if calling its Indian name, are the sounds of bells from St. Mary’s-by-the-Lake, and from other steeples. A legend has it that a phantom canoe now and again goes noiselessly over the waters bearing an Indian girl, love-lorn, and in search of the young brave to whom she has given her heart. With the dawn her birch-bark boat skims away into the ether and the sun looks down into the mirror face of Ronkonkoma.”

But we must cease mentioning places, for wherever our eye falls on the map some great hotel like that at Long Branch or some quiet, old-fashioned inn like that at Roslyn comes before us demanding a word; and the summer delights of Southampton, or Cold Spring or Moriches or Shelter Island troop up calling for more detailed description than can well be given them individually in a chapter devoted to all as a class. Then too many historic spots are recalled, such as the early home of him who when a wanderer far from it wrote the plaintive words of “Home, Sweet Home,”—one of the world’s songs; the old Indian Canal at Shinnecock; the memorial to Nathan Hale; the haunts of Captain Kidd, and even the late tumult and excitement at Camp Wyckoff, where our soldiers rested after their return from their short but glorious campaign in Cuba,—all these bid us linger, all inspire a desire to tell their story; but such things cannot be crowded into a chapter and had better, here at all events, be left untold.

For fifty years or thereabout Long Island has been a paradise for the land boomers. Money has been made in its real-estate field, and much has been lost. The land boomer is

an evil: of that there is no doubt; and the story of his doings in Williamsburgh and other places have won for him a memorable reputation. He has done harm in many quarters,—harm which exists to this day, because he has floated a half-considered and ill advised scheme, and then when the “bottom fell out of it” left it hopelessly a wreck. Such results are painfully evident all over Long Island. But still the boomer has been of service. He quickened the extension of the old city of Brooklyn by his efforts more than did any other agency; he it was who opened up its farms and turned them into streets and squares and won for it its title of “city of homes;” he, too, has been the means of bringing to the front most of Long Island’s most popular resorts. They have been started in the first instance by his glowing descriptions and his confidently expressed hopes, and once he induced the people to believe as he professed to believe the rest was easy. He made money. He turned strips of sand into foundations of wealth, won a price for old farms which would have astonished the old holder of a manor patent; but the people got something for their

money, something they could use for health and pleasure. It was said of a once famous real-estate auctioneer and boomer in Brooklyn that he sold more sand and mud than any other man living. So he did. But people built hotels on the sand and homes on the mud, and so all were benefited. The boomer should be gratefully remembered when we think of the marvellous prosperity which Long Island has for so many years enjoyed for its pleasant country homes, its suburban pleasures and the wealth which the vast throngs of summer visitors yearly bring to its resorts.

But if the boomer has passed a greater power has arisen to perform his work, to perform it more honestly, more thoroughly, and with more beneficial and permanent results. That power is the railroad system of the island. There is no doubt that the plans now in progress for the extension and development of the Long Island Railroad will open up the entire island to business and pleasure to an extent even now little dreamed of and make it become a veritable fairyland of homes and resorts, and that, too, at a not very far distant day.





William Schroeder, M.D.,
— " —

CHAPTER XLIX.

THE MEDICAL PROFESSION ON LONG ISLAND.

EARLY MEDICAL LEGISLATION—A SOUTHAMPTON DOCTOR AND HIS FEES—NOTED PHYSICIANS OF THE OLDEN TIME—BROOKLYN'S PIONEER DOCTORS.

BY WILLIAM SCHROEDER, M.D.

It appears from the records of the past, that the relation of the medical man to the people was not the same as that of the minister or the schoolmaster, for his efforts in behalf of humanity did not receive the same recognition as was accorded to

the two other professions. This may be largely accounted for by saying that medical science, as we understand the term to-day, was unknown, and that the people submitted themselves to various forms of treatment with no particular object in view other than to lower

*This chapter and the two following, all relating to the history of the medical profession on Long Island, are from the pen of Dr. William Schroeder, of Brooklyn, and have been presented here in answer to a very general request that so much, at least, of Dr. Schroeder's historical studies as could be made available should be gathered together and presented in an enduring form. All of the matter contained in these three chapters was prepared and presented at various times and in various publications—publications which having served their day and purpose are now forgotten or so scarce as to be beyond general reach. It was felt that the material which had been so carefully and so lovingly compiled, at a great cost of time, research and patient labor, should be brought within easy reach of all interested in Long Island history.

William Schroeder was born in New York city, July 26, 1854, but since he was four months old his life has been spent in Brooklyn. He may therefore be regarded as to all intents and purposes a native of that borough. He studied medicine at the Long Island College Hospital, from which he was graduated with honors in the class of 1881. Soon afterward he entered upon practice in Brooklyn and slowly but surely advanced to the front in professional circles. He is a member of the

Kings County Medical Society, of which he is the official Historian, and is a member also of the Brooklyn Medical Society, the Brooklyn Pathological Society, the Long Island College Hospital Alumni Association and several other medical organizations.

Dr. Schroeder is also a prominent figure in social life. In Masonic circles he has attained high rank, having served as Master of Nassau Lodge, No. 356, and High Priest of Gate of the Temple Chapter, Royal Arch Masons. In the Order of the Eastern Star he has held the office of Grand Lecturer for the State of New York. An eloquent public speaker, Dr. Schroeder has lectured in public several times, mainly on Masonic matters, on which he is recognized as an authority of more than ordinary standing. To medical and periodical literature he has for many years been a steady contributor, mainly on historical themes. He is to the present day a diligent and painstaking student and he gathered around him a working library of which any library man might well be proud. In addition to his medical books, he has a collection of Masonic literature, collected from all sources and all lands, which could hardly be found equalled in any other local private library, while of works relating to Long Island history and antiquities his treasures are large, varied and unique.

their vitality. The patient received considerable attention from his neighbors, and they were always ready to give advice and offer treatment—which usually consisted of herbs of various kinds, each one possessing peculiar merits, capable of curing all the ills that human flesh is heir to. Many recovered, due to the fact of their possessing a robust constitution, consequent to their mode of living, which was largely out of doors; their living apartments being larger and their food more wholesome,—therefore much more health-giving than our manner of living at the present day.

A few historical notes, relative to the early history of medicine on Long Island, may not be out of place at this time.

Benjamin F. Thompson, in his History, published in 1839, informs us that the name conferred upon Brooklyn by the Dutch was Breucklin (broken land), and in the act for dividing the province into counties and towns, passed Nov. 1, 1685, it is called Breucklyn.

On the 18th day of October, 1667, a patent was granted by Governor Richard Nicolls to the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Breucklen, their heirs, successors and assigns. "It is generally believed that Governor Stuyvesant, in 1657, gave a general patent of the town to Stephanus Van Cortlandt, of that portion known as Red Hook." Grants were also made between the years 1642 and 1647, by Governor Kieft, to different individuals for lands on the Brooklyn shore, from Red Hook Point to the Wallabout Bay. In 1670, the inhabitants being desirous of enlarging their common land applied to Governor Lovelace, who granted a license for that portion known as Bedford, extending from Brooklyn Ferry to the Flatbush turnpike.

In turning our attention to medical education in the State of New York, we find that in 1767 or 1768 an attempt was made in the city of New York to establish a medical school. The faculty, organized at that time, continued to read lectures until the beginning of the War of the Revolution, which converted their col-

lege into a military hospital. From this time until the year 1792, there were no medical lectures delivered in this State, and from that time until the institution of the College of Physicians and Surgeons by the Regents of the University in 1807, medical education did not make much progress, in fact, the advancement of medical science, so far as the State of New York is concerned, may be dated from the year 1807.

In 1760 the General Assembly of the Province of New York ordained that no person should practice as a physician or surgeon in the city of New York before he was examined in physic or surgery.

It appears that the first degree that was granted in New York was that of Bachelor of Medicine, conferred upon Samuel Kissam and Robert Tucker, in 1769, by the College of New York. In 1770 the degree of Doctor of Medicine was conferred upon the same gentlemen. (Transactions of the Medical Society, State of New York, 1827 and 1842.)

The presentation of these historical notes at this time is intended to fix in our minds the condition of things as they existed at that time. By so doing, we can more easily comprehend the efforts put forth by medical men at that time, to organize a college or society. Long Island evidently was not looked upon as the best place to practice medicine, as the writer has been unable to find a record of any physician, who was willing to call Long Island his home, until about the year 1725.

The practice of medicine on Long Island is well presented in an address, delivered by W. S. Pelletreau in 1890, at the 250th anniversary of the town of Southampton. He seems to have understood the relative position of the medical man in the community, for he admits that the procuring of a minister and then of a schoolmaster always preceded that of a doctor. His language is so beautiful and truthful, that I shall take the liberty of giving it in full.

For long years after the settlement there appears to have been no physician in town. A "Dr. Craig" is once mentioned, but he evidently was not a permanent resident. Families then doctored their ailments with domestic remedies. It was a part of the duty of a good housewife to lay in a good stock of herbs at the proper season. "Yarb teas" of all kinds were given in cases of sickness, and if they did no good they certainly did no harm.

It is quite a question, whether many of these herbs were not brought with the first settlers from England, with the traditional knowledge of their efficacy. Some of them are never found growing wild, far from the haunts of men. However this may be, each plant, according to their ideas, possessed a peculiarly good quality. Catnip was soothing to the nerves; Indian posy was strengthening; boneset was good in fevers; and skunk cabbage was used for rheumatism, but never cured it.

The first physician who appears to have settled here was Dr. John Mackie, who was here previous to 1736. He died in 1758, and of his medical practice we have no knowledge whatever. Succeeding him came Dr. William Smith, son of Nathaniel Smith, Esq., who owned a very large estate at Moriches. He first came to Southampton as a scholar of the Rev. Sylvanus White. In 1742 he studied medicine in Philadelphia, and settled here in 1754, remaining here until his death in 1775. His son, Dr. John Smith, was a physician here for many years, but the real successors of Dr. William Smith were Drs. Henry White and Silas Halsey, the latter removing to the western part of the State after the Revolution.

Of the nature of a doctor's practice during the latter part of the last century and the early part of the present, we have a very full description, contained in the account book of Dr. White, which is still in existence. His prices certainly were moderate,—so moderate that if physicians at the present time followed his scale of prices we could almost afford to be sick. As examples of the fees then earned by the medical profession, we may mention the following: Charge for a visit in the vicinity—one shilling. For a visit more than a mile distant—three shillings. For a night visit—four shillings. A visit to the North Sea—five shillings, and if he stayed there all night, and furnished medicines, the charge was nine shil-

lings and six pence. To Seth Squire's, at Squiretown—seven shillings. To Wakeman Foster's, at Pon Quogue—eight shillings, and the same to Red Creek.

A visit, with paregoric, cost Squire Herrick (a near neighbor) two shillings, and for three visits, with spirits of nitre, he charged three shillings and six pence. A visit to Wickapog, in the night, with castor oil and paregoric furnished, was ten shillings. He made a good many visits to Samuel Jaggeis, at Long Springs, at three shillings each. His son Sylvanus made a good many more visits, but he got a wife by them. The fee for extracting a tooth was one shilling. A "purge" was one shilling and four pence; an emetic the same; also the same for a dose of rhubarb. Two visits to Shinnecock, with sundry medicines, cost some Indians twelve shillings. A visit to North Sea, with bleeding thrown in, was four shillings.

A large part of his pay was taken in barter and days' work. At one time he gets a load of sea-weed for a visit, with the inevitable "purge," and again he brings home a fine bass, at a cost of a cent and a half a pound. We have no doubt but that his successors in the profession would be glad of such a chance occasionally. In one instance, a wealthy family at North Sea, for divers visits and doses, had run up a bill of nine pounds, seven shillings and six pence. This was paid, in what the doctor very justly calls "sundries," and includes apples, flax, wood, pears, timothy seed, beans, clams, fish, eels, pigs, watermelons and geese.

His accounts show that all the medicines he used were of the very mildest kind, and it is doubtful if they have either killed or cured. Phlebotomy and cathartic medicines, or as he expressed it in much plainer English, "bleeding and a purge," was the beginning, the middle, and the end. No matter what the disease might be, a "purge" was the first remedy administered. If the patient recovered, the doctor had the credit of it; if he died, it was charged to Providence.

When Dr. Smith wished to replenish his stock of drugs, he saddled his horse, fastened on his saddle bags, and started for New York. The end of the first day found him at Patchogue, where he tarried at the tavern over night. The next evening found him in the city, which then extended almost to Canal street. Having accomplished his business, he

started on his return home, and Saturday night found him safe at home.

The foregoing notes give an idea of the practice of medicine, and the relation of the physician to the people, up to the beginning of the present century, on Long Island. It is probable that the same relative conditions existed in every other part of the country at that time. The following items regarding the physicians in practice on Long Island up to this time, as far as the writer has been able to collect information concerning them, are intended to give the medical men of our city at the present time a view of the scarcity of physicians at that time, in any of the three counties of Long Island, for the purpose of organizing a Medical Society. In the county of Kings, the number was exceedingly small. Still there may have been a number of medical men in practice on this island, at the time referred to, who simply attended to their professional work, and never permitted their names to appear in connection with any other work, but this was probably not the case, as they would likely have been called upon to perform some work for the town in which they lived, and in that way their names would appear upon record.

"The Annals of Medical Progress," by Joseph M. Toner, M. D., 1874, makes mention of the following physicians on Long Island:

Samuel Osborn, a son of Dr. John Osborn, of Middletown, Conn., studied medicine and became a physician of repute in Brooklyn. He subsequently resided in New York city. Drs. Ball and Wendell succeeded to his practice in Brooklyn.

Dr. Benjamin Treadwell, a physician of Long Island, was in practice for nearly sixty-five years. He died in North Hempstead, in 1830, aged ninety-five years.

Dr. Jacob Ogden was born at Newark, N. J., in 1721. Received the best medical education the Colonies afforded, and removed to Jamaica, L. I., where he remained in practice

during the remainder of his life. He was Warden of Grace Church from 1761 to 1802. He wrote several medical dissertations on the sore throat distemper of 1769. The application of mercury in the treatment of inflammatory complaints was extensively used by him in 1749. He was also noted for his advocacy of inoculation. He died at Jamaica, L. I., September, 1780, in the fifty-ninth year of his age.

Dr. Samuel Martin, of Hempstead, L. I., son of the Hon. Josiah Martin, located in Hempstead, where he was Warden of St. George's Church from 1770 to 1791. He died at Rock Hall, April 19, 1806, aged sixty-five years.

In the Proceedings of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1876, Dr. R. M. Wyckoff contributes a paper on "Kings County in 1776," from which we extract the following notes:

Dr. John Jones, who assisted the Provincial Congress in establishing regimental hospitals, was a native of Jamaica, L. I. He was born in 1729. He studied medicine in Europe. Returning to this country in 1768, he was selected to fill the honorable station of Professor of Surgery in the Medical School of New York. He is the author of the first surgical book published in this country. It was brought out in 1776. The title reads: "Treatment of Wounds and Fractures; with an Appendix on Military Hospitals." He died June 23, 1791, aged sixty-two years.

Dr. Daniel Menema, a native of New York, who served as surgeon in the Second New York Regiment, was afterwards a resident of Jamaica, Queens county. He was a member of Grace Church; also of the Society of Cincinnati. In 1806 he was President of the Medical Society of Queens County. He died at Jamaica, L. I., Jan. 20, 1810.

Nathan Shelton, M. D., for more than fifty years a practicing physician in Jamaica, and for more than forty years a ruling elder in the Presbyterian Church. He was President of the Queens County Medical Society in 1829.

(History of the Presbyterian Church, Jamaica, L. I., 1862.)

Dr. Joseph Bloodgood, who was born in 1784, graduated from the University of Pennsylvania in 1806. He became a trustee of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York in 1811, and came to Flushing in 1812. He died March 7, 1851, aged sixty-seven years. He was Postmaster of Flushing for sixteen years. (History of Flushing, G. H. Mandeville, 1860.)

Dr. Benjamin Y. Prime, born in Huntington, in 1733, was graduated from Princeton College in 1751. In 1756 and 1757 he was employed as a tutor in the college. He studied medicine with Dr. Jacob Ogden, of Jamaica, L. I., and for several years thereafter practiced physic. He died Oct. 31, 1791, aged fifty-eight years.

Dr. Gilbert Potter was born in Huntington, Jan. 8, 1725. He studied medicine with Dr. Jared Elliot, of Guilford, Conn. He was engaged as a surgeon in the French War. In 1776 he was appointed Colonel, and was associated with General Woodhull in protecting Long Island. In 1783 he returned to Huntington, and pursued his professional calling. He died Feb. 14, 1786, aged sixty-one years. (Historical Address, by the Hon. Henry C. Platt, 1876, Huntington, L. I.)

Robert A. Davidson, M. D., was born November 28, 1793, and settled in Hempstead in 1813. At the time of his death, he had been engaged in the practice of medicine over sixty years.

Dr. James Searing is remembered as an old resident, at one time residing in the Harper residence. He was the first Treasurer of the Queens County Medical Society. He died at the age of seventy-four years.

Edwin Webb, M. D., of Hempstead, was born in England, September 2, 1804. He came to New York when three years of age. He studied medicine with Drs. Ball and Wendell, who were in partnership, and were then the principal physicians in Brooklyn. He received

his diploma from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, in 1825. (History of Queens County, 1882.)

Dr. Samuel L. Mitchell, of Hempstead, L. I., was born in 1764. He died Sept. 7, 1831. He was a physician, naturalist, and Senator. He was admitted to the bar in 1791. Received his medical education in Edinburgh, Scotland. He held the chair of Chemistry and Natural History in Columbia College in 1796. In 1797 and 1798 he made a geological survey of the banks of the Hudson. He was a member of the Legislature at Albany from 1797 to 1813. He started with others the "Medical Repository" in 1798. Made a special study of yellow fever. Was present on November 4, 1825, at the completion of the Erie Canal. In 1820 he presided over a convention of physicians, who had for their object the formation of a Pharmacopœia. For twenty-seven years he gave an annual course of lectures at the College of Physicians and Surgeons. He was President of the New York Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, and in 1808 made, with others, that famous trip to Albany in Robert Fulton's first steamer. (N. Cleveland's History of Greenwood.)

Dr. John B. Riker, born at Newtown, L. I., in 1738. He held the position of surgeon in the American Army, from 1775 until 1783. Returning to his native town, he practiced medicine until his death in 1795, aged fifty-seven years. He was considered a gentleman of high professional attainments.

Dr. Ebenezer Sage, born August 16, 1755, in Connecticut. He graduated from Yale College in 1778; in 1790 settled in East Hampton, and married a daughter of Dr. Wm. Smith, of South Hampton. He was elected to the Eleventh, Twelfth and Thirteenth Congresses, and again in 1819 and 1820. In 1821 he was a delegate to the convention for amending the Constitution of the State of New York. He died Jan. 20, 1834, at Sag Harbor.

Dr. Isaac Hulse, born August 31, 1796, at Brookhaven, L. I., studied medicine in the

University of Maryland, and graduated in 1820. In 1821 he was commissioned Assistant Surgeon in the U. S. Navy; in 1824 Surgeon to the Naval Hospital in Virginia. In 1838 President Van Buren appointed him Fleet Surgeon of the West India Squadron. His medical reports exhibit talent of a high order.

Dr. George Muirson, of Brookhaven, L. I., in 1745 became celebrated for his successful treatment of small-pox by the administration of mercury, which method proved very successful in his hands. (Benjamin F. Thompson's History of Long Island, 1839.)

Dr. Benjamin F. Thompson was born in Brookhaven, L. I., May 15, 1784. He studied medicine with Dr. Ebenezer Sage, of Sag Harbor, and practiced the same for about ten years. He then studied law, and was elected to the Assembly in 1813 and 1816. He was School Commissioner in 1813 and 1814. A History of Long Island was written by him in 1839. A second edition, in two volumes, was published in 1843. He died March 21, 1849.

Dr. Nathaniel Miller was born in Brookhaven, on April 17, 1783; graduated from the New York Medical College in 1812; was a member of the Assembly in 1818 and 1849. He died May 7, 1863.

Dr. Nathaniel Gardner, of East Hampton, born June 11, 1759, was a Surgeon in the Revolutionary War, and served as a member of the Assembly in 1786, 1789, 1790. He died March 25, 1804.

Dr. Abel Huntington was born in the State of Connecticut, February 22, 1776. In 1796 he came to East Hampton, L. I., where he studied medicine, and for sixty years practiced his profession. He was a representative in Congress from 1833 to 1837. Collector of Sag Harbor under President Polk, and a member of the New York Constitutional Convention of 1846. He was known for his ability as a surgeon. He died May 18, 1858. (History of Suffolk County, 1882.)

The following are the names of physicians,

who have practiced medicine on Long Island previous to 1822, so far as the writer has been able to obtain information in regard to them, together with the dates of their practice:

Dr. Gilbert Smith, 1775. Huntington, L. I.
Dr. James Sandford, 1780. Huntington, L. I. Died Oct. 1795.

Dr. Daniel Wiggins, 1790. Huntington, L. I. Died Sept. 10, 1805.

Dr. Zophar Platt, 1754. Huntington, L. I. Died Sept. 29, 1792, aged eighty-seven years.

Dr. Oliver Brown, 1800. Huntington, L. I. Died Oct., 1815.

Dr. Jonathan Havens. Smithtown, L. I.

Dr. Zephaniah Platt, 1760. Smithtown, L. I. Died Jan. 27, 1718.

Dr. Samuel H. Rose, 1790. South Hampton, L. I.

Dr. Henry White. South Hampton, L. I.

Dr. Silas Halsey. South Hampton, L. I.

Dr. Aaron F. Gardner, 1800. East Hampton, L. I.

Dr. Samuel Latham, 1780. South Hampton, L. I.

Dr. George Punderson, 1780. Brookhaven, L. I.

Dr. Samuel Moore, 1761. Newtown, L. I.

Dr. William Lawrence, 1774. Musquito Cove, L. I.

Dr. Richard Udall, 1800. Islip, L. I. Died Oct. 6, 1841, aged ninety years.

Dr. Joshua Clark, 1780. Southold, L. I.

Dr. James E. DeKay. Oyster Bay, L. I.

Dr. Richard Sharpe. North Hempstead, L. I.

Dr. Purdy. North Hempstead, L. I.

Dr. Drake. North Hempstead, L. I.

The town of North Hempstead claims the following as having been born in the town:

Samuel Mitchill, M. D., 1764, Professor of Natural History, etc., etc.

Benjamin Kissam, M. D., Professor of "The Institutes of Medicine."

Richard S. Kissam, M. D., Professor of Surgery.

Wright Post, M. D., Professor of Surgery.

Valentine Mott, M. D., 1785. Professor of Surgery.

Dr. D. W. Kissam, born in Cow Neck, March 23, 1763. He married the daughter of Dr. Benjamin Treadwell, June 26, 1787. At the death of Dr. Sandford, 1795, he removed to Glen Cove, where he remained in practice until his death, November 21, 1839, at the age of seventy-six years.

Nathaniel S. Prime, in his History of Long Island, published in 1845, informs us that in 1802 the town of Brooklyn had but eighty-six freeholders, but that it was rapidly increasing in population, so that in 1816 the total population was 4,402. In the latter year the town was invested with the powers of a village. The impulse it received at this time soon became manifested, so that in 1822 the total population was about 8,000.

The formation of medical societies on Long Island dates from the organization of the Suffolk County Medical Society, which was organized July 22, 1806. The early records of this society have been lost, but as nearly as can be ascertained at the present time, Drs. A. G. Thompson, W. S. Preston, and Dr. B. D. Carpenter were prominently identified with its formation. The first delegate to the New York State Medical Society was Dr. Nathaniel Miller, in 1818, and the second was Dr. Charles H. Havens in 1820.

This was followed by the Queens County Medical Society, which was organized October 1, 1806, at Jamaica, with the following as its first officers: Daniel Minema, President; Henry Mott, Vice-President; Thomas Cock, Secretary; and James Searing, Treasurer. But it is evident that they did not meet with success, for on December 17, 1829, a second society was formed. This also seems to have met with adverse circumstances, for the present society dates only from 1853.

At a preliminary meeting of the physicians of the county of Kings, held at Flatbush on the 25th of February, 1822, at which Dr. Charles Ball, Matthew Wendell, John Car-

penter, William D. Creed, Francis H. Dubois, and Adrian Vanderveer, were present, the organization of a County Medical Society was decided upon, and carried into effect. At an adjourned meeting, held on March 2, 1822, at the inn of William Stephenson, Brooklyn, the organization was perfected by the election of the following officers:

Cornelius Low, President; Matthew Wendell, Vice-President; Adrian Vanderveer, Secretary; and John Carpenter, Treasurer. At a second meeting, in addition to those present at the first one, were Drs. Joseph G. T. Hunt and Thomas Wilson Henry. A third meeting was held on the 8th of April, at which time a code of by-laws was adopted, and the following gentlemen presented their credentials:

Cornelius Low, licensed in 1782, died 1830.

Francis H. Dubois, licensed 1802, was born May 21, 1783, and died Dec. 27, 1837.

Matthew Wendell, licensed 1804, was born July, 1779, and died July 11, 1860.

Jos. Gedney T. Hunt, licensed 1804, was born in 1783, and died June 25, 1848.

Charles Ball, licensed 1806, died 1845.

William D. Creed, licensed 1809, was born April 4, 1787, and died 1870.

John Carpenter, licensed 1812, was born April 17, 1791, and died Sept. 13, 1864.

Adrian Vanderveer, M. D., Col. P. & S., N. Y., 1818, was born Dec. 21, 1796, and died July 5, 1857.

Thomas Wilson Henry, M. D., Col. P. & S., N. Y., 1820, died 1867.

The above named gentlemen founded the Medical Society of the County of Kings.

At the meeting of May 8th, Dr. Matthew Wendell was appointed delegate to the New York State Society, and Drs. Jos. G. T. Hunt, T. W. Henry, and Charles Ball, censors according to law.

In July, 1822, the society adopted a seal, bearing the figure of a serpent spirally wound around a staff, with the inscription, "Scientia

Salusque Deo," and around the margin the words, "Societas Medica Comitatus Regis. Instituta A. D. 1822."

At the annual meeting in April, 1825, the venerable President, Dr. Cornelius Low, resigned his office in consequence of his intention to altogether abandon the practice of physic, on account of his age and its attendant infirmities. Dr. Low enjoyed a large practice in Bushwick, New Lots, and part of Newtown. He was an ardent Patriot. He remained throughout his life unmarried. His death occurred about the year 1830. He was succeeded by Dr. George Cox.

The "Brooklyn Medical Journal" of January, 1888, contains a short article on the formation of the Medical Society of the County of Kings.

The first physician that settled in Brooklyn was Dr. John N. Barbarin, who established himself on Front street, which was then the main road, and remained in practice from 1784 to 1815. He was a Frenchman by birth, and came to this country as a surgeon in the British service. He was for a while stationed here during the occupation of Long Island by the British, afterwards resigning from the British service. He married a daughter of Mr. Bamper, and entered upon the practice of his profession in the village of Brooklyn. He died greatly respected.

Dr. Osborn conducted the first drug store in Brooklyn, on the corner of Sands and Jay streets. In 1811 it was bought by Ithiel Smead, who was followed by Dr. J. W. Smith, who removed the store to Hicks and Fulton streets.

Dr. Jos. G. T. Hunt's office was on the corner of Concord and Fulton streets. Dr. Chas. Hall's office was on Pearl street; Dr. Daniel McNeil at 22 Hicks street, and Dr. John W. Smith, 16 Concord street.

In 1809, the yellow fever prevailed in Brooklyn, producing what was known as the newspaper war between the physicians of the village. Among those particularly interested

were Drs. Osborn, Ball, and Wendell. Dr. Ball was President from 1833 to 1835, and Dr. Wendell in 1836, of the Medical Society of Kings County. Dr. Wendell was Health Physician from 1827 to 1834, and again from 1851 to 1856.

Dr. Osborn removed to New York, and Drs. Ball and Wendell succeeded to his practice, their office being at the corner of Sands and Fulton streets. Dr. Ball's house is represented in Guy's Brooklyn Snow Scene of 1820. See page 403 of this volume.

Dr. Francis H. Dubois and John Carpenter were in practice in the town of New Utrecht. During the yellow fever epidemic Dr. J. E. Dubois, son of F. H. Dubois, fell a victim to the disease. A beautiful monument erected to his memory marks his resting place in the old village graveyard. Dr. Carpenter, in 1825, organized the first Sabbath school in the village of Fort Hamilton, its sessions being held in a barn. In 1826 he organized the New Utrecht Sabbath-school, of which he was superintendent until his death.

Drs. Adrian Vanderveer and William D. Creed practiced medicine in the town of Flatbush. Dr. Vanderveer was on July 24, 1832, chosen the first Health Officer, one of his assistants being Dr. Creed. Dr. William Duryea Creed was born April 4, 1787. He was Sheriff of Kings County in 1811, and died in 1870.

In 1823 the Reformed Church organized a Sabbath-school, of which Dr. Vanderveer was the first superintendent, which position he held for thirty years. He was President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1837 and 1838. He received the degree of A. M. from Columbia College in 1816.

Dr. Jos. G. T. Hunt was the first Health Officer of Brooklyn, being such during the years 1825 and 1826. He was well known in Masonic circles, being Master of Hohenlinden Lodge, No. 56, F. & A. M., in 1825, and Scribe of Nassau Chapter, R. A. M., during the same year. For a few years pre-

vious to this time he was surgeon to the Marine Barracks. He was President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings from 1825 to 1831.

Thomas Wilson Henry's office was at No. 67 Sands street, corner of Jay street. He was President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings during the years 1831-1832.

The above facts are related by Henry R. Stiles, in his "History of Kings County, including Brooklyn," 1884, vol. II, page 887; also in part by S. M. Ostrander, in his "History of Brooklyn and Kings County," 1894, vol. II, page 32.

From the organization of the Medical Society of the County in Kings, in 1822, until the repeal of that power by the Legislature in 1881, the society conferred sixteen licenses to

practice medicine, as follows (Manual, 1888, page 25):

Nelson A. Garrison.....	1824
Joseph N. Smith.....	1827.
John Fred Sickels.....	1827.
Hartshorne Gregory.....	1829.
William A. Clarke.....	1832.
Henry A. Ruding.....	1832.
Philip Harvey.....	1833.
John V. E. Vanderhoef.....	1833.
Stephen M. Disbrow.....	1834.
Henry J. Cullen.....	1843.
Nelson J. Tucker.....	1848.
John Van Ness.....	1852.
William H. Van Duyue.....	1857.
George Wieber.....	1875.
John Mears.....	1878.
W. E. Conroy.....	1879.



LONG ISLAND COLLEGE HOSPITAL

CHAPTER L.

THE MEDICAL SOCIETY OF THE COUNTY OF KINGS.

BROOKLYN'S CITY HOSPITAL AND SIMILAR INSTITUTIONS—A LONG ROLL OF HONORABLE PROFESSIONAL NAMES.

THE formation of the state and county medical societies was authorized by the Act of 1806. Soon several county societies were formed in various parts of the State, though the Society of the County of Kings was not organized until March 2, 1822, at the residence of Simon Voiz, in Flatbush.

The first annual meeting took place on April 8, 1822, at a tavern called "Auld Lang Syne," conducted by William Stephenson, at Fulton and Nassau streets. The following were the first officers and founders: Cornelius Low, President; Matthew Wendell, Vice-President; John Carpenter, Treasurer; Adrian Vanderveer, Secretary and Corresponding Secretary; Joseph G. T. Hunt, Thomas W. Henry, Charles Ball, Censors; Matthew Wendell, Delegate to State Medical Society; Francis H. Du Bois and William D. Creed. From 1822 to 1827 the meetings alternated between the house at Flatbush and the Auld Lang Syne tavern, after which until 1857 they were held quarterly in the Apprentices' Library Building, Henry and Cranberry streets.

The records show that for a number of years the Society confined itself to the discharge of the duties connected with the "regulating of the practice of physics and surgery within its limits." The nature of the work may be more clearly comprehended by the lay reader when the fact is known that the law of

the State required all practising physicians and Surgeons to connect themselves with the society in the county in which they resided. Thus, the statute of the State in 1827 required the President of the County Medical Society to serve personally a written notice on every physician and surgeon residing in the county, not a member of the Society, directing him to apply for and receive a certificate of membership within sixty days after the service of such notice.

The history of old Brooklyn records many physicians whose standing was open to question. As it was necessary for the protection of the public at large, as well as that of the reputation of the medical profession, it may be readily understood that the officers and members of the Society had sufficient work in enforcing the law of the State during the first thirty odd years of its existence. The first historian of the Society was Theodore L. Mason, M. D., who recorded the above facts in a short sketch of the Society published in 1858, at which times the meetings were held at the Brooklyn Lyceum, better known as the Brooklyn Institute, on Washington street, near Concord, 1837-1866.

Although so occupied by the business of enforcing the law, the Society found time as a society to aid the poor as early as 1835, when Isaac J. Rapelye, M. D., President of the Society, recommended that a committee be ap-

pointed to prepare a memorial to the Common Council proposing the establishment of a City Hospital for the care of the sick poor. It would be well to notice here that a dispensary had been organized by individuals in 1833 at the corner of Jay and Sands streets. This was the first Brooklyn Dispensary. The attending physicians were Doctors J. Sullivan Thorne and W. A. Clark. The consulting physician was Matthew Wendell.

To return to the hospital project, the Committee named below were appointed, and their efforts resulted in the organization of the City Hospital in 1839, then located in Adams street, near Johnson. Committee: Theodore L. Mason, M. D., Isaac J. Rapelye, M. D., John C. Fanning, M. D., Matthew Wendell, M. D., George Marvin, M. D., Samuel Boyd, M. D. The staff at this time included: Theodore F. King, M. D., President from 1840 to 1842; John Sullivan Thorne, M. D., Secretary; and the attending physicians were Purcell Cooke, M. D., George Marvin, M. D., and Samuel Boyd, M. D.

The Brooklyn City Hospital may, therefore, be considered the nucleus of the great hospital system which is one of the crowning glories of our city. Our hospitals are established for the relief of suffering, rich and poor are alike benefited, and it is a question which derives the greater good from these institutions. The Long Island College Hospital, as well as the Brooklyn City Hospital, owes its inception to members of the Society, Drs. Daniel Ayres, Louis Bauer, and John Byrne, together with the first council, and all but three of the first faculty were members of the Society. Owing to the fact that during the first thirty years of its organization the Society was obliged to expend its efforts in the enforcement of the law, there was little or no time left for scientific work. As a result, the Brooklyn Medico-Chirurgical Society was formed on November 10, 1856, with Andrew Otterson as President. The members of the society were, with few exceptions, members

of the County Society. During the ten years of its existence the society was a most active body. Here for the first time in the medical history of the city of Brooklyn was the opportunity offered to present papers on the advancement made in medicine and surgery, the discussion of which tended not alone to benefit the members, but the community at large.

In 1858, by a revision of the State statutes, the County Medical Society was relieved from its work of regulating the practice of medicine and began the publication of its transactions. This was simply the beginning of the great work accomplished here on behalf of the people of this city. At this time the society was made up of men who were ready to give not only their services but their lives when the opportunity came. For example, during the yellow fever epidemic in 1856 at New Utrecht Doctors John L. Crane and James E. Du Bois gave their lives in their endeavor to save those who were stricken with the disease. A few years before, in 1854, Joseph C. Hutchison, M. D., took charge of the Brooklyn Cholera Hospital, retaining its management for some years. Later, during the epidemic of 1866, William Henry Thayer, M. D., also a member of the society, devoted his energies to the Hamilton Avenue Cholera Hospital. William J. Swalm took charge of the Cholera Hospital in the City Park, called the City Park Hospital, near the Navy Yard. Besides this, various members of the society gave what leisure time they had to the improvement of the Brooklyn public schools. Doctor J. Sullivan Thorne was president of the Brooklyn Board of Education from 1868 to 1871. From the beginning of the school system in the town of Brooklyn to the present day there have been physicians connected with the Board, ever ready to give their advice on matters pertaining to the public health and to better the condition of the children.

The first Health Officer of Brooklyn was Dr. J. G. T. Hunt, who went into office in 1825. He was one of the organizers and sec-

ond President of the Society, and from his time until the present, with three exceptions, every Health Officer or Commissioner has been connected with the County Society. No one can estimate what a vast amount of work these men, whose lives are devoted to the healing art, have accomplished for the people in the city of Brooklyn. The monumental work performed in this direction by Dr. A. N. Bell is sufficient of itself to test the sincerity of the Society's members in behalf of the public good. It has been said that the physicians have not received the recognition which is their due. As a matter of fact, however, the records show that many of our physicians have been called upon to fill places of honor, both in the State and National Societies. These positions have been such as to command the highest integrity and intellectual development. Dr. Joseph C. Hutchison, as well as three members of the Society who are still living, have held the presidency of the New York State Medical Society. Two of its specialists have been President of the New York Obstetrical Society, one of whom has also been President of the American Gynecological Society. Dr. Joseph C. Hutchison held the office of President of the New York Pathological Society. Another of the members has been President of the New York Neurological Society. Still another of the American Dermatological Society, and two more have been Presidents of the American Association for the Cure of Inebriates. These few examples show that the ability of Brooklyn men has not been entirely disregarded, and proves conclusively that the members of the County Society have been active in both State and National Societies, while eight of the members have received the degree of LL. D.

The first offspring of the Society was the above-mentioned Medico-Chirurgical Society. The second was the Brooklyn Pathological Society, organized as a section of the County Medical Society in 1870, under the

direction of Richard Cresson Styles, President of the Society at that time. To-day it is an active body, independent of membership in the County Society, though, with a few exceptions, its members are also members of the old County Society. In 1866 the Society changed from quarterly to monthly meetings, securing rooms in the Hamilton Building, at 44 Court street, where it continued to meet until 1875. Then removing to Everett Hall, 398 Fulton street, where they met until 1887, when they purchased the Bridge street building, 365 Bridge street, and remained until August, 1898. At present the meetings are held at Apollo Hall, 102 Court street. During the past few years the Society has been making efforts to commemorate events connected with its members, and with medical history. The first of these was a dinner to the late Dr. Andrew Otterson, on April 25, 1895, in honor of his completing fifty years of active practice in our city. Next, the Jenner Centennial, commemorating the inauguration of vaccination, May 14, 1896, all the guests receiving bronze medals in commemoration of the occasion. Then the 75th Anniversary of the Kings County Medical Society, April 11, 1897. Finally, the laying of the corner-stone of the new building of the Kings County Medical Society, November 10, 1898.

The early history of the Society is so closely identified with the lives of its members that it is well to give a brief sketch of the biographies of the founders.

Cornelius Low, M. D., the first President of the Society, was born in Albany, New York, about 1750. He was licensed to practice medicine in 1782. Served the Society in the capacity of President for three terms, beginning 1822. Little is known of his personal history. He died in Bushwick, Long Island, in 1830.

Dr. Matthew Wendell, M. D., the first Vice-President and sixth President of the Society, was born at Albany, N. Y., July 9, 1777. He came to Brooklyn from his birthplace, Albany, having studied under Dr. Hyde, of that city.

He became a licentiate in 1804, and entering into partnership with Dr. Charles Ball in 1805 he opened an office at the corner of Sands and Fulton streets. In 1812 he became surgeon in the United States Army. From 1815

Dr. John Carpenter, first Treasurer of the Society, was the son of Anthony Carpenter; his mother was a daughter of the late Rev. John Moffat, a Presbyterian preacher; also the early tutor of Governor DeWitt Clinton. Dr.



THE LIBRARY OF THE MEDICAL SOCIETY OF THE COUNTY OF KINGS.

to 1816 he was free vaccinator. In 1815 he was President of the Society for the Prevention of Vice in the Town of Brooklyn. He was Health Officer of this city during the years 1831 to 1838, and 1851 to 1857, and in hours of pestilence, as well as quiet, showed great executive ability. He died in July, 1860.

Carpenter was born at Goshen, New York, on April 17, 1791. His education was conducted by the Rev. John Moffat; he came, however, to New York about 1807. On his arrival in the city he made his home with Rev. James B. Romeyn, D. D., and found employment in the Governor's office. A few years later he

began to study medicine under Dr. Douglas, of New York, as preceptor. He attended the course of lectures at the old College of Physicians and Surgeons, and in 1812 was licensed to practice by the New York State Medical Society. It is believed that he obtained the first license granted by the Kings County Society, which was given him in 1822. At the beginning of the war of 1812 he was connected with the United States Army, and continued with the army until 1822, when he commenced private practice in Fort Hamilton and New Utrecht. In the same year he was one of the organizers of the Medical Society. He also organized the first Sunday-school in Fort Hamilton, of which he was Superintendent for thirty-eight years. In fact he might be termed the father of the Brooklyn Sunday-school system. He died on September 13, 1864.

Dr. Adrian Vandever was born in Flatbush December 21, 1796. He was prepared for Columbia College at Erasmus Hall Academy, and after graduating from there studied medicine at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York. In 1819 he entered upon a practice which finally extended over the whole of Kings county. At the organization of the Society he was elected First Secretary, and became its seventh President, during the years 1837 to 1838. He and Dr. T. W. Henry were the only members of the Society at its organization who were graduates of medical colleges, all others being licentiates. In the epidemic of Asiatic cholera in 1832 Dr. Vandever was appointed Health Officer of Flatbush. He was one of the first physicians to abandon general practice and confine himself to a special branch of the profession. This aroused opposition from his medical brethren, but he persevered, and eventually accomplished much. He died July 5, 1827, in his sixty-fifth year. Like many of the early physicians, he was closely identified with church work, having organized the Reformed Church Sabbath School of Flatbush in 1825, of which he was Superintendent from 1825 to 1857.

The duties of the Censors were far more onerous than the general public can realize. It was their duty to examine candidates and license them to practice medicine. The first three men who formed the Board of Censors were Drs. Joseph G. T. Hunt, Thomas W. Henry and Charles Ball.

Dr. Hunt was born in 1783. He studied medicine with Drs. Whitehead, Hicks and Bard, was licensed in 1804 and appointed Assistant Surgeon in the Navy. After having been promoted to full surgeon, 1806, he served in the Algerian war under Decatur, and was on board the "Chesapeake" when she was captured by the "Leopard." Later on he was stationed at the Brooklyn Navy Yard, and in addition to his official duty acquired considerable private practice. In 1820 he resigned from the service. In 1825 he was appointed First Health Officer of Brooklyn, with a salary of \$200 a year, and served until 1830. He was also President of the Medical Society from 1825 to 1830. He died in August, 1830, having held the office of President longer than any other member up to the present time.

Thomas W. Henry was born in the city of New York June 17, 1796. His education was obtained in the private boarding schools of New York. In 1818 he entered the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, receiving the degree of M. D. in 1820. Dr. Henry began the practice of his profession in the village of Brooklyn, as Brooklyn at that time did not extend much further than the present City Hall, the population being about 5,000. His first office was at Sands and Jay streets, then he removed near the further corner of Henry and Orange streets, and the old directories give his address as 65 Henry street. The name of this street was chosen by the Trustees of the village of Brooklyn, April 8, 1819. According to the custom then in vogue, Dr. Henry conducted for a number of years a drug store at the corner of Sands and Jay streets. In addition to holding the office of Censor in the Society, Dr. Henry was elected to the Vice-

Presidency in 1827, and to the Presidency in 1831. In 1832 he was elected an honorary member of the Medical Society of the State of New York. The records show that he was preceptor for the late George Gilfillan and Ripley E. W. Adams. It is said of Dr. Henry that he was a man of marked education, stern and conscious in his manner, ever ready to assist the sick and needy by his advice and treatment.

In comparison with the other two Censors little is known of Dr. Charles C. Ball. He was licensed July 4, 1806, and entered into private practice. In 1824 he and Dr. Wendell had joint offices at Columbia and Cranberry streets. They then moved to 112 Fulton street, corner of Main. He erected the first three-story brick house in Brooklyn, where he lived at the time of his death. This house was surrounded by beautiful grounds, and is pictured in Guy's snow scene of 1820. Besides holding the position of Censor he was President from 1833 to 1834. He was also a member of the Society for the Prevention of Vice. It is interesting to note that he was the richest physician of his time, owning all of what is now known as Brooklyn Heights; he was the first to give up horseback for the more luxurious carriage.

Of Dr. Francis Du Bois, like Dr. Ball, little is known. He was the son of John E. Du Bois, of the town of New Utrecht. Was born May 21, 1873. He married Sarah Bergen, and died January 22, 1827.

With Dr. Creed, however, we are more fortunate. He was born in 1787, in the town of Jamaica. His early education was obtained at Friars' Hall Academy, with the addition of a few years at Columbia College. He began the study of medicine in 1805, under the preceptorship of Dr. Comaine, in New York. He also attended medical lectures at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, and was licensed to practice medicine in 1809. He accepted the position of interne in Bellevue Hospital during the year 1810, being the second interne in that institution.

In 1811 he began the practice of medicine in the village of Brooklyn. The same year he was Sheriff of Kings county, and was the only medical man in Kings county to hold that office. In 1812 he was appointed surgeon in Jeremiah Johnson's brigade, stationed at Fort Greene. He resumed the practice of his profession after the close of the war, and in 1822 became one of the organizers of the Medical Society of the County of Kings. When the first board of health was organized in Flatbush, in 1832, by John B. Zabriskie, M. D., with Dr. Adrian Vandever as Health Officer, his associates were Drs. William D. Creed and Robert Edmond, all members of the Society. Soon after Dr. Creed removed to Jamaica, and connected himself with the Queens County Medical Society, of which he was President during the years 1856 and 1857. He was also a member of the Suffolk County Medical Society. Dr. Creed, like many of the old physicians, was interested in the temperance cause, and for a number of years was President of the Queens County Temperance Society. He also organized the First Reformed Church at Queens, Long Island, laying the cornerstone in September, 1858. Dr. Creed died in 1870, aged eighty-three years.

In addition to the biographies of the founders it will be interesting to touch briefly upon the lives of the deceased presidents.

Dr. Isaac J. Rapelye became the fifth President of the Society in 1835. He came of a very interesting family, for tradition has it that the first white child born on Long Island was a Rapelye. The date of the Doctor's birth has never been ascertained. In fact, little is known of him up to the date of his graduation from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1820. He practiced in Newtown from 1820 to 1830, and in Brooklyn from 1830 to 1847. He held the position of Health Officer from 1839 to 1840; was Censor of the Society during the years 1831, 1832 and 1833. In 1847 he met with a tragic death. While going upstairs a favorite dog jumped upon

him with such force that he was thrown the full length of the stairs. It was found, upon examination, that his neck was dislocated, thus producing instant death.

Dr. John Barrea Zabriskie was President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1839, being the eighth in line of succession of the preceding officers. He was prepared for college at Millstone, New Jersey. He entered Union, Schenectady, leaving that college in 1823. The following year he began the study of medicine in the office of Mr. William McKeesick, of Millstone, and became a student in the College of Physicians in New York, 1825. In 1826 he was licensed to practice medicine by the Medical Society of the State of New Jersey. Not being satisfied with this legal qualification, he entered the University of Pennsylvania, and received the degree of M. D. in 1827. In 1830, after having practiced for a time in New York, he removed to New Lots, and thence to Flatbush, where he spent the remaining eighteen years of his life in the active practice of medicine. He joined the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1829. He was Censor and Secretary in 1831-2 and Vice-President in 1833-4-5, and was President in 1839. He also represented the county organization in the State Medical Society in 1829-31, where he presented a paper on the medical topography of Kings county, which was published in the transactions of 1832. During that same year he was a member of the Flatbush Board of Health and in 1847 superintendent of the Flatbush School District, which included New Lots. Besides these positions he was at one time physician in charge of the Kings County Almshouse, and at another surgeon to the Two Hundred and Forty-first Regiment, New York State Militia. He was also trustee of the Erasmus Hall Academy, and was an elder in the Dutch Reformed Church. In 1848 he died of a contagious disease contracted in his professional career. His son, John L. Zabriskie, deceased, was a member, and his two

grandsons are now active members of the Society.

The date of the birth of Dr. Purcell Cook is not known. He was licensed by the County Medical Society in 1824, and in 1851 received the honorary degree of M. D. from the Regents of the University of the City of New York. He practiced all his life in Brooklyn, and held the following positions in the Society, of which he was a member during the years 1835 to 1860: was Censor in 1835, Vice-President in 1839, President in 1840, 1841 and 1845. He died a bachelor December 24, 1860.

The next in line is Dr. Theodore Lewis Mason. He was born in Cooperstown, New York, September 30, 1803. He was the son of the Rev. David Mason, of Norwich, Connecticut, and a direct descendant of the John Mason who came to Boston from England in 1632. The early education of Dr. Mason was received under the preceptorship of Rev. Isaac Lewis. He began the study of medicine in 1822 at Greenwich, Connecticut, under Darius Meadé, M. D. A few years later, after matriculating at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, with David Hosback as his preceptor, he graduated in 1825. In that same year he began the practice of his profession at Milton, Connecticut, where he remained until 1832, when he removed to New York city. In 1834 he came to Brooklyn, remaining here until his death, February 12, 1882.

Bradley Parker graduated from the Medical Department of Dartmouth College in 1824. In 1836 he joined the Medical Society of which he remained a member until his death in 1874. He was Censor of the Society during the years 1838, 1840, 1841, 1846 and 1847. Secretary in 1842 and 1843, and President in 1844.

John Sullivan Thorne was born in the city of New York, April 19, 1807. Entered Union College and received the degree of A. M. in 1826, and immediately began the study of medicine in the offices of Drs. Matthew Wendell and Charles Ball, two of the organizers and ex-Presidents of the Medical Society. Re-

ceived the degree of M. D. from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York, in the class of 1829, and immediately began the practice of medicine in Brooklyn, at 51 Sands street. In 1830 he assisted in organizing the first dispensary in Brooklyn; when the dispensary was discontinued in 1839 he assisted in the organization of the City Hospital, and was one of the attending physicians until 1855. During the years 1844 and 1845 he was President of the Hospital. In 1832 he was physician to the Cholera Hospital, and from 1840 to 1880 physician to the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum. In 1876 he became a member of the Council of the Long Island College Hospital, and, at the same time, one of the consulting surgeons. In 1879 he was a member of the Board of Regents. His connection with the Medical Society, county of Kings, dates from 1834. He became the Vice-President in 1844, President in 1846, and Censor in 1851. In 1843 Dr. Thorne became a member of the Brooklyn Board of Education, retaining his membership until 1872. In 1868 he was elected President of the board, retaining the position until his retirement in 1872, and as far as is known was the only physician who ever held that position. In addition to these various offices of trust he held the position of Trustee of the Brooklyn Female Academy, and was also a director of the Packer Institute of Brooklyn. His life was a record of usefulness.

Lucius Hyde was the son of Isaac Hyde, M. D., of Connecticut. He was born December 13, 1800. Educated at Union College, he studied under his father, Isaac Hyde, in 1823, and in 1825 was licensed by the New York State Medical Society. Practiced in Brooklyn from 1825 to 1862. Joined the Society in 1835. He was Censor during the years 1843, 1846, 1848, and President in 1847. A delegate to the New York State Medical Society 1848-50, and to the American Medical Society 1847, 1849, 1850 and 1851. He died September 11, 1862.

Chauncey Leeds Mitchell, A. M., M. D., was born at New Canaan, Connecticut, November 13, 1813. He graduated at Union College in 1833, received the degree of A. M. in 1836, and the degree of M. D. in 1836, from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York. He practiced medicine in Brooklyn from 1843 to 1888, was a member of the Council of Long Island College Hospital from 1860 to 1888; a member of the Board of Regents from 1878 to 1888. Was Professor of Obstetrics at Castleton, Vermont, Medical College from 1842 to 1845. Member of the Medical Society of the county, of which he was President in 1848, and 1858 to 1859; New York Academy of Medicine from 1847 to 1888. The American Academy of Medicine from 1879 to 1888, and the Brooklyn Pathological Society from 1871 to 1888.

Henry James Cullen, born at Manor Hamilton, Sligo, Ireland, July 2, 1806, came to this country when about fourteen, remaining in New York five or six years, when he removed to New Orleans, where he began the study of medicine. In 1828 he graduated from the Geneva Medical College, in New York. Immediately after graduation he returned to Matamoros, Mexico, where he had previously lived some years, and remained there three years. In 1837, after a trip abroad, he settled in Brooklyn, where he resided at the time of his death. He became a licentiate of the Medical Society in 1843, a member in 1844, Vice-President in 1846 to 1847, and was elected its President in 1849. He served as Censor in 1851, 1856 to 1857. He was for years one of the physicians of the Brooklyn City Hospital, and at the time of his death consulting physician to St. Peter's Hospital and St. Mary's. He was a member of the Brooklyn Medico-Chirurgical Society from 1856 to 1866, and President in 1866. He was one of the worthiest practitioners Brooklyn ever had. The last time he was seen by some of his medical friends was on a cold night, when the air was filled with snow and rain, the pavements slip-

pery with sleet, walking a good distance in spite of his chronic enemy, asthma, to witness the transfusion of blood from the carotid of a lamb to the veins of a man enfeebled by disease. Such occasions Dr. Cullen never allowed to pass. He was a practitioner of the old school, but in perfect sympathy with the progressive spirit of the profession. To Dr. Cullen the medical corps of the Navy owes a debt of gratitude which, when known, will be fully appreciated. It was he who instigated the movement in 1859 to secure for the surgeons a right which had often been asked for, and as often denied. Acting upon his recommendation, the Society appointed a committee with power to promote, by all lawful means, the passage by Congress according to the Naval medical corps their just demands. Circulars were addressed to medical societies far and wide. Petitions were sent to Washington and members of Congress appealed to personally to further the cause, which two years later signally triumphed. Dr. Cullen was a man of decided natural ability and high intellectual qualities.

James Harvey Henry was born at Rutland, Massachusetts, February 22, 1806. He died in Brooklyn November 1, 1875. He graduated at the Berkshire Medical Institute in 1827. A member of the Council of the Long Island College Hospital from 1860 to 1867, and of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, of which he was President in 1850.

Dr. Samuel Johnson Osborn was born May 4, 1813, at Mount Airy, Germantown, Pennsylvania. His early schooling was obtained at the Middletown Academy, Connecticut, and Joseph Hoxie's School, New York. After completing his education he entered the drug business, where he remained until 1840, when he began the study of medicine in the city of New York, under the preceptorship of Drs. Nichol H. Deering and Joseph Smith. Entering the Medical Department of Rutgers College in 1842, and the New York College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1843, he obtained

the degree of M. D. in 1844, and began the practice of medicine in the city of Brooklyn, connecting himself with the Medical Society the same year, serving the Society as Censor, 1846-50-52-55, and as President in 1851. He was Secretary from 1845 to 1851. In 1855 he removed to Oshkosh, Wisconsin, where his ability was recognized by the citizens, in evidence of which he was called upon to fill the following positions: Supervisor; School Superintendent, 1859 to 1869; School Commissioner, 1869 to 1871, and Alderman, 1871 to 1872. He was an upright man, a profound student of human nature, and an honor to his profession. During sixty years of his life he was connected with the Masonic order, having held the position of Master and High Priest in his lodge and chapter.

George Marvin was born at Norwalk, Connecticut, February 23, 1798. Having been prepared for college in his native town, he entered Yale University in 1814, receiving the degree of A. M. in 1817. In 1818 he matriculated with the University of Pennsylvania, where he received the degree of M. D. in 1821. He began private practice in Rochester, remaining there until 1828, when he came to New York city. In 1831 he removed to the city of Brooklyn, where he engaged in active practice until 1874. In 1831 he became a member of the Medical Society, holding the position of Censor in 1837-38 and 1839. Was Vice-President in 1840 to 1841, and President in 1852. He was Assistant Physician to the City Hospital, 1840 to 1845, and a member of the Council of the Long Island College Hospital from 1867 to 1874. For thirty-five years he was a member of the First Presbyterian church of Brooklyn.

Dr. Andrew Otterson was born near Amsterdam, Fulton county, New York, February 22, 1822, and died April 15, 1897. His academic education was received at Hempstead Harbor, Long Island, and Freehold, New Jersey, and in the year 1840 he commenced the study of medicine at Whitehouse, New Jersey,

having for his preceptor Dr. William Johnson of that place. He went to the University Medical College, graduating from there in 1844, and immediately selecting Brooklyn as the field of his future efforts for fame and success. In 1845 he became a member of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, and remained a member fifty-two years. His connection with the Medical Society covers a period of more than two-thirds of his life. He signed his name as the seventy-eighth member on the roll, and added to that eminent list an unimpeachable presence, a sublime purpose, and a dignity of character that remained unquestioned, and lived to enjoy the growth of its membership to more than six hundred. At the time of his death he was the oldest ex-President of the Society in active membership, the oldest non-resident ex-President living being Samuel J. Osborn, who filled the chair in 1851, removed to Wisconsin in 1862, attaining his eighty-fourth year of age on May 4, 1897. Between these two there existed a warm friendship, which time failed to dim or distance to sever. Dr. Otterson's membership in the Medical Society was not without recognition. He was President in 1853, 1854, and again in 1868. He held the position of Censor in 1849, 1864 and 1865. Secretary in 1850, 1851 and 1852, and Treasurer from 1855 to 1861. He also became associated with the Brooklyn Medical Society in 1856, and was its President in 1857; with the Brooklyn Médico-Chirurgical Society from 1857 to 1866, being its President in 1857, 1858 and 1859; the Brooklyn Pathological Society from 1877 to 1897; the Brooklyn Medical Book Club from 1892 to 1897, and the Alumni Association of the University Medical College of the city of New York, of which he was elected Vice-President in 1896. While thus professionally affiliated there were social duties which claimed his attention; among these were Altair Lodge, No. 601, F. & A. Masons, Constellation Chapter, R. A. M., Brooklyn Consistory, No. 24, and Ancient Scottish Rite, thirty-third degree. To cease here would be denying him the time-

honored association of a membership where his presence was ever punctual and an inspiration for good—a Fellow for fifty years of Montauk Lodge, No. 114, I. O. O. F. In his early professional life he filled the position of Attending Physician to the Brooklyn Dispensary from 1850 to 1855. In professional public life Dr. Otterson was Health Officer of the city of Brooklyn in 1872, and again in 1883; was President of the Board of Health in 1875 and 1877; Commissioner of Health in 1879 and 1880, and again from February 6, 1886, to February 1, 1888. Like many physicians in active practice, Dr. Otterson found little time for contributing to the medical literature of the day. He was essentially a practical man, who never lost a suggestion, and was never found without one. His reports of the Health Department are chiefly clerical, but his papers on the cholera epidemics of 1848 and 1854 in Brooklyn give proof of a facile pen and an ability to understand the hygienic requirements necessary in times of sudden outbursts of disease. Dr. Otterson's life was one continued earnest effort; right or wrong, he knew no middle ground. To his brothers in the profession he was singularly courteous, upright and void of dissimulation, ever ready to extend the helping hand. In ethics he was a moralist; in politics a Jacksonian Democrat; in the practice of his profession an ideal physician, kind, conscientious, faithful and beloved.

George I. Bennett was born November 15, 1809. He graduated at the University of the City of New York in 1842. Practiced in Brooklyn during his professional career, 1842 to 1875. He was the first outdoor temperance orator in Brooklyn, lecturing on Fort Greene plaza on Sunday afternoons, and using the stomachs of patients who had died of alcoholism (as prepared by Dr. John G. Johnson, of Brooklyn) to illustrate his text. He was a member of the Kings County Society, 1842 to 1875. The Vice-President in 1851; Censor in 1858; Librarian in 1859 to 1869, and President in 1855.

Timothy Anderson Wade was graduated

from Berkshire Medical Institute, 1843. He practiced medicine from 1844 to 1866. Was physician to the Brooklyn Dispensary, 1846 to 1850; physician to the Kings County Penitentiary, 1849 to 1859. A member of the Kings County Medical Society from 1845 to 1856. Was Secretary, 1847 to 1848 and 1849. Censor in 1849; President in 1856; Delegate to the American Medical Association in 1855. He died in Brooklyn, in April, 1866.

Samuel Boyde was born in Manhattan, in 1806, began studying medicine in New York city, 1825, with Dr. Alexander Stephens. Graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1828; post-graduate studies were conducted in the hospitals of Dublin, Edinburgh and Paris. Began private practice in New York city, 1829. In 1844 he moved to Staten Island, where he remained until 1848; also had an office in Brooklyn from 1830 to 1860. Health Officer of the city of Brooklyn from 1857 to 1859, and Visiting Physician in the City Hospital, 1840 to 1843. Member of Kings County Society, 1847 to 1861; was Vice-President in 1857. Delegate to the State Society in 1835. Physician to Seamen's Retreat, Staten Island, 1844 to 1848; a surgeon in the Seminole War, and the only member that contributed a pamphlet on the yellow fever of 1856 then prevalent in New Utrecht.

Daniel Brooks, M. D., born in Westmoreland, New Hampshire, in 1813, took the degree of A. M. from Yale University in 1839; the degree of M. D. from the Vermont Medical College in 1845; was interne at the Insane Asylum at Hartford, Connecticut, 1845 to 1846; practiced medicine in Brooklyn, 1846 to 1861; attending physician at the Brooklyn Dispensary, 1846 to 1850; member of the Kings County Society, 1847 to 1861; Vice-President, 1859; President, 1860; delegate to the American Association, 1860; died December 24, 1861.

Christopher Raborg McClellan, born in Baltimore, Maryland, in 1813; graduated from Yale University, 1833. Received the degree

of M. D. in the University of Maryland, 1835; was interne at Baltimore City Hospital and County Almshouse, 1835 to 1836; practiced medicine in Brooklyn, 1837 to 1887; Health Officer of Brooklyn, 1841 to 1842; attending physician City Hospital, 1845 to 1850; consulting physician, St. Peter's Hospital, 1877 to 1887; member of the Kings County Medical Society, 1839 to 1887; Censor in 1842; Vice-President, 1850 to 1860; President, 1861; member New York Mutual Aid Association, New York Academy of Medicine, State Medical Association, and in 1866 he was a delegate to the American Medical Association; Professor of Botany in the New York College of Pharmacy in 1839; he died in Brooklyn January 13, 1887.

Samuel Hart was born at Wakefield, Massachusetts, November 27, 1796; graduated at Harvard University (A. B., 1817; A. M., 1820; M. D., 1821). Began the practice of medicine at Beverly, Massachusetts, in 1821. In 1828 he removed to Oswego, New York, and in 1855 he removed to Brooklyn, where he died September 3, 1878. He was a member of the Kings County Medical Society, 1858 to 1878, and Censor in 1861, 1863 and 1870. Was President in 1862. He was a member of the Oswego Medical Society, 1829 to 1855, also a member of the American Medical Association and of the New York State Medical Society, and Fellow of Massachusetts Medical Society. He was Curator of the Medical Department of the University of Buffalo, and Surgeon to the Riflemen of Oswego, New York. He bequeathed his library to the Kings County Medical Society in 1878.

De Witt Clinton Enos, M. D., was born at De Ruyter, New York, March 17, 1820. Died in Brooklyn, New York, December 14, 1868. Received his medical education in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, graduating in 1846. He was professor of General and Descriptive Anatomy in the Long Island College Hospital, 1860 to 1867. Professor of operative and clinical surgery, Long Island

Hospital, 1867 to 1868. He was President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1863. He practiced medicine in the city of Brooklyn from 1847 to 1868.

Joseph Chrisman Hutchison was born in Howard county, Missouri, Feb. 22, 1827, died in Brooklyn, New York, July 17, 1887. Graduated M. D., University of Pennsylvania, 1848, receiving the degree of LL. D. from the University of Missouri in 1880. Was Professor of operative surgery and surgical anatomy of the Long Island College Hospital from 1860 to 1867. President of the Collegiate Department, 1886 and 1887. President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1864; New York State Medical Society, 1866; New York Pathological Society, 1871; and Health Commissioner of Brooklyn from 1873 to 1875, where he practiced medicine from 1853 to 1887.

John Terry Conkling, M. D. was born at Smithtown, Long Island, March 19, 1825, died in Brooklyn March 17, 1898, thus rounding out a useful life of more than the allotted time of three-score years and ten. His preliminary education was received in the schools at the place of his birth, and at the State Normal School of Albany, graduating from there in 1847. Shortly after this he came to Brooklyn, and in 1852 began the study of medicine in the office of De Witt Clinton Enos, M. D. Dr. Conkling matriculated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, attending lectures during the winters of 1853, 1854 and 1855, graduating in 1855. He began the practice of medicine in Brooklyn, 1855, and continued until incapacitated by sickness. Was Superintendent of the Metropolitan Board of Health from 1864 to 1870, and was made President of the Brooklyn Board of Health in 1873. Was a member of the Board of Education, 1864 to 1870; member Council of the Long Island College Hospital, 1886 to 1893; Physician to the Brooklyn Dispensary and Eye and Ear Infirmary and Consulting Physician of the Long Island College Hospital. Member of the Long

Island Historical Society; became a member of the Kings County Medical Society, 1859; Censor, and President in 1864, serving one term.

William W. Reese was born of Quaker parentage, about eighty-seven years ago, near Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He received the degree of M. D. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1845. After coming to this city he became a member of the Medical Society in the county of Kings in 1861. Six years after joining the society he was elected to the Presidency, which office he held during the year 1867. Dr. Reese was one of the constituent members of the New York Physicians' Mutual Aid Association. Was the first Vice-President, his term extending from 1871 to 1892. From 1874 he was also an active member of the Committee on Applications for Membership. Besides holding the office of President he was Librarian from 1870 to 1878 and later held the office of Assistant Secretary. He was elected a delegate to the New York State Medical Society for the years 1870 to 1873; a delegate to the American Medical Association from 1870 to 1879, and the National Quarantine and Sanitary Commission in 1866. He died on October 20, 1894.

Richard Cresson Styles was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, Oct. 4, 1830, died at Westchester, Pennsylvania, April 17, 1873. In 1851 he took the degree A. B. from Yale University, and in the following year began the study of medicine in the office of Thomas Turner, M. D., of Flatbush, Long Island, matriculating with the University of Pennsylvania, and receiving the degree of M. D. in 1854. The years 1855 to 1856 were spent in the Paris Hospitals. Returning to this country, he began the practice of medicine in the State of Vermont, where he continued until 1862, receiving in that year the appointment of surgeon of volunteers. In 1863 to 1864 he was surgeon in Hancock's corps, coming to the city of Brooklyn. In the same year he engaged in the practice of medicine, his office be-

ing at 16 Court street. He accepted an appointment as resident physician to the Kings County Hospital, remaining until 1866. During the years 1865 to 1866 he held the position of Superintendent to the Hospital. Under the Metropolitan Board of Health he held the office of Registrar of Kings county in 1866, and was Assistant Sanitary Superintendent from 1868 to 1870. Previous to his coming to Brooklyn he filled the following positions: Lecturer on Physiology, College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1861 to 1862; Professor of Physiology and Pathology, Vermont Medical College, 1857 to 1865; Professor of Physiology, Berkshire Medical Institute, Massachusetts, 1858 to 1862. His affiliation with medical societies has been as follows: Medical Society, County of Kings, 1865-1873; Vice-President, 1867; President, 1868-69; Censor, 1870; Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1870-73, of which he was one of the organizers. New York Academy of Medicine, 1865 to 1873. Delegate to the American Medical Association, 1865. In this connection it may be interesting to note that Dr. Styles had given some time to the study of Texas cattle disease, and discovered the parasite which caused the malady, and which Professor Haller, of Jena, named the fungus *Conisthecium Stilesianum*, in honor of the discoverer.


William H. Thayer was born in Milford, Massachusetts, June 18, 1822, became a member of the class of 1841, Harvard University, taking his A. B. in regular course. He received his M. D. from the Harvard Medical School in 1844. He was an interne of the Massachusetts General Hospital during his student period. For about ten years he practiced at Boston and at Newtown Centre, Massachusetts. From 1854 to 1862 he resided at Keene, New Hampshire. Was a member of the State Medical Society, New Hampshire and Vermont, and a surgeon of the New Hampshire volunteers. From 1862 to 1865 was Medical Director of New York, the Sec-

ond Division of United States Army Corps, being mustered out in July, 1865. He joined the Medical Society of Kings County in 1866, filling various offices from 1867 to 1878, and holding its Presidency in 1872 and 1873. In 1869 or 1870 he, with his friend, Dr. R. C. Styles, and nine others, laid the foundation of the Brooklyn Pathological Society. In 1892 he gave up the practice of the profession on account of deafness, and removed to Lanesboro, Massachusetts. There he spent the last five years of his life in the enjoyment of outdoor freedom. He died December 22, 1897.

William Wallace was born in Cork, Ireland, May 14, 1835; began the study of medicine in Edinburgh in 1851, and graduated from the Royal College of Surgeons in 1856, and the Royal College of Physicians in 1860. During 1855 he was acting Assistant Surgeon to the Royal Navy, in the Russian War. After the completion of his medical course Dr. Wallace entered the service of the Cunard Steamship Company, and for seven years served as surgeon. In 1864 he began practice in Brooklyn. He held the office of attending physician to the Out-door Department of the Long Island College Hospital. Subsequently he became visiting physician to the following institutions: Long Island College Hospital, St. John's Hospital and Home for Consumptives. Consulting physician to Long Island College Hospital and St. Mary's Hospital, and medical director to the college dispensary, were the important titles conferred upon him. His appointment as a member of the Council of Long Island College and Hospital Committee of St. John's Hospital, and the board of Managers of the Church Charity Foundation, shows the confidence reposed in him by the general public. In the Kings County Medical Society he was elected Censor, Trustee and President, and delegate to the State Society, and President of the Brooklyn Pathological Society. He died in 1897.

CHAPTER LI.

VARIOUS MEDICAL SOCIETIES—BROOKLYN HOSPITALS— DISPENSARIES.

HE reason for the organization of the Medico-Chirurgical Society is that usually offered, want of harmony or inactivity, in the older societies.

J. H. Hobart Burge, M. D., located in the city of Brooklyn in 1855. The Medical Society of the County of Kings was the only medical body in existence and its members met quarterly. Dr. Burge felt that medical men should come together oftener, and issued a call to a number of physicians to meet at his office, 138 Duffield street, to consider the advisability of forming an active medical society. The result of this meeting was the organization of the above society on November 10, 1856.

The society was duly organized, in Duffield street, the name of which it received in honor of Dr. John Duffield, a surgeon in the Revolutionary War, who practiced medicine in the village of Brooklyn until his death in 1798.

During the ten years that the society had an existence in Brooklyn it included fifty of the most active physicians as members, many of whom were connected with the different hospitals of the city, and in a position to present a great many specimens at the meetings of the society, so much so that the society partook largely of the character of a pathological society; this work continued until 1866. During this year the Medical Society of the County of Kings resumed active work, which made

it unnecessary to have two medical societies in one section of the city. The members of the Medico-Chirurgical Society simply transferred their field of active work to the County Society.

The first President was Andrew Otterson, M. D., who held the office from 1856-59.

He was followed by Joseph B. Jones, M. D., in 1860. Dr. Jones is a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, of 1855. He was local Health Officer from 1860-63 and 1864-66; Coroner of the county, 1869-74; member of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1860-76, and the last President of the Brooklyn Medical Society in 1857. Daniel Ayres, M. D., LL. D., followed as President, during the years 1861-62-63. He was born in Jamaica, Long Island, on October 6, 1822, "a year that marks the birth of our County Society." He was prepared for Princeton College, from which institution he was graduated, A. B., in 1842. Wesleyan University conferred upon him the degree of LL. D. in 1856. He commenced the study of medicine at the Castleton Medical College, Vermont, completing his studies at the University of New York, receiving the degree of M. D. in 1845. During the years 1844 and 1845 he was interne in Bellevue Hospital, and commenced private practice in the city of Brooklyn in 1846, continuing in the active practice of his profession in the city until his death, January 18, 1892. During his long and active service

in the practice of the healing art he ever maintained that dignity of character and honesty of purpose which go to make the true man and physician. In 1848 he was surgeon of the Fifth Brigade, Thirteenth and Fourteenth Regiments, New York, and from 1861-65 surgeon, New York State Volunteers; surgeon to the Brooklyn Hospital, 1846-53 and 1892; surgeon to St. Peter's Hospital, 1864-70; Consulting Surgeon, 1870-92.

His greatest work was in connection with the Long Island College Hospital. He was one of the founders, his active co-laborers being Louis Bauer, M. D., F. R. C. S., and John Byrne, M. D., LL. D. He was surgeon to the hospital from 1858-60, and elected the first Professor of Surgery in 1859, and Professor Emeritus of Surgical Pathology and Clinical Surgery, Long Island College Hospital, 1874-1892.

In the history of Bellevue Hospital, published in 1893, Dr. Daniel Ayres appears as Professor of Surgery, Long Island College Hospital, 1858-74. This is simply a mistake, in so far as the dates are concerned. His connection with medical societies was as follows: Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1845-92; Censor, 1847; American Medical Association, New York Academy of Medicine, New York Pathological Society, Medical Society of Berlin, Medico-Chirurgical Society of Brooklyn, New York.

His contributions to surgery have been: "Treatment of Membranous Croup by Tracheotomy," 1852; "Successful Treatment of Tetanus," 1852; "Successful Reduction of Complete Dislocation of the Cervical Vertebrae," 1852; "Contributions to Surgery," 1857; "Congenital Exstrophy of the Urinary Bladder and Its Complication Successfully Treated by a New Plastic Operation," 1859; "Operations for Artificial Anus;" "Trepanning the Skull for Reflex Epilepsy;" "Lymphomata in Anterior Mediastinum," 1881; "Reminiscences of Tracheotomy;" and "Croup and Diphtheria," 1881. Several of the above papers were re-

produced in Hamilton's Gross' and Erichsen's "Systems of Surgery."

His bequests to Wesleyan University and Hoagland Laboratory are well known.

John Henry Hobart Burge, M. D., followed as President, in 1864-65. He was born in the village of Wickford, North Kingston, Washington county, Rhode Island, August 12, 1823. In 1844, at Wickford, Rhode Island, he commenced the study of medicine under the preceptorship of Drs. William Gorham and William Allen Shaw, which were continued at the University of the City of New York from 1846 to 1848, graduating M. D. in that year. His post-graduate studies were conducted by Professors Darling and Aylett, and at the New York Hospital under Professors Post, Reid and Watson. Dr. Burge's private practice commenced in New York city in 1848. In 1849 and 1850 he conducted a private hospital at Sacramento, California, and in 1851 to 1855 in New York city, coming to Brooklyn in 1855.

During the fifty years of professional life he has been connected with the following: Physician, New York Dispensary, 1852-54; Physician, Brooklyn Central Dispensary, 1858-63; Consulting Physician, 1866-76; Consulting Physician, Brooklyn Contagious Diseases Hospital, 1863-70; Consulting Physician, Sheltering Arms Nursery, 1870; Visiting Physician, Long Island College Hospital, 1863-94; Consulting Surgeon, Long Island College Hospital, 1894; Consulting Surgeon, St. John's Hospital, 1872; Consulting Surgeon, Lucretia Mott Dispensary, 1882; member of the Brooklyn Medical Society, 1856-57; Medico-Chirurgical Society, Brooklyn, 1857-66; Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1859; President, 1870-71; Long Island College Hospital Journal Association, 1868-75; President, 1870-71; Brooklyn Pathological Society, one of the organizers, in 1870; Medical Society, State of New York, 1876; New York Society of Medical Jurisprudence; New York Neurological Society, Vice-President, 1876; and Alumni As-



A. J. C. SKENE, M. D.
PRESIDENT OF THE MEDICAL SOCIETY OF COUNTY OF KINGS,
FROM 1874 TO 1876.

sociation, University City of New York, Vice-President, 1866.

His contribution to medical literature has been as follows: "History and Mechanical Treatment of Fractures of the Femur," 1890; and "Treatment of Fractures of the Patella," 1884 (his apparatus for the treatment of these fractures was presented in 1868 and 1880); "Hygienic Influences," address before the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1868; "The Relations between Physician and Apothecaries," 1870; "A New Ether Inhaler; Remarks on Sulphuric Ether," 1889; "Anesthesia, Apparent Death; Resuscitation and Medical Ethics," 1891; and "Points of Election in Laparotomy, after Wounds of the Abdomen," 1893. To these may be added "A Throat Forceps," "Post-Mortem Needle," "Obstetrical Forceps," "Dilating Strictures in the Urethra, Curved and Straight."

Henry James Cullen, M. D., was the last President of the Society, in 1866.

BROOKLYN PATHOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

The history of any organization is simply the history of those who were active in its work. The success of any society depends upon the earnest work of a few of its members, aided by the general and hearty support of all connected with the organization. It is, therefore, to be expected that in outlining the history of any society certain of its members will be mentioned by name, while others who may have been faithful and earnest in their efforts to promote the best interests of the society are not named, for the reason that their work was along lines carrying with it little or no prominence.

Previous to the formation of the Homeopathic Medical Society, County of Kings, November 12, 1857, a State law required that all physicians who desired to practice medicine in Kings county should become members of the County Medical Society.

This necessity required homeopathic physicians to present their names for membership in the County Medical Society.

As a natural result the admission of homeopathic physicians met with much opposition and caused a lack of interest in the attendance at the meetings of the Society, the outcome of this indifference to the County Medical Society being that the Brooklyn Medico-Chirurgical Society came into existence.

This Society was organized November 10, 1856. The following well known physicians held the office of President during its existence: Andrew Otterson, M. D., President, 1856-59; Joseph B. Jones, M. D., President, 1860; Daniel Ayres, M. D., President, 1861-63; John Henry Hobart Burge, M. D., President, 1864-65; and Henry J. Cullen, M. D., President, 1866.

This Society marked the beginning of the study of pathology on Long Island; for at its meetings were presented for discussion pathological specimens, the first time anything of this character was ever attempted in the city of Brooklyn.

The laws of the State having been amended so as to permit the organization of more than one County Medical Society, thereby removing the feeling of opposition to the existing Society, peace and harmony were restored. In a few years the Medico-Chirurgical Society found that its usefulness as a society had practically come to an end, and the Society was discontinued in 1866. For a few years nothing of importance developed until the formation of the Brooklyn Pathological Section, in connection with the Medical Society, County of Kings. The preliminary meeting was held at the office of Charles H. Giberson, M. D., 188 Remsen street, on the evening of March 3, 1870, at which time it was agreed to issue a call through the Medical Society, County of Kings, for a meeting to be held at the rooms of the Board of Health, on the evening of March 22, 1870. The Assistant Superintendent was Dr. R. C. Stiles, who had kindly offered the use of the rooms for the meeting. Eleven physicians responded to the call, as follows: Charles Henry Giberson, M. D., obit April 14, 1879; Richard Cresson Stiles, A. B.,

M. D., obit April 17, 1873; Charles Corey, M. D., obit April 4, 1894; John Henry Hobart Burge, M. D.; John Byrne, M. D., LL. D.; Arthur Mathewson, A. M., M. D.; Jonathan Slater Prout, M. D.; Benjamin Avery Segur, B. S., M. D.; William Henry Thayer, A. B., M. D., obit December 22, 1897; Richard Morris Wycoff, A. B., M. D.; and Frederick William Wunderlich, M. D.

At this meeting the Brooklyn Pathological Section was organized, by-laws were adopted, and Charles H. Giberson elected to the office of Secretary and Treasurer, a chairman being elected at each meeting of the section. In 1876 the by-laws were modified so as to provide for the election of a President and Vice-President, but it was not until 1884 that the Pathological Section became a distinct organization, as in this year by-laws were so changed as to admit to membership all physicians in regular standing, irrespective of their membership in the Medical Society, County of Kings.

The Presidents of the Brooklyn Pathological Society from its organization to the present time have been as follows:

Charles Henry Giberson, M. D., first President of the Society, was born in the Parish of Kent, Bath, Carleton county, New Brunswick, on September 5, 1838, and died in Brooklyn, New York, April 14, 1879. He was a graduate of the University of Vermont, Medical Department, in 1861, and was Assistant Surgeon in the United States Navy from 1861-65. During the year 1865 he attended the Post-Graduate course at the Long Island College Hospital. He practiced medicine in Brooklyn from 1868 to 1879, and occupied the position of President of the Pathological Society in 1876; in 1872 he delivered the Semi-Centennial address before the Medical Society, County of Kings.

Frank Warren Rockwell, M. A., M. D., was born in Valatie, near Albany, December 22, 1843. Died in Brooklyn, New York, April 30, 1889, receiving the degree of A. B., 1865,

and A. M. in 1868 from Amherst, and graduated M. D. from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1868. Lecturer on Materia Medica, "Reading Term," L. I. C. H., 1874. President of the Brooklyn Surgical Society, 1887-88. President Brooklyn Pathological Society during the years 1877-78 and 1879. He practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, from 1868-89.

Arthur Mathewson, M. A., M. D., was born in Brooklyn, Connecticut, September 11, 1837, received the degree of A. B., 1858, A. M., 1865, Yale University, graduated M. D., University City of New York in 1861. Assistant Surgeon, United States Navy, 1861-64. Surgeon, 1865. Surgeon United States Naval Hospital, Brooklyn, New York, 1866. Lecturer, Diseases of the Eye and Ear, Yale University Medical Department. Clinical Professor Diseases of the Ear, L. I. C. H., 1872-95. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1880. Has practiced in Brooklyn since 1867.

William Wallace, M. D., born in Cork, Ireland, May 14, 1835. Died in Brooklyn, New York, December 22, 1896. Graduated at the Royal College of Physicians, Edinburgh, in 1856. Royal College of Surgeons in 1860. Was Assistant Surgeon in the Royal Navy in 1855. President of the Medical Society, County of Kings, 1887-88. President of the Brooklyn Pathological Society in 1881 and 1882. He practiced in Brooklyn from 1864-94.

John N. Freeman, M. D., born in La Grange, Ohio, August 4, 1831. Died in Omaha, Nebraska, August 18, 1888. Graduated M. D. from the University City of New York, 1862. Assistant Surgeon Duryea's Zouaves, 1862-63. Surgeon One Hundred and Sixth New York Volunteers, 1863-65. President of the Brooklyn Pathological Society in 1883. Practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, from 1869 to 1888.

Benjamin Frank Westbrook, M. D., was born in St. Louis, Missouri, February 4, 1851. Died in Brooklyn, New York, April 12, 1895. Graduated M. D. from the Long Island Col-

lege Hospital in 1874. Lecturer on Anatomy, L. I. C. H., 1879-80. Lecturer on Anatomy and Pathological Anatomy, 1880-82. President L. I. C. H. Alumni Association, 1886. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1884-85-86. He practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, 1875-95.

Joseph Hill Hunt, B. S., M. D., was born in Huntsburg, Sussex county, New Jersey, April 12, 1848, receiving the degree of B. S. from Washington and Lee University in 1869. Graduated M. D. from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1873. Demonstrator and Instructor of Histology and Pathology, L. I. C. H. Demonstrator of Histology, Brooklyn Anatomical and Surgical Society; member of the Kings County Board of Pharmacy; Professor of Botany, Materia Medica and Pharmacognosy, Brooklyn College of Pharmacy, 1893-95. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1887-88. President Medical Society County of Kings, 1898, Practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, since 1874.

John Cargill Shaw, M. D., born in Jamaica, West Indies, September 25, 1845. Graduated M. D., College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1874. Was Medical Superintendent of the Kings County Insane Asylum from 1874 to 1883; has been Clinical Professor Diseases of the Mind and Nervous System, L. I. C. H., since 1883; was President New York Neurological Society, 1872 and 1876; President Medical Society, County of Kings, 1893; and President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1889-90. Practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, since 1883.

Ezra Herbert Wilson, M. D., born in Port Jefferson, Long Island, November 24, 1859, graduated M. D., College Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1882. Director Department of Bacteriology, Hoagland Laboratory, Chief of the Bureau of Bacteriology, Health Department. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1891.

Joshua Marsden Van Cott, Jr., M. D., born in New York City, 1861. Graduated M. D.

Long Island College Hospital, 1885. Director Department of Pathology, Hoagland Laboratory, Professor Histology and Pathological Anatomy, L. I. C. H., since 1891. President of the Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1892-93. In practice since 1887.

William Nathan Belcher, M. D., born in Brooklyn, New York, December 29, 1862, graduated M. D., Long Island College Hospital, 1884. Instructor in Histology and Pathological Anatomy, L. I. C. H., 1890. Lecturer on Physiology, "Reading Term," L. I. C. H. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1894. Practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, since 1885.

Francis H. Stuart, M. A., M. D., born in Logansport, Indiana, July 29, 1846, received the degree of A. M. from Hamilton College, graduating M. D. from Long Island College Hospital in 1873. Registrar of Vital Statistics, Department of Health, Brooklyn, New York, 1875-78. Lecturer on Obstetrics, "Reading Term," L. I. C. H., 1880-86. Acting Professor of Surgery, L. I. C. H., 1895-96. President Brooklyn Anatomical and Surgical Society, 1884. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1895. In private practice in Brooklyn, New York, since 1874.

Frederic Joseph Shoop, M. D., born in Braceville, Illinois, February 8, 1862. Graduated M. D., College Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1883. President Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1896. Practiced medicine in Brooklyn, New York, since 1886.

James Peter Warbasse, M. D., born in Newton, New Jersey, November 22, 1866, graduated M. D., College Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1889. President of the Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1897. In practice in Brooklyn, New York, since 1892.

Literally speaking, the Pathological Society has not been very active; true, many of its members, particularly those who have held the office of President, have enriched our medical literature by presenting papers at the meetings, also at the meetings of other Medical

Societies, numbering about 108. Independent of books and contributions to bound volumes this figure would be double or more, when we consider the contributions made by individual members.

The proceedings of the Society were published, together with those of the Medical Society, County of Kings, in their Journal from 1876 to 1883. The transactions of the Pathological Society for the years 1885 and 1886 were published in an octavo volume of 233 pages.

The first number of a magazine, under the name of "The Pathologist," was issued in January, 1881. This magazine continued to be published until 1883, its editor being the late Edward Seaman Bunker, M. D. The Chair of Histology and General Pathology was founded by Dr. Bunker at the Long Island College Hospital in 1879. He was a member of this Society from 1873 to the time of his death.

In 1894 William N. Belcher, M. D., who was then President, delivered an address before this Society, which was afterward published, being, so far as known to the writer, the only address ever published relating directly to the Pathological Society of Brooklyn. A report of the proceedings of the Twenty-fifth Anniversary of this Society, together with the address of Joseph H. Hunt, M. D., and other addresses were published in the "Brooklyn Medical Journal" in 1896.

Previous to 1856 the study of pathology on Long Island was practically unknown, and even to-day I believe we are the only Society that has been devoted to the study of pathology on the Island, with the exception that during the years 1874 and 1875 there existed a pathological society in South Brooklyn, with Joseph E. Clark, M. D., as President.

An approximate estimate of the membership of this society during the twenty-seven years of its existence is as follows: Died in active membership, 30; removed, 70; present number of members, 150; total, 250.

In conclusion may I express the hope that the Pathological Society of Brooklyn, as this city merges into the greater city, may increase in membership and in usefulness, and that the interest manifested in its proceedings during the last few years may be an incentive to greater work in the future.

Considering that the study of histology and pathology, as we now understand it, is the product of but recent years, the advances made in this study by members of this society are truly commendable. I well remember, in my student days at the Long Island College Hospital, the look of surprise that passed over the faces of the members of our class when the announcement was made that a Chair of Histology and Pathology had been established, a look which plainly said, "What is it?"

The Brooklyn Pathological Society has just cause to be proud of its record in the past, for if any one body of medical men more than any other have been instrumental in presenting the necessity of education in the science of pathology, and in giving an opportunity to the profession of this city to study pathology in its scientific and practical bearing, it has been those who have cherished and worked for its aims and its interests in the past, and now look forward to a broader and a grander field of labor and for achievements in the years to come in the history of the Brooklyn Pathological Society.

DISPENSARIES, CITY HOSPITAL.

The town of Brooklyn in 1830 had a population of 15,295. Four years thereafter it was incorporated as a city. The Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1830 had nineteen members upon its roll, and the town directory of that year indicates that there were about ten physicians engaged in the practice of medicine who were not connected with the Medical Society.

On the 8th day of February, 1830, the first dispensary in Brooklyn was organized at 168 Fulton street, under the name of The Brooklyn

Dispensary. In 1833 the dispensary removed to the corner of Jay and Sands streets, and must have been discontinued about this time. The attending physicians were: Drs. J. Sullivan Thorne and W. A. Clark. Consulting physician, Matthew Wendell.

City Hospital, 1839-1840.—Under this name, and about the time above indicated, this hospital was organized, being located on Adams street near Johnson. Its staff at that time included Theodore F. King, M. D., President, 1840-1842; John Sullivan Thorne, M. D., Secretary; attending physicians—Purcell Cook, George Marvin, and Samuel Boyd.

Theodore L. Mason, M. D., was President from 1842 to 1844, and was succeeded by John Sullivan Thorne, M. D., as President from 1844 to 1845. The attending physicians at this time were George Ball, Theo. F. King and A. N. Garrison. This hospital was incorporated May 8, 1845, under the name of

Brooklyn City Hospital. It was then removed to Hudson street near Lafayette avenue. The attending physicians at this time were Henry J. Cullen, Lucius Hyde, Purcell Cook, C. L. Mitchell and Christ R. McClellan; attending surgeons—Theo. L. Mason, W. G. Hunt, F. W. Hurd and Daniel Ayres.

In 1850 the hospital removed to Hudson avenue, then "Jackson street," near Lafayette avenue. Attending physicians: Henry J. Cullen, James Crane, Jr., J. Sullivan Thorne and John W. Corson; attending surgeons: William G. Hunt, Daniel Ayres, John Cochran and James M. Minor.

In 1854-55 we find the hospital at Raymond street, near DeKalb avenue, where it is situated at the present time. Attending physicians: H. S. Smith, James Crane, Jr., D. S. Landon, J. Sullivan Thorne and Henry J. Cullen; attending surgeons: DeWitt C. Enos, D. E. Kissam, John Cochran and James M. Minor; 1857-58—visiting surgeons: DeWitt C. Enos, Daniel E. Kissam, James M. Minor and Joseph C. Hutchison; visiting physicians: James Crane, Dillon S. Landon, Hora-

tio S. Smith and E. Krackowizer; 1860—visiting surgeons: James M. Minor, DeWitt C. Enos, Daniel E. Kissam, Joseph C. Hutchison and George Cochran; visiting physicians: James Crane, D. S. Landon, H. S. Smith, A. Nelson Bell and Charles J. Seymour.

The hospital is still in existence, at Raymond street and DeKalb avenue.

BROOKLYN DISPENSARY, ORGANIZED 1846.

Jackson House, Hudson street, near Lafayette avenue. Attending physicians: J. D. Trask, Bradley Parker, C. L. Mitchell, James Crane, Jr., J. H. Henry, Lucius Hyde and L. K. Brown; district physicians: J. D. Ladd, E. N. Chapman, W. Blackwood, T. A. Wade, A. V. Lesley, William Swift; 1849—Daniel Brooks, H. S. Smith, D. E. Kissam and Dr. Beers.

1851-52. Removed to the basement of the City Hall, but unable to remain there for any length of time, as it was understood that the city officials were afraid of contagious disease. The officers secured the back room of Bailey's drug store at 269 Washington street. Attending physicians and surgeons: John D. Ladd, William H. Gardner, D. E. Kissam, A. Otterson and J. C. Hutchison.

In 1855 we find the dispensary located at 107 or 109 Pineapple street. Attending physicians and surgeons: James Hebburn, J. H. Catlin, J. Blackmore, John Ball, E. A. Whaley, Alex. Little and Joseph B. Jones; consulting physicians and surgeons: H. S. Smith, D. E. Kissam and L. C. McPhail.

About 1858 the name was changed to that of Brooklyn Dispensary and Eye and Ear Infirmary. Its staff at this time consisted of the following: John Ball, M. D., President; Joseph B. Jones, M. D., General Surgery; John T. Conkling, M. D., Diseases of Females; John A. Brodie, M. D., Children, Skin and Vaccination; William Law, M. D., Heart, Throat and Lungs; William Otterson, M. D., Head and Digestive Organs; and R. M. Deering, Apothecary and Dentist; 1860—attending surgeons:

Joseph B. Jones and W. F. Swalm; attending physicians. John Ball, William Law and Robert Ormiston.

The dispensary is still in existence, at No. 11 Tillary street.

KINGS COUNTY HOSPITAL.

The early history of this institution appears to be intimately connected with the Brooklyn Almshouse. On April 9, 1832, the poorhouse at Flatbush was opened, and John B. Zabriskie, M. D., was appointed as physician, at a salary of seventy dollars per year. In 1834 Dr. J. B. Zabriskie was re-appointed as physician. In 1838 the County Hospital and Lunatic Asylum were opened.

On February 8, 1848, Dr. J. B. Zabriskie died. He appears to have been the only physician connected with the above institution up to this date. On March 5, 1848, F. M. Ingraham, M. D., and Philip O. Hyatt, M. D., were appointed in place of Dr. Zabriskie.

March 30, 1849, the hospital at the Penitentiary was opened and T. Anderson Wade, M. D., was appointed physician. Dr. Wade agreed to treat all prisoners and furnish the necessary medicine for \$12 per month, which was accepted. Dr. Wade's salary was fixed in 1852 at \$250 per annum. Dr. J. L. Zabriskie was appointed physician at the Penitentiary in 1859.

In 1854 it became known to the Board of Superintendents that a bill was pending before the Legislature directing that bodies of persons who may die in the poorhouse be delivered to medical schools for the purpose of dissection. The bill was denounced as a monstrous outrage, its provisions being declared barbarous.

In 1854 Dr. Thomas Turner was physician to the hospital, and Dr. J. A. Blanchard physician to the Lunatic Asylum. Dr. Blanchard was Superintendent from 1875 to 1877. In 1856 Dr. Robert B. Baiseley was resident physician of the Lunatic Asylum. In 1857 Edwin R. Chapin, M. D., was elected resident

physician of the County Hospital. In 1859 Dr. E. R. Chapin became physician to the Lunatic Asylum, which position he resigned in 1871.

Dr. Thomas Turner died in 1865, and his successor was Dr. R. Cresson Stiles, who resigned in 1866. Dr. Stiles was followed by Dr. Teunis Schenck.

WILLIAMSBURGH DISPENSARY.

Organized January, 1851. Opened Sept. 1, 1851. Located at the corner of Fifth and South First street. The first President was Samuel Groves. The attending physicians were John A. Brady, Nelson L. North and Chas. Holzhauer; consulting physicians, Sidney Wade and Orson H. Smith; consulting surgeons, A. J. Berry and F. M. Lovett; visiting physicians, L. N. Palmer, C. H. Schapps and J. J. Bagley, M. D.

This dispensary is still in existence, under the name of the Brooklyn (E. D.) Dispensary and Hospital.

BROOKLYN GERMAN GENERAL DISPENSARY.

From 1857 to 1858, at 145 Court street. Consulting physicians, Edward Macbert and Gustav Braeunlich; consulting surgeons, Louis Bauer and William Arming; resident physician, Hermann Zundt; Mr. Hermann, Cupper and Leecher.

BROOKLYN CENTRAL DISPENSARY.

This dispensary was opened to the public in 1855. It was located at 173 Fulton street. The first President was J. Sullivan Thorne, M. D. Attending physicians and surgeons: J. H. H. Burge, Nelson S. Drake, William H. Van Duyne, Arnold Hallett, Thomas H. Green and T. H. Catlin; consulting surgeons, James M. Minor and C. E. Isaacs; consulting physicians, James H. Hewey and Jos. C. Hutchison.

In 1858 this dispensary was located at 5 Flatbush avenue. From that time to 1860 there seems to have been a number of changes among the physicians. In 1860 we find them

to be: J. H. H. Burge, John Hill, S. C. Gregg, W. H. Gardner and J. Wilson.

This dispensary is at present situated at No. 29 Third avenue.

THE LONG ISLAND COLLEGE HOSPITAL.

This college and hospital will undoubtedly in the near future assume a position among medical colleges second to none in this country. The additions to its curriculum; the increasing number of students; and the growing interest in the welfare of the institution which is exhibited by our citizens, all indicate that the Long Island College Hospital has before it a career of unlimited usefulness. The present outlook causes us to believe that the brightest pages in its history are yet to be written. The writer can scarcely believe the testimony of his own senses as he notes the advances made by this institution during the short time he has been in active practice. While congratulating ourselves upon the splendid prospects the future appears to have in store for the Long Island College Hospital, let us glance backward and note a few facts in the inception and early history of this institution.

During the year 1857 a number of German physicians in general practice in the Sixth and Tenth Wards of the city of Brooklyn organized what was known as the Brooklyn German General Dispensary. This dispensary was situated at 145 or 147 Court street, between Pacific street and Atlantic avenue. Prominently connected with this dispensary were the following doctors: Gustav Braeunlich, residing at 285 Henry street; Carl Aug. Louis Bauer, 167 Court street; William Arming, 75 Court street; Edward Maebert, 109 Union street; and Herman Zundt, 42 Dean street.

The intention of these gentlemen was to organize a large German hospital, as at this time the population of the Sixth Ward consisted largely of Germans. Nothing definite came of this idea, for we find that shortly afterward they joined with Drs. John Byrne,

of 202 Clinton street; Daniel Ayres, of 156 Montague street, and William H. Dudley, of 201 Henry street, in the organization of what was then known as the St. John's Hospital. On November 5, 1857, this hospital occupied the premises at 145 or 147 Court street, where it remained until the spring of 1858.

The "Perry Mansion" on Henry street being for sale, subscriptions were solicited from the citizens of Brooklyn for the purpose of purchasing this property. The effort proving successful and the property having been purchased, application was made to the Legislature for a charter, which was granted in 1858.

Drs. Braeunlich and Bauer deserve special mention for the interest manifested by them in the institution and for the work which they accomplished at this time.

The reason for the change of name from St. John's Hospital to that of the Long Island College Hospital is unknown to the writer, but it was under the latter name that the institution received its charter and opened the hospital in the spring of 1858, on the site where it now stands, and where we hope it may stand for ages to come. The following is taken from the Brooklyn City Directory of 1858-'59:

LONG ISLAND COLLEGE HOSPITAL OF THE CITY OF BROOKLYN.

Henry street, between Pacific and Amity. Board of Regents: Hon. Samuel Sloan, President; Samuel W. Slocum, Esq., Vice-President; C. Nestell Bovee, Esq., Secretary; Cornelius Dever, Esq., Treasurer; Hon. Samuel Sloan, Samuel W. Slocum, Henry Messenger, C. N. Bovee, L. K. Miller, Jaques Cortelyou, A. B. Baylis, R. L. Delisser, Cornelius Dever, Daniel Chauncey, J. T. Moore, George F. Thomas, Joseph Hegeman, J. S. Brownson, N. E. James, Theodore Polhemus, Charles Christmas, Nicholas Luqueer, Eugene O'Sullivan, Harold Dollner, Henry F. Vail, R. H. Berdell, L. B. Wyman, J. J. Van Nostrand and Samuel Smith. Members of the Council: Theo. L. Mason, M. D., C. L. Mitchell, M. D.,

William H. Dudley, M. D., and J. H. Henry, M. D.; physicians: John Byrne, M. D., E. N. Chapman, M. D., and Gustav Braeunlich, M. D.; surgeons: Daniel Ayres, M. D., and Louis Bauer, M. D.; adjunct physicians: R. S. Olmstead, M. D., G. D. Ayres, M. D., and W. H. Davol, M. D.; adjunct surgeons: E. A. Whaley, M. D., D. A. Dodge, M. D., and J. G. Johnson, M. D.; apothecary: E. S. Fougera.

MEDICAL SOCIETIES.

The first medical society, independent of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, was organized in 1852, and was known as the Medical Association of the Eastern District. Among the physicians who were connected with this society we find the following: C. H. Schapps, M. D., who was President in 1852-'55; Ernest Krackowizer, C. Macfarlan, Jos. Creamer, James S. Hawley, Carl Wittman, Geo. W. Baker, John Walsh, J. J. Acheson, Nelson L. North, Sr., and E. N. Colt.

This society continued until 1882, when it went out of existence.

On February 5, 1863, the Medical Association of the Eastern District of Brooklyn was organized.

MEDICAL CHIRURGICAL SOCIETY.

Instituted at Brooklyn in 1857. Active among its membership were the following well-known physicians: Andrew Otterson (President from 1857 to 1859), John Ball, Joseph B. Jones (President in 1860), E. N. Chapman, Daniel A. Dodge, J. H. H. Burge (President from 1864 to 1865), Daniel Ayres (President from 1861 to 1863), J. C. Halsey,

Jos. E. Clark, Henry J. Cullen (President in 1866), William Law, Jr., A. N. Bell, John Byrne and W. E. Mulhallon; besides James Crane, Jr., U. Palmedo, Geo. I. Bennet, A. Moore, J. P. Colgan, Sr., Charles C. Isaacs, J. P. Colgan, Jr., William Otterson, G. D. Ayres, W. Mills, Thomas P. Morris, H. C. Simms and De Witt C. Enos.

This society was discontinued in 1866.

BROOKLYN MEDICAL SOCIETY—1856.

This society met in Brooklyn Institute on Washington street, but very little is known regarding it. The physicians connected with it were Andrew Otterson (President from 1856 to 1857), John Ball, A. N. Bell, Jos. E. Clark, Jos. B. Jones and John Byrne.

On August 21, 1846, a special meeting of the Medical Society of the County of Kings was called to consider the propriety of establishing a dispensary in the city of Brooklyn. This call was signed by the following members: Drs. Robert McMillan, John F. Morse, J. C. Halsey, Sam. J. Osborn, William Swift, David F. Atwater, T. A. Wade, Purcell Cooke, J. M. Moriarty, A. Otterson, Wm. C. Betts, Daniel Ayres, F. W. Hurd, Geo. I. Bennet and A. Van Pelt.

The committee appointed at this meeting reported on September 14, 1846, that the matter had been presented to the trustees of the Brooklyn City Hospital, and that a committee had been appointed by them to consider the subject. The committee from the medical society comprised Drs. Sam. J. Osborn, Henry J. Cullen, John F. Morse, John L. Thorne and Theo. L. Mason.



CHAPTER LII.

DENTISTS IN BROOKLYN.

OUR information regarding the early dentists on Long Island is exceedingly limited. The first of whom we have any record is T. Jefferson Jones, M. D., who in 1828 practiced dentistry and kept a drug store at No. 4 Sands street. He appears to have continued to practice at this place until his death in 1835. In 1831 W. K. Northall, Jr., commenced practice at 79 Fulton street. His father, W. K. Northall, F. S. A., was principal of the Mount Pleasant Academy, 278 Fulton street. Dr. Northall was evidently from Birmingham, England, and in the directory for 1832 appears the following advertisement:

W. K. NORTHALL, DENTIST,
No. 79 Fulton Street, Brooklyn.

Begs to refer to those Ladies and Gentlemen who may require his attendance, to the Rev. Mr. McIlvane, Brooklyn, Valentine Mott, M. D., and Daniel Lord, M. D., of New York.

Mr. Northall has certificates from the following Gentlemen in England, namely: W. T. Cox, Esq., Professor of Anatomy in the Birmingham School of Medicine; John Erles, M. D., Lecturer on the Practice of Physics; Dr. Richard Pierson, M. D., Lecturer on Materia Medica and Medical Botany; to Dr. Burt Davis, M. D., Physician to the Fever Hospital, Birmingham; Joseph Hodgson, Esq., Senior Surgeon to the Birmingham General Hospital; T. K. Booth, Senior Physician; Dr. Aaron Davis, M. D., of Radnorshire; the Rev. George Hall, Vicar of Tenbury, Worcester-shire, Rector of Rochford, Herefordshire, and Domestic Chaplain to Lord Brougham and Vaux, the Lord High Chancellor of England.

In the same year appears the advertisement of Dr. T. Jefferson Jones, as follows:

T. JEFFERSON, JONES, M. D.

Would inform his friends that he continues to officiate in the capacity of a Dentist at his residence, No. 4 Sands street, Brooklyn, where Teeth of every description from one to an entire set can be inserted. Teeth Cleaned, Filled and Filled so as to add much to their Durability and Beauty. He would also recommend the Persian Dentifrice (tooth powder) kept by him to all those who are desirous of having their gums healthy and teeth white and clear from tartar without any injury to either. Also a general assortment of Drugs, Medicines and Perfumery for sale as above.

In 1836 Dr. Northall, having evidently obtained somewhat of a practice among Brook-

lyn people, has the following advertisement in the directory of that year:

TEETH.

W. K. NORTHALL, Surgeon Dentist, 56 Fulton street, respectfully informs the inhabitants of Brooklyn and Long Island that he is prepared at all times to accommodate those who wish to supply the loss of natural teeth with artificial ones with Premium Incorruptible Teeth of the very best quality and of every variety of shade, of durability, cleanliness and natural appearance of the silicious teeth; renders them permanently superior to all other kinds. Mr. Northall inserts teeth from one to an entire set upon the best principles of dental mechanism which render them available for all purposes of articulation and mastication.

DENTAL SURGERY.

Cavities in the teeth filled with Cement, Gold or Silver, as the circumstances of the case may require. The teeth when loosened by tartar, disease or mercury, may, by a proper course of treatment, be in almost every case restored to their pristine firmness.

Irregularities in children's teeth may in most instances be obviated by well directed aid. Such cases particularly attended to.

Dr. Northall begs to present the following Certificates for the guidance of those who may wish to employ him professionally:

We, the undersigned, having had opportunities of judging of Dr. Northall's abilities as a Dentist, cheerfully subscribe our names in evidence of our opinion of his skill as an operator on the teeth and recommend him to the public as one in whom every confidence may be placed in the practice of the various branches of his profession.

(Signed) Evan Johnson, Rector of St. John's Church.
B. C. Cutler, Rector of St. Ann's Church.
S. A. Willoughby, President Brooklyn Bank.
D. Embury, Esq., Cashier Long Island Bank.

N. B. Tooth powders of all kinds to be obtained at the office, 78 Fulton Street. A work called "Hints to Parents on the Importance of Early Attention to Children's Teeth," by W. K. Northall, for sale. Also one entitled "Five Minutes' Advice on the Teeth." Both works can be obtained at the office or at any of the big stores in Brooklyn.

In 1842 Dr. Northall paid a visit to Europe and on his return calls to the attention of his patients that he has resumed practice, and with respect to charges "begs to state that he shall at all times take a pleasure in consulting the circumstances of those who may apply to him and charge as moderately as he can with justice to himself and patients."

Dr. Northall had considerable literary ability, and, in addition to the works referred to in his advertisement, wrote a book, which was published in 1850, entitled "The Life and

Recollections of Yankee Bill, together with Anecdotes and Incidents of his Travels." In 1844 he became associated with Dr. George Rose and had moved his office to 208 Fulton street. This is our last information of Dr. Northall, who probably died in 1846, for in 1846 we find his partner, Dr. George Rose, practicing alone at 246 Fulton street.

In the year 1837 Dr. Martin K. Bridges settled in Brooklyn and commenced practice at 118 Fulton street. In the directory of 1839 appears his card, simply calling attention to the fact that he was practicing at 105 Fulton street, and referring to fourteen or fifteen of the leading clergymen and physicians of the city, together with the Mayor, the Hon. Cyrus P. Smith. He edited the "Dental Mirror," a little leaflet published for gratuitous circulation, in which appeared conspicuously in 1843 the following notice:

"Two hours in each week day, from seven to nine o'clock in the morning, are devoted to the service of the poor without charge."

Dr. Bridges was born in Hardwick, Massachusetts, August 1, 1800, and when thirty-six years of age commenced the study of dentistry in the office of Dr. Lathrop at Saugerties. He died in September, 1853, at 109 Henry street, Brooklyn. Drs. Jones, Northall and Bridges were able representatives of the pioneers in dentistry in the United States, and the example they set in earnestness, ability, learning and liberality has been faithfully followed by their successors in Brooklyn.

In the year 1845 the village of Brooklyn had become a city and had extended its borders to accommodate the rapidly increasing population. The two dentists who had been sufficient to attend to the needs of the community in 1831 had increased to eight, among whom were:

Dr. George Wood, born at Groton, Massachusetts, July 24, 1813, and who settled in Brooklyn in 1838 and began practicing at 169 Fulton street; Dr. James E. Miller, born January 7, 1820, in Somers, Westchester county,

New York, and after teaching school in the Friends' Meeting House, which was then on the corner of Clark and Henry streets, commenced to practice dentistry in 1842, and in 1845 was practicing at No. 7 Squire's Building, Atlantic avenue; Dr. John Scott, born in Wyoming county, New York, September 4, 1813, and after studying medicine and dentistry settled in Brooklyn in 1843 and was then practicing on Fulton street, near Clinton street; Dr. G. A. Cooper, born in Lexington, Kentucky, in 1822, became a citizen of Brooklyn in 1845 and commenced to practice at 268 Washington street; and Dr. Salmon Skinner, born at Coeymans, Albany county, New York, March 6, 1818, commenced to practice at 57 Hicks street, Brooklyn, in 1840.

In the year 1855 the number of dentists had increased to forty-nine, but, as far as known, none were natives of Brooklyn.

Dr. Hezekiah N. Stratton was born in Phillipston, Massachusetts, in July, 1822, and in 1846 commenced to practice at 139 Atlantic avenue, Brooklyn, and in 1855 was still there. Dr. A. Appleton Wheeler was born near Brattleboro, Vermont, December 11, 1832, and commenced to practice in Brooklyn in 1853, at 51 Myrtle avenue. In 1855 he moved to what is now 80 Court street, where he died November 23, 1865. Dr. C. A. Marvin was born at Tappan, New York, June 16, 1823, was practicing at the southwest corner of Montague and Henry streets, where he had commenced May 1, 1853. Dr. W. B. Hurd, who was born at Brookfield, Connecticut, July 5, 1820, was on Fourth street, in what was then Williamsburgh, where he had commenced to practice in 1854, at which time there were but four other dentists in Williamsburgh, viz., Dr. Andrew H. Griswold, Dr. Lloyd Slade, Dr. Samuel H. Twitchell and Dr. Cornelius Weeks, all of whom had their offices on Fourth street. Dr. H. G. Mirick was born in Worcester, Massachusetts, October 15, 1832, and settled in Brooklyn in 1852 as assistant to Dr. James E. Miller. He was practicing at 74

Clinton street. Dr. John Branique was a native of Ireland and was practicing at 196 Clinton street. Dr. Charles F. Mermier was a native of Jamaica, West Indies, and was practicing on Classon avenue, near Myrtle avenue. Dr. C. D. Cook settled in Brooklyn in 1853 as assistant to Dr. James E. Miller, whose office was on the corner of Pacific and Henry streets, on the site of the present Hoagland laboratory. At the present writing but four of those who were practicing in 1855 are living. Drs. Mirick and Marvin have retired from practice, the former still residing in Brooklyn, while the latter lives in Philadelphia. Drs. Hurd and Cook are both actively engaged in the practice of their profession, the former at 502 Bedford avenue, the latter at 162 Remsen street.

The number of dentists kept pace with the increase of population, for in 1870 there were seventy practicing. The boundaries of the city were continually extending. In 1860 there were not more than one or two dentists beyond where the City Hall now stands, but at the end of the decade, while the greater number were still located in that part of the city known as the "Heights," many were in South Brooklyn and on "The Hill."

Drs. A. H. Brockway, M. E. Elmendorf, W. T. Shannon, F. W. Dolbeare and Henry Brown were on "The Hill;" Drs. James H. Race, S. W. Bridges, C. D. Cook and C. H. Biddle were south of Atlantic avenue; Drs. W. B. Hurd, W. C. Parks, William Fishbough, R. T. Ambler, C. W. Harreys, S. H. Twitchell and E. C. Wadsworth were in the Eastern District; Drs. C. A. Marvin, H. G. Mirick, O. E. Hill, G. A. Mills, William Jarvie, Jr., I. C. Monroe, D. S. Skinner, Thomas Fry, J. B. Brown, R. C. Brewster, W. A. Campbell and A. N. Chapman were on the "Heights" or in the immediate neighborhood.

In 1842 John Kearsing opened a small establishment at the corner of South Fourth street and Eighth street, Williamsburgh, where he refined gold and beat it into foil to

be used in the filling of teeth. In 1848 he removed to 240 Adams street, Brooklyn, where he kept a supply of dental instruments and artificial teeth and melted and rolled out gold and silver which were alone employed at that time in the construction of sets of teeth. Prior to this time it had been necessary for Brooklyn dentists to go to New York for all their materials, but Mr. Kearsing became so favorably known as a refiner and beater of gold that many New York dentists bought their gold and silver plates and gold foil from him. In 1855 Messrs. Jones, White & McCurdy opened a branch of their dental depot, under the supervision of Mr. Thomas Wise, on Fulton street, near Tillary. A third-story hall room at the back of the building was sufficiently commodious for the purpose, and a small japanned cash box large enough to contain all the gold and silver kept on hand. This box was carefully carried to New York every night for safe keeping and brought back every morning. "Tom" was the faithful custodian of this box, and continues to be the faithful conservator of the interests of the S. S. White Dental Manufacturing Company, and the genial friend of all Brooklyn dentists. In 1865 M. M. Johnston opened a dental depot at No. 20 Fulton avenue, in a small room in the rear of a book store. He soon associated his brothers with him under the name of Johnston Brothers, and introduced many improvements upon the materials and appliances then in use. Prospering rapidly, the firm became a powerful competitor of S. S. White; competition was terminated, however, in 1881, by a combination of the two firms under the name of the S. S. White Dental Manufacturing Company.

In the autumn of 1853 the first association of dentists on Long Island was organized. It was known as the Long Island Association of Dental Surgeons, and held its first meeting at the office of Dr. H. N. Stratton, 137 Atlantic avenue, and elected as officers: D. H. Mulford, Recording Secretary; G. A. Cooper, Cor-

responding Secretary; James E. Miller, Treasurer; Martin K. Bridges, Librarian; John Branique, James E. Miller and J. B. Fredericks, Examining Committee; B. S. Lyman, A. H. Griswold and C. B. Hammond, Executive Committee.

This society had no president, but a chairman was elected for each meeting. Its object was more of a social than a scientific character, and the interest in it soon subsided. It passed out of existence after two or three years of an uneventful career.

On June 12, 1862, a number of dentists met at the office of Dr. O. E. Hill, on Fulton street, near Clinton street, and organized the Brooklyn Dental Association. Its first officers were W. C. Parks, President; A. C. Hawes, Vice-President; John Allen, Treasurer; and William B. Hurd, Secretary. This society was largely composed of the most able and progressive of New York dentists, its Brooklyn members being O. E. Hill, A. Appleton Wheeler, C. A. Marvin and William Jarvie, Jr., while Williamsburgh was represented by W. B. Hurd, W. C. Parks and W. C. Horne. It met every two weeks at the offices of the members, and during its existence of five years was the most active and useful society of the time.

In 1867 unfortunate differences arose and the society disbanded, some of its New York members organizing the New York Odontological Society, while on December 14 of that year thirteen Brooklyn dentists met at the office of Dr. George A. Mills, 133 Henry street, and organized "The Brooklyn Society of Dental Science and Art." These dentists were George A. Mills, H. G. Mirick, O. E. Hill, A. H. Brockway, L. E. Brockway, William Jarvie, Jr., I. C. Monroe, John Scott, N. M. Abbott, Thomas Fry, E. L. Childs, H. E. Bird, George E. Bretz. The first officers chosen were H. G. Mirick, President; C. D. Cook, Vice-President; E. L. Childs, Recording Secretary; William Jarvie, Jr., Corresponding Secretary; I. C. Monroe, Treasurer; G. A.

Mills, O. E. Hill and John Scott, Executive Committee.

On January 4, 1869, the name was changed to the Brooklyn Dental Society, and the following made application to have the society incorporated: C. D. Cook, O. E. Hill, E. L. Childs, William Jarvie, Jr., I. C. Monroe, James H. Race, H. G. Mirick and George A. Mills. The application was granted April 5, 1869.

On January 10, 1870, this society organized a dental infirmary at 260 Washington street, which was open every week day and where dental operations were performed for the worthy poor without cost. A superintendent was employed, and each afternoon a member of the society was in charge. The members of the society not only volunteered their services, but, with the assistance of a few public-spirited citizens, paid all the expenses for one year, after which the city contributed \$1,500 annually toward its support. The infirmary was in existence about four years, and through it the society endeavored to teach the people to appreciate the value of their teeth and to educate them in their proper care. The infirmary studies became to many dentists a post-graduate course. Clinics were frequently given, and the dentists of Brooklyn, as well as the public, are indebted to the late Dr. William H. Atkinson, who at great personal loss and inconvenience would frequently leave his private patients in New York and conduct them. As far as is known, this infirmary was the only institution of the kind ever in existence. Much good was accomplished, and its relinquishment was caused principally by the many people who were able to pay endeavoring to obtain good dental services gratuitously, thereby defeating the charitable object for which the infirmary was established.

In 1882 the Brooklyn Dental Society established a library and reading room in connection with the Kings County Medical Society, in Everett Hall, at 398 Fulton street. This library was afterward removed to the rooms

of the Medical Society in Bridge street, much enlarged and owned by the Second District Dental Society; it is now in the beautiful new home of the Kings County Medical Society in Bedford avenue.

In 1895 the Brooklyn Dental Society retired from the field of scientific activity in favor of its somewhat younger brother, the Second District Dental Society, still retaining, however, its organization, and meeting but once each year, at which a banquet is given. This function is looked forward to with much pleasure as the social event among the dental profession on Long Island. The present officers of the society are: William Jarvie, President; W. A. Campbell, Vice-President; R. C. Brewster, Recording Secretary; R. G. Hutchinson, Jr., Corresponding Secretary; F. C. Walker, Treasurer; F. O. Kraemer, Librarian.

On April 7, 1868, the State Legislature passed a law entitled "An Act to incorporate dental societies for the purpose of improving and regulating the practice of dentistry in the State," which provided for a dental society in each of the eight judicial districts, eight delegates from each of which were to meet at the capitol in Albany and organize what was to be known as the Dental Society of the State of New York. In accordance with this provision in the law, thirty-eight of the dentists of the Second Judicial District, which comprised the counties of Kings, Suffolk, Richmond, Westchester, Orange, Rockland and Putnam, and to which was added in 1897 Nassau, met at the City Hall, Brooklyn, on June 2, 1868, and organized the Second District Dental Society by electing the following officers: President, W. B. Hurd; Vice-President, George A. Mills; Recording Secretary, William Jarvie, Jr.; Corresponding Secretary, L. S. Straw; Treasurer, H. G. Mirick; Delegates to State Dental Society, C. D. Cook, W. B. Hurd, O. E. Hill, H. G. Mirick, A. H. Brockway, G. A. Mills, L. S. Straw and C. L. Houghton.

This society has had an uninterrupted career of activity and usefulness and is one of the most prosperous and influential in the State. The regular monthly meetings, with the exception of the September one, are held in Brooklyn, at the residences of the members, that of September being held in one of the river towns, generally Newburgh. Once each year a large meeting is held to which the neighboring dental societies are invited and papers of special value are presented. These meetings attract eminent dentists from different parts of the country and are anticipated with great interest throughout the profession.

As stated above, this society has been most influential in the affairs of the Dental Society of the State of New York, four of its Brooklyn members having been called to serve in the capacity of President, viz.: W. B. Hurd, C. A. Marvin, O. E. Hill and F. T. Van Woert. H. G. Mirick was its Treasurer for several years and until his retirement from the practice of his profession, while William Jarvie has been a member of the Board of Censors and of the New York State Dental Examining Board for the last twenty-six years.

Members of this society have also been called upon to fill positions of prominence and responsibility in the New York Odontological Society. C. A. Marvin, W. B. Hurd, O. E. Hill, William Jarvie and A. H. Brockway have been its Presidents, H. G. Mirick and F. C. Walker have been its Treasurers, while William Jarvie and William J. Turner have edited its transactions for several years.

It now has enrolled 123 names upon its list of members. Its officers are: President, William J. Turner; Vice-President, F. P. Hamlet; Recording Secretary, Ellison Hillyer; Corresponding Secretary, H. P. Gould; Treasurer, R. G. Hutchinson, Jr.; Librarian, R. C. Brewster; Censors, William Jarvie, E. L. Ripper, F. B. Keppy, O. E. Houghton and G. W. Knight; Executive Committee, F. C. Walker, D. W. Barker and C. F. Ash.

Perhaps no better idea can be obtained of

the rapid advancement in dental standards than by a brief resume of legislation regulating the practice of dentistry in this State. The law of New York is generally conceded to be the most comprehensive of all, and nearer the ideal than that of any other State. In the various movements to obtain this result the dentists of Brooklyn have always taken a prominent part. In response to an informal call a meeting composed of dentists representing various sections of the State was held on December 17, 1867, at Utica, New York, to consider the desirability of securing a law that should regulate the practice of dentistry in this State. Such a law was drafted, passed by the Legislature and signed by the Governor April 7, 1868. It was entitled "An Act to incorporate dental societies for the purpose of improving and regulating the practice of dentistry in the State," and under its provisions a society was to be formed in each of the eight judicial districts, and eight delegates from each of these societies were to meet in Albany and organize a State society. This provision of the bill was carried out and "The Dental Society of the State of New York" was organized at Albany June 30, 1868.

Prior to this time there were but few dental schools, and many of the prominent and most able dentists had received their instruction and early experience in the offices of private preceptors. In order that such might receive a degree after proper examination, on April 21, 1870, the dental law was amended, providing for a Board of Censors and the conferring of the degree of M. D. S. (Master of Dental Surgery) in the following words:

SECTION 8. The State Dental Society, organized as aforesaid, at its first meeting shall appoint eight censors, one from each of the said district societies, who shall constitute a State Board of Censors, and at the first meeting of said board the members shall be divided into four classes, to serve one, two, three and four years, respectively, and said State Dental Society shall, at each annual meeting thereafter, appoint two censors, to serve each four years and until their successors shall be cho-

sen, and fill all vacancies that may have occurred in the board by death or otherwise. Each district society shall be entitled to one and only one member of said Board of Censors. Said Board of Censors shall meet at least once in each year, at such time and place as they shall designate, and being thus met, they, or a majority of them, shall carefully and impartially examine all persons who are entitled to examination under the provisions of this act, and who shall present themselves for that purpose, and report their opinion in writing to the President of said State Dental Society, and on the recommendation of said board it shall be the duty of the President, aforesaid, to issue a diploma to such person or persons, countersigned by the secretary, and bearing the seal of said society, conferring upon him the degree of "Master of Dental Surgery" (M. D. S.), and it shall not be lawful for any other society, college or corporation to grant to any person the said degree of "Master of Dental Surgery."

SEC. 9. All dentists in regular practice at the time of the passage of this act, and all persons who shall have received a diploma from any dental college in this State, and all students who shall have studied and practiced dental surgery with some accredited dentist or dentists for the term of four years, shall be entitled to an examination by said Board of Censors. Deductions from such term of four years shall be made in either of the following cases:

1. If the student, after the age of sixteen, shall have pursued any of the studies usual in the colleges of this State, the period not exceeding one year during which he shall have pursued such studies shall be deducted.

2. If the student, after the age of sixteen, shall have attended a complete course of lectures of any incorporated dental or medical college in this State, or elsewhere, one year shall be deducted.

The examinations by this board were so thorough and of such a high standard, and its decisions so fair and evidently free from favoritism, that the degree has always been held in great esteem and was sought for even by many graduates of dental schools who had already the degree of D. D. S. (Doctor of Dental Surgery).

On June 20, 1879, the Governor signed an amendment which required every dentist then

in practice within the State to register within sixty days, and permitting no one thereafter to commence the practice of dentistry unless having a dental or medical degree. The amendment was as follows:

It shall be unlawful for any person to practice dentistry in the State of New York for fee or reward unless he shall have received a proper diploma or certificate of qualification from the State Dental Society, or from the faculty of a reputable dental or medical college recognized as such by said societies, provided that nothing in this section shall apply to persons now engaged in the practice of dentistry in the State of New York; and that

Every person practicing dentistry within this State shall within sixty days after the passage of this act register in the office of the Clerk of the county where located.

On May 12, 1895, the law was again amended so that "the Board of Censors" became "the Board of Dental Examiners" to be appointed by the Board of Regents of the University of the State of New York from nominations twice the number of vacancies to be filled, made by the State Dental Society. No person was allowed to commence the practice of dentistry unless he had received a license to practice dentistry from the regents upon the recommendation of the Board of Examiners. The board was allowed to examine for a license only those who had received a degree from a registered dental school, or those who had been practicing legally in some other State for a period of not less than five years. The dental schools were not allowed to graduate any in 1898 who had not had the equivalent of one year in a high school three years previous to the conferring of the degree; in 1899 two years in a high school, and in 1900 a full high-school course. Provisions were made for revocation of licenses and for penal-

ties for infractions of the law. In 1899 an interchange of licenses to practice dentistry was effected between New Jersey and New York, by which dentists who had been licensed to practice in this State would be licensed to practice in New Jersey without further examination, and, vice versa, those who had been licensed in New Jersey would be licensed to practice in this State without further examination. This is the only case in which such an interchange in dentistry or medicine is practiced, but negotiations are on foot by which it is hoped to extend it to other States. On March 28, 1901, the law was yet further amended, allowing the Board of Examiners to recommend to the regents for a license only those who had a dental degree, and also allowing the regents to confer the degree of D. D. S. in lieu of the M. D. S. which had been conferred by the State Dental Society.

Probably no other profession ever made the rapid advance in science and art that dentistry has. Scarcely born at the beginning of the nineteenth century, the close of it sees it securely recognized as one of the learned professions. In 1828, when the first dentist of whom we have any knowledge came to Brooklyn, there was not a single dental society in the country, there was no dental literature, neither was there a dental school. Intercourse among members of the profession was almost unknown, and what little did exist was marked by constraint, secrecy and jealousy. Now there are about five hundred dentists in this city; there are one hundred and sixty-seven dental societies throughout the country, and eighty-eight dental schools, and twenty-three journals devoted to the profession. Everywhere professional courtesy and liberality is the rule, and a spirit of mutual interchange of knowledge and sympathy abounds.



CHAPTER LIII.

THE BENCH AND BAR.

THE OLD COURTS AND JUDGES—ALDEN T. SPOONER, JUDGE FURMAN—THE TILTON-BEECHER CASE—JUDGE NEILSON, JUDGE BEACH—A GROUP OF MODERN JUDGES AND JURISTS.

THE first court house in Kings county was inaugurated in Gravesend in 1668, and there the seat of justice remained until 1686, when it was removed to Flatbush. In 1832 it was finally located in Brooklyn, when Judge John Dikeman opened the first session. At that time the Brooklyn bar was represented by thirty-three members, and if all reports are true there were even then too many councilors for the extent of business. There had been three court houses in Flatbush. The first, a plain little building, was torn down in 1758 and replaced by a large structure which was part court house and part jail and cost the ratepayers \$448. During the occupation the British officers often used the court room for balls and entertainments. In 1792 it was condemned as antiquated and in such a poor condition as to be not worth repairing, and in the following year a new building was erected, which served until it was burned to the ground in 1832. When the embers of that conflagration died out the glory of Flatbush as a seat of justice passed away. In its day it had been the scene of many brilliant forensic displays. Egbert Benson, John Marshall, John Jay, Joseph Story, Oliver Ellsworth, Bushrod Washington, Samuel Nelson, Brockholst Livingston, John Sloss Hobert, James Kent, Ambrose Spencer, William L. Marcy,

Eseck Cowan, John W. Edmonds, Ogden Edwards and many other historic Judges have presided over its courts. The Judges of the higher courts prior to the legal changes imposed by the onstitution in 1846 were:

JUDICIAL OFFICERS (WEST RIDING, UNDER THE "DUKE'S LAWS.")

John Manning,	James Hubbard,
Richard Betts,	Ellert Elbertson,
Samuel Spicer,	James Cortelleau,
Rulof Martin.	

JUSTICES UNDER THE COMMISSION OF GOVERNOR ANDROS, 1688.

Stephen Van Cortland, Judge of the Court of Pleas.

James Cortelleau,	William Morris,
Gerardus Beekman,	Nicholas Stillwell,

JUSTICE OF THE QUORUM.

Under the law of 1691, and the ordinance of 1699: Gerardus Beekman.

JUDGES OF THE COMMON PLEAS.

APPOINTED

Gerardus Beekman.....	1700
Jacobus Van Cortland.....	Oct. 1702
Nicholas Stillwell.....	1710
Cornelius Sebring.....	Nov. 13, 1716

THE BENCH AND BAR.

625

APPOINTED

Cornelius van Brunt.....	1718
Peter Strycker.....	1720
Daniel Polhemus.....	1722
Peter Cortileau.....	1724
Samuel Garretsen.....	1729
Ryck Suydam.....	1732
Christopher Codwise.....	Feb. 24, 1738
Johannes Lott.....	1742
Abraham Lott.....	1745
Isaac Seabring.....	1749-'52
Samuel Garretsen, Barnabus Ryder, Chas. De Bevoise, 1752-61.....	Oct. 13, 1749
Abraham Schenck.....	Oct. 9, 1767
John Lefferts.....	May 9, 1770
John Lefferts, Jeremiah Remsen, Philip Nagil	1770-77
Englebert Lott, Jeremiah Vanderbilt, Theodorus Polhemus.....	1777-80

JUDGES OF THE COMMON PLEAS (since the Revolution).

APPOINTED

Nicholas Covenhoven.....	March 28, 1785
Johannes E. Lott.....	June 11, 1793
John Skillman.....	March 15, 1805
Wm. Furman.....	Feb'y 28, 1808
Leffert Lefferts.....	Feb'y 10, 1823
Peter Radcliff.....	Feb'y 21, 1827
John Dikeman.....	April 21, 1830
Nathan B. Morse.....	April 30, 1833
John A. Lott.....	April 18, 1838
John Greenwood.....	Jan. 27, 1843
John Vanderbilt.....	May 1, 1844

COUNTY JUDGES UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1846.

ELECTED

William Rockwell.....	June, 1847
Samuel E. Johnson.....	Oct. 1848
Henry A. Moore.....	Nov. 1851
Samuel D. Morris.....	Nov. 1855
Samuel Garrison.....	Nov. 1859
John Dikeman.....	Nov. 1863
James Troy.....	Nov. 1867
Henry A. Moore.....	Nov. 1871
Gerardus Beekman.....	1700

ELECTED

Jacobus Van Cortland.....	1702
Cornelius Seabring.....	1710
Cornelius Van Brunt.....	1718
Peter Strycker.....	1720
Daniel Polhemus.....	1722
Peter Cortilleau.....	1724
Samuel Garretson.....	1729
Ryck Suydam.....	1732
Christopher Codwise.....	1738
Johannes Lott.....	1742
Abraham Lott.....	1745
Isaac Seabring.....	1749
Samuel Garretson, Barnabus Ryder, and Chas. De Bevoise.....	1749-1761
Abraham Schenck.....	1767
John Lefferts.....	1779
John Lefferts, Jeremiah Remsen and Philip Nagil.....	1770-1777
Englebert Cowenhoven.....	1785
Johannes E. Lott.....	1793
John Skillman.....	1805
William Furman.....	1808
Leffert Lefferts.....	1823
Peter Radcliff.....	1827
John Dikeman.....	1830
Nathan B. Morse.....	1833
John A. Lott.....	1838
John Greenwood.....	1843
John Vanderbilt.....	1844

Under the Constitution of 1846 the following county Judges held office:

William Rockwell.....	1847
Samuel E. Johnson.....	1848
Henry A. Moore.....	1851
Samuel D. Morris.....	1855
Samuel Garrison.....	1859
John Dikeman.....	1863
James Troy.....	1867
Henry A. Moore.....	1871
Henry A. Moore.....	1877
Henry A. Moore.....	1885
Henry A. Moore.....	1889
William B. Hurd.....	1895
Joseph Aspinall.....	1895

In 1848 the Supreme Court of the State was organized, and under it the following justices were elected in the Second Judicial District, which included Kings county:

Selah B. Strong, Presiding Justice, 1848.

William T. McCoun, 1848.

Nathan B. Morse, of Brooklyn, 1848.

Seward Barculo, 1848.

John W. Brown, elected 1849.

Selah B. Strong, re-elected in 1851.

Gilbert Dean, appointed 1854, after Barculo's death.

William Rockwell, of Brooklyn, elected 1853.

James Emmott, elected 1855.

Lucien Birdseye, appointed 1856.

John A. Lott, of Brooklyn, elected 1856.

William W. Scrugham, elected 1859.

Joseph F. Barnard, elected 1863.

Jasper W. Gilbert, of Brooklyn, elected 1865.

William Fullerton, appointed 1867, after Scrugham's death.

Abraham B. Tappen, elected 1867.

Calvin E. Pratt, of Brooklyn, elected 1869.

Jackson O. Dykman, elected 1875.

Erastus Cooke, of Brooklyn, elected 1879.

Edgar M. Cullen, of Brooklyn, elected 1880.

Charles F. Browne, elected 1882.

Willard Bartlett, of Brooklyn, elected 1884.

William J. Gaynor, of Brooklyn, elected 1893.

William D. Dickey, elected 1895.

Wilmot M. Smith, of Patchogue, elected 1895.

Martin J. Keogh, elected 1895; Augustus Van Wyck, Nathaniel H. Clement and William J. Osborne, former Judges of the City Court, became Supreme Court Justices January 1, 1896, by virtue of section 5, title VI of the Revised Constitution.

Garret J. Garretson, elected 1896.

William W. Goodrich, of Brooklyn, appointed 1896.

Michael Hirschberg, elected 1896.

Samuel T. Maddox, elected 1896.

Jesse Johnson, appointed after death of Justice Osborne, 1897.

We do not propose following in this chapter the record of the various courts in which justice has been administered in Kings county, our purpose being mainly to speak of some of the men who were and are leaders of the local bench and bar, and who by their judicial and impassioned expounding of the principles of the law, or their clear and cogent utterances when charging a jury, or by impassioned argument or ingenious tactics have won victories at the bar for the cause of their clients or the public weal, have won for the bar of Kings county a measure of fame that is not surpassed in any other section of the United States. The keynote to the structure thus raised to such noble proportions was struck by Judge Egbert Benson when he addressed the grand jury at Flatbush June 6, 1800, as follows, to quote a most striking passage from his charge: "In proportion as your county, gentlemen, increases in wealth and population; as it advances in public improvement, in education, in arts, science, commercial prosperity, which must flow from its unsurpassed resources, there will be a corresponding growth of crime—the inseparable companion of great public prosperity.

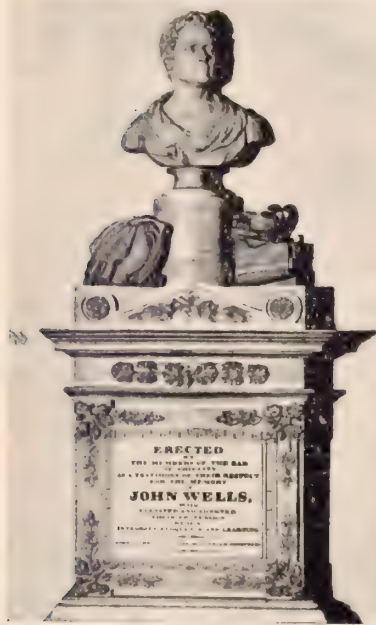
"Your county, gentlemen, over which the smoke of battlefields has but recently floated, has before it a magnificent future. Upon grand juries; upon courts of justice; upon all officers of courts, and upon all persons connected with the administration of the laws, rest solemn responsibilities, which are to tell on that future; for now is the seed time,—now is the ground fallow which is to yield fruit for generations to come. See to it, then, gentlemen, that the responsibility with which the law clothes you is properly executed and directed."

One of the earliest of the recognized leaders of the bar was John Wells, who was born at Cherry Valley in 1770. He was the son

of Robert Wells, a prosperous farmer, who was murdered along with eleven members of his family in 1778 by a horde of Indians under Joseph Brant,—the sad incident being now spoken of as the Cherry Valley Massacre. John Wells would have shared the fate of the others had he not been in Schenectady attending school. He was taken to Brooklyn by an aunt, educated at Princeton, studied for the

Adams. It was one of those peculiar suits which involved much more than appeared on the surface. A contemporary account says:

Mr. Cheetham, it is said, reasoning from the force with which Wells had wielded his pen in certain political and other articles, retained him as his counsel for the defense,—not merely his counsel, but the leading counsel in the case. This was a great surprise to all of Cheetham's friends; but the result shows he made no mistake in his selection of counsel. The cause came on for trial in the city of New York early in 1804. The prosecution was conducted by several of the ablest lawyers then at the bar. The defense of Cheetham by his young and apparently inexperienced counsel, as has well been said, was masterly; it would have added lustre to the reputation of Wirt. The result was highly favorable to his client. The damages against him were mitigated to a trifle, compared with what was confidently expected on one side and feared on the other. Nothing could exceed the surprise which this splendid—we may say triumphant—defense created in the public mind; and the young advocate at once took that high and commanding place at the bar for which his talents so admirably fitted him. From a stunted business and a few clients, whose visits had hitherto been "few and far between," he was daily retained in cases of importance and of pecuniary value to him. Not long after the trial of *Smith vs. Cheetham*, he was retained in an important case tried at Flatbush, in which he displayed skill, learning and eloquence that added largely to his fame. His opponent was Colonel Aaron Burr, who often appeared in the Kings county courts. After the trial Burr said, "I was aware of Mr. Wells' power and astonishing ability as a writer, but I did not think he possessed, as he really does, the genius of an Erskine as a lawyer."



MEMORIAL OF JOHN WELLS.
IN ST. PAUL'S CHAPEL, NEW YORK.

bar, and in 1791 was admitted to practice. His home then was in Brooklyn, and he had an office there as well as in New York. For a time little business came his way, but his literary ability attracted the attention of Alexander Hamilton, and he assisted that statesman in bringing out the "Federalist." But his opportunity came when Mr. Cheetham, editor of "The American Citizen," a New York newspaper, selected him for his legal adviser in a suit brought for libel against the paper by W. S. Smith, son-in-law of President

From that time until the time of his death, in 1823, Mr. Wells was the acknowledged leader of the bar, not alone of Kings county, but of the State. For a time he was in partnership with Josiah Ogden Hoffman, but as a rule he preferred to fight his battles single-handed. After his death his associates at the bar united in the erection of a memorial bust, which is still to be seen in St. Paul's Chapel, New York.

George M. Wood, born in Trenton, New Jersey, and who began to practice law in Brooklyn in 1837, was long famous as a local leader. Chancellor Walworth called him a "walking library of law," and the immortal Daniel Webster, seeing him apparently asleep in court while a case was going on in which they held opposite sides, said, "Pray don't wake him, for when George M. Wood is fully awake he is one of the most troublesome opponents I am in the habit of meeting." Mr. Wood died in 1861.

One of the last of the purely political Judges to hold office in the court at Flatbush was William Furman, who in 1808 became Judge of the Court of Common Pleas. It is not certain that he was ever bred to the law or knew much more about the profession than any educated gentleman might pick up in the course of his reading or association, yet he sat on the bench from 1808 until 1823, and won a most enviable record. One of the biographers of his son, Gabriel Furman, the well-known local antiquary, thus wrote of him:

He was a man of finished education; strong, practical good sense. Paramount traits in his character were love of justice, perfect integrity, impartiality and a close perception of human nature. It will therefore be seen he possessed the qualities of a useful and upright Judge; his popularity with the bar, and the high esteem in which he was held by the public, plainly attest his character as a Judge and as a private citizen. He represented Brooklyn on the Board of Kings County Supervisors for several successive years. In the fall of 1825 he was elected member of the Assembly from Kings county, entering upon his legislative duties January 3, 1826. That illustrious statesman, Samuel Young, was Speaker; the peculiarities of Mr. Young as a legislator have become matters of history. He was in every sense unlike Judge Furman, and yet there always existed a warm friendship between these gentlemen; there is one fact which attests this in a strong manner; he was appointed by Mr. Young Chairman of the Judiciary Committee, and second on the Committee of Ways and Means.

Judge Furman was President of the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company, incorporated in 1824. There was scarcely any public improvement touching the welfare of the then village of Brooklyn that Judge Furman was not more or less identified with. He was a lifelong, undeviating friend of De Witt Clinton, strongly sustaining him in that great policy that inaugurated and constructed the Erie Canal.

The legislative session of 1826 was one of the most exciting and important in the history of the State. The four-cornered Presidential conflict between General Jackson, Mr. Adams, Mr. Crawford and Mr. Clay culminated that year. It entered largely into the Legislature of the State, leading to frequent collisions. In these Judge Furman largely participated. On the whole he was one of the most active and influential members of that session. He was tendered the re-nomination the next year, but declined. Among his associates in the Assembly, whose names have passed into the history of the State, were Ogden Hoffman, then a resident of Orange county; Francis Granger, from Ontario; John Tracy, from Chenango; and Erastus Root, of Delaware. After retiring from the Legislature Judge Furman retired entirely into private life, a highly esteemed citizen, influential and active in all that concerned the interest and advancement of the society in which he moved.

Judge Dikeman, the last of the presiding Judges at Flatbush, was the son of a Hempstead farmer, and was born in that township in 1795. For a time he was a teacher in a school on Adams street, near Sands street, but while so engaged he zealously studied law. In 1821 he was appointed clerk of the village of Brooklyn, and held that office until he was appointed to the bench in 1830.

In referring to the career of Henry C. Murphy reference was often made to his law firm, Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt, and as the members of that firm were really representative lawyers of Brooklyn for many years as well as active in its politics, the careers of the other members may be briefly summarized. John A. Lott was born in Flatbush in 1805, and was the representative of a family whose progenitor settled there in 1682. In 1828 Mr. Lott was admitted to practice at the bar.

and for some time held an office in New York. His acquaintance with Mr. Murphy brought about a partnership with that gentleman in 1835, and Mr. Lott removed his office to Brooklyn. In 1836 Judge Vanderbilt was assumed as a partner, and the firm of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt started in its history of some twenty years, until Mr. Murphy became Minister to The Hague, in 1857. Then it became Lott & Vanderbilt and so continued until Judge Vanderbilt's death, in 1878, when Mr. Lott continued in business alone until he was summoned hence, in 1878. With Judge Lott's politics, of course, this work has no interest, but it must be confessed that he was as much a politician as a lawyer, and for a long time was the acknowledged leader of his party in Brooklyn. In 1838 he was appointed Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, in 1841 was elected a member of the Assembly, and about two years later was chosen Senator. His legislative career was a most honorable one. He took an active part in the debates on every important public question, and his words, well thought out and elegantly and forcefully expressing the ideas of a well-read man and one who was in favor of legitimate reforms of all sorts, carried much weight. One notable speech he made was on a motion to cheapen the cost of the printed reports of the State courts' decisions, in which he came pretty close to the notion of a Scotch jurist who held that when the State enacted a law and the law continued in force, the State should attend to its enforcement and its administration so that justice would cost nothing, as justice was a right, not a privilege to be paid for. Judge Lott, among other things, said:

I am strongly in favor of cheap law and cheap law-books. I think it quite as important that a knowledge of law should be brought within the reach of the people as the knowledge of any other science,—for law, as has been well said, "is the rule of human action." We have read of the Roman Emperor who caused his code to be written in fine letters

on tablets, placed on towers so high that none could read it. Those who favor the other side of this question do indirectly what that Emperor did. Sir, I do not desire to emulate him in any degree. I cordially indorse the language of a great English law reformer who said: It was the boast of Augustus,—it formed a part of the glare in which the perfidies of his early years were lost,—that he found Rome built of brick and left it marble; but how much more noble will be the Sovereign's boast when he shall have it to say that he found law dear and left it cheap; found it a sealed book, left it a living letter; found it the patrimony of the rich, left it the inheritance of the poor; found it the two-edged sword of tyranny and oppression, and left it the staff of honesty and the shield of innocence.

In 1857 Judge Lott was elected to the Supreme Court and entered on his duties January 1, 1858. In 1869 he was elected to the bench of the Court of Appeals.

John Vanderbilt, the junior partner of the famous firm, was, like Mr. Lott, a native of Flatbush, and, like him, was descended from an ancient family of that good old town. In 1835 he became associated in business with Mr. Lott and Mr. Murphy, and his association with Judge Lott continued until the close of his active career. In 1844 Mr. Vanderbilt was appointed by Governor William C. Bouck to the responsible position of first Judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings county to succeed Judge Greenwood, who had resigned. He discharged the duties of this important position with faithfulness and credit for two years, until the Court of Common Pleas was abolished by the adoption of the New Constitution in 1846, and the creation of the County Court as at present constituted. It has been said that, at the time of his retirement from the bench, there was not a more popular man, politically and socially, in the city of Brooklyn than he. In the fall of 1852 he received the Democratic nomination for the State Senate, to which position he was chosen by a large majority. He filled this station creditably for the full term of two years. Dur-

ing his term as Senator he was appointed one of the Commissioners to investigate the harbor encroachments of New York. He was also selected as one of the Commissioners to investigate the affairs of President Nott and Union College. In the fall of 1856 he was nominated on the Democratic ticket for Lieutenant-Governor, with Amasa J. Parker, of Albany, as Governor, but the Democrats were not successful in the issue of the election. For several years before his death, which occurred at Flatbush May 16, 1877, Judge Vanderbilt was retired from active service by a shock of paralysis; but, "in the prime of his energy was certainly the most vigorous and handsome man in public or political life in this county, if not in the State. His strong, manly beauty mated with and was the exponent of qualities of mind and heart, as attractive as his gifts and graces of person. In a time when 'rings' were unknown, he was a Democrat; in a time when sectionalism was hardly an apparition, and when the State had its full rights, whether it was weighed or counted as a factor, he was a patriot, and one who gloried in his whole country; in a time when shysters had not been evolved, and when pettifoggers were limited to a satirical stage or a sarcastic literature, he was a lawyer; in a time when gentlemen were as dominant in politics, and scholars as dominant in council as they now are not, he was a scholar and a gentleman. His rapidity of public development, his activity in affairs, his not surpassed qualities of good-fellowship, the magnetism of his mind and manners, and the impressive appeal which he could address to the people, early made him and long kept him what he was freely called, 'Kings County's Favorite Son,' when that appellation was forcible by its rarity, significant in its meaning, and when it had not been vulgarized by its application to the politicians by profession, and to the place-hunters by occupation."

Judge Vanderbilt married Gertrude Phebe Lefferts, daughter of John Lefferts, of Flat-

bush. She yet survives, and by her volume on "The Social History of Flatbush" and other graceful writings, has done much to keep alive the kindly memories of that old Dutch town. She has been a frequent contributor to newspapers and magazines, and her interesting story of the Dutch Reformed Church at Flatbush has been by general request incorporated in these pages.

No study of the past generation of Brooklyn lawyers would be complete without a sketch of Alden J. Spooner, who was at once a representative citizen, a representative lawyer, and a representative of the higher culture of the city. The following is condensed from a sketch by L. B. Proctor. Alden T. Spooner was born at Sag Harbor February 10, 1810. His father, Colonel Alden Spooner, was long the foremost journalist in Brooklyn, established "The Long Island Star," the first newspaper published on Long Island, and in 1841, although not bred to the law, was appointed Surrogate of Kings county. His son, however, was duly qualified for a legal career and was admitted to practice in the regular manner and after a thorough training.

His first case at the Queens county bar was one of great difficulty, full of knotty legal questions; and in addition to this his opponent was one of the ablest lawyers of his times. Mr. Spooner had associated with him a very able and experienced lawyer, who was to try the case before the jury. But, being taken suddenly ill, the whole responsibility of the case rested upon the young advocate. With many misgivings he entered the contest; but as the struggle deepened his timidity vanished, confidence and self-reliance took its place, and after a long and bitter contest his efforts were crowned with a triumph that greatly advanced his professional prospects.

In May, 1836, the celebrated case of the People v. John Nichols was tried at the Suffolk Term of Oyer and Terminer, the Hon. Ogden Edwards presiding. Nichols had been indicted for an assault with an intent to kill

and for burglary. The crime was committed under circumstances of great atrocity. Spooner appeared for the defense, interposing the plea of insanity for his client. The case is remembered as one in which an unprecedented number of eminent physicians were sworn as witnesses for and against the prisoner; those for the defense established beyond a doubt his insanity, while an equal number testified that he was perfectly sane. Under this conflict of evidence Spooner went to the jury. With great ingenuity he took advantage of this marked conflict in the professional evidence, thereby raising a reasonable doubt as to the guilt of the prisoner.

"Gentlemen of the jury," said he, "you have the testimony of ten respectable physicians showing the insanity of my client. It is true you have an equal number of equally respectable physicians who testify to his sanity. Notwithstanding this, will you take the responsibility of convicting a man of a charge as serious as this, whom ten scientific physicians have pronounced insane? They may be right, gentlemen,—quite as likely to be right as those who have testified against them. Here, then, gentlemen, is such a reasonable doubt of my client's guilt that you can not convict him; for, gentlemen, when doctors disagree, who can decide?"

His whole plea was a masterly effort, and so pronounced by the bar and spectators present. He was followed by the Hon. Selah B. Strong, District Attorney of Suffolk county, afterward one of the Justices of the Supreme Court of the Second Judicial District of the State. Judge Strong made a very able and eloquent reply to Mr. Spooner's argument, but the jury rendered a verdict of "Not guilty," and the prisoner was discharged. This was a signal victory for the young lawyer. As a speaker Mr. Spooner had a full share of advantages in personal appearance, in oratorical and reasoning powers, and in clear voice. These united qualities commanded respect and attention, and often produced conviction in

the minds of his hearers. With his pen he was a more powerful dispenser of eloquence than with his lips. Possessing a fine literary taste, strengthened and enlarged by classical lore, and an extensive knowledge of books, he ranked among the most able writers of his times. His capacity for intense application to literary labor seemed exhaustless. All his literary efforts exhibit vivacity and strength of mind, quickness of perception and great purity of taste. Books were his constant companions, and he was ever a close student of the Greek and Latin writers. He used to say: "I am pleased with Livy, for his inimitable manner of telling a story; with Sallust, for his entering into those internal principles of action which arise from the characters and manners of those he described; with Tacitus, for displaying those outward motives of safety and interest which give birth to the whole series of transactions he relates." A more pleasing and truthful description of these elegant writers could hardly be given.

His literary taste gradually led him from the duties of his profession. As has well been said: "The literary and artistic features of Mr. Spooner's character were an especial and profitable phase in his life. He wrote much and well. In his earlier years, besides the work of editing the 'Long Island Star,' he was a frequent and valuable contributor to that greatly admired periodical, 'The Knickerbocker Magazine.' The history of Brooklyn and Long Island always interested him deeply. He furnished a loving, tender biography of the author to a reprint of Gabriel Furman's 'Notes, Geographical and Historical, Relating to the Town of Brooklyn' (annotated by Dr. H. R. Stiles), which was published in 1865. He also edited a reprint of Silas Wood's 'Sketch of the First Settlement of the Towns of Long Island.' Of both of these works small editions on large paper, for private distribution, were issued by the Faust Club (consisting of Alden J. Spooner and Henry R. Stiles) in 1865.

"A more recent work was the article on Brooklyn in Johnson's Encyclopedia, published a few years ago,—a very complete sketch; and he also contributed articles on other topics for the same work.

"Mr. Spooner's interest in public affairs dates back to his earlier years. When, on the 18th of November, 1830, the Hamilton Literary Society was organized, Mr. Spooner, then a youth of twenty years, was one of the active promoters of the movement, and was elected first president of the Hamilton. With him were associated at that time, in the organization of the society, such men as Henry C. Murphy, A. A. Low, Seth Low, John T. Howard, Prof. Raymond,—afterward President of the Polytechnic and Vassar College,—Joshua A. Van Cott and Hon. John Greenwood, of the city of Brooklyn."

One of the pleasantest instances in the literary career of Mr. Spooner was the semi-centennial of the Hamilton, on the evening of January 19, 1880, held in the Art Gallery on Montague street. As one of the founders of the society and its first president, Mr. Spooner was one of the honored guests of the evening, and there led in that old song so dear to all Hamiltonians,

"When we all ate the oyster fries
Way down at Johnny Joe's."

He was the writer of that song, and it has been sung at the annual banquets of that society for years. It carries the memory of many a gray-haired and reverend citizen back to his younger days, and to the pleasures and companions of his youth.

Mr. Spooner loved the Hamilton Society as a parent loves its offspring; and he was always the hearty friend of the young men who, year after year, swelled its ranks and participated in its exercises.

His connection with the establishing of the Long Island Historical Society is one of the main features of his career. The idea was present in his brain long before the initial

step was taken, and his name is signed to the call for the meeting held on the 16th of February, 1863, when the project took shape and form, and he was among its first officers. He drew largely from the shelves of his own library to contribute to the infant library of the institution. He presented pictures and objects of interest to the gallery and museum of the society, and he was always its earnest, steadfast friend; and his leisure hours were largely passed in its alcoves. The following minute was adopted by the Board of Directors of the Long Island Historical Society, October 11, 1881, as expressive of their sense of the loss which the society sustained in his death:

Alden J. Spooner, one of the councillors of this society, died suddenly in the month of August last. His life was most absolutely that of a Long Islander. He was born in Suffolk county, passed the greater part of his life in Kings, and died and was buried in the county of Queens. His tastes were always predominantly literary, and his busier years were divided between journalism and the practice of the law. He was a wide reader, and wrote with facility and finish in both prose and verse. He was a delightful companion, and abounded in anecdote, fun and genial humor. He was humane and generous up to the full measure of his means. From early manhood down to his death, on the very verge of old age, he sympathized with all measures and efforts which aimed to make men wiser, better and happier in their lives. Beyond most of his contemporaries, he had a prescience of the rapid growth and prosperity of this city, and of its needs of libraries, lyceums, schools of art, and other institutions for culture and pleasure; and he was always a prompt, eager and enthusiastic participant in all combined efforts to make adequate provision for such needs. The early Apprentices' Library, the City Library, the Athenæum, and the Hamilton Literary Association, are among his debtors, and should hold him in grateful and honorable remembrance. The circular which convened the earliest meeting for the organization of this society was from his pen, and bears his name, and he was not only among the first, but among the most zealous of those to whose public spirit the society owes its existence.

Prominent and active members of the existing institutions of the city, who shared his genial companionship and liberal aims, have united to pay a parting tribute to his cultivated tastes, his broad humanity, his devotion to the welfare of the city and the island, and to his high character for integrity in his relations to his fellow men.

Mr. Spooner was also largely interested in establishing the Brooklyn Institute, on Washington street. Indeed, there is scarcely one among the older institutions of Brooklyn in which he was not actively interested. The latest offspring of his efforts in this direction was the Society of Old Brooklynites.

As a judge of art, Mr. Spooner had few superiors among amateurs. Painting and sculpture were equally a study with him, and he had an intelligent appreciation of their finer points.

In his later years he was engaged in collecting, arranging in chronological order, and uniting together a mass of historical incidents relating to Long Island, which he had been years in gathering. It was his intention, had his life been spared, to have written a comprehensive history of Long Island; but death came to him suddenly at his residence in Hempstead, on the evening of August 2, 1881.

He never had any taste for politics, consequently never sought political distinction or official promotion. The only office he ever held was that of clerk of the Brooklyn City Court. As has well been said: "Always too ready to yield to the advancement of others, he put aside positions he would have splendidly adorned with his magnificent intellect."

Mr. Spooner's life was one of spotless integrity, and the rigid honesty of his business dealings always secured him absolute confidence, not only with his clients, but with all classes of business men. He was a fascinating and instructing conversationalist; one of those persons in whose society intelligent men and women became still more intelligent. He could draw out persons, if there was anything

in them to draw out; if there was a subject about which they knew more than he did, nothing pleased him so much as to have it introduced. He seized quickly upon characteristic traits, and by an anecdote would put one in possession of the real character of the man better than an extended biography.

Perhaps no Judge in Brooklyn came, for a time, more before the eyes of the civilized world than did Justice Joseph Neilson, who presided so ably over the famous Beecher-Tilton trial. He was born at Argyle, New York, April 15, 1815, and was of Scotch-Irish descent. His father was a physician. Joseph studied for the legal profession, and on being admitted to the bar "hung out his shingle" in Oswego, New York, and there remained until 1844, when he removed to New York and took up practice there, building up quickly a large business. He made his home in Brooklyn, and in 1870 he was elected one of the Judges of that city. He retired at the close of 1882, having then reached the constitutional age limit. He was in every respect a remarkable Judge, and a notable instance of this was given just toward the close of the long and involved Beecher-Tilton trial. The evidence was all in, the decisions of the Judge on law points had been given day after day with unvarying courtesy, the lawyers had summed up and every one waited to hear the Judge's charge. All through the long trial he had been so impartial that neither side could say how the evidence had impressed him or what his opinion of the case really was. Now it seemed as if he must at least show his leaning, and counsel, jury and public hung on his words as he laid down the law, pointed out the value of the evidence submitted and went over every detail, every law point, and presented the whole in such a clear and logical manner that the jury had, as it were, a birds-eye view of the ugly story laid before them. At the conclusion of his summing up not a single exception was taken to any part of his address by the counsel on either side; all those

brilliant men who had weighed every word uttered could find no flaw, no wavering in the scales of justice, and through their spokesmen answered they were "content." In commenting on the charge the Albany Law Journal said: "The brief charge to the jury of Judge Neilson, in the Tilton-Beecher case, is a marked contrast with the address of Lord Cockburn in the Tichborne case. The address of the former occupied only one hour and a half, while that of the latter required many days, and fills two ponderous volumes. The vast variety of topics, social, moral, religious, political and legal, which were connected with the Tilton-Beecher case, gave the counsel on both sides, and the Judge presiding, a splendid opportunity to air their learning, their fancy, their rhetoric and their logic. This opportunity the counsel accepted, but the Judge modestly, and we think commendably, refrained from the display of anything but what the necessities of the case required. His charge is a model of clearness, precision and force. It seems almost incredible that the case could have been presented to the jury adequately in so few words. But a careful perusal of the charge shows that nothing was left out which was necessary to the complete presentation of the case. The whole address bears marks of the most patient and careful consideration of all the material evidence, under the most wonderful condensation. The spirit which breathes through the address is one of the utmost fairness and impartiality. The counsel on both sides expressed themselves satisfied, and this of itself is a high testimonial to the freedom from bias which the charge evinces."

The summing up in the Beecher-Tilton case, grand as it was and hailed as it was with acclaim all over the civilized world,—at least over as much of it as American newspapers reached, has now in a measure lost most of its interest for us. The world has long ago made a decision in the case, grander and more conclusive than that of the jury, and fully accepted the perfect innocence of Brooklyn's

greatest preacher and foremost citizen. But Judge Neilson was a polished man of letters, as well as a brilliant jurist, and we as laymen can read much of his literary work to-day with more interest than even his most painstaking utterances from the bench. Here, however, is a summing up which seems so perfect a piece of literary work, and at the same time so thoroughly judicial in tone, that it may serve to recall his genius in both qualities. It is, in fact, a summing up of the characters of Bacon and Coke,—two of the greatest judges of England. King James I, the "British Solomon," and exponent of the Divine Right theory, had tried to persuade his law officers that he was the supreme judge of the law and that judges should obey his wishes, and as a result had frequent conferences with those whose duty it was to administer justice. Judge Neilson wrote:

In one of these conferences Coke thought to teach James I that he was not above the law, could not add to or alter it, or create new offenses. At another interview, Bacon, the attorney-general, present, and supporting the king in his arrogant pretensions, the question was put whether the judges would obey the royal mandates. All the other judges, infirm of purpose, answered yes; but, with the moderation and dignity which became his office, Coke said: "When the case happens, I shall do that which shall be fit for a judge to do."

By his independence Coke paved the way for his dismissal from office, a disgrace for which Bacon, neither the greatest nor meanest of mankind, had toiled, and in which he enjoyed a temporary triumph. But though, in that deprivation, Coke revealed what Sheridan might have called "the flabby part of his character," he was thus left free to act as a statesman.

We call up in review before us the life of Coke with alternate emotions of regret, shame, sorrow, pride and consolation. Was that life as a journey of a day? If so, it was by pathways through dreary and desolate wastes, over Sorbonnian bogs, each footstep sinking in the slime, but occasionally leading up to Alpine heights, glowing with celestial light and beauty. It was a life often marred by want of moral

tone; often redeemed by elevated sentiments; full of distortions and contradictions. As the Speaker when in Parliament, under Elizabeth, he was shamefully subservient; as a crown officer, extorting confessions from prisoners put to the torture, he was pitiless; as uttering reproaches and accusations against Sir Walter Raleigh, on trial for his life, he was fierce and brutal. His devotion to study and his mastery of the law were unprecedented; his assertion of his rights as a judge, against royal intrusion, was admirable; his intrigue to regain royal favor by the marriage of his daughter to the brother of Buckingham was intolerable; his independence, virtue, courage, devotion in Parliament, under James I and Charles I gave special grace and value to the history of the times. But our sensibilities are touched when we find him a prisoner in the Tower of London. The room in which he is confined, long devoted to ignoble uses, becomes sacred. We enter with reverence, as upon holy ground. He is absorbed in his work on the Commentaries. As he writes the hand is tremulous; but that hand had never been polluted by accepting bribes.

In some aspects of life and character Coke appears to greater advantage than Bacon. Both were insatiate in their ambition, implacable in their resentments. The one was rough in manners, arrogant in speech, ready to strike terrible blows openly; but poor in feigning and clumsy in changing his ground. The other was courtly, plausible, serene, had a gentle touch, even when that touch boded ruin, was an athlete in fencing with cunning words, had the facial adroitness of a trimmer, was covetous, to his own disgrace and ruin. Those who dislike the one may well despise the other. For neither of them can we feel the love and sympathy we have for Sir John Fortescue and Sir Thomas More. In scientific speculation, no jurist has commanded as much respect as Bacon. In exact and profound knowledge of the old common and statute law, none could rival Coke. But, in view of the times in which they lived, the work allotted, and the materials in which they wrought, it would be unjust to weigh and estimate their labors with reference to the more enduring and fruitful services of the great English jurists and statesmen of later days. In the freedom of judicial inquiry and direction, in the temper of the people, the condition of trade and commerce, and in the character of legislation, there had been a great advance between their time and that of Hard-

wick. Coke and Bacon could not for any practical purpose have adapted their work to the coming and higher civilization. As in the natural world we have progress and rotation, each season performing its appropriate office, so in the intellectual, social, and political life of a people events are marshalled in due order and relation—a gradual development. What was easy of achievement when the times were ripe for it would have been impossible if attempted prematurely or out of season. When Mansfield moulded and illustrated our commercial law the materials were at hand, plastic and ready for use.

In another part of this work mention was made of the unusual honor paid to Mr. J. S. T. Stranahan in seeing his own statue erected by the people among whom he had lived and labored for so many years. A similar honor was, on May 8, 1895, paid to Benjamin D. Silliman, long the Nestor of the Brooklyn bar, and whose death in 1901 removed from public life a figure that had been active in Brooklyn's affairs for nearly two generations. On the date mentioned a marble bust of Mr. Silliman, from the studio of William Ordway Partridge, was unveiled and presented to the New England Society. It was the occasion of a brilliant gathering. Gen. Stewart L. Woodford, William M. Evarts and the Rev. Dr. Storrs were among the speakers. Mr. Silliman was born at Newport, R. I., in 1805, and was graduated at Yale in the class of 1824. He studied law in the office of Chancellor Kent and was admitted to the bar in 1829. Thenceforth his life was bound up in his profession and he sought relaxation in literary pursuits. His home in Brooklyn was the constant scene, until the weight and infirmities and changes of years forced him to abandon all sorts of excitement, of pleasant and intellectual gatherings. Though often urged to enter political life, he invariably refused, except when he served a term in the State Legislature. In 1873 he was prevailed upon to become the candidate for Attorney General of the State on the Republican ticket. The ticket was defeated, and while Mr. Silliman mourned the blow

to his party, he was personally glad to escape what to him were the annoyances of public office, for as United States District Attorney, which office he resigned in 1866, he knew that even legal officials had to submit to much that made political life repulsive.

As a lawyer Mr. Silliman was rather distinguished for his deep and thorough knowledge of the fundamentals of jurisprudence, for his complete mastery of the details of every case submitted to him, for the clearness and cogency of his arguments, than for his oratorical ability. He was more conversational in his tone at the bar than impassioned or glowing, but when he laid down a point it was so clear, so logical, so matter-of-fact in its assumptions that he seldom failed to win his case. His knowledge of the "authorities" was most thoroughgoing and he could support his own views with an array of decisions that left little to controvert. As a chamber or consulting lawyer he was without a peer, and his cautious and conservative advice, his desire to arrange out of court all differences that could be so adjusted, and his honest appraisal of the legal status and prospects of his client, often effected settlements involving vast interests without the intervention and expense of litigation.

For his legal profession, as such, Mr. Silliman had the most unbounded admiration. In addressing a graduating class at Columbia College he said:

In welcoming you, gentlemen, to the brotherhood of the Bar, you may well be congratulated on the peculiar advantages you enjoyed in preparing for its duties. You have not been left to pick up, as you best might, here and there, scattered fragments of legal knowledge, but you have been systematically instructed in the principles and philosophy of the law. You have been guided and trained by eminent and learned teachers in a school that ranks second to none in the land for the completeness of its system and the thoroughness of its instruction. You come not as undrilled militia, but as graduates from the very West Point of the profession.

Widely different have been (with few exceptions) the opportunities of legal instruction in this country until a comparatively recent period. The student was required to enter the office of a practicing attorney, and there to pursue his studies. He was at once engaged in the practice of that which he had not learned the principles. He became familiar by daily observations, and as a copyist, with the forms of conveyancing and phraseology of pleadings, without understanding their reason. * * * As a general rule, it was impossible for the attorney, in whose office the student was engaged, to give any material attention to his studies, and his progress and attainments, therefore, lacked system, and were slow, confused and uncertain. A formal and superficial examination finally passed him to the Bar, where he could rarely feel at home until he had acquired by subsequent laborious and anxious practice a knowledge of very much that he should have attained at the outset. * * * In Europe, on the other hand, full and careful instruction in the principles of law has ever been a pre-requisite to admission to the Bar, and the schools in which such instruction has been given have been organized, fostered, and more or less regulated by public authority. Regular schools of law were established in Rome, in the time of Augustus, at which those who aspired to the honors of the forum were assiduous students. None but the thoroughly learned and skilled could dream of such honors where Scaevola, Sulpicius and Cicero had been competitors, and where even the boys, according to Cicero, were taught the "twelve tables" as a necessary lesson (*discebamus enim pueri XII tabulas ut carmen necessarium*) to instruct them in so much of the laws as should be obtained by every Roman citizen. In France such schools existed as far back as the twelfth century. From an early period the law has been, and still is, most fully and elaborately taught by renowned professors in the Universities of Germany and Holland. In England the schools of law have been less regular and complete than on the Continent, but the qualifications of candidates for the English Bar have, nevertheless, been measured by a very high standard.

We regard the annual reinforcement of the Bar by a class of accomplished and educated gentlemen who have been thus thoroughly taught in the principles of the law, and whose minds have been carefully disciplined and trained for its intellectual duties, as sure to elevate the standard of legal attainment, and

to promote the honor and usefulness of the profession. * * *

A grand future beckons you, and you have the best preparation for the course. But we must bear in mind that other stout knights, who have had no such advantages as you have had, will enter the lists with strong lances, and compete with you for the higher prizes. The great lawyers who preceded us—the Hamiltons, the Kents, the Jays, the Van Vechtens, the Spencers, the Hills, the Wellses, the Oakleys, the Duers, the Woods, the Talcotts, the Ogdens, the Hoffmans, the Van Burens, the Butlers—had not such training as you have enjoyed. But what summits did they not attain!

I have spoken of this school as the "West Point" of the profession; but we have seen within the last six years that other soldiers than those who graduated at West Point won victories and received laurels—marched to the front with muskets on their shoulders and returned with stars on their shoulders.

At the same time he warned his auditors against indulging in practices which are apt to militate against legal ethics and defeat the ends of justice—practices which were then, and still are, often indulged in, especially by young lawyers in their desire to win a position quickly. He said: "No man can, consistently with personal honor or professional reputation, misstate a fact or a principle to the court or jury. The man who would cheat a court or jury would cheat anybody else. Measured by the lowest standard, that of expediency, no lawyer can, in any case, afford to act meanly or speak untruly. He owes no such duty to his client; an honest client would not be safe in the hands of a lawyer who would do either."

In speaking of the frequent popular denunciation of lawyers in defending cases—especially criminal cases in which the guilt of the accused is evident to everyone who "reads the newspapers"—and succeed in getting a verdict actually or practically removing the accused from the grasp of the law, Mr. Silliman laid down a ruling which must be accepted as just:

It needs but little thought to convince even the vulgar that the idea that the vocation of

lawyers is inconsistent with the strictest truth, is but vulgar error. In support of the charge, it is often said that counsel will not refuse to defend a prisoner whom he supposes to be guilty of the offense for which he is to be tried. The answer to this is plain: The accused person is not to be tried by the impressions, or even by the convictions, of any one man, whether lawyer or layman. The law of the land requires, not only for the sake of the accused, but for the safety of every citizen, that no man shall be tried and convicted except by a jury of twelve men. The question of his guilt or innocence calls for a division of labor in the process by which it is to be determined. It is made the duty of the counsel for the prosecution to conduct one, and of the counsel for the prisoner to conduct the other branch of the investigation; for the former to collect and present before the jury the evidence against the accused, and to state such views adverse to the prisoner as result from the whole testimony; and for the latter to collect and present before the jury the evidence in favor of the prisoner, and to state all such views in his favor as result from the whole testimony.

If counsel assumes the guilt of an accused person before that guilt has been judicially ascertained, if he determines at the outset that the accused is guilty, he takes upon himself most unjustifiably the combined character and prerogative of accuser, witness, jury and judge; and if, because of such conclusions in his own mind, he refuses to conduct the defense of the prisoner, he throws the weight of his own character and convictions into the scale against him.

Of course were we attempting a complete chronicle of the bench and bar of Brooklyn many names would be included in the retrospect, some of which have acquired a national measure of fame, but the aim here has been to select a few judges, attorneys, men of local fame as well as those whose names belong to the nation, who are representative of all ranks of the greatest of all the professions.

But what a galaxy of brilliant men the story of whose lives the biographer who would aim to cover the bar of Kings County a decade ago could draw upon for illustrations! Benjamin F. Tracy, statesman as well as lawyer.

although now in practice in New York, was for years the leader of the bar in Brooklyn. Judge George G. Reynolds, Judge Alexander McCue, Major Gen. Duryea, Judge N. H. Clement, who succeeded the erudite Nielson, Judge S. D. Morris, who for 9 years was District Attorney, Thomas G. Shearman, who was as well known as a publicist and political reformer as a lawyer. General J. S. Catlin, who won an enviable record in the field as a soldier; Mark E. Wilbur, another distinguished lawyer-soldier; Judge T. W. Gilbert, who in 1865 was elected to the bench of the Supreme Court after being nominated by conventions of both the great political parties and held the seat until 1882, when the legal age limit compelled his retirement;; Judge Henry A. Moore, a graduate from the famous office of Lott, Murphy and Vanderbilt, and County Judge for some twenty-eight years; Asa W. Tenney, who for over a decade was United States District Attorney for the Eastern District of New York; Calvin E. Pratt, who fought at Bull Run and until 1891 carried in his cheek bone a bullet which had prostrated him at Mechanicsville, Va., while fighting under Gen. Porter, who was recommended for promotion to a brigadier generalship by McClellan and was promoted, succeeding Hancock in the command of the 6th Army Corps, and who on returning to civil life resumed his old profession of the law, and in 1869 was elected to the bench of the Supreme Court; but even the names alone which come up to memory would fill a chapter. Detailed sketches of most of these appear in other sections of this work.

Some of the present-day leaders of the bar are deserving of brief mention, for their public services are such as to show that the old pre-eminence of the City of Churches in the "forum of justice" is still maintained and that the legal profession is still prominent in all that stands for good citizenship,—honesty in public life, and in knowledge of and devotion to the legal system, which, after all, has been

the backbone of American liberty and which has stood amid all the political turmoils which have excited the people since the adoption of the Constitution for the freedom and equality of the citizen, for free speech, freedom of contract, and the purity, potency and dignity of the source in these United States of all power—the ballot box which registers and determines the people's will.

Perhaps the most widely known exponent of all this at the present time is Justice William J. Gaynor of the Supreme Court, whose services in connection with the ballot-box frauds at Gravesend won for him the gratitude of every man who values liberty and popular government. Justice Gaynor was born in Onieda County, N. Y., in 1851, and spent his early years on a farm. He received his academic training at Whitestown, and for a time was employed as a teacher in Boston, during which time he availed himself of every chance to add to his own education. In 1873 he settled in Brooklyn and studied law, maintaining himself at the same time by newspaper work. In 1875 he was admitted to the bar and soon had quite a large practice. He soon became known for his mastery of local questions and as a stanch and unwavering advocate of good government and came prominently to the front in public life as the counsel for Mr. William Ziegler in the contest against the city's purchase of the plant and assets of the Long Island Water Supply Company. All of Mr. Gaynor's legal points in this case were fully sustained by the courts and as a result the city saved a large sum of money. But apart from that saving, a principle was involved with which the whole cause of municipal government was concerned. Besides this Mr. Gaynor appeared in several other cases in which the rights of the people were involved, notably against the system of giving away public franchises, which has lost not Brooklyn alone, but every American city so much in the way of the collection of practical assets which, created by the community, should be shared by

it. Mr. Gaynor is a Democrat, but in public life has been known for his complete independence of party control, and it was this independence, his stern assertion of right, his unswerving devotion to high ideals in politics whether in county, in state or in municipality which won for him the wonderful majority by which he was elected to the bench of the Supreme Court, where he still presides.

Judge Gaynor's opponent in the contest for the Supreme Court Judgeship was a gentleman who has long enjoyed an enviable reputation in Brooklyn's legal circles, Mr. Thomas E. Pearsall. As representative of an old Brooklyn family Mr. Pearsall would be entitled to a prominent position among the leaders of Brooklyn thought and society, even had not his own abilities and personal successes been such as to win for him an honored position among those who in the present day and generation are striving to make Brooklyn be regarded as the leading borough among those which make up the present City of New York. All his associations have been with Brooklyn. He was born there in 1842, studied in its public schools and then entered the law office of Judge Samuel Garrison, and at once diligently entered on the study of his intended profession. In such an office a student has an opportunity of learning in a practical manner the practice of law as well as its theory, office routine as well as general principles, and the application of these general principles and legal decisions to individual cases. By the time he had reached his 21st year Mr. Pearsall was so thoroughly skilled in the law that he had no difficulty in passing the examination at Poughkeepsie, which made him become a full fledged member of the bar. After getting his diploma, he continued his relations with Judge Garrison for a time, but finally concluded to engage in business on his account.

One of the first of his cases and of his successes was over the will of one Peter O'Hara, in which a large amount of money was involved upon the construction of several of its

clauses. Mr. Pearsall was retained by one of the heirs and the opposing counsel was the late Henry C. Murphy. After a considerable amount of litigation the case was settled in favor of Mr. Pearsall's client by a decision of the Court of Appeals.

In 1867 Mr. Pearsall entered into partnership with Judge Samuel D. Morris, then District Attorney of Kings County, and from 1868 until 1872 he acted as Assistant District Attorney, besides carrying on most of the private legal business of his firm. He was the prosecutor in many noted criminal trials, including that of Fanny Hyde, a murder case which for many reasons was one of the most prolific of talk and rumor in Brooklyn and which is still of interest to the student of jurisprudence. But perhaps the most celebrated trial in which Mr. Pearsall has taken part was that of Tilton vs. Beecher, in which he appeared for the plaintiff. Associated with him in behalf of Tilton was a brilliant array of counsel—Samuel D. Morris, Roger A. Pryor, Austin Abbott, William Fullerton and William A. Beach—but to him fell the real work of the plaintiff's case, the preparation of the evidence, its presentation, and the arrangement and sifting of the authorities upon the important and far-reaching points of law which were constantly coming up. His work in that case was really extraordinary and the value of his services was freely acknowledged by all his associates.

A stanch Democrat, and a gifted orator, he has always been regarded as one of the local leaders of the party, but cares little for public office. His own legal business and the many and varied and important interests committed to his care are more than sufficient to occupy his time. But he believes that one of the tests of good citizenship is the interest a man takes in public affairs and the doings of his political party. So he has been active in politics, served on the local Democratic committee, and willingly accepted an appointment from Gov. Hill to membership on the commission of lawyers which he intrusted with the

delicate task of revising the section of the State Constitution appertaining to the judiciary. He is a member of the Montauk, Carleton and Crescent Clubs and is prominent in Masonic circles.

Justice Goodrich of the Supreme Court, Second District, who presides over the Appellate Division of that body, was noted in Brooklyn for his ability as an admiralty and commercial lawyer for many years before he was elevated to the bench. He was born at Havana, in Catharines Township, Schuylcr County, N. Y., in 1833. After he was graduated at Amherst College, in 1852, he went to Albany to study for the legal profession. He attended the Albany Law School and afterward entered the office of Hill, Cagger & Porter, and there remained until 1854, when he was admitted to the bar. On receiving his diploma he settled in New York with the view of building up a practice, but in the course of five or six years he removed his office to Brooklyn; and has since been identified in a marked manner with its affairs. A devoted Republican in politics, he soon proved a pillar of strength to the local ranks of that party, and in 1866 was elected a member of Assembly. In 1869 he was defeated by a small majority for re-election, but in 1871 he was again returned. When his term closed he returned to his law practice and devoted himself to it closely, without at the same time losing his interest in political life as may be judged from the fact that in 1890 he was elected Chairman of the Republican General Committee. As a member of the Brooklyn School Board to which, in 1867, he was appointed by Mayor Schroeder, Justice Goodrich rendered much effective service to the cause of education, and in 1889 he was privileged to perform some good work for his profession and the business interests of the county as a member of the International Marine Conference which met in June of that year in Washington.

Justice Goodrich is a member of the Phil-

harmonic Society and the Apollo Club and is more or less active in several of Brooklyn's charitable and social organizations.

For many years the name of Grenville T. Jenks was one of the best known and best beloved among the members of the bar in New York and Brooklyn. He was a man of many brilliant parts, a thorough law student, a careful, conscientious adviser, an eloquent speaker, a skillful examiner of witnesses, a man of ready wit, keen perception, wide reading and a thorough knowledge of human nature, he would have come to the front in any calling to which he had chosen to devote himself. He studied law in the office of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt in Brooklyn, and afterward in that of Storrs & Sedgewick in New York, and it was while so engaged, in 1851, that he was called to the bar. On receiving his certificate he at once entered into practice in New York and soon attained a marked measure of success. On removing his office to Brooklyn success still attended him, and when he died, in 1870, at the early age of 40 years, he was regarded not only as one of the most brilliant members of the local bar, but as a man who would, sooner or later, have attained any professional honor to which he might have aspired.

Almet F. Jenks, the eldest son of this gifted man, is worthily following in his footsteps. He was born at Brooklyn, May 21, 1853, and received his early educational training at Adelphi Academy. From there he passed to Phillips Exeter Academy, at Andover, and completed its curriculum with all the honors. Then, being destined for a legal career, he went to Yale, where he was graduated in 1875, and closed his training by passing through Columbia Law School. He was graduated from that institution in 1877 and in the same year entered on practice in Brooklyn in partnership with Frederick A. Ward. It was not long before it was recognized that the firm had won a large business and that many important interests were committed to its care. In 1848 Mr. Jenks accepted an appointment as



Very Truly
Frederick A. Maudsley

Assistant District Attorney under James W. Ridgway, and he continued to hold that office until Feb. 1, 1886, when he was appointed Corporation Counsel by Mayor Whitney, and by successive appointment he continued to hold that important office throughout the administrations of Mayors Chapin and Boody. A change in political conditions caused him to retire from public office with the accession of Mayor Schieren and Mr. Jenks devoted himself to building up his private practice and so was engaged with eminent success when, in November, 1898, he was elected a Justice of the Supreme Court from the Second Judicial District with a popular vote of 169,436, and that dignified office he continues to hold.

Justice Jenks almost from the time he attained his majority has been an active worker in the Democratic party and has since been prominent at many of its conventions. He has been a pronounced supporter of honest money and lent all his influence and bent all his ability and eloquence to keep that plank paramount among the issues supported by the Democrats of New York State. In 1891 Gov. Hill appointed him Judge Advocate General and that appointment was endorsed by Gov. Flower when that lamented statesman and financier became the Chief Executive of the State. Since ascending to the bench Justice Jenks has been less active as a worker in the party—his judicial position so demands—but his interest in its councils is unabated and he is still regarded as one of those quiet, determined, far-seeing leaders whose advice is certain to lead to good results.

For several years the late Mr. Charles J. Patterson held an honorable position in Brooklyn as one of the leaders of the local bar. He was born in what is now the Borough of Manhattan, May 19, 1853, and received his general education in the public schools. He entered the law office of Gen. C. W. Sanford and remained there until he was admitted to the bar. In 1876 he was admitted to practice at Poughkeepsie and soon after settled in Brooklyn,

where he entered upon the professional career which, slowly but steadily, has given him such an enviable position in legal circles of the old "City of Churches." Mr. Patterson devoted himself closely to his professional duties, and while he made many brilliant appearances in court, his arguments were legal ones pure and simple, and probably a case presenting sensational rather than purely legal features would have been repugnant to him. He was regarded especially as an authority on the subject of torts, and many of his best earned victories were in connection with suits in which wrongs have been redressed by substantial damages. Mr. Patterson died in 1901.

Mr. James C. Church, a native of Rhode Island, has been quite prominently identified with the legal profession in Brooklyn since 1883, when he was admitted to the bar. His early years were mainly spent in New Utrecht, and he received his legal training in the office of Morris & Pearsall. His practice has been in a great measure confined to corporation work, as he is counsel for several such concerns and his work as an organizer has been pre-eminently successful.

Surrogate Abbott, who retired from that position on Jan. 1, 1902, as a result of a "land-slide" which in November preceding had befallen his ticket, is one of the most honored lawyers in Brooklyn. It was felt throughout the electoral canvass which ended in the defeat of the ticket on which his name appeared, that a mistake in the very fundamental principle of good government had been made when he was not endorsed for re-election by both parties. Throughout the whole of that heated campaign, not a word was said derogatory to Surrogate Abbott, while his eminent fitness as a judge, and his upright, dignified and thoughtful disposition of the many and often extremely tangled cases which turn up in his court, were freely admitted. He had presided over the Surrogate's Court since 1888, and had earned the highest encomiums from the bar, the press and the citizens generally. He has

now resumed private practice and will doubtless soon build up a large clientele.

That same election placed in the important office of Comptroller of Greater New York Mr. Edward M. Grout, who had won an enviable record as President of the Borough of Brooklyn, which office he vacated only on January 1, 1902, when he entered upon the duties of the Comptrollership, succeeding another Brooklyn man, Mr. Bird S. Coler. Mr. Grout has been a consistent Democrat all through his career, but has never wavered in upholding his theory that national and state policies should have no place in connection with municipal government. The latter, he holds, is simply a business proposition and should be administered from a business standpoint. His ideas on that and kindred subjects, as well as his independence in politics generally, have won him the confidence of his fellow citizens of the Greater City, 299,713 of whom gave him their votes at the election of November, 1901, a greater number than voted for Mayor Low, the head of the ticket. But Mr. Grout has a habit of running ahead of his associates in the various municipal contests in which he has taken part.

We have already referred to Mr. Grout's career in a previous chapter and only refer to him in this instance to emphasize his prominence as a member of the Brooklyn bar. In 1893 he became a partner in the firm of which Judge Gaynor was the head, and in 1894 when that gentleman took his seat on the bench, Mr. Grout became the head of the firm. His large practice soon won for him an independence, but his active mind, his sense of public duty and his ideals of citizenship, as well as the trend of most of his associates, made him become a prominent figure in politics. His watchword was reform, and as a reformer most of his political battles have been fought from the time that he aided so successfully in sending the Gravesend ballot-box stuffers to jail. For some years he was associated in political work with Mr. Edwin M. Shepard, but

in 1895 both he and Mr. Shepard were in the race for the Mayoralty of Brooklyn, both using reform banners, and as a result the Republican candidate was elected. In 1897 he was elected President of the Borough of Brooklyn, and as such did as much good as he could. But his experiences in that office led him in 1901 to accept the candidacy of a non-political fusion movement for Comptroller, which again arrayed him against his old associate, Mr. Shepard; and his personal popularity aided much in accomplishing the defeat of that gentleman and bringing about the accession of Seth Low to the Mayoralty of the Greater New York.

Edward M. Shepard, who in the canvass of 1901 came so prominently before the citizens as the Democratic candidate for the Mayoralty, has long been prominent in legal and public life in Brooklyn. His law practice is a large one, but it is as a public-spirited citizen that he has won the magnificent following he possesses and the large measure of confidence and popularity which he enjoys. Possibly his grandest public service has been his work as counsel to the Rapid Transit Commission. In that respect he has performed a series of important labors which are hardly fully appreciated even by those who have watched the recent development of the rapid transit movement in Manhattan and Brooklyn. Mr. Shepard is recognized as a man of honest purposes, of pure ideals and rare administrative qualities, and will undoubtedly continue to be an active factor in Brooklyn's public affairs for many years to come.

But lest it might be thought that we are "drifting into live politics," we will leave such leaders alone and turn to those whose claim to notice here is their prominence solely in connection with bench and bar. One of the foremost of these is Justice E. M. Cullen, of the Supreme Court, who was born in Brooklyn in 1843. After he was graduated from the Troy Polytechnic Institute, in 1861, he became a Lieutenant in the United States Army and saw considerable active service during the Civil



Edward W. Groat.

War. In 1862 he was commissioned a Colonel by Governor Morgan, and continued in the service until the close of the war. On leaving the army he followed for a while the profession of civil engineering; but he was at the same time devoting himself to the study of law, and under the guidance of his uncle, Judge McCue, grasped its details so thoroughly that in 1867 he was admitted to the bar and became a member of the firm of McCue, Hall & Cullen. In 1872 he was appointed Assistant District Attorney and filled that office in a manner that won him many stanch friends both in the profession and among the public. In 1880 he was elected a Justice of the Supreme Court. His political independence, manifested by his keeping the bench free from party interference, led to his being "turned down" in 1894, when he was a candidate for re-election, but the vigorous action of the Bar Association as well as the general sentiment of the voters led to his receiving the nomination from the party opposite to that which had formerly placed his name before the electors, and he was again elected. Political managers have often found out that "monkeying" with the Supreme Court is a dangerous business for them, but, unfortunately, they soon forget the many lessons in this connection which they have received.

Judge Willard Bartlett, who has resided in Brooklyn since 1868, was born at Uxbridge, Mass., in 1846. His father, the late William O. Bartlett, in 1859 purchased a country seat in Brookhaven township, and that property is now in possession of his son and is the subject of constant improvement. Nothing delights the Justice more than to throw away the dignity of the ermine and enjoy the relaxation and the health-giving properties of his now beautiful country seat "out on Long Island." Willard Bartlett studied law at Columbia College and was admitted to the bar in 1868. For a time he was associated with Elihu Root, the present United States Secretary of War, in the practice of his profession, and so continued until 1887, when he was appointed one of the justices of the Supreme Court, and that office

he still holds. He has proved an able judge, and during his long career on the bench his fairness and impartiality have never been questioned and his decisions have seldom been subject to adverse review. He is naturally of a judicial temperament and his long experience, his thorough grasp of the principles of the law, his wide reading, his close observation and his good New England practical common sense all combine in giving him a "grip" on even the most involved case and a clear, emphatic and practical decision is the invariable result.

Tunis G. Bergen, a nephew of the famous antiquarian and genealogist of Kings county who bore the same name, was born May 17, 1847. After passing through the public schools he completed his academic training, in succession, at the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute and Rutgers College. Designed for the legal profession, he then attended the law school of Columbia College, and on completing the course there went to Berlin and Heidelberg for further study, and in 1871 received from Heidelberg University the degree of Doctor in Public Law. He attended lectures afterward at other continental colleges, notably at the famous Sorbonne, and spent some time at Oxford. Returning at length to his own country, Mr. Bergen began the task of building up a practice, and slowly, it seemed to him for a long time, but none the less surely, he became the centre of a large clientele, and one that is even yet steadily growing. But in spite of the cares of his law practice Mr. Bergen has found time to perform a goodly share of the duties which fall to the public spirited citizen. Proud of the city of his birth, proud of his Dutch ancestry, zealous of the tender memories of the old-fashioned historic Bergen homestead in which he first saw the light, Mr. Bergen has been most active in aiding by voice or by pen whatever seemed to him to be for the honor, the progress or the glory of the good old town. He was long an active member of the local school board, and for over four years was its president. In the

work of the Long Island Historical Society, and especially in the capacity of one of its secretaries, he has rendered a grand service in carrying on the work so ably begun by Murphy, Spooner, Storrs, McCormick and others of bygone day, and thus maintaining in all its usefulness an institution which has done more for the preservation of the history of Long Island than any other single force. A staunch Republican in politics he has generally managed to win the support of independent

letters to the newspapers and other literary efforts and his manner of arresting and retaining the attention of the people gave him a degree of national prominence and made his name familiar all over the country. Mr. Bergen is a many-sided man, a deep and tireless student of all things, especially delighting perhaps in historical themes, yet he has the true instincts of a sportsman, holding membership in various hunting and fishing clubs. In the Hamilton and Brooklyn clubs he is especially



OLD BERGEN HOMESTEAD.

Democrats to any cause which he espoused, and in many a contested election he has proved himself a power in the art of winning votes, winning votes, that is to say, as they should be won, by explanation and argument. He rarely wastes words in his speeches, is epigrammatic rather than florid, but every successive point tells. Not long ago he was foremost in an effort to arouse the sympathy of the people of this country toward the Boers in South Africa in their great struggle to retain their political freedom, their country's independence, and while so engaged his ringing appeals, his

interested and is held in the highest personal esteem in these institutions, and indeed in every circle, business, social or political, in which he moves.

General Horatio C. King, who has long been prominent as a soldier, lawyer, journalist and statesman, and won a national reputation, comes of most distinguished ancestry. His great-grandfather, George King, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, and his father, Horatio, was postmaster-general of the United States in 1861. Horatio C. King was born at Dickland, Me., December

22, 1837, and after the usual course of study was admitted to the New York bar in 1861. The crisis between the States was then on and the young lawyer, like so many thousands of the men of the time in the first flush of young manhood, thought his first duty was to aid in maintaining the supremacy of the flag, so he volunteered for duty and was actively engaged "at the front" from August, 1862, until October, 1865, when he was honorably discharged with the brevet rank of colonel for his brilliant service and his bravery in the field. Then he returned to New York and devoted himself to the building up of a law practice. His tastes gradually led him into the journalistic field, and by 1870 he was more widely known perhaps as a newspaper man and all-around author than as a lawyer. For a time he edited the "New York Star," and afterward managed the "Christian Union" in such a way as to win the heartiest commendation of Henry Ward Beecher. His entire relations with that gifted man were of the pleasantest and closest nature. He stood by Mr. Beecher with unwavering fidelity throughout the great crisis in his personal career, and was prominently identified with the management of Plymouth church during the latter days of the great preacher. In quitting journalism and resuming his law practice, General King seemed to become a more active factor than ever in political affairs, and in the councils of his party in the state of New York, and every movement that tended to promote the cause of good government found in him an earnest, devoted supporter. As a platform orator during a political contest he often appeared at his best as a public speaker and he was ever ready to discuss the affairs of the nation and the state, and to discuss them with a full knowledge and a flow of argument based on reading and experience, such as few could equal. In the canvass which ended in the election of Mayor Cleveland, of Buffalo, to the governorship of New York, General King took a most active part, and it is said to be due to his active influence that Mr. Beecher, a Re-

publican in politics, threw his party aside and came out for Mr. Cleveland at a critical point in that statesman's campaign for the Presidency. Governor Cleveland appointed General King Judge Advocate General in 1883 and he continued to hold the office under Governor Hill. Upon returning to private life General King resumed his law practice and since continued in it with occasional flights into the literary or journalistic field. He has won a high reputation as a military lawyer and his "Guide to Regimental Courts-Martial," issued in 1882, is still regarded as a standard work on the subject. In Grand Army circles he is very popular and for two years he served as commander of Charles R. Doane Post, No. 499, of which he was one of the charter members. He enjoys in a high measure the personal regard of his fellow citizens, and wherever he goes is always certain of a loyal and hearty welcome.

Another prominent adherent of the Democratic party in Kings is William C. De Witt, who for thirteen years held the important office of corporation counsel, and in late years has been conspicuous in the work attending the consolidation of the two cities. He is descended from Tjerck Clausen De Witt, who left Holland in 1657 and founded a family which gave to the country, among many other distinguished citizens, Charles De Witt, a member of the first Continental Congress, and De Witt Clinton, the greatest of all the governors of New York. William C. De Witt was born at Paterson, New Jersey, in 1840, but has resided in Brooklyn since he was five years of age. He was admitted to the bar in 1861, and since then has built up a large and lucrative practice in spite of the time he has devoted to politics and the demands of his party. In the cause of good municipal government he has been an active, and what is better, a practical worker, and his efforts won him the hearty support of a majority of the citizens of Brooklyn, regardless of party influences. He was elected corporation counsel of Brooklyn in 1869, and by continued re-

election served until 1882, when he retired to attend to the increasing demands of his private practice, now one of the most extensive in Brooklyn. Devoted to the law, a close and painstaking student of all its phases past and present, its procedures, rules, decisions and provisions, he has found time to study literature in general from the standpoint of a student of letters and in the works of the classic writers of English and American literature has found a world of pleasure and of solace quite different from that other and rather commonplace world in which a busy public man of the present day "lives, moves and has his being," as the popular saying goes. His own orations and public utterances, even his addresses in court, have always been models of good nervous English, and the frequent and apt quotations which sometimes illustrated a point, seemed always to come from a storehouse filled with such aids to argument. In 1881 he published a volume in which, under the general title of "Driftwood," he printed several of his orations and contributions to magazine literature, and the book is at once an evidence to his literary taste and critical judgment. But Mr. De Witt is first, last and all the time a lawyer, and it is in that field that his most active work has been done, the work which has won for him the prominent position he occupies in Brooklyn—in the Greater New York in fact, for consolidation has made his name equally familiar on both sides of the East River.

We may now speak of a lawyer who is not a representative of the bench, but simply of the bar. Mr. W. B. Davenport claims descent from John Davenport, who founded the New Haven colony in 1638, and from Thomas Benedict, a member of the first English Colonial Assembly in New York. He was born in New

York City in 1845, but has been a member of the Brooklyn bar since 1870. In 1889 he was elected public administrator of Kings County. That is the only public office he has ever held, for the extent of his private business has fully monopolized his time. In connection with corporation matters and the administration of estates he enjoys a large practice, while his personal popularity and social instincts are shown by the fact that he has held the office of President of the New England Society in Brooklyn and is a member of the Sons of the Revolution, the Society of Colonial Wars and several such organizations as the Hamilton, Crescent and Athletic Clubs. He is also a Trustee of the Polhemus Memorial Clinic, of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences, and a number of other public and business organizations.

But we must now draw this chapter to a close, for our purpose has been fully gained of presenting in the pages preceding a few representative types of the bench and bar, showing its high standing in its own community and its wealth of material in the olden time as well as in the days now passing. The list might be extended easily so as to fill two or three goodly volumes. We might mention such present-day leaders as Judge Hand, Judge Aspinall, Messrs. E. B. Thomas, James Troy, George H. Fisher, A. E. Lamb, H. C. M. Ingraham, A. G. McDonald, J. A. Burr, John A. Taylor, A. E. Mudge, R. P. Chittenden, T. H. Field, Jesse Johnston and Herbert T. Ketchum, and by recalling their struggles and their exploits and achievements prove that the bench and bar of the Brooklyn of to-day are equal in intellectual capacity and legal scholarship with any of those groups whose members were regarded as giants in the days that are gone. But such a theme really should form a special study.



CHAPTER LIV.

FREEMASONRY ON LONG ISLAND.

SOCIAL—TINY BEGINNINGS OF A GREAT INSTITUTION—SKETCHES OF REPRESENTATIVE
EARLY LODGES—SOME DISTINGUISHED LONG ISLAND CRAFTSMEN.

AS might readily be supposed, Brooklyn is a city of societies of all sorts—secret, fraternal, political, sporting, dramatic and fashionable. Most of its organizations are popular, that is to say, their membership is practically open to all who apply and who have the requisite qualifications as to taste, acquaintance, reputation and the wherewithal to pay the entrance fee and the annual dues. Some on the other hand are as exclusive as can be imagined, and it would seem the more exclusive a certain club or society may be the larger is its waiting list. In the long list of Brooklyn clubs and societies nearly every taste seems to be catered to, every nationality has its circle, every trade and profession has its social home, and every recreation its temple. Even the ladies have their chosen societies and the number of those open equally to both sexes—notably the dramatic and singing societies—run into the hundreds.

The time indeed was when the people on almost each block in Brooklyn formed practically a little social organization among themselves. That was in the days prior to the advent of the tenement or apartment house and the appearance of the trolley. In the pleasant summer afternoons people would gather on the stoops and verandahs in front of their homes and receive the visits of their neighbors, while the ladies would ramble from one

home to another and indulge in their dearly loved and kindly gossip. Each block had its own passing affairs to discuss and business to regulate, and it was done in a pleasant, neighborly fashion as the evening hours slipped away. The children played in the streets right under the eyes of their elders, and without any of the modern dread which the bicycle, the trolley and the automobile have inspired, and the adult male population discussed the latest turn in politics or canvassed the most recent news. Each household seemed to unite for the time being into but one family, having the same interests, the same anxieties, the same ideas of hospitality and amusement. So it went on, night after night, during the spring and summer, and when winter came each house in turn held sweet converse with its neighbors, unless, indeed, when a sleighing excursion carried practically the whole adult and active population on a wild and health-giving rush along one of the old plank roads. All this is now a thing of the past. We are not so friendly with our neighbors as we were wont to be, for the influx of population is steady and changes are continual. But Brooklyn is still a city of social instincts, and instead of holding forth on a stoop, we now spend our evenings in our clubs and there seek that solace, that kindred association, that inspiration from congenial souls which tends so effectually to lighten the bur-

dens and dissipate the cares of the moiling and toiling of our daily existence and which make life after all seem really worth living.

In point of antiquity the credit of being the premier among the existing organizations on Long Island must be given to the Masonic fraternity. The records of the Grand Lodge inform us under date of February 4, 1784, that it was then

"Voted unanimously that the petition of James Gardiner, John Leverel Hudson and Joseph Corwin requesting an Ancient Warrant to form a lodge on Long Island be granted."

There is, however, no further record of this lodge, and, indeed, it is doubtful if it was ever constituted. The three surnames mentioned frequently appear in the annals of the island, but diligent investigation has failed to locate them exactly. It is generally supposed that they were residents of Brooklyn, but even for this there is no warrant. The record shows, however, that in some part of Long Island there were, in 1784, members of the Ancient and Honorable Fraternity in numbers sufficient to think of uniting into a lodge. It is worth noting, too, that the then Grand Master, Bro. William Cock, although a lawyer in New York, was a native of Long Island, and a representative of one of its oldest families.

In 1787, however, another Long Island application for a charter reached the grand body, over which Chancellor R. R. Livingston then presided, this time from brethren at Jamaica. This was granted and Jamaica Lodge was duly constituted on September 5, that year. It does not, however, appear to have gained much headway, and in 1792 surrendered its charter and passed out of existence. In the following year some brethren at Oyster Bay, headed by Moses Blackly, applied for the necessary authority to organize a lodge in that town, and the application was referred to a committee. So far as the records show that ended the matter. Probably the field in that stronghold of Quakerism did not seem to the

committee very promising. At all events there is nothing in the minutes to show that they even dignified the application with a report. On March 22, 1793, a lodge was constituted at Huntington, but it seems to have been a weak organization from its very beginning. It struggled on, however, until 1806, when so far as can be ascertained it ceased holding any meetings and was abandoned. Its last master was Ruluf Duryea, but local history concerning him is silent.

On December 7, 1796, application for a warrant for "a lodge in Suffolk county, Long Island, by the name of Suffolk Lodge" was made to the Grand Lodge of New York, and it was at once granted. Grand Lodge was not so particular then as now and little time was wasted either in making Masons or warranting lodges. It was not, however, until March 10 following that the first regular meeting of the new body was held and the lodge "duly opened and in order for business." The officers were installed, the first master being William Wright, a past master of Independent Royal Arch Lodge, No. 2, New York City. The visitors present at the opening meeting were seven brethren from Huntington Lodge, No. 26, and "Brother Fagan from Ireland." The first applicant for initiation was Woodhull Smith, who was afterward passed Fellowcraft March 16 and raised April 11. The lodge increased rapidly at first. In the course of its opening year it initiated nineteen candidates, the highest number reached in any given twelve months in its entire career. The people around were mostly farmers or seamen, and while the seamen were enthusiastic at first their vocation did not permit them to attend lodge meetings regularly and after a time most of them lost all interest and dropped out. Those who did retain their connection were of little practical use. The lodge was seldom represented in Grand Lodge meetings even by proxies, but it managed to pay its dues with more or less regularity until 1820. In 1822 it was reported in arrears for two years. Long be-



GRAND MASTER R. R. LIVINGSTON.

fore that it began to decline, and in the seven years from 1806 to 1812 partly inclusive it initiated only seven candidates—in 1806, 1807 and 1811 two in each year, in 1810 one, and in 1808, 1809 and 1812 none. From 1812 onward things seemed to improve. In 1813 it had three initiations, in 1816 the number reached seven, and in 1820 the records show five additions. From then the story of the lodge is simply that of slow progress to dissolution. Even in 1816, which looked as if the early success had in a measure returned, of the seven initiates five went no further than the first degree, and in 1820, when there were five initiations, two remained Entered Apprentices to the end of time, so far as Suffolk Lodge was concerned. This, of course, is a bad sign, but the cause for this particular weakness we can not trace. In spite of many discouragements the lodge met regularly and elected officers each year until December 11, 1822, when J. M. Williamson was elected Master. He does not seem to have been installed, and after that date the meetings were held infrequently and irregularly, the last entry in the old minute book bearing the date of September 14, 1825. That may be accepted as the date of dissolution.

The writer of a manuscript history of the old lodge, from which the facts here set forth have been gleaned, comments on the downfall of this lodge in words which are as applicable to the craft at this date as they were when written nearly forty years ago. He wrote: "Two causes may be found for this decline. First, too little care was taken in the examination of the characters of persons proposed for membership. So far as the minutes show there was not always a committee of inquiry appointed, but the candidate was proposed, received and initiated at the same meeting. It was this want of due discrimination in the admission of members which explains a fact that appears on the records, viz., that in 1805 there were more suspensions and more of lodge discipline than through all the existence of the

lodge. The other cause which may account for the decline of the lodge was the neglect of the brethren to pay their dues regularly. It is not certain that they always paid the fees for degrees. At a meeting of the lodge in February, 1800, when it had been organized three years and had about thirty members, a note in the treasurer's accounts states that there was 'Cash on hand, \$64.19; due from members, \$103.75.' Four years afterward the state of the finances was in a still worse condition, the report being \$221.80 due from members and no cash at all in the treasury. It was this un-Masonic conduct in the members not paying dues, and the neglect of the lodge in not using its power of discipline that led to its extinction in the end. A very brief examination into this will teach a lesson which the wise among Masons will be ready to learn."

So far as we can learn the body fulfilled all its duties perfectly with the exception detailed in the above quotation. We have, of course, no idea of how the "work" was rendered, but we may conclude it was at least equal to that of the other Long Island lodges. It observed the two saints' days, sometimes by a dinner, sometimes by a sermon, sometimes by book, and it readily responded to all claims upon its charity. One lamentable feature of the records is the amount of ill feeling that seemed to prevail among the brethren or some of them. As early as 1799 we find a committee at work straightening out a quarrel between two brethren. The committee reported and the report was accepted, but what they did report the minutes do not state. The compiler of the manuscript says: "In 1802 two brethren were called to account by the lodge itself and a committee appointed. This committee duly reported 'that although the said I. B. and S. C. may be considered as respectable members of society, they, as Masons, have acted without the square and compass and ought to be considered as refractory members until something favorable on their side may be produced.' In 1805 the lodge became more severe. Brother

S. S. was called upon to answer the following charges presented against him by a committee appointed for the purpose: 1. Refusing to discharge his dues; 2. non-attendance at lodge meetings; 3. slandering and injustice to his brethren. S. S. pleaded guilty to the first two, but defended himself against the third. The lodge after considering the defense proceeded to ballot for his expulsion and the ballot was unanimous."

Another brother was charged with "defrauding the fatherless and the widow," but the minutes do not show what was done with him. In 1802 the lodge was summoned to examine into a "matter of difference" between two of its Past Masters. It did examine on the promise of both to abide by the decision of the brethren, but the one who was held to be in the wrong refused to accept the conclusion arrived at, and the matter was carried into a law court. Such things do not add to the prosperity of a lodge, and the wonder is that old Suffolk carried the banner of Masonry in Setauket for the number of years it was so privileged.

The present Suffolk Lodge, No. 60, which meets at Port Jefferson, claims to be the successor and heir of the old organization with whose history we have just been dealing. The modern No. 60 is a most prosperous body with over one hundred members, and is proud of the earlier lodge whose name it bears. As the old lodge went out of existence in 1824 and the new one was warranted in 1856, it can hardly be said that the theory of continuity is much in evidence. Thirty-two years is a long time in American Masonic history, and that fact makes us feel that the connection between the old lodge and the new is one of sentiment rather than continuity. But then sentiment is a powerful factor in all that concerns the fraternity.

The year 1797, when Suffolk Lodge was chartered, was a busy one, apparently, among the Freemasons on Long Island. Morton Lodge at Hempstead was then organized and still continues, having celebrated its centennial

with great eclat June 23, 1897, when Grand Master Sutherland and a host of dignitaries took part in the proceedings. It was probably an offshoot from Huntington Lodge, at least the brethren applying for a warrant seemed to be members of that organization. The centennial exercises created quite a degree of interest in local circles, and many stories of the older brethren found their way into print. From these we select two. The first incident is that of two brothers who lived on the north side of the island, perhaps twenty miles from Hempstead. They reached the lodge by what is called the "ride and tie" method. That is, they both started together early in the morning, one riding the single horse on the farm, and the other walking. The rider proceeded to a place agreed upon, where he tied the horse and took up his journey afoot. When the first walker reached the horse he mounted and after passing his walking journey tied the horse again at another place of agreement. So the journey was made to the lodge, and the return on the following morning was a repetition of the scheme.

The second story is told of a man named Platt Stratton, living near what is now College Point. Stratton was a candidate for Masonry and rode into Hempstead on horseback at about noon. Having looked after his horse in the barn, he went to the hotel through the kitchen, which was as fashionable a way as the front door at the time. In the kitchen he found an old colored cook standing over a great fire in the large chimney place, across which was a gridiron of very ample proportions.

"What's the gridiron for, Aunty?" asked Stratton, to which the old cook replied: "I'se don' know, marsa, zackly, 'cept that the Masons meet ter day an' dey genly uses it when dey meets." This was enough for Stratton. He returned to the barn, mounted his horse and rode off. Nothing was ever heard of him again by the lodge, and he doubtless died in the faith that the gridiron was intended for him.

The various committees who arranged for

the celebration of the centennial were as follows, and included the master, Robert A. Davidson, and all the living past masters of the lodge:

Invitations — Wor. Bro. B. Valentine Clowes, Bros. George W. Terry, Carman Lush.

Grand Marshal—R. Wor. Charles L. Phipps. Aids—Lewis H. Clowes, Israel W. Williams, William B. Osterhout, Jotham Post, Henry Floyd Johnson, Royal Harvey.

Railroad and Transportation—R. Wor. Robert A. Davison, Wor. Augustus Denton.

Music—Wor. Bros. Augustus Denton and Oliver E. Stanton.

Press and Printing—Wor. Bros. Oliver E. Stanton, Lot Van de Water, Jr., and B. Valentine Clowes.

Tent and Hall—Bros. Lewis H. Clowes, Eugene V. Willis and John Findlay.

Refreshments—Bros. William M. Akley, Lewis H. Clowes, William McCarthy, Eugene V. Willis, Jotham Post, Foster L. Oakley, Benjamin Griffin, Edward Willis, Morris Sherwood, John Findlay, Richard C. Campbell, Thomas W. Albertson, Walter N. De Nyse, Israel W. Williams, George W. Terry, John Miller, C. Gardner Miller, William B. Osterhout, William S. Hall, Wor. Oliver E. Stanton.

Decorations—Bro. Richard C. Campbell.

Reception—R. Wors. Robert A. Davison and Charles L. Phipps, Wors. Augustus R. Griffin, Benjamin A. Haff, B. Valentine Clowes, John W. De Mott, Joseph E. Firth, Robert Seabury, Augustus Denton, Lott Van de Water, Oliver E. Stanton and John R. Sprague, Bros. George W. Terry, Israel W. Williams, Richard C. Campbell, Thomas W. Albertson, William McCarthy, M. J. Gildersleeve, Lewis H. Clowes, Walter N. De Nyse, C. Gardner Miller, Joseph H. Bogart, M. D.; C. G. J. Finn, M. D.; Charles F. Lewis, Timothy J. Bird, Thomas B. Seaman, Thomas J. Sammond, Charles Davison, Samuel S. Rhame, William H. Patterson, William S. Hall, John

Miller, William P. Miller, Foster L. Oakley, George Emery, Eugene V. Willis, William B. Osterhout.

In 1797, too, the first known Brooklyn lodge of which we have any record—St. Alban's—was constituted. There are vague indications that, apart from the lodge warranted in 1784 and which, as has been pointed out, may or may not have been a Brooklyn body, there was one lodge existing there prior to 1797—*Mechanics'*, No. 1. But all we know about that is its name. About St. Alban's Lodge we certainly know little more. It only existed for about two years, and then it was permitted to disappear. At all events, it was mentioned as "lately held" in the petition presented December 4, 1799, to the Grand Lodge by a number of its members and others for a new warrant under the name of Fortitude Lodge. The warrant was at once issued, and bore the signature of Chancellor Livingston.

That lodge is now undoubtedly the oldest in Brooklyn, and it celebrated its centenary in December, 1899, with a banquet and reception which will long be remembered with pleasure by all who were permitted to take part in the proceedings. The first meeting place of the lodge was in the upper room of a tavern near "the Ferry," as Fulton Ferry was then called, and the keeper of the tavern, Martin Boerum, was one of the charter members. Soon after its institution the lodge was called upon to make its first public appearance, when it took part in the local procession on the death of George Washington, and it marched in one of the processions which, in 1824, welcomed Lafayette on his memorable journey through the country which he had helped to mold into a nation. There was always a good deal of patriotic sentiment in Fortitude Lodge when occasion arose, and it was one of the lodges which, in 1814, under the immediate direction of the Grand Lodge, helped to build the fortifications around Brooklyn and so protect it from the British invasion then expected.

Fortitude has had its ups and downs like

all our older lodges, but it managed to pull through, although it was hard pressed in 1832, when an epidemic of cholera made things unpleasant in Brooklyn. The history tells us that "the first record of the conferring of degrees was on January 13, 1806. The fee for each degree was two dollars, but at a meeting of the lodge held January 20, 1806, the fee for each degree was raised to five dollars." The history also tells us that "refreshments appear to have been an important part of the proceedings of the lodge. The amounts of money spent for this purpose ranged all the way from five dollars to sixty dollars per night. Upon the night of November 16, 1812, there is the record in the minutes of a charge of £41 12s 10d, which is something over two hundred dollars. The regular refreshments for meeting nights during the earlier history of the lodge were cheese, crackers and wines."

"Besides this the records show that the expenditures for charity were continuous and liberal. How they managed it all, with their small income, I can not understand, unless it be that the brethren "chipped in" very frequently and that fines were liberally imposed and willingly paid. The great curse of all our early lodges was the drinking habit. When they went to refreshment the brethren went in reality instead of symbolically, as we do at present, and the junior warden's duties as superintendent of the feast meant more than mere words. But the costliness of the custom led to its abolition, although some of the lodges had to adopt heroic measures before the abolition was complete. Had the habit not been stopped we would have had a very different history of Freemasonry in New York than that to which, in the language of the political platform makers, we now 'point with pride.' Our early brethren, both here and in Britain, were jolly fellows and the lodges were often places of pleasant retreat, where the flowing bowl and the merry song made life seem rosier and happier than in the currents of life appeared possible. They performed their Masonic work

with dignity and with care, they were scrupulous, possibly more scrupulous than we are in these days of rush and commercialism, as to who they admitted to their charmed circle, they zealously fulfilled all the Masonic duties they professed, and when they turned from their labors to 'rest and refresh themselves' they did it with a thoroughness and abandon that sometimes stagger us, as we read the story. In many instances the records of the old lodges tell us more of the refreshment episode than of the incidents of the time devoted to work, the old 'monitors' and 'companions' and 'vade-mecums' present us with page after page of the songs and glees and 'catches' they used to sing, and as most of the poetry is miserable doggerel, and refers to drinking, love making and law defiance, we are apt to get rather a poor opinion of the morals and manners of the early brethren unless we probe a little beneath the surface. But give these fathers all the credit to which they are entitled, it is impossible to study the Freemasonry of 1800 and that of 1900 without coming to the conclusion that the craft is one of the most progressive of organizations; that if it holds as steadfastly as possible to the old landmarks, it is earnestly seeking forth after new ones.

"To me, the most interesting part of Masonic study has been, not its rules, not even its ritual, but the character and standing of the men who have been prominent in its ranks. If Masonry has been worth anything, if it has really proved a moral factor, if its philosophy is sound, it can not have failed to impress itself upon the lives and thoughts and aspirations of those who have been prominently identified with it. Fortitude Lodge has had quite a number of brethren on its roll who have won a measure of fame, sometimes local, it is true, but still sufficient to show that they were distinguished above their fellows, and who can say that the teachings and mellowing and broadening influence of the lodge did not aid these men in winning such distinctions and honors as they received? The first master of

Fortitude Lodge, Dr. George A. Clusman, who held the office until the close of 1801, was the most prominent physician of the time in Brooklyn, and although physicians, like actors, are soon forgotten when they cross old Charon's ferry, this man's memory is still held in sweet remembrance in the story of the community in which he lived and labored. Fortitude's first Senior Warden (afterward Master), Daniel Rhoades, was a grocer and a soldier, and in the war of 1812 was a member of the military company locally known as 'the Katy-dids,' which failed to win national renown only because the British forces did not come to this neighborhood during that struggle with the old country. Still though the opportunity did not come, Rhoades and his comrades proved that they were ready to meet it. The more notable of the early officers, however, was the junior warden, Henry Eckford, the greatest shipbuilder of his time. A native of Scotland, but a typical American citizen, he constructed most of the vessels which on the Great Lakes won so much fame in the war of 1812 for the American navy. The once famous battleship Ohio and many other noted war vessels were built from his designs, and in fact he was the reconstructor of our navy at the time when America successfully wrested from Great Britain—for a while, at least—the undisputed sovereignty of the seas. He afterward went to Turkey and became chief naval constructor for that country. He died in 1832. All his biographers bear witness to the loyalty and sweetness of his disposition, to his true Christian spirit and to his possession of every true Masonic virtue."

The first chaplain of the United States Navy, the Rev. John Ireland, was also a member of Fortitude Lodge. He was one of the chaplains of the Grand Lodge. Another brother of Fortitude who held this honor was the Rev. Evan M. Johnson, one of the most notable of the long list of clergymen who have made the name of Brooklyn famous as "the City of Churches." He was a zealous worker

in the Master's service, freely gave of his own means to the cause in which he labored, and for years preached without fee or reward, building one or two churches where they were needed—among the poorer classes of the city—among the lapsed masses. He was a man of rare courage, and in the pulpit and out of it never hesitated to proclaim his loyalty to Masonry even in days when persecution was abroad and zealous Masons were content to hide their light under a bushel. It is singular that men like Ireland and Johnson did not hold the appointment of Chaplain in the lodge, but from the list in the volume now published it would seem that such officials were not formally recognized and appointed until 1864.

Masonically, probably the best known name on the long list of members of Fortitude Lodge is that of Nathaniel F. Waring, who was its master in 1834 and again in 1848. For many years he was one of the most active Masons in New York, and came into special prominence in connection with what is known as the Phillips Grand Lodge. He was elected grand master of that body in 1857, and when it was received into the legitimate Masonic fold in 1858 he, according to the agreement, carried with him into "the" Grand Lodge his honors as a past grand master. We can hardly regard him, even when in opposition to the regular Grand Lodge, as being clandestine, for his opposition was based upon honest principle, and he was an honest man, one of those who would rather be right than be president, as the saying goes.

Fortitude Lodge at present is a flourishing body of craftsmen. It has some two hundred members on its roll, and ranks high among the lodges of Brooklyn. It is fully conscious of its position as a representative lodge, is proud of its antiquity, and is a splendid example of that Masonic spirit which with one hand holds steadfastly to the past and with the other reaches out for all that is beautiful and worthy and commendable in the days which are passing over us.

On July 26, 1804, a lodge was constituted

at Sag Harbor, but it passed out of existence in 1818, and appears to have had a struggle for existence until 1818, when it disappeared. An interesting history of this lodge and its successor, the Wamponamon Lodge of the present day, has been written by one of the Past Masters of the latter, Brother Brinley D. Sleight, which we here reproduce:

During the first decade of the present century the Masonic fraternity established its organization in Sag Harbor. The first officers of Hampton Lodge, No. 111, were: Elias Jones, Master; Ithuel Hill, Senior Warden; Joel Fordham, Junior Warden; Moses Clark, Treasurer; Benjamin K. Hobart, Secretary; John Godbee, Senior Deacon; Aaron Clark, Junior Deacon; John Morrison, Tyler.

Five years afterward we find the same officers in the East and West, with Nathaniel Havens, Junior Warden, and Luther Hildreth, Secretary. The list of members comprised about fifty well-known citizens,—names famous in the historic annals of the east end of Long Island, such as Howell, Hildreth, Worth, Crowell, Jennings, Gardiner, Glover, Bishop, Briggs, Baker, Conkling, Hedges, Harris, Topping, Seabury and others. The communications of the brethren were held in the attic of the house of Moses Clark, on the corner of Division and Union streets. The house is still standing, having been moved further up the street, next south of the residence of Miss Julia King.

Hampton Lodge, No. 111, was at that time the only civic society in Sag Harbor. Neither were there military, firemen's or other organizations. The mystery attached to the name and ceremonies of the order lent an attractive interest to every occasion when the brethren appeared in public, and well-accredited tradition says that the schools were dismissed, and the people turned out en masse "to see the Masons parade."

After a while fraternal activity languished, and eventually in 1819 the lodge surrendered its charter, having for fifteen years been

"steadfastly held in the Port of Sag Harbor." About this time politics infested Masonry. In 1827-30 exciting partisan contests followed, in which anti-Masonic sentiment was a powerful agency.

On the east end of Long Island all Masonic affiliation was abandoned. For thirty-eight years thereafter the Masons had no habitation in Sag Harbor, but in 1857 some brethren from other jurisdictions abiding among us, together with the few remaining members of Hampton Lodge, mindful of the precept, "once a Mason always a Mason," concerted to institute a new lodge. Others desirous of joining the order were initiated, passed, and raised in Peconic Lodge, No. 349, of Greenport, with the understanding that they were to become charter members of the new organization when the requisite number was obtained. The charter members of the new lodge were: Henry S. Roscoe, Eastern Star, No. 227, New York City; Joseph Stanton, Widow's Son Lodge, North Stonington, Connecticut; Charles H. Reeves, Star of the East, New Bedford, Massachusetts; J. W. Nickerson, Lebanon, New York City; Noah Washburne, Jacob Leck, Thaddeus Coles, Nathan T. Fordham, Zebulon Elliott, of defunct Hampton Lodge, No. 111, and James E. Smith, Roswell Warner, Thomas Lister, Nathaniel Dominy, John Stein, John R. Sayre, P. H. Douglas, raised in Peconic Lodge, Greenport. These sixteen men having taken the obligation and agreed to dwell together in unity, established Wamponamon Lodge, No. 437, F. & A. M. The name was settled upon after thoughtful consideration. There were those who desired the old name and number to be retained. "Hampton" had local signification, and the three units were unique and easily fixed in the memory. Besides, they indicated seniority in the list of Masonic lodges. But the newly-initiated brethren wished to imprint their own individuality upon their offspring, and so they literally "left the west and traveled east" in search of a new name. Wamponamon is the Indian

appellation for the easternmost point of the promontory of Montauk, and signifies "to the eastward." It is found in the records of the town of Easthampton, and a correlative term in the Indian deeds. It is quaint, original and not likely to be appropriated by other societies.

The first men made Masons in Sag Harbor under the new order of things were: Joshua B. Nickerson, Abner D. Smith, William White, William L. Parsons, Sylvester F. Brown. They were raised under a dispensation in January, 1858, the charter of the lodge not being issued until the June following. The lodge was dedicated on June 16, A. L. 5858, and on the same occasion the following officers were duly installed: Henry S. Roscoe, W. M.; James E. Smith, S. W.; Roswell Warner, J. W.; Joseph Stanton, Treasurer; Sylvester F. Brown, Secretary; Nathaniel Dominy, Senior Deacon; Pulaski A. Douglas, Junior Deacon; Thomas Lister and William White, Masters of Ceremonies; Noah Washburn, Tyler.

The first meetings were held in the rooms of Suffolk Lodge, I. O. O. F. Afterward the third story of the south side of the present Nassau House building was obtained. It was furnished not without elegance and comfort, in part due to the good taste and generosity of Dr. Frederick Crocker, for many years treasurer of the lodge.

In 1883 it became necessary to look about for a new home. After the consideration of various schemes it was duly determined to purchase the old Presbyterian Church, then owned by the Episcopal society. A contract of sale was signed with the vestry of Christ Church on December 17, 1883. A fund was raised by bonding the property, which, together with the moneys already accumulated, provided for a thorough reconstruction of the building. The present Masonic Hall is the result. The new hall was opened with a festival and promenade concert on July 8th next ensuing. On the evening of November 20th following, the ceremonies of dedicating the new lodge room

were impressively conducted by Right Worshipful Frank R. Lawrence, Deputy Grand Master of Masons, and his associate officers of the Grand Lodge. Public addresses were also given in the large hall, and a collation served in Crowell's Hall. The occasion was a memorable one. Thus, the structure originally erected in 1817 for the worship of God was again consecrated to the Supreme Architect of the Universe and dedicated to the memories of the Holy Saints John.

It may not be inappropriate to refer, in passing, to the early Masters of the lodge, those who have gone before us, who have seen the Great Light, and who are now no more among the living.

Henry S. Roscoe, the first Master, was a swarthy, dark-eyed man, with black hair and flowing beard. He was of dignified demeanor, well up in his work, and a conscientious believer in the tenets of Freemasonry. Restless and nervous, and something of a nomad, he went from this place to East Hampton, and thence to Connecticut, where he died.

The second Worshipful in the East was James E. Smith, an active business man, identified with our early prosperity as a commercial mart. He came here from Connecticut when a young man, and lived here until his death. His final mercantile venture was the building of a vessel at the foot of Main street. It was the last one built in Sag Harbor, and was sent to the Pacific coast, where it still bears on its stern the square and compasses which signalized its bridal with the sea, in the waters of our bay.

Joshua B. Nickerson succeeded Captain Smith. He had been one of the argonauts in the search for gold in California. He returned home, having been more successful than many others. Entering into the business activities of our village, a prosperous career was before him, but the insidious disease, consumption, cut him off in the strength of his manhood.

Following came Captain A. Smith French, a typical whaler, in our characteristic whal-

ing times. More than once had he circumnavigated the globe carrying the emblems of Masonry and Masonic charity to the confines of the earth. He was raised in Hawaiian Lodge, No. 21, Sandwich Islands, but was a native of this county. He sleeps beneath the quiet shades of Oakland cemetery. Next came Abner D. Smith, merchant and citizen of good repute, methodical, correct, attentive, who served the lodge with fidelity and zeal, both as Master and Secretary, for several years. William H. Gleason, a graduate of Yale, wielded the gavel after Smith. A scholar, a politician, a lawyer and a divine, his life work was well done and his career active and honorable.

Of those who have more recently occupied the East, but who have passed beyond the veil, are Benjamin F. Huntting, whose name is especially associated with the purchase and reconstruction of the present hall. He was the chairman of the Building Committee and threw all the enthusiasm of his nature into the work, making it a labor of love, and Thomas F. Bisgood, whom we have so lately borne to the silent tomb, a wise counselor, a steadfast and genial friend. These are "the dead but sceptered sovereigns who rule our spirits from their urns."

The lodge was constituted but three years before the beginning of the war of the Rebellion. Our numbers were few, but Wamponamon supplied its honorable quota to the list of self-sacrificing heroes who voluntarily imperiled their lives in defense of the Union. Dr. L. D. Hall, one of the early initiates, and Drayson Fordred, another, a promising young man, were killed upon the field of battle. Several returned after having won the laurels of honorable conflict.

Among the living members who have achieved Masonic distinction may be mentioned David A. Emory, who has found light in the East, having become a Deputy Grand Master of the Northern District of the Empire of China. He is still a resident of the Flowery Kingdom. The brother of longest official rec-

ord is Right Worshipful Elbridge G. Howard, who, in a period of twenty years, extending from 1869 to 1889, occupied the Master's station twelve times. In 1884 he was made Deputy Grand Master for this district.

There have been memorable occasions in our history which can only be alluded to here, as matters of record. Conspicuous among these are the public installation, given in December, 1884, and previous to this, in the same eventful year, the entertainment of July 8th, and the dedication of the lodge, November 24th. The commemoration of the emancipation from debt of the order in the State was duly observed April 24, 1889, and the celebration of the one thousandth communication of the lodge on May 2, 1895, was a jubilee of fraternal interest transcendent in our annals. In this festivity Peconic Lodge, of Greenport, joined with us in a body. The whole membership of Wamponamon Lodge since the beginning numbers two hundred and ninety-four. There are now living, and in good standing, one hundred and twenty Master Masons, who have traveled the same road and are bound by the same ties of brotherhood.

May the mystic bond never be loosened. Fresh as the green sward upon the promontory whose name it bears, may the memory of our lodge forever be; bright as the beacon light from its headlands, which bids God-speed to the parting traveler; glad as its beckoning rays that cheer the homeward bound, may its future ever shine. Long live Wamponamon! *Esto perpetua!*

In 1808 a lodge was warranted at Newtown, which seems to have flourished about a decade and then passed away. It was one of the lodges which, in the panic of 1814, worked a couple of days on the Brooklyn fortifications, but that is about the only glimpse of it which we get. Then, so far as can be learned, Hohenlinden Lodge, No. 338, organized in 1821, and still extant, and Naval Lodge, No. 391, warranted in 1826, but which almost on receipt of its charter abandoned it, were

the other lodges instituted on Long Island prior to the outbreak of the Morgan controversy, which played such havoc with Freemasonry all over the North American continent, compelled hundreds of lodges and chapters to pass out of existence, raised up a powerful if short-lived, political party, attempted to seat a President in the White House and almost brought about the complete annihilation of the Masonic fraternity.

From that persecution the craft slowly recovered and in time was restored to its old strength. Long Island felt the change, although it was not until about 1852 that the upward movement still going on may be said to have fairly begun. In that year the whole of Long Island was united with Staten Island and several Hudson River counties into the First Masonic District. In 1859 Long Island was divided, Kings county being placed in the Third Masonic District and Suffolk and Queens in the Fourth. In 1868 Kings

county itself was made the Fourth District and in 1873 it was divided. Frequent changes, as a natural result of the wonderful progress made by the fraternity, finally resulted in Long Island being divided into three districts—the first three on the roll of the Grand Lodge—and that arrangement seems destined to endure. According to the latest official returns there are now on Long Island about fourteen thousand members of the fraternity and seventy-six lodges. In addition there are a great many members of the fraternity residing in Kings county and in Queens borough who are members of lodges meeting on Manhattan Island. Taking that into account it is safe to estimate the entire membership of the craft on Long Island at nearly twenty thousand.

The three districts into which Long Island has been divided are made up according to the following official tables:

MASONIC DISTRICT NO. 1 (SUFFOLK, NASSAU AND QUEENS).

No.	Lodges	Location	Master	Secretary	Number of Master Masons
60	Suffolk.....	Port Jefferson.....	Geo. W. Rowland....	Thomas H. Saxton....	117
63	Morton.....	Hempstead.....	Walter N. DeNyse....	George W. Terry....	156
349	Peconic.....	Greenport.....	Edwin D. Tuthill.....	Lewelen F. Terry....	150
437	Wampanamon.....	Sag Harbor.....	Arthur T. Brown.....	Thomas W. Lister....	155
493	South Side.....	Patchogue.....	Samuel T. Ferguson....	Lemuel B. Green....	155
494	Jephtha.....	Huntington.....	Charles H. Walters....	Edgar P. Bunce.....	94
546	Jamaica.....	Jamaica.....	Frank E. Hopkins....	Fred J. Moore.....	115
563	Cornucopia.....	Flushing.....	Sanford S. Gowdey....	L. Sidney Valentine..	186
580	Glen Cove.....	Glen Cove.....	R. Frank Bowne.....	Charles J. Baldwin...	110
586	Island City.....	Long Island City.....	Frank E. Haff.....	J. Robert Laws.....	158
635	Advance.....	Astoria, L. I. City.....	James Grayson.....	Henry D. Ing.....	95
645	Riverhead.....	Riverhead.....	Usher B. Howell.....	George T. Reeve.....	184
691	Meridian.....	Islip.....	Matthew I. Hunt.....	Harry P. Haff.....	106
695	Alcyone.....	Northport.....	Henry H. Van Dyck....	Wm. A. Strawson....	106
729	Anchor.....	College Point.....	Henry I. Delemain....	Henry L. Partenfelder	50
738	Mizpah.....	Elmhurst.....	Henry Shilson.....	Abel Powell.....	169
793	Babylon.....	Babylon.....	Charles Searle.....	Simon W. Cooper....	84
806	Matinecock.....	Oyster Bay.....	Theodore A. Swan.....	Walter Franklin.....	104
808	Olympia.....	Far Rockaway.....	Sanford J. Ellsworth...	Harry G. Heyson.....	122
822	Massapequa.....	Rockville Center.....	William H. Holdsworth..	William J. Carr.....	82
Total.....					2,468

MASONIC DISTRICT No. 2 (KINGS COUNTY).

No.	Lodges	Location	Master	Secretary	Number of Master Masons
188	Marsh	1252 Bedford Ave.	Alfred E. Everdell	Henry Hahn	168
205	Hyatt	Bedford Ave. & Madison St	Lawrence Coffin	Charles F. Lamy	254
284	Baltic	1252 Bedford Ave.	Wm. H. Woodcock	Herman Ranken	157
354	Progressive	Gates & Nostrand Aves	Herbert J. Knapp	Charles E. Marr	114
367	Corner Stone	Grand & Havemeyer Sts.	Charles W. Labdon	Charles W. Carpenter	359
403	Greenpoint	Manhattan & Meserole Aves	Edgar H. Hazlewood	Robert F. Quaille	302
430	Star of Hope	Broadway & Boerum St.	Henry Berau, Jr.	Edward L. Walter	269
445	Cassia	" " " "	Charles Doman	Frank H. Sawtelle	226
446	Oltmans	" " " "	Louis Keller	John J. Wolf	185
453	Clinton	Gates & Nostrand Aves	Amos J. Nimmo	Charles B. Valentine	224
461	Yew Tree	1032 Gates Ave.	Ira O. Tracy	John Watkins	75
540	Hill Grove	1252 Bedford Ave.	David F. Moore	W. M. Robinson	203
618	Tyrian	Liberty & Wyona Aves	Henry Kahlert	Fred W. Hancock	255
636	Manual	Gates & Nostrand Aves	George E. England	William Miller	201
656	Euclid	1030 Gates Ave.	Nathan S. Jones	Revillo Wells	195
678	Seawanhaka	Manhattan & Meserole Aves	Chauncey M. Bennett	Franklin H. Giblett	140
704	Tuscan	1252 Bedford Ave.	Joseph Marfing	Christian Sipp	142
709	Merchants'	Graham Ave. & Broadway	Bernard A. Matschke	Adam Maue	161
710	Ridgewood	1030 Gates Ave.	Harry H. Gould	Peter Van Cott	256
769	Antho	897 Gates Ave.	Henry H. Celler	William B. Maas	126
776	Reliance	Manhattan & Meserole Aves	Frank E. Krueger	James H. Merkle	139
817	Sterling	Reid & Gates Aves	Abram J. Piddian	Alfred L. Cowles	73
825	Kilwinning	1252 Bedford Ave.	Alexander S. Cook	Thomas J. Scott	102
Total					4,326

MASONIC DISTRICT No. 3 (KINGS COUNTY).

No.	Lodges	Location	Master	Secretary	Number of Master Masons
19	Fortitude	200 Joralemon St	Martin Miller	Charles R. Phillips	206
56	St. Albans	44 Schermerhorn St	Charles E. Lane	Edward J. Salisbury	163
137	Anglo-Saxon	Bedford Av. & Madison St	George Freifeld	George F. Fagan	260
201	Joppa	200 Joralemon St	Samuel H. Holmes	William H. Riley	346
246	Montauk	153 Pierrepont St	Wm. F. Campbell	Edward P. Thomas	212
288	Brooklyn	44 Schermerhorn St	William F. Wenisch	Alex. Thomson	207
310	Lexington	153 Pierrepont St	Andrew G. Cooper	Charles L. Staton	162
322	Star of Bethlehem	200 Joralemon St	J. Joseph Rossbottom	John C. Mullins	105
361	Central	" " " "	Arthur S. Willdigg	J. H. Burley	108
382	Long Island	153 Pierrepont St	Valentine Zahn	Charles L. Clark	190
409	Commonwealth	" " " "	Samuel Crook	E. J. Campbell	515
451	Delta	200 Joralemon St	Ira M. Cornwall	Edwin Schofield	131
483	Zeredatha	44 Schermerhorn St	Chas. Friedenberg, Jr.	William M. Rome	252
485	Stella	14 Nevins St	John H. K. Green	Alfred B. Montgomery	197
511	Kings County	824 Flatbush Ave.	David Morris Kurtz	T. Morris Terry	152
536	Nassau	200 Joralemon St	James Divisich	Wm. A. Dwinell	106
569	Greenwood	7th Ave. & 9th St.	John D. Goodwin	John Miller	192
574	Bedford	Bedford Av. & Madison St	George H. Packer	Geo. F. Churchill	177
585	Cosmopolitan	315 Washington St	Edward W. Reynolds	Alfred W. Sloggatt	153
601	Altair	Bedford Av. & Madison St	Rufus L. Scott, Jr.	Albert C. Aubrey	198
638	Crystal Wave	315 Washington St	Franklin J. Spaulding	Henry Edebohls	181
640	Ardytum	44 Schermerhorn St	Edward O'Neil, Jr.	R. W. Gunzenhauser	157
641	Mistletoe	153 Pierrepont St	Richard E. Shaw	Thos. G. Singleton	156
662	Cambridge	200 Joralemon St	James F. Weales	John K. Van Sise	107
717	Orion	14 Nevins St	Alexander Gardner	Charles Delapierre	238
719	Acanthus	Bedford Av. & Madison St	H. Grant Buswell	William Bower	339
732	Ezel	153 Pierrepont St	James A. Doyle	Joseph Williams	136
747	Sanctorum	Union & Court Sts.	Nathan Solomon	Henry Maginness	149
756	Aurora Grata	Bedford Av. & Madison St	Edgar P. Rice	William H. Clark	156
758	Covenant	44 Schermerhorn St	John Keating	Edgar D. Davis	125
792	Minerva	7th Ave. & 9th St.	Samuel Smith	John T. Whitehead	225
798	Day Star	3d Ave. & 54th St.	James Bower, Jr.	James Bower	177
803	Kedron	Bath Beach	Allan McLain Rodgers	Josiah W. Perkins	159
Total					6,337

About the date of this writing there is a movement on foot looking to the erection of a Masonic Hall in Brooklyn. That there is need of such a structure is apparent to every one; and that the brethren in the borough are numerous enough, wealthy enough and influential enough to make such a movement successful if it is proceeded with, there is no doubt. Yet there are so many things to be considered that a natural conservatism is apparent about actually beginning the work. At the same time an option on a site has been secured, quite a large sum has been pledged and an outline architectural scheme has been prepared and so the matter rests, awaiting developments. In the meanwhile, as may be seen from the statistical tables already given, the Brooklyn lodges, as well as the chapters and commanderies, meet in apartments and halls scattered all over the borough. What might be called the headquarters of the fraternity is the structure known as the Aurora Grata Cathedral, the local home of the Scottish Rite bodies, the Mystic Shrine of many lodges and of the Aurora Grata Club, the leading Masonic social organization of the borough. The Aurora Grata Club was organized in 1887, and has some four hundred members, all connected with the Masonic fraternity. The building it occupies was formerly the parsonage of the Bedford Dutch Reformed Church, and is a comfortable, roomy structure, but the good old dominions of that closely Calvinistic body would hold up their hands in pious horror could they see the improvements and changes which the Masonic brethren have introduced. Even what used to be the holy man's study—his sanctum sanctorum—is almost nightly—in season, of course—given over to merry parties; and there are bowling alleys, billiard tables, a reading room and all other accessories of an up-to-date social club. Adjoining the house occupied by the Aurora Grata Club is the cathedral of the same name—the old Reformed Dutch Church—now adapted for Scottish Rite and other Masonic purposes. The Brooklyn Veterans' Association meets in the

basement, and in one corner is their library, a small but wonderfully useful and well selected collection of books. The building itself has seen its best days and the wind on a stormy night seems to have free access to the several apartments. A modern Masonic temple is certainly needed in Brooklyn. The Brooklyn Masonic Veterans' Association is one of the best and grandest developments of the social side of Freemasonry of which we have knowledge. All members must have belonged to the fraternity for at least twenty-five years and all are therefore men who have passed at least into mid-life, but the organization's motto, "The best of life is yet to come," shows how they face the setting sun slowly sinking in the west. The Veterans' annual dinners are possibly the jolliest "functions" of their kind which we know. They combine a splendid bill of fare, splendid singing and some of the best after-dinner oratory heard in Brooklyn. They are generally attended by the most active Masons in Brooklyn, as witness the following partial list of those at the gathering of 1901:

Josephus L. Wood, president of the Brooklyn Masonic Veterans; Henry A. Powell, A. H. Nichols, E. W. Mascord, John W. Richardson, James T. Burdick, John H. Visscher, Richard E. Shaw, C. K. G. Visscher, Sidney L. Rowland, Charles F. Bloom, Claudius F. Beatty, Andrew B. Martin, Joseph H. Cummin, Dr. James T. Terhune, Frederick L. Jenkins, C. W. Hubbell, Rufus L. Scott, John S. Mowry, Edward A. Dubey, R. Van Valkenburgh, Joseph C. Abell, W. T. Ramsbotham, Commodore Edward Hooker, William Van Sise, Charles A. Shaw, J. K. Van Sise, Frank Mapes, J. Carlisle Loudon, John W. Palmer, John T. Palmer, J. Fred Marble, Lee C. Moore, Augustus C. Tate, John W. Mott, L. E. Nicholson, Charles W. Held, George W. Foote, Frank E. Wilson, Dr. J. J. Terhune, W. O. Cloges, Stephen W. T. Tennant, J. Harris Balston, Wilmon Whilldin, Howard W. Ennis, George W. Arnold, Abram H. Dailey, Robert Rogers, James A. Babcock, The-

ophilus Pratt, Herman Canter, Thomas Heil-son, William E. Stein, Lawrence MacNaughton, Charles S. Buell, D. G. Griffiths, Daniel J. Morrison, W. H. Armstrong, Theodore Thieler, John Cuthbert, W. J. Smith, Charles W. Hayes, W. Westlake, C. O. Cowtan, Joseph W. Ray, David S. Bruen, Obediah Harned, Thomas W. Corrigan, William P. Christmas, William H. Johnson, Gustavus C. Weber, John C. Waldron, James D. Wright, W. A. Mathies, F. Fr  derick Lenhart, Alfred Sims, W. J. Allen, Augustus W. Boerner, Joseph H. Loomis, W. A. Campbell, Eli R. Denniston, J. W. Smith, A. E. Leach, Louis Nathan, Rudolph R. Bennett, Isaac Hicks, James E. Martin, G. B. Martin, J. R. Bennett, J. M. Kerrigan, L. A. Lewis, J. T. Ross, Harry T. Cook, J. W. Hawkes, W. H. Jarn-ton, John K. Torfts, James Divisch, Charles Christmas, James L. Waldon, J. G. Ramee, Dr. W. T. Millington, E. L. Spike, T. M. Goddard, Charles Goddard, D. M. Meninger, I. Dunn, Colo Venoni, Isaac S. Waters, Edwin Selvage, Judah Moses, James Parsons, James Macbeth, W. H. Steers, S. Wasserman, Samuel Steinbrink, Washington Irving Comes, William M. Clark, G. Turner, J. W. Stopford, H. McKeon, B. A. Levett, H. A. Aechtemacht, Almet R. Latson, H. G. Buswell, A. E. Bieder-man, George W. Wilson, John W. Carme, George W. Brown, James A. Byxbee, William L. Burke, William Burns, Henry Scheele, Herman Pietsch, M. L. Mann, George W. Cook, G. Greve, C. F. Graves, William Chevi-ton, Charles Schabaker, William H. Phillips, George S. Patton, Joseph M. Cord, Robert E. A. L. Estrange, H. T. Giberson, John Fleming Duncan, Walter MacBain, Charles G. Smith, Elmer E. Cain, William Clowninzer, James Sinn, Dr. W. H. Clowninzer, Henry A. Phil-lips, Henry E. Tuthill, Burton M. Balsh and Thomas G. Singleton.

At the dinner of 1893 addresses were de-livered by three prominent citizens of Brook-lyn—William Sherer, chairman of the New York Clearing House; "Deacon" William Richardson and Mr. St. Clair McKelway, of

the Brooklyn Eagle. These addresses are so elevated in tone and so full of interest to the general reader that we are tempted to reprint them here:

Brother William Sherer responded to the toast of the Grand Lodge, saying: "I am here to-night for the purpose of partaking of this banquet and do what I can to extend the brotherly feeling in Brooklyn. It was my as-signment, I believe, to speak for another Grand Body, the 'Grand Chapter.' I loaded myself with sufficient ammunition, I thought, to do execution in that direction; I come here and find that owing to the absence of our Grand Master I am called upon to fill in space to be occupied by either of those gentlemen, so that much abused institution, the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, that has suffered so often at my hands, is again to be a victim to-night. Brethren, you know the story of the Grand Lodge, now one hundred and twelve years old, representing the constituencies of seven hundred and fifty lodges formed with us. You know the purpose for which this annual assemblage of Masons is held. You know every lodge in this State, no matter how small or how large, is afforded equal representation in your own Grand Lodge, and you know the voice of the repre-sentative of the most humble New York body receives as much attention as though he came from the most desirable one in the State, and for harmony, dignity and justice of ruling the Grand Lodge of the State of New York sets an example that the several Houses of Congress and State Legislature may well fol-low. And it is this fact that will, in years to come, as it has in years that have passed, be of great importance to the fraternity in this State, and when you come to think that this Grand Body, without danger and without con-fusion, represents a grand feeling of brother-hood extending amongst more than one hun-dred thousand men, then you see the force that there is in that body. Representatives of more than one hundred thousand men are there to legislate, for what? In the interest of

brotherly love and respect for all that is good. No matter what may be a man's political opinion, no matter what may be his religious creed, if he believes in our recognized Supreme Being and in the brotherhood of man, he finds his representative and his place. Socialists, anarchists, reformers and national men have tried for ages to find the panacea for human wounds, but I will tell you that the solution rests alone in this fact and in this condition, when men will treat their brother men as brethren, when they will do to them as they expect to be done by, then we will have no need of reformation in anything. Now, Brethren, we do not pretend, we do not claim, to stand in the place of any man's creed or religion, but we do believe that we have the foundation of all that is good and substantial, the foundation of every creed, and that is love to God and love to all. Our Grand Lodge during its one hundred and twelve years of existence has exalted all that I have just mentioned in these few brief words. That your several Grand Bodies have other uses I will not deny. You can not compel every man to follow in the same rut and in the same line, and if a man finds that his usefulness to his fellow man and his usefulness in Masonic circles is growing by taking an interest in the other lodges, then give him freedom to go there, but never lose sight of this fact, that the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, through whom indirectly the authority came to bring this association to light, is the mother of all that stands for Freemasonry in the grand State of New York.

"It has been my great good fortune to be a member of that body for twenty-four years. I have sat under the gavel of many Grand Masters that have passed away; I have sat under the gavel of so many of them that to-night I can not recall their names, but I have yet to see a man in that position and in the chair who has ever given way to personal spite or personal feelings in carrying out the official position in which his brethren placed him. Now, Brethren, recollect, he who

serves you so serves without the hope of reward. There is no salary attached to the office of Grand Master of the New York Body, nor for many years past has one ever thought that his position was any reason why he should go before his fellow citizens as candidate for any office. We are enabled by our great system of brotherhood to eliminate partisanship and every selfish motive and every other motive which might bring us down from the pinnacle upon which we stand."

Brother William Richardson, responding to the toast of the Brooklyn Masonic Veterans, said: "It is with a feeling of pride that we recognize ourselves this evening to be Masonic Veterans. The City of Brooklyn, by reason of recent events, is well and favorably known amongst all the cities of the world. It has been the fashion amongst a certain class of Brooklyn men, when traveling, to register themselves as from 'New York.' That time has passed by. Hereafter, in registering, no man will be loath to put himself down as from Brooklyn. It was claimed by St. Paul, of old, that he was 'a citizen of no mean city,' and we can certainly claim, in view of recent events, that we are 'citizens of no mean city,' and one which contains very few mean people.

"The motto of our Association is 'The best of life is yet to come,' and that is a worthy motto for those whom we may look upon as being amongst the 'sifted wheat' of the Masonic lodges of this city. After the length of experience which we must attain before being eligible to membership in the Masonic Veterans, we may reasonably—and without too much egotism—look upon ourselves as illustrations of the truth of the doctrine of 'the survival of the fittest.' But while we can more thoroughly and sensibly enjoy the present, one of the most important things for us to feel and enjoy is the hope of the future, that 'the best of life is yet to come,'—not merely during the few more years which we may spend here, but in the life eternal in that great beyond. In this connection you will

pardon me if I recite a few verses written by Thomas Campbell, a Scotch poet, who lived the latter part of the last century and the earlier part of this. For the theology of the poem in a critical sense I will not vouch; for the poetry of it I am willing to be held responsible:

“All worldly shapes shall melt,
The Sun himself must die in gloom,
Before this mortal shall assume
Its immortality.
I saw a vision in my sleep
That gave my spirit strength to sweep
Adown the gulf of Time.
I saw the last of human mould
That shall creation's death behold,
As Adam saw her prime.

“The Sun's eye had a sickly glare,
The Earth with age was wan,
The skeletons of nature were
Around that lonely man.
Some had expired in fight: the brands
Still rusted in their bony hands;
In plague and famine some.
Earth's cities had no sound nor tread,
And ships were drifting with the dead
To shores where all was dumb.

“Yet, prophet-like, that lone one stood,
With dauntless words and high,
That shook the sere leaves from the wood
As if a storm passed by,
Saying, we are twins in death, proud Sun.
Thy face is cold, thy race is run;
'Tis mercy bids thee go;
For thou ten thousand thousand years
Hast seen the tide of human tears,
That shall no longer flow.

“Go, let oblivion's curtain fall
Upon the stage of men,
Nor with thy rising beams recall
Life's tragedy again.
My lips that speak the dirge of death,
Their rounded gasp and gurgling breath

To see thou shalt not boast.
The eclipse of nature spreads my pall,
The majesty of darkness shall
Receive my parting ghost.

“Go, Sun, while mercy holds me up
On nature's awful waste,
To drink this last and bitter cup
Of grief that man shall taste:
Go tell the night that hides thy face,
Thou saw'st the last of Adam's race,
On earth's sepulchral clod,
The darkening universe defy
To quench his immortality
Or shake his trust in God.’

“It was well said by the old patriarch of Uz, Job: ‘For I know that my Redeemer liveth; and that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth; and though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God, Whom shall I see for myself and mine eyes shall behold, and not another, though my reins be consumed within me.’ Again, another patriarch who lived long after him, the Psalmist, King of Israel, cried out in ecstasy: ‘As for me, I shall behold Thy face in righteousness, I shall be satisfied when I awake with Thy likeness;’ and in this connection I may again quote the lines of a poet:

“There is a land where every pulse is thrilling
With rapture, earth's sojourners may not know;
Where heaven's repose the weary heart is stilling:
And peacefully life's time-tossed currents flow.

“Thither our weak and weary steps are tending;
Saviour and Lord! with Thy frail children bide,
Guide us towards home, where, all our wanderings ending,
We shall see Thee and ‘shall be satisfied.’”

"But, while we have the duties of life here, we must not be entirely engrossed with the thoughts of the best of life being yet to come, even in the great hereafter."

President Haskell in response to the toast, "The Mason as a citizen," said: "Even those who are skeptical as to the extent to which Masonry controls men's actions, will admit that if tenets of Masonry are made the rules of men's lives there will be better sons, better fathers and better citizens."

St. Clair McElway, responding to the same sentiment, "The Mason as a Citizen," said: "Every American Mason should be a good American citizen. I do not so far lay out the duties of other men as to say that every American citizen should be a Mason, but I do say that if every American citizen were a Mason some questions which are now before the public would be settled at once and forever. There would be no question in such a case about the eternal divorce between Church and State. There would be no question in such a case about an end at once and forever of legislative appropriations to sectarian schools. There would be in citizenship, as there are in Masonry by legitimate evolution, natural and qualified leadership. For a thousand years Masonry has been the epitome of an honest registration and an honest vote. The last twenty years our country has witnessed the deterioration of the legislative arm of government, but in Masonry the legislative arm represented by our Grand Lodge of this and other States, and of other nations, was never stronger, was never purer, never more simple, never more worthily trusted, and never more universally respected than now. In the one hundred and twelve years of its existence it has commanded the approbation of man, the allegiance of the Brethren, and it has deserved, not only the considerate judgment of mankind, but it has received, whether in adversity or prosperity, the gracious favor of Almighty God. Masonry was invisible in the duties of citizenship and ever should be. It was, however, much invisible, not

unfelt, not unfelt in its professional, its fraternal capacity, but strongly felt in the underlying principle of the golden rule and the brotherhood of man and the equal rights of all before the law, which are the foundation stones of this supreme, magnificent order. As Masons we know what our charter is, we know where we got it, we know to whom we owe allegiance and obligations under it, and we know its invaluable advantage to our order. Now let us as Masons believe what we please concerning protection, believe what we please concerning revenue reform or free trade, believe what we please concerning sound money, but let us bear in mind that home affairs are not political affairs, that neighborhood affairs are not State affairs. Under the Declaration of Independence the right of man to liberty is regulated by law. I congratulate you upon your numbers and your enthusiasm, and I thank you for your courteous attention. I regret that I have not been able in previous years to be with you. To-night, I am, if you will allow me to indulge in a personal remark, so fatigued with labor finished, and yet awaiting me, that I hardly hoped to be with you. I have been brought into good company, and this will become a pleasure of memory; associated with other occasions of our brotherhood down at the St. George, where I have met them at the festive board, and is suggestive of a few verses, which I think I can remember, although I would not dare match my poor memory alongside of the magnificent mental faculty of the Deacon, whom I found but did not make, and in labelling him I had only acknowledged the fitness of things.

"There is an isle,

And the name of that isle is the Long Ago;
And we bury our treasures there;

There are brows of beauty and bosoms of
snow,

There are heaps of dust; but we loved
them so;

There are trinkets and tresses of hair.

"There are fragments of songs that nobody
sings,
And a part of an infant's prayer,
There's a harp unswept, and a lute without
strings,
There are broken vows and pieces of rings,
And the garments she used to wear.

"Oh, remembered for aye be that blessed isle,
All the days of our life till night,
And when the evening comes with its beautiful
smile,
And our eyes are closing in slumber awhile,
May that 'Greenwood' of soul be in
sight.'"

"What manner of men may these Freemasons be," is a question that was once asked in London when the fraternity began to attract notice outside of their lodge-rooms, and it is a question that is often asked even yet wherever Freemasons by their numbers stand out in bold relief in any community. So far as Brooklyn is concerned the roll of membership of the various lodges might be said to include the foremost representatives of every walk and condition in life, ministers and mechanics, bankers, lawyers, political war-horses, teachers, merchants and professional men of all sorts. The writer of this has an abiding conviction that the best interests of the Masonic fraternity can always be most readily subserved by naming for public discussion the men who are, or have been, prominent in its ranks, rather than by enlarging upon the moral and other lessons which are inculcated in its lodge. Contrary to the general belief, Freemasonry has no secrets. It has, of course, grips, words and signs peculiar to itself, but these are not what are considered "secrets" in the popular sense. Outside of these all that the fraternity dwells upon is contained in the pages of the Holy Book, which ever lies open on its altars. "Study the Bible," Grand Master Thorne once said in addressing a mixed audience, "and you will be not only in possession of every Masonic secret, but be as good a

Mason as any one in the ranks." Of that there is no doubt. Most men are the result of their associations, and are just what their associations make them, whether these associations be found in the home circle, the political forum, the church parlor or around the Masonic altar. So it is safe to say, when a man becomes prominent in public life or in any walk of life and we find that he is also active in Masonry, has been, in fact, active in Masonry long before he became prominent in other good work, that it is the teachings of the craft which have directed his path and strengthened his effort in all good works. A good Mason must be also a good citizen and exhibit in his walk and conversation all that which makes for peace, order, law, progress and advancement in any community. One or two examples of Masonic biography may enable us to understand this more clearly.

The first we select is that of a man whose memory is yet cherished among the members of the fraternity in Brooklyn and who was, and is, justly regarded as the most typically representative Freemason which Long Island has given to the great brotherhood. This was Joseph D. Evans, who, in 1854, succeeded the famous Chancellor Walworth as Grand Master of the State of New York, and who, while by no means the most brilliant chief executive the Grand Lodge had chosen up to that time, proved by no means the least useful.

The following sketch of the career of this distinguished brother is reprinted from the Standard History of Freemasonry in the State of New York, issued a few years ago by the publishers of the present work:

CAREER OF JOSEPH D. EVANS.

Brother Evans was born in the city of New York in 1807. His parents removed to Richmond, Virginia, and there the future Grand Master received his education and business training. In 1842 he was made a Mason in Marshall Lodge, No. 39, Lynchburg, and afterward affiliated with St. John's Lodge, No.

36, of Richmond, and in 1846 became its Master. Two years later, when he left Richmond to take up his residence in New York the brethren presented him with a Past Master's jewel.

Taking up his abode in Brooklyn, he affiliated with Anglo-Saxon Lodge. His business interests, however, lay in New York, and here it may be said that his commercial career was as brilliant as his Masonic one. As president of the New York Tobacco Board of Trade he exerted himself greatly in the struggle of 1871-3 to retain the bonded warehouse system in New York City, and he was the first presi-



JOSEPH D. EVANS.

dent of the New York Naval Stores and Tobacco Exchange. His business career was marked by industry and probity, his word was as good as a bond, and, while he paid close attention to details, he acted with a breadth of view and a wholesome liberality that showed him to be animated by as much ambition to promote the general good as to conserve his own personal ends. He was a man of humble piety and of deep religious sentiments and his memory is yet held in loving remembrance in the Church of the Messiah, Brooklyn, of which he was vestryman and clerk for many years.

In Anglo-Saxon Lodge Brother Evans became Master in 1850, was elected again in the following year and declined re-election in 1852. In the Grand Lodge he was noted for his loyalty and his conciliatory spirit. When the Phillips division took place in 1849 Anglo-Saxon Lodge went out with the dissidents, but Evans exerted all his influence upon the brethren and submitted a resolution which, on being adopted, brought the Lodge back to its allegiance. As Grand Master he tried hard to restore harmony in the jurisdiction, and, though he did not fully succeed, there is no doubt that his influence hastened the final union of the various bodies among whom union was desired. In fact, it was to his direct initiative that the measures were taken in 1858 which in 1859 finally closed the disunited ranks. He was a strong advocate of the representative system between the different Grand Lodges and wrought hard to make it universal, and to him is due the inauguration of the District Deputy system as we have it to-day—a system that has done much to preserve the unity of the craft and to lessen the labors of the Grand Master and other executive officers of the Grand Lodge.

On retiring from the Grand Master's chair, after being twice elected, Brother Evans stepped down to the ranks again only to resume his active work. In 1859 he dimitted from Anglo-Saxon Lodge, affiliated with Prince of Orange Lodge, No. 16, and became its Master in 1860. In 1864 he aided in the organization of Hillgrove Lodge, No. 540, and later, in 1867, when Hillgrove had become prosperous, he helped to organize Mistietoe Lodge, No. 647, Brooklyn, and served as its Master until 1870. All this time he was more or less active in all the Masonic branches. Chapter and Crypt had no mysteries for him and chivalric Masonry claimed him as a faithful knight. In the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite he received the highest degree, Sovereign Grand Inspector General, and for two years presided over the Grand Consistory, Northern Jurisdiction,

while as Grand Minister of State he accomplished much good work.

As a Mason he was a stanch advocate of maintaining the simplicity and purity of the order; and in showing the brethren that the ritual, while beautiful, was simply an introduction to a wonderful system of philosophy, religious and moral, he never tired. The landmarks of Masonry formed a theme which engaged his attention for many years and his concise arrangement of these much disputed essentials found great favor in New York. This arrangement is to be found printed in the current edition of the constitution, a position of honor which it should always occupy. There never lived a more devoted Mason or one who interwove Masonry more completely into his daily life. All of his sons in this respect emulated his example. The entire family of Brother Evans was noted for its interest in Masonry, and his eldest brother, James, was at one time Grand Master of Virginia. Joseph D. Evans died at Brooklyn September 11, 1888, when in the eighty-second year of his age.

As an evidence of how thoroughly he himself could apply the teachings, the philosophy of Masonry, we quote the following from his address in 1855, when referring to the death in that year of John Van Buren, who was an enthusiastic Mason and had been Junior Grand Warden and Senior Grand Warden during four years under the Grand Mastership of Morgan Lewis:

"The soul of our beloved brother, John Van Buren, has taken its everlasting flight; his well known seat is vacant; it was, as you well recollect, always near the East. His manly form, benignant demeanor and unobtrusive deportment are vividly impressed upon our memory. He was ever watchful of the true interests of the institution, a friend to the needy and oppressed, and a firm and unflinching adherent to our ancient laws and regulations; in his death we have sustained a great loss, but we have the consolations afforded by the happy reflections that he has gone to meet

a rich reward, and that his memory will ever flourish as the green bay tree. Brother Van Buren died in January last; at his request his remains were consigned to the tomb by his brethren, who assembled in large numbers to unite in the sorrows of the family and participate in our last solemn rites, and as the sympathetic tear which silently expressed their grief at their unexpected loss fell upon his grave, the evergreen deposited by hundreds of kindred hearts within the tomb proclaimed with trumpet power the everlasting truth that his body will rise and become as incorruptible as his soul."

As might be supposed, the ritual came in for a large share of his official attention while Brother Evans exerted a direct influence on the craft as Deputy Grand Master or as Grand Master. In 1852, at his suggestion, one important piece of uniformity was attained when the Grand Secretary was instructed to notify all Lodges that it was a violation of the constitution to transact any business other than conferring degrees, except when in a Lodge of Master Masons; another regulation that did good service in keeping the craft free of undesirable material, or assisted to that end, was that passed the same year requiring a candidate to be an actual resident in the vicinity of a Lodge before being in a position to apply for membership. A Masonic funeral service drawn up by H. G. Beardsley, of Hamilton, New York, was also adopted by the Grand Lodge and recommended to the fraternity of the State. Such a compilation was much needed and it served a useful purpose at the time, although it has since been superseded. It would have been thought that Freemasons would have respected the Sabbath, but unfortunately in the multiplicity of interests which then prevailed some organizations, both "cheap and nasty," found it profitable to work the degrees on the Lord's day, even without the justification that they were Hebrews and held sacred the seventh day of the week; so it is gratifying to find the Grand Lodge putting squarely on record for the second time a

declaration that Masonic meetings on Sunday, except for burial purposes, are improper and prohibited, and also that the use of profane language should render a brother liable to discipline. Being himself a man of strong religious sentiments, there is no doubt that Brother Evans' influence was at work in bringing about such legislation. Doubtless all such matters were thoroughly understood by the brethren long before his time, but they were not given legislative force until he took the initiative.

The necessity of having the esoteric work uniform throughout all the Lodges of the State had been a theme of anxious interest throughout the jurisdiction since the days of Livingston, but, although many means had been tried, Grand Visitors and District Visitors appointed, the desired uniformity could not be brought about, and now that Lodges were springing up in all directions it was seen that something had to be done or the wildest confusion would ensue. To overcome this, if possible, Oscar Coles, in 1852, introduced a motion, which was adopted, that the Grand officers should constitute a Lodge of Instruction, to meet once a week, and appoint a sufficient number of Grand Lecturers so that each Lodge could be visited at least once a year and exemplify the standard work. The Grand Lecturer was to receive compensation from the Lodge so visited. This was virtually the beginning of the present Committee on Exemplification of the Work, and under it the lectures were thoroughly revised and submitted to the craft. The system thus compiled was favorably received, but in 1855 the experience of the committee led to the permanent employment of a Grand Lecturer. This subject is thus summarized by the late C. T. McClenachan, who as a ritualist had in his time no superior in the jurisdiction: "The revised work of the craft," he wrote, "was pronounced by the Grand Master, Joseph D. Evans, as very gratifying, meeting with general approbation; that it was 'the same taught by Preston, Webb, Cushman, Cross and men of their

day, and was in general practice throughout the United States; that Past Grand Master Walworth, our Grand Chaplain, the Rev. Brother Town, together with four other old Masons, recognized and stamped it the same, substantially, as that taught to them forty to fifty years ago.' As to the above-named ritualists, Preston and others, there seems ample room for surprise, for the above and similar remarks occur in the Grand Master's address of June 5, 1855. The inconveniences in the Revision are thus set forth: 'It is now three years since the Grand Lodge commenced a revision of the work. * * * The chaotic rubbish had to be removed, predilections and prejudices overcome, before truth could rear her towering arch, self-supporting and self-capped, to the admiring gaze of the devotees of Masonry's ancient landmarks, but, thanks to patience and perseverance, success equal to all expectation has crowned the effort. Its merits have borne it on approving wings to distant quarters of the State, and it is now practiced and adhered to in the main by scores of our Lodges.' The subject of the new revision went to a committee, who reported on the following day, recommending the election of a Grand Lecturer, under the constitution, at a salary of one thousand dollars, who shall reside in the city of New York, and other Lecturers, who shall receive for their services their actual expenses and two dollars per day during the time they are attending a call. * * *

On June 8 Brother A. Colo Veloni was declared elected Grand Lecturer and on the succeeding day the Grand Lodge resolved 'that the work of the Grand Lecturer be submitted to the Grand officers, with power to receive or reject his standard, as they may see fit.' Accordingly, at the close of the session * * * the Grand Lecturer exhibited his version of the ritual to the Grand Master and the Grand Secretary and it was rejected." The reasons for this very drastic conclusion were many, but the main one was the brother's imperfect pronunciation of the English language and a certain amount of extraneous matter, which

was not suited to the taste of American Masons. Further on, McClenachan says:

"On June 7, 1856, the Grand Lodge abolished the Lodge of Instruction; voted Brother A. Colo Veloni, for his services as Grand Lecturer, five hundred dollars; elected Brother William H. Drew the Grand Lecturer without a fixed compensation. * * * An appropriation of five hundred dollars to Brother Drew was made on the following June, and the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars to Brother Veloni as his assistant. The services of the Grand Lecturer were then settled at three dollars per day and necessary expenses, to be paid by the lodges employing him. The lengthy reports presented by the Grand Lecturer, William H. Drew, to the Grand Lodge and printed in full in the proceedings of 1857 and 1858 are remarkable documents and worthy of frequent reference. It was in this latter year the compensation to the Lecturer was made one thousand dollars. It was ordered that the State be divided into Grand Lecture Districts, designated by Senatorial districts, and that conventions be held in each."

It was this legislation that placed the "standard work" right before every Lodge in the State and gave the New York brethren a reputation as ritualists which has never been surpassed by those of other jurisdictions.

It was under Grand Master Evans, too, that the present Grand Lodge library really had its beginning, although for such purpose donations of books had already been received on various occasions. He brought the need of such an annex so clearly before the brethren in his address in 1855 that the first five officers were appointed a Library Committee, with power to commence the formation of a library and to draw on the Grand Treasurer for five hundred dollars during the year to purchase books. Subordinate Lodges were asked to aid in the work, and a really good beginning was made, although the work afterward, for various reasons, was permitted to languish. It was Evans' idea that the Grand Lodge library

should be a sort of central lending organization, giving the brethren all over the country the advantages of studying whatever treasures it possessed, but this was soon afterward abandoned as unfeasible. It was not, in fact, until the Grand Lodge got settled in its own home that much practical headway was made in the collection of a library worthy of the institution.

Grand Master Evans governed the craft wisely and well, and, while discussion prevailed in the craft, the Grand Lodge steadily advanced in popularity and power. When he retired at the close of his second term there were three hundred and nineteen lodges under its jurisdiction and, besides, thirty-two lodges were working under dispensations, while the New York fraternity was recognized all over the world for its power and well directed energies.

A more modern Mason, yet one who in his earlier days was often associated with Evans and who died in November, 1901, was John G. Barker, Masonic bookseller, who was probably known, by name at least, to every reading member of the fraternity in the United States and Canada. His home was for years in Brooklyn and some of the Masonic organizations of which he was a member had their headquarters there, but his place of business was in New York City. For some thirty years he published Masonic books, but the great feature of his business was its half-yearly auction sales of Masonic books, gatherings from all sorts of places of volumes of interest to members of the order and to no one else. Sometimes not over half a dozen buyers would attend these sales, but as a rule nothing was exactly sacrificed—Barker attended to that. He was very proud of these auction sales and claimed, with justice, that they were not only helpful to the members of the craft, but that he was of real benefit to the widow or heirs of a book-loving Mason by securing for his literary treasures better prices than could be obtained were they sold in open market. But, as he sadly used to admit with a grim smile,

"book-buying bréthren" seemed to get smaller in number year after year; as to the brethren in New York and Brooklyn who read books—Masonic books—he was wont to aver that they "might be counted on the fingers of both hands and still leave us two or three fingers for additions." For the "bright Masons" of the present day he had nothing but the most contemptuous words and was ready on all occasions to demonstrate that such burning and shining lights are not Masons at all.

But still, it must be admitted that Barker himself was behind the age. His place of business was in a street that was once a Masonic center, but had long ago lost its pre-eminence in that and in every other respect, except for manufacturing industries. He had a large stock, but it was never displayed properly. When you wanted anything you had to ask for it, and Barker generally had it, no matter how rare a bibliographical treasure it might be. Yet it may be questioned if even he had a complete knowledge of all that his stock contained, for human memory has its limitations.

The establishment in Bleecker street, New York, was not an inviting one. It was not at all tidy; the furnishings were "the remains of former grandeur," and the presence of half a dozen cats did not add to the neatness of things. Three or four chairs were disposed around an old stove, chairs so well seasoned that they could not be destroyed by rough usage, and therein lay their supreme comfort, for you could sit in them as you liked, elevate them to your notion of the fitness of things, and if you so desired tilt your feet on the stove at any angle. It was not a handsome spot, the surroundings were venerable and decrepid, yet around that stove more Masonry has been talked and discussed during the past quarter of a century than probably in any other spot in the State of New York. Mr. Barker himself was a living encyclopedia of local Masonic history, and if his educational training had only been commensurate with the opportunities that came to him and with the facil-

ities his business opened up, he would have been a power in the fraternity. But his early education appears to have been limited. For several years he edited and published a Masonic magazine, which had more errors on the page—errors in grammar and in spelling, involved and dense sentences, misquotations and the like, than any publication the writer of this ever knew, yet he was never aware of them. His sale catalogues were useless for bibliographical purposes because of their mistakes in names and dates, yet such errors he never seemed to think amounted to much. But if some one had pointed out to him a misspelled name in one of Albert Pike's publications he would have gloated over it for a month and denounced the ignorance of Pike in the bitterest terms to all and sundry.

In fact, denunciation was his great forte. At times he was wont to denounce everything. The name of Albert Pike used to arouse his ire much as a red flag is said to arouse the dander of a bull, and the name of the late Enoch Terry Carson uncorked all the vials of his wrath. Even some of the Grand Masters of his own jurisdiction did not escape his ire and of some of them the language he used was such as if here repeated might lay the publisher open to legal proceedings. Of the Grand Masters of recent years he knew nothing, except John Stewart and Wright D. Pownall, for both of whom he entertained the highest regard, but all the others since the days of Frank R. Lawrence were to him little more than names. He admired Grand Master Lawrence's work, or rather the magnificent outcome of it, although he did not admire Lawrence's methods; but then Barker was one of those whom Lawrence himself used to denounce as the Past Masters who led the New York fraternity into the mire of debt from which only heroic measures and masterly leadership enabled them to get out of.

But in spite of his gift of denunciation, which, as usual, grew more virulent as years crept on, John G. Barker had a kind heart. Many a time have we seen a beggar enter his

store, and experience a share of his wrath, winding up with the stern admonition that "this is a place of business and not a bureau of charity;" and we always noticed that when the speech was near the close his hand was in his pocket and the suppliant went away satisfied. Once a fellow walked in and solicited a dime, saying he was a brother of a lodge in Boston and had tramped the streets in search of work until he was played out. Barker, after the customary discourse, gave him the ten cents. "That fellow wants a drink," the writer said after the scene was over. "Well," said Barker, "what if he does? He asked me for a dime for food and I had the dime to spare. If he has lied about it, I have at least done my part." But his kindness of heart showed itself in many other ways. No young brother ever applied to him for a bit of information as to work, or law, or procedure, or history without having the point at issue fully explained, no matter how much of his time it took up, and he would not only give his own views but would back them up with authorities, ransacking his whole store, searching in safes, desks, pigeon-holes and all sorts of corners for the necessary books or data. "Proceedings" of Grand Lodges were his favorite study, and probably he knew as much of the contents of these as any man living. Now and again he used to talk of editing a volume or two of selections from the valuable contributions to Masonic history which lie buried in these "books which are not books," but he seemed unwilling to undertake the task owing to his advanced years.

Barker was a genuine example of the old school of Masons, of the type that prevailed in New York forty years ago. At that time Simons, Holmes, Phillips, Macoy, Sickels, Henry C. Banks, Somers, and Evans were in the height of their usefulness. Grand men, they were, all of them. Although one or two gave way to the cup which inebriates, they were not drunkards; they were "convivialists," as they used to call themselves, but there is no doubt that their fondness for looking on

"the wine when it is red" lowered their standing in the social scale and more or less wrecked their lives. But whether *bon vivants* like Holmes, or prim, devout, hard-working merchants like Evans, they were all men of brains. When Barker was raised in Silentia Lodge in November, 1862, he had known Simons, Holmes, Sickels and most of the rest of these leaders for some years, and he had quite an intimate acquaintance with that apostle of unrest—that most wonderful of ritualists—Henry C. Atwood, who passed away from the storms and distresses and conflicts of this life to, let us hope, a haven of rest above, two months before Barker signed the by-laws and was acknowledged a Master Mason. Still, although he thus dated legitimately in a Masonic sense from 1862, it is difficult to tell when Barker's acquaintance with the craft began. They were not so particular then as now about many matters and Barker laughingly once told a group of listeners that his initiating, passing and raising showed him nothing new as he had "many times seen the whole business before." In fact he had often tyled a lodge when he was in that state of darkness which the elder brethren stigmatized so eloquently as being that of a "cowan," although not one of them could tell the exact meaning of the word. Neither can any of the brethren of the present twentieth century, for that matter. Of course it was wrong to let a boy act as tyler, but if the fact of a non-Mason being tyler had been called in question Simons would have found ample precedent for it in the Scotch system which did not demand in those days—and possibly does not make it obligatory even yet—that the tyler of a lodge must be a member of the fraternity.

For many years Barker was a prominent figure in Grand Lodge circles although the only official appointment he ever held was that of grand librarian for some four years. But the library was a small affair in his day, containing little beyond loose numbers of proceedings, and during his tenure of the office he attempted little beyond arranging and completing these.

The fact is that he became active in Grand Lodge circles at a time when a library was hardly likely to be a theme of immediate interest. The first year he attended the Grand Lodge as a representative the purchase of the present site of Masonic Hall was announced and then followed the excitement of corner-stone laying, of seeing the building in process of erection, of its dedication, and the long years of doubt, money-raising, and even despondency, until Lawrence lifted the load. It was in these years of financial darkness that Barker was prominent. For the past decade he seemed to take more of a direct interest in Scottish Rite matters than in anything else. He was the secretary and real leader of what the brethren in Brooklyn and New York generally speak of as the Gorman Cerneau council, and he supported its claims to being the genuine article with all the force and vehemence of the old controversial school in which Hyneman and Folger almost to our day carried on the argumentative methods of Lawrence Dermott himself. Into this feature of his career, however, this is not the place or time to enter.

Since the days of the leadership of Joseph D. Evans, Brooklyn has given two Grand Masters to the craft in New York, Joseph J. Couch and William Sherer, and in all probability will in 1902 furnish yet another in the advancement to the highest honor in the gift of the fraternity of Elbert Crandall, now Deputy Grand Master. A lawyer engaged in active practice on Manhattan Island, Mr. Crandall's home was long in Brooklyn and his entire Masonic affiliations are centered here. He is a member of Ridgewood Lodge, No. 710; of Ridgewood Chapter, No. 263; of De Witt Clinton Commandery, No. 27; Aurora Grata Consistory, Scottish Rite, and of Kismet Tem-

ple, Mystic Shrine. In the Grand Lodge, before being elected to his present office, he was chief commissioner of appeals, and his eloquent voice has often been heard in that capacity as well as in urging measures and matters of importance to the general welfare of the fraternity. He has proven a wise and conservative counselor, has rendered loyal service to a succession of Grand Masters, and is thoroughly equipped by long years of practical training and by the dictates of his own heart to assume the leadership of the big army of New York Masons—an army now numbering over one hundred thousand.

Possibly the course of time will place yet another Long Island Mason in the highest office. At present Townsend Scudder is chief commissioner of appeals in Grand Lodge, and somehow that office has come to be regarded as a stepping-stone to greater honors. Townsend Scudder was born at Northport July 26, 1865, and has represented Suffolk county in Congress. As a lawyer he ranks high, having been counsel for Queens county at the time when its affairs were being adjusted prior to annexation. In Masonic circles he is popular everywhere, and the same high regard follows him into every walk in life, for there is no doubt that but for his own determination to quit active political life he would have been returned to Congress from his district as often as he cared. He proved a most useful and reliable representative of his constituents, and while he was in Congress he never permitted his associates to forget that there was a place called Long Island, a place that had many and just claims upon their consideration, and he managed somehow to get quite a large proportion of these claims satisfactorily and liberally adjudicated.



CHAPTER LV.

THE SOCIAL WORLD OF LONG ISLAND.

A GRAND ARRAY OF ASSOCIATIONS OF ALL SORTS—ASSESSMENT INSURANCE—FASHION-
ABLE CLUBS—SPORTING AND HUNTING ORGANIZATIONS.

BESIDES the Masonic body, Brooklyn has quite a variety of secret organizations; but with few exceptions these are all of what may be called the beneficial order of associations; that is, their main purpose is to help, aid and assist their members in time of sickness and trouble, to provide a burial payment, and in some cases to pay over to the heirs of a deceased member a sum of money generally regulated by the assessment plan, that is to say, according to the result of a fixed amount collected from each surviving member and paid over to the family or estate of a member "who has passed from the cares and troubles of this transitory scene," as the ritual of one of these associations graphically expresses it. In other words, many of these organizations, in spite of their claims to secrecy and their choice collection of grips and passwords and more or less elaborate rituals, are simply insurance organizations, with friendship as their basis instead of business. Their system is based on fellowship, while that of a regular insurance company is founded on experience, statistics and the computations of their actuaries. There is no doubt that the assessment plan of life insurance is wrong—wrong in theory and indifferent in practice—that the prosperous careers of societies founded on such a basis is short, generally a couple of decades, and that even with the best and most careful manage-

ment those who are so insured for any length of time generally find their assessments increase until, in the end, they become as costly as the most costly of the regularly established insurance companies, the old-line companies, as the assessment plan managers used contemptuously to call them when the assessment plan was in the first flush of success—and that was shortly after it entered upon its career as a popular fad. To win in an assessment society one had to die when it was in the first flush of success. Its principle was so simple that on the surface it appeared feasible and plausible. Get together a thousand men between the ages of twenty-one and fifty, men who seemed strong and healthy, and, in some cases, men able to pass a quite superficial medical examination. Let each pay in one dollar and thus raise a fund of one thousand dollars. When one died the fund thus created was to be handed over to his heirs and a fresh assessment levied, the vacancies caused by death to be filled up by new members. Nothing could be more simple, and yet in practice it proved most defective, and there are thousands of the policies of such organizations kept as sad mementoes in homes all over the continent—mementoes that are not worth the cost of the paper on which they are printed.

And still this form of insurance has not been without its good qualities. It has been the means of paying over to thousands of

widows many millions of dollars which otherwise they would never have received, and as these women were generally widows of mechanics and laboring men, men working for a daily wage, the result of the assessment call was generally all that stood between them and actual want when the days of trouble and desolation came upon them. The working classes were not given much to the provident and thoughtful scheme of saving involved in life insurance schemes until this system directed their attention practically to it, and one benefit which these assessment associations was, in the long run, to add to the old and established companies a class of moderate "risks" which had hitherto been overlooked by them even in their keen and incessant hunt for business.

According to one eminent authority, Mayor Merrill, of Massachusetts, long at the head of the department of insurance in the old Bay State, the assessment system of life insurance can only be run successfully when it has other features to recommend it other than those which might be described as purely business, when it brings to the front the social qualities and aspirations of its members, when it is supplemented by a scheme of sick or out-of-work benefits, when it is confined to a trade or brings together people of one nationality, and so keeps alive by its reunions the memories and the story and the customs of the old home across the sea.

Among these a prime place must be given to the Royal Arcanum, even although that strong national organization has had to revise and adjust and increase its scale of assessments since it was first organized, in 1877. It has its regular lodges and social gatherings, and while the national organization takes direct cognizance of no part of the work excepting that of administering what is called the mortuary fund, the local lodges do all that can be conceived in the way of catering to the cultivation of the social aspirations of the members and rendering them fraternal aid. The strength of the whole system lies in the work of the local lodges, and they in turn rely on the solidity of

the general organization to meet all claims which become due on the death of one of their members, claims which vary according to a stipulated scheme from one thousand to five thousand dollars. On Long Island it has a membership of over twenty thousand, distributed in ninety-three lodges, as follows:

BROOKLYN.—Acme, No. 594, 7th avenue and 9th street; Adirondack, No. 1742, 54th street and 3d avenue; Alert, No. 1567, Brooklyn avenue and Fulton street; Algonquin, No. 1610, Johnston Building; Amaranth, No. 461, 153 Pierrepont street; Atlantic, No. 1417, Jamaica and Bushwick avenues; Bay Ridge, No. 1383, 13th avenue and 67th street; Bedford, No. 655, Nostrand and Gates avenues; Blythebourne, No. 1324, New Utrecht avenue and 56th street; Bravura, No. 1285, Summer avenue and Fulton street; Brevoort, No. 1350, Johnston Building; Brooklyn, No. 72, Johnston Building; Burnside, No. 625, Brooklyn avenue and Fulton street; Bushwick, No. 1327, 1556 Broadway; Canarsie, No. 1678, avenue G and 9th street; Carroll Park, No. 630, Livingston and Smith streets; Champion, No. 1618, 153 Pierrepont street; Commonwealth, No. 542, 153 Pierrepont street; Dauntless, No. 1757, 807 Gates avenue; De Forest, No. 1527, Fulton street and Bedford avenue; De Long, No. 725, 16 Graham avenue; DeWitt Clinton, No. 419, Bedford avenue and Madison street; East New York, No. 953, Bushwick and Jamaica avenues; Fern, No. 774, Johnston Building; Fort Greene, No. 1048, Johnston Building; Franklin, No. 253, 970 Fulton street; Fraternity, No. 504, 16 Graham avenue; Fulton, No. 299, Johnston Building; General Putnam, No. 1446, 897 Gates avenue; General Slocum, No. 1701, Gates avenue and Broadway; Gilbert, No. 1343, Johnston Building; Gramercy, No. 1510, 1028 Gates avenue; Iolanthe, No. 318, Argyle Building; J. F. Price, No. 1769, 1028 Gates avenue; Kings County, No. 459, Nostrand and DeKalb avenues; Lefferts, No. 1452, 6 Brooklyn avenue; Liberty Bell, No. 1589, 1584 Fulton street; Long Island, No. 173, 153 Pierrepont street; Manhasset, No. 1518, 217 Court street; Midwood, No. 1615, 822 Flatbush avenue; Montauk, No. 651, 153 Pierrepont street; Morning Star, No. 680, Johnston Building; Nassau, No. 822, Johnston Building; Ocean Hill, No. 1134, Gates avenue and Broadway; Old Glory, No. 1712, Myrtle and Waverly avenues; Osceola, No.

759, Manhattan and Meserole avenues; Oxford, No. 650, Johnston Building; Palm, No. 1626, 1360 Broadway; Peconic, No. 631, Johnston Building; Philadelphos, No. 562, Nostrand and Gates avenues; Pro Patria, No. 1312, 869 Bedford avenue; Prospect Heights, No. 1521, 265 Prospect avenue; Ridgewood, No. 678, 897 Gates avenue; Stuyvesant, No. 690, Howard avenue and Madison street; Suydam, No. 1746, Broadway and Halsey street; Templar, No. 1376, Johnston Building; Undine, No. 1547, Gates and Nostrand avenues; Utrecht, No. 1332, Bath avenue and Bay 22d street; Valiant, No. 1559, 1089 Broadway; Vigilantia, No. 1065, Johnston Building; Vigilant, No. 1536, 54th street and 3d avenue; Washington Irving, No. 821, 897 Gates avenue; Welcome, No. 703, Howard avenue and Madison street; Williamsburgh, No. 441, Bedford avenue, near South 9th street.

QUEENS.—Defender, No. 1502, Arcanum Hall, Cedarhurst; Far Rockaway, No. 1693, Far Rockaway; Floral Park, No. 706, Arcanum Hall; Flushing, No. 997, Masonic Hall, Flushing; Jamaica, No. 433, Town Hall, Jamaica; Newtown, No. 717, Jeben's Building, Corona; Olive Branch, No. 1729, Turn Hall, College Point; Ozone, No. 1465, Odd Fellows' Hall, Ozone Park; Queens, No. 1669, Arcanum Hall, Corona; Richmond Hill, No. 1625, Arcanum Hall; Sunswick, No. 1374, 756 Boulevard Astoria.

NASSAU COUNTY.—Arbutus, No. 1362, Fleet's Hall, Oyster Bay; Charter Oak, No. 1415, Odd Fellows' Hall, Rockville Centre; Farmingdale, No. 1052, Arcanum Hall, Farmingdale; Hempstead, No. 842, Masonic Hall; Hicksville, No. 1159, Hicksville; Seawanhaka, No. 362, Glen Cove, Arcanum Hall.

SUFFOLK COUNTY.—Amityville, No. 1644, Amityville; Babylon, No. 881, Babylon; Great South Bay, No. 1635, Sayville; Greenport, No. 1256, Greenport; Nathan Hale, No. 1121, Huntington; Neptune, No. 1282, Southampton; Northport, No. 1450, Northport; Pausanake, No. 778, Patchogue; Port Jefferson, No. 1279, Port Jefferson; Riverhead, No. 1260, Riverhead; Smithtown, No. 1511, Smithtown; Stony Brook, No. 1333, Stony Brook; Suffolk County, No. 571, Bay Shore.

The Independent Order of Odd Fellows is a much more ancient organization than the

Royal Arcanum, and its objects are on the whole pretty much the same, although its lodge affiliation seems closer—somewhat akin, in fact, to the Masonic body, while its ritual is said by those who have had practical experience to be much more elaborate than that of any other purely beneficial organization. In fact, many are of the opinion that the order was really organized to furnish just those practical benefits which the Masonic body does not supply, and to cater mainly to the working classes, to whom Masonry at the time Odd Fellowship was instituted was practically a closed order. The candidate for Masonic affiliation is taught to expect no temporal benefits from his connection with it, while the candidate for initiation into the circles of Odd Fellowship is assured that if admitted he will benefit both himself and others. The Rebekah lodge gives women a chance to benefit by and work for the order, and those who belong to such lodges have a much more recognized standing in its circles than have the ladies belonging to the Eastern Star in the oldest of all the existing secret societies.

Odd Fellowship received its start in Brooklyn from the action of certain brethren of the order, resident in the city, but holding membership in New York City lodges. Several meetings and consultations were held in the year 1839, at the house of Brother James W. White, and finally application was made to the Grand Lodge for a charter. This application, signed by Brothers George P. Bancroft, Garret B. Black, Lemuel B. Hawxhurst, John Van Pelt, William G. Hynard, James W. White, John Higbie, Abram Campbell, Charles and John Pelletreau, was favorably received by the Grand Lodge, and a charter granted, to be known as Brooklyn Lodge, No. 26, I. O. O. F., which was fully organized November 12, 1839, in Hall's Building, corner of Fulton and Orange streets, by John A. Kennedy, at that time Grand Master of the order in the States, assisted by the officers of the Grand Lodge. The officers then chosen and installed were:

L. B. Hawxhurst, N. G.; James W. White, V. G.; William G. Hynard, Secretary; John W. Van Pelt, Treasurer. At the next meeting, November 19th, Messrs. John C. Roach, Thaddeus Davids, Richard Hallam, Henry Rohring, Jarvis Rogers, Thomas H. Redding, George Bloomfield, William M. Johnson, John Povie, David M. Smith, Henry S. Smith, Peter L. Taylor and Philip Adams were initiated members. By 1847 the membership numbered five hundred, and Nassau, 39; Principle, 48; Atlantic, 50; Ivanhoe, 127; and Magnolia, 166, had been colonized from it. From its organization in 1839 to January, 1844, this lodge enrolled 1,070 members. This lodge at an early day purchased ten lots in Greenwood cemetery in which to furnish a place of decent sepulture for its members, and for strange Odd Fellows dying here, away from home and friends.

The membership of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows on Long Island is about thirteen thousand, distributed in the following lodges:

BROOKLYN.—Brooklyn, No. 26, Nevins and Fulton streets; Principle, No. 48, 725 Union street; Atlantic, No. 50, 177 Montague street; Montauk, No. 114, 49 Court street; Ivanhoe, No. 127, 177 Montague street; Franklin Degree, No. 13, 49 Court street; Magnolia, No. 166, 177 Montague street; Myrtle, No. 323, 49 Court street; Union, No. 169, 49 Court street; Crusaders, No. 61, Broadway and Dodworth street; Mount Ararat, No. 144, Manhattan and Meserole avenues; Olive Leaf, No. 233, Manhattan and Meserole avenues; James L. Ridgely, No. 287, Broadway and Boerum street; Lyceum, No. 333, 14 Graham avenue; Progressive, No. 339, Broadway and Boerum street; Norman A. Manning, No. 415, Grand street and Graham avenue; Ridgewood, No. 534, 654 Hart street; Mystic Links, No. 711, Cooper street and Bushwick avenue; Nathan Hale, No. 804, 14 Howard avenue; Artistic, No. 101, 972 Fulton street; Bunker Hill, No. 136, Bushwick and Jamaica avenues; Ceres, No. 225, 1630 Fulton street; Prospect, No. 290, 14-16 Graham avenue; Purity, No. 337, 854 Gates avenue; Fort Greene, No. 354, Broadway and Willoughby avenue; Eagle, No. 368, 854 Gates avenue; Ivy, No. 472, corner

DeKalb and Bedford avenues; Wyona, No. 28, 440 Liberty avenue and Wyona street; William Tell, No. 125, 114 Graham avenue; Socrates, No. 223, 134 Graham avenue; Diogenes, No. 298, 355 Bushwick avenue; Charles T. Schmitt, No. 348, 574 Broadway; Chase, No. 367, 59 Driggs avenue; Justitia, No. 370, 355 Bushwick avenue; Harmonia, No. 394, 117 Himrod street; Rainbow, No. 409, Atlantic avenue, near Vermont street; Heinrich Heine, No. 580, 253 Irving street; Steuben, No. 133, 123 Smith street; Blucher, No. 426, 123 Smith street; Wallenstein, No. 428, 217 Court street; Werder, No. 594, 267 Prospect avenue; Hamilton, No. 640, 92d street, cor. 4th ave. and Fort Hamilton; The Woods, No. 121, Bath Beach; Franklin, No. 182, Sheepshead Bay; Gowanus, No. 239, 635 3d avenue; Arbor Vitae, No. 384, 478 5th avenue; Joppa, No. 386, 258 Court street; Peerless, No. 535, 217 Court street; Bay View, No. 567, 3d avenue and 54th street; Intrepid, No. 654, 13th avenue, near 67th street; Dauntless, No. 708, 258 Court street; General Putnam, No. 724, 725 Union street.

Rebekah Lodges.—Olive Branch, No. 19, 315 Washington street; Silver Spray, No. 63, 262 Prospect avenue; Mayflower, No. 77, Gates and Nostrand avenues; Arbutus, No. 90, Bath Beach; Miriam, No. 107, 1089 Broadway; Laurel Wreath, No. 110, Fulton street and Bedford avenue; Mount Olive, No. 117, Pennsylvania avenue and Fulton street; Amaranth, No. 176, 49 Court street; Cornelia, No. 38, 134 Graham avenue; Vereinigte Schwestern, No. 59, 217 Court street.

Encampments. Thomas Fawcett, D. D. G. P.—Fidelity, No. 50, 854 Gates avenue; Roland, No. 91, 123 Smith street; Beacon Light, No. 94, corner Grand and Havemeyer streets; Kades, No. 63, 134 Graham avenue; Liberty, No. 146, 3d avenue and 54th street; Mt. Pisgah, No. 26, Broadway and Dodworth street; Bethlehem, No. 10, 879 Gates avenue; Venus, No. 109, 258 Court street; Excelsior, No. 134, Gates and Nostrand avenues.

QUEENS.—Pacific, No. 85, Flushing, 71 Broadway; Astoria, No. 155, 165 Fulton avenue, Astoria; Marvin, No. 252, College Point; Anchor, No. 324, 3d and Vernon avenues, Long Island City; Long Island City, No. 395, 432 Steinway avenue; Whitestone, No. 775, Whitestone; Woodhaven, No. 204, Woodhaven; Jamaica, No. 247, 22 Harriman avenue, Jamaica; A. Grosjean, No. 371, Woodhaven; Freeport, No. 600, Freeport.

Rebekah Lodges.—Long Island City, No.

80, Grand and Steinway avenues; Florence, No. 97, Flushing; Gestina, No. 120, Woodhaven; Camillia, No. 210, Woodhaven.

NASSAU.—Farmingdale, No. 613, Farmingdale; Freeport, No. 600, Freeport; Hempstead, No. 141, Front street, Hempstead; Pembroke, No. 73, Glen Cove; Primrose, No. 569, Hicksville; Protection, No. 151, Roslyn; Rockville Centre, No. 279, Rockville Centre; Seaside, No. 260, Inwood; Seawanhaka, No. 670, Port Washington; Welfare, No. 695, Oyster Bay.

SUFFOLK.—Brookhaven, No. 80, Patchogue; Suffolk, No. 90, Sag Harbor; Sampwams, No. 104, Babylon; Sayville, No. 322, Sayville; Breslau, No. 524, Lindenhurst; Awixa, No. 574, Islip; Hampton, No. 575, East Hampton; Fire Island, No. 636, Bay Shore; New Point, No. 677, Amityville; Greenport, No. 179, Greenport; Southold, No. 373, Southold; Ellsworth, No. 449, Huntington; Roanoke, No. 462, Riverhead; Northport, No. 523, Northport; Port Jefferson, No. 627, Port Jefferson; Stony Brook, No. 730, Stony Brook.

Rebekah Lodges.—1st District, Mrs. Emma G. Downs, vice-president, Riverhead. Friendship, No. 70, Greenport; Suffolk, No. 132, Northport; Veritas, No. 167, Riverhead; Promise, No. 204, Southold; D. Meinen, No. 119, Lindenhurst.

Encampments: Queens—Ridgeley, No. 60, Flushing.

SUFFOLK.—Thomas W. Lister, D. D. G. P. Montauk, No. 56, Sag Harbor; Medole, No. 145, Greenport; Suffolk, No. 147, Bay Shore.

NASSAU—Mineola, No. 121, Hempstead.

The Knights of Pythias has a membership of some 2,000 on Long Island; the Ancient Order of United Workmen, 2,000; the American Legion of Honor, 1,400; Deutscher Order der Harugari, 1,200; Improved Order of Red Men, 2,000; Knights of Honor, 2,000. There are also many minor secret organizations with somewhat fantastic titles, such as the Knights of the Golden Eagle, Benevolent Order of Bufaloes, Knights of the Golden Star, Order of Good Fellows, which have small membership rolls, but devoted adherents. The Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks is possibly the

best known of all these minor organizations, and its only lodge in Brooklyn has a membership of close on to 500. It is a national society, has lodges scattered all over the country, and accomplishes a vast amount of practical good each year. A large proportion of its members belong to the theatrical profession, and some of their "high jinks" are redolent of the stage. Their ritual, we understand, is quite an elaborate affair, a compound of Freemasonry, Odd Fellowship, Forestry, and original with the brilliant, witty and warm-hearted men who are its moving spirits. The Brooklyn lodge has often come before the public, but generally in connection with some deserving case of charity or in the giving of elaborate funeral ceremonies over the remains of some well-known and much loved brother.

The Foresters of America have a membership throughout the country of about 180,000, the figures for Long Island being given as 20,000. Its lodges are termed courts, and the first established in America was that of Brooklyn. One curious point in connection with the early history of this organization is that the struggle of the Revolution of 1776 was fought over again in its ranks—on a small scale, of course. The order is an English one, and the early American courts were ruled from that country, accepted its dictates and squared their business in accordance with regulations made. After a time, naturally, some dissatisfaction arose over this method, and the dissatisfaction steadily increased in extent as the American membership waxed strong. At length the crisis came, brought about, as in the case of the Civil war, with the negro as the issue. The English courts were open to men of all races, so far as their by-laws went, while the American subsidiary high court inserted the word "white" among the necessary qualifications for membership. This discrimination found no favor in England, and after due consideration a message was sent across the sea ordering the American high court to remove the offending and restricting word. But the representatives of the courts who made up that

body thought they understood what was wanted in America much better than possibly could any body of men in England, and they returned a courteous message to that effect and explained the situation in detail. But it was the old story over again. The English supreme court was obdurate: its mandate must be obeyed; the offending word must go. So the Americans at their next meeting, held at Minneapolis August 15, 1889, quietly listened to the rather imperiously worded message from the old country, and after a long discussion decided to become independent. That edict at once took effect, and a courteous notice of the change was the only answer sent across the sea. The order in America at that time had 31,000 members; after two years of independence it had risen to 77,790.

In another chapter we have referred to the Grand Army of the Republic, but in this place may refer to it in its aspect as a benevolent, social and fraternal organization. There are in all 33 posts in Kings county, 6 in Queens borough, 3 in Nassau county, and 9 in Suffolk county, with a membership approximated at 4,300. The posts are:

BROOKLYN.—Abel Smith and First Long Island, No. 435, 441 Bedford avenue; B. F. Middleton, No. 500, 879 Gates avenue; Barbara Frietchie, No. 11, 116 Calver street; Brooklyn City, No. 233, 1630 Fulton street; C. D. McKenzie, No. 399, 315 Washington street; Charles H. Burtes, No. 185, 1028-30 Gates avenue; Cushing, No. 231, 9th street and 6th avenue; Devins, No. 148, 12 Nevins street; Erastus T. Tefft, No. 355, 153 Pierrepont street; Frank Head, No. 16, 258 Court street; Germain Metternich, No. 122, 241 Floyd street; George Hunstman, No. 50, 17th Sep. Co.; George C. Strong, No. 534, Gates and Nostrand avenues; George Ricard, No. 362, 164 Clymer street; G. K. Warren, No. 286, 1810 Fulton street; Harry Lee, No. 21, 897 Gates avenue; H. W. Beecher, No. 620, 105 Downing street; Henry W. Slocum Post, No. 28, Amphion Building; James A. Perry, No. 89, Bedford avenue, near DeKalb; James H. Kerswill, No. 149, Snyder's Hall, Grant street; L. M. Hamilton, No. 152, Atlantic avenue and Vermont street; McPherson-Doane,

No. 499, Johnston Building; Mansfield, No. 35, 208 Grand street; Moses F. Odell, No. 443, 153 Pierrepont street; N. S. Ford, No. 161, Avenue G and 95th street; Rankin, No. 10, 407 Bridge street; S. F. Dupont, No. 187, 211 Montrose avenue; Thatford, No. 3, Prospect Hall, Prospect avenue; T. T. Dakin, No. 206, 156 Broadway; U. S. Grant, No. 327, Johnston Building; W. W. Stephenson, No. 669, 165 Clermont avenue; Winchester, No. 197, 972 Fulton street; William L. Garrison, No. 207, 118 Myrtle avenue.

QUEENS.—Adam Wirth, No. 451, College Point, 12th street and 4th avenue; Alfred M. Wood, No. 368, Jamaica, Fraternity Hall; Benjamin Ringold, No. 283, Long Island City, County Court House; John Corning, No. 636, Oceanus, Hall Engine Company, No. 2; Robert J. Marks, No. 560, Elmhurst, G. A. R. Hall; Sheridan, No. 628, Long Island City, Columbia Hall.

NASSAU.—Daniel L. Downing, No. 365, Glen Cove, Roberts Hall; Elijah Ward, No. 654, Roslyn I. O. O. F. Hall; Moses A. Baldwin, No. 544, Hempstead, Carman's Hall.

SUFFOLK.—Edwin Rose, No. 274, Sag Harbor, G. A. R. Hall; Edw. Huntley, No. 353, Greenport, G. A. R. Hall; Henry A. Barnum, No. 656, Riverhead, G. A. R. Hall; H. B. Knickerbocker, No. 643, Amityville, Wood's Hall; J. C. Walters, No. 641, Huntington, G. A. R. Hall; Lewis O. Conklin, No. 627, Port Jefferson, Athena Hall; Richard J. Clark, No. 210, Patchogue, Arcanum Hall; Samuel Acklerly, No. 426, Northport, G. A. R. Hall; William Gurney, No. 538, Bay Shore, Odd Fellows' Hall.

There is no doubt that it was the action taken in 1875 by the Brooklyn Grand Army posts that led to the successful development of the long agitated plan to erect a soldiers' home at Bath, New York. Reference to this has already been made, but further details may here be appropriate. At a meeting of the State Encampment the matter was urged by the Brooklyn veterans, and in the course of a warm address in advocacy of the scheme Corporal Tanner pledged Brooklyn to contribute \$10,000 toward the project. Where he was to get the money or how he was to get it had not been considered by the impulsive corporal, but

he made the offer anyway and trusted the future. In this instance it did not fail him. On returning to Brooklyn he and several other veterans laid the whole matter before Henry Ward Beecher and secured that lion-hearted preacher's hearty espousal of the pledge. A meeting was in course of time called in the Academy of Music, and Beecher delivered one of his stirring patriotic orations, which aroused the enthusiasm of the vast audience to the highest pitch. The subscription was at once launched, and ere long Tanner's pledge was more than redeemed, for \$14,000 was raised. The good work thus splendidly begun was at once carried to full fruition with his usual good-hearted impulsiveness by Corporal Tanner. He traversed the State from New York to Niagara, making speeches and appeals, and securing the promise of aid from every member of the Legislature he could reach. The result was the erection of a splendid home where disabled and poverty-stricken veterans were enabled to await the setting of their sun with temporal comforts and freedom from the harassments incidental to the usual struggle for existence, a struggle that is so hard when accompanied by old age and physical ailments.

Corporal Tanner in 1877 was appointed Collector of Taxes for the city of Brooklyn, and won an enviable record in that office. As Pension Commissioner he removed to Washington, and would have made an equal success in that office, but an unguarded remark about the surplus and a determination to attend to the pension demands of the old soldiers with undue liberality led to a hue and cry against his methods and in time led to his retirement. For years he was one of the most prominent citizens of Brooklyn, and during these years was very frequently the theme of newspaper comment.

Corporal James Tanner was born at Richmondville, Schoharie county, New York, April 4, 1844. His early life was spent on a farm, and his educational privileges were those of the district school. While a mere boy he

taught in an adjoining district, manifesting the thoroughness and force of will that have since characterized him, and proving to anxious friends that he was fully competent for the work. After a few months' experience as teacher, at the outbreak of the war, although not yet eighteen, he enlisted as private in Company C, Eighty-seventh New York Volunteers. He was soon made corporal, with assurance of further promotion, had not a terrible disaster befallen him. His regiment was hurried to the front, and, with Kearny's Division, participated in the Peninsular campaign, and the battles of Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, the siege of Yorktown, the seven days' fight before Richmond, and at Malvern Hill. After leaving the Peninsula, the Eighty-seventh fought at Warrentown, Bristow Station and Manassas Junction.

Corporal Tanner served with his regiment through all the engagements, until wounded at the second battle of Bull Run. There the Eighty-seventh held the extreme right of our line, with Stonewall Jackson's corps in front. During a terrific shelling from the enemy, the men were lying down, when a fragment from a bursting shell completely severed the corporal's right leg at the ankle, and shattered the left so badly as to make amputation necessary. Carried from the field, he lost consciousness, and on recovering found that the surgeons had amputated both legs, four inches below the knee. Meanwhile the Union lines had been broken and the army was in full retreat. The corporal's comrades were forced to leave him at a farm house, where the rebel army, in close pursuit, soon made him prisoner with the other wounded. Paroled after ten days, he was taken to Fairfax Seminary Hospital; then commenced his long struggle for life, with all the odds against him—but a good constitution and a determination to live, brought him through the doubtful days. Through all his suffering his courage never left him; and when he began to improve his first thought was, "What can I do, thus crippled, to hold my place

among men?" His manhood and ambition could not brook the thought that he must take an inferior place because of his misfortune. After treatment in the hospital, and recuperation at his old home in Schoharie county, he was able to walk about on artificial limbs. He was appointed deputy doorkeeper in the Assembly, and subsequently held various positions under the Legislature, which he filled with great credit. He then accepted a clerkship in the War Department, under Secretary Stanton. On the night of President Lincoln's assassination he was employed to take notes of the first official evidence, and then stood by the dying bed of the President. In 1866 he returned to Schoharie county, and studied law with Judge William C. Lamont. The same year he married a daughter of Alfred C. White, of Jefferson, New York, and they now have four beautiful children, two daughters and two sons. He was admitted to the bar in 1869. Soon after he was appointed to a place in the New York Custom House and removed to Brooklyn. On competitive examination he rose to the position of deputy collector, and served four years under Gen. Chester A. Arthur. He was the Republican nominee for Assembly in 1871, in the Fourth Kings county district, but was counted out in the election frauds of that year. Nominated for register by the Republicans in 1876, when the Democratic county majority was nineteen thousand, he was defeated by less than two thousand.

Corporal Tanner is an impressive public speaker, and his public utterances, especially when the theme is the late war or the claims of the veterans to the most liberal treatment at the hands of the country, are marked by that strenuousness which our present honored chief magistrate so thoroughly commends. During recent years Mr. Tanner has gradually retired into private life and there his many fine qualities of head and heart keep closely around him troops of warm and devoted friends.

There is no doubt that U. S. Grant Post is the most popular and best known of the Grand

Army organizations in Brooklyn. It came into prominence, as has been already stated in this work, in connection with its services at the obsequies of General Grant, and since then it has been particularly active in all that pertains to the welfare of the old soldier. It has among its members many who are prominent in civil life. Rankin Post is still a popular organization, but indeed all of the posts of Long Island might so be described, although year by year their numbers are wearing down. But that contingency is in the nature of things and something to be expected.

The national societies which are linked together by a secret ritual are representative, to mention them in the order of their strength, of Ireland, England and Scotland. The Ancient Order of Hibernians has something like 3,000 members on the island. The Order of Sons of St. George has nine lodges in Brooklyn, with a total membership of about 800. The first of these lodges—Anglo-Saxon—was instituted Sept. 22, 1879. The lodge meetings as a rule are well attended and present many attractive features. In connection with the jubilee of the late Queen of England, in 1887, these societies took a prominent part in the proceedings held in New York and Erastina, Staten Island, by which the British residents of the Metropolitan area showed their respect for the venerated British sovereign. The Scottish organization, Clan McDonald, has 200 members, a ritual which is as full of historical data as could be crowded into it, and any amount of enthusiasm for "the land of the mountain and the flood." It is part of an order that has branches throughout the United States and has a graded scheme of life assurance which pays between \$250 and \$2,000. It is based on a scheme thoughtfully prepared by Mr. Duncan MacInnes, one of the actuaries in the New York comptroller's office, and is believed to be the most perfect and abiding scheme of assessment insurance in force. As to that, of course time is the best and most potent judge.

Of what may be described as the fashion-

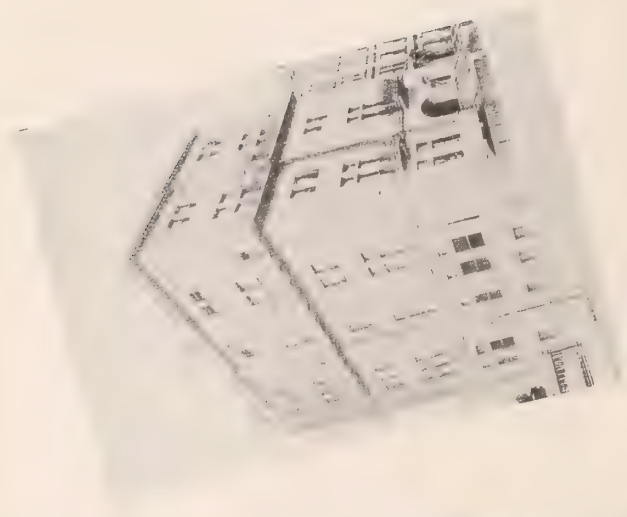
able social clubs Brooklyn possesses an abundance and several of them have acquired a measure at least of national fame. Most of them are fitted up with a degree of luxuriousness that is equal to any of the London and Continental clubs about which so much is written. They are housed in roomy mansions fitted up with every imaginable convenience for social pleasure or the amenities of every day life; their cuisine is of the highest order and liveried attendants are ready to carry out the wishes of the members and their friends. Reading rooms, smoking rooms, cafes, billiard rooms, grill rooms and even expensive examples of the artist's studio or sculptor's altier adorn what are considered the public rooms, while the highest skill of the architect, the decorator, the upholsterer and the furniture designer is employed in every apartment and hall. In such clubs the whole domestic machinery moves with a noiseless precision that bespeaks the most watchful discipline, and the service throughout from the imported chef to the colored girl who peels potatoes is the best that can be secured. In such a retreat a man can enjoy the real luxuries of life to a degree that independent effort could hardly attain. He can find himself in a veritable palace, be waited on as though he was attended by the genii we used to read about in connection with Aladdin and his lamp, and have his aesthetic notions cultivated by everything that is bright, beautiful and costly but withal in the most exquisite taste. He can revel in fine paintings, delightful upholstery harmonies, exquisitely cooked chops, and carpets which are themselves poems in construction and design. Fifty years ago no crowned king had more real comfort, more perfect service, more to delight the eye and soothe the cares and the vexations of the busy, toiling, exasperating world than the Brooklynite who has the entree to one of these genuine modern palaces. Then, too, he has what kings did not always have according to history and may not have at the present day—although we must confess that our acquaintance

with modern kings is of the slightest extent—a circle of congenial friends, friends having tastes similar to his own and whose conversation, whose hobbies, whose pleasures, whose politics, whose fads, whose aspirations are more or less his or have his interest and his sympathy. Most of the Brooklyn clubs, even the most exclusive, have this community of tastes as their foundation, and a sure and sturdy foundation it has amply proved to be. In the Union League Club, for instance, politics is the crowning feature; in the Aurora Grata it is Free Masonry; in the Germania it is the Fatherland.

Some of these social organizations are housed in buildings especially erected by or for them. The Hamilton Club possesses a building which at once impresses one with an idea of internal comfort, while the remarkably beautiful statue of Alexander Hamilton, Washington's finance minister and one of the founders of the Republic, shows that the members think on higher matters than mere personal ease. The Union League's mansion is Romanesque in style and constructed of brick and brownstone with medallions of Lincoln and Grant showing prominently in the facade, and an eagle and a bear form conspicuous features in the adornment. But the main attraction to visitors is the magnificent equestrian statue of General Grant which stands in front of the building and was unveiled in 1896. The sculptor was William Ordway Partridge. The pedestal of Quincy granite rises to a height of 16 feet and the statue itself is 15 feet 8 inches in height, so the whole assumes heroic proportions. General Grant's son—General F. D. Grant—General Horace Porter and others competent to speak have declared it to be the best portrait of the hero of the War of the Rebellion yet set up in any public place. The Montauk Club house is a most ornate structure with a Greek frieze on the upper part of its front as well as several other architectural features well worthy of careful study. The home of the Riding and Driving Club was built



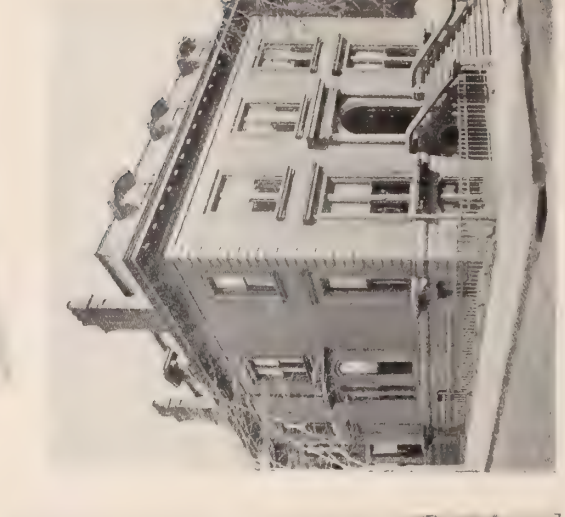
UNION LEAGUE.
MONTAUK CLUB.



HAMILTON CLUB.
HANOVER CLUB.



LINCOLN CLUB.
BROOKLYN CLUB.



for convenience rather than to develop any architectural ideals, but its internal arrangements are perfect. The Germania Club house, on the other hand, arrests the attention of every one passing it on Schermerhorn street by the rich Florentine design of its facade, a design that has apparently been copied, in many respects, in several other club buildings as well as private homes in the borough. Then many clubs have altered and adopted a private house—sometimes have taken two adjoining buildings and thrown them practically into one and so secured an abundance of elbow room even though the outward appearance does not give one any idea of the splendor of the interior. Perhaps the best specimen of an old dwelling developed into a modern club is the home of the Midwood at Flatbush, a grand old Colonial structure with great white columns in front, a style of mansion that used to be common in the neighborhood of both New York and Brooklyn, but of which few specimens are now left.

One of the oldest, if not the oldest, of the aristocratic social organizations in Brooklyn is the Hamilton Club. It was originally intended to be a purely literary club and was so described in its first designation, the Young Men's Literary Association of Brooklyn, but the suggestion of calling it after the author of the *Federalist*—or the principal author—seemed to cover better the idea of the founders, and within a year the title was changed to the Hamilton Literary Club. It certainly gathered in its fold all the leading literary lights and reading men of Brooklyn at that date—Henry C. Murphy, Alden T. Spooner, Henry Silliman, John H. Raymond, Edgar J. Bartow, Abiel L. Low, Joseph Howard, Francis P. Sanford, D. N. Schoonmaker, Josiah C. Dow, Thomas G. King, John T. Howan, George W. Dow, Horace H. Dow and John Jewett, among others. For many years the literary feature was fully maintained as the peculiar field of the club and its annual lecture course constituted an important detail in the social calendar of the city. In fact the association seems latterly

to have developed into simply a lecture-giving body, and with the decadence of that form of public instruction—that tribune of the people, as the lecture platform was titled in the palmy days of Wendell Phillips, Lloyd Garrison, Henry Ward Beecher and a score of others—Hamilton Literary Association appears to have lost its usefulness and its place in the public regard. In 1882 a reorganization was effected or rather the old association was practically wiped out and in its stead the Hamilton Club was evolved, a new organization with the members, library, pictures and other accessories of the old one, but better equipped with rules and regulations calculated to meet modern social wants and aspirations. It was a success from the first. In 1884 it was established in its present home, erected to meet its wants, at a cost exceeding \$100,000. It is quite an aristocratic organization, that is to say, its membership is rather exclusive, and is itself regarded as a social honor. Its art gallery is a particularly choice one and includes Huntington's famous painting of "The Republican Court," which was formerly one of the features of the wonderful collection in the mansion of A. T. Stewart, Manhattan's merchant prince. Another possession that is highly treasured is a Sevres vase presented to the club by the French Government as an acknowledgment of the hospitalities showered upon M. Bartholdi and his compatriots when the statue of Liberty was being placed in position on Bedlow's Island.

The present officers are: President, James McKeen; secretary, William A. Taylor; treasurer, Theodore B. Brown.

The Brooklyn Club, organized in 1865, was for many years the most fashionable of the social organizations of Brooklyn, and has entertained in its rooms such guests as General Grant, Admiral Farragut, General Sherman, Grand Duke Alexis of Russia, Professor Tyndall, the world-renowned scientist, and Henry M. Stanley, the New York reporter who discovered Dr. Livingston in the recesses of the Dark Continent, and who has since become a

social lion in London, having been knighted by the late Queen Victoria, elected to membership in the House of Commons and marrying into a family noted for brains as well as for social prominence. The club was housed very soon after its organization in a building at the corner of Clinton and Pierrepont streets. In 1883 an adjoining house was bought and three years later the two buildings were practically reconstructed and the present commodious clubhouse was the result. For twenty years—from 1870 to 1890—the club was presided over by Mr. B. D. Silliman, one of the most representative of the citizens of Brooklyn and of whom an extended biography is given in another chapter of this work. He was succeeded by Mr. David M. Stone, editor of the *New York Journal of Commerce*, who served for but a single term and was followed by General Benjamin F. Tracy, then probably the most active member of the legal fraternity in the city.

Although his energies are now directed elsewhere and he is regarded as belonging rather to Manhattan than to Brooklyn, General Tracy played too prominent a part in the affairs of the latter borough—was for too many years identified with its progress, not to be regarded with affectionate pride by every citizen of the present day. He was born at Owego, New York, April 26, 1830, and studied law in an office in that village. In 1851 he was admitted to the bar and three years later was elected District Attorney of Tioga County on the Whig ticket, although the constituency was strongly Democratic, and at the expiration of his term he was re-elected in spite of a determined effort to bring about his defeat. In 1861 he was elected a member of Assembly, and during his short service at Albany won golden opinions for his common-sense views on all topics, his short, clear-cut, pithy speeches and his devotion to the advancement of public business. He served but one term and then returned to his law practice in Owego. But he was not long permitted to devote himself to his private business. The war cloud had settled

on the land and the Nation was engaged in the most gigantic of modern armed conflicts. Regarding his war record one authority writes as follows:

“In the spring of 1862, still remembered as a period of alarm to the friends of the Union cause, new levies were imperative for the Federal army, and Governor Morgan at once appointed a committee in each Senatorial district to organize a general recruiting effort. Tracy was one of the committee for Broome, Tioga and Tompkins counties. He accepted the charge, and, in addition to general service as a member, he received a commission from the Governor, and personally recruited two regiments, the One Hundred and Ninth and the One Hundred and Thirty-seventh, making his headquarters in Binghamton. The active work was completed in thirty days, and Tracy was appointed colonel of the One Hundred and Ninth, with which he reported to General Wool, at Baltimore, in whose department it remained until transferred to that of Washington. In the spring of 1864 the regiment was ordered to join the Ninth (Burnside) Corps, then a part of Grant’s advance. Colonel Tracy led his regiment with great gallantry in the battle of the Wilderness, when its loss, on Friday, May 6th, was upwards of eighty killed and wounded. Near the close of the fighting on that day, he fell exhausted, and was carried from the field. Urged by the staff of his commanding officer to go to hospital, he refused, but resumed the lead of his regiment, and held it through three days of the fighting at Spotsylvania, where he completely broke down, and was compelled to surrender the command to the lieutenant-colonel.

“As soon as he became satisfied that months must elapse before he could again join the army, and not liking military service in a hospital, he tendered his resignation, and came North to recruit his health. In the following September, without solicitation on his part, Secretary Stanton tendered him the appointment of Colonel of the One Hundred and

Twenty-seventh United States Colored Troops, which he accepted. Subsequently, he was ordered to the command of the military post at Elmira, including the prison camp and the draft rendezvous for Western New York. This was a large and important command. In the prison camp there were at one time as many as 10,000 prisoners.

"The treatment of prisoners of war was long a subject of extended and bitter controversy between the North and the South. That there was much suffering and great mortality at Elmira is not denied, because these are inseparable from large military prisons; but that either can be attributed to cruelty or neglect is positively denied. Nothing that could be reasonably done to alleviate the suffering of the prisoners was omitted. The very best of food was supplied in large quantities, while the barracks were large and commodious—nearly all new and built expressly for the prisoners; the accommodations and supplies furnished them being in all respects the same as those supplied to the Federal troops on guard, and to the volunteers received at the draft rendezvous."

There are a class of men who achieve distinction that seem to resemble the mechanic who forms his calculations and fashions his machinery upon the abstract considerations of the mechanical powers, making no allowance for friction, the resistance of the air, or strength of his materials. This was not the case with Judge Tracy. He exerts a quick, careful examination of every circumstance by which he is surrounded, even though sprung upon him instantaneously. Perhaps nothing in his life more strongly illustrates his ability to overcome sudden difficulties than the triumphant manner in which he repelled the dastardly attack made by Hill, of Georgia, in the House of Representatives, March, 1876, upon the treatment of rebel prisoners at Elmira. It was virtually an attack upon General Tracy, and took place in a once celebrated debate between Hill and Blaine, in which the former, incensed by the representations of the latter of the hor-

rors at Andersonville, referred bitterly to the Elmira camp, charging upon its management cruelties quite equal to those recorded of the Southern prisons.

General Tracy was at home at this time, and it was by mere accident that he learned the nature of the debate in progress at Washington, and of General Hill's charges. This occurred at a time when the General was deeply engaged in an absorbing and important matter. One morning, while rapidly glancing over a New York daily, his attention was arrested by the heading of a column, as follows: "Hill, of Georgia, on the Elmira Prison; he alleges that the rebel prisoners confined in it during the war were treated with great inhumanity," etc. After reading it carefully, burning with indignation, he hastened to telegraph Mr. Platt, member from the Twenty-eighth district, a full, well-worded reply to Hill. This reached Mr. Platt in the House, while the debate on the subject of the prison at Elmira was still in progress. Immediately arising to a question of privilege, he sent the remarkable telegram to the clerk, by whom it was read to the House. It commanded profound silence, falling upon Hill and his Southern friends like a sudden clap of thunder. Hardly was the reading concluded when Hon. C. C. Walker, a member from the Elmira district, an intense Democrat, sprang to his feet, and, in a few glowing and effectual words, fully sustained General Tracy's telegram; alleging that, to his own knowledge, every word of it was true. This ended the debate, completely refuting the charges made by Hill.

On resuming civil life General Tracy became a member of the New York law firm of Benedict, Burr & Benedict, and so continued until appointed United States District Attorney for the Eastern District of New York. This office he resigned in 1873 and entered upon the practice of law in Brooklyn, quickly becoming recognized as one of the leaders of the local bar and one of the most active workers in the local ranks of the Republican party.

In 1881 he was offered the nomination for the mayoralty but declined in favor of Mr. Seth Low.

Before the close of that year, however, he was appointed to a seat on the bench of the Court of Appeals, which he held for over a year, and then resumed private practice, and along with Mr. Silas B. Dutcher was the recognized leader of the Republican forces in the city. In 1889 General Tracy entered the cabinet of President Harrison as Secretary of the Navy, and with his acceptance of that office his connection with Brooklyn may be said to have closed. His career in the Navy Department at Washington won for him the heartiest commendation of all classes of citizens, regardless of party affiliations and he is credited with being the real builder of the "New Navy," which rendered the country such heroic and brilliant service when the time came to practically test its value and efficiency. His residence at the Capital, however, was clouded by a terrible affliction. In a fire which destroyed his residence his wife and his youngest daughter were burned to death, and for several days his own condition was regarded as critical. He calmly resumed his official cares, apparently finding relief from his own sorrows in the rush of business, and continued in the official harness to the close of his term. Then he left Washington, entered upon the practice of law in Manhattan, and so continues. He is active in politics still, figured prominently as the regular Republican candidate in the first contest for the mayoralty of the consolidated city, but the campaign was made on his part more in compliance with a sense of party duty rather than from any personal desire to again hold public office. His law practice, one of the most important on Manhattan Island, fully occupies all his working hours.

The officers are: President, Edward M. Grout; vice-president, Edward F. Patchen; secretary, Henry Earle; treasurer, William C. Smith.

The largest and the best generally known

of the social organizations of Brooklyn is the Union League Club, which was organized in 1887 as the Twenty-third Ward Republican Club, but changed its name to its present designation a year later when it was incorporated. The present officers are: President, Hibbert B. Masters; first vice-president, David Thornton; second vice-president, Horace M. Carleton; treasurer, Thomas Bishop; and secretary, James R. Ross.

The Union League is essentially a political organization, Republican to the backbone and the head centre of the party in the "City of Churches." There is no getting away from this or any desire to get away from it. The constitution of the club plainly declares that its aims are "To promote social intercourse, to advance the cause of good government by awakening a political interest in citizens, to overcome existing indifference in the discharge of political duties, and to perform such other work as may best conserve the welfare of the Republican party." The club was a numerical and financial success from the first and in 1891 took possession of its present palatial edifice on Bedford avenue and Dean street at a cost, including site and fittings, of some \$215,000. Architecturally the building is an ornament to the city, and the front is designed after the Romanesque style, of brick and terra cotta, and is exceedingly chaste throughout, while the four stories which rise over the line of the sidewalk are surmounted by a French roof, giving really the accommodation of an additional floor and the whole is surmounted by a neat cupola. The main entrance is most imposing in effect, and throughout the entire interior the appointments are the very best that taste or luxury could suggest and money could buy. On its roll of membership are 850 names—thereby representative of every professional and business interest in the city, and all adherents of the Republican party with an intensity that is only varied by their natural temperaments.

The Lincoln Club was originally a purely Republican institution, although nowadays its

association with party politics has been abandoned and its purely social features are its main attraction. In fact many of the most prominent Democrats in Brooklyn have been and are on its roll of membership and in its boards of officers and managers. The Lincoln was organized in 1878 by a number of citizens of Republican proclivities in politics, and for a year or so held very pleasant meetings according to a sort of house-to-house arrangement. By the close of a year a knowledge of these meetings and their many social pleasures and their spread of good fellowship and acquaintanceship led to so many requests for membership that the originators were induced to widen the scope of their association, to abandon its political proclivities and to look out for a house in which the affairs of the club might be carried on and its social features developed to the utmost. Two adjoining frame buildings were purchased on Putnam avenue and there the club took up its headquarters and speedily grew in popularity as well as in financial and numerical strength. This was shown in 1889 when, after "tinkering and coopering," at a considerable expense, the original frame buildings, from time to time to meet the needs of the institution, it was determined to pull them down and erect on their site a structure that would meet all the passing and prospective wants of the association and be another architectural landmark in the city. The result was the erection of the present Lincoln Club house, a magnificent four-story structure in a style developed from the early French Renaissance—one of those buildings which attract the eye and rivet the attention even in a "wilderness of brick, stone and square holes for windows," as a writer once gave as the characteristic feature of American streets. Internally it is fitted up in a style in keeping, not with all the comforts of home, but with all the attractions and luxuries of clubdom, and that means it is in every sense of the word a modern palace.

The Lincoln Club is officered as follows:

President, H. F. Williams; secretary, Jay Stone; treasurer, A. T. Stoutenburgh.

The Hanover Club has a history in many respects akin to that of the Lincoln Club in that whatever political proclivities it may have had in its earlier days have long been abandoned and it is purely devoted to social purposes. It is essentially an Eastern District organization, and its inception was due to the desire of several of the wealthier residents of that section of the old city which would fill the same purposes in their own home district that the older clubs did nearer the old Ferry. The matter was discussed for quite a considerable time and then the old Hawley Mansion, an ideal building for club purposes, was put on the market and the desire to secure it for the proposed organization led to action being taken in the matter. A meeting was called, signed by Andrew D. Baird, Frederick W. Wurster, Charles Cooper, William C. Bryant, Henry Seibert, Charles H. Russell, A. C. Hallam, E. B. Havens, Warren E. Smith, H. G. Taylor, Charles Fox, B. E. Veitch, J. A. Peterkin, Millard F. Smith, James A. Sperry and Louis Conrad, who may be regarded as the "founders and fathers" of the organization. As a result of the call quite a large and representative meeting was held, when it was determined to organize the Hanover Club and take up an option which had been secured on the Hawley Mansion. This arrangement was carried out, a set of by-laws for the government of the new organization was drawn up and possession was taken of the mansion. The first Board of Directors was made up of Andrew D. Baird, Millard F. Smith, John Cartledge, J. Adolph Mollenhauer, William Donald, Benjamin D. Bacon, William C. Bryant, E. B. Havens, Mathew Dean, Henry Hasler, Edwin Knowles, Frederick W. Wurster, J. Henry Diek, A. C. Hallam and H. F. Gunnison. The first business was to "fix up" the splendid old mansion, to remodel it for the uses of the organization and this involved not only a thorough overhauling of its interior arrangements and a

complete outfit in the way of furniture and decoration, but also the building of a large extension. However, all this was satisfactorily accomplished and on January 19, 1901, the club house was formally opened to the members and their friends. Since then the progress of the organization has been as rapid as its most enthusiastic member could desire. It has a membership of 400, and among those who figure on its roll are many of the most prominent residents of Brooklyn—prominent in professional, business, political and social life, the very class of men who by their energies are making Brooklyn advance with rapid strides to the foremost position among the group of boroughs which constitute the Greater New York.

The president is Mr. James A. Sperry; the treasurer, Mr. Andrew D. Baird, and the secretary, Mr. Alvah Miller.

The Montauk Club is the last of the social clubs which we present here as being fully and fairly representative of the higher club life of Brooklyn. Its home on Eighth avenue, Lincoln Place and the Park Plaza, occupies one of the finest sites in Brooklyn and its building is among the most attractive in the city. The structure in design is after the Venetian, and every detail is carried out with the most exquisite taste. The edifice stands out in bold relief, as it were, even in its rather aristocratic surroundings, and while there can be no doubt of its semi-public character—its size at once determines that even to the most casual observer—there is never any question as to its being a home, and a home whose owners possess taste and wealth. This itself is a satisfactory point, for we have seen club houses—expensive concerns so far as their cost was concerned and pretty exclusive as to their membership—which would puzzle even an experienced man about town to say off-hand whether they were hospitals, police stations or insurance headquarters. The Montauk Club house cost, including site, \$202,680, while its furnishings and fittings involved a further outlay

of about \$30,000. It was opened for the use of members in May, 1891, the club at that time having been some two years in existence. The limit of membership—500—has long been reached and is easily maintained—a long waiting list being one of the features of the story of the club. Its management is of the most generous order, its appointments throughout are of the most perfect description and everything it does, every hospitality it extends, is characterized by lavishness, but at the same time everything that savors of what might be called the mere ostentation of wealth—the barbarity of richness—is strictly tabooed. It is a progressive and thoroughly representative organization of Brooklyn's most prominent citizens, and has thoroughly deserved the almost national degree of importance it has achieved during the comparatively brief period of its existence.

Its officers are: President, William H. Henry; treasurer, T. Plunkett; and secretary, J. Meyers.

Among the other leading social clubs are the following:

Aldine Association—111 Fifth avenue, organized 1889. 500 members. H. B. Dominick, president; C. L. Patton, secretary, 43 East Tenth street.

Brooklyn Barnard Club—132 Remsen street. Organized 1896. 350 members. Hon. John A. Taylor, chairman; Mrs. Thomas R. French, secretary, 150 Joralemon street.

Brooklyn Schnorrer—237 Johnson avenue. Organized 1886. 50 members (limited). William Herthe, president; Henry Bauer, secretary, 46 Bartlett street.

Bushwick Club—Bushwick avenue and Hart street. Organized 1890. 400 members. Charles Graham, president; Louis Burger, secretary, 465 Pulaski street; William Batterman, treasurer.

Carleton Club—Sixth avenue, corner St. Marks. Organized 1881. 141 members. B. J. York, president; Henry Bodevin, secretary, 426 First street.

Church Club of the Diocese of Long Island.—24 Clinton street, Brooklyn. Organized 1894. 375 members. Francis H. Miller, president; Sutherland R. Haxtun, secretary.

Cortelyou—Bedford, near Newkirk avenue. Organized 1896. 275 members. William H. Hooper, president; C. A. Bahn, secretary, 199 East 28th street, Flatbush. Has athletic and cycle clubs and Dramatic Society.

Crescent—25-29 Clinton street. Country house, Shore road and 83d street, Bay Ridge. 1,700 members. William H. Ford, president; A. Wallace Higgins, secretary, 99 Cedar street, Manhattan; Henry L. Langhaar, treasurer.

Dyker Heights Club—86th street and 13th avenue. Organized 1898. 100 members. Theodore H. Bailey, president; Karl B. Sackmann, secretary; Chas. A. Seaver, treasurer.

Eastern District Citizens' Association—Organized 1899. 200 members. John Feierabend, president; Nicholas Bonnländer, secretary, 1477 DeKalb avenue; annual election, April.

Excelsior—Clinton and Livingston streets. Organized 1854. 100 members. George W. Chauncey, president; J. A. Ayres, treasurer; William De Vigne, secretary, 72 South Elliott place.

Farmers'—603 Grand street. Organized 1883. 100 members. John J. Jennings, president; F. Dahlbender, treasurer; Anton Dahlbender, secretary.

Germania Social Club—Schermerhorn street. Organized 1860. 250 members. Dr. R. Schmeltzer, president, 206 Lincoln place; A. Buchner, secretary, 32 7th avenue.

Homard Club—Organized 1899. 100 members. Club house, 6th avenue and 9th street. N. Heyman, president; C. Henry, secretary, 375 9th street.

Home of the City of Brooklyn—654 Grand street. Organized 1889. 100 members. R. C. Knipe, president; A. D. Canty, treasurer; A. J. Shefers, secretary.

Keramos Club—Manhattan avenue and Milton street. 100 members (limited). George R. McLaughlin, president, 82 Norman avenue; Miss A. Gorman, secretary.

Knickerbocker Field Club—Tennis Court and East 18th street. Organized 1891. 225 members. Walter Moore, president; C. F. Bond, treasurer; H. R. Ham, secretary.

Lexington Social Club—225 Lewis avenue. Edward J. Farrell, president; James J. Eagan, secretary, 771 Gates avenue; James Mulvenan, treasurer.

Lincoln Social Club—405 Bridge street. Organized 1895. 50 members. M. E. Walker, president; J. J. Bavenizer, secretary, 93 Clermont avenue; L. W. Herald, treasurer.

Metropolitan—174 Prince street. Organized 1896. 90 members. H. A. Williamson, president; A. H. Ferguson, secretary, 569 Union street.

Midwood—Flatbush, near Caton avenue. 145 members. William A. A. Brown, president; W. Joel Moran, treasurer; R. G. Newbegin, secretary, 147 Midwood street.

Millard Club—335 Hoyt street. Organized 1895. 110 members. Andrew I. Cunan, president; David A. Whamond, corresponding secretary, 31 Douglass street; Ed. A. Cantwell, treasurer.

Nonpareil—Henry Perera, president; Matthew Ryan, treasurer; Thomas Ryan, secretary.

Original Fourteen Club—7 Myrtle avenue. Organized 1890. 617 members. Robert T. Brown, president; William Grady, secretary, 249 Jay street; Thomas Donlon, treasurer.

Oxford—Lafayette avenue, corner South Oxford street. Incorporated 1880. 300 members. F. Joseph Vernon, president; Charles Martin Camp, secretary, 109 Lafayette avenue; Frederick Worth, treasurer.

Prospect Club—Prospect Heights. Organized 1897. 42 members. Mrs. Margaret E. Bretz, president; Miss J. A. Jordan, recording secretary, 873 Union street.

Ridge—2d avenue and 72d street. Organized 1893. 95 members. Frederick C. Cocheu, president; Frank F. Koehler, secretary, 270 53d street.

Saratoga Social Club—2042 Fulton street. Organized 1895. 155 members. William Chambers, president; Claus Kuck, treasurer; Dennis Haggerty, secretary, 1098 Herkimer street.

St. Patrick Society of Brooklyn—4 and 5 Court square. Organized 1850. 230 members. William J. Carr, president; Daniel Kelly, secretary; John T. Breen, treasurer, 379 State street.

Shinnecock Club—High and Bridge streets. Organized in 1900. 102 members. John T. Hayes, President; M. J. Burke, treasurer; Charles J. Hayes, secretary, 155 Bridge street.

Trinity Club—Hall Memorial House. Organized 1897. 110 members. A. M. Griffith, president, 72 Hoyt street; A. R. Davison, treasurer; D. Hughes, secretary, 61 Canton street.

Twelfth Ward Home Club—420 Van Brunt street. Organized 1898. 100 members. Daniel J. Lynch, president; August H. Guthes, treasurer; Claus H. Lührsen, secretary, 424 Van Brunt street.

Unity—482 Franklin avenue. Organized 1896. 160 members. Moses J. Harris, president; Joseph Manne, secretary, 482 Franklin avenue; Ferdinand Seligman, treasurer.

Washington Club—172 Prospect place. Organized 1898. 350 members. Thomas R. Farrell, president; Marriott T. Dowden, secretary, 837 Bergen street.

The sporting clubs of Long Island form even a more conspicuous feature of its pleasure circles than even the social organizations. From the beginning of its history, almost, Long Island has been regarded as a sort of sportsman's paradise and we have seen how the early English governors encouraged horse-racing on Hempstead plains. There doubtless was a variety of sporting clubs on Long Island in earlier times, for sportsmen are sociable beings and half the pleasure of sport is the gathering around the evening campfire and the swapping of wondrous stories of adventure, escape, and the weight of fish, the length of antlers or the size of a bag. But sportsmen do not—or rather did not—keep written records, and there is very little reliable information in existence concerning the doings of these early associations of sportsmen. There was, however, one great difference between them and the present generation. The fashion used to be to kill indiscriminately and without any regard to the laws for the protection of the game; rather in open defiance of them; and a hunter who went forth with a gun banged away at every animal he saw and his prowess was measured by the number of animals he sent to their death. Nowadays there are no better assistants to the game wardens than the members of the various sporting clubs, and indeed it has been said, and said with truth, that the preservation of game on Long Island is due more to the protection afforded by the wide domains of many of the sportsmen's organizations and to the intelligent appreciation of the necessity of close seasons and a rigid application of the laws.

The first of the sporting clubs of which we have any precise record was the Long Island

Shooting Club. Of that organization and several other early ones Mr. Abel Crook, president of the Fountain Gun Club, wrote as follows:

The Long Island Shooting Club was the pioneer organization of the gun clubs of this country. Originally it was simply an association of gentlemen who had enjoyed trap shooting in England, their mother country, and wished to perpetuate a pastime which furnished them the practice of wing shooting at comparatively small expenditure of time and money.

It was in existence prior to 1842. Robert Carter was its secretary as early as 1847, when its roll consisted of about 25 members, including such "old time sportsmen" as Harry Russell, Samuel Parker, John Thompson, John Maitland, Frank Palmer, Humphrey Harts-horn and Robert Robinson. Their place of meeting was "The Woodcock," then kept by Harry Russell and afterwards by Palmer, in Adams street, near Willoughby, on about the site of the present iron works of Howell & Saxtan. All business meetings were at the call of the president, and were held about three or four times a year, to arrange for a trap shoot which depended upon the possibility of obtaining a sufficient supply of wild pigeons, which were generally used for that purpose. They had no regular club ground but held contests in the vicinity of the old Oil Cloth factory, near the present Sackett street boulevard, which was then in commons, and also at Sutton's Prospect Hill Hotel, then known as "Sam Vunk's," and located on about the site of the Distributing Reservoir, at the entrance to Prospect Park. The novelty of these "shoots" attracted such a crowd of spectators that the members ceased to hold them in the old places, and adopted the system of chartering a tug-boat and sailing to some of the islands near the city, where they could enjoy themselves without interruption.

Their last excursion of this character was to Riker's Island, in 1850, when 700 birds were

killed. At that time no regular trap rules had been adopted, except such as had been in vogue in England for at least a century. One ground trap only was used, which the club imported from England.

All disputes were settled by submission to Bell's Life, and frequently large sums were wagered on the result of the decision, which would remain undetermined pending the six weeks' delay necessary to receipt of the paper from London containing the "answer." The amount of shot allowed was one and a half ounce. Soon after the Riker's Island meeting the club moved its headquarters to the tavern corner of Main and York streets, kept by Russell & Stainsby, and still later it followed Harry Russell to his place, then in Fulton street, about opposite York street. In 1855 the club was reorganized and its membership was limited to 24 members, and applicants for membership were required to await a vacancy.

About 1868 a further reorganization was effected, and the limit of membership increased to fifty, and, for the first time, a formal constitution and by-laws and shooting rules were adopted. Its officers, then elected, were: William M. Parks, president; Robert Robinson, first vice-president; Charles W. Rodnan, second vice-president; Captain Sealy, treasurer; J. Foulke, Jr., secretary. Its executive committee were: Frank H. Palmer, Benjamin L. DeForest, Robert Robinson, Dr. S. W. Bridges and George S. Lanphear.

Shooting grounds were selected at John I. Snediker's, on the old Jamaica plank road. The club then included among its members Benjamin W. West, George Lorillard, Howard Jaffray, and many other men of means and sporting tastes, who united in rendering each meeting at the trap peculiarly festive.

A dinner on the grounds was a feature of those days, and was served frequently at the expense of the losing team of those selected at the commencement of the contest. In 1874 another reorganization was had. Again, in 1876, an ineffectual attempt was made to in-

corporate the club under the club act of 1875. A certificate was filed in Queens county, which stated its object to be "the enforcement of all laws and ordinances against the killing and sale of game out of season and the encouragement of a genuine sportsmanlike spirit among its members." The limit of membership was removed, but a unanimous vote was required to elect a member.

Finally, on June 3, 1876, the club filed with the Secretary of State a copy of a further certificate of incorporation, which had been filed in Kings County Clerk's office on May 24, 1876, and the incorporation became complete. This final certificate states as the "object" of the organization, "Protection and preservation of game and the shooting of pigeons from traps; to practice and improve in the use of the gun in shooting birds on the wing, for which suitable grounds have been provided in the county of Queens."

The number of the directors was certified to be seven, "who, with the president, vice-president, secretary and treasurer, shall form an executive committee." It has about 50 members. Officers: Theodore Linington, president; John Akhurst, vice-president; John H. Chasmar, secretary; Robert Robinson, treasurer.

The Phoenix Gun Club, as its name denotes, sprung from the ashes of its original association, the Blue Rock Pigeon Club, which was organized February 4, 1866.

The "Blue Rock" founders were: A. H. Glahn, Adam Glahn, M. McMahon, Owen Larkin, Austin Appleyard, Samuel McGaw and John H. Chasmar. Its first meeting was at the residence of A. H. Glahn, Flushing avenue, near Classon avenue, Brooklyn; but subsequently the meetings were at the residence of Austin Appleyard, at the corner of High and Bridge streets. It was limited to fourteen members. The officers were held peculiarly to the performance of their duties by the imposition of a fine of one dollar for any neglect. Non-attendance at a

business meeting subjected a member to a fine of twenty-five cents; and if not present at roll call, ten cents was imposed as a penalty. Profanity and personalities were especially abhorred and payment of fifty cents for such indulgence was exacted. The trap contests were monthly, and the trophy for the winner was a sterling silver cup, thirteen inches in height, in a glass case; which was retained until won by some other member at a subsequent contest.

In May, 1871, the "Blue Rocks" dissolved, leaving the cup with its then holder, Austin Appleyard. On June 7, 1872, it was reorganized under its present name at a meeting in the "Abbey," on Fulton street, nearly opposite Flatbush avenue, with Austin Appleyard, Edward H. Madison, Warren Birdseye, John H. Chasmar, Daniel McGaw and John Akhurst as its members. Its limit of membership is ten.

The rigid official and individual discipline has been retained. Each member contributes \$1.50 monthly until a sufficient sum has been received to provide the birds necessary for a shooting contest and for refreshments upon the ground. About four "shoots" are held each year. All shooting is by teams of equal numbers, one side being captained by the president and the other by the vice-president; the shooters being selected by lot and all being experts. Each contestant shoots at fifteen birds. Sometimes a single trap, with use of one barrel of the gun, is provided, but usually the contest is with five traps and both barrels may be used. The losing side furnishes a supper for the participants upon the close of the day's sport. The club gold badge is awarded to the individual making the best score of the day; but is returnable to the club at the next contest. The conservative but social character thus maintained has rendered membership so desirable that vacancies seldom occur. Its present officers and members are: Samuel McGaw, president; Reuben Midmer, vice-president; John H. Chasmar, secretary; John Akhurst, treasurer; William Baulsir, James Smith, Moses Chichester, D. H. Freligh, George Jamer, Austin Appleyard.

The Brooklyn Gun Club.—This voluntary organization dates from July 24, 1872, and was reorganized July 31, 1877. As a pigeon-shooting club it has had on its roster the names of many well-known citizens of the city whose name it bears. Gradually its members have deserted the ranks and sought enrollment in more active bodies. At one time, some years since, it secured a victory over the Riverton Gun Club, then known as the Social Gun and Rifle Club of Philadelphia. Its policy has been exceedingly conservative.

At its annual meeting, in January, 1884, it was decided that the club should devote its energies and funds to stocking with quail certain farms in the vicinity of Smithtown, Long Island, for the purpose of affording its members facilities for field sports, and that trap shooting should be abandoned by it. Last year the club tried the experiment of re-stocking, with gratifying results. Its membership is about twenty-five. Its officers are: Henry F. Aten, president; John L. Logan, vice-president; John E. McEwen, secretary; Isaac C. Monroe, treasurer.

The Fountain Gun Club has appropriately been styled the "banner club." It was the creation of necessity. Prior to 1876 membership of gun clubs was practically limited to expert manipulators of fowling pieces; and trap shooting was confined chiefly to sweepstakes or contests for cups, which represented the aggregate amounts paid by the contestants as entrance money. Skillful shots formed "combinations," whereby they agreed to divide winnings and share expenses. Novices soon became discouraged.

In May, 1876, a few of these tyros met at "Brown's," on the old Coney Island road, and inaugurated a shoot in an adjoining potato patch. The surroundings were "truly rooral." Refreshments were at hand on a table, composed of a board supported by two barrels. One ground trap was provided, and as each participant "toed the mark," the others formed a line beside him and the luckless bird became the target for their united efforts. If killed,

it was scored to the shooter who had been called to the front. Many "goose eggs" appear on these original records.

Soon those pastimes occurred at regular intervals of one month and the "lunch" gave way to a regular dinner which each member attended; and toasts and responses, having special reference to the incident of the day, were intermingled with songs and chorus. Under such fostering influences the members became closely united, and an *esprit du corps* prevailed to an extent far greater than in any of the rival clubs. Members of the older organizations applied for admission to the young society; and, having outgrown its swaddling clothes, it was incorporated May 10, 1877. Its objects are specified in the articles of incorporation to be as follows: "The particular business and object of such society shall be the enforcement of all laws and ordinances against killing and sale of game out of season; the prevention of unlawful and inhumane destruction of game; the improvement in the use of the gun and the fostering of a genuine social and sportsmanlike spirit among its members."

The leading sporting associations of the present day, on Long Island, include:

Rockaway Point Rod and Gun (The Cuckoos)—Shooting grounds, Rockaway Park, Rockaway Beach, Long Island. Membership limited to 12. C. Glier, president; J. Fleming, vice-president; Edw. F. Bourke, treasurer; E. J. Meyer, secretary, 257 Flatbush avenue, Brooklyn.

Steinway Gun—911 Steinway avenue, Long Island City. Organized 1890. 10 members. Jacob Schumann, captain; Charles Knueppel, secretary, 911 Steinway avenue.

RICHMOND.

Lehner's Rifle Club—92 Canal street, Stapleton, Staten Island. Organized 1889. 12 members. F. Winsch, president; August Meyer, treasurer; Carl Seidel, secretary.

West New Brighton Rifle Club—Broadway and Cary avenue. Organized 1897. 15 members. John F. Smith, president; Jacob F.

Seeger, treasurer; Robert R. Westbrook, secretary, 11 South street, West New Brighton, Staten Island.

QUEENS.

College Point Schuetzen Company—College Point. Organized 1884. 24 members. William Frese, president; Emil Vouarb, secretary, College Point.

Bay Shore Gun—Bay Shore, Long Island. Organized 1892. 20 members (limited). Grounds extend from Bay Shore to Islip. Stocked with quail. John H. Vail, president; J. R. Howell, secretary and treasurer, Bay Shore, Long Island.

Bellport Gun—Bellport, Long Island. Incorporated April, 1895. Dr. H. A. Mandeville, president; Alfred Wagstaff, secretary, 27-29 Madison avenue, Manhattan.

Brooklyn, E. D., Fishing Club—260 Humboldt street. Organized 1885. 25 members. Meets first Saturday. G. Gillen, president; H. Bachmann, secretary, 637 Bushwick avenue.

Carman's River—Brookhaven, Long Island. Peter B. Acker, president; Henry C. Wilson, treasurer; Alfred Wagstaff, secretary, 27-29 Madison avenue, Manhattan.

Carteret Gun Club—Garden City, Long Island. Organized 1883. 100 members (limited). Henry A. Gildersleeve, president; Walter H. Mead, secretary-treasurer, 67 Wall street, Manhattan.

Cedar Island—Cedar Island, near Babylon, Long Island. Organized 1892. Stephen C. Duryea, president; Carl S. Duryea, secretary, Babylon, Long Island.

Coram Gun Club—Coram, Long Island. Organized 1897. 16 members. T. J. Smith, president; A. S. Pittit, secretary, Fairground, Long Island.

Flushing Fishing—Anchorage, Hicks Beach, Flushing, Long Island. Organized 1896. 75 members. J. B. Schmelzel, president; George W. Pople, secretary, 183 Lincoln street, Flushing. Annual election, March.

Four Jacks Fishing Club—Rockaway Beach. Organized 1896. 150 members. R. H. Sherman, president; Max Berger, treasurer; Charles Watson, secretary, 1198 Myrtle avenue, Brooklyn.

Freeport Gun—Freeport, Long Island. Organized 1892. 37 members. T. D. Carman, president; E. A. Dorlon, secretary.

Gilbert Rod and Gun Club of Brooklyn—Club House, Amityville, Long Island. Organ-

ized 1894. 30 members. J. G. Tuthill, president; George W. Barnard, secretary, 63 Leonard street, Manhattan; W. K. Gilbert, treasurer.

Huntington Gun Club—Huntington, Long Island. Organized 1899. 30 members. Douglass Conklin, president; Lewis B. Smith, secretary. First and third Tuesdays.

Glenwood Fishing—Hempstead Harbor, Long Island. Organized 1882. 20 members. G. H. K. White, president; F. A. Brockway, secretary, 167 Willoughby avenue, Brooklyn; Russell Wheeler, treasurer.

Lexington Fishing Club—Goose Creek, Jamaica Bay. Organized 1891. 12 members. J. E. McElroy, president; A. McElroy, treasurer; G. V. Beckwith, secretary, Belmont avenue, near Crystal street, Brooklyn.

Long Island Meadow Club—19 West 30th street, Manhattan. 50 members. Dr. Edward Bradley, president; Burton Loomis, treasurer; Charles B. Bradford, secretary, Richmond Hill, Long Island.

Meadow Brook Hunt Club—Westbury, Long Island. Organized 1881. 100 members. William Jay, president; Egerton L. Winthrop, Jr., secretary and treasurer, 48 Wall street.

Medicus Rod and Gun Club—Headquarters, Interstate Park. Incorporated 1900. 50 members. Dr. A. A. Webber, president; Dr. C. E. Kemble, secretary, 905 Myrtle avenue, Brooklyn. Annual election, April.

Oceanic Rod and Gun Club—Rockaway Park, Rockaway Beach. Shoots clay birds October to April. L. H. Shortemeier, president; J. H. W. Fleming, secretary and treasurer, 19 East 28th street, Manhattan.

Old Farmers' Light Guard of Queens, Long Island—Organized 1877. 30 members. J. Krumenaecker, president; H. A. Herrmann, treasurer; Jacob Jacobs, secretary, Elmont, Long Island.

Olympic—Bay Shore, Long Island. Organized 1840. 50 members. James Kempster, president; James F. Wenman, secretary, 12 Old Slip, Manhattan; James J. McKenna, treasurer.

Pastime Fishing Club—Brooklyn. Timothy J. Dady, president; Peter Toy, secretary; William D. Watson, treasurer.

Patchogue Gun Club—Patchogue, Long Island. Organized 1898. 32 members. A. H. Carman, president; Warren U. Weeks, secretary.

Prospect Gun—Meadow Island, Jones' Inlet, Freeport, Long Island. Incorporated 1882.

35 members. Meetings at 518 Fulton street, Brooklyn. W. J. La Roche, president; Charles E. Hill, secretary, 141 Broadway, Manhattan.

Rassapreague—Smithtown, Long Island. Organized 1894. Has club house and over 100 acres on Nissequogue river stocked with game. Limited to 8 members. H. L. Terrell, secretary, 749 5th avenue, Manhattan. G. B. Schley, treasurer.

Richmond Borough Gun Club—Dubois Heights, Staten Island. Organized November, 1898. 17 members. William H. Allen, president; William J. Alston, secretary, Box 15, Castleton Corners, Staten Island.

Ridgewood Gun Club—Ridgewood Park, Long Island. Organized 1889. 25 members. Quaz Martin, president; A. Newburger, secretary, 1235 Hancock street, Brooklyn.

Riverhead Rifle Club—Riverhead, Long Island. Organized 1899. 25 members. S. Terry Hudson, President; William F. Flanagan, secretary treasurer.

Robins Island—Peconic Bay, Long Island. Organized and incorporated 1881. Owns Robins Island, buildings and wharves. Annual meeting in February. Eugene A. Hoffman, president; W. H. Force, secretary, 78 Front street, Manhattan.

Rockaway Beach Schuetzen Corps—Organized 1893. 50 members. George Gross, captain; George Griepenkerl, secretary.

Rockaway Hunting—Cedarhurst, Long Island. Organized 1882. 160 members. Annual meeting in March. George C. Rand, president; Newbold T. Lawrence, secretary, 51 Liberty street, Manhattan.

Rod and Gun Club (The)—Hempstead, Long Island. Organized 1898. 15 members. W. K. Bedell, president; George H. Baukney, secretary.

Southampton Sportsmen—Southampton, Long Island. Organized 1879. E. H. Moeran, president; Charles H. Coster, secretary and treasurer, 27 West 19th street, Manhattan.

Southside Sportsman's—Oakdale, Long Island. Organized 1866. Membership 100. Annual meeting in March. George P. Slade, president; F. L. Hall, secretary.

Stereo Fishing—Canarsie, Brooklyn. Organized 1883. 26 members. A. H. Mahr, president; W. J. Hilton, secretary and treasurer, 435 2d avenue, Brooklyn.

Wa Wa Yanda Fishing Club—Cap Tree Island, Great South Bay. Organized May 13, 1878. 75 members. Charles A. Stadler, president; S. Popper, secretary, 260 West 93d street, Manhattan.

Wyandanch Smithtown, Long Island. Organized 1872. 45 members. Annual meeting second Tuesday in January. John L. Hill, president; G. Walter, secretary, 45 Maiden Lane, Manhattan.

It may vary the round of the sporting and country clubs by referring here to another class of organizations which promises to grow in number and importance as time passes on and history adds, let us hope, to the honors, dignity and influence of these United States. We refer to the patriotic and commemorative organizations, chief of which, of course, in point of numbers, is the Grand Army of the Republic, which has already been referred to. Time was when the only one of such societies that existed was that of the Cincinnati, organized in 1783, but now they can be numbered by the score and run all the way from organizations of descendants of those who came over in the "Mayflower" and "Descendants of Colonial Governors" to the "Society of the Puerto Rican Expedition." Long Island has a share of such associations, but not, it seems to us anything like a full share. There is the "Colonial Daughters of the Seventeenth Century," of which Mrs. H. P. Halsey is President and Miss R. I. Halsey is Secretary, and which has ninety members, all of whom can trace their descent for at least two centuries. "The Society of Old Brooklynites," which has one hundred and seventy members, has Mr. Edward W. Cooper as its President and C. L. Young as its Secretary. It has accomplished a vast amount of good in preserving the memories of Brooklyn of long ago, and its monthly meetings in the Hall of Records are, as a general rule, well attended; the "St. Nicholas Society of Nassau Island," of which Mr. Tunis G. Bergen is President and Mr. W. T. Lane, Secretary, has a membership of some 300 and has proved a most vigorous and useful auxiliary to the organizations whose purpose is to gather and preserve the records of by-gone days in Long Island.

Brooklyn is the headquarters for the

society of "Prison Ship Boys—Children of the American Revolution," and the "Prison Ship Martyr Monument Association of the United States," both of which refer, of course, to the martyrs of the Wallabout. It is also the headquarters of the "Patriotic League of the Revolution," organized in 1884 to collect relics of the great conflict, and of the "Society of Settlers and Defenders of America," established in 1899. The purpose of this last organization is "to stimulate historical research, to publish patriotic manuscripts, to locate and protect historic sites, to collect colonial records, and to aid in the erection of libraries, museums, etc." It will be seen from this that the society has quite an extensive field of operations and must cover in its work almost every corner of the thirteen original states. Its membership is confined to those descended from a pioneer settler, a colonial resident or a Revolutionary patriot. Its President-General is Mr. W. L. Carter and Mr. G. B. Winthrop holds the office of Secretary.

The war with Spain, in Brooklyn met with as unqualified a degree of moral support as did the war for the Union, but somehow it did not arouse anything like the same excitement. Volunteering was brisk while it lasted, and Camp Black at Hempstead was for a time one of the military depots of the country, giving rise in Brooklyn, often, to scenes that recalled the Civil War days to the memory of the old residents. Then, too, the Navy Yard was the center of particular activity and as the scene of the building of "the Maine," the vessel whose destruction by a hidden torpedo in Havana Harbor led indirectly to the conflict, it was often visited by curious throngs. It is not our purpose here even to summarize the events of that conflict, which resulted in Uncle Sam acquiring new lands across the sea and taking on his honored shoulders new responsibilities and cares, but it may be said that the military spirit of Brooklyn showed itself, during its continuance, to be as potent as when "the first gun fired at Fort Sumter aroused the world," as the orators used to put

it. The record won by the Forty-seventh Regiment in Puerto Rico, and indeed all through its service, was in every way creditable to its own history and to the good name of Brooklyn, and as much at least may be said of Troop C and the Second Signal Corps. There were, it must be admitted, some disagreeable incidents in connection with other commands, but these arose from a misunderstanding on minor points rather than from any desire not to perform the duty of a soldier. In the war which freed Cuba and added Puerto Rico and the Philippines to the territory of the United States, Brooklyn contributed her full share, faithfully and loyally. In view of this it seems strange that Brooklyn should not have at least one Spanish-American War commemorative society, but that is a want which it is expected will ere long be supplied.

It is hard to tell how many clubs the bicycle gave rise to, some of them quite fashionable in their reservations and restrictions, but the fad has somehow passed over and the more expensive automobile has displaced interest in the humble and ever ready wheel. Boating clubs flourish on Long Island so numerous that possibly no complete record of them has ever been made, and many have only a brief existence, sometimes lasting only over a single season. Baseball and athletic organizations likewise are a plenty in every township, and their records are a part of the local story that often forms a leading theme for village gossip the whole year round.

One class of associations deserves more particular mention because of the good they accomplish in promoting social and family life as well as in developing in a pleasant way the resources of the territory in which they are located. That is the class known as country clubs, a class that is increasing steadily year after year, and is destined to continue to increase as life in the cities becomes more strenuous, more intense. The most prominent of these organizations within our scope is the

Long Island Country Club, which was organized in 1886. It owns 1,250 acres of land at Eastport and holds an additional 5,000 acres under lease, all of which are stocked with game and rigidly reserved. It has an ample club house and cottages for the use of its members, and year out and year in really performs a work that not only is attractive to its own large membership, but is really of public benefit by preserving intact so much of Long Island's old hunting grounds and keeping them well stocked in spite of the army of pot-hunters which yearly prowl around its fences.

Its trout ponds are generally fully stocked, and altogether membership in this organization is, as a New York merchant, who in his early days had been "raised" on a farm, once expressed it, "one of the delights of life." Its officers are: Dr. H. G. Preston, President; Otto Magnus, Vice-President; Ward Williams, Treasurer; James P. Philip, Secretary, 26 Court street, Brooklyn.

The other country clubs include:

Lawrence Club—Lawrence, Nassau county, Long Island. Organized 1892. 60 members. F. B. Lord, president; George Hewlett, secretary, 101 Wall street, Manhattan.

Maidstone—Easthampton, Long Island, Everett Herrick, president; Preston B. Spring, treasurer; S. T. Skidmore, secretary, 71 West 50th street, Manhattan.

Marine and Field—Bath Beach, Long Island. Organized and incorporated 1885. Annual meeting, second Tuesday in January. 400 members. William H. Garrison, president; George H. Usher, Jr., secretary, 253 Broadway, Manhattan.

Meadow Club, of Southampton—Southampton, Long Island. Henry E. Howland, president; Edward W. Humphreys, vice-president; Charles R. Henderson, secretary; Robert Olyphant, treasurer.

Ocean Country Club—Far Rockaway, Long Island. Organized 1900. Limited to 75 members. B. J. Einstein, president; S. Bier, secretary; C. Scheurer, treasurer.

Quogue Field Country—Quogue, Long Island. Dr. S. F. Morris, president; Orison B. Smith, 59 Frankfort street, Manhattan, secretary; Albert Van Wyck, treasurer.

Royal Arcanum Outing Club—Gravesend Beach. Winter quarters, Saengerbund Hall. Organized 1897. 125 members. John T. Ryan, president; John H. Petersen, secretary. 291 Pearl street, Brooklyn.

Smithtown Outing Club—St. James, Long Island. Organized 1896. 40 members. P. H. Butler, president; M. Blydenburgh, secretary, Smithtown Branch.

Westhampton Country—Westhampton Beach, Long Island. Organized 1890. Aaron P. Whitehead, president; Dr. W. B. Clark, secretary, 50 East 31st street Manhattan.

Akin to the country clubs are the riding and driving clubs, the principal of which are:

Bay Ridge Drivers' Club—C. W. Boberts, president; J. J. Lynch, secretary; F. Jacobus, treasurer.

Brooklyn—Rides Wednesday evenings, Bedford avenue, corner Atlantic. Membership, 20. A. Wierl, president; Ph. Corell, vice-president; William Bruorton, secretary, 394 Degraw street; Charles M. Heid, treasurer.

Parkway Driving Club—Boulevard and Kings Highway. Organized 1899. 300 members. Francis D. Creamer, president; William C. Allen, secretary and treasurer, P. O. Box 233, Brooklyn.

Pleasure Drivers' Association—Gilman's Hall, 1255 Bedford avenue. William M. Clark,

president; W. A. Carter, secretary, 72 Washington avenue, Parkville.

Riding and Driving Club of Brooklyn—Vanderbilt avenue and Prospect Park Plaza. William N. Dykman, president; E. H. Barnes, vice-president; Irving T. Bush, secretary; W. W. Walsh, treasurer.

Whip Club—Organized 1896, 25 members (limited). Hamilton H. Salmon, president; E. K. Austin, vice-president; G. Herbert Potter, secretary-treasurer; club house, Park Plaza.

The most noted of these organizations is the Riding and Driving Club of Brooklyn, which was organized in 1889. Its membership is limited to 400. Its building opened in the fall of 1891, and is one of the most commodious structures of its kind in the world. Architecturally its appearance betokens that beauty has been freely sacrificed to usefulness, and that in fact is also the main character of its interior accommodations. The main feature is the riding arena, 90 feet by 180 feet, and in the stalls 200 horses can be accommodated. The club was an exclusive organization at the beginning, and that exclusiveness it still retains, although in many respects it is the most generally popular of all the developments of Brooklyn's social life.





DITMAS HOMESTEAD.—FLATBUSH.

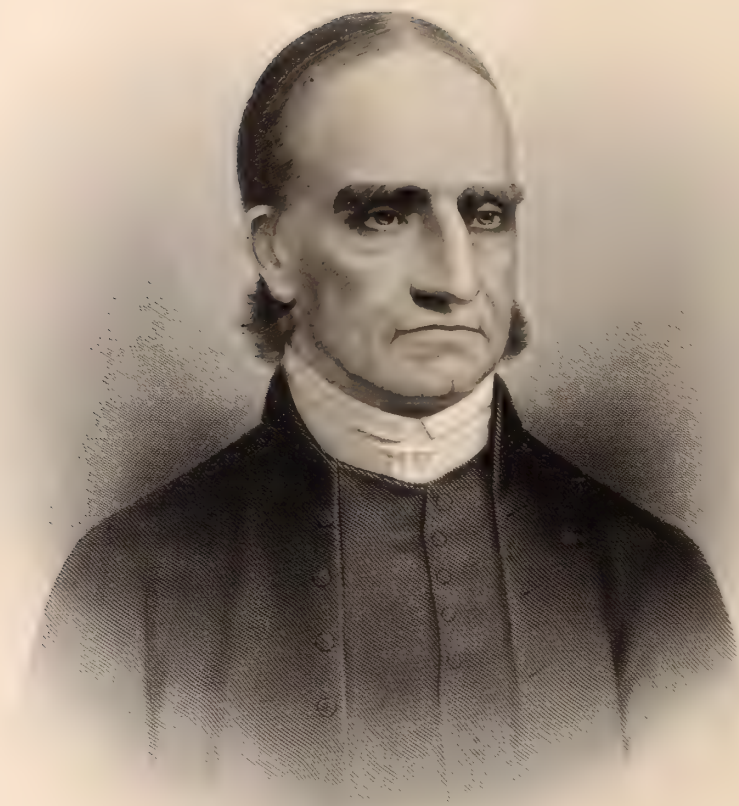
CHAPTER LVI.

OLD COUNTY FAMILIES.

FAMILY HISTORY AND STORY—PIONEERS, HEROES, MERCHANTS AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

PROBABLY no family name was or is better known throughout Queens or Nassau county than that of Hicks, mainly, of course, on account of the celebrity which one at least of their number attained in religious circles. Most of them were Quakers of the most devoted class, intolerant of the wiles and vanities of this wicked world, and yet it is singular that they should one and all take pride in tracing the family descent from a warring knight, Sir Ellis Hix, who, the genealogical writers tell us, was one of the most trusted warriors of the Black

Prince and was knighted for his valorous deeds by that hero in 1356 on the battle-field of Poitiers. How the descent is proved it is not easy to say, but it seems satisfactory to the genealogists and to the family, and in such circumstances no one has any right to dispute the correctness of the tree. Only it is singular that such vanity should find expression in the circumstance. The first of the family to settle in America was John Hicks, who settled at Roxbury, Massachusetts, and had a family of six sons and three daughters. Two of the sons, John and Stephen, crossed to Long



Elias Hicks

Island in 1642 and settled in Hempstead, of which he became quite an active citizen, and he also acquired some property in Flushing. Stephen bought from the Indians an extensive tract of land at Little Neck and settled there. One evil-minded biographer asserts that John's son Thomas in time also acquired a tract of land at Little Neck after, according to tradition, quite a rude dispossession of the Indians who had held the land in question. There is, however, it must be confessed, some dubiety about this matter, and probably it arose from the fact that some unregenerate aborigines returned and squatted on lands which Thomas had received from his uncle. The family biographers, as we shall see, speak in the highest terms of Thomas Hicks, as is right and proper when we recall the fact that he was the ancestor of the most distinguished member of the Society of Friends that this country has produced. Many of the descendants of the pioneer brothers settled over Long Island and are to be found there, notably in Flushing, Hempstead, Rockaway and Oyster Bay.

The following sketch of the family and of the wonderful and useful career of Elias Hicks was written by one of the family, Mr. Isaac Hicks:

John Hicks settled at Hempstead, and it is from him that the extensive family of the name on Long Island and in New York are descended. Having been educated at Oxford University, he was a man of intelligence, and his natural force of character made him a leader in the youthful colony. He took an active part in public affairs, and his name appears in most of the important transactions of the time.

John Hicks left an only son, Thomas, who seems to have inherited his father's intellectual vigor and force of character. He occupied a prominent position in public and social life, and filled many places of trust and honor, among others that of the first judge appointed for the county of Queens, an office which he held for many years.

In 1666 he obtained from Governor Nicolls a patent for 4,000 acres, including Great Neck and lands adjacent. Here he erected a fine mansion and introduced the English manorial style of living.

He was a remarkable man in many respects, retaining his mental and physical powers unimpaired to extreme old age. A paragraph in the *New York Postboy* of January 26, 1749, states that "he left behind him, of his own offspring, above three hundred children, grandchildren, great-grandchildren and great-great-grandchildren." He died in his one hundredth year, and left, among other children, a son Jacob, who was the grandfather of the subject of this sketch.

Elias Hicks was born at Rockaway, Long Island, March 19, 1748. His parents, John and Martha Hicks, were in moderate circumstances, but owned a good farm and comfortable home, where their children had excellent moral training, but otherwise received only a very limited education.

His father being a Quaker, although not a very active member of that society, Elias early imbibed the principles of that sect, but during his youth, while apprenticed to a carpenter, seemed inclined to prefer the gay society of the young people of the neighborhood. As he grew older he developed a vigorous and active intellect, and evinced a steadfast devotion to his convictions of right and duty which was ever one of the most marked elements in his character. He early took decided ground against the iniquity of human slavery, and later in life was among the pioneers in the cause of emancipation in the Society of Friends. This was one of the battles that he felt called upon to fight in the cause of truth and justice, and he devoted the energy and ability of a long life to the faithful championship of the oppressed negro. His father was an owner of slaves, and in his youth Elias plead long and earnestly until he effected their emancipation. Later in life, when the estate of his father-in-law, who was also a slave-

holder, came to be divided, he resolutely refused to accept for his own share any portion of the money which represented the value of the slaves, but used it to purchase their freedom, and ever after took upon himself the care and support of those thus liberated; even leaving a bequest in his will for their maintenance in old age.

In 1775 he became a public preacher in the Quaker Society, and from that time until his death, when over eighty years of age, he was a faithful and tireless worker in what he believed to be the cause of truth and righteousness. He was especially earnest in the conviction that service in the ministry should be free, and without the selfish stimulus of earthly reward, and to this end he was scrupulously careful when traveling in the service of the society, and on all other occasions, to defray his own expenses.

During the exciting years of the Revolutionary war he carefully maintained the peaceful principles of his sect, and such was the confidence reposed in his high character that he was permitted, in the exercise of his religious duties, to pass six times through the lines of the contending armies. He was scrupulously just in his business affairs, holding in all cases the dictates of conscience to be superior to the fallible laws of man.

In his dress, the furniture of his house, and all outward things, he carried to the extreme the principle of plainness and simplicity advocated by his society. In person he was erect, of commanding stature, and possessed in a remarkable degree that intangible attribute which we denominate "presence." In social life he was dignified but kind, a little reserved in manner, and giving the impression of great intellectual force, combined with a stern devotion to the convictions of duty. Affable in bearing, and inheriting the courtly politeness of the old school gentleman of the last century, his society was much sought by intelligent people of all classes, who were attracted by his rare and varied gifts as a conversationalist.

His public addresses were not adorned with flowers of rhetoric, nor polished by scholastic learning, but were plain, logical discourses, delivered with a natural earnestness and eloquence which seemed to inspire his audience with a measure of his own strong faith, and to carry them onward to conviction in the principles he advocated with such force and sincerity.

His religious views were somewhat in advance of those popular in his day, and were the result of individual thought and experience, uninfluenced by theological reading or metaphysical study. While accepting, in its broadest sense, the Quaker doctrine that the Almighty Spirit directly influences the hearts of all mankind, and that a strict adherence to the manifestations of duty, as revealed to each individual soul, is the foundation of all true religion, he was disposed to assign a less exalted place to the Bible, as God's specially revealed guide to man, and to maintain the Unitarian view of Christ's divinity. He took strong and decided ground against the old-time belief in Satan's personal existence and active work in the world, holding that the weaknesses and unbridled passions of human nature were the actual and only evil spirit against which mankind had to contend. In his view God was all love, and he rejected every doctrine or theory that impugned the absolute wisdom and goodness of the Divine Being, or His universal affection for all the human family, however indorsed by conclave or synod. As it was his nature to think out his conclusions for himself, and then to take bold and fearless ground in maintaining his convictions of right, his advanced views naturally met with the disapproval of many of the conservative members of his society, and after a few years of excited discussion the Quakers in America divided into two separate bodies, which have ever since remained distinct. Those who united with the sentiments of Elias were called Hicksite, and those opposed to him Orthodox, Quakers. The former are the most numerous about New York, Philadelphia and

Baltimore, while the latter compose the bulk of the society in the New England and Western States.

Like most celebrated men of strong will and earnest convictions of duty, Elias Hicks made a decided impression upon the religious thought of his time, although the circumscribed limits within which the customs and principles of the Quaker Society of that day confined his labors prevented his working in connection with other associations; thus restricting his efforts to the endeavor to promote a higher standard of Christian life among his own religious associates.

During his long and active career he was constantly traveling about the country, addressing the meetings of his society, and wherever he went large and deeply interested audiences gathered to greet him. His noble presence and eloquent words made lasting impressions upon his hearers, the memory of which was ever afterward cherished in affectionate hearts and has been handed down with a feeling of reverence to a later generation.

Elias Hicks died at Jericho, Long Island, on the 27th of February, 1830.

Many old families were represented among the residents of Flushing before it was opened up by modern improvements so as to develop into a metropolitan suburb. The Thornes could trace their descent to William Thorne, who settled on a neck of land which was called Thorne's Point until the name was supplanted by its modern designation of Willett's Point. The family were all intensely patriotic during the Revolution, and one died while a prisoner on a hulk in Wallabout Bay. The Cornell family claimed connection with Flushing from 1643, when Richard Cornell, a sturdy Quaker, settled within its bounds, and after a life of exceeding usefulness left a large family, by whom the name was retained in the front rank. The Lowerres were originally Huguenot refugees, and came to America in 1660 or thereabout, gradually developing into Quakers as time went on. These words might also be ap-

plied to the Embree family and to that of the Van Zandts.

Jamaica also furnishes the local historian with records of many old families, chief among whom is that of King. This family came to Long Island, where Richard King had long been a successful merchant. There his son, Rufus King, the most famous of the family, was born in 1755. He was educated at Harvard, where he was graduated in 1777, and then studied law in an office at Newburyport. His studies were somewhat disturbed by his becoming an aide to General Sullivan in that hero's Rhode Island expedition, but after its disastrous termination he was honorably discharged and returned to his desk. After he was admitted to the bar he rapidly won quite a prominent place, and as a member of the General Court of Massachusetts, to which he was elected, he was soon distinguished by the clear manner in which he handled all of the many pressing public questions then before that body. In 1784 he was elected to Congress, and was returned again in 1785 and 1786. In 1785 he offered his famous resolution that "there should be neither slavery nor involuntary service in any of the States described in the resolution of Congress in April, 1784, otherwise than in the punishment of crime, whereof the party shall have been personally guilty; and that this resolution shall be made an article of compact and remain a fundamental principle of the constitution between the original States and each of the States named in the said resolve." This was not pressed to a vote at the time, but the principle laid down was adopted in the ordinance of 1787 for the government of the Northwestern territory. In the movement to strengthen the Federal authority, which began to agitate the country almost as soon as peace was declared, Rufus King took a prominent part, his views being in favor of a strong central executive authority. He was recognized as one of the leaders, with Alexander Hamilton, of the Federalist party, and by voice and pen strove

mightily that its principles might prevail. In 1788 he was chosen Senator along with General Schuyler from New York, and was re-elected in 1795. But higher honors awaited him. He was offered the Secretaryship of State, and declined, but accepted the post of Minister to Great Britain. He left New York in 1796, and for eight years continued to represent his country at the court of St. James, although during the latter part of the time he was not in political sympathy with the then President (Jefferson). In 1804 he asked to be relieved, and when his successor was appointed returned to America and retired to a beautiful farm he had purchased at Jamaica. Thus began the long and honorable connection of his name with the good old village. There he mainly resided, keeping a watchful eye on public affairs, until 1813, when he was again elected to the United States Senate, and continued to serve until 1825, when he retired, as he hoped, to enjoy the leisure he had so richly earned. In reviewing his career in the Senate chamber we are unable to recall any policy advocated by him which was not wise, just and eminently patriotic, and his stanch opposition to slavery, to the indiscriminate sale of the public lands, sales often made upon credit and without guarantee, and in particular his opposition to the scheme of a political bank with a capital of \$50,000,000 pledged by the government, showed that, strong Federal as he was, he was unwilling to lend aid to a scheme which in a few years would either have become bankrupt itself or would have paralyzed and bankrupted the trade of the country. In 1825, at the earnest solicitation of President Adams, Rufus King again entered public life by accepting once more the post of Ambassador to Great Britain, but after a few months' residence in London his health failed and he was compelled to resign. He died in New York City April 29, 1827.

The mantle of Rufus King fell upon his eldest son, John Alsop King, who developed much of his father's public spirit and high

statesmanship. Educated for the bar, he had a taste of military experience during the war of 1812, when he served as a lieutenant in a cavalry regiment. He took up his residence near his father's home in Jamaica, and engaged in farming, but in 1819 was elected a member of the New York Assembly, where he soon became noted for his opposition to the policy and plans of De Witt Clinton, with the exception of that statesman's canal projects, which he heartily endorsed. He went to London with his father in 1825 as secretary of legation, and remained in charge of the affairs of the embassy from the date of his father's resignation until the arrival of the next appointee. In 1838 he was again returned to the Assembly, took part in 1855 in the convention at Syracuse at which the Republican party was born, and in 1856 was elected Governor of the State of New York. He declined a re-election, and when his term was over retired to his home in Jamaica, where he continued to reside until his death, in 1867. His widow survived until 1873, and then passed away, venerated by all who knew her for her kindly ways and Christian, beautiful life. Of her many benefactions to Grace Church, Jamaica, as well as the many gifts to that temple of other members of the King family, mention has already been made. The family is still prominently represented in public and commercial life, although their connection with Jamaica has almost become a memory.

A group of Jamaica families claim descent from Joris (or George) Jansen de Rapalje, who with his brother William came to America from Holland in 1623 in the same vessel with Peter Minuit, and from another brother, Antonie Jansen, who followed them in 1623. It is not certain that William ever married, but Joris founded the Wallabout family of Rapaljes, of whom we have spoken considerably, while Antonie, who married a Quakeress, had four sons, and they appear to have departed from the old Dutch custom in the way of transmitting surnames and stuck to the Jansen,

which in due process of time became transformed into plain Johnson and as such became prominent in Kings as well as in Queens county. A family genealogist thus describes the fortunes of the Jamaica Johnsons and their collateral branches:

Hendrick Jansen, the youngest son of Antonie, settled at Gravesend and married a Stilwell, by whom he had four sons: 1, Jan (John), who settled at Jamaica, Long Island; 2, Claes, who settled at Six Mile Run, New Jersey; 3, Barent, who settled at Gravesend; 4, William, who settled at Gravesend. Barent, the third son of Hendrick, was the father of the Rev. John B. Johnson, a noted preacher of the Reformed Dutch Church, who was settled first at Albany, New York, and afterward at Brooklyn, where he died in 1803. Rev. John B. Johnson had three children: 1, Maria L., who married the Rev. Evan M. Johnson, rector of St. James's Church, Newtown, Long Island, from 1814 to 1827, when he removed to St. John's Church, Brooklyn; 2, Rev. William L. Johnson, D. D., who from 1830 to the time of his death (1870) was rector of Grace Church, Jamaica, Long Island; 3, Rev. Samuel R. Johnson, D. D., who was rector at different times of several Episcopal churches, and professor in the Episcopal Theological Seminary, New York City. Hendrick's children changed the Holland name Jansen to the English name Johnson, yet the Holland name was retained for many years in the family records.

John Johnson, the oldest son of Hendrick, was born at Gravesend, Long Island, December 5, 1705. He married (September 23, 1732) Catalina Schenck, who was born May 7, 1705. They had seven children: 1, Maria, born August 11, 1733, married Douw Ditmars, of Jamaica; 2, Catalina, born August 15, 1735, remained unmarried; 3, Elizabeth, born November 21, 1737, married Abraham Ditmars, of Jamaica; 4, Barent, born April 2, 1740, married Anne Remsen; 5, Martin, born October 25, 1742, married Phebe Rapalje; 6, Catharine, born February 18, 1746, died in infancy;

7, Johannes, born July 25, 1748, died in infancy. John Johnson held office in the Reformed Dutch Church at Jamaica. He died March 27, 1776. His wife died October 5, 1774.

Martin Johnson, of Jamaica, born October 25, 1742, married (May 10, 1772) Phebe, daughter of George Rapelje, of New Lots. She was born February 25, 1754. Their children were: 1, Catalina, born May 14, 1773, married (November 5, 1791) John D. Ditmis, of Jamaica, and had children Martin, Dow I., John, Abraham, Phebe, Maria, Catalina and George; 2, Maria, born August 20, 1775, died in infancy; 3, Johannes (John), born February 27, 1777, died in infancy; 4, Maria, born May 10, 1778, married (November 30, 1798) Rem Suydam, of Newtown, and had children Phebe, Catalina, John, Maria, Nelly, Martin, Gitty, and George and Henry (twins); 5, Johannes (John), born September 26, 1780, died in infancy; 6, Martin, born March 14, 1782, died in infancy; 7, Phebe, born July 19, 1783, married (December 11, 1800) John I. Duryea, and had children Jane Ann, Maria, Alletta, Martin L., Sarah, Catalina and John I.; 8, Martin, born September 13, 1785, died in infancy; 9, Elizabeth, born January 25, 1788, married Willett Skidmore, and had children Phebe and Samuel; 10, Jannetie (Jane), born May 15, 1790, died in infancy; 11, Joris (George), born August 30, 1791, married (June 28, 1815) Catharine Snediker, and had children Martin G., Catharine and Phebe; 12, Johannes (John), born May 17, 1794, married (August 22, 1815) Maria Lott, and had children Martin L., Stephen, Phebe, Eldert, George, Maria Ann, Catalina, Henry, Jeremiah, Sarah, Ditmars and Catharine; 13, Jannetie (Jane), born February 22, 1797, died in infancy.

Martin Johnson, the grandfather of Martin G., died April 27, 1798. Phebe, his wife, died October 27, 1828.

Martin Johnson was earnest in the cause of independence, and was compelled to give

up the best part of his house to the British officers, who occupied it while their army was encamped at Jamaica. He and his family were greatly discommoded, but it was better to submit quietly than to object and perhaps suffer more. Martin Johnson was an active member and an elder of the Reformed Dutch Church, and one of the committee to repair the church edifice after the Revolutionary war, during which it was dismantled by the British soldiers. He was one of the contributors to the fund for founding Union Hall Academy. The first building was erected on the south side of Fulton street, where Herriman's brick row now stands, and was opened May 1, 1792. Here his sons George and John were educated, when Lewis E. A. Eigenbrodt, LL. D., was principal, which position he held from 1796 to 1828.

George Johnson, born August 30, 1791, married (June 28, 1815) Catharine Snediker who was born December 5, 1788. They had three children: 1, Martin G. Johnson, born April 26, 1816, married (May 31, 1859) Margaret T. Nostrand, who was born February 19, 1815—no children; 2, Catharine Johnson, born July 8, 1819, married (May 13, 1856) Elias J. Hendrickson, who was born August 10, 1812—no children; 3, Phebe Johnson, born January 4, 1824, married (June 19, 1854) George O. Ditmis (who was born July 22, 1818), and died December 27, 1866. James Hendrickson, the father of Elias J., was an elder and one of the pillars of the Reformed Dutch Church of Jamaica.

George O. and Phebe Ditmis had six children: 1, Catharine, born November 26, 1856; 2, Georgianna J., born May 5, 1859; 3, John D., born December 18, 1860; 4 and 5, Martin G. J. (born January 30, 1862, died February 18, 1878) and Margaret N., born January 30, 1862, died in infancy; 6, Caroline Maria, born November 9, 1863, died in infancy.

George Johnson, the father of Martin G., held at different times the town offices of su-

pervisor, commissioner of common schools, inspector of common schools, inspector of election, commissioner of highways and assessor. He was an elder in the Reformed Dutch Church of Jamaica, and one of its most liberal supporters. He died May 14, 1865. His wife died December 15, 1858.

A short genealogy of the Johnson family is as follows: Gaspard Colet de Rapalje, from France, married the daughter of Victor Antonie Jansen, in Holland, by whom he had two sons and a daughter Breckje, who married her cousin, Victor Honorius Jansen, who was the father of Abram, who was the father of Antonie, who was the father of Hendrick, who was the father of John, who was the father of Martin, who was the father of George, who was the father of Martin G.

THE SNEDIKER FAMILY AS CONNECTED WITH THE JOHNSON FAMILY.

Jan Snediker, the common ancestor of the Snediker family, came from Holland to this country as early as 1642, and was among the first settlers of Flatbush, and his name appears in the patent of New Lots, 1667; by his will (1670) he devised his land to his son Gerret. (New Lots was then part of the town of Flatbush.)

Gerret Snediker, of New Lots (son of Jan), married, first, Willemetje Vocks; second, Elstje Denyse; he died in 1694. Children: Jan of Jamaica, Margaret, Christian of Jamaica, Abraham, Isaac of New Lots, Sara, born 1683 (married Adrian Onderdonk); Gerret and Elstje.

Abraham Snediker, of New Lots (son of Gerret), born 1677, married and had children Abraham, Johannes, Gerret, Theodorus, Elizabeth, Altie and Sara.

Isaac Snediker, of New Lots (son of Gerret), born 1680, married Catryntje Janse; died in 1758. Children: Garret, Abraham, Antie, Sara, Isaac, Catryntje (born 1721, married

Douwé Dijnars), Jacob of New Lots, Femmetie (Phebe), and Elstje, born 1731.

John Snediker, of New Lots, married Neiltje, daughter of Johannes Lott, of Flatbush; she was born November 13, 1730. They had a son, Isaac I. (grandfather of Martin G. Johnson).

Isaac I. Snediker, of New Lots (son of John), born July 17, 1759, married Catharine, daughter of Jacob Rapelje, of Newtown. She was born January 18, 1760. They had four children: 1, Jacob, born May 18, 1787, died in infancy; 2, Catharine, born December 5, 1788 (the wife of George Johnson and mother of Martin G.), died December 15, 1858; 3, Nelly, born November 5, 1790, married (October 5, 1815) John E. Lott, of New Utrecht, Long Island (who was born December 16, 1789), had one daughter, Catharine, and died May 1, 1866; 4, Jacob, born November 2, 1792, married (March, 1822) Anne Lott, daughter of Hendrick Lott, of Jamaica; no children.

Jacob Snediker belonged to the Reformed Dutch Church of New Lots, and was one of its firmest friends and supporters. He died September 20, 1859. His wife died August 22, 1867.

Isaac I. Snediker (father of Jacob) died February 1, 1804. His wife died September 9, 1796.

The Snediker homestead, on which Jacob Snediker and his forefathers were born and lived and died, is situated on both sides of the New Lots road, at the crossing of the New York & Manhattan Beach Railroad and the Brooklyn & Rockaway Beach Railroad. The house, probably two hundred years old, still stands in a good state of preservation. This farm originally extended to what is now the center of East New York; but Jacob Snediker sold forty-five acres of the northerly part to Whitehead Howard, and sixty-nine acres of the middle and easterly part to Abraham Vanderveer. The homestead still belongs to the

heirs of Jacob Snediker. It has been in the family 215 years.

THE NOSTRAND FAMILY AS CONNECTED WITH
THE JOHNSON FAMILY

The Nostrand family derives its origin from Hans Jansen, who came to Long Island in 1640 from the Noortstrandt, in the duchy of Holstein. He married Janneken Gerrits Van Leuwen, and had four sons—Jan, Gerrit, Peter and Folkert. His sons adopted the name of the place from which their father emigrated, which in the course of time has been changed to the present to the present name, Nostrand. Different branches of the family have in former times lived and their descendants still live in New York, Brooklyn, Flatbush, New Utrecht, Flatlands and New Lots, Kings county; in Jamaica, Flushing and Hempstead, Queens county; and in Huntington, Suffolk county.

Margaret T. Nostrand, the wife of Martin G. Johnson, is the daughter of Timothy Nostrand, who for many years was a merchant in New York. When he retired from business he bought the farm on which his son George now lives, situated on the Brooklyn & Jamaica Plank Road, one mile west of the village of Jamaica, where he died December 21, 1831. Her grandfather, John Nostrand, owned and lived and died on the homestead farm at Valley Stream, in the town of Hempstead; it descended to his son, John Nostrand, Jr., and there he lived and died; after his death it belonged to his son Foster, who also lived and died there. On this farm Timothy Nostrand was born, February 8, 1767.

Timothy Nostrand married first (September 27, 1793) Garchy, daughter of John Suydam, of Newtown. Their children were: Sarah, born October 1, 1794, married James Bogart, died October 14, 1845; and John S., born March 16, 1796, who died, unmarried, February 6, 1836. Timothy Nostrand married, second (September 8, 1804), Catharine,

daughter of Stephen Lott, of Jamaica. Their children were:

1. Stephen L., born August 31, 1805, married (January 30, 1826) Cornelia L. Remsen, of Flatlands. They had one child, Catharine Ann, who married Jacob Ryerson, of Flatlands.

2. Garchy (Gitty) Ann, born March 16, 1807, died, unmarried, January 8, 1831.

3. George, born February 5, 1809, married first (March 26, 1846) Mary Bogardus. They had one child, Henry L. Nostrand, who married Phebe W., only child of Dominicus Vanderveer, of Jamaica. George married secondly (October 12, 1859) Cornelia C. Van Siclen, of Jamaica. No children.

4. Catharine L., born December 31, 1810, married (April 7, 1836) Dr. Richard T. Horsfield, of New York. Their children are: Richard T., Timothy N. (who married Sophia Frisbie), and Catharine L. (who married John K. Underhill). Catharine L. Horsfield died February 2, 1879.

5. Margaret T., born February 19, 1815, married (May 31, 1859) Martin G. Johnson. No children.

6. Timothy, born April 21, 1817, married first (October 19, 1853) Catharine Lott, of New Utrecht (cousin of Martin G. Johnson). Their children were: Elie (deceased), J. Lott, T. Foster, Margaret (deceased) and George E. Timothy married, secondly Belinda Hege-man, of New Utrecht, who survives him. He died December 6, 1878.

All the children of Timothy Nostrand, Sr., are dead except George Nostrand and Margaret T., wife of Martin G. Johnson.

Timothy Nostrand, Sr., was one of the most prominent members of Grace Church, Jamaica, and was for many years warden, and for several years, and at the time of his death, senior warden. The following notice of his death appears on the records of the church, January 2, 1832:

"The vestry have heard with deep regret of the decease of Mr. Timothy Nostrand, their

clerk, the senior warden of this church, and treasurer, and sincerely condole with the congregation with whom he was connected, and with his family, in the great bereavement they have been called to sustain; and we implore the Divine compassion on them that this afflictive providence may be sanctified to them, and to the church of which he was a member."

He was a member of Assembly of the State of New York, and a trustee of Union Hall Academy. He died December 21, 1831. His wife Catharine died February 13, 1860.

THE DITMARS FAMILY AS CONNECTED WITH THE JOHNSON FAMILY.

Jan Jansen Ditmars, the common ancestor of the family, emigrated from Ditmarsen, in the duchy of Holstein. He married Neeltie Douws; obtained a patent March 23, 1647, for 24 morgens, at Dutch Kills, Newtown, Queens county; died prior to 1650.

Douw Jansen Ditmars resided first at Flatbush, and finally settled at Jamaica. His first name was variously spelled Douwe, Douw, Dowe and Dow, and his surname Ditmarse, Ditmis, Ditmas and Ditmars. He held office in the Reformed Dutch Church, Jamaica, and died about 1755.

Abraham Ditmars, of Jamaica, married (June 18, 1725) Breckje, daughter of Abraham Remsen, of Newtown, and died on his farm at Jamaica, August 7, 1743. He was the father of Douw Ditmars and Abraham Ditmars, Jr., the two brothers who married two sisters, Maria and Elizabeth, the daughters of John Johnson, of Jamaica (great-grandfather of Martin G. Johnson).

Douw Ditmars, of Jamaica, born August 24, 1735, married Maria, the oldest daughter of John Johnson, of Jamaica. They had five children, John D., Abraham, Breckje, and Maria and Catalina, who were twins. He was an office holder in the Reformed Dutch Church. He died August 25, 1775.

John D. Ditmis, of Jamaica (son of Douw

Ditmars), married (November 5, 1761) Catalina, the oldest daughter of Martin Johnson (grandfather of Martin G. Johnson). They had eight children: Martin, Dow, John, Abraham, Phebe, Maria, Catalina and George, who are all deceased except Maria.

Dow I. Ditmis, son of John D., married (April 22, 1817) Catharine Onderdonk, of Cow Neck (Manhasset). Their children are: George O., John and Jacob Adrian Ditmis, all of Jamaica. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., A. M., married Maria H., sister of Catharine Onderdonk, wife of Dow I. Ditmis.

Abraham Ditmis, son of John D., married (April 18, 1827) Katie Onderdonk, of Cow Neck (Manhasset). They had one child, Henry O. Ditmis.

John D. Ditmis held the military office of major; he was a member of Assembly in 1802 and 1804, and a State Senator from 1816 to 1820, and held the office of Surrogate of Queens county. He was a trustee of Union Hall Academy; he belonged to the Reformed Dutch Church. He died March 11, 1853; his wife July 6, 1847.

Abraham Ditmars, Jr. (son of Abraham, of Jamaica), born December 9, 1738, married Elizabeth, the third daughter of John Johnson (great-grandfather of Martin G. Johnson). They had four children—Abraham, born October 6, 1760; Catalina, born September 20, 1762; married Samuel Eldert, of Jamaica; John A., born April 9, 1766; and Dow, born June 12, 1771.

John A. Ditmars married Nancy, daughter of Johannes Wyckoff, of Jamaica. They had three children—Margaret Ann, A. Johnson and Elizabeth, all deceased.

Elizabeth Ditmars married (December 30, 1839) Martin I. Johnson, who was for some years, and at the time of his death, county clerk. He was the eldest son of John and Maria Johnson, and cousin of Martin G. Johnson. Martin I. and Elizabeth are both deceased, but one son, A. Ditmars Johnson, of Jamaica, survives them.

Dow Ditmars, son of Abraham Ditmars, Jr., studied medicine, and went to Demarara, South America, where he had a lucrative practice for fourteen years. When he returned he married Anna Elvira, daughter of Samuel Riker, of Newtown, and bought a farm at Hell Gate (now Astoria), where he spent the remainder of his life, and died, at an advanced age, in 1860. Their children were Thomas T., Richard R., Abraham Dow and Anna. They are all deceased but Abraham Dow Ditmars, who is a lawyer in New York.

Abraham Ditmars, Jr., held office in the Reformed Dutch Church, Jamaica, and so did his son, John A. Ditmars.

Abraham Ditmars, Jr. (father of John A.) was a captain of militia in the Revolution. He was known among the British soldiers who were quartered at Jamaica as the "rebel captain," and he suffered much from their depredations. They stole the crops from his farm, the provisions from his cellar, and all of his fowls but one, which went to the top of the barn to roost. One day the soldiers ordered him and his family to leave the house, as they intended to burn it. He had to obey, and his sick wife was taken on a bed and placed in the dooryard! But it seemed that an Almighty Power interposed; the consciences of the fiends stung them, and the dreadful threat was not executed.

So great became the demands upon him for the produce of his farm, and for the use of his men and teams for carting the supplies of the British army, that he at last refused to comply. For this the petty officer who made the demand arrested him, took him to the village of Jamaica, and locked him up in the dungeon in the cellar of the old county hall, which stood on the spot now covered by Herriman's brick row. He was confined until the next day, when he was brought before a superior officer of the British army, to whom he made a frank statement of the sufferings he had endured, and of the unreasonable claims continually made upon him. The officer at once gave him

an honorable discharge; and at the same time severely reprimanded the underling who had arrested him. This decision had a good effect, as he afterward did not suffer much annoyance. It is proper to say that the highest British officers always condemned the cruel and barbarous acts which were committed by the dregs of the army.

The home of Abraham Ditmars, Jr., was the farm of the late William C. Stoothoff, one and a half miles southwest of the village of Jamaica, and the old house, in which he lived and died, still remains. The home of his daughter Catalina, who married Samuel Eldert, was the old house on Eldert's lane now belonging to Henry Drew; and the old house on the Brooklyn & Jamaica Plank Road now belonging to Dominicus Vanderveer was formerly the home of Douw Ditmars, of another branch of the Ditmars family. It is a singular circumstance that these three old houses, probably the oldest in the town, should all have belonged to members of the Ditmars family. They still stand as monuments of the solid style of building of the early Dutch settlers.

Abraham Ditmars and Abraham Ditmars, Jr., were contributors to the fund for building Union Hall Academy, and were two of the first trustees at the time its charter was signed by Governor Clinton, March 9, 1792.

Abraham Ditmars, Jr., died November 19, 1824.

John A. Ditmars was colonel of the State militia in the war of 1812, and he and his cousins George and John Johnson and their nephew Dow I. Ditmis were encamped at Fort Greene (now Washington Park), Brooklyn. They were under the command of General Jeremiah Johnson, of Brooklyn, who was the cousin of George and John Johnson and John A. Ditmars. There our soldiers were for some time, in daily expectation of the landing of the British forces, whose vessels of war were lying off the harbor of New York; but the British wisely concluded to depart without landing.

INTERMARRIAGES OF JOHNSON, DITMARS AND RAPELJE FAMILIES.

The union of the Johnson and Ditmars families in this country began by the marriage of two sisters of Martin Johnson, Maria and Elizabeth, daughters of John Johnson, of Jamaica (great-grandfather of Martin G.), to two brothers, Douw and Abraham Ditmars, of Jamaica.

Catalina, daughter of Martin Johnson, of Jamaica (grandfather of Martin G.), married John D. Ditmis, the son of Douw.

Martin I. Johnson, a great-grandson of John Johnson above named, married Elizabeth, daughter of John A. Ditmars.

Phebe, daughter of George Johnson, of Jamaica, married George O. Ditmis; a grandson of John D. Ditmis.

Victor Honorius Jansen, of Holland, married Breckje Rapalje (written by different families Rapalje, Rapelje, Rapelye and Rapelyea). Martin Johnson, of Jamaica, married Phebe Rapelje. General Jeremiah Johnson, of Brooklyn, married Sarah Rapelje.

Breckje, sister of John D. and daughter of Douw Ditmars, of Jamaica, married (December 29, 1791) Peter Rapelje, of New Lots. Their children were Jacob, Dow and Peter.

Maria and Catalina were twin daughters of Douw Ditmars, of Jamaica, and sisters of John D. and Breckje Ditmars. Maria married Jacob Rapelje, of Newtown. They had one child, Susan. Catalina married John R. Ludlow, of Newtown. She was his second wife. They had one son, Ditmars.

Susan, the only child of Jacob and Maria Rapelje, married the Rev. Gabriel Ludlow, D. D., who for many years, and at the time of his death, was pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church at Neshanic, New Jersey. He was the son of John R. Ludlow by his first wife. Another son was John Ludlow, D. D., who was twice professor in the Theological Seminary, New Brunswick, New Jersey, for many

years pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church at Albany, and afterward provost of the University of Pennsylvania.

OTHER FAMILIES.

The Hallet family formerly had many representatives in Jamaica, although Newtown seems to have long been more prominently associated with the name than any other locality. The pioneer of the family, William Hallet, settled in 1655 at what became known as Hallet's Cove, and, as we have seen, had quite a melancholy experience with the Indians. He survived his troubles, married a Quakeress and settled at Hell Gate until his death, when he had attained the age of ninety years. His descendants were long known as thrifty farmers, and seem to have spread all over the western end of Long Island. They were devoted adherents, most of them, of the Society of Friends, and in the persecution of these people by the authorities they seem to have been visited with a full share. In connection with the history of this family a story is told in Riker's "Annals of Newtown," which long created a deep sensation throughout the district and still, for its heartless atrocity, holds a prominent position in the criminal annals of Long Island. The details as given by Riker were as follows:

"Very near the present settlement of Middletown there lived a thrifty farmer, William Hallett, Jr., who held a portion of the land which his paternal grandfather had purchased of the natives. Near neighbors there were few or none, but his domestic hearth was enlivened by the presence of five children and a fond wife who was expected soon to add another to their store of conjugal comforts. In the family were two colored slaves, a man and wife, the former an Indian. Incensed, as was said at the time, because they were restrained from going abroad on the Sabbath, the woman meditated revenge and assured her husband that if he would only kill the whole family

then the farm and everything pertaining to it would become his own. He at last yielded to the wicked suggestion and accomplished the atrocious deed while his victims were asleep. It was on Saturday night, the 24th of January, 1708. Hoping to screen themselves from suspicion, they concluded to be the first to announce the tragedy, and with this intent the female fiend, the prime instigator of the deed, set out early the next morning for Hallett's Cove. Entering a house, her first exclamation was: "Oh, dear! they have killed master and missis and the children with an axe, and only Sam and I have escaped." The truth, however, was too palpable, and the guilty creature soon confessed who was the real murderer. Both were straightway arrested and lodged in Jamaica jail. Tidings of the affair were at once sent to Governor Cornbury, who immediately issued a special warrant to the judges, before whom, at Jamaica, the prisoners were arraigned for trial, and being found guilty, they were executed on the plains east of that village, on Monday, February 2d, in the presence of a large concourse of spectators. The woman was burnt at the stake. Her accomplice was hung in gibbets and placed astride a sharp iron, in which condition he lived some time; and in a state of delirium which ensued, believing himself to be on horseback, would urge forward his supposed animal with the frightful impetuosity of a maniac, while the blood oozing from his lacerated flesh streamed from his feet to the ground. How rude the age that could inflict such tortures, however great the crime committed! * * * Mr. Hallett was a son of Captain William Hallett, then one of His Majesty's justices of the peace. He was in the prime of life, and had served the town in various public capacities.

"The event which so prematurely terminated his life and those of his family produced a strong sensation in the province, and a law was passed shortly after, making mention of the occurrence and entitled 'An act for preventing the conspiracy of slaves.' The dwell-

ing where the murder was committed is still (1852) remembered by many, it having remained until the beginning of the present century. It was built of brick and stood in the hollow on the west side of the road, opposite the late residence of Mr. Marks and within a few feet of the small house now erected there. The well which belonged to these premises remains still in use. With this spot the juveniles were wont to associate the idea of ghosts and hobgoblins; it was noted as the scene of marvelous appearances witnessed by the timid traveler at the dim, mysterious hour of twilight, and was often pointed at by the passing school boy as "the haunted house." By some it is stated that the assassination of the Hallett family was only part of a plot among the slaves of the vicinity to possess themselves of the property of their masters. There must have been some evidence in support of this theory, for it is related that on Tuesday, February 10th, a week and a day after the execution of the murderers, two negro men were put to death for complicity in the crime and several others had been arrested and were awaiting trial. Yet, had the murderous movement been a general one, it would doubtless be recorded that still others were punished. In the absence of such a statement it is fair to presume it was not."

The Burroughs family in Newtown can trace its American genealogy back to 1637, when John Burroughs landed in Salem, Massachusetts. In 1643 he seems to have settled in Newtown, where he occupied a farm that remained intact in the possession of his descendants until about 1835. Another noted Newtown family was that of the Rikers, whose American ancestor, Abraham Rycken or de Rycke, received a grant of land at the Wallabout from Governor Kieft in 1638. He got possession of what is now known as Riker's Island about 1650. His sons Abraham and Andrew proved shrewd business men, and their extensive land purchases made them rich. Abraham was a public-spirited citizen of New-

town, and took a prominent part in the erection of the old Dutch Church there.

The Lent family is of common origin with the Riker family, being descended from Ryck and Hendrick, the eldest and youngest sons of Abraham Rycken, who, for reasons not clearly known, renounced their own name and assumed the name of Lent. Abraham Lent, son of Ryck, came from Westchester county to Newtown in 1729 and took possession of a farm left him by his uncle, Jacobus Krankheyt, on Bowery Bay. He resided here until his death, in 1746, when his son Jacobus, for years a ruling elder in the Dutch Church, succeeded to the farm. His death occurred in 1779. Daniel Lent, youngest son of Jacobus, was the last of the family who occupied this estate. It was sold just prior to his death, which occurred April 20, 1797. Daniel, his only child that survived infancy, removed to Flushing Bay, and for years resided upon the farm.

The Alsop family goes back, or could go back if any of its representatives still exist, which is doubtful, to the roll of the first settlers of Newtown. Thomas Wandell, a major in Cromwell's army, seemed to get involved in some dispute with the Lord Protector,—a dispute, whatever its nature, so serious that Wandell had to fly for his life. He made his way across the Atlantic, and in 1648 we find him in Maspeth. In 1659 he bought a farm at Newtown and took up his residence there, marrying the widow of its former owner. He was quite an influential member of the local society, and was held in high esteem even on Manhattan Island. Having no children, he invited a nephew in England to join his fortunes with his in this country, and when he died, in 1691, he left his estate to that nephew, Richard Alsop. That young man had "taken" to the new country almost as soon as he arrived. He fell in love with a Dutch lady, but as she could speak no English and he did not know a word of Dutch, the billing and cooing customary to courtship had to be car-

ried on with the aid of an interpreter. However, love, which laughs at locksmiths, triumphed over such an obstacle, and the pair were married. They lived very happily together on the Wandell property until h's death, in 1718. His widow survived until 1757, when she passed away in her ninety-first year. Their son Richard succeeded to the property, and it remained in possession of the Alsop family until 1837, when the last of the name died and the property was sold to strangers — all except the old family burial plot, which is now enclosed in Calvary cemetery, a little Protestant plot in the midst of that great city of Roman Catholic dead.

The two following sketches of other Newtown worthies are from the pen of the late William O'Gorman, of Laurel Hill, and were written for the Long Island Star:

"Captain Richard Betts, whose public services appear for fifty years on every page of Newtown's history, came in 1648 to New England, but soon after to Newtown, where he acquired great influence. In the revolution of 1663 he bore a zealous part, and after the conquest of New Netherlands by the English was a member from Newtown of the Provincial Assembly held at Hempstead in 1665. In 1678 he was commissioned high sheriff of 'Yorkshire upon Long Island,' and he retained the position until 1681. He became a bitter opponent to Director Pieter Stuyvesant and the little town of Bushwick, which he had founded. Under leave from the Governor, the English settlers had planted their town, but were refused the usual patent, and in 1656 Richard Betts administered a severe blow to Stuyvesant by purchasing the land for himself and fifty-five associates, from the red men, at the rate of one shilling per acre. The total cost amounted to £68 16s. 4d., which, with the sum of £76 9s. paid to the sachems Pomwaukon and Rowerowestco, extinguished the Indian title to Newtown. For a long series of years Betts was a magistrate. During this time he was more than once a member of the high

court of assize, then the supreme power in the province. He became an extensive landholder at the English Kills. His residence was here, in what is still known as 'the old Betts house.' It is further said that here within sight of his bedroom he dug his own grave, in his one hundredth year, and from the former to the latter he was carried in 1713. No headstone marks the grave, but its absence may be accounted for by the fact that his sons had become Quakers and abjured headstones. The old house, which we may enter by lifting the wrought-iron latch of heavy construction, worn by the hands of many generations; the polished flags around the old deep well, where the soldiers were wont to wash down their rations, are still as the British left them on their last march through Maspeth. This house is but one of several most ancient farm houses still carefully preserved for their antiquity, on the old Newtown road, between Calvary cemetery and Maurice avenue. These venerable companions have witnessed many changes, and now enjoy a green old age, respected by the community in which they stand.

"John Moore, the early ancestor of the Newtown family of this name, was supposed to be of English birth, though it is unknown when or whence he emigrated. He was an Independent, and the first minister of the town. Though not authorized to administer sacraments, he preached to the people of Newtown until his death, in 1657. In consequence of his interest in the purchase of Newtown from the Indians the town awarded eighty acres of land to his children, thirty years after his decease. One of his sons, Samuel Moore, became a grantee of land in Newtown village in 1662, and afterward bought an adjacent tract, previously owned by his father, which subsequently came into the hands of John J. Moore. In 1684 he bought a farm near the Poor Bowery, to which he removed.

"Among the distinguished members of the Moore family was Benjamin Moore, who was born at Newtown October 5, 1748. He re-

ceived his education at Kings (now Columbia) College, and afterward became its honored president. After pursuing theological studies he went to England and was ordained to the Episcopal ministry. In 1800 he was appointed rector of Trinity Church, and in 1801 was elected bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the State of New York, and he continued in this relation until his death, February 16, 1816. His wife was a daughter of Major Clement Clark, of New York.

"His brother, William Moore, born at Newtown January 17, 1754, was a medical student and a graduate of Edinburgh in 1780. He then returned home, and for more than forty years was engaged in the duties of an extensive practice. For many years he was president of the New York Medical Society, and trustee of the College of Physicians and Surgeons. His wife was a daughter of Nathaniel Fish, of Newtown. One of their sons, Nathaniel F., succeeded his uncle as president of Columbia College.

"Captain Daniel Sackett Moore was a successful and respected ship-master. He owned the Moore residence near Newtown village, and died here in 1828. His son, John Jacob Moore, the last of the sixth generation of the Moore family, died June 14, 1879, aged seventy-three years. The ancestors of this gentleman form an unbroken line of proprietors in fee from the original Indian purchase, in 1656, in the following order: Rev. John Moore, died 1657; Samuel Moore, died 1717; Benjamin Moore, died 1750; John Moore, born 1730, died 1827; Captain Daniel Sackett Moore, died 1828; John Jacob Moore, died 1879.

"The venerable Moore house standing on the Shell road was one of the mansions of the colonial period. It is carefully preserved and has been occupied constantly by the Moore family since its erection, more than a hundred years before the Revolution; no part of it is allowed to go to decay, nor is there much change save by additions, which are not al-

lowed to displace the old structure. The same hall door—in two sections, of solid oak and secured by the original strong hinges, bolts and locks, and with the original ponderous brass knocker—is still spared; the old well built stairway give access to the upper rooms; the ancient beams still exhibit their full proportions and are well varnished. This house occupied the center of the British camp for many years. The well beside it requires but one glance down its mossy stones to discover its antiquity."

The Kissam family of North Hempstead can point in its records to the names of many who have been prominent, locally at all events, in public and professional life for over two centuries and a half—a long time as genealogies go in the United States. The name of the American founder of the family has been lost "through the vicissitude of time," as Burkes' "Peerage" gravely puts it, and so gets over such a snag in its story of the origin of many noble families in Great Britain. Had the town records of Flushing not been destroyed by fire in 1789 it is possible that the name of the American pioneer would have been extant and so the genealogical tree of the family might have had a more symmetrical beginning. This now nameless pioneer seems to have arrived in America about 1640 and settled on a piece of land in Flushing. He did not long survive the change of country, for when he died he left his property in the care of guardians for the benefit of his only son, John. John was born in 1644 and in due time entered upon possession of his father's acres and like a good Dutchman settled down and cultivated them, bringing to the homestead as its mistress a Jamaica girl, Susan Thorne, whom he married in 1667. Their family consisted of three sons. The second son, John, in after years married and settled in Freehold, New Jersey, and it is thought that the youngest, Thomas, also removed to that colony. Daniel, the eldest, appears to have left Flushing and secured a farm on Great Neck. In



JOHN HOWARD PAYNE.

1703 he was elected a vestryman in St. George's Church, Hempstead. He had a large family, one of whom, Joseph, also became a vestryman in St. George's, and had a farm at Cow Bay. Daniel, a nephew of the last named, son of an elder brother, who also held a farm at Cow Bay, had quite an experience in public life, as he served as county treasurer from 1759 to 1782 and was for many years a member of Assembly and a justice of the peace. Some of his family, at least, were opposed to the Patriots during the Revolution, for we find one of his sons, John, accepting a commission as major from Governor Tryon in 1776. Another member of the family active in public life was Daniel Whitehead Kissam, who served in 1786 as a member of Assembly.

Richard Sharpe Kissam, born in 1763, was educated for the medical profession at Edinburgh, Scotland, and entered upon practice in New York in 1791. For thirty years he stood at the head of the active members of his profession in the city, and until his death, in 1822, he was regarded as one of the foremost surgeons of his time. From one of his brothers Governor John T. Hoffman of New York was descended. It is impossible to trace here all the ramifications of this family to the present time. Its members have married into nearly all the old families of New York and Long Island and it almost seems to us that a history of the various generations would almost include the story of the legal and medical professions in Manhattan from the beginning of the story of the United States.

In Suffolk county the number of old families which are still represented in every township is such that a volume or two would be needed to present even the usual meagre details of births, marriages and deaths, which form the genealogists' stock in trade. Here, however, a few may be selected at random to illustrate all the rest.

We may begin with a family whose connection with Long Island has long since ter-

minated, which was really connected with it for a few years, genealogically speaking, yet some of the credit of affiliation with it must be given to Suffolk county, because there seems little doubt that when the most famous member of the family wrote the heart-touching words of "Home, Sweet Home," it was the memory of the interior of a little cottage in East Hampton that inspired the theme.

John Howard Payne was born in New York City, June 9, 1792. He was destined for a business career but early showed a predilection for literature and the stage. He edited some trifling publications while still in his teens,—publications now interesting only as curiosities,—and in 1809 made his first professional career as an actor in the old Park Theatre, New York, taking the part of Norval in Douglass' tragedy of that name, a part which used to be the starting point in the career of every budding Roscius. The play has long been relegated to the bookshelf and is never now acted, but in the early part of the past century it was a prime favorite. Payne's success in the part was most flattering and after playing it in many American cities he repeated it in Drury Lane Theatre, London, with equal commendation from the critics and the public. That success determined his career and for some twenty years thereafter he was associated with the stage as actor, manager and playwright. General James Grant Wilson writes: "While living in London and Paris, where he was intimate with Washington Irving, Payne wrote a host of dramas, chiefly adaptations from the French. In one of these, 'Clari; or, The Maid of Milan,' occurs his deathless song of 'Home, Sweet Home,' which made the fortunes of all concerned, except the always unfortunate author. By it alone, Payne will be remembered after his multitude of poems and dramas have been forgotten, which, indeed, has almost happened already. His tragedy of 'Brutus,' produced in 1818, with Edmund Kean in the principal part, is his only dramatic composi-

tion that still holds possession of the stage, with the single exception of 'Charles the Second,' the leading character in which was a favorite with Charles Kemble." In 1832 the wanderer returned to America, as poor as when he left it, and pursued his theatrical career with varying fortunes, generally brief bits of success mingled with long periods of misfortune and poverty. Home he had none throughout his career since the death of his mother when he was a lad of thirteen years, and it was destined that he should die in exile from his native land. In 1841 he was appointed consul at Tunis and there he resided until his death, in 1852. His body was interred in a little cemetery on the shores of the Mediterranean until 1883, when it was removed to Oak Hill cemetery, Washington, and so poor Payne was home at last. His career was a sad one; poverty and he were close acquaintances, he "fattened on trouble and starvation," as he said himself, and he often in later years told a story of the bitterness he once felt on hearing his famous song sung one night in London when he himself was unable to raise the price of a night's lodging and had to find a home in the streets. He made plenty of money but had no idea of how to keep it, and a hit, when it was made, only carried him and his friends—partners in his joys and often strangers to his sorrows—through for a few days and then the weary round of misery was faced again. The penalties of genius were never better illustrated than in the sad career of this gifted singer. The genealogy of the Payne family has been made a theme of special study by Mr. Henry Whittemore, and as much misunderstanding exists concerning the poet's ancestors and even concerning his birthplace, we give the record in full:

Thomas Paine, the progenitor of the family from which John Howard Payne descended, was the son of Thomas, supposed to have come from Kent, England, and presumably identical with Thomas Payne of Yarmouth,

the first Deputy from that place to the Old Colony Court at Plymouth in June, 1639.

Thomas Paine (2), son of Thomas (1), came to New England when a lad ten years of age, and settled in Eastham before 1653, as he was constable there at that date. He was admitted freeman 1658. He represented Eastham at the Colony Court 1671-2-3, 1676-78-80-81, and in 1690. He removed to Boston before 1695. He was a man of more than ordinary education, and was a very fine penman. He died at Eastham August 16, 1706. He married Mary Snow, daughter of Hon. Nicholas Snow, who came in the *Anne* to Plymouth in 1623, and in 1654 removed to Eastham, Massachusetts. He married Constance Hopkins, daughter of Stephen Hopkins, of Plymouth, fourteenth signer of the "Mayflower Compact."

The children of Thomas and Mary (Snow) Paine were: Mary, Samuel, Thomas, Eleazer, Elisha, John, born March 14, 1660-1, Nicholas, James, Joseph, Dorcas.

Deacon John Paine, sixth child of Thomas (2) and Mary (Snow) Paine, was born in Eastham, Massachusetts, March 14, 1660-1. He was admitted freeman June, 1696. He was elected clerk of the town 1706 and re-elected until 1729. He was Treasurer from 1709 to 1736, and Representative to the General Court at Boston 1703-9-14-16-18-24-5. He was of a literary turn of mind, and some of his spare moments were devoted to literary pursuits. Scraps of prose and poetry written by him are still in the hands of his descendants. He died October 26, 1731.

He married first Bennet Freeman, daughter of Major John and Mercy (Prence) Freeman, born March, 1671. She was "a pleasant companion, a most loving and obedient wife, a tender and compassionate mother, and a good Christian." By her he had John, Mary, William, born June 6, 1695, Benjamin, Sarah, Elizabeth, Theophilus, Joseph, Nathaniel, Rebecca, Mercy, Benjamin again.

He married, 2nd, Alice Mayo, and had by her Hannah, James, Thomas, Alice, Hannah.

Lieut. William Paine, third child of Deacon John and Bennet (Freeman) Paine, was born at Eastham, June 6, 1695. He was a Representative to the Provincial Legislature from Eastham 1731-32-35-38-39-40-43-44. He was appointed one of His Majesty's Justices in 1738. He took part with the Colonial forces in the capture of Louisbourg as Lieutenant in Capt. Elisha Doane's company, Col. Gorham's Seventh Massachusetts Regiment, and died in service in 1746.

His first wife was Sarah Bacon, of Barnstable, who he married in 1727. He married, 2nd, June 14, 1741, Elizabeth Myrick, a widow, the daughter of Rev. Samuel Osborn, pastor of the South Church in Eastham, and sister of Dr. John Osborn, the distinguished physician and poetical writer of Middletown, Connecticut. By his first wife he had Sarah, Ruth, Josiah, Jedediah. He had one child by his second wife, William, born 1746.

William Paine, or Payne, (2), son of Lieut. William and Elizabeth (Myrick nee Osborn) Paine, was born in 1746, the year his father died in the Colonial service. His mother remarried and he was placed in the family of Rev. Joseph Crocker, pastor of the South Congregational Church of Eastham. He commenced the study of medicine under Dr. Joseph Warren, who fell at Bunker Hill. He was interrupted in his studies by the events which immediately preceded the Revolution, and opened an English Grammar School in Boston, but on account of the occupation of that city by the British he gave it up and became a tutor in a private family. Writing to a friend, of his experience at that time, he says: He was obliged to be in his school "from the first entrance of light till nine in the evening." While on a visit to Barnstable he married Lucy Taylor, who died shortly after the marriage. He went to New London, Connecticut, and there engaged in a mercantile adventure to the West Indies. On his return he

formed the acquaintance of Miss Sarah Isaacs, of East Hampton, Long Island, who was on a visit there, and soon after married her. Her father was a convert from the Jewish faith, who came from Hamburg, Germany, previous to the Revolution, and settled at East Hampton. He was a man of education and wealth, but difficulties in his own country and the Revolution in his adopted country induced heavy losses and left him comparatively poor. His wife, a Miss Hedges, was the daughter of a lady whose maiden name was Talmage. His uncle Talmage was the Earl of Dysart, a British nobleman.

William Paine, or as he wrote his name, "Payne," settled in East Hampton after his marriage, about 1780, and became one of the teachers of the academy there. His wife, who was a woman of remarkable beauty, fine education and many excellent traits of character, assisted her husband in teaching. Payne continued there for about ten years. Several of his children were born there, and this was really the only home he ever possessed. He removed to New York in 1790, where he taught school for some years. In 1793 he resided at No. 5 Dey street, and he also resided and taught school on Little Queen street. In 1799 he was invited by some influential men in Boston to open a school there, which became quite noted. He returned to New York about 1809 and taught school on Common near Grand street. He died March 7, 1812.

In the cemetery at East Hampton is the grave marked by a stone of Andrew Isaacs, the father of William Payne's wife, Sarah (Isaacs) Payne, on which is inscribed: "Behold an Israelite in Whom is No Guile."

William Payne by his wife Sarah (Isaacs) Payne had issue:

1. Lucy Taylor, born 1781, at East Hampton, married, in 1816, Dr. John Cheever Osborn, of New York; died in Brooklyn, 1865, left no issue.

2. William Osborne, born at East Hampton, August 4, 1783, died March 24, 1804.

3. Sarah Isaacs, born at East Hampton, July 11, 1785, died in New York, October 14, 1808.

4. Eloise Richards, born at East Hampton, March 12, 1787, died at Leicester, Massachusetts, July, 1819.

5. Anna Beren Leagers, born at East Hampton, April 9, 1789, died at Newport, Rhode Island, October 11, 1789.

6. John Howard, the poet, born in New York City, at 33 Pearl street, June 9, 1791, died at Tunis, Africa, April 9, 1852.

7. Eliza Maria, born in New York City, September 19, 1795, died there May 25, 1797.

8. Thatcher Taylor, born in New York City, August 14, 1796, married in New York, 1833, Mrs. Anna Elizabeth Bailey, died in Brooklyn, December 27, 1863.

9. Elizabeth Mary, born in Boston, Massachusetts, died there aged about two years.

The Scudder family, although not among the original settlers of Suffolk county, might almost claim directly, can, in some of its branches at least, claim descent by intermarriage with every one of the historic families of which Suffolk is so justly proud. Then, too, their own American pedigree commences at a date almost ranking with the first. The American pioneer, Thomas Scudder, left Grafton, England, in 1636, and settled at Salem, Massachusetts. He left three sons, Thomas, John and Henry, all of whom in 1652 crossed over to Long Island and became residents of Southold. After a while they all moved to Huntington township and acquired land there. Then John removed to Newtown, where he resided until his death, about 1670. He left an only son, John, who married a daughter of Captain Richard Betts. His two sons, John and Richard B., moved with their families to New Jersey, and their descendants are there to be found even to the present day.

Thomas and Henry Scudder may therefore be regarded as the progenitors of the Scudders of Long Island. Thomas seems to have had quite a land thirst and apparently

invested all the money at his command in real estate. At his death his holdings were divided, according to his directions, between his two sons, all within the town of Huntington going to the eldest, Benjamin; and tracts at Cow Harbor, Crab Meadow and elsewhere, to the younger one, Timothy. There were five daughters in the family but they seem to have been lost sight of in the distribution of the real estate. Both of these fortunate brothers married and had families and soon the mere records of the marriages and baptisms and deaths begin to tangle us up in a maze, and, even if printed, would have no interest even for the family themselves outside of a few of an antiquarian turn of mind. But there are several names on the long and honorable record which deserve to be held in general remembrance throughout Long Island, at any rate for their patriotic and public services.

Thomas Scudder, son of Benjamin, and third in descent from Thomas (1st) of Salem, died about 1760, leaving only one son, also named Thomas, who in turn died in 1809, leaving four sons, John, Nathaniel, Gilbert and Thomas. John joined the Continental army, was taken prisoner at the battle of Long Island and confined with many others in the old sugar house in New York City, where the cold and hunger occasioned much sickness and many deaths among the prisoners.

The old house of the Scudders at Huntington Harbor, offering good quarters for the British officers, was occupied by them, except the kitchen, where the family were forced to crowd together, and the officer's horses occupied the barn and used the hay and grain stored there, while the stock of Thomas Scudder was turned adrift in the fields and streets.

The sufferings of John as a prisoner, coming to the ears of his father, caused the latter to send his son Gilbert (then a lad of sixteen years) to New York to aid in his brother's relief, which he accomplished by walking past the prison house several times a day and when the chance offered passing food from his pock-

et to him, or to some one for him, through the iron bars of a window bordering on a side street. This assistance continued until he was liberated on parole; but the severity of treatment the prisoners suffered and the injustice and rapine offered his father's family in Huntington so embittered John's feelings against the rule of Great Britain as to justify him, in his own opinion, in breaking his parole and enlisting in General Greene's command in the Southern army, where before a year had passed he died of yellow fever. Another Revolutionary hero belonging to the family was Henry Scudder, who was of the fourth in descent from the Salem pioneer. On the outbreak of the war he gave heart and hand to the cause of the Revolution, promoted its development, held a commission in the army, and during the seven years' war sacrificed all personal and family considerations for the common cause of independence. He was captured at or shortly after the battle of Long Island, but escaped confinement, passed over the sound to Connecticut, and was attached to the force of General Tallmadge. During the seven years' struggle he largely contributed by his local knowledge and great personal daring to many successful expeditions against the British forces on Long Island between Matinecock Point and Wading River, and came to be held by them as a scourge whom they at once feared and watched for. His possessions at Crab Meadow were laid waste by cutting his wood, burning his fences and outbuildings and driving off all the stock (excepting one cow which was secreted by an old slave), and his wife was subjected to a system of most distressing espionage in order to discover the presence of her husband on his stealthy visits to her. To the courage of his wife and her sympathy with the cause of justice Henry Scudder undoubtedly owed much in his cheerful self-denial and endurance of the hardships occasioned by the long struggle for freedom. After the declaration of independence he was chosen as one of the dele-

gates from Suffolk county to aid in the adoption of the Federal constitution. He represented the county in the Assembly several terms and held other positions of honor and trust. Henry Scudder died in 1822, leaving three sons, Youngs Prime Scudder, Henry Scudder and Joel Scudder. He also had two daughters, the oldest Phebe, who married Azel Lewis, and Amelia, married to Platt Lewis.

Several of the Scudder family have been members of Congress. Tredwell Scudder represented Suffolk county in the State Assembly for several terms and was elected a member of the fifteenth Congress. For over twenty years he was prominent in public life. Henry Joel Scudder was chosen to Congress in 1872 and declined a renomination. He was born at Northport in 1825, graduated at Trinity College, Hartford, in 1846, and two years later was admitted to the New York bar. He acquired a leading position in his profession, and in 1881 the degree of LL. D. was conferred upon him by Roanoke College. His career was distinguished by the interest he took in educational matters and in schemes for improving the condition of the poor and for his native town of Northport he was always thinking and planning some scheme of improvement. His death in 1886 was deeply regretted by a wide circle of devoted friends. His son, Townsend Scudder, afterwards represented Suffolk and Nassau, etc., in Congress and proved a thoroughly practical and most eminently useful member.

The Hunting family is another which has representatives all over the island, and, notably, in Suffolk. Their progenitor, so far as their American story goes, was John Hunting, who in 1638 settled at Dedham, Massachusetts, from England. His grandson, the Rev. Nathaniel Hunting, was minister of East Hampton for about half a century. He had a family of six sons, and his grandson, Jonathan Hunting, became minister of Southold. In 1739 Samuel Hunting founded the Southampton branch of the family. Colonel

Benjamin Huntting, who was born in Southampton in 1754 and died there in 1807, was one of the most enterprising merchants of his day. He was one of the first to equip whaling vessels for long voyages and carried on a large trade with the West Indies. The family have been merchants, lawyers and fighters and are represented in nearly all the wars in which this country has engaged. When the Civil War broke out E. F. Huntting of Southold volunteered for the front and with a commission as lieutenant went forth to do what he could to defend the flag. His career was a short but brilliant one; he was shot at the head of his company and soon after the news was brought to Southold the Rev. Dr. Ephraim Whitaker preached a notable sermon on the lessons of the young hero's death which, as it deserves to be printed in some form likely to preserve it, and as its deeply religious tone and moral musings and splendid spirituality form an elevating change from most of what appears in this chapter, we print it entire. It will be seen that it is more than a sermon; it is a sketch both biographical and genealogical, with a lesson of deep import drawn from the whole:

"Here am I; send me." Isa. vi, 8.

Readiness for duty, however dangerous burdensome and responsible, is the expression of this text; and it would not be easy to find another more fit to indicate the character of that young soldier, whose death we mourn and whose virtues we commemorate to-day.

The Bible is not a book of life and peace only. It is also, very largely, a volume of war and death. The songs of Miriam and of Deborah are pæans of victory. Many of the psalms of David are martial odes. His lamentation over Saul and Jonathan is the eulogy and elegy of battle-slain heroes. And the Bible abounds, throughout all its parts, in language and illustration drawn from the science and art of war. This is the case in the earlier as well as in the later ages of its history. The fine figure which soldiers present in its latest books is specially remarkable. Here some of them and there others, again and again save the life of the chiefest of the

apostles, and afford him the means of spreading the gospel among the nations. Others often hate and hurt him. Soldiers commonly treat him fairly and kindly.

But I have chosen no incident of a soldier's life, nor any circumstance of a soldier's death, to indicate the character of that heroic soldier, in whose honor we perform this service. Yet, "Here am I; send me," are words full of martial decision, alacrity, courage and manliness.

These qualities and others of Lieutenant Huntting will appear in the briefest sketch of his life and death.

EDWARD FOSTER HUNTTING was born May 22, 1843, in the home of his parents and paternal grandparents, in Southold, and died in the service of his country, while commanding his company, on the battle-field of Olustee, Florida, February 20, 1864, in the twenty-first year of his age.

He sprang from a long line of worthy ancestors of the same family name. The earliest of the name in this country was John Huntting, who came from England two hundred and twenty-five years ago last September, and settled at Dedham, Massachusetts, where he died April 12, 1682. His son, John, who married Elizabeth Payne, was a resident of the same place, where his son Nathaniel was born November 15, 1675. This Nathaniel Huntting, a graduate of Harvard College in 1693, began his life-long ministry at Easthampton, in September, 1696, before he was twenty-one years of age, and by his vigorous ministry there for more than half a century, he prepared the way for the Rev. Samuel Buell, D. D., and the Rev. Lyman Beecher, D. D., who were his next successors. Two of his sons and one of his grandsons, having graduated at college and then studied theology, became ministers of the gospel. The grandson was the Rev. Jonathan Huntting, who graduated at Yale College in 1804, and was ordained and installed here on the 20th of August, 1807, the Rev. Drs. Woolworth and Beecher performing the chief parts of the services. He fulfilled the duties of the pastoral office here twenty-one years and one week; and his pastorate, under God, was the salvation of this church. After he ceased to be the pastor, he retained his home in this place, and with him, till his death, December 30, 1850, lived his son Edward, this bereaved father, whose first-born child and only son is the subject of our thoughts to-day.

The brief service of an hour will not permit

me to make any specific mention of the widely spreading branches of Lieutenant Hunting's maternal ancestry, whether through the Cases, the Halseys, or others more remote from him. They are extensive and known to be worthy of the regard due to his forefathers on the paternal side.

It requires some acquaintance with men to appreciate the full worth of such an ancestry. But its advantages are none the less real. Apart from the virtue of blood, which is substantial and operative, it gives the child of such parentage a material vantage ground in the very first years of his life. It goes before him and prepares the way for his reception of kindness, instruction, attention and manifold advantages on every hand. It gives him the confidence of others, and makes many friends for him even before his own merits have won them or deserved them. He is "beloved for the fathers' sakes." This may aid him long after his ancestors are in their graves. For many important purposes, the worth of his forefathers avails him as if it were his own. The nature of human life and the structure of human society make it as useful as it is unavoidable that parents and children should share their advantages and disadvantages with each other. Every child feels this connection of the parents and their offspring, even before he can fully understand its nature or appreciate its great value; and he is a most unwise and ungrateful son, who recklessly throws away all the substantial advantages of honorable parentage, and chooses to fight the battle of life alone, and cut his way through the world friendless and unsupported. We honor those who make a good name for themselves without this advantage; but we blame the man who scorns the privileges of his own birthright.

Even the childhood of Lieutenant Hunting was marked by no folly of this kind. He was early mindful of the advantages which his parentage gave him, and commendably obedient to parental authority. The family is the foundation of human society. He felt unceasingly its benign and mighty influence. The wishes of his parents were often contrary to his boyish tendencies, his constitutional inclinations, and the customs of many among his youthful associates, and in many a case of this kind it was exceedingly interesting to mark the cheerfulness of his conformity to their will. For instance, the entertainments of doubtful character, which they wished him to forego, he often treated for their sakes as

unattractive and worthless. Thus he cheerfully rejected what would have pleased his social disposition, in order to show his regard for their wishes. He was *thus trained to faithfulness in duty.*

The same deference to their authority and regard for their comfort, which marked the course of his boyhood and chiefly formed his character, also restrained him, I know not how long, from giving himself to his country in arms.

For many months before he volunteered, the strong impulses of his ardent patriotism impelled him to this step, but a life-long desire to promote the comfort of his parents and sisters, held him back for a season.

He was not aware that his talents and training had fitted him for this service. His highest triumphs in school were in the exact sciences; and I never saw him appear in a better light at any time than in the splendor of an examination in certain branches of the higher mathematics, which are closely connected with that precision of movement and aim, and quick measurement of time and distance for which a soldier should be fitted.

His progress and excellence in his academical studies were not more marked than his activity, agility, strength and readiness in all athletic sports on the playground. But his vigorous mental powers and superior physical endowments found not their chief object in sports and pastime. As manhood drew on apace, the choicest athletic games became less attractive than substantial, productive toil; and whether he ploughed the fields of his father or performed some neighborly and generous act for one in need of aid, the labors of his hands were cheerful industry, not repulsive drudgery. Within these weeks of our mourning, since he met his early death as a thorough soldier might wish to die, new anecdotes of his skill, efficiency and generosity as a worker have been related to me in his praise.

Thus in the life of the family, in the studies and sports of good schools, both at home and abroad, in the labors of the farm, and in the social activities, duties and charities of the neighborhood, he had shown himself worthy of high regard.

Full five years since he passed the most critical portion of his youth; and the fears which some of his friends then experienced for a short time, lest he should falter in virtue, were happily and speedily done away.

The approach of manhood both matured

and improved his character. The benign influences of the family and of the church of God, in whose worship he was habitually active, were, through the working of the divine Spirit, not without effect upon his higher powers. He became more thoughtful, considerate, manly and gentle, and so acquired no little decision of character. We saw it often, but will point you to no more than one instance.

We shall not soon forget that evening, the 18th of August, 1862, when his tall and shapely form was seen advancing here to place his name, with his own right hand, upon the list of volunteers for his country's army; and we knew him to be one who would never shrink from his engagement, neglect his duty, nor turn his back to his country's foe. His unselfish patriotism was not the kind to wear the badge of meanness and infamy, and his heroic soul was not shaped and fashioned to receive the brand of cowardice and shame. The multitude who then thronged this house of God hailed his generous act with loud applause. But it was not so much the acclamations of the enthusiastic spectators as the noble impulses of his own spirit and the firm decision of his own mind, that filled his radiant eyes with light, and spread a smile over his expressive countenance. Memory is faithful to disclose even now the graceful dignity which he displayed among his worthy companions who then, with him, pledged their young manhood's prime and their precious lives to the defence of our country against the lawless violence and war of traitors. Dumb be our lips and dead be our hearts if we fail to honor them, whether they live or die, for such generous and heroic devotion.

It was no sudden freak of Lieutenant Hunting that led him to lay down his life for his country. He pondered the matter long and well before he gave himself to live or die for the nation. Though his life had not reached a score of years, he had carefully studied the history, the extent and the worth of the country and its national government. He had marked the insurrection of traitors and had seen how they had levied and begun war against their lawful rulers. He scorned their sophistry, despised their selfishness, detested their oppression and defied their warlike power. He counted not his life dear unto himself, to maintain his country's rights and promote the general welfare.

As soon, therefore, as approaching manhood would justify it, and the national voice

asked, "Who will go for us?" his firm answer was ready, "Here am I; send me." When he thus offered himself, he was not unaware that he gave perhaps his life for his country. He was not unmindful of this fact in subsequent days. Indeed, he desired to incur the danger and to fight the battles for which he had volunteered to serve his country in arms.

This was one reason why he desired promotion and transfer from his place in the One Hundred and Twenty-seventh Regiment to his lieutenancy in the Forty-seventh Regiment of New York Volunteers. In the former regiment he had faithfully performed the duties of a non-commissioned officer for more than a year in Maryland, Virginia and South Carolina, on both sides of the Potomac, the James and the Nansemond rivers, as well as on the coast islands of South Carolina; and though often in pursuit of the enemy, yet never able to see more than his back or a line of his pickets. This did not satisfy our young soldier. His patriotic aspirations sought a more vigorous and decisive service of his country and hence it was a real gratification to him, even at the expense of a separation from dear companions of long and well tried friendship, to be transferred to a lieutenancy in the Forty-seventh Regiment, whose fortune it had been to see more decisive service. Accordingly, in November last, he received his commission in this regiment.

It presented a fit occasion to display the integrity and nobleness of his character. His commission was presented to him with the promise, on his part, that he would forthwith report himself to the commander of the regiment in which he had been commissioned. But no sooner had he received his commission, than he was advised by senior officers around him to do what is not uncommon in such cases, namely, pocket the commission, and make a short visit home before reporting himself in the new place according to his promise. But neither his strong desire to see his parents and kindred and home friends once more, nor the example of many a one among his brother officers, nor all other considerations combined with these powerful motives could induce him to falsify his word, or swerve one line from the path of integrity and honor. He would not burden his conscience with a broken promise, even to lighten and gladden his heart with all the delights of home, though he might see that beloved home and its unspeakably dear inmates never more. This is virtue beyond the reach

of mere heroism. It is virtue which comes from Christian principle only.

It was virtue too in one whose heart craved the society of gentle souls with inextinguishable longing. This yearning of his heart might be shown in many ways. Let one incident suffice. In one of his cheerful, familiar letters, intended to be read only in the home of his childhood, he writes, "I do not particularly dislike this kind of life, but still it does not fill up the vacancy. The associations do not exactly suit; and you may laugh, but I am more 'homesick' for *good* female society than I ever was for any thing else. I want something refining among all this coarse, strong community of men who do and dare. I think sometimes, what would I not give for an hour's talk with mother and sister. I never *have* been homesick—never *will be*, so long as I have health in other respects; but I do hunger for something refining, and softer than these surroundings of war, if I am 'a man of blood.' I never told you of the risk I ran to have an hour's conversation with an old lady and her daughter while in Virginia. They lived outside the lines; but I took my gun and went out, determined to risk a fight or capture for the sake of an hour's chat with the ladies. The old lady's name was Warner, and I found herself and her niece both at home, but very much surprised to see me, as they lived up among the mountains or 'up country,' as they said. I told them just what I had come for, and hoped they would not be offended. They invited me into the parlor, and I spent a very pleasant two hours. The old lady's son was in the rebel army; but she was no partisan, and said she hoped some Southern lady would talk to her son like a mother, for she was sure he would need it. She was a member of the Episcopal church, a very good, motherly old lady, and when I left she gave me some very good advice."

How clearly this incident discloses the union of the tenderest sensibility with the manliest courage. It prepares us to glance our eye at his modesty, which was equal to his merit in other qualities. In a letter containing his photograph, sent to his oldest sister three months since, one of the two letters from his pen which I have had opportunity to read, he wrote thus: "Is Eddie much changed, do you think? When I look at him with my mind, and compare the untried boy, untaught in the world's rough school, who left his island home fifteen months ago to fight the battles of his

country's flag, and shield that flag from the foul stain traitors would put upon it, to the individual, half boy half man, who to-day appears before me, I can see a great change in many respects. He has gained a glimpse of the many and various pages of the text-book set before him in this great school, and his opinions and feelings and whole mind have changed much. But when, at the hour of twilight, he puts aside the present and outward world, gives imagination free scope, and thinks of the loved ones who at that moment are thinking and praying for the *absent one*, he is the same boy of fifteen months ago, not a whit changed, still cheerful, still hopeful that the end will soon come, and he be again united to that pleasant family circle which his imagination correctly pictures."

This mention of the twilight hour is a beautiful intimation of his prayerfulness. It is the part of the day in which he devoted a half hour to prayer in concert with his mother. His frequent allusions to it in his letters, and his oft-repeated request that his mother would not fail to observe it, show most clearly how highly he prized it. He was mindful of the religious privileges and education which he had received from his parents: and it would seem that he made a deep impression of his Christian principle and rectitude upon the minds of his brother officers.

This shines forth in the letter of Lieutenant Smith, who wrote, with equal perspicuity and tenderness, the particular circumstances of our young lieutenant's death.

This letter is the most grateful evidence that even in the last moments of his life, Lieutenant Hunting maintained and disclosed, and even most fitly displayed some of those sterling virtues which have come into view in the course of this sketch.

Only four days after the battle, and while yet in bivouac, Lieutenant Smith obtained the address of Lieutenant Hunting's mother, and most generously and kindly wrote thus:

"MY DEAR MADAM—It is with feelings of deep sorrow that I communicate to you the news of the death of your son, my esteemed friend, Second Lieutenant E. F. Hunting. He fell while gallantly leading his company 'I,' in the battle of Olustee, on the afternoon of last Saturday, February 20th.

"A large number of the original members of Company 'I' had re-enlisted as veteran volunteers, and the captain and first lieutenant had

accompanied them home on furlough. So great was the confidence reposed in Lieutenant Huntting by Col. Moore, that although he was only a junior officer, the colonel gave him the command of his company.

"Our mess on the march consisted of Lieutenants Evry, Scott, Huntting and myself. While conversing together over a cup of coffee, reference was, by chance, made to the probabilities of some of us going down in the battle that we knew was soon to take place. Your son's thoughts seemed to dwell particularly on home, and the sad effect that any thing serious or disastrous to him would cause in the family circle. He mentioned you particularly as likely to be seriously affected, should he be taken away. Alas for the uncertainty of human life! The early moon that evening looked down serenely on the lifeless forms of two out of that little group of four who were then so quietly talking over their future prospects.

"At a little after 8 A. M. we were on the march. My company was first in line, Lieut. Every's next, and Lieut. Huntting's third. We pushed on rapidly, and by 3½ P. M. were supposed to be within a mile of the town of Olustee, a distance of twenty miles. A smart artillery fire, directly followed by the rattle of musketry, about half a mile in advance, led us to suppose that the enemy had thrown out a small picket force, which our cavalry were then engaged in driving in. Soon we were ordered to form brigade line, and shortly afterwards we came into line of battle, our regiment being on the left flank. Immediately the enemy commenced shelling us, with good range on his part, so that we at once moved forward to engage him. In a few moments we were hotly engaged. Your son—cool, calm, and deliberate in every movement—cautioned his men to fire low, and bravely stood up facing the death-storm that raged about him. In a little while a rebel regiment moved forward on the left and attempted to flank us. This drove back our left wing for a time, leaving us who were on the right exposed to an enfilading fire. Our men were falling rapidly, and the three right companies became somewhat massed together. Lieut. Huntting deliberately walked back to the colonel, not understanding what order had just been given, and inquired if he had any thing for him to do. 'Just tell me what you want, colonel,' said he, 'and I will do it.' The colonel answered that he, the lieutenant, was doing very well, and he had no orders to communicate. Upon this Edward walked over to where I was standing, and remarked that it

was a *pretty hot place*. I answered in the affirmative, at the same time showing him where the throat button of my overcoat had been shot away by a rifle-ball. He then called upon the men to 'stand steady, aim low, and fire deliberately.' The words were scarce out of his mouth, when he suddenly threw his right hand over the left breast, at the same time covering it with his left forearm, and turning his face towards me, remarked, 'I'm struck; don't leave me, Smith.' I made a motion to catch him in my arms, but he reeled towards the right, and fell immediately on his right side. Hastily calling two men to carry him to the rear, I knelt for a moment at his side, heard him mutter something incoherently about 'mother,' 'heaven,' and then the eyes closed, the limbs stiffened, and his pure unselfish spirit passed away to be at rest forever. God grant that when my hour for departure from earth and earthly joys and sorrows may come, I shall be found as well prepared as he was.

"My duties calling me to my company, I ordered the men to carry him to the rear, not thinking but that we should hold the ground, and be able to take care of our wounded and bury the dead. In a few moments a heavy force of the enemy was thrown forward to capture a battery, and we were forced to fall back some distance. We never recovered the ground, so that nothing of the personal effects on your son's body were saved except his sabre.

"I have written thus at length, under many difficulties, knowing you would take a mournful interest in everything relating to your so much loved son. Believe me, my dear madam, that it has been a mournful subject for me to dwell upon, for your dear boy was a cherished friend and companion of mine. Particularly since the opening of this campaign we have been together night and day; and his singular openness of heart, unselfish conduct, strict and unbending integrity, and thorough knowledge of all of his duties as a soldier and an officer, had endeared him not only to me, but to all his brother officers. By his men he was not only promptly obeyed, but greatly respected. You well know that in the field an officer's power over his inferiors extends even to life itself, but your son's men well knew that while they travelled in the path of duty, they would be protected, and always receive strict and impartial justice. His every action seemed to be dictated by a spirit of true Christian responsibility.

"It would not become me to intrude upon

your sorrows—me, who am so far behind your loved and lost one in preparation for eternity—but may I not suggest, that his whole life was so pure and guileless as to warrant us in saying that he is now rejoicing in the presence of his Saviour, where I trust you and I, and all of his and my friends may some day join him. For one, I shall try to benefit by the example of my lost friend, who, in a few months, took a place in my heart that will cause his memory to remain there for ever.

“Wishing you every blessing under this heart-rending bereavement, I remain, dear madam, your obedient servant,

“JOHN A. SMITH, First Lieut.,
Commanding Co. G.
47th Reg. N. Y. Vols.”

Thus his comrade in arms and battle tenderly tells us how nobly died our true, faithful, courageous young lieutenant. How could a soldier find a more appropriate death? We mourn his early fall, even though he died gloriously. For it is our grief that our ears shall hear no more his sprightly footsteps and his cheerful voice; that our eyes shall no more behold his tall and vigorous form. His brilliant eyes will no more flash responsive to our looks of love. His dark glossy hair feels the dampness of the grave, and the earth has hid those handsome, manly features from our sight till the morning of the resurrection.

He has finished his work on earth. He will toil no more for his kindred and his country. He will die no more for us all—for *us all*. It remains for us to cherish his memory, to emulate his virtues, and to receive the inspiration and the consolation which properly come from his noble, unselfish life and his generous and courageous death.

His readiness for the most burdensome and dangerous labors and exploits should animate us to perform our respective duties with alacrity and faithfulness, and to bear our heaviest burdens with fortitude and submission to God's holy will and providence.

The example of good men, whether old or young—whether in ancient times or in these days—should encourage us to walk in the footsteps of the one perfect Man, who was also God manifest in the flesh, and who died for us all, that we through him might have forgiveness of sins, and strong consolation in the deepest afflictions and sorrows.

The grace of God in Christ Jesus affords the best relief for the hearts that grieve over the bereavements of earth. The father of all

can make the severest anguish of his children work for their future and eternal joy. To these bereaved kindred he can make the death of their beloved one work a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory than all the fame and honors of the world.

Oh may this mournful event promote in them and in us all the proper preparation for death, judgment, and heaven; so that whenever may come the hour of our departure from these earthly scenes, we may each be ready to say unto God, “Here am I; send me.”

The foremost living historian of Suffolk county and, indeed, the Nestor of its historical students, is Mr. William S. Pelletreau. He has been and still is a diligent student of our old records and has the happy faculty of making even the driest of them tell an interesting story. His recent work on *Early New York's Wills*, issued by the New York Historical Society, and his volume on the *Records of Southampton*, are cases in point, and in both there is hardly a page from which some detail of general interest could not be gathered, and yet their local character is thoroughly preserved. Both books received quite commendatory notices at the hands of the critics of the country, while the long extracts which appeared in the daily press showed the value placed on their contents. Mr. Pelletreau is still closely studying the story of Suffolk county and every now and again hits upon a discovery which is at once given to the world with the same honest enthusiasm which Sir Walter Scott—the prince of antiquaries—used to announce the literary and historical results of one of his tours to the Borderland or the Highlands.

The family to which Mr. Pelletreau by his life work and his many brilliant talents has added additional honor, has long been one of the most prominent in the county. He has sketched its history so briefly and pithily that we here reproduce his own record:

The ancestors of the Pelletreau family were Huguenots who upon the revocation of the edict of Nantes fled from France and sought safety and religious freedom in a for-

eign clime. The first of the family in America were Jean Pelletreau and wife Magdalena, and their nephews Jean and Elie, the latter having two sons, Jean and Elie (these names were soon anglicised into John and Elias). These were direct descendants from an ancestor who was physician to Admiral Coligny, and like his illustrious patron perished in the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, August 23, 1572. King Charles IX granted him a coat of arms July 17, 1571. The following is a translation of the description:

"Azure, upon a column in pale *or*, encircled with a serpent proper, and bordered on the dexter and sinister sides by a martlet, *or*; crest, a helmet."

Jean 1st was naturalized in New York September 22, 1687, and died in 1700. His wife Magdalena died in 1702, without children. Jean 2nd died in 1703, childless. He and his brother Elie were naturalized July 10, 1696. The native place of this family was the village of Arces, in what is now the Department of Charente Inferieure. They were all members of the French church in New York, and in their wills left funds toward the support of its poor. Their names are found in connection with the troubles in that church, as in favor of Rev. Lewis Row (see Documentary History of New York, Vol. III).

Elie Pelletreau died in 1730, leaving sons Elias, Paul, Francis, John and Benjamin, and a daughter Magdalena. Elias died before his father, leaving a wife, Elizabeth. John also died before his father, and left daughters Mary and Elizabeth. Paul is supposed to have had a son Elias, who had children Elias, Samuel, Mary and John. From the first of these are descended the families now living in the city of Brooklyn. Benjamin was the youngest son and is not known to have left descendants.

Francis Pelletreau is said to have been an infant at the time when the family left France in 1686. He came to Southampton, L. I., in 1717. He married Jane, widow of Richard Osborn, September 26, 1721, and by this marriage had two children—Mary, born November 30, 1723, and Elias, born May 31, 1726. His wife Jane died December 6, 1733, aged thirty-eight. His second wife was Mary King, widow of Joseph King, of Southold, and daughter of Judge Thomas Chatfield, of East Hampton. She was born September 12, 1707, and was married to Mr. King September 9,

1731. He died while on a visit to his father-in-law at East Hampton, November 6, 1732, aged twenty-five. Mrs. King married Francis Pelletreau September 4, 1734, and they had children Hugh and Hannah, born in 1735. Francis Pelletreau was a merchant. In 1728 he purchased the homestead of Samuel Woodruff in Southampton village, and this place remained in the hands of his descendants until 1866, and is now the residence of Josiah Foster. The old house remained standing till 1881; it was the last house on Long Island that retained the old-fashioned rhomboidal panes of glass set in lead, and from these it was known as "the house with diamond windows." In 1737 Francis Pelletreau went to London to undergo a surgical operation, and died from its effects September 26. His widow married Judge Hugh Gelston, February 23, 1737, and died September 1, 1775.

Mary, eldest child of Francis Pelletreau, died July 6, 1736. Hugh died when a child. Hannah married Edward, son of Rev. Silvanus White, in 1757, and died March 1, 1810.

Elias Pelletreau married Sarah, daughter of Judge Hugh Gelston, December 29, 1748, and had five children, viz.: Jane, born May 13, 1750, married Judge Pliny Hillyer, of Simsbury, Conn., whose descendants are now living in Westfield, Mass.; Francis, born May 15, 1752, died September 29, 1765; Hugh born November 25, 1762, died July 30, 1771; John, born July 29, 1755, died August 26, 1822; Elias, born August 29, 1757, died October 10, 1831.

The last named married Hannah, daughter of Colonel Josiah Smith, of Moriches, August 7, 1782, and had children: Francis, born May 16, 1784; Elias Smith, born May 18, 1789, died September 30, 1821; Maltby, born March 23, 1791.

Hannah Pelletreau, wife of Elias 2nd, died July 11, 1804, and he married Milicent Post, December 21 of the same year, and by her had one son, Paul, who died when a child.

Elias Smith Pelletreau married Hannah, daughter of Oliver Smith, of Moriches, and had a son, Jesse Woodhull Pelletreau, who died in 1878, leaving children Mary (wife of Hon. John S. Havens of Moriches, Jessie and Legrand.

Maltby married Jane Joralemon, of New York, and left children William Upson, Maltby and Francis.

Francis married Mary Conkling, of Islip,

and left children Henry and Cornelia; the latter married Rev. Ralph Smith; the former died childless.

Elias 2nd married Sarah Conkling, daughter of Zebulon Conkling, of East Hampton, June 28, 1786. They had no children. His wife Sarah died April 14, 1784, aged fifty-three.

The descendants of John Pelletreau, son of Elias 1st, were as follows:

John married Mary, daughter of Dr. William Smith, April 9, 1785, and had six children, viz.: William Smith, born June 8, 1786, died March 15, 1842; Nathaniel, born September 18, 1787, died January 5, 1823; Sarah, born July 19, 1789, died April 15, 1839; Charles, born December 9, 1791, died February 24, 1863; Edwin, born January 11, 1795, died 1840; John, born February 15, 1804, died December 2, 1817. Mary, wife of John Pelletreau, died December 2, 1817, aged fifty-eight.

William Smith, son of John Pelletreau, married Nancy Mackey, daughter of David Mackey, May 23, 1810, and had children: Albert died May 19, 1843, aged thirty-two; George died December 21, 1832, aged twenty; Jane married Lyman Lewis, of Westfield, Massachusetts; Gilbert died in 1864; Alexander, born March 4, 1829, now in California; Mary Gelston, wife of William Green, Prairie du Sac, Wisconsin; Frances, wife of William I. Mathews, Washington, Pennsylvania.

Nancy, wife of William S. Pelletreau, died April 22, 1832, aged 44, and he married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Isaac Welles, of Westfield, Massachusetts, June 26, 1839, and had children: Helen, now president of Pennsylvania Female College, Pittsburg, Pennsylvania; William Smith (the historian), and George, Virginia City, Nevada.

Nathaniel, son of John, married Harriet Crittenden, and had children: Walter; Mary, wife of Daniel Jagger; and Maria, wife of Albert Jagger.

The Dering family, which for so long was closely connected with the progress of Shelter Island, was descended from Henry Dering, a native of Dorsetshire, England, who came to America in 1660. He became a merchant in Boston, and at the time of his death, in 1717, was a member of the Governor's Council. His grandson, Thomas, settled on Shelter Island,

and as the husband of Mary Sylvester, heiress of Brinley Sylvester, he was practically lord of the manor. In the time of the Revolution he cast in his lot with the Continental Patriots, but after the result of the battle of Brooklyn became known, deemed it prudent to retire to Connecticut like so many Long Island Whigs too old to fight or not possessing fighting qualities. He died in 1785, leaving two sons, Sylvester and Henry Packer, and a daughter. Sylvester made his home on Shelter Island and did much to beautify it. He was the first to introduce merino sheep into America and added considerably to his wealth by the development of that stock. Having been appointed a brigadier-general of militia, he became quite an authority on military matters after his own notions like most of the old time "militia soldiers," and, like them, he was proud of his title and liked to be addressed as "General" to the end of his life journey. He was supervisor of the town of Shelter Island for many years, and in 1804 was elected a member of Assembly. His death, on October 8, 1820, was the result of an accident. The younger brother of this warrior-stock raiser, Henry Packer Dering, was appointed collector of the port of Sag Harbor by President Washington, and was one of the most honored of the business men of that place. He died in 1822.

In Huntington Jonas Wood became one of the first settlers and the ancestor of a long line of men and women who were highly honored in that township and wherever the changes of life carried them. The best known of them all, Silas Wood, has been called the first historian of Long Island. He was born at West Hills, Huntington, September 14, 1769, and was educated at Princeton, where he was graduated in 1793. He seems to have then studied law. Two years later he was elected to the Assembly, and when his service at Albany was over he practiced as a lawyer in Huntington. In 1817 he was elected a member of Congress and served in that capacity for five terms in succession. In 1828 he was defeated of re-election.

tion and retired to private life. He died in 1847. His most noted work was his "Sketch of the First Settlement of the Several Towns on Long Island," and a brief sketch of the history of Huntington. It is said that during his last years he engaged in a series of extended theological studies and wrote quite voluminously upon religious matters. But as the end drew near he began to feel dissatisfied with some of the opinions he had expressed and burned every line he had written.

Several of the descendants of the Rev. Joshua Hartt are still to be found in Huntington, and as he may be regarded as the founder of the family and certainly as the most notable of the name, we may here present a sketch of his extraordinary career, written by Mr. Charles R. Street, the learned and painstaking annalist of Huntington:

Joshua Hartt was born at Dix Hills, near Huntington, September 17, 1738. He graduated from Princeton College, New Jersey, in 1770, and was ordained and installed pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Smithtown, Long Island, April 29, 1774. He married Abigail Howell, of Moriches, by whom he had ten children. After the Revolution he went to Fresh Ponds, where he preached many years. During the Revolutionary War his bold and uncompromising advocacy of the cause of his country caused him to be arrested a number of times by the adherents of the king. Once he was brought before the court martial held at Lloyd's Neck, but he was admonished and discharged. He was soon after arrested, tried and committed to the jail in New York City, where he remained from May 27, 1777, until October 25 of the same year. During this imprisonment he came near dying from want and disease brought on through cruel treatment by his jailer, the notorious Provost Marshal Cunningham. Among his fellow prisoners was the celebrated Colonel Ethan Allen, with whom he was on terms of intimate friendship, although their views of spiritual matters were totally at variance, Allen being at the

time an infidel. While Mr. Hartt lay sick of a fever and his life was in danger Allen was active in his attention to the wants of the sick man, and by his lively manner and cheerful conversation did much to make his sickness and confinement endurable. It was during Mr. Hartt's illness that Allen one day knelt down by his bedside and made a most fervent prayer for his restoration to health. (See Onderdonk's Annals.) Soon after this Mr. Hartt, probably by the influence of some Tory friend, was released from prison upon parole, and when he was about leaving Allen took him by the hand and said: "Good bye, Mr. Hartt; when you go home tell your wife that while you were sick and nigh unto death, Ethan Allen, a servant of the Most High God, prayed over you, and you recovered."

Although released from prison, he was not free from persecution. On one occasion while he was preaching in the church at Smithtown Branch a bullet was fired at him, lodging in the wall just above his head, where the mark remained for many years. For some time after the return of peace in 1783 Mr. Hartt was engaged with others in making surveys of the state lands in the neighborhood of Whitestown, Oneida county, New York. In 1790 he and Rev. Nathan Kerr were appointed missionaries by the Presbyterian General Assembly. They visited Whitestown, Cherry Valley and the Indian tribes of that vicinity. Their route was then regarded as in the far west.

During the war between this country and England in 1812 Mr. Hartt took strong ground in favor of sustaining the government in its efforts to punish Great Britain for her insolent treatment of our rights upon the seas. He preached several sermons in which he vindicated the acts of the government in declaring war, and in which he set forth the necessity of a hearty support of the government while prosecuting the same. These sermons were printed in pamphlet form, and were extensively circulated, several copies being still preserved.

The Howell family was formerly a prominent factor in the business affairs of Southampton. Captain Stephen Howell was born in the good old town in 1744, and died there in 1828, was one of the first to erect a storehouse in the village. He was a staunch patriot in the Revolution and fought in the battle of Brooklyn, seemingly ending, however, in that disastrous engagement, his military career. In 1785 he became prominent in the whale fishery business and he and his sons, Lewis and Silas, made considerable money rapidly. Latham may also be regarded as the founder of Sag Harbor's industries, he having established there a candle-making factory. Although he was a man of many progressive ideas and of shrewd business instincts and his endeavors added greatly to Southampton's prosperity.

A family named Miller was long prominent in East Hampton. They were descended from John Miller, one of the first settlers. In 1717, Eleazer Miller, the grandson of this pioneer, was born and developed into quite a famous character. He was elected a member of the Assembly in 1748 and continued to hold the office for twenty-one years, when, in 1769, after a warmly contested election he was defeated by no less a personage than Gen. Nathaniel Woodhull. Eleazer's son, Burnet, was clerk of Huntington for many years, served in the Assembly and in Congress and was supervisor for eleven years prior to 1776. He seems to have been lost sight of in the course of the Revolutionary war, probably removed to some place up the Hudson.

Hubbard Latham, of Connecticut, settled in Southampton in 1760 and was for many years one of its most active citizens. He was a dealer in real estate as well as a speculator in marine ventures and gathered together quite a fortune. He left a large family which is still represented in the village.

The Rose family, still represented in North Sea, Southampton, are descended from Robert Rose, who settled in the township in 1644.

Judge H. P. Hedger wrote the following interesting sketch of the career of a member

of this family who attained high judicial honors:

Judge Abraham T. Rose, son of Dr. Samuel H. Rose, was born in Bridgehampton, in 1792, and died April 29, 1857. He graduated at Yale College in 1814, and became a successful practicing lawyer, residing through life in his native village. He was county judge and surrogate of Suffolk county from July, 1847, to January, 1852, and from January, 1856, until his resignation, in the month wherein he died. In 1848 he was an elector to choose a president of the United States.

He was a man of varied and almost universal genius, of generous and kindly impulse, poetic temperament and magnetic eloquence; where others by slow and laborious effort achieved the mastery he by intuition looked through the complication of mechanics, science, literature, music and the practical arts. Hosts of ardent friends admired, loved and served him; crowds thronged the place where and when he was expected to speak. Fluent in expression, graceful and commanding in gesture and action, fertile in fancy and invention, versed in all the springs of human nature, winning and persuasive in manner, his presence was a poem and his speech was music. Almost at will he carried courts, jurors, witnesses and crowds to his own conclusions, and in his own inimitable way. One of his contemporaries remarked that industrious application would make a good lawyer, but only genius like his would make a man an advocate. Unquestionably as an advocate and orator he was of the highest rank in his time.

When the dark shadow of the inevitable hour gathered around him, professing his undoubting faith in Jesus Christ, and regret and repentance for errors past, he was received on the Sabbath in the church at his residence, and partook of the sacramental elements at the hands of the elders. When his malady obstructed his wonderful and attractive utterances he commended to us the 116th Psalm as expressing his experience and undying hope. The tramping feet of the living thousands may

move on unconscious of the memory of the other thousands gone before; yet age after age the remembrance of this gifted man, of his wonderful eloquence and his generous heart, will live in the traditions of generations to come, transmitted by those who have gone as he has gone.

These random notes and delvings into the family history "out on Long Island" must here close. We have lingered with the subject lovingly and reverently so as to bring out the characteristics of each and in most cases their special claim to remembrance, but the subject might be indefinitely extended, for such families as the Mulfords, the Hewletts, the Daytons, the Brewsters, the regiment of Smiths, and a host of others are at hand—enough to fill many volumes. But we desire to close this chapter with a biographical sketch of a man who was for years a tireless student of Long Island genealogy and whose works are a delight to the antiquary and an inspiration to the historian—Teunis G. Bergen, of Bay Ridge. This sketch was written by his life-long friend, Dr. Stiles, the historian of Brooklyn.

Teunis G. Bergen, farmer, statesman and antiquary, was born in the town of New Utrecht, October 6, 1806. He was the eldest child of Garret Bergen and Jane Wyckoff, his wife. He clearly traced his ancestry to Hans Hansen Bergen, a native of Bergen, in Norway, who came over to the New Netherlands with Wouter Van Tweller, the second director of the colony. Bergen's wife, whom he married in 1639, was Sarah, the daughter of the Walloon emigrant, Jan Joris Rapalye, who came to this country in the ship *Unity* in 1623 and settled in Albany, afterwards removing to New Amsterdam, and thence (1635) to the *Waleboght* on Long Island. Sarah was herself a historic character, being the first white female child born within the limits of the present state of New York—at Albany. Thus, from a stock not originally of the Netherland blood, but which became afterwards thoroughly incorporated with the first Dutch settlers of this county, sprang this most distinguished Dutch

scholar. His early youth was mainly spent between work upon his father's farm at Gowanus, and at the common school of the district. As youth merged into manhood, he applied himself to the study and practice of surveying, in which he soon became proficient. To the main duties of an active life he added those of a farmer; and, not forgetting those he owed to the community in which he resided, he faithfully discharged such as were imposed upon him by the choice of his fellow-citizens, as soldier, civilian and statesman. He held the position of Ensign, Captain, Adjutant, Lieut.-Colonel in the militia; and, finally, that of Colonel of the 241st Regiment, N. Y. S. N. G. He was supervisor of the town of New Utrecht for twenty-three years in succession (April, 1836, to April, 1859); and from 1842 to 1846 was chairman of the board. He was a member of the Constitutional State Conventions in 1846, 1867 and 1868, and was repeatedly a member of the Democratic state conventions. He was a delegate to the national Democratic Convention held at Charleston, S. C., in 1860, and vigorously opposed the resolutions of that body which caused the breach between the northern and southern Democratic party. The last and most notable public office which he held by the choice of his fellow citizens was that of representative in Congress from the Second Congressional District, in 1864, when he was elected by a majority of 4,800 over his opponent, the "Union" candidate. In that session of the House of Representatives his party was in the minority; but, true to his Dutch principles, he stood firm to his party to the completion of his term of service. The pages of the history of the county of Kings bear frequent witness to Mr. Bergen's many public services in behalf of the interests of the county and of its several towns, as well as of the city of Brooklyn. That he was so frequently called upon, in these public affairs, was a most striking tribute to his ability, industry and integrity.

On his retirement from public and professional duties, he devoted his leisure hours to

those antiquarian and genealogical investigations which possessed, for him, so great a fascination. These investigations ran most naturally in the lines of Dutch (and Kings County Dutch) ancestry and history. In the earlier years of his life, spent among the hills and by the waterside at Gowanus, and at New Utrecht, he knew no language but the Dutch—not as spoken nowadays, but with the idiom and pronunciation of two hundred years ago—and corrupted, in a measure, by the gradual introduction of the English. By education, he soon became versed in the English language; but he never ceased to cultivate the language of his boyhood, which he lived to see almost eradicated, in this county, as a spoken language. It sometimes seemed to his friends as though he *thought* in Dutch, but *spoke* in English; and there was always a certain peculiar accent to his pronunciation, especially when a little excited, as if *both* tongues wrestled at his lips for precedence. By birth, and education and study he was admirably qualified to decipher the Dutch records, both public and private, which he frequently had occasion to consult. His pure character and great experience as a land-surveyor in the settling of town-boundaries and private estate-lines among the old Dutch families of the county, also gave him access to many ancient documents and sources of information which would have been closed to any other person. So that he early became an expert in all that related to the Dutch and their descendants, not only in the county, but upon Long Island and even in New Jersey. In the history of the Dutch families of Long Island he was not only (with the exception of Riker) the first gleaner, but he was by far the most thorough, exhaustive and authoritative. His untiring and self-sacrificing researches into the almost obsolete records of the ancient Dutch churches of Long Island and New York have unearthed numerous and important materials for the use of modern historians; while his discoveries, in out-of-the-way places, of many of the detached birth, baptismal and marriage records, and the restora-

tion of the same, have conferred inestimable benefits upon the genealogist and antiquary. His published writings were numerous and important. Scattered through the volumes of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record will be found valuable papers on Records of Births of the Society of Friends, Gravesend, L. I., commencing 1665; the Van Dyke Family; Marriage Records of Gravesend, commencing 1664; a List of Deaths in Captain Grant's company in 1762; the Montfoort Family; Pioneers of the Revolutionary War; the Martense Family; Contributions to the History of the First Settlers of Kings county; Memorials of Francays D' Bruynne; the Van Duyn Family. Some of these formed portions of "A Register of the Early Settlers and Freeholders of Kings county, N. Y., from its First Settlement by Europeans to 1700, with Biographical Notices and Family Genealogies," which was published in 1881, a few weeks after his death. Before this, however, in 1866, he had issued "The Bergen Family," an octavo of 298 pages; in 1867, the history of his wife's ancestry, "Genealogy of the Van Brunt Family," in 80 octavo pages. But the crowning glory of his well-spent life, so far as family history is concerned, was a second edition of his "Bergen Family," so improved and augmented as to embrace, by regular descent and intermarriage, a large portion of the Dutch population of southern New York and eastern New Jersey; forming a handsome illustrated volume of 658 octavo pages. In 1878 appeared his "Genealogy of the Lefferts Family," 1675-1878, an octavo of 172 pages. In 1877, also, at the 200th anniversary celebration of the Reformed Dutch church of New Utrecht, he delivered an "Address on the Annals of New Utrecht," of great historic value; and which was printed for private circulation by the consistory of the church. He left, also, in manuscript, "A History of New Utrecht," which antiquarians are hoping to see issued, in due time, by competent hands. He left, moreover, translations of several important manuscripts relating to Kings county matters.

CHAPTER LVII.

NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

THE LONG ISLAND CAMPAIGN—DUTCH NAMES OF PLACES AND PERSONS—HISTORICAL GLEANINGS AND DOCUMENTS—EARLY NINETEENTH CENTURY DESCRIPTIONS.

IN this chapter we propose to present some documents, extracts, and additional details which will help to elucidate several of the earlier passages of this work, and also to present specimens of the work of the earlier historians of Long Island, all of which will be found of interest to the general reader of the local history:

CAPITULATION BY THE DUTCH TO SIR RICHARD NICOLLS.

These Articles following were consented to by the Persons here under subscribed, at the Governour's Bowery, August the 27th, Old Style, 1664.

I. We consent That the States-General, or the West India Company, shall freely enjoy all Farms and Houses, (except such as are in the Forts,) and that within six months they shall have free Liberty to transport all such Arms and Ammunition as now does belong to them, or else they shall be paid for them.

II. All Publique Houses shall continue for the Uses which they are for.

III. All people shall continue free Denizens, and shall enjoy their Lands, Houses, Goods, wheresoever they are within this Country, and dispose of them as they please.

IV. If any Inhabitant have a Mind to remove himself, he shall have a Year and six Weeks from this day, to remove himself,

Wife, Children, Servants, Goods, and to dispose of his lands here.

V. If any Officer of State, or Publique Minister of State, have a Mind to go for England, they shall be transported Fraught free, in his Majesty's Frigotts, when these Frigotts shall return thither.

VI. It is consented to, that any People may freely come from the Netherlands, and plant in this Colony; and that Dutch Vessels may freely come hither, and any of the Dutch may freely return home, or send any Sort of Merchandize home in Vessels of their own Country.

VII. All Ships from the Netherlands, or any other Place, and Goods therein, shall be received here, and sent hence, after the manner which formerly they were, before our coming hither, for six Months next ensuing.

VIII. The Dutch here shall enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences in divine Worship and Church Discipline.

IX. No Dutchman here, or Dutch Ship here, shall upon any occasion be pressed to serve in War against any Nation whatsoever.

X. That the Townsmen of the Manhattans shall not have any Soldiers quartered upon them, without being satisfied and paid for them by the Officers; and that at this present, if the Fort be not capable of lodging all the Soldiers, then the Burgomasters, by his Officers, shall appoint some Houses capable to receive them.

XI. The Dutch here shall enjoy their own Customs concerning their Inheritances.

XII. All Publique Writings and Records, which concern the Inheritances of any People, or the Reglement of the Church or Poor, or Orphans, shall be carefully kept by those in whose Hands now they are, and such Writings as particularly concern the States-General, may at any Time be sent to them.

XIII. No Judgment that has passed any Judicature here, shall be called in Question; but if any conceive that he hath not had Justice done him, if he apply himself to the States-General, the other Party shall be bound to answer for the supposed Injury.

XIV. If any Dutch, living here, shall at any Time desire to travaille or traffique into England, or any Place, or Plantation, in obedience to his Majesty of England, or with the Indians, he shall have (upon his Request to the Governor,) a Certificate that he is a free Denizen of this Place, and Liberty to do so.

XV. If it do appeare that there is a publique Engagement of Debt by the Town of the Manhattoes, and a Way agreed on for the satisfying of that Engagement, it is agreed that the same Way proposed shall go on, and that the Engagement shall be satisfied.

XVI. All inferior Civil Officers and Magistrates shall continue as now they are, (if they please,) till the customary Time of new Elections, and then new ones to be chosen by themselves; provided that such new chosen Magistrates shall take the Oath of Allegiance to his Majesty of England before they enter upon their Office.

XVII. All Differences of Contracts and Bargains made before this Day, by any in this Country, shall be determined according to the Manner of the Dutch.

XVIII. If it do appeare that the West India Company of Amsterdam do really owe any Sums of Money to any Person here, it is agreed that Recognition and other Duties payable by Ships going for the Netherlands, be continued for 6 months longer.

XIX. The Officers Military, and Soldiers, shall march out with their Arms, Drums beating, and Colors flying, and lighted Matches; and if any of them will plant, they shall have fifty Acres of Land set out for them; if any of them will serve as Servants, they shall continue with all Safety, and become free Denizens afterwards.

XX. If at any Time hereafter the King of Great Britain, and the States of the Netherlands, do agree that this Place and Country be

re-delivered into the Hands of the said States, whensoever his Majestie will send his Commands to re-deliver it, it shall immediately be done.

XXI. That the Town of Manhattans shall choose Deputyes, and those Deputyes shall have free Voyces in all publique Affairs, as much as any other Deputyes.

XXII. Those who have any Property in any Houses in the Fort of Aurania, shall (if they please) slight the Fortifications there, and then enjoy all their Houses, as all People do where there is no Fort.

XXIII. If there be any Soldiers that will go into Holland, and if the Company of West India in Amsterdam, or any private Persons here, will transport them into Holland, then they shall have a safe Passport from Colonel Richard Nicolls, Deputy-Governor under his Royal Highness, and the other Commissioners, to defend the Ships that shall transport such Soldiers, and all the Goods in them, from any Surprizal or Act of Hostility, to be done by any of his Majestie's Ships or Subjects. That the Copies of the King's Grant to his Royal Highness and the Copy of his Royal Highness's Commission to Colonel Richard Nicolls, testified by two Commissioners more, and Mr. Winthrop, to be true Copies, shall be delivered to the Hon. Mr. Stuyvesant, the present Governor, on Munday next by Eight of the Clock in the Morning, at the Old Miln; and these Articles consented to, and signed by Colonel Richard Nicolls, Deputy-Governor to his Royal Highness; and that within two Hours after the Fort and Town called New Amsterdam, upon the Isle of Manhattoes, shall be delivered into the Hands of the said Colonel Richard Nicolls, by the Service of such as shall be by him thereunto deputed, by his Hand and Seal.

John De Decker,
Nich. Verleet,
Sam. Megapolensis,
Cornelius Steenwick,
Oloffte Stevens Van Kortlant,
James Cousseau,
Robert Carr,
Geo. Cartwright,
John Winthrop,
Sam. Willys,
Thomas Clarke,
John Pinchon.

I do consent to these articles,

RICHARD NICOLLS.

The division of Long Island by the Treaty of Hartford, in 1650, is given below:

TREATY OF HARTFORD, 1650.

Articles of agreement made and concluded at Hartford, upon Conecticut, September 19, 1650, between delegates of the Commissioners of the United English colonies, and the delegates of Peter Stuyvesant, governor-general of New Netherlands—concerning the bounds and limits between the English United Colonies and the Dutch province of New Netherlands.

We agree and determine as follows:

That upon Long Island, a line run from the westernmost part of Oysterbay, and so in a straight and direct line to the sea, shall be the bounds between the English and the Dutch there, the easterly part to belong to the English, and the westernmost part to the Dutch.

The bounds upon the main to begin upon the west side of Greenwich Bay, being about four miles from Stamford, and so to run a westerly line twenty miles up into the country, and after, as it shall be agreed by the two governments of the Dutch and New Haven, provided that said line run not within ten miles of Hudson's River, and it is agreed that the Dutch shall not, at any time hereafter, build any house or habitation within six miles of the said line. The inhabitants of Greenwich to remain (till further consideration thereof be had,) under the government of the Dutch.

That the Dutch shall hold and enjoy all the lands in Hartford that they are actually in possession of, known or set out by certain marks and bounds, and all the remainder of the said lands, on both sides of Connecticut River, to be and remain to the English there.

And it is agreed, that the aforesaid bounds and limits, both upon the island and main, shall be observed and kept inviolable, both by the English of the United Colonies and all the Dutch nation, without any encroachment or molestation, until a full determination be agreed upon in Europe, by mutual consent of the two States of England and Holland. And in testimony of our joint consent to the several foregoing conditions, we have hereunto set our hands this 19th day of September, 1650.

SIMON BRADSTREET,
THOMAS PRINCE,
THOMAS WILLET,
GEORGE BAXTER.

CAPTAIN MULFORD'S TROUBLE, 1717.

Captain Samuel Mulford, of 7 East Hampton was the eldest son of one of the first settlers of that town and was born in 1644. In 1705 he was elected a member of the Assembly and held that office until 1720. Mr. Pelletreau in a biographical sketch of this sturdy patriot, says:

The greatest grievance of Captain Mulford's fellow townsmen was a tax which, without shadow of law or justice, had been levied by the governor upon the products of the whale fishery, he demanding a tenth as a right of royalty. Against this unjust demand the people, with Mulford at their head, rose as one man. In a memorial addressed to the king he recounts the facts that the taking of whales by the people continued "above fifty years before the captors heard of any duty for so doing until of late," and that it was looked upon as "an imposition contrary to the law of the colony."

It also seems that Captain Mulford and his two sons and Colonel Richard Floyd, of Brookhaven, "had been arrested on an action of trover for converting the Queen's goods to their own use," and that this case had been "carried from court to court to the number of fifteen or sixteen courts." The case against Colonel Floyd was, that Captain Theophilus Howell's company of Southampton had a license to take whales, obliging themselves to pay one-twentieth part of all they gained. This party killed a whale and brought it ashore, and in the night a strong east wind drove it along shore about forty miles. The owners of the whale put it into Floyd's hands to try out, and he was prosecuted by the governor for the whale. The defense that was made by Captain Mulford is an example of careful reasoning which before an unprejudiced tribunal could not fail to command respect; but judgment was given against him, and in every possible way he was annoyed by persecutions and penalties.

On the 2d of April, 1714, he made a speech in the Assembly, "putting them in mind of some ill measures I was informed were taken." This speech was printed, and brought down upon the devoted head of its author the wrath of the royal governor. Suit was instituted against Mulford in the supreme court, and as it was in the power of the governor to prolong the matter it kept him away from his home, and deprived him of the opportunity of attend-

ing to his personal affairs. Conscious of the injustice the Assembly united in a petition that the prosecution might be dropped and Captain Mulford permitted to return to his native town. With that tenacity of purpose which distinguished him through life he resolved to make the journey to England, and there to present his wrongs in person to the king and council and demand redress. A voyage across the Atlantic at that time was something that called for the vigor of early manhood, but it was unhesitatingly undertaken by this man, whose head was whitened by the frosts of seventy years, but whose spirit was unconquered. To conceal his departure he made his way to Boston to embark, and duly arrived at London. Unaccustomed to the sights and sounds of crowded cities, and with none to urge his case or assist his claim, Samuel Mulford stood in England's capital, unknowing and unknown. The attendants of court had no attentions for the plain man from a distant colony, who came unannounced by the voice of fame and unaccompanied with the pomp of power. At length, by one of those singular circumstances which, insignificant in themselves, sometimes turn the tide of human events and set at naught all human calculations, attention was drawn to his case, and justice obtained for his cause. His unsophisticated appearance rendered him a conspicuous and suitable subject for the operations of the light-fingered gentry, and the contents of his pockets were quickly transferred to their own. It would seem as if the proverbial Yankee sharpness must have been early developed in this clime and prompted him to have several fishhooks sewn into his garments in such a manner that the next hand that was introduced into his pocket received an invitation to remain that it was found impossible to decline. This amusing affair was quickly noised abroad; it was mentioned in the newspapers at the time, and from an unknown individual he became the topic of the hour. His case was examined before the council, his information duly appreciated, the tax on oil ordered to be taken off, and he returned to his constituents with his efforts crowned with well merited success. At his return he took his seat in the Assembly. The hatred of the governor was not appeased; the old subject of the speech was revived, and by the vote of a subservient house he was expelled from his seat. It is needless to say that the people of Suffolk county did honor to themselves by immediately re-electing him to the

place he had filled so long and so well, and he continued to serve as their representative till October 17, 1720, when he was again expelled, for protesting against the legality of the house and refusing to unite in an address to the governor. Thus ended his public career, but to the end of his life he was in his native town an honored man.

The following documents illustrate the details of this controversy from Captain Mulford's standpoint and were written by him:

A MEMORIAL OF SEVERAL AGGRIEVANCES AND
OPPRESSIONS OF HIS MAJESTY'S SUBJECTS
IN THE COLONY OF NEW YORK IN
AMERICA

Sheweth: When the Enemies of the Nation had, by their wicked Councils and trayterous Intreagues, brought our Nation to the very Brink of being swallowed up by Popish Syperstition and Arbitrary Government, it pleased the Almighty God by his wonderful Omnipotence to bring in Peace and settle his Most Sacred Majesty, King GEORGE, upon the British Throne; and it is to be hoped, that his Subjects in distant Countries, and in particular those of the Colony of New York may in some Measure feel the Influence of his Happy Government, and be in due time relieved from all Oppressions.

The West End of the Island Nassau, (the then Manhados) Hutsons River and Staten Island were first settled by the Dutch from Holland, in great Danger and Hardship many of them being slain by the Salvages; the East End of the same Island by English under the Crown of England (they then being a Part of Connecticut-Colony) who also settled in great Hazard and Hardship. In some time after the Natives were suppressed, in the Year 1664, General Nicols with a Fleet of Ships and some Land Forces reduced the then Manhados to the King's Obedience, it being delivered to him upon Articles. And being thus subjected to the Crown, King Charles the Second making a grant of the same to his Brother James Duke of York, as by the same may at large appear, the said General Nicols and Commissioners demanded the East End of the Island; and though the Inhabitants thereof were much against, being moved from Connecticut to New York, yet it was their Misery and unhappy Fate to have it to be so. The

Governor, Commissioners and Council took upon them the Legislative Power, and the People were governed by their Ordinances, until Governor Dungan came to be over them, then an Assembly were called, which Privilege was then declared to be the People's Right; and some time after an Act of Assembly passed, That the Persons to be Elected to sit as Representatives in the General Assembly from time to time, for the several Cities, Towns, Counties, Shires, Divisions or Mannors of this Province, and all Places within the same, shall be according to the Proportion and Number hereafter expressed; that is to say, For the City and County of New-York four, for the County of Suffolk two, for Queens-County two, for Kings-County two, for the County of Richmond two, for the County of Westchester two, for the County of Ulster two, for the County of Albany two, for the Mannor of Ranslerwick one, and for Dukes County two, and as many more as their Majesties, their Heirs and Successors shall think fit to establish; That all Persons chosen as aforesaid, or the major Part of them shall be deemed and accounted the Representatives of this Province in General Assembly, and such Acts made by them, consented to by the Governor and Counsel, shall be the Laws of the Province, until they are disallowed by their Majesties, their Heirs and Successors, or expire by their own Limitation. And though by this Act, their Majesties, their Heirs and Successors may establish as many more, as they shall think fit: It is not to be thought that our Most Gracious Sovereign King George, will establish so many in such Places, that they may live upon other Parts of the Government, and great Injustice be done thereby, neither give Power to his Governor so to do; But that his Most Sacred Majesty would have Justice done: Notwithstanding of late there hath been Precepts issued out for Choice of Representatives in what Part and Places of the Government as he pleaseth. So that notwithstanding the Law, they are raised to the Number of Twenty Five; and now the Minor Part of the People in the Government have the Major Part of the Assembly, and for their Interest Oppress a great Part of the People, and they lie under great Disadvantages; as may appear by the following proportion of a 4000*l.* Tax, and several other Particulars upon the several Counties in the Colony, here is an Account of the men, Inhabitants in each County, and their Rep-

resentatives in the Assembly; also the Quota of Tax in the same.

	Number of Men	Assembly Men	Quota of Tax		
			L	S	D
In the City and County of New Yk	1200	4	885	00	0
County of Albany, with Ranslerw'h	540	4	175	10	0
Kings County.....	420	2	730	00	0
Queens County.....	1000	2	644	10	0
County of Suffolk.....	800	2	680	10	0
County of Ulster.....	620	2	311	10	0
County of Westchester.....	630	3	240	00	0
County of Richmond.....	350	2	226	13	4
Orange County.....	65	2	60	00	0
Dutchess County.....	60	2	46	06	8
	5685	25	4000	00	0

By this plan it is evident, that the several Counties are very unequally Represented, as well with Regard to the Number of Inhabitants in each, as to the Taxes they pay; And to this Disproportion of Assembly-Men is to be ascribed the unequal Taxing of the several Counties, without respect to their Number of People, their Riches and Commerce. To evince this it will appear, that Kings-County, Queens-County and County of Suffolk, which contain 2220 Men, have only Six Representatives in Assembly, and are taxed 2055*l.* whereas all the other Counties, having in them 3465 Men and so many Representatives that they are Taxed only at 1945*l.* So that at this time there is up Hudsons River Ten Assembly-Men, in Albany, Ranslerwick, Ulster, Orange and Dutchess Counties, and all those Ten represent, do not pay in one Tax so much as one County on the Island of Nassau, where they have but two in each County. And for what Disbursements and Services done on the same Island, for publick Service there is very little if anything paid them: When for publick Disbursements and Services done up Hudsons River (do but give it the Name for their Majesties Service) altho' it be to draw Trade to them, or to go to purchase Land for themselves, it is brought to the Assembly to put the Charge upon the Country; and for the most part they get twice so much as others in part of the Government would demand for the same Service, if it were not for the Publick.

It is a Privilege to have an Assembly, if it were as near as may be according to the Number of the People in each County, that Justice and Right might be done: But to have the

Name and nothing of the Nature, is but a Snare to the greatest Part of the People in the Colony, and would be easier for them that there was not any Assembly, than to have such an One as endeavour to live upon their Neighbours, and not by them, and shall be called True and Loyal Subjects, complying to all Proposals for some Men's Advantage; when others, endeavoring to have Justice and Right done, and speak any thing for Property and Liberty of the Subjects, shall be looked upon as Criminals, if not prosecuted for the same, as Capt. Mulford was. It is supposed there are some things else besides Loyalty, as An Office with a Sallary, A Grant of some Lands, and A Sallery of Three Hundred Pounds per Ann. to the Commissioners of the Indian Affairs at Albany; though it is not known to the Country, what Service they do to the King or Country, except it be to draw Trade to themselves and Debts upon the Country, and procure a Resolve of the Assembly to allow them 300*l.* per Annum for five Years, and also to Allow the Indians 400*l.* by a Resolve of the House for the same time. And so in time of Peace have brought the Colony to be Tributaries to the Heathen, and when the five Years are expired, the Indians will expect it for ever; and if they have it not, they will think they have just Cause to Quarrel with the English. And of what dismal Consequence are such Measures! But it is thought that the Indians did not expect such a Present now, but that it was somebody else that wanted it: For 400*l.* at New York, with the Customary Advance of 50*l.* Per Cent. at Albany, makes 600*l.* And if the Indians have 400*l.* there, it will do; also somebody must present it to the Indians, who in Retaliation return several Packs of Beaver and other Skins: The Report is, that sometimes to the Value of the Present, which is unknown to the Publick what becomes of it. But it is thought to be the greatest Reason of Making the Present, and so bring His Majesties Subjects to be Tributaries. If it were of Necessity to do it, and were for the publick good of the Plantations in America, why do not the Neighbouring Colonies assist, which are as deeply concerned for their own Security?

The Indians that fled out of New-England are settled near Albany, and those from North-Carolina, when fled from thence, come there for Shelter, amongst those Indians which their Majesties Subjects in New-York-Government

are brought to be Tributaries to; and it is thought that the Present that was made to those Indians in the Year 1713, put them in a Capacity to assist in destroying their Majesties Subjects in South-Carolina. The Report is, That when the Wars were in North-Carolina they had Assistance from South Carolina, the Albany-Members informed the Assembly, That there was Five Hundred of the Enemy Indians come amongst the Five Nations. They also informed the House, That they thought it was requisit to make a Present to the Indians: Amongst some slight Arguments, they said, The young Men amongst our Indians armed themselves, and it was to be feared they were upon some ill Design: So in the latter End of the Summer they had a Present of 400*l.* The Report was, That the Winter following there were Indians from South-Carolina amongst the Five Nations, complaining that the English at South Carolina had taken their Land from them, and craved their Assistance. In the Spring following the Wars were at South-Carolina, and it was reported, that several Indians from those Five Nations were gone when the Wars were there, and the latter End of that Summer the Indians Sold (at Scunnatade, about twenty Miles above Albany,) Beaver Hats bound with Silver Lace, Wigs, good Broad Cloth Coats, and Shirts: It is so reported that it is thought to be real Matter of Fact, and it might be well if it were not so. It was commonly reported, That the Albany-People made a Truce with the French of Canada, and had a Trade with them all the Time of the Wars: Notwithstanding by their Remonstrances to the Assembly, of their Danger, and they being a Frontier, the Country was at great charge keeping Garrison there, and all the Officers must be of Albany, and most of the Money for that Service centers among them; which was thought to be the greatest Reason for that Service.

And if the Governor for the time being hath power to establish so many Representatives, and in what Places of the Government he pleaseth (as it now is) and such as for their own Interest will do and comply with all the Proposals to bring it to pass, and the Governor to put in Office whom he will, and as many as he pleaseth, and allow them what Sallary he sees cause, and all the publick Money in the Government at his Disposal, to no other Use but at his Will: Then the People in the Colony have not the Property and

Liberty of English Subjects, but are subjected to some Mens Avarice; not only to those who have the Name of Christians, but to the barbarous and cruel Heathen. And is it not a Dishonour to His Majesties Crown and Dignity, that his Subjects should be sold Tributaries to them? Would it not be better for them to part with one Half of their Personal Estates, for Encouragement for 5000 or 6000 Men to come and suppress those Salvages, that his Majesties Subjects could not live quietly by, and to possess their Lands, and not become Tributaries to them, or at least to do as those of Quebeck did in October, 18, 1716, on the Interruption of their Commerce by the Savages, living Four Hundred Leagues up the Country, went with Three Hundred French and Six Hundred Savages their Allies, to bring them to a better Temper: And finding the Enemy well entrenched with Pallisadoes and good Ditches, they planted themselves near enough to the Pallisadoes, and threw two Granadoes, brought them to Surrender and agree to pay the Expence they had been at, and restore to the French their former Skin-Trade, as before; and they had but one Frenchman and two Savages wounded in that Expedition, though there were above 3000 Men Women and Children in that Fort. So that it is a Quære, whether it be not more for some particular Mens Interest, to make so much Stir for Presents to the Indians and bring the Colony to such vast Charge, than it is for the publick Good.

The poor Colony of New-York, containing in it not above 6000 Men at the most, were at the Charge of at least 30000*l.* upon the Expedition for Canada, upwards of 27000*l.* to pay some small Debts and make good the Embasement of the publick Money in the Government, and 4045*l.* per Annum for five Years by Resolves of the House, part of which is to bring them to be Tributaries to the Heathen, and pay Men to bring it so to be; and now the Colony is miserably distressed, if not vasaled: The Sence whereof caused several to move out of the same, and several more purpose to do so, if they cannot be relieved.

A great Part of the Aggrievances and Injustice done in the Colony may be ascribed to an unequal Proportion of Representatives; and if not redressed, may ruin the Colony. If there were an equal Proportion of them, as near as may be according to the Number of the People in each County, then they might

in the strongest Manner unite the Hearts of all the Subjects, and put an effectual End to all the Feuds and Animosities that have obstructed Prosperity in the Colony for a Course of many Years.

There is a Court of Chancery erected at New-York, where the Governor is sole Judge, and if he demands any thing in the King's Name and it is not comply'd with, they shall be subpoena'd to the Court of Chancery, where the Governor shall judge whether he shall have his Demands; the Masters of Chancery shall not judge in the Cause, only tax the Costs of the Court. So in all Cases that come to that Court, the Governor is only and sole Judge, whether the Cause be right by the Verdict of Twelve Men and Judgment upon the same. So the Governor becomes The End of all Law and Judgment in the Government: Let the Judicial Reader judge, whether it be not a Miserable and Unhappy Fate to be subjected, both Persons and Estates, to the Will and Pleasure of any Governor for the time being, especially considering the People under the Government by Experience find the chief End of their Coming. It may be said, You have an Agent for your Colony. Answer, Though there be an Act for an Agent for the Colony of New-York, yet by the same Act he is Agent for the Governor, and not for the Country, they have nothing to do but to pay him, and send to him such Instructions as the Governor shall approve of; for it is said in the Act, That the Instructions sent to him, shall be by the Governor and Council, or General Assembly; and what is sent by the Governor and Council, shall be Signed by the Governor and major Part of the Council, residing within the Province, and what is sent by the General Assembly, shall be Signed by the major Part of them and the Speaker; and if any thing comes to him otherwise, then as aforesaid, he shall not have any Regard to it.

Observe, The Governor hath Power to call some to sit in Council, they must acquiesce with what he proposeth, lest they be suspended; and for the Assembly, if the Governor hath Power to have them chosen where he pleaseth, and get the Soldiers to chuse for such Men in New-York as they shall be directed to chuse to serve upon the Assembly, the most subtle Men to have a grant of some Lands, an office with a large Sallary, as several of the Assembly Men have, they must comply to the Governor's Proposals, and make Resolves to allow

the Governor 171*ol.* per Annum for five Years, the Chief Justice 300*l.* per Annum, for the same time, the Commissioners of the Indian Affairs at Albany 300*l.* per Annum, for the same time, and some others of the Assembly Sums too tedious here to relate.

So that some for their Interest and others for Fear dare not oppose any thing proposed, but comply with whatsoever is for the Governor's and some cunning Mens Advantages: And how can the major Part of the Assembly make known the Aggrievances of the People, when they are drawn and deter'd from speaking. And if the major Part and Speaker of the Assembly should be about to send to the Agent, if the Governor should not like it, he could dissolve the Assembly at his Pleasure, and so prevent them of sending. So it must be what he pleaseth; and if Demetrius and the Craftsmen of the same Occupation made such an Uproar about Paul's Preaching the Gospel at Ephesus, because it took away their gain and Wealth, what Stir do you think these Men will make, if any should endeavour to break the Schemes they have laid, whereby they get their Wealth, and wholly subject the People to their Pleasure? But if the Governor be infallible, and the People under his Government both Persons and Estates at his Pleasure, then it is in vain to dispond or complain; but if the People have Property, and the Government ought to be carried on for His Majesties Benefit, and Good of the Subjects, then such Measures as these ought to be took into consideration and what is amiss to be rectified.

The People in New-York Government have been called Stubborn, Reflectory, little if any thing less than Rebels, when they have been Oppressed under the Government, and Ruinous Measures taken amongst them, whereby they are deprived of the Privileges of Englishmen, and they have been uneasie under the same: And there is not any Reason to Villify, Scandalize and Reproach them, except to render them so vile, that not any should have regard of them, to relieve them from Oppressions. But he that doth Injustice dishonours the King, and those that endeavour to uphold and vindicate such, are Accessories though not Principals.

These are some of the Measures that are and have been taken in New-York Government; although the truth of this may be questioned, yet many One in the Colony of New-York by woful Experience knows this and sev-

eral other Oppressions to be real Matter of Fact.

And although there was an Act of Parliament passed in the Reign of King William III. For Punishing of Governors of Plantations in this Kingdom, for Crimes by them committed in the Plantations, what Benefit can the People in New-York Government have by this Act, when they can not have an Agent to be informed of the Aggrievances of the People, nor any Publick Money in the Government, to enable any other Person to do it, but what the Governor pleaseth. And for particular persons, when denied to make Use of the Customs of the Colony and Grants made by former Governors, denied the Benefit of the Laws of the Colony, Prosecuted contrary to Law, passed upon and destroyed without due Course of Law; How shall they be relieved from such Oppressions, when by their Poverty and Ruinous Measures are so impoverish'd, that they have not Money to prosecute in such Case? These must be Ruin'd: for there is not any Fencing against a Flail.

So, by what is here set forth, may be left to the Consideration of all Judicial Persons, what Encouragement such a small People as are in New-York Colony have, to allow their Governor such a large Sallery. Quære, Is the Government carried on for their Majesties Benefit, and Good of the Subjects, according to the Laws and Customs of the Colony, and according to English Government; or is it Arbitrary, Illegal, Grievous, Oppressive, Unjust and Destructive?

AN INFORMATION.

It hath been a Custom, for above 60 Years, (several Years before New-York was Subjected to the Crown of England) for their Majesties Subjects, on the East End of Long-Island then belonging to Connecticut Colony, to go out upon the Seas adjacent to their Land, Six Men in a small boat to take and kill Whales and other Fish, and the Capters to have all they killed, brought on Shore, or left dead or wounded; so that they came on Shore with Wind or Sea, which continued above Fifty Years, before the Capters heard of any Duty for so doing, until of late, by violent Proceedings, frighted some to do it, when generally it was look'd upon to be an Imposition, contrary to the Law of the Colony: And while my

Lord Lovelace was Governour; Maj. Engolseebe Lieutenant Governour, and Colonel Beaman President, there was not any thing demanded nor paid by the Capters; so it ceased until Brigadier Hunter came; then he imposed upon the People, seizing Whales, Oyl and Bone, and subpoena'd the Capters to New-York to the Court of Chancery, issuing out Prosecutions at Law, to compel People to pay Duty for that Fishery: Whereupon, in the Year 1712, they commenced an Action of Trover against me, in the Supream Court at New-York, and also arrested Colonel Richard Floyd and my two sons Timothy and Matthew Mulford, in an Action of Trover, for converting the Queens Goods to their own Use: This was carried on from Court to Court, to the Number of Fifteen or Sixteen Courts. Here follows the Defence I made in the Courts.

SAMUEL MULFORD'S DEFENCE FOR HIS WHALE FISHING.

New-York, March the 15th, 1715-16.
The Custom of the Whale-Fishing is a Free Custom; because there is not any Law to Prohibit it: It is an Antient Custom, to the Third and Fourth Generation; it is more Antient than the Colony of New-York, and not in any Man's Memory to the contrary till of late: And in the Year 1686, we, the town of Easthampton, had a Patent to us, by the King's Governour, with several Priviledges therein granted to this Corporation, for which we pay 40s. per Annum to the Crown, amongst which it was granted to us, to have Rivers, Rivulets, Waters, Lakes, Ponds, Brooks, Streams, Beaches, Quarries, Mines, Minerals, Creeks, Harbours, High-Ways and Easements; Fishing, Hawking, Hunting and Fowling, [Silver and Gold Mines excepted] and all other Franchises, Profits, Commodities and Hereditaments, whatsoever, to the said Tracts and Necks of Land belonging or in any wise appertaining, or there withal used, accepted, reputed or taken to belong, or any wise appertain, To All Intents and Purposes, and Constructions whatsoever: So that we have Waters, Lakes, which is Sea, and Fishing granted to us, and nothing prohibited, but granted to us, except Silver and Gold Mines, The Whale-Fishing was our Fishing at the time of the Grant, and several Years before; so we hold it to be our Right to continue so to do, it being reputed to be one of the Franchises con-

firmed to us both by Patent, Law and Reason: And in the Third Year of King William and Queen Mary, 1691, there was an Act of Assembly passed, That no Aid, Tax, Tallage, or Custom, Loan, Benevolence, Gift, Excise, Duty or Imposition whatsoever, shall be Laid, assessed, imposed, levied or required of or on any of their Majesties Subjects in this Province: Or their Estates upon any manner of Colour or Pretence whatsoever; but by the Act and Consent of the Governour, and Counsels, and Representatives of the People, in General Assembly met and convened; also by another Act of Assembly, made at the same time, confirming Patents and Grants, which by the Act may at large appear, And also unto all and every of the several respective Free Holders, their Heirs and Assigns for ever within this Province, are to all Intents and Purposes whatsoever, hereby Ratified and confirmed to have, Hold, Exercise, occupy, possess and enjoy all their, and every of their Former Rights, Customs, Prerogatives, Priviledges, Preheminences, Practices, Imunities, Liberties, Franchises, Royalties and Usages whatsoever: And in their Majesties Letters Patent to the Governour for the time being, saith, You shall call to your Self, some of the principal Free-Holders to sit in General Assembly, and such Acts as are made by them, consented to by the Governour and Counsel, shall be the Law of the Province, except they are disallowed by us. These two acts above mentioned were never disallowed by the Crown that ever I heard of, neither by Record or Information from the Crown to this Government; so consequently they must be the Laws of this Colony, until they appear to be disallowed by their Majesties: So that the Prosecution of me, for Whale-Fishing, I take it to be against the Form of our Grant to this Corporation; against the Laws of this Colony, and against Reason and the Governour for the time being's Instructions from the Crown; for it is said therein, You shall carry on the Government for our Benefit and the Good of the Subjects, according to the Laws and Customs of the Colony. It is hurt to the Common-Wealth of this Colony, against the Crown to hinder Effects being taken, to make Returns Home for England, to purchase the Manufacture of the growth of that Realm; and although Mr. Attorney General was pleased to commence an Action in Behalf of the Crown, in the Supream Court at New-York, against me, and

prosecute from time to time for above Three Years, I know not any Law the Action is grounded upon, but Consequence or Pretence; for I have not done any thing in that Case, but what is according to the Laws and Customs of the Colony, it is a common Saying, where there is no Law there is no Transgression; and in this case I do not see how any can give Judgment against me, if he have Regard to the former Governors Grant, the Law of this Colony, the Governours Instructions from the King, Reason and a publick Good of the Subjects, which is the End of all good Laws: I query, what Judgment and Penalty shall be put upon any of their Majesties Subjects, that have not done any thing contrary to Law and Custom, but consonant to both, and only made use of an Antient Custom and Usage confirmed by Patent, Law and their Majesties Instructions: I have not done any thing but used a particular Custom, as I take it to be neither against the Law of God nor the Law of Reason, and to be good and necessary to the Commonwealth.

I understand, within the Realm of England, a General Custom is to be decided by the Justices, which I take to be the Twelve Judges: But if not, I suppose it must be more than One single Person; but in a particular Custom (as this is) the Student at Law saith, If it be not against the Law of God nor the Law of Reason, although they be against the said general Customs or Maxims of the Law: yet nevertheless, they stand in Effect and be taken for Law: But if it rise in Question in the King's Courts, Whether there be any such particular Custom or not? It shall be tried by Twelve Men, and not by the Judges, except the same particular Custom be of record in the same Court; And if not to be tried by the Judges, to be sure not by one particular Judge, So I crave and Request of this Honoured Court, the Judgment of Twelve Men, my Peers of the same Vicknage, that may know something of the Matter, that Justice and Right may be done in such Matter of great Consequence as this is.

And in fine, We have Water and Lakes, which is Sea, granted to us. In the 8th Chapter of St. Matthew, Verse 22. it is said, The Herd of Swine ran into the Sea; And St. Mark, Chap. 5. Ver. 13. saith, They ran into the Sea: St. Luke, Chap. 8. Ver. 33. saith, They ran into the Lake and were choaked. So that by the most Infallible Rule, the Lake is

Sea, and the Sea adjacent to the Land is Lake, which is granted to us, it being one of the Premises of the Grant. And we have Fishing granted to us, which we hold of the Crown, and pay an Acknowledgment for the same. And I know not any Reason why we should not fish in the Waters and Lakes granted to us: There is not any Sort of Fishing prohibited, Silver and Gold Mines are excepted, and all other Franchises, Profits, Commodities and Hereditaments whatsoever, to the said Tracts and Necks of Land and Premises belonging, or in any wise appertaining, or therewithal used, accepted, reputed, or taken to belong, or in any wise appertain, to all Intents, and Purposes, and Constructions whatsoever. The Whale-Fishing at the Time of our Grant, was used, accepted, reputed, and taken to belong to us, and hath been ever since till of late. And although there might have been more Words put into the Grant, to have made it more plain to be understood, yet the law doth it: For the Law in express Words confirms our Patents and Grants, against the King, His Heirs and Successors for ever, notwithstanding the Want of Form in the Law, or Nonfeizance of any Right, Priviledge, or Custom, which ought to have been done heretofore, by the Constitutions and Directions contained in the respective Charters, Patents and Grants aforesaid. And the Law proceeds farther, to say, what the Priviledges granted to the Subjects are, as at large may appear in the same. And if a Grant from the Crown, the Laws of this Colony, nor the Instructions from the King to the Governors for the Time being, will not secure the Priviledges of the Subjects, according to the Laws and Customs of this Colony, what shall a Man say, but request and crave the Priviledges of an English Man, and not to be passed upon but by due Course of Law.

My Council pleaded an Act of Parliament for the Subjects within this Kingdom to go a Whale Fishing to Greenland, Friezland and Places adjacent, and for the Oyl and Fins they so got should not pay any Duty. Also Newfoundland and the Plantations in New-England, who should pay a Duty for that when brought into this Kingdom. He shewed the Act to the Court. Upon the Tryal I was denied to have a Jury. My Council had pleaded a former Court, that we had Right by Prescription; upon which the Attorney-General pleaded a Demur, and it was a matter of Law;

so I should not have a Jury: Although formerly, in the Year 1694, Peter Choke seized a Whale killed by Richard Smiths, Esq; Company, he sued for the same in the Supream Court at New-York, and Judgment was given in Favour of the Subject. On Thursday the Chief Justice said he should defer Judgment until Saturday. On Fryday he sent his Man to me with a Note, the Copy whereof is as followeth:

To Samuel Mulford, Esq; These.

Sir, I desire you will send me by the Bearer, the Paper you read in Court Yesterday; for I did not take any Notice on my Paper, and cannot remember so long a Discourse, so as to form any Judgment of what you offered in your own Defense, except I read it.

I am, Sir, Your Servant,

LEWIS MORIS.

The Answer that I returned, was, Sir, You had it Yesterday in the Court.

On the Tryal there was only the Chief Justice on the Bench. My Council pleaded, that Judgment ought to be according to Justice: The Judge said he could give Judgment conditionally. The Clerk wrote something, but I did not hear the Judge give Judgment, nor hear him direct the Clerk what to write, neither did he read what he wrote in the Court. Then the Court adjourned until next Term. So I could not know whether there was a Judgment passed, nor what it was. The Report was, that there was a Judgment against me: I desired the Officer to give me a Copy of the Courts Proceeding about the Whale-Fishing. The 3d time I spake to him he could not give me a Copy, because the Attorney-General had the Rolls. I went to the Attorney-General, desired him to let the Officer have the Rolls, that he might give me a Copy. I was with them for a Copy in May, June and August, and I could not have any Copy. The Officer said, he could not do it, because the Attorney-General did not let him have the same. I desired the Officer to give me under his Hand, the Reason why he did not give me a Copy, which he refused to do. I desired some to go with me, that they might be witnesses that I demanded a Copy; but they would not, and said, if they should they should have Ill-will, and might have an Injury done them. And although I could not know in the Court what was done, I was informed the Judge did give Judgment against me, my two Sons and Col. Richard Floyd. So they made it all one Case upon Tryal, but every one particular in

the Court Charges; but there ought to have been particular Pleadings, because the said Floyd's Case was thus: Capt. Theophilus Howl's Company in Bridghampton had a License from the Governor to go to kill Whales, obliging themselves to pay the 20th Part. This Company killed this Whale, and brought it on Shore. In the Night a strong Eastwardly Wind drove it along Shore about Forty Miles. The Owners of this Whale put it into the said Floyd's Hands, to cut it up and make it into Oyl for them. The said Floyd is prosecuted for this Whale, and the Capters having their Whale kept out of their Possession, by Reason of the Prosecution, next Season would not take a License: So that Nine Men were subpena'd to New-York the 24th of June, in the most busy Time in the Summer, one Hundred Miles, to pay the 20th Part of what they got the Winter before, besides Charges. So that if they will not take a License, they shall be molested, if they do, they may lose their Whale.

Some time after the Supream Court was over, there was a Jury of Enquiry impannelled, to enquire what Damage was done to the Crown by our Killing Whales. The Jury was told, there was a Judgment against us, and their Business was only to say what a Whale was worth. So that they could not but say a Whale was worth Something. So Execution was issued out, and Distress made upon our Estates for using an Antient Custom; because one Single Judge was of Opinion, That they had not right by Prescription, though they had by Law, but we know not what is Law. The Chief Justice makes an Argument, that we have nothing to do with Acts of Parliament, we have no Law but what the Crown allows us. But we know by Experience, That all Penalties by Act of Parliament and Laws of the Colony shall be severely put in Execution; when if by either of them the People might have a Benefit it shall do them little or no good. Our Attorney-General said in Court, when pleading about the Whale-Fishing, If there was an Act of Assembly to give the Liberty to go to Sea a Whale-Fishing, it signifies nothing. So what our Officers please is Law. I desire and hope, for a publick Good, that the Subjects in the Plantation of America, might have the Whale-Fishing so settled, that they may be encouraged to go on that Design, and be capacitated to have Commerce with this Kingdom, to purchase the Manufacture of the same. I know no Reason why the Subjects

in New York and New Jersey Governments should not have the same Liberty to Fish for Whales as freely as other Subjects in their Neighboring Colonies in America have, or as the French King hath granted his Subjects to do, and not be deprived of Right and Privileges granted to us, for which we pay an Acknowledgment to the Crown, for Quit-Rents for our Land five Shillings, and an Acknowledgement for Priviledges fourty Shillings per annum; of which the Whale-Fishing was most Material, and several Places in the Colony pay the same.

I have seen a Memorial, setting forth several Aggrievances and Oppressions in the Colony of New York; I know several things therein mentioned to be too true to make a Jest of.

In the Year 1713, I with my Son Matthew Mulford was subpena'd to appear at the Court of Chancery at New-York on the 9th of April: My Son then had not one Foot of Land, nor ever was a Trustee; so was not prosecuted, but was forced to go 115 Miles to New York, and the same back, to be afflicted and put to Charge. And I that had not been in the Station of a Trustee for several Years before, could not pay the Debt of the Corporation, without Orders from the Trustees: But upon our being subpena'd to New York, the Trustees sent a Man to New York, to pay what the Corporation was in Arrears; but the Receiver-General would not receive it: So they ordered me to receive the Money and pay it. I tendered the Money to the Receiver, he would not receive it, and said he had put that Matter into the Attorney General's Hands, I must go to him. So I went and tendered him Sixteen Pounds, for him to take what was due; and also eight Pounds for him to take the Charge out of it: He said he could do nothing, and would not receive it. The next Week in the Court of Chancery, it was proved that I had made a Tender of the Money, as abovesaid. The Decree of Chancery was, That I should pay to the Register of the Court Fifteen Pounds and Fifteen Shillings, and the Charge as it should be taxed by one of the Masters of Chancery, and if the Receiver-General did not see Cause to accept thereof, but shall further prosecute: In such Case, if he did not make it appear there was more due, I should not pay any more Charge. I paid the 15*l.* 15*s.* to the Register of the Court, and 5*l.* and 10*d.* taxed for Costs to the Attorney-General, and took their Receipts for the same, and comply'd with

the Decree as far as I was capable, remain'd at New-York Fifty Days upon the General Assembly. Soon after I got home, a Man was sent down, being hired as it was said, for 5*l.* 10*s.* to bring a Writ to our Sheriff to arrest me. The Sheriff did arrest, and I gave Security for Appearance. I was charged with Contempt, but when I came to New York, being 115 Miles from my Abode, they could not make any thing out against me, only pretended that I was not discharged from that Court, neither could I get a Discharge until I had paid them Twenty Shillings. So in this Case I was prosecuted contrary to the Form of the Grant of the Quit-Rents, and the Custom of the Colony, if not a Breach of the Instructions from the Crown and the Decree of Chancery. So it was said, They were at 5*l.* 10*s.* Charge, to compel me to ride 130 Miles to pay them Twenty Shillings, I being near Seventy Years of Age. By the Grant, the Trustees are the only capable Persons to act and do all things in Reference to the Corporation, and every particular Freeholder, not being a Trustee, hath not any thing to do with the Money of the Corporation without their order.

It was the Peoples Pleasure to chuse me to be their Representative to sit in the General Assembly, to assist in having the Government carried on for their Majesties Benefit and Good of the Subjects. In the Year 1714, upon the 2d Day of April, I made a Speech in the House, putting them in Mind of some ill Measures that I was informed were taken, and to set things in their true Light, that Justice and Right might be done amongst us. There was a Discourse of having it Printed, but the Question was not put; however a Copy was desired and taken, which was printed. That Assembly being dissolved and another chose, who expel'd me out of the House upon the 2d Day of June, 1715, about that Speech. The next Week the Supream Court sate, and there was an Indictment drawn, charging me with an High Misdemeanor, acting contrary to my Duty of Allegiance, in manifest Contempt of his Majesty, and the Governour of these Provinces under His said Majesty, and against the Peace of Our said Lord the King, His Crown and Dignity, and against the Form of the Statutes made and provided: Whereupon the said David Jeneson, who &c. for our said Lord the King, prays the Advice of this Court in the Premisses, and that the said Samuel Mulford be attached by his Body whersoever, &c. To

answer our said Lord the King in the Premises. The Indictment was brought to the Grand Jury, who return'd it to the Court indorsed Ignoramus. The Attorney General makes Information and obtains a Capias to our Sheriff, to take me a Prisoner, to bring me to New-York before the Chief Justice upon the first Tuesday in September at the Supream Court, where Recognizance was required and given of 500*l*. Mr. Vandam and Mr. Delunsey, my Securities that I should attend the Court, and not depart without Leave. The Plea we made was, That it was against the Priviledge of the House, to Appeach any Member of the same in any Court or Place but in the House; desiring the Court would take that for an answer. Which Plea the Chief Justice over-ruled, there not being any other upon the Bench to assist. And I have been at four Courts, and know not but that it must be from Court to Court so long as I live; which has been a great Hardship upon me already, which I set forth in a Memorial to the House in June the 21st 1716. They took the same into Consideration, and resolved to Address his Excellency on that account; The Speaker with the whole House presented the Address, which is as followeth:

The humble Address of the General Assembly of New-York May it please your Excellency,

The Assembly being deeply sensible of the great Hurt, Damage and Inconveniency Mr. Samuel Mulford, a Member of this House, suffers and undergoes, by Occasion of a Prosecution against him in the Supream Court for Printing and Publishing a Speech formerly made by him in Assembly, are humble Suters to your Excellency, To give Orders that Mr. Mulford, in regard of his great Age, Distance of Habitation from the City, and other Considerations, may be freed and discharged from the said Prosecution, in the Supream Court.

The other Considerations in the Address, may be because the Prosecution was against the Priviledges of the House appears by Act of Parliament, and contrary to a Law of the Colony, which saith, That in all Cases Capital and Criminal, there shall be a grand Inquest, who shall first present the Offence, and then Twelve good Men of the Neighbourhood, to try the Offendor, who after his Plea to the Indictment, shall be allowed his reasonable Challenges.

Of what Benefit or Good can it be to the Colony, to have such an Assembly to represent them, when the Members of the House shall not have Freedom of Speech, and let the People they represent know what they are doing for them; but shall be prosecuted from Court to Court in the King's Name, and every Member of the House deterred to speak of any Aggrievances of and Priviledges for the People; but let things pass at Pleasure, lest they be molested as I am, and shall not have Relief, when by the best Authority of the Country his Excellency was addressed to free and discharge me, he refused to do it, except I would acknowledge, That I had set out a false Libel, and make him Satisfaction: Which I could never do, knowing that all which I set forth in that Speech was true; and I can prove it to be true, except what I related by Information, and that I believe to be true. I desired of the House, when I made that Speech, To let me know, whether they knew any thing in it that was not true. There was not any thing objected against it; but it was said in the House, That the worst Part of it was, it was too true: Also, That it was too true to make a Jest of. And I know not any Wrong I have done the Governor. It may be remembered, That the Speech was made the 2d Day of April, 1714, which was in the late Administration; therefore could not be against his present Majesties Administration; neither is it a Crime for any Member of the House in the same, to mention Matters of Fact, which are the Aggrievances of the People they represent; but their Duty to endeavour to have them relieved. Although the Governor might be the Occasion of the Aggrievances, and if I have done the Governor any Wrong, he might have brought his Personal Action against me, and not prosecute in the King's Name, except he is to be Infallible and do what he pleaseth, and nothing to be said by any, lest they in the King's Name be prosecuted from Court to Court. I always thought, That the Government ought to have been carried on for their Majesties Benefit and good of the Subjects, according to the Constitution of English Government: But it is so now with us, that I desire to know, Whether the Subjects in New-York Colony are to be governed by Prerogative and deprived of Property, or whether they are to be governed by the Constitution of English Government? If the former, then there is not any need of a General Assembly, nor any Occasion for that

Act of Parliament made in the Reign of King William III. For punishing Governors or Commanders in Chief, for Crimes by them committed in the Plantations: But let the Governors for the time being demand of the People what they please, and the People take care to help them to it, lest they be subpena'd to the Court of Chancery at New-York, where the Governor is Judge whether he shall have his Demands, and pay Court Charges into the Bargain: But if according to the Constitution of English Government, then by the Common Law, what Estate every Subject possesseth, is deemed to be his Property, and is not to be taken from him by due Course of Law, which is by his own Consent, the Lawful Judgment of his Peers, or the Penalty for the Breach of some Law: And I know not any thing that I have done contrary to Law and Custom, endeavouring to do my Duty to the King and Country, as far as I was capable, and to have Justice and Right done. And I know not any just Cause or good Reason, why I should be thus molested and destroyed. So I am forced to come to this Court of Great Britain, to seek Relief for my self and others who employed me, which I hope will be took into Consideration, that I may be discharged and freed from unjust Prosecution, and my Securities indemnify'd, and a final Determination settled thereupon for a Publick Good.

Which is the Desire and Request of His Most Sacred Majesty King GEORGE's Most Humble, Loyall, Faithful and Obedient Subject,

SAMUEL MULFORD.

HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY *Die Veneris*,
Sept. 13. 1717.

Col Rutsen reported from the committee appointed to consider a Memorial entitled A Memorial of Several Aggrievances and Oppressions &c. That they are of Opinion, the same is most false, malicious & scandalous Paper, reflecting upon the Governor and Government and the whole Constitution of this Colony and of Pernicious Consequence, and humbly Conceive, that the Thanks of this House, ought to be returned his Excellency for communicating the same, and that he be addressed to use his Interest at the Court of Great Britain, to find the Author in order to be brought to Justice, and in the Meantime his Excellency would please to acquaint the Indians of the five Nations, That we utterly abhor and detest that Suggestion in the Said paper or Libel, of re-

ducing the Indians by Force, and possessing their Lands, for the Steadiness of those Indians to the Interest of Great Britain, all the last War with France, is that we owe in a great measure, our present Security: which was read & agreed to by the House.

LETTER FROM THE LORDS JUSTICES TO GOV.
HUNTER.

Whitehall, ffeby 25th, 1717-18.

You intimate in Your letter to our Secry of 22d Nov. last that the Whale ffishery is reserved to the Crown by Your Patents. As we can find no such thing in Your Commission, We desire you will explain What you mean by it. In the meantime We have received another Petition from Mulford, praying Dispatch in our Report upon the Papers our Secretary sent you on the 19th of Septemb last: We must desire therefore from You a full Answer to those Papers; and particularly as to the Right of the Crown; and that you would inform us what Quantitys of Whales are Caught in your Government Comunibus annis; In what Condition that ffishery is, & has been for some years past, especially since your being in this Government, whether other persons have paid & continue to pay the Dues you demanded & which Mulford Complains of; What these Dues may amount to one Year with Another, & how the profit arising by them is Apply'd.

Upon this Occasion We must observe to you, that we hope you give all due Encouragement to that Trade.

Mr. Philips has laid before us the Address from the General Assembly of New York to You about Mulford & at the same time acquainted us that he had reason to believe your Answer to Mulfords Complains was lost in the Ship Mercury.

THE REV. MR. HORTON'S LABORS AND DIARY.

The story of the efforts to advance the spiritual welfare of the Indians of Long Island is one of intense interest, involving as it does the usual details of patient labor, of privations endured, of triumph and of dejection; triumph when the grand message seems to have been accepted and dejection over the apparent slowness of the work and the inability

to reach and rescue the thousands who might be reached. On Long Island the missionary story, while relieved of the tortures and miseries which darken the story elsewhere; is still full of details which must ever form a graphic chapter in the story of Christian endeavor in North America. The Rev. Dr. Prime enlarges on the life and work of the Rev. Azariah Horton, and as that missionary was a native of Long Island, it may not be out of place here to present his record as given by Long Island's ecclesiastical historian. The society referred to is the London Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, often mentioned in this work:

After the settlement of East Hampton the Rev. Mr. James, the first minister of that town, moved with compassion for the ignorance and moral darkness of the Indians, commenced the study of their language, with the design of instructing them in the way of life and salvation. It appears that he was employed by the same society about the year 1660, but how long he continued in the work cannot be determined. His exertions were principally, if not exclusively, bestowed upon the Montauk tribe.

There were probably other individuals, in different parts of the island, who devoted more or less time to their religious instruction. But it is lamentable to record the fact that for about one hundred years these benevolent exertions appear to have been made in vain. The Indians, almost with one consent, adhered to the religious opinions and the senseless rites of their ancestors, and exhibited no inclination to receive the blessed gospel. It seems probable that after the experiment of a few years had been made the work was abandoned as altogether hopeless.

This state of things remained until towards the middle of the eighteenth century. In 1741 the New York committee of the society already named, engaged Mr. Azariah Horton (a native of Southold) as a missionary, to be exclusively employed in the instruction of the Long Island Indians, and for this purpose he was ordained to the work of the gospel ministry in that year by the Presbytery of New York.

Although human instrumentality, at all times and under all circumstances, is dependent for its efficacy on the divine blessing, it will

not be out of place, to remark, that both the character of the missionary and the time of his appointment were peculiarly favorable to the results that were realized. Though the good man has long since gone down to the grave, and no memoir or extended biographical sketch of his life perpetuates his memory, and no memorial remains but the simple and concise record of his daily labors and some of their obvious results, he was manifestly a humble, laborious and self-denying servant of the cross. His charge extended along the whole southern shore of the island, for more than one hundred miles, upon which the remnants of those once numerous tribes, at that time reduced to "four hundred, old and young," were scattered. And here you trace him, four or five times a year, from Montauk to Rockaway, the two extreme points, back and forth, subsisting upon Indian fare—sleeping in their frail wigwams—teaching them to read the word of God, and almost daily preaching to them the gospel of Christ.

The time of his appointment was that notable period, at which it had pleased the King of Zion to bestow such a copious and extensive effusion of His Spirit on the American churches. And while thousands, in every part of the land, were raising the anxious inquiry, "What must we do to be saved?" He, who is "no respecter of persons," saw fit to send His devoted servant to these benighted savages with the same message of salvation and accompanied it with "the dispensation of the same Spirit." And while the skeptic is always ready to raise the cry of fanaticism and priestcraft against the work of God in the conversion of souls, the devout Christian, and even the candid rationalist, can scarcely fail to acknowledge the general awakening of that day, notwithstanding the human infirmities with which it was in some cases disfigured as a supernatural operation, when he sees these ignorant and degraded savages, who for one hundred years had strenuously rejected a proffered gospel, now melted down and brought to bow with contrite hearts to the message of grace. And let it be particularly noticed that these effects were produced, not by the powerful appeals of an eloquent preacher, addressed to the passions and sympathies of his hearers, but often by the slow communication of divine truth through the imperfect medium of a dull interpreter. And besides this, these astonishing results were realized, not on a few special occasions and in one or two populous neighbor-

hoods, but, during several successive years and throughout the length of the island.

A few extracts only can be given from the journal of this indefatigable missionary, to illustrate these remarks.

Rockaway, June 6th, 1742; preached. My hearers attended with seriousness, and appeared somewhat thoughtful.

Islip, June 8th; preached. Two awakened to a considerable sense of their sinful dangerous condition; others concerned before brought under fresh and strong impressions of their guilty state, of their need of Christ, and to earnest inquiries after an interest in him, and, in general, they are very devout and attentive.

Moriches, June 13th; preached. Two Indians awakened, and several others under distressing concern of mind, &c. Most of these are endeavoring to learn to read.

Shinnecock, June 15th. Preached; and surely the Lord was in this place; his power made known in bringing some that were concerned before, under distressing apprehensions of the wrath of God, of their need of Christ and his salvation, and in refreshing some that were hopefully his own children, by the refreshing influences of his blessed Spirit.

June 16th. Spent the forenoon in conversing with the Indians. P. M. preached. Many were under distressing concern, filled with anxiety of mind, and inquire "what they must do to be saved." Some were abundantly refreshed with joy and comfort in the Holy Ghost. O what adoring thoughts of free grace and redeeming love! O what wonder did they express at Christ's stooping to them, poor, undeserving creatures! The Lord was with us of a truth.

June 18th. Arrived at Montauk. The Indians gladly received me. Many among them are now sick.

June 19th. Spent most of the day in visiting, from wigwam to wigwam, both sick and well.

June 20th, preached, &c.

June 23d. Spent most of the day in visiting. Conversed with an Indian and three squaws, who, by the accounts they gave, and their conduct and conversation consequent thereupon, are hopefully converted. And these conversions were wrought, according to their accounts, while I was upon my journey to the western Indians upon Long Island.

July 5th. This day conversed with an Indian girl, by an interpreter, and I hope she has had a saving change wrought in her heart. This, while I was gone westward.

July 8th. Expounded; and at this exercise an Indian (who was hopefully converted while I was

westward) owned the covenant and was baptized together with four of his children.

July 15th. Preached. Former concern continued. Two squaws owned the covenant, and were baptized. These were hopefully converted last October.

Shinnecock, July 22nd. This evening, gave my dear people some cautions and warnings against some irregularities that abound in our land at this day, and by which their best interest has been much endangered. After this, preached. Some had their distress renewed and increased. Others appeared to be sweetly composed, and to find, by fresh experience, the ways of religion to be ways of pleasantness, and her paths peace.

Moriches, August 15th. Preached. Some were deeply distressed. Some that attended came 12 miles, and others 20, on purpose to hear the word preached.

Montauk, August 22. Preached. This day the power of the Lord was evidently displayed in strengthening the convictions of some, and heightening the joy of others. It may be noted that seven squaws came hither from Shinnecock, on purpose to attend public worship, and that one of the number was hopefully converted in the time of service, and another in the evening.

Shinnecock, September 10. Visited and preached. The outpourings of the Spirit still evident and conspicuous among my dear people, &c.

Islip, October 6th. Spent the evening in giving instructions and cautions to some of my Indian people gathered together for that purpose. They were greedy to hear, and very thankful to me for my instructions. It may be noted, these Indians have frequently gone (since I left them last summer) 16 miles to attend public worship.

Rockaway, October 10th. Preached. The Indians attended with seriousness, and some appeared to be under some awakenings about their eternal safety.

Islip, October 24th. Preached. Some deeply concerned.

Mastick, October 29th. Preached. They appeared serious and thoughtful.

Moriches, October 31. Preached. Some deeply concerned.

Montauk, November 11th. Conversed with an old Indian, who appears to have found the Lord Jesus by faith. This, while I was gone westward.

Quaog, December 19th. Preached. They seriously attended, and some considerable movings accompanied the exercises of the day.

Moriches, December 20th. In the evening preached. Some few were led to commend the dear

Redeemer, from a view of his special love to their souls, and to acknowledge their own meanness and unworthiness. Some were deeply distressed, &c. At this exercise one squaw hopefully converted.

Quaog, December 24th. Visited. In the evening preached, attended with encouraging appearances. It may be noted that nine or ten Indians came to the meeting twelve miles, in a wet, stormy time.

December 26th. Preached. Some favoured with lively views of the glory of Christ, and their mouths filled with praises to him. Others deeply distressed.

Montauk, January 2, 1742-3. Preached. Many of God's children favoured with almost overcoming discoveries of divine love, which raised their affections on high, and filled their souls with holy transport and sweet nourishment, and made them with pleasure speak forth the praises of their dear Redeemer; and these discoveries were attended with a deep and abasing sense of their own unworthiness, and led them to pity their poor Christless friends.

Shinnecock, January 30th. Visited.

Quaog, January 23d. Preached. Some were, as I trust, refreshed from on high, and their mouths filled with praises to the blessed and glorious Jesus. Some others were deeply distressed in mind, and brought to inquire with solicitude after an interest in the Lord Jesus Christ.

Montauk, February 5th. Conversed with one squaw, and I can't but hope she has received a saving change, and that, a few days ago.

Moriches, March 2nd. Preached. They attended with seriousness, and appeared forward to receive instruction.

Islip, March 6th. Some considerably affected with a sense of their undone estate.

Rockaway, April 14th. Preached. Some few appeared somewhat attentive and thoughtful.

Islip, April 17th. Preached. Some were made sensible of their sins in some measure, &c.

Shinnecock, April 20th. Returned to the Indians there, and they appeared much rejoiced, &c.

Montauk, April 24th. Preached. Some were enlivened and refreshed, &c.

Rockaway, May 8th. Preached. There was a forwardness in some to receive instruction. I can not well omit observing, the great necessity of one to instruct, caution, and exhort them in a more steady and uninterrupted method than I possibly can, seeing they, with the Indians of many other places upon Long Island, live at so great a distance from each other, it being at least 100 miles from the two extremes.

Smithfield, May 18th. After a long and tedious journey arrived at Smithfield upon Delaware, &c.

Moriches, June 2nd. Preached. Some were dis-

tressed under a sense of sin. The Indians hereabouts are much reformed, and very ready to receive instruction.

Shinnecock, September 8th. This day was observed as a day of public thanksgiving. The exercise was attended with seriousness and decency. A beautiful sight to behold, those gathered together to worship and bless God, who before gospel light shone upon them were wont to meet to sing and dance, carouse and give loose to vain mirth and jollity.

Quaog, December 10th. This morning I had the pleasure to hear three Indian children repeat a considerable part of the Assembly catechism, and to hear each of them spell in the Psalter, and the two eldest repeat the two first of David's psalms. Their mother can read well, and is painful, after her capacity, in giving instructions to her children. (This woman was afterward employed as a school-teacher at Montauk.)

December 13th. After divine service, I told my people the news I had received from Scotland, viz., of my continuance among the Long Island Indians. They universally manifested what great joy and satisfaction it was to them, and they explicitly declared their thanks to the great God, for his kind Providence herein.

Montauk, December 25th. Preached. Some of the children of God brought to a deeper acquaintance of their own hearts, and made to mourn bitterly under a sense of their indwelling corruptions. Towards evening, instructed 4 or 5 squaws, who came to visit me, about the great business of salvation.

Quaog, January 8th, 1743-4. Preached. Some had their concern revived and increased. The exercises of this day were attended with much of the divine power.

Moriches, January 23. Preached in the evening. Visibly attended with divine power. A great part of my hearers this evening came from Quaog, which is 12 miles, and the Indians of this place go frequently there to meeting.

Montauk, January 29. Preached. Some few refreshed.

Quaog, February 5. Preached. Some distressed; others sweetly refreshed.

In making these extracts the object has not been to furnish a few isolated passages of the most remarkable character, but to exhibit several deeply interesting facts connected with the work of grace among this ignorant and benighted race, such as the following:

1. The incessant and extended labors of this devoted and self-denying servant of the cross. He appears to have been untiring in his efforts for the salvation of perishing souls. While the principal settlements of the Indians were at Montauk and Shinnecock, and therefore most of his time was spent there, still we find him traveling, several times a year, from one end of the island to the other, to proclaim the message of salvation. And then, the extreme caution with which he expresses his hopes of the favorable appearances among them, warrants the highest confidence in the truth of his statements.

2. While the work of grace was manifestly wrought by the instrumentality of divine truth, communicated in preaching and conversation, these hopeful conversions, in numerous instances, did not take place under the excitement of public meetings, but even in the absence of the missionary to other parts of his charge, plainly showing that it was the work of God and not of man.

3. The long continuance of this blessed work furnishes another evidence of its genuineness. It was not the hot-bed production of a few days or weeks, originating in special efforts to produce a public excitement, and then subsiding into death-like coldness, as soon as the exercises were suspended. But it commenced and was continued for months and even years, by the occasional labors of a single missionary, traveling back and forth over a region more than one hundred miles in extent. And yet, in every part of this vast field, the same moral phenomena were exhibited, to a greater or less extent, throughout this protracted season of mercy. And when we take into consideration the numerous disadvantages under which these labors were performed, it seems that infidelity itself, if associated with a small degree of candor, must be constrained to acknowledge that such results could not be ascribed to mere human ingenuity or efficiency.

Mr. Horton remained in the service of the

Long Island Indians eleven years. During the first three years, which his printed journal covers, he appears to have confined himself constantly to his field of labor. In May, 1742, he attended the synod in Philadelphia, and in the year following he spent a fortnight in visiting the Indians on the Delaware river, for the purpose of preparing the way for the establishment of a mission among them. With these short intervals, not of relaxation, but of a mere change of labor, he pursued his solitary work, uncheered by the presence of a single fellow laborer, except that in February, 1742, David Brainard, who was then preparing to set out on a similar embassy of mercy, paid him a short visit and preached a single discourse to his "poor, dear people." In 1752 Mr. Horton, from what cause is not known, left the island and was settled that same year at South Hanover, or Bottle Hill, New Jersey, a settlement that had been formed in part by Long Island people. Here a church had been recently formed, of which Mr. H. was the first pastor. Here he spent his days and laid his bones. His tombstone bears the following simple inscription:

"In memory of the REV. AZARIAH HORTON, for 25 years pastor of this church. Died March 27th, 1777, aged 62 years."

Mr. Horton was evidently a very respectable minister in his day. He was one of the most constant attendants on the judicatories of the church—was seldom absent from the meetings of the synod, and was frequently appointed on its commission. And yet his memory has well nigh passed away. It is still true that "the righteous perish, and no man layeth it to heart," even while men of far less excellence and usefulness, obtain a temporary renown by a splendid monument or a flattering memoir. But the name of Azariah Horton, though little else of the good man remains, is worthy to live in the history of Indian missions, and should never perish from the annals of Long Island.

THE BATTLE OF BROOKLYN.

PRECAUTIONS PRIOR TO THE LANDING.

JAMAICA, May 15, 1776.

Resolved: That no person be permitted to move into the township from the date hereof unless he produce a certificate from the committee where he resided that he has in all things behaved as a friend to the cause of American freedom. And whereas, sundry persons, in passing and repassing through the town, have given just cause of suspicion that they are employed in aiding and assisting the unnatural enemies of America: Therefore

Resolved, That all such persons passing through this town be taken up for examination.

By order of the committee,
ELIAS BAYLES, Chairman.

On the day after Woodhull's capture Elias Bayles was arrested by a neighbor and brought before the British officer at Jamaica, although old and blind. He refused to say even a word against the American cause and was shut up in the Presbyterian church for the night and the next day was sent to the prison at New Utrecht. He was an elder in the Presbyterian church and beguiled the hours of his imprisonment by reciting passages of scripture and singing psalms and hymns. Finally he was removed to the provost in New York. After confinement for two months he was released, but died on the ferry while crossing to Long Island.

INCIDENTS FROM ONDERDONK.

GUARDING THE STOCK.—August 24, 1776.—Congress ordered half the Western Regiment of Suffolk with five days' provisions, to march into the western part of Queens, that the officers of the militia of Queens order out the whole militia, with the troop of horse, and use all diligence to prevent the stock falling into the hands of the enemy, that the captain of the troop of horse of Kings county join said militia and that the inhabitants of Queens (not of the militia) assist when ordered.

FARM AND GARDEN PROVISIONS.—August 12, 1776.—Captain P. Nostrand was stationed at Far Rockaway with forty-six men to guard

the coast. There was a guard at David Mott's, and at Hog Island Inlet was a guard boat. A guard was often put on board fishing boats to prevent their giving information to the British fleet, to which the disaffected used to carry water, eggs, butter and fresh provisions.

DISPOSITION OF THE MILITIA.—August 10, 1776.—One-half of the militia of Kings and Queens counties was ordered to march immediately to Brooklyn; the levies from Kings and Queens to be formed into one regiment under command of Colonel Jeromus Remsen, Lieutenant-Colonel Nich. Covenhoven and Major Richard Thorne, and continue in service until September 1.

Captain Andrew Onderdonk's company lay at Bedford, in the barn of Lambert Suydam, and marched daily to Brooklyn to throw up the fortifications.

CAPTAIN SUYDAM'S DISCOVERY.

CAMP LONG ISLAND, August 19, 1776.

I, the subscriber, went down to Rockaway just at daybreak with my company of light horse, pursuant to an order from Brigadier-General Heard to take care of some boats. At the house of ——— Van Brockle I discovered a number of men issue out of the door and run, some of them partly dressed and some in their shirts only. Immediately I ordered my men to pursue them, and presently overtook three of their number and took them prisoners. Two of them got to the woods and hid under the bushes; on finding them I ordered them to surrender. One of them did; the other absolutely refused, although one of my men had his gun presented to his breast, on which my men alighted and took him.

After I had taken six prisoners I examined the beach and found a boat and four oars and a paddle. In the boat were three sheep, four ducks and a large bottle with water.

LAMBERT SUYDAM,
Captain of the Troop.

THE HOWARD HOUSE.

Just as this work is going to press the news has transpired that the Howard House at East New York is about to be torn down, and thus another of Brooklyn's historic landmarks is doomed to disappear. The Howard House of 1776 figures prominently in the story of the

battle of Brooklyn, and although possibly but little of the building of that day is extant in the old tumble-down structure which has borne its name to the present generation, still there was that continuity about the house which gave it a certain claim to authenticity and antiquity. The old Howard House of 1776 was never pulled down; the building now doomed just developed out of it by slow degrees, alteration succeeding alteration, repairs obliterating the past, and all the varied requirements of a century and a quarter of busy occupation necessitating frequent changes in exterior as well as interior. But just as the old man of three score years and ten is to be regarded as the same individual who as a boy of five or six summers awoke the echoes with his mirth, so must we regard the passing Howard House as the scene of the culmination of Sir William Howe's bit of strategy, which turned the flank of the defenses of Brooklyn and brought about a disastrous defeat of the Continental heroes at a time when the cause of American liberty could ill afford such a set-back.

The original Howard House was built in 1700 by William Howard and was conducted as a tavern pure and simple, with nothing to lend it any degree of prominence until that eventful August night in 1776, when Howe's detachment came upon it and Sir William compelled the proprietor and his son to guide the troops through the pass, the movement which insured the victory of the red-coats before the sun went down the next day. It is said that Sir William and several officers stood at the bar of the house and ordered refreshments, but on that point historians differ. However, the British commander had a habit of wasting time and it is quite possible that even in that crisis he was not forgetful of creature comforts. After the battle the Howard House simply sank into a tavern once more and so continued its uneventful story until possibly twenty years ago, when it was invested with the dignity of recognition as a landmark.

Writing of its approaching destruction a

writer in the Brooklyn Eagle wrote of some of the old characteristics of the house as follows:

A key was left hanging outside the door for belated farmers, who might enter and help themselves, settling their scores at some more convenient season. This seemingly rash policy would bring any modern tavern to the brink of lasting ruin, but they were honest in those days, and it was with such considerate simplicity that the inn was then conducted. History contains no record that the Howards offered the first free lunch, but a perusal of their business methods, as aforesaid, indicates their right to the distinction. In the Howard House on winter evenings merry sleighing parties gathered, coming all the way from far distant Brooklyn, and here politics and weighty state matters were discussed. It was a resort for the farmers from far and near, and Major Joseph Howard is a name still held in honorable memory by old Long Islanders. In 1852 the property passed into the hands of Catherine Howard, the mother of Philip H. Reid, who was the proprietor of the hostelry when, in 1880, it was first proposed to remove it.

THOMPSON'S STORY OF THE BATTLE OF BROOKLYN.

After the commencement of hostilities in 1776, New York being situated near the center of the colonial sea-board, and readily accessible from the sea, was selected by the enemy as a principal point for their future operations. With this view, a first division of their army arrived at Staten Island in the latter part of June of that year, followed, about the middle of July, by the grand armament under Lord Howe, consisting of six ships of the line, thirty frigates, with smaller armed vessels and a great number of transports, victuallers and ships with ordnance.

The Americans, anticipating the invasion of Long Island, had fortified Brooklyn before the arrival of the British at Staten Island. A line of intrenchment was formed from a ditch near the late toll-house of the Bridge Company at the navy-yard to Fort Greene, then called Fort Putnam, and from thence to

Freek's mill-pond. A strong work was erected on the lands of Johannis Debevoise and of Van Brunt; a redoubt was thrown up on Bæmus' Hill opposite Brown's mill, and another on the land of John Johnson west of Fort Greene, Ponkiesberg, now Fort Swift, was fortified, and a fort built on the land of Mr. Hicks on Brooklyn Heights. Such were the defences of Brooklyn in 1776, while a *chevaux de frise* was sunk in the main channel of the river below New York. The troops of both divisions of the British army were landed on Staten Island after their arrival in the bay, to recruit their strength and prepare for the coming conflict. It was not till the middle of August that a first landing on Long Island was made by them at New Utrecht. Here they were joined by many royalists from the neighborhood, who probably acted the infamous part of informers and guides to the enemy. General Sir Henry Clinton arrived about the same time with the troops re-conducted from the expedition to Charleston.

Commodore Hotham already appeared there with the reinforcements under his escort, so that in a short time the hostile army amounted to about twenty-four thousand men, English, Hessians and Waldeckers. Several regiments of Hessian infantry were expected to arrive shortly, when the army would be swelled to the number of thirty-five thousand combatants, of the best troops of Europe, all abundantly supplied with arms and ammunition, and manifesting an extreme ardor for the service of their king. The plan was, first to get possession of New York, which was deemed of most essential importance. Then, if General Carleton, after having passed, as was hoped, the lakes of Canada, could penetrate to the banks of the Hudson and descend this river at the same time that General Howe should ascend it, their junction would have the immediate effect of interrupting all communication between the provinces of New England on the left bank, and those of the middle and south upon the right. While General Howe was seconded in his invasion of New York by

the twelve or thirteen thousand men coming from Canada under Governor Carleton, General Clinton was to operate in the provinces of the south and to attack Charleston. The American troops being thus divided, and their generals surprised and pressed on so many sides at once, it was not doubted but that the British arms would soon obtain a complete triumph. But in executing this design they had counted too much on an admirable concurrence of a great number of parts, and had not taken into account the difficulties of the winds and seasons. Admiral Howe did not arrive until after Clinton's expedition to Charleston had totally miscarried. The army at Canada was entirely interrupted at the lakes. It was still, however, confidently expected that General Howe would be able alone to make a decisive campaign.

To resist this impending storm Congress had ordained the construction of rafts, gunboats, galleys and floating batteries, for the defense of the port of New York and the mouth of the Hudson. They had also decreed that thirteen thousand of the provincial militia should join the army of Washington, who, being seasonably apprized of the danger of New York, had made a movement into that quarter; they also directed the organization of a corps of ten thousand men, destined to serve as a reserve in the provinces of the center. All the weakest posts had been carefully intrenched and furnished with artillery. A strong detachment occupied Long Island, to prevent the English from landing there, or to repulse them if they should effect a debarkation. But the army of Congress was very far from having all the necessary means to support the burden of so terrible a war. It wanted arms, and it was wasted by diseases. The reiterated instances of the commander-in-chief had drawn into his camp the militia of the neighboring provinces, and some regular regiments from Maryland, from Pennsylvania and from New England, which had swelled his army to the number of twenty-seven thousand men; but a fourth of these troops were composed of in-

valids, and scarcely was another fourth furnished with arms.

The American army, such as it was, occupied the positions most suitable to cover the menaced points. The corps which had been stationed on Long Island was commanded by Major-General Greene, who, on account of sickness, was afterwards succeeded by General Sullivan. The main body of the army encamped on the island of New York, which, it appeared, was destined to receive the first blows of the English.

Two feeble detachments guarded Governor's Island and the point of Paulus' Hook. The militia of the province, commanded by the American General Clinton, were posted upon the banks of the sound, where they occupied the two Chesters, East and West, and New Rochelle. For it was to be feared that the enemy, landing in force upon the north shore of the sound, might penetrate to Kingsbridge, and thus entirely lock up all the American troops on the island of New York. Lord Howe made some overtures of peace upon terms of submission to the royal clemency, which, resulting in nothing, decided the British general to attack Long Island. "Accordingly," says Botta, "on the 22d of August the fleet approached the Narrows; all the troops found an easy and secure landing-place between the villages of Gravesend and New Utrecht, where they debarked without meeting any resistance on the part of the Americans. A great part of the American army, under the command of General Putnam, encamped at Brooklyn in a part of the island itself, which forms a sort of a peninsula. He had strongly fortified the entrance of it with moats and intrenchments; his left wing rested upon the Wallabout bay, and his right was covered by a marsh contiguous to Gowanus' Cove. Behind him he had Governor's Island and the arm of the sea which separates Long Island from the Island of New York, and which gave him a direct communication with the city, where the other part of the army was stationed under Washington himself. The

commander-in-chief, perceiving the battle was approaching, continually exhorted his men to keep their ranks and summon all their courage; he reminded them that in their valor rested the only hope that remained to American liberty; that upon their resistance depended the preservation or the pillage of their property by barbarians; that they were about to combat in defense of their parents, their wives and their children, from the outrages of a licentious soldiery; that the eyes of America were fixed upon her champions, and expected from their success on this day either safety or total destruction."

The English having effected their landing marched rapidly forward. The two armies were separated by a chain of hills covered with woods, called the heights, and which, running from west to east, divide the island into two parts. They are only approachable upon three points, one of which is near the Narrows, the road leading to that of the center passes the village of Flatbush, and the third is approached far to the right by the route of another village called Flatlands. Upon the summit of the hills is found a road, which follows the length of the range, and leads from Bedford to Jamaica, which is intersected by the two roads last described; these ways are all interrupted by precipices and by excessively difficult and narrow defiles.

The American general, wishing to arrest the enemy upon these heights, had carefully furnished them with troops, so that, if all had done their duty, the English would not have been able to force the passage without extreme difficulty and danger. The posts were so frequent upon the road from Bedford to Jamaica that it was easy to transmit, from one of these points to the other, the most prompt intelligence of what passed upon the three routes. Colonel Miles, with his battalion, was to guard the road of Flatland, and to scour it continually with his scouts, as well as that of Jamaica, in order to reconnoiter the movements of the enemy. Meanwhile the British army pressed forward, its left wing being to the

north and its right to the south; the village of Flatbush was found in its center. The Hessians, commanded by General Heister, formed the main body; the English, under Major-General Grant, the left, and the other corps, conducted by General Clinton and the two lords, Percy and Cornwallis, composed the right. In this wing the British generals had placed their principal hope of success; they directed it upon Flatland. Their plan was, that while the corps of General Grant and the Hessians of General Heister should disquiet the enemy upon the two first defiles, the left wing, taking a circuit, should march through Flatland, and endeavor to seize the point of intersection of this road with that of Jamaica, and then, rapidly descending into the plain which extends at the foot of the heights upon the other side, should fall upon the Americans in flank and rear. The English hoped, that as this post was the most distant from the center of the army, the advanced guards would be found more feeble there, and perhaps more negligent; finally, they calculated that, in all events, the Americans would not be able to defend it against a force so superior. This right wing of the English was the most numerous and entirely composed of select troops.

The evening of the 26th of August, General Clinton commanded the vanguard, which consisted in light infantry; Lord Percy the center, where were found the grenadiers, the artillery and the cavalry; and Cornwallis, the rearguard, followed by the baggage, some regiments of infantry and of heavy artillery; all this part of the English army put itself in motion with admirable order and silence, and leaving Flatland, traversed the country called New Lots. Colonel Miles, who this night performed his service with little exactness, did not perceive the approach of the enemy; so that two hours before day the English were already arrived within a half mile of the road to Jamaica, upon the heights. Then General Clinton halted and prepared himself for the attack. He had met one of the enemy's patrols and made him prisoner. General Sullivan, who

commanded all the troops in advance of the camp of Brooklyn, had no advice of what passed in this quarter. He neglected to send out fresh scouts; perhaps he supposed the English would direct their principal efforts against his right wing, as being the nearest to them.

General Clinton learning from his prisoners that the road to Jamaica was not guarded, hastened to avail himself of the circumstance and occupied it by a rapid movement. Without loss of time he immediately bore to his left towards Bedford and seized an important defile, which the American generals had left unguarded. From this moment the success of the day was decided in favor of the English. Lord Percy came up with his corps, and the entire column descended by the village of Bedford from the heights into the plain which lay between the hills and the camp of the Americans. During this time General Grant, in order to amuse the enemy and divert his attention from the events which took place upon the route of Flatland, endeavored to disquiet him upon his right; accordingly, as if he intended to force the defile which led to it, he had put himself in motion about midnight and attacked the militia of New York and of Pennsylvania, who guarded it. They at first gave ground; but General Parsons being arrived and having occupied an eminence, he renewed the combat and maintained his position till Brigadier-General Lord Stirling came to his assistance with fifteen hundred men. The action became extremely animated and fortune favored neither the one side nor the other. The Hessians, on their part, had attacked the center at break of day, and the Americans, commanded by General Sullivan in person, valiantly sustained their efforts. At the same time the English ships, after having made several movements, opened a very brisk cannonade against a battery established in the little island of Red Hook, upon the right flank of the Americans, who combatted against General Grant. This also was a diversion, the object of which was to prevent them from attending

to what passed in the center and on the left. The Americans defended themselves, however, with extreme gallantry, ignorant that so much valor was exerted in vain, since victory was already in the hands of the enemy. General Clinton being descended into the plain, fell upon the left flank of the center, which was engaged with the Hessians. He had previously detached a small corps, in order to intercept the Americans.

As soon as the appearance of the English light infantry apprized them of their danger, they sounded the retreat and retired in good order towards their camp, bringing off their artillery. But they soon fell in with the party of royal troops which had occupied the ground on their rear, and who now charged them with fury; they were compelled to throw themselves into the neighboring woods, where they met again with the Hessians, who repulsed them upon the English; and thus the Americans were driven several times by the one against the other with great loss. They continued for some time in this desperate situation, till at length several regiments, animated by an heroic valor, opened their way through the midst of the enemy and gained the camp of General Putnam; others escaped through the woods. The inequality of the ground, the great numbers of positions which it offered, and the disorder which prevailed throughout the line, were the cause that for several hours divers partial combats were maintained, in which many of the Americans fell.

Their left wing and center being discomfited, the English, desirous of a complete victory, made a rapid movement against the rear of the right wing, which, in ignorance of the misfortune which had befallen the other corps, was engaged with General Grant. Finally, having received the intelligence, they retired. But, encountering the English, who cut off their retreat, a part of the soldiers took shelter in the woods; others endeavored to make their way through the marshes of Gowan's Cove, but here many were drowned in the waters or perished in the mud; a very

small number only escaped the hot pursuit of the victors and reached camp in safety. The total loss of the Americans in this battle was estimated at more than three thousand men in killed, wounded and prisoners. Among the last were found General Sullivan and Brigadier-General Lord Stirling. Almost the entire regiment of Maryland, consisting of young men of the best families in that province, was cut to pieces. Six pieces of cannon fell into the power of the victors. The loss of the English was very inconsiderable; in killed, wounded and prisoners it did not amount to four hundred men.

The enemy encamped in front of the American lines, and on the succeeding night broke ground within six hundred yards of a redoubt on the left and threw up a breast-work on the Wallabout heights, upon the Debevoise farm, commenced firing on Fort Putnam and reconnoitred the American forces. The Americans were here prepared to receive them, and orders issued to the men to reserve their fire till they could see the eyes of the enemy. A few of the British officers reconnoitred the position, and one, on coming near, was shot by William Van Cotts, of Bushwick. The same afternoon Captain Rutgers, brother of the late Colonel Rutgers, also fell. Several other British troops were killed, and the column which had incautiously advanced, fell back beyond the range of the American fire. In this critical state of the American army on Long Island; in front a numerous and victorious enemy with a formidable train of artillery, the fleet indicating an intention of forcing a passage up the East river; the troops lying without shelter from the heavy rains, fatigued and dispirited, General Washington determined to withdraw the army from the island, and this difficult movement was effected with great skill and judgment, and with complete success. The retreat was to have commenced at eight o'clock in the evening of the 29th, but a strong north-east wind and a rapid tide caused a delay of several hours, a southwest wind springing up at eleven essentially facilitated its passage from the island

to the city, and a thick fog hanging over Long Island toward morning concealed its movements from the enemy, who were so near that the sound of their pick-axes and shovels were distinctly heard by the Americans. General Washington, as far as possible, inspected everything from the commencement of the action on the morning of the 27th till the troops were safely across the river; he never closed his eyes and was almost constantly on horseback. After this the British and their allies, the Tories and refugees, had possession of Long Island, and many distressing scenes occurred, which were never made public and can therefore never be known. The Whigs who had been at all active in behalf of independence were exiled from their homes and their dwellings were objects of indiscriminate plunder. Such as could be taken, were incarcerated in the church of New Utrecht and Flatlands, while royalists, by wearing a red badge in their hats, were protected and encouraged. It is believed that had Lord Howe availed himself of the advantage he possessed by passing his ships up the river between Brooklyn and New York, the whole American army must have been almost inevitably captured or annihilated. General Washington saw but too plainly the policy that might have been pursued and wisely resolved rather to abandon the island than attempt to retain it at the risk of sacrificing his army.

The unfortunate issue of the battle of Long Island was doubtless to be ascribed, in part, to the illness of General Greene. He had superintended the erection of the works and become thoroughly acquainted with the ground. In the hope of his recovery, Washington deferred sending over a successor till the urgency of affairs made it absolutely necessary, and then General Putnam took the command, without any previous knowledge of the posts which had been fortified beyond the lines, or of the places by which the enemy could make their approach, nor had he time to acquire this knowledge before the action. The consequence was, that, although he was the commander on

the day of the battle, he never went beyond the lines at Brooklyn, and could give no other orders than for sending out troops to meet the enemy at different points. The following is a letter to Congress, describing the events of the day, by Colonel Harrison, secretary to the commander-in-chief:

NEW YORK, 8 o'clock P. M.,
27th August, 1776.

Sir: I this minute returned from our lines on Long Island, where I left his Excellency the General. From him I have it in command to inform Congress, that yesterday he went there and continued till evening, when, from the enemy's having landed a considerable part of their forces, and from many of their movements there was reason to apprehend that they would make in a little time a general attack. As they would have a wood to pass through before they could approach the lines it was thought expedient to place a number of men there on different roads leading from where they were stationed, in order to harass and annoy them in their march. This being done, early this morning a sharp engagement ensued between the enemy and our detachments, which, being unequal to the force they had to contend with, have sustained a considerable loss, at least many of our men are missing. Among those who have not returned are General Sullivan and Lord Stirling. The enemy's loss is not known certainly, but we are told by such of our troops as were in the engagement, and have come in, that they had many killed and wounded. Our party brought off a lieutenant, sergeant and corporal, with twenty privates, prisoners.

While these detachments were engaged, a column of the enemy descended from the woods, and marched towards the center of our lines with a design to make an impression, but were repulsed. This evening they appeared very numerous about the skirts of the woods, where they have pitched several tents; and his Excellency inclines to think they mean to attack and force us from our lines by way of regular approaches, rather than in any other manner. To-day five ships of the line came up towards the town, where they seemed desirous of getting, as they turned a long time against an unfavorable wind; and, on my return this evening, I found a deserter from the Twenty-third Regiment, who informed me that they design, as soon as the wind will permit

them to come up, to give us a severe cannonade, and to silence our batteries if possible.

I have the honor to be, in great haste, Sir, your most obedient.

ROBERT H. HARRISON.

As the two generals who commanded the engagement were taken prisoners, no detailed official account of the action was ever reported to the commander-in-chief. The following letter from Lord Stirling, and extracts from General Sullivan's, contain a few particulars not hitherto published. Lord Stirling was a prisoner on board Lord Howe's ship when he wrote:

Lord Stirling to General Washington.

EAGLE, 29 August, 1776.

My Dear General:

I have now an opportunity of informing you of what has happened to me since I had the pleasure of seeing you. About three o'clock in the morning of the 27th I was called up and informed by General Putnam that the enemy were advancing by the road from Flat-bush to the Red Lion, and he ordered me to march with the two regiments nearest at hand to meet them. These happened to be Haslet's and Smallwood's, with which I accordingly marched, and was on the road to the Narrows just as the daylight began to appear. We proceeded to within about half a mile of the Red Lion, and there met Colonel Atlee with his regiment, who informed me that the enemy were in sight; indeed, I then saw their front between us and the Red Lion. I desired Colonel Atlee to place his regiment on the left of the road, and to wait their coming up, while I went to form the two regiments I had brought with me along the ridge from the road up to a piece of wood on the top of the hill. This was done instantly on very advantageous ground.

Our opponents advanced and were fired upon in the road by Atlee's regiment, who, after two or three rounds, retreated to the wood on my left and there formed. By this time Kichline's riflemen arrived; part of them I placed along a hedge under the front of the hill, and the rest in the front of the wood. The troops opposed to me were two brigades of four regiments each, under the command of General Grant, who advanced their light troops to within one hundred and fifty yards of our right front, and took possession of an orchard

there, and some hedges, which extended towards our left. This brought on an exchange of fire between those troops and our riflemen, which continued for about two hours and then ceased by those light troops retiring to their main body. In the meantime Captain Carpenter brought up two field-pieces, which were placed on the side of the hill so as to command the road and the only approach for some hundred yards. On the part of General Grant there were two field-pieces. One howitzer advanced within three hundred yards of the front of our right, and a like detachment of artillery to the front of our left. On a rising ground, at about six hundred yards' distance, one of their brigades formed in two lines opposite to our right, and the other extended in one line to the top of the hills, in the front of our left.

In this position we stood cannonading each other till near eleven o'clock, when I found that General Howe, with the main body of the army, was between me and our lines, and I saw that the only chance of escaping being all made prisoners was to pass the creek near the Yellow Mills, and, in order to render this the more practicable, I found it absolutely necessary to attack the body of troops commanded by Lord Cornwallis, posted at the house near the Upper Mills. This I instantly did, with about half of Smallwood's regiment; first ordering all other troops to make the best of their way through the creek. We continued the attack for a considerable time, the men having been rallied, and the attack renewed five or six several times, and we were on the point of driving Lord Cornwallis from his station, but large reinforcements arriving, rendered it impossible to do more than provide for safety. I endeavored to get in between that house and Fort Box, but, on attempting it, I found a considerable body of troops in my front, and several in pursuit of me on the right and left, and a constant firing on me. I immediately turned the point of a hill, which covered me from their fire, and was soon out of the reach of my pursuers. I found that it would be in vain to attempt to make my escape, and therefore went to surrender myself to General de Heister, commander-in-chief of the Hessians.

WM. STIRLING.

General Sullivan to the President of Congress.

WHITEMARSH, 25 October, 1777.

I know it has been generally reported that I commanded on Long Island when the action

happened there. This is by no means true. General Putnam had taken the command from me four days before the action. Lord Stirling commanded the main body without the lines. I was to have commanded under General Putnam within the lines. I was uneasy about a road, though which I had often foretold that the enemy would come, but could not persuade others to be of my opinion. I went to the hill near Flatbush to reconnoiter, and with a picket of four hundred men was surrounded by the enemy, who had advanced by the very road I had foretold, and which I had paid horsemen fifty dollars for patrolling by night while I had the command, as I had no foot for the purpose.

What resistance I made with these four hundred men against the British army, I leave to the officers who were with me to declare. Let it suffice for me to say, that the opposition of the small party lasted from half-past nine to twelve o'clock.

The reason of so few troops being on Long Island was because it was generally supposed that the enemy's landing there was a feint to draw our troops thither that they might the more easily possess themselves of New York. I often urged, both by word and writing, that, as the enemy had doubtless both these objects in view, they would first try for Long Island, which commanded the other, and then New York, which was completely commanded by it, would fall of course. But in this I was unhappy enough to differ from almost every other officer in the army till the event proved my conjectures were just. JOHN SULLIVAN.

A DEFENCE OF PUTNAM.

The recent publication of an interesting and valuable life of Gen. Israel Putnam by W. F. Livingston has called renewed attention to the hero's share in the disaster to the Continental arms on Long Island. Naturally Mr. Livingston defends Putnam from the charge so often made by contemporaries and by later historical writers, that his military incapacity and his utter ignorance of civilized military tactics, as well as his reckless personal bravery, cost his country a defeat that for a time made the prospects for liberty seem decidedly dark. However, as the late John Fiske pointed out, the wonder is not that 5,000 half-trained soldiers

were defeated by 20,000 veterans, but that they should have given General Howe a hard day's work in defeating them. The new biographer of Putnam accepts the statement of the case made by Prof. Henry P. Johnston: "As for the generalship of the day, if the responsibility falls on any one, it falls first on Sullivan, who sent out the mounted patrol in the first instance, and to whom it belonged to follow up the precautions in that direction. Putnam was in chief command, but nothing can be inferred from contemporary writers to fasten neglect or blunder upon him any more than upon Washington, who, when he left the Brooklyn lines on the evening of August 26, 1776, must have known precisely what disposition had been made for the night at the hills and passes." Prof. Johnston goes on to say that the situation seems to have been the following: "On the night of August 26th we had all the roads guarded. On the morning of the 27th Putnam promptly re-enforced the guards on the lower road when the enemy were announced. The arrangements were such that if an attack was made at any of the other points he and Sullivan were to have word of it in ample time. No word came in time from the left, for the reason that those who were to bring it were captured or surprised or failed of their duty. Hence the disaster. The dispositions on Long Island were quite as complete as those at Brandywine, more than a year later, where we suffered nearly a similar surprise and as heavy a loss." Under this state of facts, Prof. Johnston submits that to charge Putnam with the defeat of August 27 is both unjust and unhistorical. No one hinted such a charge at the time; nor did Washington in the least withdraw his confidence from Putnam during the remainder of the campaign.

In May, 1777, Putnam was placed in command of the Hudson Highlands, and continued to occupy this post until the spring of 1778. Here he by no means gave satisfaction to the Commander-in-Chief, and, after being subjected to a court of inquiry, he was superseded by General McDougall. The author of

this book concedes that in the Hudson Highlands Putnam's military capacity was put to a severer test than at any previous period of his life. He did not appreciate how critical was the state of affairs at the time. He did not comprehend that Washington must have large re-enforcements from the northern army to prevent Howe from removing the obstructions on the Delaware and opening free communication between Philadelphia and the British shipping. In addition to Hamilton's unfavorable report concerning Putnam, General Washington received numerous complaints from inhabitants of New York State who found fault with Putnam's good nature in granting applications for passports to the city. He had shown, it was said, an "overshare of complaisance and indulgence" to Tories, and many of them, under the pretence of urgent business, had gone into the city and given valuable information to the British General. Even the fact that Putnam had exchanged newspapers with some of the King's officers who had been his comrades in the French and Indian war was complained of. Chancellor Robert R. Livingston, in a letter to Washington, lamented that Putnam's patriotism would not suffer him to take the repose to which his advanced age entitled him. The Chancellor added: "Unfortunately for him, the current of popular opinion in this and the neighboring States, and, as far as I can learn, in the troops under his command, runs strongly against him."

The judgment of the court of inquiry was favorable to Putnam, who was not reinstated in his command on the Hudson, however, but was ordered to Connecticut to superintend the forwarding of troops.

THE PRISON SHIPS.

General Jeremiah Johnson communicated the following data to the "Naval Magazine" of September, 1836: "The subject of the naval prisoners, and of the British prison ships stationed in the Wallabout during the Revolution, is one which cannot be passed by in silence.

From printed journals published in New York at the close of the war, it appears that eleven thousand five hundred American prisoners had died on board the prison ships. Although the number is very great, still if the number who perished had been less the commissary of naval prisoners, David Sprout, Esq., and his deputy, had it in their power, by an official return, to give the true number exchanged, escaped and dead. Such a return has never appeared in the United States. This man returned to America after the war, and resided in Philadelphia, where he died. He could not have been ignorant of the statement published here on this interesting subject. We may therefore infer that about that number perished in the prison ships. A large transport, named the "Whitby," was the first prison ship anchored in the Wallabout. She was moored near "Remsen's Mill," about the 20th of October, 1776, and was crowded with prisoners. Many landsmen were prisoners on board this vessel. She was said to be the most sickly of all the prison ships. Bad provisions, bad water and scanty rations were dealt to the prisoners. No medical men attended the sick. Disease reigned unrelieved, and hundreds died from pestilence, or were starved, on board this floating prison. I saw the sand-beach between a ravine in the hill and Mr. Remsen's dock become filled with graves in the course of two months; and before the 1st of May, 1777, the ravine alluded to was itself occupied in the same way. In the month of May of that year two large ships were anchored in the Wallabout, when the prisoners were transferred from the "Whitby" to them. These vessels were also very sickly, from the causes before stated. Although many prisoners were sent on board of them, and were exchanged, death made room for all. On a Sunday afternoon, about the middle of October, 1777, one of the prison ships was burnt; the prisoners, except a few, who, it was said, were burnt in the vessel, were removed to the remaining ship. It was reported at the time that the prisoners had fired their prison; which, if true, proves that they

preferred death, even by fire, to the lingering sufferings of pestilence and starvation. In the month of February, 1778, the remaining prison ship was burnt at night, when the prisoners were removed from her to the ships then wintering in the Wallabout. In the month of April, 1778, the "Old Jersey" was moored in the Wallabout, and all the prisoners (except the sick) were transferred to her. The sick were carried to two hospital ships, named the "Hope" and "Falmouth," anchored near each other about two hundred yards east from the "Jersey." These ships remained in the Wallabout until New York was evacuated by the British. The "Jersey" was the receiving ship—the others, truly, the ships of Death! It has been generally thought that all the prisoners died on board of the "Jersey." This is not true; many may have died on board of her who were not reported as sick, but all the men who were placed on the sick-list were removed to the hospital ships, from which they were usually taken, sewed up in a blanket, to their long home.

After the hospital ships were brought into the Wallabout, it was reported that the sick were attended by physicians; few, very few, however, recovered. It was no uncommon thing to see five or six dead bodies brought on shore in a single morning; when a small excavation would be made at the foot of the hill, the bodies be cast in, and a man with a shovel would cover them by shoveling sand down the hill upon them. Many were buried in a ravine on the hill; some on the farm. The whole shore from Rennie's Point to Mr. Remsen's dock-yard was a place of graves; as were also the slope of the hill near the house, the shore from Mr. Remsen's barn along the mill-pond to Rapelje's farm and the sandy island, between the flood-gates and the mill-dam; while a few were buried on the shore, the east side of the Wallabout. Thus did Death reign here, from 1776 until the peace. The whole Wallabout was a sickly place during the war. The atmosphere seemed to be charged with

foul air from the prison ships, and with the effluvia of the dead bodies washed out of their graves by the tides. We have ourselves examined many of the skulls lying on the shore; from the teeth, they appear to be the remains of men in the prime of life. A singularly daring and successful escape was effected from the "Jersey" about 4 o'clock one afternoon, in December, 1780. The best boat of the ship had returned from New York, was left fastened at the gangway, with the oars on board. It was stormy; the wind blew from the northeast, and the tide ran flood. A watchword was given, and a number of prisoners placed themselves between the ship's waist and the sentinel; at this juncture four eastern captains got on board the boat, which was cast off by their friends. The boat passed close under the bows of the ship, and was a considerable distance from her before the sentinel on the forecastle gave the alarm and fired at her. The boat passed Hell Gate, and arrived safe in Connecticut next morning.

Suffice it to say, in conclusion, that here more than eleven thousand American citizens and soldiers perished, many of whose names are unknown, and whose sufferings are buried in oblivion! They lingered where no eye of pity witnessed their agony; no voice administered consolation; no tongue could praise their patriotic devotion, or friendly hand be stretched out for their relief. Here to pass the weary day and night, unvaried, except by new scenes of painful endurance and new inflictions of hopeless misery. The hope of death was to them the only consolation which their situation afforded.

STORY OF A SURVIVOR OF THE PRISON SHIPS.

The Rev. Thomas Andros, of Berkeley, Massachusetts, was a prisoner on the old battleship "Jersey," and related his experiences in the following graphic words:

"This was an old sixty-four gun ship, which through age had become unfit for fur-

ther actual service. She was stripped of every spar and all her rigging. After a battle with a French fleet her lion figurehead was taken away to repair another ship; no appearance of ornament was left, and nothing remained but an old unsightly, rotten hulk. Her dark and filthy external appearance perfectly corresponded with the death and despair that reigned within; and nothing could be more foreign from truth than to paint her with colors flying or any circumstance or appendage to please the eye. She was moored at the Wallabout Bay, about three-quarters of a mile to the eastward of Brooklyn Ferry, near a tide-mill on the Long Island shore. The nearest place to land was about twenty rods; and doubtless no other ship in the British navy ever proved the means of destruction of so many human beings. It is computed that not less than eleven thousand American seamen perished in her. After it was next to certain death to confine a prisoner here, the inhumanity and wickedness of doing it was about the same as if he had been taken to the city and deliberately shot in some public square; but, as if mercy had fled from the earth, here we were doomed to dwell. And never, while I was on board, did any Howard or angel of pity appear, to inquire into or alleviate our woes. Once or twice, by the order of a stranger on the quarter deck, a bag of apples was hurled promiscuously into the midst of hundreds of prisoners, crowded together as thick as they could stand, and life and limbs were endangered by the scramble. This, instead of compassion, was a cruel sport. When I saw it about to commence I fled to the most distant part of the ship.

"On the commencement of the first evening we were driven down to darkness, between decks secured by iron gratings and an armed soldiery, and a scene of horror which baffles all description presented itself. On every side wretched, desponding shapes of men could be seen. Around the well-room an armed guard were forcing up the prisoners to the winches to clear the ship of water and prevent her

sinking; and little else could be heard but a roar of mutual execrations, reproaches and insults. During this operation there was a small, dim light admitted below, but it served to make darkness more visible, and horror more terrific. In my reflections I said this must be a complete image and anticipation of hell. Milton's description of the dark world rushed upon my mind:—

'Sights of woe, regions of horror doleful,
'Shades where peace and rest can never dwell.'

"If there was any principle among the prisoners that could not be shaken, it was their love of country. I knew no one to be seduced into the British service. They attempted to force one of our prize-brig's crew into the navy, but he chose rather to die than to perform any duty, and was again restored to the prison-ship.

"When I first became an inmate of this abode of suffering, despair and death, there were about four hundred prisoners on board; but in a short time they amounted to twelve hundred, and in proportion to our numbers the mortality increased. All the most deadly diseases were pressed into the service of the king of terrors, but his prime ministers were dysentery, small-pox and yellow fever. There were two hospital ships near to the old 'Jersey,' but these were soon so crowded with the sick that they could receive no more. The consequence was that the diseased and the healthy were mingled together in the main ship. In a short time we had two hundred or more sick and dying lodged in the fore part of the lower gun deck, where all the prisoners were confined at night. Utter derangement was a common symptom of yellow fever; and, to increase the horror of the darkness that shrouded us (for we were allowed no light betwixt decks), the voice of warning would be heard, 'Take heed to yourselves! There is a madman stalking through the ship with a knife in his hand!' I sometimes found

the man a corpse in the morning by whose side I laid myself down at night. At another time he would become deranged and attempt, in the darkness, to rise, and stumble over the bodies that everywhere covered the deck. In this case I had to hold him in his place by main strength. In spite of my efforts he would sometimes rise, and then I had to close in with him, trip up his heels and lay him again upon the deck. While so many were sick with raging fever there was a loud cry for water; but none could be had except on the upper deck, and but one allowed to ascend at a time. The suffering then from the rage of thirst during the night was very great. Nor was it at all times safe to attempt to go up. Provoked by the continual cry for leave to ascend, when there was one already on deck, the sentry would push them back with his bayonet. By one of these thrusts, which was more spiteful and violent than common, I had a narrow escape of my life. In the morning the hatchways were thrown open and we were allowed to ascend, all at once, and remain on the upper deck during the day. But the first object that met our view was an appalling spectacle—a boat loaded with dead bodies conveying them to the Long Island shore, where they were slightly covered with sand. I sometimes used to stand and count the number of times the shovel was filled with sand to cover a dead body; and certain I am that a few high tides or torrents of rain must have disinterred them, and had they not been removed I should suppose the shore even now would be covered with huge piles of the bones of American seamen.”

“There were probably four hundred on board who had never had the small-pox. Some perhaps might have been saved by inoculation, but humanity was wanting to try even this experiment. Let our disease be what it would, we were abandoned to our fate. Now and then an American physician was brought in as a captive, but if he could obtain his parole he left the ship; nor could we

blame him for this, for his own death was next to certain and his success in saving others by medicine in our situation was small. I remember only two American physicians who tarried on board a few days. No English physician, or any one from the city, ever, to my knowledge, came near us. There were thirteen of the crew to which I belonged, but in a short time all died but three or four. The most healthy and vigorous were first seized with the fever and died in a few hours. For them there seemed to be no mercy. My constitution was less muscular and plethoric, and I escaped the fever longer than any of the thirteen except one, and the first onset was less violent.”

Another survivor of these horrors, Captain Dring, wrote regarding the burial of the dead from the hulk:

“After landing at a low wharf, which had been built from the shore, we first went to a small hut which stood near the wharf, and was used as a place of deposit for the hand-barrows and shovels provided for these occasions. Having placed the corpses on the hand-barrows, and received our hoes and shovels, we proceeded to a bank near the Wallabout. Here a vacant space having been selected, we were directed to dig a trench in the sand of a proper length to receive the bodies. We continued our labor till our guards considered that a proper space had been excavated. The corpses were then laid into the trench without ceremony, and we threw sand over them. The whole appeared to produce no more impression on our guards than if we were burying the bodies of dead animals instead of men. They scarcely allowed us time to look about us; for no sooner had we heaped the earth above the trench than the order was given to march. But a single glance was sufficient to show us parts of many bodies which were exposed to view; although they had probably been placed there, with the same mockery of interment, but a few days before. Having thus performed, as well as we were

permitted to do it, the last duty to the dead, and the guards having stationed themselves on each side of us, we began reluctantly to retrace our steps to the boat. We had enjoyed the pleasure of breathing for a few moments the air of our native soil, and the thought of returning to the crowded prison-ship was terrible in the extreme. As we passed by the water's side we implored our guards to allow us to bathe, or even to wash ourselves for a few minutes; but this was refused us. I was the only prisoner of our party who wore a pair of shoes; and well recollect the circumstance that I took them from my feet for the pleasure of feeling the earth, or rather the sand, as I went along. It was a high gratification to us to bury our feet in the sand and to shove them through it, as we passed on our way. We went by a small patch of turf, some pieces of which we tore up from the earth and obtained permission to carry them on board for our comrades to smell them! * * * Having arrived at the hut we there deposited our implements and walked to the landing-place, where we prevailed on our guards, who were Hessians, to allow us the gratification of remaining nearly half an hour before we re-entered the boat.

"Near us stood a house, occupied by a miller; and we had been told that a tide-mill, which he attended, was in the immediate vicinity, as a landing place for which the wharf where we stood had been erected. It would have afforded me a high degree of pleasure to have been permitted to enter this dwelling, the probable abode of harmony and peace. It was designated by the prisoners by the appellation of the 'Old Dutchman's,' and its very walls were viewed by us with feelings of veneration, as we had been told that the amiable daughter of its owner had kept a regular account of the number of bodies which had been brought on shore for interment from the Jersey and the hospital ships. This could easily be done in the house, as its windows commanded a fair view of the landing place.

We were not, however, gratified on this occasion, either by the sight of herself or of any other inmate of the house. Sadly did we approach and re-enter our foul and disgusting place of confinement. The pieces of turf which we carried on board were sought for by our fellow-prisoners with the greatest avidity, every fragment being passed by them from hand to hand, and its smell inhaled, as if it had been a fragrant rose."

FURMAN'S LIST OF ANCIENT NAMES OF PLACES.

Gabriel Furman, writing in the year 1824, gives the following list of ancient names upon Long Island, with the dates affixed opposite to them, of the time when they were used, viz.:

IN THE TOWN OF BROOKLYN.

- 1667. Gowanus, which still retains the same name.
- 1667. Cripplebush, which still retains the same name.
- 1686. Wallaboght, which still retains the same name.
- 1686. Marchwick, and in 1722 called Martyr's' Hook, which was the point of land forming the present United States Navy Yard.
- 1689. Lubbertse's Neck, which was sold by Peter Corsen to Cornelius Sebringh, March 28, 1698, for £250, and Sebringh to find Corsen in meat, drink, washing, lodging, and apparel during his life. In 1690 the same place was called Graver's Kill. This place was recently known as Cornell's Red Mills, and is about five hundred feet north of the Atlantic dock.
- 1700. Gowanus Mill Neck, sometimes called Mill Neck, and known by this latter name in 1785. In 1680, a lot of land in this town was called an Erffe.

About the period of the Revolution the people were in the habit of distinguishing the large lots into which their farms or plantations were divided, by particular names, and these names they retained for many years. Thus in this town, near the road leading from Brooklyn Ferry to Flatbush, were the "Geele Water's Caump," the "Erste Caump of Der-

rick's land," the "Kline Caump," the "Twede Caump of Derrick's land," the "Middleste Caump," the "Benen Caump," and the "Agterse Caump."

IN THE TOWN OF MIDWOUT, OR FLATBUSH.

- 1660 Canarsee Landing, Canarsee Woods, which places still retain the same names.
- 1679 Third Kill.
- 1687. Minsehoele Hole.
- 1698. Rush Swamp.

IN THE TOWN OF BUSHWICK.

- 1690. The Norman Kill.

IN THE TOWN OF AMERSFORT, OR FLATLANDS.

- 1636. Kaskutensukin, the westernmost flat of land of the three flats.
- 1646. Mutelar's Island.
- 1687. Stroom Kill.
- 1687. Juriannes Hook.
- 1687. Fries Hook.
- 1690. Hogg's Neck.
- 1694. Albertse's Island.
- 1695. Mayise land.
- 1704. Fresh Kill.
- 1711. Bestevaar's Kill.
- 1712. Craven Valley.

IN THE TOWN OF NEW UTRECHT.

- 1660. Nayack, which name it still retains.
- 1685. The Fountain at Yellow Hook.
- 1690. Turk's Plantation, afterwards called Bruynenbergh.

IN THE TOWN OF GRAVESEND.

- 1692. Hoogh Penne Neck.
- 1693. Gysbert's' Island.
- 1695. Ambrose Strand.
- 1697. Garretsen's Neck.
- 1698. Cellars Neck.
- 1704. Great Woods.
- 1718. Harbie's Gat.
- 1718. Brown's Creek.
- 1718. Robin Poyneer's Patent.

IN THE TOWN OF NEWTON.

- 1656. The west branch of *Mespatt Kills*, called *Quandus Quaricus*.

Dosoris, the name of a place on this island, has its origin from the circumstance of the original owner of it, as a farm, or plantation,

having obtained it through his wife, and he being a scholar, called it *Dos Uxoris*, the *Wife's Gift*, which the people subsequently corrupted to its present name of *Dosoris*.

Quogue, in Suffolk county, is probably a corruption of the Indian name of a favorite shell-fish known to us as the *clam*, *Quohaug*—these shell-fish having been very abundant, and probably of a choice kind, as is indicated by the immense ancient shell banks in all the surrounding region. At this place is the only point from which the Great South Beach can be reached on foot from the mainland of the island, for the immense stretch of coast reaching from Fire Island to the inlet of Shinecoc Bay. In all other places you have to pass in a boat over many miles of water; and it is this circumstance which renders a ship-wreck upon that beach in winter so frequently dreadful in its consequences from the loss of life; for even if the crew and passengers should succeed in reaching the beach alive, they will find no shelter there, and having from ten to twenty miles of water to cross before they can experience any relief, and their boats being almost invariably destroyed or lost in the shipwreck, if the storm is very heavy and the cold severe, as is frequently the case; they perish from the exposure. It may be asked by those not acquainted with this beach, Why is this not provided against? The answer is, It is almost, if not quite impossible to do so, the character of the beach being such, and the distance from the mainland, and the difficulties and dangers of communication often so great that men could not live there at the times when their services would be most required. The formation and position of this beach is, however such that the great loss of life is usually sustained before the shipwrecked persons have the chance of reaching the land, from the immense seas thrown over them by the whole swell of the Atlantic Ocean, which, by the rapid evaporation it causes, comparatively soon chills them to death.

NAMES OF FAMILIES IN BROOKLYN.

<i>Ancient</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
Courten.	
Defforest,	Deforest.
Filkin.	
Gulick.	
Hansen,	Johnson.
Harsen.	
Houghawout,	Lefferts.

<i>Ancient.</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
Abranse.	
Aerson.	
Amertman,	Amerman.
Blaw.	
Beeckman,	Beekman.
Casperse.	
Dehart.	
Depotter.	
Ewetse.	
Hooghland.	
Janse.	Johnson.
Jarisse.	
Juriane.	
Lambertse,	Lambertson and Lamberson.
LeFoy.	
Lubbertse.	
Middagh.	
Schaers.	
Seberingh.	
Symonse,	Simonson.
Staats.	
Van Cortlandt.	
Van Eckellen.	

Of all these families there are now but seven remaining in Brooklyn, viz.: Beekman, Deforest, Johnson, Lambertson, Lefferts, Middagh and Simonson. Within the last five or six years the emigration from Continental Europe has brought back some of the old names as in New York, merchants of the name of Courten. The name of Middagh is Dutch, and means, in English, midday or noon.

NEW UTRECHT.

<i>Ancient.</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
Van Westervelt.	
Mattyse,	Martense.
Coorten.	
Salom.	
Smack,	original of Martense.
Van Thinhoven.	
GRAVESEND.	
Garretse.	Garretson and Gerritson.
Remmerson,	Remson.
FLATLANDS.	
Tielhuynon,	Terhune.
Lucasse.	
Kenne.	
Elbertse.	
Harmanse.	

BUSHWICK.

<i>Ancient.</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
Vanderschaez.	
Schamp.	
Loysen.	
FLATBUSH.	
Ditmarse,	Ditmas.

The practice of giving people what would now be called *nicknames*, by which they became known, not only to the public generally, but also in the official records, was very common under the Dutch Colonial Government, and it also continued for a considerable period under the English administration in this colony. In 1644, in the Dutch records we have John Pietersen, alias Friend John. In the Newton purchase from the Indians, dated April 12, 1656, one of the boundaries is, "by a Dutchman's land called *Hans the Boore*;" and in the Bushwick patent, dated October 12, 1667, one of the boundaries is "John the Swedes Meadow." In 1695, in the Kings County records a man is named living at Gowanus, as "Tunis the Fisher."

And we also find that by the records of the Common Council of the City of New York, on the 25th of March, 1691, they ordered that "fish be brought into the dock, over against the City Hall [then standing in Pearl street, at the head of Coenties slip], or the house that Long Mary formerly lived in."

And also on the 9th of April, in the same year, they directed "that Old Bush deliver into the hands of the treasurer the scales and weights that he hath in his hands belonging to the city, being first satisfied for the making of them."

Again, on the same day, the order "that Top Knot Betty and her children be provided for as objects of charity, and four shillings a week allowed." And further, that "the treasurer let Scarebouch have a new suit, and assist him in what's wanting."

All the preceding orders, from the date of April 9th, inclusive, were made in one day, so that our city functionaries of that period seem to have had a most charitable disposition, as well as a strange propensity for giving nicknames to people. But we are not yet done; this Common Council were not so mean as to apply such nicknames to those only to whom they afforded charitable relief, as some might otherwise suppose—they also used them when

discharging their debts. Thus, on the 8th of December, 1691, the city records contain an order that "the treasurer pay English Smith, £1, 13s. for three cords of wood, which he bought for the use of the city this day."

Strange as it may now seem to us for the Common Council of a city to place such names upon the public records, yet we have seen that this practice extended to the highest functionaries of the Colonial Government, and that the Governors, both Dutch and English, used it in their patents for towns, and other official documents. The explanation of it, in many cases, undoubtedly was, that in many instances the parties either had no surname, or family names (for family names were not so common then as now), or if they had, they did not themselves know it, and that which now appears like a nickname was from necessity adopted as a means of distinguishing them, and was usually taken from some personal characteristic, and which subsequently became, some part or other of it, the surname of the children, as Long and Betty.

The manner in which names of families sometimes become changed in this country is truly curious. There was previous to the middle of the last century, among the Dutch settlers in the southern part of this colony, and particularly upon Long Island, a regular systematic change of the family name with every generation, so that the son never bore the family name of his father; thus, if the father's name was Leffert Jansen, and he had a son named Jacobus, this son's name would not be Jansen, but it would be written Jacobus Lef-fertsen. Suppose the old gentleman would have a grandson by his son, who was christened Gerrit, his whole name would be Gerrit Jacobsen. Thus we would have in the three generations of that one single family, the following different names, viz.:

1. The father, named Leffert Jansen.
2. The son, named Jacobus Lef-fertsen.
3. The grandson, named Gerrit Jacobsen.

This strange custom does not seem to have prevailed among the Dutch in Albany; there they preserved their family names from the first settlement, and many of them may therefore be traced back without difficulty.

In other parts of our country, as well as among the Dutch, great changes have occurred in family names. Edward Livingston, Esq., in his answer to Mr. Jefferson, in the case of

the New Orleans Batture, furnishes us with the following singular instance of this nature:

An unfortunate Scotchman, whose name was Feyerston, was obliged, in pursuit of fortune, to settle amongst some Germans in the western part of the State of New York. They translated his name literally into German and called him Fourstein. On his returning to an English neighborhood his new acquaintances discovered that Fourstein, in German, meant Flint in English; they translated, instead of restoring his name, and the descendants of Feyerston go by the name of Flint to this day. I ought, however, says Mr. Livingston, to except one of his grandsons who settled at the Acadian coast, on the Mississippi, whose name underwent the fate of the rest of the family; he was called, by a literal translation into French, *Pierre-a-fusil*, and his eldest son returning to the family clan, his name underwent another transformation, and he was called Peter Gun! This is about equal to the Dutch transmutation of names, although wanting its system. Here we have the following result:

- | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. The father's | 1st Name, Feyerston. |
| | 2d Name, Fourstein. |
| | 3d Name, Flint. |
| 2. The son's | Name, Flint. |
| 3. The grandson's | 1st Name, Flint. |
| | 2d Name, <i>Pierre-a-fusil</i> |
| | 3d Name, Peter Gun. |

The old practice formerly so common among the Dutch settlers on Long Island, seems also to have been at one time in use in Iceland. Mr. Hooker, who was there in the summer of 1809, speaking of the family of Olaf Stephenson, the former Governor of that island, observes: "In naming his children, the Stiftsamptman (Governor), as well as his sons, have abolished the custom, which is otherwise, I believe, very general in Iceland, of calling the child after the Christian name of the father, with the addition sen or son to it; thus the son of the Etatsræd (Chief Justice) Magnus Stephenson ought by this rule to have been Magnusen, to which any Christian name might be subjoined. If it had been Olaf Magnusen, his son would bear the name of Olavsen, or rather Olafsen, as I believe it is generally written. The females had the addition of datter to the Christian name of the father."

This was precisely the old Dutch custom in this colony; and it has led to great difficulty in tracing the descent of our early Dutch fam-

ilies, and also in examining our old records, as there are but few who are conversant with this peculiarity in their change of names. Thus, amongst the Dutch the original name of the present family of the Lefferts was Houghawout. Leffert Houghawout's son James was called Jacobus Leffertsen, or Leffertse, as it was often written, dropping the letter n; and when this custom was abolished about the middle of the last century, this latter name Leffertse was retained as the family name. So also the original family name of the Martenses was Smack. Mattyse Smack's son received Mattyse as his surname, which eventually became the present name of Martense, although as now written only within the last half century. This is also the origin of the present family names of Johnson, or Jansen (which are both the same name), Remsen, Gerritsen. etc. It is strange that such a custom should have been identically the same with those two different nations; but it shows their common origin.

Upon this island, and especially in the central portions of it, are very many families of the name of Smith, and so numerous did they become at an early period of the settlement that it was thought necessary to distinguish the various original families by some peculiar name. Thus we have the Rock Smiths; the Blue Smiths; the Bull Smiths; the Weight Smiths, and the Tangier Smiths. Of the Rock Smiths there are two distinct families: one originally settled between Rockaway and Hempstead, some ten or fifteen years before the settlement of the first white inhabitant in Setauket, who derived their name from their contiguity to Rockaway; and the other located themselves in Brookhaven, and obtained their appellation from their ancestor erecting his dwelling against a large rock which still remains in the highway of that town. The Blue Smiths were settled in Queens county, and obtained their peculiar designation from a blue cloth coat worn by their ancestor; whether because a cloth coat was then an uncommon thing in the neighborhood, or that he always dressed in a coat of that color, does not appear. The Bull Smiths of Suffolk county are the most numerous of all the families of the name of Smith upon this island; it is said that there are now at least one thousand males of that branch on this island. The ancestor of this branch of the Smith family was Major Richard Smith, who came from England to New

England, with his father Richard, in the early part of the seventeenth century; and afterward came to the island and became the patentee of Smithtown. The sobriquet of this class of Smiths is said to have arisen from the circumstance of the ancestor having trained and used a bull in place of a horse for riding. The Weight Smiths derived their name from being possessed of the only set of scales and weights in the neighborhood of their residence, to which all the farmers of the country around resorted for the purpose of weighing anything they wished to sell or buy; at least so says the tradition. The Tangier Smiths owe their origin to Colonel William Smith, who had been the English Governor of Tangier, in the reign of Charles the Second, and emigrated to this colony in the summer of the year 1686, where he settled in the town of Brookhaven, on the Neck known as Little Neck, and afterward as Strong's Neck, which, together with his other purchases, were erected into a manor by the name of St. George's Manor, by a patent granted to him in 1693, by Governor Fletcher. Most of the Tangier Smiths are now in that town, scattered through it from the north to the south side of the island.

These different appellations of the families of the Smiths became as firmly settled as if they were regular family names; so that when any inquiry was made of any person on the road, man, woman or child, for any particular Smith, they would at once ask whether he was of the Rock breed, or the Bull breed, etc.; and if the person desiring the information could say which breed, he at once was told of his residence. In truth, there are so many of the same name in that most numerous family of the Smiths upon this island, that without adopting some such plan it would be almost impossible to distinguish one from the other. Among these Smiths, and at Smithtown, upon this island, have occurred two of the most marked instances of longevity known in this country.

Richard Smith, the patentee of Smithtown, of the Bull breed, purchased at New York a negro man named Harry, who lived with him, with his son, and then with his grandson, and died at Smithtown in the month of December, 1758, aged at least one hundred and twenty years. This remarkable individual said he could remember when there were but very few houses in the city of New York; his memory must have extended back to the administration of the Dutch Governor Kieft. His health and

strength of body continued almost unimpaired until very near his death, and he could do a good day's work when he had passed one hundred years.

There appears to have been another negro man in the same town who even exceeded him in the point of age. In a note to Moulton's History of New York, it is stated that an obituary article appeared in a newspaper, printed in 1739, of the death of a negro man at Smithtown, on Long Island, reputed to have been one hundred and forty years old; who declared that he well remembered when there were but three houses in New York. The memory of this man must therefore have extended back to the founding of New Amsterdam, in the year 1626, as New York was then called, and he must have come into this country with some of the first Dutch settlers.

BROOKLYN SURVIVORS OF THE MEXICAN WAR.

It is singular that in 1901 no fewer than thirty-five survivors of the Mexican war were still resident in Brooklyn, and nearly all, if we may judge by their portraits, hale and hearty old gentlemen, and several of them still engaged actively in business. Their names and the regiments in which they served are as follows:

T. W. Barnum, Company A, First Louisiana Volunteers; A. Nelson Bell, Naval Surgeon; Anthony Bassey, United States Steamship "Ohio;" Charles Blohm, Permanent Party; C. M. Brower, Company F, First New York Volunteers; Othneal Bush, United States Steamship "Princeton;" R. D. Buttle, United States Marine Battalion; Jacob Clute, Siege Train; E. B. Cole, Company C, Second United States Artillery; William Coler, Company B, Second Ohio Volunteers; Hugh Conner, Marine Corps; John Cornock, Company E, Third United States Dragoons; John Da Silva, United States Steamship "Savannah;" John Dick, Company I, First New York Volunteers; C. H. Farrell, Company I, First New York Volunteers; James C. Foote, United States Steamship "Columbus;" John H. Foote, United

States Steamship "Columbus;" J. S. Gallagher, Company A, Second Maryland Volunteers; C. Herrschaft, Company H, First United States Artillery; F. W. Jennings, Company E, First United States Infantry; Edward Kast, United States Steamship "Raritan;" Robert T. Kirk, Company K, First New York Volunteers; Julius Lucas, United States Steamship "Cumberland;" Hubert Oberly, Company G, Seventh United States Infantry; F. E. Pinto, Company D, First New York Volunteers; David Randall, Recruiting Office; John Ritter, United States Steamship "St. Mary's;" H. T. Spencer, United States Steamship "Vesuvius;" Samuel C. Stores, Company A, Tenth United States Infantry; E. Sullivan, Company I, First Rhode Island Volunteers; L. Thomas, Company F, First Pennsylvania Volunteers; D. Van Auken, United States Steamship "Independence;" Van Bokkelen, Seventh United States Infantry; John Weeks, United States Steamship "Cumberland;" J. Williams, United States Steamship "Vesuvius."

The following details regarding some of these veterans are taken from an article in "The Brooklyn Eagle" of February 17, 1901:

By far the most important military organization that was recruited in this vicinity for service in Mexico was the First New York Volunteers, under the command of Colonel Ward B. Burnett, Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Baxter, who was killed at Chapultepec, and Major J. C. Burnham. On May 19, 1846, the President served a requisition on Governor Fish for seven regiments to be organized and held in readiness for service. On November 16 of the same year a regiment was called for, and Colonel Burnett's being the first organization, was chosen for the service.

The surviving members of the First New York Volunteers are General Francis E. Pinto, Charles H. Farrell, Charles M. Brower, Robert Kirk and John Dick. General Pinto enlisted as second lieutenant in the First Regiment, New York Volunteers, and is the only surviving commissioned officer of

the regiment. He was brevetted a captain and assisted in planting the only regimental flag on the walls of Chapultepec. General Pinto was a close friend of Lieutenant Mayne Reid, who became famous as a writer of boys' stories, they being officers in the same regiment. The General raised a regiment for service in the Civil war, during which he rose to the rank of brigadier-general. He has written a history of the Mexican campaign and the Rebellion, which he has not published. He is not now actively engaged in business.

Charles M. Brower, who lives at 1105 Bedford avenue, was one of the original members of the regiment, and enlisted in Company F. One of his most conspicuous services during the war was the recovery for burial of the body of a comrade who had been murdered by the Mexicans in the rear of the American army. Mr. Brower was twenty years old when he enlisted. He rose to the rank of sergeant.

Charles H. Farrell enlisted in Company I, of the First New York Volunteers, and served through the entire war. He contributed letters to the Herald during the Mexican war, and at the outbreak of the Civil war became its regular correspondent. For years Mr. Farrell was the city editor of that paper, and is now clerk of the Supreme Court in this borough. Mr. Farrell, who is seventy-two years old, resides on Gates avenue.

Robert Kirk enlisted in Company K, of the same regiment, at the age of twenty-three, but being detailed for recruiting service at Fort Hamilton, he was unable to sail with the rest of the troops. He did duty as a recruiting sergeant until August 10, 1847, when he joined his regiment in Mexico. Mr. Kirk has retired from business and lives at his home on Stuyvesant avenue. He is seventy-six years old and a well-preserved man.

John Dick enlisted in Company I, with the original regiment, and was connected for a time with the quartermaster's department. Mr. Dick is in poor health and somewhat feeble.

Edward Kast, who is nearly eighty-two

years of age and still hale and hearty, followed the sea all the early years of his life, and at the outbreak of the Mexican war he was serving in the United States Navy on the frigate "Raritan," under the command of Commodore Gregory. Before the beginning of actual hostilities his vessel was dispatched to Point Isabel, and he, among others, was sent ashore to join General Taylor's division, which took part in the battle of Palo Alto. Mr. Kast remained with the American forces until the end of the war, when he embarked in the merchant service. He now conducts a cigar store on Metropolitan avenue.

Julius Lucas shipped on the "Falmouth" when that vessel sailed for Vera Cruz with the United States Minister. This was in 1844, when Mr. Lucas was about sixteen years of age. Shortly after this, Commander Forrest, who was a friend of Mr. Lucas' father, had the young man transferred to his own vessel, the frigate "Cumberland." He was at the siege of Vera Cruz, the engagement of Eldorado, and later was sent ashore to join the land forces at Tobasco. Mr. Lucas marched into Vera Cruz by the side of Commander Forrest. He is seventy-three years old, and has retired from business.

John Ritter joined the merchant service when he was but seventeen years old, and followed it for a decade, when he entered the United States Navy. He served on the United States steamship "St. Mary's," the famous "hanging ship" (so called because a man was hanged at the yard arm for striking an officer), during the Mexican war, and took part in the siege of Vera Cruz. He is not only the oldest retired gunner in the Navy, but the oldest Mexican war veteran in Brooklyn. He works every day in the Department of Arrears in the Controller's office, and, although eighty-six years old, he writes a beautiful hand.

A. Nelson Bell, the editor of the Sanitarian, was a naval surgeon during the war with Mexico, and the last one who survives. Mr. Bell went to Vera Cruz with Farragut, and was in

the wreck off the coast of Mexico when two commanders were lost. He floated out to sea on two oars, and, after terrible suffering, was picked up by a passing vessel. He served on six different vessels during the war.

Anthony Bassey, who is quite feeble, is one of the few sailors who served on the Pacific coast. John Da Silva was also in the Pacific. They both served on the "Savannah," and Mr. Bassey was also on the "Ohio." Mr. Da Silva is a Portuguese, and was born in Madeira.

James Williams, who lives at 33 Devoe street, and Hiram T. Spencer, of 555 Tenth street, were both on the United States steamship "Vesuvius." John H. Foote and James C. Foote, who are brothers, were on the ship "Columbus," doing blockade duty at Monterey. They were under the command of Commodore Bidel, and afterward circumnavigated the world in this vessel. Othneal Bush, who is employed in the Navy Yard, served during the war on the "Princeton." Daniel Van Auken was stationed on the Pacific coast in the "Independence," under Commodore Schubert. Mr. Van Auken is seventy-five years old, and has retired from business. John Weeks, who is the only colored survivor of the Mexican war in Brooklyn, was on the old frigate "Cumberland."

The other veterans in this borough were enlisted in the regulars or the volunteer regiments of other States. There is one member of the Marine Battalion, one of the Third Dragoons, one of the First and one of the Second Artillery, several in the infantry, and one each of the volunteer regiments of Ohio, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island and Maryland. There is also a musician, a member of the Permanent Party and one of the Ordnance Department.

John Cornock, who belonged to Company E, Third United States Dragoons, has the reputation among his fellow veterans of being one of the most recklessly brave fighters of the war. Mr. Cornock is very reticent about his own feats, but his regiment saw some of the severest fighting of the war. Mr. Cornock has

led a very romantic career since the war with Mexico. Many of his personal experiences in Mexico are thrilling and entertaining, and his narrow escape from capture by Indians in crossing the continent, his services in the California Vigilante troubles and his subsequent life prove him to have been a seeker of adventures. Mr. Cornock has retired from business and lives at 114 Fourth avenue.

Robert D. Buttle is the only survivor of the Marine Battalion in this borough. He enlisted in this organization on May 24, 1847, and sailed in the "Atlas" on June 4 of the same year, arriving at Vera Cruz in the early part of July. His company was engaged in the battles of Pueblo, Contreras and Churubusco, and at the storming of Chapultepec. Mr. Buttle was wounded at the capture of the city of Mexico, and lay there eight months before he had recovered sufficiently to be removed. He is now seventy-three years old, and conducts a restaurant in Court street.

Charles Blohm was a member of the Hanoverian army in Europe, and on account of his training was selected for a body of troops known as the Permanent Party. They enlisted for any service until the end of the war, but were quartered at Governor's Island till the declaration of peace. Ebenezer B. Cole enlisted in Company C, of the Second United States Artillery, during the Mexican war, and for years after was a captain in the Rhode Island Militia. Mr. Cole is seventy-two years old and has retired. Jacob Clute was connected with the Ordnance Department under General Stone, and was attached to Scott's army. Mr. Clute lives at 207 Halsey street, and has retired. David Randall, who lives at 277 Eighteenth street, was a musician during the Mexican war. Mr. Randall is seventy-six years old.

Coley Herrschaft occupies the unique position of being the youngest Mexican war veteran. He enlisted in the First Artillery, February 10, 1845, at Governor's Island, and fought under the forces of General Taylor. Mr. Herrschaft was but twelve years old when

he became a soldier. He served part of the time in Company H and afterward in the regimental band, his regiment being the last to leave Vera Cruz. He received his discharge after a service of five years, and this document places his age at that time at seventeen.

William Coler is the only representative of the Ohio troops in this city. Mr. Coler was in Company B, of the Second Regiment of Ohio Volunteers, under the command of Colonel Morgan. Mr. Coler was elected a sergeant, but resigned the office to become clerk to the colonel of the regiment. He is best remembered as the father of Controller Bird S. Coler and the head of the banking firm of W. N. Coler & Company.

John S. Gallagher belonged to Company A, of the Second Regiment of Maryland Volunteers, under the command of Colonel Hughes. This regiment captured and held the National Bridge and acted as a part of the body guard of Santa Ana after his surrender.

Eugene Sullivan enlisted in Company I, of the only regiment of Rhode Island Volunteers, under the command of Colonel Clemens. This regiment formed a part of General Scott's army. Lafayette Thomas, who is quite ill at present, was a member of Company F, of the First Pennsylvania Volunteers. Captain John Bennett commanded the company and Colonel Wynkoop the regiment. Mr. Thomas was one of the organizers of the Scott Legion in Philadelphia.

Samuel C. Stores enlisted in the Tenth United States Infantry, raised under the ten regiment bill. The regiment was commanded by Colonel Temple and was a part of Taylor's army, but was never engaged in any battles.

William K. Van Bokkelen belonged to the Seventh Regiment of the same body of troops. He is a West Point graduate, and served in the Mexican war as a second lieutenant. Mr. Van Bokkelen is seventy-nine years old and is engaged in the real estate business.

Hubert Oberly enlisted in the Seventh United States Infantry in 1840. He served all

through the Mexican war, part of the time with Taylor's army and later with the army of General Scott. Mr. Hubert was in the Florida war, the Rebellion, and fought Indians on the frontier for ten years. His service in the army lasted for twenty-five years, and he was for thirty-two years on the police force.

Hugh Connor was a member of the Marine Corps. He sailed for Vera Cruz in the "Monterey," and was in the rear of Scott's army. Mr. Connor is seventy-one years old and has retired from business.

T. W. Barnum, of 118 Prospect place, served in Company A, Captain R. R. Mace, First Regiment Louisiana Volunteers, under the command of Colonel L. G. DeRuse, of New Orleans.

GLEANINGS FROM EARLY HISTORIANS.

THOMPSON'S ACCOUNT OF KINGS COUNTY.

For purposes of comparison, and showing the wonderful advance made by Kings county in little over half a century, we reprint the entire story of the county and its towns given in Thompson's "History of Long Island," first edition, 1839:

Town of Bushwick.

This town is situated in the northeast extremity of Kings county, is bounded westerly by the East river, northerly by Maspeth or Newtown creek, easterly by Newtown and southerly by Brooklyn, and that part of Flatbush called New Lots. Its area is 3,860 acres, of which a greater portion is under cultivation; its proximity to the cities of Brooklyn and New York rendering it valuable in a high degree. The precise period of its settlement is not satisfactorily ascertained, but is believed to have been some years later than Brooklyn and the more southern towns. It was commenced by the Dutch, who were joined, many years after, by a number of Huguenot families, whose descendants are numerous and respectable in this and the neighboring towns. The name is of Dutch origin, indicating that the territory was remarkable

for the woods which covered its surface in early times. There are some families here who can trace their ancestry back nearly two hundred years, and as possessing at that period the identical lands now in the occupation of their descendants. The increase in population in this part of the country was so small as not to acquire its municipal character before the year 1648, at which time application was made to the governor for a patent or ground-brief. One was accordingly issued, under which the inhabitants remained till the conquest of New Netherlands in 1664. The government having now fallen into other hands and many considerable defects existing in the charter granted by Governor Stuyvesant, the people of Bushwick, in 1666, at a town meeting assembled for the purpose, appointed a committee to wait upon Governor Nicolls, "to solicit him for a new patent, and to request that therein the boundaries of their plantation might be more expressly defined and set forth."

This patent was obtained on the 25th of October, 1667, wherein, among other things, the limits and bounds of the town are set forth in the words following:

"Bounded with the mouth of a certain creeke or kill, called Maspeth-Kill, right over against Dominie-Hook, soe their bounds goe to David Jocham's Hook; then stretching upon a south-east line along the said Kill, they come to Smith's Island, including the same, together with all the meadow-ground or valley thereunto belonging; and continuing the same course, they pass along by the fence at the wood-side, soe to Thomas Wandall's meadow, from whence, stretching upon a south-east by south line, along the woodland to the Kills, taking in the meadow or valley there; then pass along near upon a south-east by south line six hundred rod into the woods; then running behind the lots as the woodland lyes, south-west by south; and out of the said woods they goe again north-west, to a certain small swamp; from thence they run behind the New Lotts, to John, the Sweede's-meadow; then over the Norman's-Kill, to the west end of his old house, from whence they goe alongst the river, till you come to the mouth of Maspeth-Kill and David Jocham's Hook, whence they first began."

From the organization of the town till the year 1690, it was for certain civil purposes associated with the other towns in the county, except Gravesend, constituting a separate dis-

trict under the appellation of the "Five Dutch Towns;" and for which a secretary or register was specially commissioned by the governor, whose duty it was to take the proof of wills, of marriage settlements, also the acknowledgment of "Transcripts," or conveyances, and many of the more important contracts and agreements; all of which were required to be recorded. This office was, in 1674, held by Nicasius de Sille, who had once held the office of attorney-general under the administration of Stuyvesant. These five towns likewise formed but one ecclesiastical congregation, and joined in the support of their ministers in common. The inhabitants, with few exceptions, professed the doctrines promulgated at the synod of Dort in 1618, most of whose resolutions are still adhered to in the Reformed Dutch churches. These churches were at that period, and for a long time after, governed by the classis of Amsterdam, and so continued till about the year 1772, when the American churches repudiated any dependence upon the mother church, and established classes and synods of their own, on the model of the church of Holland. In the year 1662, according to one authority, the dwellings in this town did not exceed twenty-five, and were located on the site of the village of Bushwick, which, with the Octagon church, built in 1720, were enclosed by palisades, as most of the other settlements were. In the minutes of the court of sessions is the following entry:

"At a Court of Sessions, held at Flatbush for Kings County, May 10, 1699. Uppon the desire of the inhabitants of Breucklyn, that according to use and order every three yeare the limmits betweene towne and towne must be runn, that a warrant or order may be given, that upon the 17th day off May, the line and bounds betwixt said towns of Breucklyn and Boswyck shall be run according to their patents or agreements. Ordered, That an order should be past according to their request."

The population of this town was very inconsiderable at the time of the Revolution compared with other parts of the county; yet they suffered greatly from the depredations of the enemy. They were particularly exposed to the invaders, who made, of course, an indiscriminate destruction of whatever their caprice or revenge dictated. The nearness of its forests to the garrison and barracks of New York and Brooklyn led to the entire waste of the valuable timber which abounded at the commencement of the contest. On the return of

the owners to their homes at the close of the war, they found not only the woods and fences destroyed, but their dwellings, in many instances, greatly deteriorated in value.

On the 12th of May, 1664, the magistrates of this town sentenced one John Van Lyden, convicted of publishing a libel, to be fastened to a stake, with a bridle in his mouth, eight rods under his arm, and a label on his breast with the words, "writer of lampoons, false accuser, and defamer of magistrates," upon it, and then to be banished from the colony. An instance also occurred, of a clergyman, who had improperly married a couple, being sentenced to "flogging and banishment," but which, on account of the advanced age of the delinquent, was mitigated by the governor to banishment only. Another person, convicted of theft, was compelled to stand for the space of three hours under a gallows, with a rope around his neck and an empty scabbard in his hands. In 1664 permission was given by the town to Abraham Janson to erect a mill on Maspeth Kill, which was probably the first water-mill built within the town, and for grinding of the town's grain he was to receive the "customary duties." November 12, 1695, the court of sessions of Kings county made an order "That Mad James should be kept at the expense of the county, and that the deacons of each town within the same doe forthwith meet together, and consider about their propercons for maintainence of said James."

The village of Williamsburgh is not only the principal settlement, but contains within its corporate limits more than two-thirds of the whole population of the town. This flourishing village was, till within a few years, an inconsiderable place, although it was commenced, by a few spirited individuals, nearly thirty years ago, by erecting a few houses and establishing a ferry between it and the foot of Grand street. At this period the houses on the New York side, in the vicinity of the ferry, were scattering; and where extensive blocks of buildings and a large population now exist, was then, in a great measure, an open field of broken ground; and a general want of confidence in the project of making this a place of business, retarded its operations and prevented its growth. In the year 1817 a ferry-boat, impelled by horse power, gave a new impulse to Williamsburgh, and it began to assume an importance before unknown. Still, the main current of travel was by way of Brooklyn, and the progress of improvement

here was slow and gradual. At that time the road leading to the ferry was the principal thoroughfare of the village, and where there are now wide and handsome streets partially built upon, were then cultivated fields, orchards, etc. Such was the state of things, in a great degree, when the first act of incorporation was obtained, April 14, 1827, which proved, in fact, a new and important era in the increase and prosperity of the village. The territory embraced in the act is as follows: "Beginning at the bay or river opposite the town of Brooklyn, and running thence easterly along the division line between the towns of Bushwick and Brooklyn to the land of Abraham A. Remsen; thence northerly by the same to a road or highway at a place called Sweed's Fly; thence by the said highway to the dwelling-house late of John Vandervoort, deceased; thence in a straight line northerly, to a small ditch or creek, against the meadow of John Skillman; thence by said creek to Norman's Kill; thence by the middle or center of Norman's Kill to the East river; thence by the same to the place of beginning." The first trustees appointed in this act were Noah Waterbury, John Miller, Abraham Meserole, Lewis Sanford and Thomas T. Morrill; of whom the first named, a well-known and spirited individual, was chosen president. The board, under the extensive and liberal provisions of this charter, applied themselves immediately and vigorously to the laying out of streets and building lots as the basis for future improvements; and everything was done by them which the state of things at that time seemed to authorize or require. Nevertheless the increase of business and population was not equal to the public expectations until another portion of territory was included in the incorporated part of the village, and additional powers conferred upon the trustees by the act of April 18, 1835. This additional legislative provision vested the public concerns of the village in the hands of nine trustees, of which new board Edmund Frost was chosen president, and by whose zeal, industry and perseverance much has, within a short time, been accomplished for the increase and welfare of the place. Such has been the progress of improvement, that the ancient village of Bushwick can scarcely be identified, having become amalgamated with the village of Williamsburgh. Indeed, it now seems both a matter of surprise and deep regret that public attention should not have been sooner and more

efficiently attracted towards a place possessing so many and superior natural advantages for the successful prosecution of every species of manufacture and commerce, and for the erection of pleasant and convenient private residences. Situated opposite the very heart of the city of New York, it has a bold water front upon the East river of a mile and a half, with a sufficient depth for all commercial purposes, and has this advantage over Brooklyn, that its entire shore is under the control of its own local authorities. There has already been constructed, under the act of the 22d of April, 1835, and the statutes before mentioned, several large and substantial wharves and docks, affording safe and convenient mooring for vessels, even of the largest class. Its ferry is, by two or three miles, the nearest approximation to the upper parts of the city from the eastern towns, and is connected with the upper and lower parts of the city by double lines of steam ferry boats of the best kind, and remarkable for their accommodations and speed. The ferry to Peck Slip may be said to unite the village with the Fulton and Catharine markets, while another is in contemplation to the foot of Houston street, leading to the upper wards and Harlaem. Williamsburg now contains seventy-three streets permanently laid out, of which twenty-seven have been opened and regulated, including one McAdamized and seven paved streets. The number of dwellings is five hundred and eighty, and the inhabitants about three thousand and five hundred. There are one Dutch Reformed and two Methodist churches, ten fire companies, one hook and ladder company, two distilleries, which consume annually more than two hundred thousand bushels of grain, one steam spice mill, five rope-walks, an extensive glue factory, two hat manufactories, one iron foundry, two lumber yards, two lime and brick yards, one coal yard, six hotels, one drug store and a due proportion of other mechanics and tradesmen. A considerable number of elegant dwellings have lately been erected in the southern part of the village, owned and occupied by persons doing business in New York. Many other inducements exist, besides an easy and speedy communication with the city, that will insure a rapid influx of inhabitants, and an expansion of business in every department. The improvements in contemplation, and partially in progress, along the shore south of the present ferries, will in time unite with those in the vicinity of the navy yard at Brooklyn, and in

half a century perhaps form a continuous city from the mouth of Newtown creek to Red-Hook, a distance of four miles.

Town of Gravesend.

This town occupies the most southerly part of Kings County, including also Coney Island, which is washed by the Atlantic ocean. It is centrally distant from New York city about ten miles; bounded east by Flatlands, south by the sea, and west by New Utrecht, of a triangular shape, with its base upon the ocean and terminating northerly in a point adjoining Flatbush. Much of the territory consists of salt marsh, not more than one-third being returned as improved land; the surface generally level, but near the seashore are some ridges of sand-hills. This town, unlike the rest of the county, was settled by English people, mostly from Massachusetts, as early as 1640, who gave it the name of Gravesend, they having sailed from a place of that name in England on their departure for America. They were joined soon after by a small colony of English Quakers, accompanied by Lady Deborah Moody, a woman of rank, education and wealth, who, with several others residing at Lynn, Sandwich, and other towns in New England, had imbibed the religious sentiments of George Fox, and being objects of jealousy and persecution with the Puritans there, determined to settle elsewhere. Considering the situation of this town calculated for the site of a commercial village, they proceeded almost immediately to lay out ten acres of ground near the center into streets and squares, which they enclosed with a palisado defense. The plan of the village is still preserved in the clerk's office of the town, and is worthy admiration for its simplicity and beauty. It seems the project was soon after abandoned on discovering the insufficient depth of the water for the approach of large vessels. One of the original squares of the contemplated city was occupied by the court house of the county so long as the courts continued to be held here; another contained the first Dutch church, and a third has long been used for a public cemetery. On the same plot are a considerable number of graves of the first Quakers, the whole of which have been levelled by the plow, except that of Peter Sullivan and his wife, at the head of which is a large granite slab, containing only the names of the deceased. As this particular sect make no use of such memorials, it was probably placed here

by some friend or relative who was not a Quaker.

The first patent or ground-brief was granted by Governor Kieft in 1643 to Antonie Jansen Van Sale (or Anthony Johnson) for one hundred morgen of land, which was afterwards known as the Old Bowery. A morgen was a Dutch measure of little less than two acres, consisting of six hundred square Dutch rods. On the 24th of May, 1644, a patent was also granted to Guisbert Op-Dyck for Coney Island, called in the patent Cunny Island, and by the Dutch Conynen-Eylandt, probably from the name of an individual who had possessed some part of it. Pine Island, then called Conyne-Hook, was at that time separated from the former by a creek, which has since disappeared. The latter was doubtless the spot upon which the discoverer of the Hudson and his crew landed in 1609 before entering the bay of New York. A general patent for this town, written both in Dutch and English, was obtained from Governor William Kieft on the 19th of December, 1645. The patentees named therein are the Lady Deborah Moody, Sir Henry Moody, Baonet, Ensign George Baxter and Sergeant James Hubbard, with their associates; and is for "A certain quantity of land lying or being upon or about the westernmost part of Long Island, beginning at the north of a creek adjacent to Conyne-Island, and bounded on the west part thereof with the lands belonging to Anthony Johnson and Robert Pennoyre; and to run as far as the westernmost part of a certain pond in an old Indian field on the north side of the plantation of the said Robert Pennoyre; and from thence to run directly east as far as a valley, being at the head of a fly or marsh sometime belonging to the land of Hugh Garretson; and being bounded on the south with the main Ocean, with liberty to put what cattle they shall see fitting to feed or graze upon the aforesaid Conyne-Island, and with liberty to build a town with such necessary fortifications as to them shall seem expedient; and to have and enjoy the free liberty of conscience according to the customs and manners of Holland without molestation, and to establish courts, and elect magistrates, to try all causes not exceeding fifty Holland guilders."

The circumstance of this patent being granted to a female, and her being also first named, is a matter of some curiosity; and, in connection with events hereinafter mentioned, exhibits the Lady Moody in a conspicuous

light. She being a considerable personage in the early history of the town, it is important to ascertain, as far as possible, the particulars of her history. We find it mentioned in the very interesting publication by Mr. Alonzo Lewis, entitled "History of Lynn," that the Lady Deborah Moody came to that town in the year 1640. That in 1635 she went from one of the remote counties in England to London, where she remained in opposition to a statute which directed that no person should reside beyond a limited time from their own homes. On the 21st of April of that year, the court of Star-Chamber ordered that "Dame Deborah Mowdie" and others, should return to their hereditaments in forty days, in the good example necessary for the poorer class. That soon after her arrival at Lynn, on the 5th of April, 1640, she united with the church of Salem; and on the 13th of May the court granted her four hundred acres of land. In 1641, she purchased the farm of the deputy governor, John Humfrey, called Swamscut, for which she paid £1,100. That some time afterwards she became imbued with the erroneous doctrine that the baptism of infants was a sinful ordinance, and was thereupon excommunicated, and that in 1643 she removed to Long Island. Governor Winthrop, in his journal, says, that "in 1643 Lady Moody was in the colony of Massachusetts, a wise and anciently religious woman; and being taken with the error of denying baptism to infants, was dealt withal by many of the elders and others, and admonished by the church of Salem, whereof she was a member; but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, etc., she removed to the Dutch, against the advice of her friends." "After her arrival at Long Island (says Mr. Lewis), she experienced much trouble from the Indians, her house being assaulted by them many times. Her wealth enabled her to render assistance to Governor Stuyvesant in some trouble with the neighboring settlers in 1654, and so great was her influence over him that he conceded in part the nomination of the magistrates to her. In the quarterly court records her son is styled Sir Henry Moody." "At the same court, December 14, 1642, the Lady Deborah Moodie, Mrs. King and the wife of John Tilton were presented, for holding that the baptism of infants is no ordinance of God." From these historical relations we learn the reason why the Lady Moody, her son Sir Henry Moody, Ensign Baxter, Sergeant Hubbard, John Tilton and many others of her

associates and friends, left New England and planted themselves at Gravesend, where they hoped to enjoy the most perfect freedom of opinion, unawed by the civil power, and be allowed unmolested to propagate those religious principles which to them seemed most agreeable to their principles of reason and justice. All this, it would seem, was intended to be secured by the patent above mentioned; how far it was realized under the governor's successor will appear hereafter, when we view the persecutions practiced upon the Quakers of this and other towns under the Dutch jurisdiction. Lady Moody probably retained a portion of her large real estate in New England, for Governor Winthrop says that in 1646 the house of Lady Moody at Salem was injured by a tempest, the roof being torn off; which fact he likewise mentions in a letter to his son John, then living at Fisher's Island. A release or conveyance from the Canarsee Indians was obtained for Gravesend-Neck and Conyne Island, on the 7th of May, 1654. Other conveyances in different parts of the town were procured at different times, both by the town and by individuals, which in the end occasioned no small difficulty, in consequence of the clashing of boundaries, the description of which, in deeds, were frequently inconsistent and obscure.

On the 1st of January, 1643, a soldier was convicted before the court of sessions at Gravesend of having left his station while on guard, and was punished by being compelled to sit upon a wooden horse during the parade, with a pitcher in one hand and a drawn sword in the other; to show that he loved beer more than his duty, and that his courage was always to be determined by the quantity consumed. "At a town meeting, September 27, 1644, it was voted that those as should have Boweries (farms), should have fifty morgen of upland, with meadow proportionable to their stock; and it was further ordered, that if any did not build a habitable house by the last of May next, should be defaulted and forfeit their land to the town." The records of this town, which were kept uniformly in the English language, are still preserved almost entire. They commence with the year 1645, and for a series of years are chiefly occupied with records of wills, inventories, letters of administration and a variety of private contracts, bargains, sales, etc. In January, 1648, the town elected Sergeant James Hubbard, a man of respectability and influence, to execute the office of scout

or constable, which was considered of much importance. On the 14th of April, 1649, John Furman agreed with the town to keep their calves three months for twenty guilders a month, to be paid in money, tobacco or corn, and some bitters, if desired. In March, 1650, it was required of every owner of a lot of ground to pay one guilder toward the common charges of the town, to be collected and paid by Mr. Stillwell and Joseph Tilton. In December of the same year it was ordered that every man should fence the head of his lot upon the town square, with a sufficiency of palisades, by the middle of April next. Within this palisade enclosure, which included the original town-plot of ten acres, the inhabitants secured their cattle during the night, and themselves also, when apprehensive of danger from the natives, in which case an armed guard was employed. That wolves were both plentiful and mischievous at that time, appears from the fact, that on the 8th of August, 1650, three guilders were offered for each wolf killed in the town, and two guilders for a fox. It was ordered also that every man be provided with a gun, a pound of powder, and two pounds of lead or bullets. Every owner of a house was likewise required to provide himself a ladder of twenty feet or more in length. It was also voted and agreed in town meeting, that whoever should transgress, in word or deed, in defaming, scandalizing, slandering or falsely accusing any, to the breach of the peace and the reproach of the place, should suffer condign punishment according to his demerit, as should be thought meet by the magistrates, by fine, imprisonment, stocking or standing at a public post.

In the year 1650 the following persons are ascertained to have been inhabitants and freeholders of the town:

William Goulding, Jacob Swart, Walter Wall, Charles Morgan, Peter Simson, John Cock, John Laus, Lawrence Johnson, John Broughman, William Wilkins, John Tilton, John Van Cleef, Thomas Spicer, Ralph Cardell, James Grover, Carson Johnson, Thomas Baxter, William Bowne, Thomas Whitlock, Richard Gibson, Richard Stout, James Hubbard, William Nicolls, Edward Brown, John Thomas, Lady Deborah Moody, Elizabeth Applegate, John Bowne, John Peters, John Applegate, Lyman Law, Thomas Morrell, James Curlear.

In 1654 Governor Stuyvesant rejected certain persons who had been nominated by the

town for magistrates, and submitted for his approbation; these were Baxter and Hubbard, who had rendered themselves obnoxious to his displeasure by their fidelity to the people and their opposition to the arbitrary measures of his administration. This produced great offence, and the popular indignation rose to so high a pitch, that his excellency found it expedient to go in person to Gravesend. In order to allay the general excitement, he was induced to avail himself of the popularity and influence of the Lady Moody, and even committed the appointment of the magistrates to her discretion. Whether this remarkable woman continued here till her death, or returned again to New England, is not certainly known. It is supposed that while she remained here, she occupied the farm of the late Van Brunt Magaw, now owned by Samuel Smith, Esq., and one of the best in the county. It appears that the neighboring Indians were sometimes troublesome to the white settlers, and on one occasion a considerable body of Indians from the Main attacked the place, assaulting the house of the Lady Moody, and would have destroyed her and her family (as they did Lady Ann Hutchinson and her party a short time before at Throg's Point), had they not been overpowered by the number and courage of the inhabitants. Upon the Dutch records in the office of the secretary of state is the following entry, bearing date March 25, 1643:

"Whereas, in some time past, several misunderstandings have taken place between the savages of Long Island and our nation, by which, from both sides, the blood has streamed upon the land, the houses have been robbed and burned, with the killing of the stock and carrying off the corn by the Indians, so it is, that between us and them, who already follow the banner of their great chief, Pennowits, a solid peace has been established, so that all injuries, from whatever side, are hereby forgiven and forgotten."

A confirmation patent for this town was obtained from Governor Nicolls on the 13th of August, 1668, in which the boundaries do not vary from those described in the patent of Governor Kieft in 1644. An additional patent was issued on the 1st of July, 1670, by Governor Francis Lovelace, which, after reciting the most material parts of the original Dutch patent, and the bounds therein mentioned, proceeds as follows:

"Know ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Royal

Highness, I have ratified, confirmed, and granted, and by these presents do ratify, confirm and grant unto Thomas Delavall, Esq., Mr. James Hubbard, Ralph Cardell, William Bowne, John Tilton, William Goulding, and Samuel Spicer, as patentees, for and on behalf of themselves and their associates the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town, their heirs, successors, and assigns, all the forementioned quantity, tract, and parcel of land, together with the inheritance of all Coney Island (reserving only the privilege of erecting huts for fishing and drying of nets there upon occasion for all persons who shall undertake that design for the public good). Including all the land within a line stretching from the uttermost part of the said Island, unto the southernmost part of Antony Jansen's Old Bowry; their east bounds being the Strome Kill, which comes to the marsh or Fly of Mathew Gerritsen's land aforementioned. As also the meadow-ground and upland not specified in their former patent; concerning which there have been several disputes and differences between the inhabitants of the said town and their neighbor, Francis Brown, the which in part were issued both by my predecessors and myself, but since fully concluded and determined between them by articles of agreement; the which articles I do hereby confirm and allow, with all havens, quarries, rivers, &c. Given under my hand, and seal of the Province at Fort James in New York, this first day of July, in the 22d year of his Majesties Reign, Anno Domini, 1670.

"FRANCIS LOVELACE.

"MATHIAS NICOLLS, Sec."

On the 26th of March, 1777, an agreement was entered into between the towns of Gravesend and New Utrecht in relation to their boundaries, which was confirmed in the patent granted by Governor Dongan on the 10th of September, 1686. The boundaries mentioned in this instrument are as follows:

"Beginning at the westernmost part of a certain place called Coney Island, and from thence to the westernmost part of Anthony Jansen and Robert Pennoyer's land; and so from thence by New Utrecht fence, according to agreement, to the bounds of Flatbush, and from thence along John Ditmas his land unto the bounds of Flatlands, upon a line agreed upon between Flatlands and Gravesend, which from John Ditmas his land, runs to a certain bound stake, and from thence to a white-oak tree marked and standing near New Utrecht

wagon path, and so to the north-west corner of Albert, the weaver's field, and so going to a certain marked white-oak tree that stands by the highway side in the Hollow, and from thence running along the Hollow to the head of a certain creek commonly called and known by the name of Strome Kill, and along the said creek to the main Ocean, and so along the sea-side to the westernmost part of Coney Island."

The patentees in this instrument are James Hubbard, John Tilton, Jr., William Goulder, Nicholas Stillwell, and Jocham Guillock; and the quit-rent reserved was six bushels of good winter merchantable wheat, to be paid on the 20th day of March annually, for his Majesty's use, at the city of New York, forever.

"At a court of sessions held at Gravesend, June 21, 1676, John Cooke and John Tilton, being Quakers, and refusing to take the oath, were ordered to give their engagement to Mr. Justice Hubbard to perform their office as overseers, under penalty of perjury." "At the same court, holden Dec. 17, 1679. Mr. Jos. Lee, deputy-sheriff, presented Ferdinandus Van Strickland for refusing to give entertainment to a stranger who came from Huntington about business at this court; upon which the court do order, that if said Ferdinandus does not make his submission to the sheriff and the justices to-morrow, that he be dismissed from tapping." It is believed that many of the Friends who settled in this town removed to New Jersey at or about the time of the visit of George Fox to Long Island in the year 1672.

Coney Island, on the sea-board, is a place of great resort for strangers in the summer season, is constantly fanned by cool sea breezes and affords an unlimited view of the ocean. It is separated from Long Island by a narrow creek or inlet, over which a handsome bridge has been erected. A large and spacious hotel is established here, called the Ocean House, and hitherto conducted in a superior manner. A railroad is attached to the establishment, with cars leaving the hotel for the beach, a distance of eighty rods, at particular intervals during the day. The bathing at this place is not surpassed by any in the United States. The beach is a beautiful white sand. The island is about five miles long and one wide, and is entirely of alluvial formation. The effect of severe ocean storms has long been visible here, and much of what was once Coney Island has disappeared. It has been conjectured by some persons that Coney Island proper, two

hundred years ago, lay at the entrance of Sandy Hook, and separated from the present Coney Island by a channel of considerable width, which is supposed to have been entirely demolished by a storm about the year 1715. It is well ascertained that in 1643 there was a convenient harbor for vessels of a large size, which is now in a great measure filled up. The exposed situation of this island subjects it to the encroachments of the sea, and to be entirely destroyed at some future period. In the terrible gale which occurred upon the coast on the 26th of January, 1839, the whole of this island, with the exception of a few sand-hills, was completely inundated by the sea; the basement story of the Ocean House was filled with water; the bridge was carried away, several small vessels cast upon the shore, and in one instance carried to a considerable distance toward Flatlands.

The first church built here was by the Dutch in 1655. It was rebuilt in 1770, and stood till 1833, when the present church was erected. It is located in the village of Gravesend, upon one of the original squares of the town-plot made by the first settlers, and near the place where the court-house formerly stood. Here the court of sessions was held till the Ridings were abolished in 1685, after which it was removed to Flatbush. All the lands in this town were laid out in reference to the village plan, the exterior lines of most of the farms converging towards this center like the radii of a circle. The soil of this town is light and sandy, yet it is generally well cultivated, and the surplus produce of the farms is supposed to exceed forty thousand bushels of different kinds of grain annually, which is a permanent mine of wealth and independence to its inhabitants, their number being seven hundred.

In many Dutch patents there was a clause requiring the patentees and their associates, after the expiration of ten years from the date thereof, to pay, by way of quit-rent, to the governor, or his agent lawfully authorized to receive the same, one-tenth part of all the produce of the lands cultivated by them; and as difficulties and disputes sometimes occurred in reference thereto, Governor Stuyvesant issued a peremptory order, on the 6th of June, 1656, prohibiting the inhabitants of Flatlands, Flatbush and Brooklyn from removing their crops of grain from the fields until the tythes reserved by their patents had either been taken or commuted for.

The following is a true copy of the com-

mission issued by the governor to the magistrates of the several Dutch towns:

"FORT AMSTERDAM, April 24, 1660.

"Loving Friendes.

"Out of the nomination presented unto us we have maade choice, as you may knowe bee theese presents off Tunis Guisbert, the which wee for the yeare followinge doe confirme and establish ffor magistraate off the towne called New-Amersforte, requirringe all and every one whome these may concerne to esteeme them as our elected and confirmed magestraate ffor the towne, so after mee respects, I rest, your lovinge friende and Governor.

"P. STUYVESANT."

Form of a commission from Lieut. Governor Liesler.

"By the Lieut. Gov^r, and commander in chieffe, &c. By virtue off the authoritie unto mee, I doe hereby authorise and empower you Jacobus Van De Water to be Clark and Register ffor Kings County, giving you ffull power and authoritie to acte and officiate therein as a Clark may and ought to doe, and this commission to continue till I receive further orders from his Magesty King William. Given under my hand and seal 20 off Dec. 1689.

"JACOB LIESLER."

Town of Flatlands.

This town, called by the Dutch New Amersfort, is bounded northerly by Flatbush, southerly by Jamaica Bay, and westerly by Gravesend. Barren Island, situated upon the west side of Rockaway Inlet, and at the mouth of Jamaica Bay, is attached to this town, and the south part of the town is indented by numerous small bays. Along the shore of Jamaica Bay is an extensive salt-marsh, which yields an abundance of hay of an inferior quality. With the exception of this marsh, there are no waste lands, the whole being divided into farms well cultivated and productive. The settlement was commenced in 1636, contemporaneously with Gravesend, and one of the first grants for land was that for Barren Island, which was at that time a great deal larger than at present, and was also covered with cedar and other timber. The woods have long since disappeared and much of the land is composed of sand-hills, affording but a scanty subsistence to a few cattle. Ex-Governor Van Twiller had a farm in this town at the time of the first settlement, and called Van Twiller's

Bowery for a long time after. The village of Flatlands is a very pretty spot, in the center of which is the Dutch church, originally erected in 1661, and has since been twice rebuilt.

By the Duke's laws, passed in 1665 in relation to public officers, it was declared that the "Overseers shall be eight in number, men of good fame and life, chosen by the plurality of voyces of the freeholders in each town, whereof foure shall remain in their office two years successively and foure shall be changed for new ones every yeare; which election shall preceed the election of constables, in point of time, in regard the constable for the yeare ensuing is to bee chosen out of that number which are dismiss from their office of Overseer." The following is a copy of the oath, administered to the overseers elect: "Whereas you are chosen and appointed an Overseer for the towne of fflatlands, you doe sweare by the Ever-Living God, that you will ffaithfully and diligently discharge the trust reposed in you, in relation to the publique and towne affaires, accordinge to the present lawes established, without favoure, affection, or partiality to any person or cause which shall fall under your cognizance; and at times, when you shall bee required by your superiors to attend the private differences of neighbors, you will endeavor to reconcile them: and in all causes conscientiously, and according to the best of your judgment, deliver your voyce in the towne meetings of constable and overseers. So help you God." It was the duty of the overseers, together with the constable, to hold Town Courts, for the trial of causes under five pounds. They, with the constables, were frequently to admonish the inhabitants "to instruct their children and servants in matters of religion and the lawes of the country; to appoint an officer to record every man's particular marke, and see each man's horse and colt branded." The constable and two overseers were to pay the value of an Indian coat for each wolf killed; and "cause the wolf's head to be navled over the door of the constable, there to remaine; as also to cut off both the ears, in token that the head is brought in and payd for."

The custom of putting Dutch inscriptions upon tombstones, which was the general practice in former times, was continued as late as 1770, and some may be seen even of a much later date in many of the burying-grounds in this county. For the last fifty years the English language has been generally adopted in epitaphs and inscriptions. Many individuals, and

even families, employ the Dutch language in their ordinary intercourse with each other at this day.

An extraordinary interview took place on the 2d of April, 1691, between the Governor of New York and a Sachem of Long Island, attended by his two sons and twenty other Indians. The Sachem, on being introduced, congratulated Governor Slaughter, in an eloquent manner, upon his arrival, and claimed his friendship and protection for himself and his people; observing also that he had, in his own mind, fancied his Excellency as a mighty tall tree, with wide, spreading branches, and therefore prayed leave to stoop under the shadow thereof. Of old (said he) the Indians were a great and mighty people, but now they are reduced to a mere handful. He concluded his visit by presenting the governor with thirty fathoms of wampum, which he graciously accepted, and ordered the Sachem to attend him again in the afternoon. On taking leave, the youngest son of the Sachem handed to the officer in attendance a bundle of brooms, saying at the same time, "that as Leisler and his party had left the house very foul, he had been advised to bring the brooms with him for the purpose of making it clean again." In the afternoon the Sachem and his party again attended the governor, who made a speech to them, and on receiving a few presents, they departed. To exhibit the relative value of some kinds of property, the following is extracted from an inventory of the effects of a deceased person, which was taken December 16, 1719: A negro wench and child, valued at £60; while five milch cows, five calves, three young bulls and two heifers were valued together at £20 only.

From the New York Gazette of August 13, 1781: "On the night of the 4th inst. the crew of a rebel whale-boat from New Jersey landed near Flatlands on Long Island, and robbed the house of Colonel Lott of about six hundred pounds, and carried off with them two of his slaves. They also robbed the house of Captain Lott of a considerable amount of specie."

The surface of this town is, as its name indicates, a perfect level; the soil, a light sandy loam, warm and pleasant to till; and from the skill and industry of its farming population, yields a large amount over and above the wants of the inhabitants. The people, generally, are conspicuous for habits of economy, and modern fashions have not yet extinguished their love of simplicity and substantial com-

fort. The character of the inhabitants is tolerably well portrayed by the traveler, James Stewart, when he says that "some of the farmers of Long Island are wealthy, but are, in general, contented to live comfortably and hospitably, with all the ordinary necessities and conveniences of life, without ostentation or parade, and without seeming to care so much, as other classes of people in this country do, about money." To satisfy any doubts that may be entertained in regard to the prevalence of good order and morality in this and the adjoining towns, the compiler considers the following facts as affording pretty satisfactory evidence. Elias Hubbard, Esq., a respectable magistrate of this town, states that he has held the office of justice of the peace therein for more than twelve years, and in that period transacted most of the judicial business for Flatlands, Flatbush, New Utrecht and Gravesend, and during the whole time had scarcely a dozen trials, and only two suits in which a jury was demanded; that another gentleman held the office of justice in the town of Gravesend for eight years, who had, during that period, but one jury trial, and even in that one case the difference was compromised by the parties before the jury had delivered their verdict into court. Such a pacific temper is honorable to the people, and creditable to the government under which they live.

It was upon Barren Island that the notorious pirate, Gibbs, and his associates in crime, secreted a portion of the money which they had plundered upon the high seas, part of which only was recovered. The names of the pirates were Charles Gibbs, Thomas Wansley, Robert Dawes and John Brownrig, the last of whom saved his life by becoming a witness against his companions, who were convicted and executed upon Gibbet Island in the harbor of New York, in the fall of 1830.

Town of New Utrecht.

This town is bounded north by Brooklyn and Flatbush, east by Gravesend, and west and south by Gravesend Bay and the Narrows opposite Staten Island. It was settled in 1654 by about twenty families from Holland, and a few Palatines, who at first erected a block-house, as well for security against the natives as from the hordes of wandering savages, robbers and pirates, which at that time, and for several years after, infested the country and adjacent coast to such a degree that the interposition of the government became necessary

for the more complete protection of the inhabitants, who, from their position, were peculiarly exposed to their predatory excursions. The population of this part of the country increased in a very moderate degree compared with other places in the vicinity, in consequence of the constant danger apprehended from the attacks of enemies; and the first steps taken to organize a separate community was in 1660, when, on application to the governor, he appointed a scout or constable for the town, together with a secretary or clerk, and an assessor, with power to make a division among the inhabitants of the land held in common; to cause the same to be enclosed and cultivated; to lay out a street or highway through the village; to make arrangements for the erection of a place of defense, with a mill in it, and a well by it, at the common charge of the people; to decide difference among individuals, and do as other subaltern village courts were accustomed to do. In 1662 a patent was obtained from Governor Stuyvesant, by which the inhabitants were not only confirmed in the several purchases and divisions of land already made, but were vested with the right of pre-emption of all the remaining lands not included in the patents previously granted to the adjoining towns. By this patent they were partially incorporated, with power to build a town, to elect magistrates subject to the approval of the governor, and to hold town courts for the trial of causes not exceeding in value five pounds. On the 15th of August, 1666, two years after the conquest of New York, another patent or grant of confirmation was issued by Governor Richard Nicolls, in which the boundaries of the town are described as follows:

"All that tract of land, together with the several parcels of land which already have been or hereafter shall be purchased or procured for or on behalf of the said town, whether from the native Indian proprietors or others, within the bounds and limits hereinafter set forth and exprest; that is to say, the bounds of the said town begins from Nayack-Point, stretching alongst the Bay to the land belonging to Francis Bruyn, and from thence run into the woods along the said Francis Bruyn's land to the land heretofore belonging to Robert Pennoyer, near upon a north-east line, twelve hundred Dutch rods; from which they goe again in a direct line to the North River, running three hundred rod, to the north of the whole Hook or Neck of land; and then again alongst the North River to Nayack-

Point, comprehending within the said bounds or limits twenty lotts as they are now layd out."

The paucity of the records of this town, as well as the great difficulty of deciphering those that remain, render it impossible to obtain from them much information in relation to the early history of its inhabitants; and the little we have been enabled to procure, has been derived from extraneous sources.

It was off the shores of this town that the squadron under the command of Colonel Richard Nicolls, destined as the future English governor of New York, anchored in 1664; and the first communication addressed to the Dutch governor bears date on board the ship *Guynev*, riding before *Nayack*, on the 20th of August of that year. The place at that time known by this name, is near the present site of Fort Hamilton, and is a delightful place of residence; being in sight of the ocean, it commands a full view of all the shipping leaving and entering the harbor of New York, and steamboats passing down the bay. It has now become an important military station by the construction of a fort and batteries, and the maintenance of a considerable garrison for the defense of the harbor. Several handsome buildings have likewise been erected, and few situations can boast of a more sublime and beautiful prospect. A handsome Episcopal church, called *St. John's*, was built a few years since, and adds much to the appearance of the place. In 1836 a company was incorporated for the purpose of making a railroad from Brooklyn to Fort Hamilton, Bath and Coney Island, which has not yet been undertaken, but which, if accomplished, would make each of them places of more extensive resort than heretofore. The village of *New Utrecht* is pleasantly situated on a fine plain, nine miles south of Brooklyn, containing a Dutch Reformed church and about fifteen dwellings. This church was originally built in 1700, and was occupied during the revolution as most of the other Dutch churches were, for a store, hospital or prison, as suited the convenience of the enemy. The present church was erected nearly upon the site of the old one in 1820. It is a substantial stone edifice, and an important feature in the general aspect of this delightful spot. *Bath House* and village is upon the margin of the Bay, a mile or two southeast from the Narrows or entrance of the harbor, in full view of the military works and the commerce of the bay. It has for many years been a

favorite place of resort for sea-bathing. Here is a large and well-kept public house, with a lawn in front, beautifully shaded by trees, where the luxury of the ocean breezes may be enjoyed in their fullest extent during the heat of the summer. It is the nearest watering-place to New York, and new accommodations have recently been erected within a short distance of the beach, which commands a most charming prospect of the ocean. It was near this delightful spot that the British army commanded by Sir William Howe, protected by the guns of their fleet, landed on the 22d of August, 1776, and followed, a few days after, by the disastrous battle of Long Island. South of the hills the surface of the town is perfectly smooth and level; but along the shore of the Narrows it is rough and uneven. The woody ridge that borders the town is the western termination of the range which extends to the eastern part of Southold, and is denominated the ridge of a spine of Long Island. The shad-fishery of the town is one of the most important and valuable in this part of the country, in which many of the inhabitants engage at the proper season, and find it a profitable employment. It is affirmed that ten thousand of these fish have been caught here at a single draught. On digging a few feet below the surface, some years ago, at the Narrows, more than a wagon load of Indian stone arrow-heads were discovered lying together, under circumstances calculated to induce a belief that a large manufactory of that indispensable article of Indian warfare must once have existed at that place. They were of all sizes, and from one to six inches in length; some perfect, others partly finished; together with blocks of the like kind of stone in the same condition as when brought from the quarry. They had the appearance of, and were nearly as hard as, ordinary flint, from which not only arrow heads were formed, but axes and other articles of domestic utility. It must ever remain a matter of astonishment how these native artificers, destitute, as they were, of the knowledge or possession of tools of iron, could form and polish with such exquisite art so many various instruments from so hard a material.

In the year 1663 one of the clergy of this town was accused before the court of sessions of having performed the ceremony of his own marriage, and that, too, while he had another wife living. The reverend gentleman pleaded his own cause, and alleged, by way of excuse for so novel a procedure, that his first wife

had eloped from him without cause, and being minded to take another, he conceived he had as good a right to execute the ceremony for himself as for any other person. This mode of reasoning did not, it seems, satisfy the court. The marriage was declared void, and the delinquent was fined in two hundred guilders, forty beaver skins, and also forty guilders more for his insolence and impertinence to the court. In addition to the patents before mentioned, another was granted by Governor Dongan on the 13th of May, 1686, of which the following is an extract:

"THOMAS DONGAN, Lieut. Governor and Vice Admiral of New-Yorke and its dependencies under his Majesty James the II, by the Grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, &c. Supream Lord and proprietor of the Colony and Province of New-Yorke and its Dependencies in America, &c. To all whome this shall come, sendeth greeting. Whereas there is a certain Towne in King's County on Long-Island, commonly called and knowne by the name of New-Utrecht, Beginning at the North-East corner of the Land appurtaining to Mr. Paulus Vanderbeeck called Goanus to the Bounds of Flatbush Pattent and soe along the said bounds of the said Pattent, and stretching from thence South-East and by South till they meete the Limitts of Flatlands, Gravesend, and the said Utrecht, and from thence along Gravesend Bounds to the Bay of the North River. and soe along the said Bay and River till it meets the Land of the said Paulus Vanderbeeke as according to severall agreements and writeings and the patent from Governor Richard Nicolls, dated in the year 1666. And whereas applicacon hath to mee been made by persons deputed from the aforesaid Towne of New-Utrecht for a confirmation of the aforesaid Tract of Land and premises; now Knowe Yee, that by Virtue of &c. I have Given, Granted, Ratified and Confirmed, and by these presents doe Give, Grant, Ratify and Confirme unto Jackues Corteljour, Ruth Joosten, John Verkerke, Hendrick Matheyse, Jolm Kiersen, John Vandeyck, Guisbert Thyson, Carel Van Dyck, Jan Van Cleef, Cryn Jensen, Meyndert Coerten, John Hansen, Barent Joosten, Teunis Van Pelt, Hendrick Van Pelt, Lawrence Janse, Gerrit Cornelisson, Dirk Van Stutphen, Thomas Tierkson, Gerrit Stoffelson, Peter Thyson, Anthony Van Pelt, Anthony Duchaine, Jan Vandeventer, and Cor-

nelis Wynhart, on Behalf of themselves and their associates, the present Freeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne of New Utrecht, their Heirs, Successors and Assigns; All and singular, &c. To have and to hold the said Tract and parcell of Land with their and every of their appurtenances to them the said Jackues Corteljour, &c.—To bee holden of his said Majesty, his Heires and Successors in free and common Soccage, according to the Tenure of East Greenwich in the County of Kent in his Majestyes Kingdome of England; Yielding Rendering, and paying therefor, Yearly and every year, on every five and twentyeth Day of March, forever, six bushels of good Winter merchantable Wheate att thee City of New-Yorke, &c. Given under my hand, and sealed with the seale of the Province att Fortt James, in New Yorke, the 13th day of May, 1686, and in the 2nd yeare of his Majestyes Reigne.

“THOMAS DONGAN.”

“May it please your Honor,

“The Attorney Generall hath perused this Pattent, and finds nothing contained therein prejudiciall to his Majestyes Interest.

“JA. GRAHAM.”

In 1706 the negroes, who had become numerous both in the city of New York and the adjoining country, were at times so disorderly and dangerous to the peace and safety of the people, that the government was compelled to take measures for restraining their depredations upon the community. A proclamation was issued by the governor for this purpose in the words following:

“Whereas I am informed that several negroes in King’s County have assembled themselves in a riotous manner, which, if not prevented, may prove of ill consequence; You, the Justices of the peace in the said county, are hereby required and commanded to take all proper methods for the seizing and apprehending all such negroes as shall be found to be assembled in such manner as aforesaid, or have run away or absconded from their masters or owners, whereby there may be reason to suspect them of ill practices or designs; and to secure them in safe custody; and if any of them refuse to submit, then to fire upon them, kill or destroy them, if they cannot otherwise be taken; and for so doing this shall be your sufficient warrant. Given under my hand, at Fort Anne, the 22nd day of July, 1706.

“CORNBURY.”

In the clerk’s office is the copy of a proclamation issued on the 16th of June, 1780, by James Robinson, a British officer, styling himself captain-general and governor-in-chief in and over the province of New York, by which the inhabitants of Long Island are peremptorily required to furnish a sufficiency of wood for the barrack-yard in New York: that Kings county shall get fifteen hundred cords, Queens county four thousand five hundred, and the western part of Suffolk county, including Huntington, Islip, Smithtown and Brookhaven, three thousand cords; all to be cut and carted to the landing by the 15th of August next ensuing. And the inhabitants of Southold, Southampton and Easthampton were specially required to cut upon the woodlands of William Smith and William Floyd (notorious rebels), in those parts nearest to the landing by Mastic-Neck, three thousand cords, to be ready by the 1st of September; and for which they were to receive at the rate of ten shillings p r cord. This requisition it was made highly penal to neglect, and those who did so were severely punished, instances of which were not uncommon.

On the 26th of May, 1836, an act of the Legislature was passed to incorporate the New Utrecht Dock and Steamboat Company, but as yet, it is believed, nothing has been done to carry this very desirable measure into operation.

Town of Flatbush.

This town, called by the Dutch Midwout, or Middle Woods, is bounded north by Brooklyn and Bushwick, and a small part of Queens county; east by Jamaica; south by Jamaica Bay, Flatlands and Gravesend; and west by Gravesend; being of an irregular shape, containing an area of about seven thousand acres, most of which is under cultivation. The settlement of this town was begun in 1651, and the next year a patent or ground-brief was obtained from Governor Stuyvesant, authorizing the inhabitants to erect a town or plantation, with the usual privileges of other towns under the Dutch jurisdiction; and under which the settlers managed their public concerns during the remainder of his administration. In October, 1667, application was made to Governor Nicolls for a patent of confirmation and assurance of their lands and boundaries; and on the 11th day of the same month one was issued unto Mr. Johannes Megapolensis, one of the ministers of the city of New York; Mr. Cor-

nelius Van Ruyven, one of the justices of the peace; Adrian Hegeman, Jan Snedeger, Jan Stryker, Frans Barents (Pastor), Jacob Stryker, and Cornelius Janse Bougaert, as patentees for and on behalf of themselves and associates, the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town, their heirs, successors, and assigns, for the premises described therein, as follows:

"All yt tract wt ye severall parcells of land wh already have or hereafter shall be purchased or procured for and on ye behalf of ye sd town; whether from ye native Indian proprietors or others, wt in the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and expresst; That is to say, bounded to ye south by ye hills, and to the north by ye fence lately sett between them and the town of Amsfort, alias Flatlands, beginning at a certain tree standing upon ye Little-Flats, marked by ye order and determination of severall arbitrators appointed by me, to view and issue ye difference between ye two towns concerning the same, wh accordingly they did upon the 17th of October, 1666, and to ye east and west by the common woodlands, including two tracts heretofore called by ye names of Curler's and Twillers flats wh lye to ye East of ye town; As also a parcell of meadow ground or valley on ye East-north-east side of Canaresse planting land, and having to ye South ye meadow ground belonging to Amsfort als Flatbush, according to ye division made by an East line running half a point northerly between them without variation of ye Compass, and so to go to ye mouth of ye creek or Kill, which said meadows were on ye 20th of April last by common consent staked out and by my approbation allowed of."

On the 12th of November, 1685, a further confirmatory patent was executed by Governor Thomas Dongan to the following persons named therein as patentees: Corneleus Vanderwick, John Okie, Joseph Hegeman, Art Jansen Vanderbilt, Lafford Peterson, William Guiliamsen, Hendrick Williams, Peter Guiliams, Arien Ryers, Peter Stryker, John Stryker, John Ramsden, Jacob Hendricks, Direck Vanderfleet, Hendrick Rick, Peter Lott, Daniel Polhemus, Cornelius Vanderveere, Direck Johnson, Hooglant Denise, John Johnson, Petimus Lewis, Okie Johnson, Jan. Jansen, William Jacobs, Hendrick Hegeman, Jan Stryker, Garret Lubberts, Hans Bogaert.

The premises are in this patent described, as "A certain town in Kings County known by

the name of Middwout, alias Flatbush, the bounds whereof begin att the mouth of ye fress Kill, and soe along by a certain ditch which lyes betwixt Armsford and Flatbush meadows, and soe running alongst the ditch and fence to a certain white oake markt tree; and from thence uppon a straight line to the westernmost point of a small island of woodland lying before John Striker's bridge; and from thence with a straight line to the northwest hooke or corner of the ditch of John Okie's meadow; and from thence alongst the said ditch and fence to the swamp of the Fresh-Kill, and soe alongst the swamp and hollow of the aforesaid Kill to the land of Krewler's hooke; then alongst the same to a marked white oak tree; from thence with a straight line to a black-oake markt tree standing uppon the north-east side of Twilder's Flatts, having a small snip of flatts upon the south-east side of the line, and soe from thence to a white-oak tree standing to the west side of Mustahole upon a small island, leaving a snip of flatts in the Flatlands bounds; and from thence to a certain markt tree or stump standing by the highway which goes to Flatlands upon the Little Flatts, about twenty rod from Flatbush Lotts, and soe alongst the fence six hundred Dutch rodd to the corner of Flatbush fence, and soe alongst by the rear of the Lotts to a sassafras stump standing in Cornelius Jansen's Bowery lott of land; and from thence with straight line to a certain old marked tree or stump standing by the rush-pond under the hills, and so along upon the south side of the hill till it comes to the west end of the long hill, and soe along upon the south side of the said hill till itt comes to the east end of the long hill; and then with a straight line from the east end of the said long hill to a mark'd white-oake tree standing to the west side of the roade near the place called the gale or porte of hills, and so from the east side of the porte or gale along upon the south side of the maine hills as far as Browklin pattent doth extend, and soe along the said hills to the bounds of Jamaica pattent; and from thence with a southerly line to the Kill or creeke by the east of the Plunder's Neck, and soe alongst the said Kill to the sea, as according to the several deeds or purchases from the Indian owners, the patent from Governor Nicolls, and the award between Browkline and the town of Flatbush, as by reference thereto will fully and at large appear."

On the 17th of December, 1654, Governor

Stuyvesant, who seems to have exercised entire authority as well in ecclesiastical as in civil and military affairs, gave orders that a house of public worship should be erected in this town, "sixty feet long, thirty-eight wide, and fourteen feet in height below the beams." And on the 9th of February, 1655, he issued his commands that the people of Brooklyn and Amersfort should assist the people of Midwout or Flatbush in getting timber for the house. In September, 1660, those who had the charge of the building reported that it had cost four thousand six hundred and thirty-seven guilders; of which sum three thousand four hundred and thirty-seven had been collected in New Amsterdam, Fort Orange and on Long Island. Upon which the Governor contributed out of the public funds four hundred guilders, leaving a balance of eight hundred against the church. In June, 1656, the Governor directed the inhabitants of Brooklyn, Flatbush and Flatlands, to enclose a place in each of them with palisades for the common defense. In 1660 the Rev. Mr. Polhemus petitioned the Governor to have a window placed in the church, which request was granted; and it being reported that the church was indebted to the amount of six hundred and twenty-four guilders, it was ordered to be satisfied out of the treasury as soon as funds should be received. Complaint being made that the minister was inattentive to his calling, attending only once a fortnight, and then only for a quarter of an hour, giving the people a prayer instead of a sermon, the Governor gave orders "that he should attend more diligently to his work." October 1, 1673, an ordinance of the Governor and Council was published, enjoining it upon the Sheriff and Constables to take care that the reformed religion be maintained, to the exclusion of all other sects. It is supposed that the first Dutch church erected in this country was one built in the city of New Amsterdam in 1642, although a society had been organized as early as 1629. And the inhabitants of Kings county attended religious worship in the city until the church was built in Flatbush as above mentioned. The Rev. Everardus Bogardus was the first minister, and officiated in the city from 1638 to 1647; and was succeeded by the Rev. Johannis Megapolensis, who continued till the conquest in 1664. The latter gentleman, with John Snedico and John Stryker, were the persons appointed to superintend the erection of the church here, which stood nearly on

the site of the present Dutch Church. It was directed to be in the form of a cross; and the rear part of the building was reserved and fitted up for the accommodation of the minister and his family. The original subscription list of this church is still preserved among its records, and shows the names of the inhabitants of the Dutch towns at that time. A church was ordered to be built at Flatlands in 1662, and completed the next year; another was erected in Brooklyn in 1666, which, with the one in Flatbush, being associate churches, constituted but a single congregation, and were under the pastoral care of the same minister. The Rev. Johannis Polhemus was employed to preach soon after the erection of the church at Flatbush, with a salary of one thousand and forty guilders (about four hundred and sixteen dollars) a year, raised by assessment upon the towns in which he officiated. He was required by the Governor, in March, 1656, to preach every Sunday morning at Midwout; and in the afternoon, alternately at Amersfort and Brooklyn. In 1660 the Rev. Henericus Selwyn was installed at Brooklyn by order of the Governor, at a salary of six hundred guilders a year, one-half to be paid by the people, and the other half by Fatherland or Holland. He resided in New Amsterdam; and in 1662 the inhabitants of Brooklyn petitioned the Governor that he should be required to reside among them. The Governor agreed to pay a part of his salary, provided he should preach at the Bowery every Sunday evening. At the conquest he returned to Holland. Mr. Polhemus died June 9, 1666. In 1667 the churches engaged the Rev. Casperus Van Zuren, who remained about the period of ten years, when he returned again to Europe. The Rev. James Clark was the next minister, who remained till 1695; and was followed by the Rev. William Lupardus, who died in 1702. The Rev. Vicentius Antonides was settled in 1706; and continued till his death, in 1714. His successor was the Rev. Bernardus Freeman, who remained till the close of life, in 1741. In 1742 the church engaged the services of the Rev. Johannes Arondius, but who, in 1747, removed to New Jersey. The Rev. Anthony Curtenius was settled as an associate minister in 1730, and remained till his death, in 1750. The Rev. Ulpianus Van Sinderen was employed in 1747, about which period much controversy arose in the churches touching the necessity of foreign ordination; the opinion being enter-

tained by great numbers, both clergy and laity, that ministers should be ordained in Holland. This unhappy schism continued for several years to agitate the churches, to interrupt their peace, and retard their prosperity. These dissensions having much abated, the Rev. John Caspar Rubel was in 1760 employed as a colleague of Mr. Van Sinderen, but was, for some reason, deposed from the ministry in 1784. The death of Mr. Van Sinderen took place in 1796. The Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker was settled in 1785, and continued till his death, at an advanced age, in 1824, and with him terminated the practice of preaching occasionally in the Dutch language. The Rev. Peter Lowe became an associate minister of the churches in 1787, where he remained to the end of his life, in 1818.

The church built here in 1663 stood, with occasional repairs, till 1717, when it was succeeded by another, built of stone. This building fronting the east, had a large double-arched doorway in the center; a steep quadrangular roof, with a small steeple rising from the middle. It was sixty-five by fifty feet, the pulpit being in the west side. It was repaired and altered in 1775, at an expense of more than seven hundred dollars; but in 1794 it was taken down, and the present large and commodious edifice erected, which cost about twelve thousand dollars. It was completed in December, 1796, with a fine bell, imported from Holland, and presented to the church by John Vanderbilt, Esq. In 1818 the churches of Flatbush and Flatlands united in settling the Rev. Walter Monteith, who removed in a short time thereafter; and in 1822 was settled their present highly respected clergyman, the Rev. Thomas M. Strong. In 1824 a new congregation was organized, and a church erected in the eastern part of the town, called New Lotts, from the circumstance of the land having been divided or allotted among the inhabitants at a later period than some other sections of the town. The soil is generally of a good quality, and by careful cultivation is made highly productive. The village of Flatbush, situated about four miles from the City Hall of New York, is hardly excelled by any other as a place of residence. The spirit of improvement has reached this delightful spot, and several splendid private edifices have been erected, bearing all the insignia of taste and opulence. A softer or more agreeable landscape than is here presented is seldom met with. Its surface is an

inclined plane, elevated about fifty feet above the ocean, toward which the descent is regular and gradual. The court house of the county was erected here in 1685, and the courts continued to be held therein till it was destroyed by fire in 1832. St. Paul's Episcopal Church in the village was built in 1836, mainly by the liberality and munificence of one of its citizens, Matthew Clarkson, Esq., and is a neat and handsome edifice. Erasmus Hall, a noble academical institution here, was incorporated November 20, 1787, being the second in point of time upon Long Island. It has always maintained a high reputation as a place of education, and its pupils are diffused over almost every part of the United States. The building is not only spacious and airy, but replete with every convenience, having sufficient grounds about it, filled with ornamental trees and shrubbery. A little north of the village is an elevation, called Prospect Hill, which is estimated to be one hundred feet above the surrounding country, and from whose summit the view is sublime and beautiful beyond description.

The Poor House of the county of Kings is located a short distance from the village. The farm contains sixty acres of excellent land, which cost three thousand dollars. The main building is forty-four feet square, with two wings, each sixty by thirty-five feet. The whole is two stories in height. There is also a building detached from these, appropriated for patients laboring under infectious diseases; and likewise another for deranged persons, where these unfortunate individuals are treated with the attention which humanity requires. Surely this benign establishment does honor to the county, and deserves the imitation of every other in the State. The soil of this town is inferior to none other, and improved in the highest degree, furnishing to the markets of Brooklyn and New York a large quantity of produce. Many of the farmers are wealthy, and there is an appearance of independence and opulence seldom witnessed in many other places.

Town of Brooklyn.

This town, the whole of which is now included within the corporation of the city of Brooklyn, lies upon the extreme western part of Long Island, opposite the southern portion of the city of New York, and separated therefrom by the East River, which is here about

three-quarters of a mile in width. The length from northeast to southwest is six miles, and its greatest breadth four miles; giving an area of nine thousand two hundred acres, most of which has been apportioned into city lots. The surface is high, broken and stony; and the more elevated points afford beautiful and romantic sites, many of which have been built upon, and are not excelled in elegance by any others in the country. The soil, in common with the whole county, was originally claimed by the Canarsee Indians, a numerous tribe, inhabiting chiefly the more southern parts of the county, and from whom the title to the lands was procured by the Dutch government. The situation of this tribe rendered them peculiarly obnoxious to invasion from their savage neighbors of the north, and it has been supposed that they were once tributary to the Mohawks, and obliged to conciliate their forbearance by yearly contributions of dried clams and wampum. At the first settlement of the white people, the Indians were persuaded to withhold the accustomed tribute, being promised protection from these unjust exactions of their enemies; in consequence of which they were unexpectedly assailed by a hostile force, and numbers of them destroyed or taken captive.

The name conferred upon this town by the Dutch was Breucklen (or broken land); and in the act for dividing the province into counties and towns, passed November 1, 1685, it is called Breucklyn; nor does the present appellation appear to have been generally adopted until after the Revolution. Many changes have doubtless taken place upon the shore, and it is believed that Governor's Island was formerly connected with Red Hook Point. It is well known that a short period previous to the war of independence, cattle were driven across what is called Buttermilk Channel, now sufficiently deep to afford passage to vessels of the largest class. The alteration is no doubt in great measure attributable to the vast extension of the wharves on both sides of the river, thereby diverting the course and increasing the force of the currents. The first European settler in this town is supposed to have been George Jansen de Rapelje, at the Waalboght, or Waaloons Bay, during the Directorship of Peter Minuit, under the charter of the West India Company. In a family record in the possession of Jeremiah Johnson, Esq., it is stated that the first child of Rapelje was Sarah, born in 1625, unquestionably the first white child born

upon Long Island. Watson says she was born on the 9th of June, and honored as the first-born child of the Dutch settlers; also that, in consideration of such distinction, and of her widowhood, she was afterward presented with a tract of land at the Wallabout. She was twice married; first to Hans Hanse-Bergen, by whom she had six children, namely, Michael Hanse, Joris Hanse, Jan Hanse, Jacob Hanse, Breckje Hanse, and Marytje Hanse. Her second husband was Teunis Guisbertse Bogart, by whom also she had six children, namely Aurtie, Antje, Neelje, Aultje, Catalyntje, and Guysbert. The account of this remarkable woman in the archives of the New York Historical Society contains the names of the persons to whom eleven of her children were married, and the places where they settled. The twelfth, Breckje Hanse, went to Holland. In the journal of the Dutch Council in 1656, it is related that "the widow Hans Hanson, the first-born Christian daughter in New Netherlands, burdened with seven children, petitions for a grant of a piece of meadow, in addition to the twenty morgen granted to her at the Waale-Boght." There is a tradition in the family, that the Indians, induced by the circumstance of her being the first white child born here, gave to her father and his brethren, the other French who followed them, the lands adjacent to the bay; hence called (says Judge Benson) Het-Waale-Boght, corrupted to Wallabout Bay. A few of the other associates of De Rapelje were Le Escuyer, Duryee, La Sillier, Cershow, Conscillaer, Musserol; these, with some changes in the mode of spelling, are still found among us. It appears by the Dutch records, that in 1634 a part of the land at Red Hook was the property of Wouter Van Twiller, being one of the oldest titles in the town. The earliest deed for land was from Governor Kieft to Abraham Rycken, in 1638. The oldest grant recorded is to Thomas Besker, in 1639. This must be considered as the commencement of permanent Dutch settlements on Long Island, and there is no evidence of any direct and systematic efforts being made for the purpose till this period. In 1641 the Governor and Council, in order to strengthen their claim to the island, consented that the English should settle under their jurisdiction on taking the oath of allegiance to the States-General and the Dutch West India Company. The following grant for land in 1642 is given as a specimen of conveyances at that remote period:

"By William Kieft, Director General and Counsellor, about the high and mighty Lords, the States General of the United Low Country, and his highness of Orange, and the Lords Commanders of the privileged West India Company, residing in the New-Netherland, do ratify and declare by these presents, that we, upon the date hereinafter written, did give and grant to Jan Manje, a piece of land, greatly twenty morgan stretching about south-east one hundred and ninety rods inward the woods towards to Sassians maise land—long is the limits of the said maise land fifty rod, and then again to the water side, two hundred and twenty rod, about north north-west, well so northerly, and along the strand or water side, seventy rod. Which above-said land is lying upon Long Island, between Andries Hudde and Claes Janse Ruyter. With express conditions, &c. Dated at Fort Amsterdam, in the New-Netherland, the 11th day of September, 1642.

"WILLIAM KIEFT.

"By order of the Lord the Director General, and Counsellor of New-Netherland.

"CORNELIUS VANTIENHOVEN,
"Sec'y."

Between the years 1642 and 1647 grants were made by his Excellency Governor Kieft, to different individuals for all the lands on the Brooklyn shore, from Red Hook Point to the Wallabout Bay, which were generally in the above form. It is believed that a general patent of the town was granted by Governor Stuyvesant in 1657, the same being frequently referred to in conveyances between individuals at an after period, and is evident from the following extract from the records: "August 10, 1695. The patentees and freeholders of the town sold unto Stephanus Van Cortlandt the neck of land called Red-Hook, containing, by estimation, fifty acres; which they state in their deed was formerly given and granted to the town of Broocklyn in the year 1657, by Governor Stuyvesant, the Dutch governor, then, at that time, and since confirmed by the English governors, Nicolls and Dongan." On the 18th of October, 1667, a full and ample patent was granted by Governor Richard Nicolls to Jan Everts, Jan Damen, Albert Cornelisson, Paulus Veerbeek, Michael Eneyt, Thomas Lamberts, Teunis Guisbert Bogart, and Joris Jacobson, as patentees for and on behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Breuck-

len, their heirs, successors and assigns, for "all that tract, together with the several parcels of land which already have been or hereafter shall be purchased, procured for and on behalf of the said town, whether from the native Indian proprietors, or others, within the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and expressed; that is to say:

"The town is bounded westward on the farther side of the land of Mr. Paulus Veerbeek, from whence stretching south-east, they go over the hills, and so eastward along the said hills to a south-east point which takes in all the lotts behind the swamp; from which said lotts they run north-west to the river and extend to the farm on the t'other side of the hill heretofore belonging to Hans Hansen over against the Kicke or Looke-out, including within the said bounds and limitts all the lotts and plantations lying and being at the Gowanis, Bedford, Wallabout, and the Ferry. All which said parcels and tracts of land and premises within the bounds and limitts aforementioned, described, and all or any plantation or plantations thereupon, from henceforth are to bee, appertaine and belong to the said town of Breucklen; together with all havens, harbors, creeks, quarryes, wood-land, meadow-ground, reed-land, or valley of all sorts, pastures, marshes, runs, rivers, lakes, hunting, fishing, hawking, and fowling, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments, and hereditaments, to the said lands and premises within the bounds and limitts aforesaid belonging, or in any wise appertaining. And withal to have freedome of commonage for range and feed of cattle and horse into the woods, as well without as within these bounds and limitts, with the rest of their neighbors; as also one-third part of a certain neck of meadow-ground or valley called Seller's Neck, lying and being within the limitts of the town of Jamaica, purchased by the said town of Jamaica from the Indians and sold by them unto the inhabitants of Breucklen aforesaid, as it has lately been laid out and divided by their mutual consent and my order, whereunto and from which they are likewise to have free egress and regress as their occasions may require. And that the place of their present habitation shall continue and retain the name of Breucklen, by which name and stile it shall be distinguished and known in all bargains and sales made by them, the said patentees, and their associates, their heirs,

successors, and assigns, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgments as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by the laws of this government, under the obedience of his Royal Highness, his heirs and successors. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, in New-York, on the Island of Manhattat, the 18th of October, 1667.

"RICHARD NICOLLS."

In 1670 the inhabitants, being desirous of enlarging the bounds of their common lands by extinguishing the Indian claim, applied to Governor Lovelace, and obtained from him the following license:

"Whereas, the inhabitants of Breucklyn, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, who were seated there in a township by the authority then in being; and having bin at considerable charges in clearing, ffencing, and manuring their land, as well as building ffor their conveniency; have requested my lycense for their further security, to make purchase of the said land of some Indians, who lay claim and interest therein. These are to certify all whom it may concerne, that I have and doe hereby give the said inhabitants lycense to purchase their land according to their request, the said Indians concerned appearing before me, as in the law is required, and making their acknowledgments as to fully satisfied and payed for the same. Given under my hand and seal at ffort James, in New-Yorke, this ffirst of May, in the 22d yeare of his Majestyes reigne, Anno Dom. 1670.

"FRANCIS LOVELACE."

This purchase had been agreed upon the 14th of May, 1670, between the town and five Indian chiefs, and is described in the conveyance as "all that parcell of land in and about Bedford, within the jurisdiction of Breucklyn, beginning ffrom Hendrick Van Aarnhem's land by a swampe of water, and stretching to the hills; then going along the hills to the port or entrance thereof, and so to Rockaway foot-path, as their purchase is more particularly sett fforth. To have and to hold all the said parcell and tract of land unto Monsieur Machiell Haimelle, Thomas Lambertse, John Lewis, and Peter Darmantier, ffor and on behalfe of the inhabitants aforesaid, their heyres and successors for ever." The port or entrance mentioned in this instrument is the valley upon the Flatbush Turnpike, a short distance beyond the three-mile post from Brook-

lyn Ferry, where a freestone monument has been placed to designate the line between this town and Flatbush. The price paid for the land in and about Bedford was one hundred guilders seawant, half a ton of strong beer, two tons of good beer, three guns, long barrels, with each a pound of powder, and lead proportionable, two bars to a gun, and four match coats.

Notwithstanding the early inhabitants of this town had previously obtained patents for their lands both from the Dutch and English Governors, yet Colonel Thomas Dongan, who succeeded to that office in 1683, had the address to make them believe that a new patent was necessary to confirm and assure their lands. Accordingly, on the 13th of May, 1686, a new patent was issued, which, after reciting the boundaries of the town as described in former grants, with reference to the charter of Governor Nicolls in 1667, the powers and privileges of which are recognized to the fullest extent, concludes in the following words:

"Now know ye, that I, the said Thomas Dongan, by virtue of the commission and authority derived from me, and power in me residing, have granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do grant, ratifie and confirm, unto Teunis Gysberts, Thomas Lamberts, Peter Jansen, Jacobus Vander Water, Jan Dame, Joris Jacobs, Jeronimus Rapalle, Daniel Rapalle, Jan Jansen, Adrian Bennet, and Michael Hanse, for and on the behalf of themselves and the rest of the present freeholders and inhabitants of the said town of Breucklen, their heirs and assigns for ever, all and singular the afore-recited tract and parcels of land set forth limited and bounded as aforesaid; together with all and singular the houses, messuages, tenements, fencings, buildings, gardens, orchards, trees, woods, underwoods, pastures, feedings, common of pasture, meadows, marshes, lakes, ponds, creeks, harbors, rivers, rivulets, brooks, streams, highways and easements whatsoever, belonging or in any wise appertaining to any of the afore-recited tract or parcells of land and divisions, allotments settlements made and appropriated before the day and date hereof. To Have and To Hold, all and singular, the said tract or parcels of land and premises, with their, and every of their appurtenances, unto the said Teunis Gysberts, Thomas Lamberts, Peter Jansen, Jacobus Vander Water, Joris Jacobs, Jeronimus Rapalle, Daniel Rappalle, Jan Jansen, Adrian

Bennet, and Michael Hanse, for and on behalf of themselves and the present freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Breucklen, their and every of their heirs and assigns for ever, as tenants in common without any let, hindrance, molestation, right of survivorship or otherwise, to be holden in free and common socage according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majesty's kingdom of England. Yielding, rendering, and paying therefor yearly, and every year, on the five and twentyeth day of March, for ever, in lieu of all services and demands whatsoever, as a quit rent to his most sacred Majesty aforesaid, his heirs and successors, at the city of New-York, twenty bushels of good merchantable wheat. In testimony whereof, I have caused these presents to be entered and recorded in the Secretary's office, and the seal of the Province to be hereunto affixed this thirteenth day of May, Anno Domini, one thousand six hundred and eighty-six, and in the second year of his Majesty's reign.

"THOMAS DONGAN."

Under this and other patents considerable sums have been paid at different times for quit-rents, for which receipts have been preserved. June 8, 1713, there was paid to Benjamin Vandewater, treasurer, the sum of £96 7s 1d, for upwards of sixteen years quit-rent. April 6, 1775, Charles Debevoise, collector of the town, paid to the receiver-general of the colony, twenty bushels of wheat for one year's quit-rent; and, November 9, 1786, Fernandus Suydam and Charles C. Doughty, two of the trustees, paid to the treasurer of the state, £105 10s. in full for arrears of quit-rent due from the town. During the early years of the colony, the old ferry was from near the foot of Jerolemon street to the Breede-Graft, now Broad street, in the city of New York; but it is difficult to ascertain the exact period when the old ferry was first established at its present situation on the Brooklyn side. It appears that, in 1693 John Areson, the lessee of the ferry, complained of his inability to pay the rent of £147, and it was reduced to £140. At this time the ferriage for every single person was eight stivers in wampum, or a silver two-pence; each person in company half the above; and if after sunset, double price; each horse or beast one shilling if single, or nine pence in company. In 1698 Rip Van Dam was lessee of the ferry for seven years at £165 per annum. During the Revolution the old ferry was kept by Van

Winkle and Bukett, when the usual charge for crossing was six pence. The corporation of the city of New York has long claimed and exercised the control of the ferry, which has produced a considerable revenue. August 1, 1795, the ferry from the foot of Main street was established by William Furman and Theodosius Hunt, on a lease from the corporation of New York. In May, 1814, the first steamboat commenced running upon the Fulton Ferry, and at a later period upon the other ferries also.

The town having acquired so great an extent of common land by the purchase of 1670 from the Indians, the inhabitants thought proper to take some order for the division and defending thereof, together with their other lands; accordingly, "At a town meeting held on the 25th day of February, 1692-3 at Breuklyn, in King's county. They Resolved to divide their common lands and woods into three parts, in manner following, to witt:

"1. All the lands and woods after Bedford and Cripplebush, over the hills to the path of Newlots, shall belong to the inhabitants and freeholders of the town of Gowanus, beginning from Jacob Brewer and soe to the uttermost bounds of the limits of New-Utrecht.

"2. And all the lands and woods that lyes betwixt the abovesaid path and the highway from the ferry towards Flattbush, shall belong to the freeholders and inhabitants of Bedford and Cripplebush.

"3. And all the lands that lyes in common after the Gowanus, betwixt the limits and bounds of Flattbush and New-Utrecht, shall belong to the freeholders and inhabitants of Brooklyn, fred. neck, the ferry and the Wallabout." This proceeding of the town meeting was allowed of by the court of sessions, held at Flattbush on the 10th day of May, 1693.

The following will serve to show the manner in which the inhabitants of this town elected the trustees of the common lands, and the duties of those trustees. "Att a towne meeting held this 29th day off Aprill, 1699, at Breucklyn, by order off Justice Machiel Hanssen, ffor to choose townsmen ffor to order all townes busines and to deffend their limitts and bounds, and to dispose and lay out sum part thereof in lotts, to make lawes and orders ffor the best off the inhabitants, and to raise a small tax ffor to defray the towne charges, now being or hereafter to come, to receive townes revenues, and to pay townes debts; and that with the advice off the Justices off this said towne standing the space and time off two

years. Chosen for that purpose by pluralitie off votes. Benjamin Van de Water, Joores Hanssen, Jan Garretse Dorlant. By order of the inhabitants aforesaid. I. Vande Water, Clarke."

Although it may not be generally known, yet it is true that the records of this town, from its first settlement to the end of Revolutionary war, were either destroyed during the contest between Britain and her colonies, or carried off at its close by some evil-disposed individual. The person suspected is John Rapalje, Esq., who was in authority here during that period, and against whom an act of attainder was passed in October, 1777, by which his large real estate was confiscated, and himself forced to depart from the country. The necessary consequence is, that we have been deprived of many valuable materials toward a history of the town. It might be expected, that in a state of hostility, every measure would be adopted to afflict an enemy; yet it may be questioned whether abstracting the records of a country is strictly justifiable by the customs and usages of civilized warfare.

The hope is still entertained that these important documents are still in existence, and that by proper exertions they may yet be found in some of the public offices in England. Some facts of recent occurrence corroborate this opinion, and a correspondence was set on foot a few years since, between General Jeremiah Johnson, supervisor of the town, and Governor De Witt Clinton, which led to examinations in one or more places in London, where it was supposed they might chance to be deposited; but nothing satisfactory was elicited. The subject matter of this correspondence is thought sufficiently important to justify its insertion in this place.

(General Johnson to Governor Clinton.)

Albany, April 11, 1827.

SIR:

I visited this city, in December last, for the purpose of examining the Dutch records and public papers in the secretary's office, particularly the Dutch patents of the towns of Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, and Jamaica; and not finding them, the search was continued among the English records to the year 1684, wherein I found that in that year the governor and council of the colony issued an order commanding all the inhabitants of the Dutch towns in the provinces of New-York and New Jersey

to bring their Dutch patents and Indian deeds into the Secretary's office in New-York. This measure, in my opinion, accounts for the absence of many papers supposed to be lost. Subsequent to my search in the office in 1826, I had been informed that many old papers relating to this state are in the colonial office in London. And, as the records of the town of Brooklyn were removed during the Revolutionary war, I entertain a hope that we may regain them. This information is presented to your Excellency in the expectation that inquiry may be made in London whether the papers alluded to, or authenticated copies, cannot be obtained. The recovery of the records of the town would be of great importance, and the patents and Indian deeds serve to improve the history of the town.

Yours, respectfully,

JEREMIAH JOHNSON, *Supervisor.*

His Excellency, Governor Clinton.

(Governor Clinton to Albert Gallatin, Esq.)

Albany, 12th May, 1827.

SIR:

I take the liberty of transmitting to you a letter from General Johnson, a respectable citizen of this state, and of requesting your attention to it. According to a report made at the last session of congress, there will be no difficulty on the part of the British government. The papers wanted may be found in the former plantation office.

Yours, &c.

DE WITT CLINTON.

ALBERT GALLATIN, ESQ.

(Mr. Gallatin to Governor Clinton.)

London, 25th August, 1827.

SIR:

I had the honor to receive your Excellency's letter of the 12th May last, enclosing one from General Johnson, and requesting that application might be made to this government for certain town records, and other papers therein-mentioned as having been carried away, and being now either in the colonial office, or that of trade and plantations in London. I regret to say, that after diligent inquiry, and although the various departments here were anxious for the restoration of the papers if they could be found, there is no trace of them whatever. There are two deposits for records and documents connected with the

colonies; the office of the Board of Trade and Plantations, and the State Paper office, where the records and papers of the colonial, as well as the home and foreign departments, are kept. There is nothing in the colonial office; and you will perceive by the enclosed letters, that nothing was found in the others; and that it is believed the papers in question were carried away by individuals who never deposited them in any office. Mr. Charles Grant, the writer of two of the notes, is the vice-president of the board of trade, one of the commissioners appointed to treat with me, a gentleman of distinguished merit and obliging disposition. Another search may nevertheless be made, if Gen. Johnson will state the time when the records were carried away, and other circumstances, which may afford a cue to the inquiry.

I have the honor to be, &c.

ALBERT GALLATIN.

His Excellency, DE WITT CLINTON.

(Charles Grant, Esq., to Mr. Gallatin.)

London, August 14, 1827.

DEAR SIR:

I have only this morning received the enclosed from Mr. Rice, whose absence from town prevented his sooner transmitting it to me. I regret much the result. As a last hope, I have sent Governor Clinton's letter to the colonial office, that inquiries may be made; but I fear there is little probability of success.

I am, Sir, &c.

C. GRANT.

A. GALLATIN, ESQ.

(Spring Rice, Esq., to Charles Grant, Esq.)

MY DEAR GRANT:

On coming down to the office this morning, I found enclosed, which relates to your communication with me. I enclose it as the best means of answering Mr. Gallatin's request, regretting that we cannot do more to furnish you with the information requested.

Ever and most truly yours,

SPRING RICE.

Judge Furman, in speaking of the history of this town, observes, "that its great antiquity is apparent from the fact that the English colonists, who came out from Holland for professed purposes of settlement, were those brought out in 1623, only two years before the

settlement of Brooklyn, in the ship of Capt. Kornelis Jacobse Mey; and that soon after two ships of the West India Company brought, as agriculturists, the Walloons, who settled in Brooklyn." In 1646 the town was permitted to choose two magistrates, who were authorized "to give judgment in all events as they should deem proper, not contrary to the charter of New Netherlands;" and, to give complete effect to their authority, the governor ordered that if any one disobeyed the decision of the magistrates, he should forfeit his right to the lands within the village. This privilege seems not to have been extended to any other town, probably because no other was at that time so populous as to require it.

The first public officer appointed by the Dutch government for this town after its settlement in 1625, was a "superintendent," whose duties were to preserve the peace and regulate the police of the town. A few years after the office of superintendent was abolished, and the offices of schout, secretary, and assessor, created. These were, like others, appointed by the governor.

The inhabitants suffering very much under the arbitrary exercise of power on the part of the government, frequently remonstrated against the same. Finally a convention of delegates from this, and other towns under the Dutch government, assembled at New Amsterdam, November 26, 1663, on an invitation from the governor; where they, on the 11th of December following, entered into a remonstrance against the exclusion of the people from any share in legislation, and generally against their mode of government. The governor and his council sent them no answer, but entered one on the minutes, in which they denied the right of this town, Flatbush, and Flatlands, to send deputies; and protested against the meeting, notwithstanding the same was held at the governor's request. Entertaining a just sense of the responsibility attached to them, the deputies made another, but ineffectual attempt, to obtain a recognition of their rights; and on the 13th of the aforesaid month presented another remonstrance, in which they declared, "that if they could not obtain them from the governor and council, they would be under the necessity of appealing to their superiors, the States-general." The governor, in a fit of anger, dissolved their meeting, and sent them home.

In order to secure the settlement against the depredations of the Indians, the governor,

in 1660, required the inhabitants to fortify the town, and remove their families within the enclosure, constructed of palisadoes, set close together and made sharp at the top. This order was probably in consequence of threatened hostility from the northern Indians, who had in 1655 made a descent upon Staten Island, and massacred sixty-seven persons; and the settlement of Gravesend was only saved by the timely arrival of soldiers from New Amsterdam.

It seems to have been enjoined upon the overseers and constables to admonish the inhabitants to instruct their children and servants in matters of religion and the laws of the country. They likewise appointed an officer to record every man's particular mark, and see each man's horse and colt branded. They were to pay the value of an Indian coat for killing a wolf, whose head was to be nailed over the door of the constable. In October, 1675, an order was passed by the court of assize that a fair or market should be yearly kept near the ferry, for the sale of grain, cattle, or other produce of the country; to be held the first Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday in November; and in the city of New York the Thursday, Friday and Saturday following. Although the population of this town has augmented every year since its settlement, yet, previous to the incorporation of the village in 1816, the increase was far from what it has been since; and within the last fifteen years the accession in number and wealth has been greater than for the preceding hundred years. In 1706 the real and personal estate in the town was valued only at £3,112, the tax thereon £41. In 1824 the valuation was over two million six hundred thousand dollars, and the taxes between six and seven thousand. In 1834 the valuation in the city of Brooklyn alone was \$7,257,473.

The controversies which have heretofore existed between this town and the corporation of the city of New York in relation to the ferry across the East river, and the claim of the latter to the soil below high water-mark along the Brooklyn shore; and also concerning the title of the United States to a valuable tract of land at the Wallabout, are of the highest importance to the inhabitants; but their merits would require more space for examination than could be afforded in this work. For an exposition of the legal principles involved in the discussion, the reader is referred to

Judge Furman's notes, and other productions of the same author.

The history of the Dutch church in this county has been so fully detailed in our account of Flatbush, that little more is necessary on that head.

In the year 1659 the inhabitants of the town applied to Governor Stuyvesant for permission to call a minister for their congregation, assigning, as a reason for their application, the badness of the road to Flatbush, the difficulty of attending divine service at New York, and the extreme old age and inability of the Rev. Mr. Polhemus to perform ministerial services at Brooklyn.

The governor deemed this request reasonable, and sent Nicasius de Sille, Fiscal of New Netherland, and Martin Kregier, Burgomaster of New Amsterdam, to this town, as a committee of inquiry, who reported in favor of the application; whereupon the request of the inhabitants was granted. They accordingly prepared a call for the Rev. Henry Solinus, alias Henricus Selwyn, from Holland, who was approved of by the classis of Amsterdam, on the 16th of February, 1660, when the classis also gave the Rev. Mr. Solinus a dismissal, wishing him a safe and prosperous journey by land and by water to his congregation in the New Netherland. The time of the arrival of this minister is not known. He was installed in the church on the 3d of September, 1660, in the presence of the Fiscal and Burgomaster Kregier, by the order of Governor Stuyvesant, who appears to have been at the head of the ecclesiastical as well as the civil and military government of the colony. The salary of Mr. Selwyn was fixed at six hundred guilders; and the marriage fees, instead of being a perquisite of his office, were to be accounted for to the church. On the 29th of October, 1662, it appears that he paid over to the consistory seventy-eight guilders and ten stivers, for fourteen marriages performed by him during the year. On the 23d of July, 1664, he returned to Holland; and after his departure, Charles Debevoise, schoolmaster and sexton, was directed to read the prayers in the church, and a sermon from an approved author, every Sabbath, till another should be called. The first Dutch church was built here in 1666, and stood about forty years, when another was erected on the same spot, which was taken down in 1810, and a new and substantial one built in Jerolemon street. This

last, not being found sufficiently large, has lately given place to a more splendid edifice, on nearly the same site.

An Episcopal society existed in this town as early as 1766. It was incorporated in 1787; and in 1795 St. Ann's church was occupied for the first time. This building was of stone, and was superseded by the present elegant edifice in 1824. The first Methodist church was incorporated in 1794; the first Presbyterian church in 1822; the first Baptist church in 1823; the first Roman Catholic church in 1822; and the first Congregational church in 1839.

The first printing-press established in this town was by Thomas Kirk in 1799, from which was issued a weekly newspaper, entitled "The Courier, and New York and Long Island Advertiser," and was continued for about four years. The first number of the "Long Island Star," by the same gentleman, was issued on the first of June, 1809, and transferred to Alden Spooner in the year 1811.

The most compact part of this town was incorporated into a village on the 12th of April, 1816, which, although violently opposed by a portion of the population, gave a new impulse to the spirit of improvement, and has resulted in raising it to the third rank among the cities of the State of New York. The village charter authorized the election of five trustees, and those named in the act were Andrew Mercein, John Garrison, John Doughty, John Seaman, and John Dean. This charter was several times amended and enlarged as the increase of population required, until it became indispensable to endow the place with the name and privileges of a city. On the 8th of April, 1834, the whole territory of the town was incorporated under the name of the "City of Brooklyn," and its inhabitants a body corporate and politic, by the style of "The Mayor and Common Council of the City of Brooklyn." It is divided into nine wards; the powers of the corporation are vested in a mayor, and a board of aldermen composed of two, elected annually, from each ward. These have the appointing of most of the subordinate officers of the city. Bedford, upon the eastern part of the town, was formerly a separate hamlet; but is now so far swallowed up by the progress of improvement, as to have nearly lost its identity. Gowanus is that part of Brooklyn which joins Flatbush and the waters of the bay, consisting principally of a low tract of salt marsh, ponds, and creeks, over which a

highway and bridge have been constructed, and is fast becoming more valuable as the city advances in that direction.

The Wallabout is a part of Brooklyn north-east from the ferry, and rendered famous in the Revolution from having been the scene of the most heart-rending sufferings of many thousand American citizens, confined on board the prison-ships stationed in the bay. The United States possesses about forty acres, including the site of the old mill-pond. Here have been erected a spacious navy-yard, public store-houses, machine-shops, and two immense edifices, in which the largest ships are protected from the weather, while building. On the opposite side of the bay has lately been constructed the Naval Hospital, which is not only splendid, but magnificent. The "Apprentices' Library Association" was formed in 1824, the corner-stone of which was laid by the Marquis La Fayette during his last visit to America in that year. The library is now in the Brooklyn Lyceum; and the building, having become the property of the city, is appropriated for public offices, and the holding of courts, being denominated the "City Buildings." The Brooklyn Lyceum was instituted October 10, 1833. The edifice is a beautiful specimen of architecture, composed of granite, and every way adapted to the purpose of its projection. The objects of this institution are intellectual and moral improvement, by means of certain specified committees, and by gratuitous public lectures. A course of lectures by gentlemen of the city of New York was commenced on November 7, 1833, and has been varied occasionally by essays, principally from the pens of ladies. The Brooklyn Collegiate Institute for young ladies was incorporated in 1829. The building is large and beautifully located near the East river. It flourished for a few years, and gave promise of permanent utility; but from want of sufficient patronage the school has been given up. The "City Hall," which was commenced a few years since upon a magnificent scale, has been interrupted in its progress, and doubts are entertained of its completion, at least upon the plan and to the extent originally contemplated.

PRIME'S ACCOUNT OF QUEENS AND SUFFOLK COUNTIES, 1845.

The people of Queens county are of a more mixed character, both in regard to their origin and religious views, than either of the other counties. In Kings, till within a few years,

the Dutch character had a decided and obvious preponderance, which is still the case in some towns. This was manifest to the eye of the transient observer, in the manners and habits of the people, and even in the form and style of their buildings. A Dutch house, or a Dutch barn, has been, from time immemorial, a term that conveyed as definite an idea to the mind as the most detailed description could have given. And till after the commencement of the present century, a Dutch church was invariably conceived to bear a strong resemblance to a light-house, only occupying more ground at its base, and not extending to so great a height. And so peculiarly appropriate was this form of church building, in the public estimation, that other denominations sometimes erected their houses of worship on the same plan.

On the other hand the people of Suffolk county, being almost exclusively of English or New England origin, present to the present day the constant evidence of Yankee predilection. Overlooking the physical features of the country, the traveler can not divest his mind of the idea that he is in the midst of a New England population, living in New England habitations. And had he entered almost any one of their churches, some thirty years ago, before "the spirit of improvement" swept over the land, he would have recognized in the vast pulpit, sufficiently large to hold a dozen ministers, with its deacon's seat beneath, and a sounding board of corresponding size above, which always attracted the attention of children more than the preacher, and filled them with constant apprehension that it might fall and crush the man of God in the midst of his devotions; in the large square pews, too, which obliged one-half the congregation (and those were generally the children) to sit with their backs to the minister, and thus, in spite of themselves and all their efforts to become listless and sleepy hearers,—in all these and many other particulars the observer, if from New England, would recognize the *fac simile* of his native church. The writer has always been of the opinion that the devil had as much of a hand in the invention of sounding boards and square pews as he had in the Salem witchcraft, and that the scheme has been vastly more successful, in its pernicious influences, on the rising generation.

But in Queens county there is nothing of this unique, homologous character, either in the manner of the people, the style of their

buildings or the moral aspect of society. Here Yankees and Dutchmen, Presbyterians and Quakers, men of every religion and no religion, have for almost two centuries been mingled together, with all their various affinities and repulsions; and while the effervescence has been constantly going on, the time is yet future, if it ever is to come, when it is to subside into one homogeneous mass.

It may therefore be readily inferred from the facts of the case that there is and always has been a greater diversity of religious views, and consequently of the moral habits of the people of this county, with far less of fellow feeling and assimilated manners, than in any other district of the island. Except in a few thickly settled spots, houses of religious worship, till of late years, have been much fewer in number and attended by a less proportion of the population, than in the other counties; while in many towns, fishing and hunting, traveling and visiting and even ordinary secular labor, are indulged in by multitudes on the Sabbath day. Its proximity to the city has doubtless increased these evils, if it has not been their origin; but it is to be apprehended that too many of the inhabitants are voluntary panders to the votaries of pleasure from the great metropolis.

And here it is proper to notice one of the principal means of demoralization, with which this county as well as the adjacent parts have been cursed for the space of one hundred and eighty years. Here has been the permanent arena of "sports of the turf," as they are denominated in the jockey dialect, since the year following the surrender of New York to the government of Britain.

This regular system of horse racing was established in 1665 by Governor Nicoll. Four years afterward (1669) his successor, Governor Lovelace, issued a proclamation appointing "trials of speed," to take place in the month of May annually, and ordering the justices of Hempstead to receive subscriptions (!) for "a crown of silver, or the value thereof in good wheat," to be the reward of the winner. The ostensible argument for this procedure was "for the purpose of improving and encouraging a good breed of horses," an argument that is most ridiculously retained in our statute book to the present day. Every man of reflection knows, that from the first settlement of this country, the breed of race-horses is the last species of the animal that the exigencies of the people have demanded. In

days gone by those capable of enduring hardship and of easy support have been sought after, while extraordinary speed has been only a secondary consideration and of limited demand in the occupations of life. But now, when the iron horse, which travels untired with the speed of a hurricane, has entirely superseded the use of the fleetest steeds, it is to be hoped that when the current "fifteen years" shall have expired the act, with its baseless reason, will cease to disgrace the statute book of the State, whose laws forbid every species of gambling.

The Hempstead Plain, or its vicinity, has been the permanent theater of these semi-annual enactments, from their commencement in 1665. The "Newmarket Course," called also "Salisbury Plain," was in the southwest corner of North Hempstead, five miles east of Jamaica, and was thus occupied for more than one hundred and fifty years. This was exchanged, some twenty years ago, for the "Union Course," three miles west of Jamaica, a circle of a mile's circumference, completely palisaded, for this exclusive purpose. And here are regularly enacted, twice a year, scenes which no imagination, however fertile, can depict, without the aid of ocular demonstration. It has been stated, and the statement stands uncontradicted, that at a single course of races fifty thousand persons attended, and two hundred thousand dollars were lost and won, and that during the five days that the "sports" continued the toll of the Fulton Ferry Company averaged one thousand dollars per day, and it was supposed that the other revenues from the city realized an equal sum. But the gambling, expense and loss of time attending these scenes of dissipation form only a part of the evils with which they are connected. The drinking—the swearing—the licentiousness—the contentions and other nameless crimes, which are here periodically committed, with the countenance of law, are enough to sicken the soul of every man that fears God and is disposed to reverence his commands, and must induce him to wish most devoutly for the time to come, and that speedily, when this crying abomination, with all its accompaniments, shall be banished from this once sacred soil of Puritans and Huguenots.

There is no reason to doubt that the passion for horse racing, so long and so assiduously cultivated, has had a powerful influence in stamping the character of the people of this county with traits so diverse from either of

those with which it stands in juxtaposition.

Suffolk county embraces the whole of the remaining part of Long Island (proper) with its adjacent islands. Much of the land, as already described, is a barren waste. In traveling through it the stranger finds it difficult to imagine how even the wandering deer can find sustenance, much more how human beings can secure an adequate support. And yet it is astonishing to see, in a propitious season, how large crops are raised from these sterile plains. Good Indian corn may frequently be seen growing in the fine white sea sand, which has evidently been drifted by the waves and the winds to the distance of miles. This, slightly mingled with sea mud and vegetable mould, conveyed by the same agency, forms a substratum, if not a soil, in which, in a wet season (for, on Long Island, water is pre-eminently a main supporter of vegetation) corn and other grains will grow with astonishing rapidity and luxuriance.

But while these remarks apply, with strict propriety, to large portions of this county, there are extensive tracts of excellent land, which amply repay the labor of cultivation. This is true, not only of the numerous necks of land which jut out into the surrounding waters and the margins of the numberless bays, coves and harbors, but also of large bodies of land situated in almost every part of the island. But the writer would gladly whisper in the ear of many large land holders in this, his native county, if they could be persuaded to believe it, that there is a great deal more profit in cultivating one acre of land well, than in ten acres badly. The fact is, many on Long Island, as in other parts of the country, own and work too much land. The writer has in his mind's eye a farm of nearly a thousand acres, which, half a century ago, was owned and cultivated under the direction of a single individual, who was called a great farmer. But when he had ruined himself by the operation, and had surrendered the whole to pay his debts (as honest, but unfortunate men were in the habit of doing in old times), it was cut up and sold to six or eight persons, who have since supported as many families from its productions. And if it could undergo another, and even another subdivision, it might afford sustenance to double or quadruple the present number, besides materially improving the aspect of the town in which it is situated. The same remarks apply to scores of farms in this county, which, in their present

condition, are to their owners what self-righteousness is to the sinner, "the more they have the worse they are off." We have seen that in this county there is an average of eighteen acres to every inhabitant, while there is many an acre in Kings county that furnishes support to a whole family. And though the proximity of a great market makes a vast difference in the value of vegetable productions, the disparity in the two cases would be exceedingly reduced by applying more manure and more labor to less ground. There is no knowing till the experiment is fairly made, how much an acre of land may be made to produce by good husbandry.

But it is not intended by these remarks to convey the idea that all the farmers of old Suffolk are regardless of the improvements made in agriculture, or that they are in the habit of taxing their fields without furnishing them the means of answering the demand. More or less attention has long been paid to the importance of manuring, and they would be singularly culpable if this were not the case, since nature has furnished them with peculiar facilities for the accomplishment of the work. The waters with which they are surrounded not only furnish a large supply of provisions for immediate use, but they are the unfailing sources of enriching the land. The seaweed, which is cast up in immense quantities on the whole extent of shore and various other productions of the bays and marshes are daily yielding vast supplies of fertilizing materials.

But more than all, the countless multitudes of one peculiar species of fish, which crowd the bays and press upon the ocean's shore, of which millions are annually taken for the sole purpose of manure, are the principal source of fertility to the land. In several of the eastern towns this business is as regularly pursued, during a part of the summer, as ploughing and sowing, or mowing and reaping in their appropriate seasons. For this purpose, the farmers of the neighborhood form themselves into a company sufficiently large to afford a relief of hands every week, and having provided themselves with a large seine, boats, a fish-house on the shore and every necessary convenience, the party on duty take up their residence on the water side, and it is impossible to convey to a stranger's mind the immense product of a week's labor. A single haul of a seine has been calculated at one million of fish.

These fish are called by various names, as

skip-hog, moss-bonker, shad and bony-fish, the last of which is the most descriptive. Though of a good flavor and generally very fat, they are so perfectly filled with fine bones that it is hazardous to eat a particle of them. It would seem as if the God of nature had formed and annually sent them in such immense quantities to these shores for the sole purpose of fertilizing the land. By this means alone, the value of much of the land on the east end of the island has been doubled, and by the same means its present value is maintained. For many years Suffolk county did not raise sufficient grain for its domestic supply, while of late it has exported a large annual surplus. It may be added here, that in taking these fish, other kinds of an excellent quality for the table are caught in sufficient quantities to supply the fishermen and whole vicinity with fresh fish every day, while those which are not wanted for food are cast into the common receptacle. So that, on the whole, though this country, from the nature of the land, may never be able to sustain a population proportioned to its superficial extent in comparison with other portions of the State, it is really questionable whether there is any part of the world in which the means of supporting life can be more readily obtained. And one thing is believed to be certain that in no part of this republican country is there so great an equality and such a strong sympathy and perfect fellow-feeling among the whole mass of population as in Suffolk county, especially in the eastern towns.

The following extract from Vol. I of the "Transactions of the Society Instituted in the State of New York for the Promotion of Agriculture, Arts and Manufactures, in February, 1791, will give some idea of the fertilizing effects, as well as the vast quantities of these fish which were taken, even at that early day.

"Observations on Manures, by Ezra L'Hommedieu, Esq., read in March, 1795.

"Notwithstanding the great improvements which have been made in husbandry in different parts of Europe and America it is far from being ascertained what is the largest quantity of produce, which may be raised from a given quantity of land by manure. It will no doubt be much more than from the most fertile land in its natural state. I have heard of no instance of new land producing more wheat than forty-two bushels to the acre. In Suffolk county, some years ago, at Huntington, by manure fifty-two bushels of wheat were raised

to the acre. Since the practice in that county of manuring land by fish has been in use between forty and fifty bushels of wheat from one acre is not an uncommon crop. And by a late accidental experiment, it appears that the product of grain from an acre will be in proportion to the quantity of this manure, and so far as to exceed any production we have heard of in any part of the world. A farmer in the town of Riverhead, in Suffolk county, Mr. Downs, having four thousand fish called mossbonkers or Menhaden, strewed them about the 1st of June on twenty rods of ground, being a poor, gravelly, dry soil, and which without manure would not pay for the tillage. These fish were plowed under a shallow furrow; at the time of sowing, about the last of September, the ground was plowed up again, and a little deeper; by harrowing the putrefied fish were well mixed with the earth, and the ground sown with rye at the rate of one bushel to the acre. The ground being well covered in the fall, the rye was not injured in the winter; in the spring the growth was remarkably rapid and luxuriant till it was about nine inches high, when his neighbor's sheep broke into the inclosure and eat it all off close to the ground. The fence was mended and the rye grew again, and much thicker than before, till it got about six inches high, when the same sheep broke in again and the second time eat it close to the ground. It was then supposed the crop would be lost, but it grew up again with additional thickness and great rapidity; it all stood well, the ears were very long and full and Mr. Downs assured me he had sixteen bushels of rye from his twenty rods of ground. This production was so extraordinary that although I could have no reason to doubt the assertion of Mr. Downs, I conversed with some of his neighbors on the subject, who had seen the rye growing at different times and just before harvest—they made no doubt of the fact, and observed the heads and thickness of the rye far exceeded anything they had seen or could have imagined. This piece of land was manured at the rate of thirty-two thousand fish per acre, which would cost, including the carting from the shore where they were taken, ten shillings per thousand, which would be sixteen pounds. The product would be one hundred and twenty-eight bushels, which at that time was worth eight shillings per bushel, which is fifty-one pounds four shillings. If

we allow three dollars for the plowing, gathering and threshing the grain per acre, with the straw, which will be fully adequate to the labor, there will remain eighty-five dollars clear of expense on the net proceeds of one acre of rye thus manured and produced. And Mr. Downs' profits on the twenty rods of rye were four pounds five shillings.

"Mr. Downs as well as his neighbors were of opinion that unless the accidents of the sheep eating off the rye twice had happened, the whole would have been lost by reason of its falling or lodging. If this opinion be right, by this experiment we are taught the necessity of cutting or feeding off the grain on lands highly manured, in order to preserve the crop. Perhaps the thicker such land is sown the less necessity there will be for cutting or feeding, as there will be more original strong stalks. Most of the lands in this country of the same quality will bring more bushels of wheat than rye—and I trust by improvements on this experiment, which was merely accidental, we may soon be informed of a much larger quantity of wheat being raised on an acre than hitherto has been raised in Europe or America.

"It was expected that the taking of these fish in such large quantities on the sea coast for manure, would in a few years destroy them, but hitherto they have increased. This year I saw two hundred and fifty thousand taken at one draught, which must have been much more than one hundred tons. One seine near me caught more than one million the last season, which season lasts about one month. Various are the modes of manuring land by fish. Those that are taken early in the season are by some carted on the land, spread lightly and plowed under the furrow for raising Indian corn; this corn is taken off in the fall and the land plowed and sowed for wheat. By this mode they have two good crops by manuring once."

The eastern towns on Long island were, for the most part, originally settled on a different basis from most of the other colonies of this country. They had no royal charter or proprietary patent as the foundation of civil government. Having purchased their lands of the original proprietors of the soil and secured a corresponding grant from the patentee, without any restrictions to their civil rights, they found themselves absolutely in a state of nature, possessing all the personal rights and privileges which the God of nature

gave them, but without the semblance of authority one over another. From the necessity of the case they were thrown back upon the source of all legitimate authority, the sovereign people, and entered into a social compact, in which every man had an equal voice and equal authority. On this platform they founded a pure democracy, and for several years each town maintained a perfectly independent government, making their own laws in public town meeting and executing them by magistrates of their own appointment. And it is worthy of remark that the invaluable privilege of trial by jury was at once introduced, though with this peculiarity, that a majority was sufficient to render a verdict. And when, afterwards, one town after another deemed it expedient to unite themselves with the larger colonies of New England, it was not because they felt themselves incapable of managing their own internal affairs, but solely for defense from foreign aggression. And the nature of the union was rather that of an alliance, than of subjection.

Being thus trained up in the possession and exercise of all their natural rights and privileges, they exhibited through the whole course of their colonial existence, the most unyielding determination to maintain these sacred immunities. And in this they generally agreed to a man. It is a fact, though little known, but worthy of being handed down to posterity, that the declaration of rights and a solemn pledge not to submit to British taxation, proposed in a meeting in the city of New York, April 29, 1775, and distributed for signatures in every town in the province, was signed by the 6th of July of that year by every man capable of bearing arms in the town of Easthampton, to the number of two hundred and eighty individuals. This is surely a much more notable fact than that since the establishment of the present government the elections of that town have often been returned without a dissenting vote, and the former gives a ready explanation of the latter. Similar unanimity, though not as entire, characterized the most of the towns of this county during "the times that tried men's souls."

There is another fact, however great the contrast with the present state of things, which gives this and the adjoining counties a consequence that has long since been lost sight of. There was a period, and that of some considerable duration, when Long Island constituted

the great body of the province of New York. It was the first occupied by actual immigrants for the purpose of a permanent settlement and agricultural pursuits. Here the first churches were organized and the first towns formed. And in the easternmost town, within less than twenty miles of Montauk Point, and at Flatbush, near the western extremity, the first incorporated academies in the great state of New York were erected and put in successful operation.

The first Assembly of Deputies that the representative of royal power condescended to convoke for consultation, the year after the surrender of the province to British arms, was held at Hempstead March 1, 1665, and (with the exception of two) was composed entirely of representatives from the several towns of the island.

The first Legislative Assembly convened in 1683, was not only procured through the remonstrances and demands of Long Island more than any other part of the colony, but was in a great measure made up of its representatives. The first speaker in that body was either then or afterwards a resident of the island, and the same office was afterwards held by one of its representatives sixteen out of twenty-one years. Though now regarded as the mere "rag-end," Long Island was once both the body and soul of the province of New York. Nor has she deteriorated in her intrinsic worth, though she has been completely lost sight of and almost cast into oblivion in the extending glory of a great commonwealth, which has arrogated to itself the proud title of the "Empire State."

But patriotic views and love of national liberty do not constitute the chief glory of old Suffolk. It is her primitive puritanism which it is believed has been illustrated here, in piety towards God and love to men, for two hundred years, and now exists in more of its original purity than can be found on any other spot of equal extent on the American continent. Let it be proclaimed in trumpet-tongued accents that here no man was ever persecuted and disfranchised for his religious opinions, nor man or woman executed for heresy or witchcraft. On the contrary, from the first organization of their civil institutions, they ordained the widest toleration of religious opinions, so long as it was not exercised for the seduction of others and the injury of the community, and that, too, while as yet such an

article had not been enacted, if it had been conceived, on the continent of America.

From the natural reserve of a people brought up in seclusion from the rest of the world, which still, in a measure, distinguishes them, these traits of character may not be readily recognized by the casual observer. But

if the present generation have not greatly degenerated from the sentiments and practices of their immediate predecessors, among whom the writer spent some of the happiest years of his early life, a residence of a few months or even weeks among these primitive people on the east end will afford complete conviction of the correctness of these remarks.





